

THE INVISIBLE RICH MAN

Author: Two Ears is Bodhi

Chapter 1

It was nine o'clock at night at the male dormitory building in the university campus.

"Gerald, please go down to dormitory 101 on the first floor and bring my laptop up for me!"

A guy with blonde hair from the dormitory next door opened Gerald's dormitory room door directly before he dropped one dollar on the floor, then turned around and walked away.

"By the way, please get me a bottle of mineral water from the supermarket downstairs too!"

The blond-haired student turned around before he dropped another three dollars on the floor—two dollars for the bottled mineral water and another dollar for running the errand for him.

"Hey, Blondie! Why are the people in your dormitory always asking Gerald to run errands for you? Why are you guys being such bullies?"

The people in Gerald's dormitory asked in a cold manner because they could no longer stand it.

"Hahaha! Gerald lives in your dormitory and you don't understand him yet? If you give him a dollar, he'd even eat shit if you asked him to!" Blondie replied sarcastically. Then, he laughed before he left the dormitory.

Gerald's face flushed red with embarrassment as he turned a deaf ear to what the guy with blond hair said. After that, he bent down to pick up the few dollars on the ground before he thought to himself, 'This way, I'll make two dollars and that's enough for me to buy three steamed buns and a bag of pickles! I won't have to go hungry anymore.'

"Gerald...don't go! If you don't have enough money, we'll lend you some and you won't even need to pay us back!"

The head of the dormitory could not stop himself from sympathizing with Gerald.

Gerald shook his head before he smiled and said, "Thanks, but it's okay..."

After speaking, Gerald turned around to walk out of the dormitory. At this time, all the boys looked at Gerald's back as they shook their heads in pity.

In fact, Gerald did not want to run errands for others and he wanted to enjoy his university life too.

It would be great if he could just continue studying in university without having to worry about anything.

However, he was really very poor!

Although the other boys in his dormitory treated him very well, he did not want them to pity him. Otherwise, Gerald was afraid that they would eventually get sick of him.

Apart from his dormitory roommates, Gerald had no other friends in university.

"Gerald, I heard Blondie saying that you were heading downstairs, right?"

At this time, a very well-dressed boy exited from the dormitory next door.

His name was Danny Xanders and he was the head of Blondie's dormitory. He was every female students' idol because he wasn't only rich but he was also very handsome.

However, he had always looked down on Gerald because he felt that Gerald was an embarrassment.

Gerald could not understand why Danny would talk to him.

Gerald simply nodded and said, "Yes, I'm heading downstairs."

Danny smiled before he passed Gerald a box full of items.

“One of my friends will be waiting at the east grove today. Please pass him this box. Here’s ten dollars for you.”

Danny was a playboy and everyone knew about how he’d often ask different girls to meet up with him at the grove.

Danny also had many friends who would do the same thing.

However, Gerald did not think too much about it as he was already used to running errands for others.

He simply took the box and the ten dollars before he walked downstairs. As soon as he turned around, he seemed to hear Danny’s faint laughter in the background...

Gerald went downstairs to pick up the laptop and buy the bottle of mineral water before he decided to drop the box of items off for Danny.

The small grove outside the university was a very famous place for couples to have their secret rendezvous at night.

After that, Gerald arrived at the place that Danny had mentioned to him.

He could immediately see a man and a woman sitting in the woods, talking and laughing together.

However, Gerald was shocked when he saw the man and woman’s faces under the moonlight.

He was stunned.

It was Xavia!

Gerald's eyes reddened immediately and the items he was holding fell to the ground.

Xavia was Gerald's ex-girlfriend and it had only been three days since they had both broken up. Of course, it was Xavia who wanted to end the relationship.

When they were breaking up, Xavia had told him she wanted some time alone to herself. However, it had only been three days and she was already spending time with another man at the grove!

Both of them also noticed Gerald's presence immediately and the expression on their faces changed abruptly.

"Gerald...why are you here? You, you...don't get me wrong. I'm here with Yuri because..."

Xavia started to panic immediately, feeling very embarrassed at this time. She quickly lowered her head, not knowing how to face Gerald.

The boy named Yuri Lowell, who was a second-generation rich kid, glanced at the box of items that Gerald dropped to the ground before he laughed out loud.

"Damn it! Danny really knows how to make a fool out of people. I asked him to send me this box of items and I really didn't expect him to send you here to run his errands instead. This is exciting. This is really too exciting!"

Gerald knew that Yuri, who was a second-generation rich kid, was Danny's close friend. His family owned several restaurants and he usually drove a BMW 3 series car to school.

Gerald could only clench his fists tightly together after listening to Yuri's words.

It turned out that Danny had intentionally done this.

Moreover, Gerald believed that Danny actually played a role in his break up with Xavia. Otherwise, why would Xavia be with Yuri just a few days after their break up?

“Xavia, I know that you dislike me but you don’t have to get together with this kind of person after our break up. Do you know how many girlfriends he has changed before this?” Gerald yelled out loud.

He loved this girl very much. He really loved her.

Xavia felt very anxious and annoyed when she heard Gerald’s words. “Gerald, who do you think you are? Who gave you the right to teach me how I should be acting and what I should be doing? I’ve already broken up with you and I can choose to be with whoever I want to be with!”

“Also...” Xavia was furious at this time. After that, she stared at Gerald before she said, “Did you come here to disgust me on purpose? Get lost!”

Slap!

After she was done speaking, Xavia stepped forward and gave Gerald a tight slap across his face.

Yuri laughed even more heartily at this time. “Hahaha. Xavia, why are you chasing him away? You should just let him stay and watch us!”

Xavia blushed immediately. “Yuri, I’ve already lost all interest after seeing this guy over here! Maybe next time...”

After that, Xavia broke free from Yuri’s grasp.

Gerald did not know how he walked away from the grove and his mind was completely blank at that moment.

Everything came down to money. Gerald was in this state because he had no money!

“Hahaha...”

After returning to his dormitory, Gerald was greeted by the laughter of his classmates in the corridor.

Danny was holding his belly as he laughed out loud.

He had obviously told all of their classmates about this matter.

“Hahaha. Gerald, what did you see when you were delivering the items earlier?” Blondie asked him with a smile on his face.

“Damn it! Xavia really has the most perfect figure,” Danny said as he grinned.

Gerald clenched his fists tightly together and his eyes were flushed red at this time. He really wanted to kill Danny! He wanted to perish together with Danny.

“Why? Why are you doing this to me?” Gerald hissed angrily.

Danny laughed before he replied, “Hey, look here. I’m not scared of you at all.”

“Among all the poor people in our class, you’re the one I look down on the most! Xavia is such a beautiful woman and it’s such a waste for her to be in a relationship with someone like you! It’d be better for my brother to enjoy and play around with her for a few days at least...”

“By the way, Gerald, did you know that Yuri managed to pick Xavia up after texting her for less than half an hour while you had to chase after her for more than a year before she finally agreed to be your girlfriend?”

Everyone was laughing at this time and no one cared about Gerald’s dignity at all.

“I did it for you!”

Gerald rushed towards Danny immediately.

As a result, he ended up getting beaten up by Danny's buddies instead.

In the end, Gerald's roommates came to his rescue and they brought him back to their own dormitory.

Gerald covered his face with his quilt as he continued sobbing as he laid in bed.

'Why? Why must they bully me and trample on my dignity? Why?'

'Do I not have any feelings just because I'm poor? Am I not a person in their eyes?'

Gerald continued struggling internally and he could not stop the tears from flowing down his cheeks. He could not forget the scene that he had just witnessed tonight.

He did not know how long he huddled up under the covers, crying before he finally fell asleep.

Perhaps it was because it was such a dark and silent night, Gerald slept very peacefully that night.

When he woke up the next morning, there was no one in the dormitory. Gerald knew that the head of the dormitory must not have wanted to wake him up as he probably felt it would be better for Gerald to stay in the dormitory instead of going to the classroom after the previous night's events!

When Gerald picked up his cell phone, he discovered that he had received many text messages and missed calls.

To Gerald's surprise, they were all foreign numbers.

Gerald also received a text message stating that someone had transferred money into his bank account!

“[Daxtonville Bank] Nineteen years. The balance of your account ending in 107 is USD 1,500,000.00.”

Gerald was stunned when he looked at the series of numbers.

One million five hundred thousand dollars?

Who would transfer one and a half million dollars to him?

Gerald hurriedly called the bank to confirm the transfer and he was even more confused after receiving confirmation from the bank.

At this time, his cell phone started ringing again. It was another phone call from an international phone number and Gerald answered the call immediately.

“Gerald, have you received the money that I transferred to you? I’m your elder sister!” A familiar voice sounded over the other end of the line.

“Sister! What the hell is going on? Aren’t you and our parents working hard to make money abroad? Where did you get so much money?”

Gerald was completely in shock.

“Erm, our father was intending to hide the truth from you for another two years but I can’t bring myself to do so because I know you’re constantly getting bullied in school. Therefore, I planned to tell you the news in advance. Our family is actually really wealthy. The Crawford family has a huge business industry throughout the world. Do you know that eighty percent of the gold mines, minerals, and petroleum in Africa actually belongs to our family?”

“This is not inclusive of all the other industries in Daxtonville and abroad.”

What!

Gerald gulped immediately. If this one and a half million wasn't already in his hands, he wouldn't have believed this at all.

He really thought that his sister was merely making fun of him!

"I know you find it really hard to believe me, Gerald, but you have to learn to accept the truth slowly. In the beginning, I was also raised in a poor environment but after some time, I've gradually gotten familiar with living the lifestyle of a wealthy person. By the way, I've sent something over to you by courier and it should arrive by this morning. You no longer have to worry about money in the future."

"I don't know how much anything costs in Daxtonville nowadays but you shouldn't worry, just use the one and a half million dollars for the time being. I'll call you again next month!"

After hanging up the phone, Gerald was still in disbelief.

He had always lived as a poor person throughout his entire life.

But...

He was actually a second-generation rich kid?

Chapter 2

It turned out that his parents and sisters had been lying to him when they told him that they were working abroad.

After that, Gerald called his parents directly. They were initially angry that his sister had told him about their wealth without their permission but after a short while, they decided to apologize to Gerald instead.

Gerald's father told him that he had no choice but to do so because he wanted to raise him to have a humble personality. After that, his father explained a lot to him!

Gerald then withdrew a hundred thousand dollars from the bank before he was going to go shopping with some of the black bank cards that his sister had just mailed to him.

In fact, Gerald was still not completely convinced. Was this just a dream?

Gerald was very excited at this time.

“Hahaha. Xavia, if you didn’t break up with me, I would be able to buy you whatever you want now.”

“Yuri and Danny, you’ve already insulted and made fun of me so much in university. I wonder how you’re both going to react in the future.”

Gerald smiled bitterly to himself.

It was already almost noon when he left the bank.

At this time, Gerald’s cell phone rang and he realized that it was a phone call from the head of his dormitory.

“Hello!”

“Gerald, are you okay? Why aren’t you in the dormitory?”

“Oh, I went out for a stroll!”

“The few of us are scared to death. We’re so worried about you. By the way, it is Naomi’s birthday today. As she couldn’t contact you, she’s asked me to ask you if you’re attending her birthday party tonight. She said that she’s already mentioned her birthday celebration to you a few days ago!”

After hearing his words, Gerald looked through the list of missed calls on his phone before he realized that he had indeed missed some calls from Naomi.

Naomi was Gerald's classmate and not only was she very beautiful but she was also very close to Gerald.

Apart from Xavia, Naomi was Gerald's only female friend.

In fact, Gerald remembered Naomi telling him about her birthday a few days ago. However, he did not say anything because he was already struggling to simply feed himself a few days ago.

But now...Gerald decided to live like a normal person in his usual circle of friends.

So, why would he not go to the birthday party?

"I have to get a birthday gift for her, right?"

After hanging up the phone, Gerald looked around him and the only thing that attracted him was the Hermes shop.

This was a world-famous luxury store which carried very luxurious items. Even though it was very expensive, many second-generation rich kids from Gerald's university liked to come here mainly because of prestige!

Gerald did not plan to enter the store but he suddenly thought of the Universal Global Supreme Shopper's Card that his sister had mailed to him today.

He felt very tempted at this time.

He was initially very reluctant to spend money but when he thought about the card, Gerald's guilt immediately lessened.

After taking a deep breath, Gerald walked into the Hermes boutique store immediately.

“Hello sir, what can I do for you?”

A very beautiful salesgirl inside greeted Gerald very politely.

Even though there was a trace of contempt in her eyes when she glanced at Charlie’s clothes, she was still very polite.

She knew that everyone who entered this store would usually look around first but she did not understand why someone like him would want to enter their boutique store.

“I’ll take a look around the store first,” Gerald replied immediately. This was his first time stepping into such a luxurious boutique store so he really did not know what to buy.

The salesgirl had a cold expression on her face as she looked at Gerald.

“Yuri, can you buy me a bag?”

At this time, a familiar voice reached Gerald’s ear and he saw a beautiful girl walking into the store as she held onto another man’s arm.

The expression on Gerald’s face changed immediately when he turned around and saw the couple.

It was none other than Yuri and Xavia.

“Hello! Is this your girlfriend, Mr. Lowell? She’s really very beautiful!”

As soon as the salesgirl who was serving Gerald earlier saw Yuri, there was a 180 degree change in her attitude as she greeted him with a smile on her face.

Everyone knew that Yuri was a second-generation rich kid and he was very eye-catching wherever he went. That was the reason why the salesgirl rushed over to him immediately.

“Rachel, this is my girlfriend, Xavia. I’ve brought her here to take a look today because I’d like to buy her a bag.”

Xavia blushed at this time. Yuri was indeed a rich young man who was recognized wherever he went.

At this time, Xavia pointed at one of the bags before she said, “Yuri, I want this bag!”

The bag was placed inside a cabinet and it looked very luxurious and grand.

Rachel smiled before she said, “This bag is a collector’s edition that was introduced during the Hermes’ 200th anniversary celebration. There are only two hundred units of this bag produced worldwide and it’s worth fifty-five thousand dollars!”

“What?”

Xavia was so shocked and she could not help but gasp out loud.

Yuri also jumped up slightly before he smiled and said, “Rachel, if I’m not mistaken, this is a handmade bag with excellent workmanship. It was only released last year and it has already won one of the spots on the list of world’s top ten luxury goods, right?”

Rachel was very surprised at Yuri’s extensive knowledge. “You seem to know a lot about bags!”

Yuri shook his head before he said, “I like to research luxury goods but this is really a very expensive bag.”

After that, Yuri looked at Xavia before he said, “My dear, you have really exquisite taste. Let’s get you another bag that is worth five or six thousand dollars instead.”

Yuri would rather die than purchase a bag for fifty-five thousand dollars!

Xavia pouted as she said, "Alice's boyfriend bought her a bag worth more than eight thousand dollars!"

"Well, you'll have to wait until I get more allowance next month, then!"

At this time, the other people who have just heard Rachel introducing the bag to Yuri quickly surrounded the cabinet containing the luxury bag.

When Yuri was talking about the bag that was worth fifty-five thousand dollars, he seemed very knowledgeable!

Everyone was very impressed with his knowledge.

When Gerald saw that the salesgirl had already left him alone, he no longer wanted to stay in the boutique shop because he did not want Xavia to see him.

At this time, a younger salesgirl suddenly walked up to Gerald before she bowed and said, "Hello sir, how can I...how can I help you today?"

She looked like she had just started working as a salesgirl.

She was still a little timid.

However, it warmed Gerald's heart because she was very polite.

"Oh, I'd like to buy someone a birthday gift!" Gerald replied immediately.

"Sir, do you have a Shopper's Card? If you have one, you will be able to enjoy a discount on your purchases."

Even though Gerald was her first customer, she did not judge him simply because of his simple and casual appearance. Instead, she continued speaking to him in a very professional manner.

“Oh yes. Can you please take a look at this?”

Gerald took out the Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card that his sister had given to him before passing it to the salesgirl.

The salesgirl widened her eyes in shock when she saw the card.

“This, this...black gold card?”

The salesgirl continued staring at Gerald in shock and disbelief. This young man looked like an ordinary student and not a famous rich man. How could he possibly have a black gold card?

Gerald was confused and he asked, “What’s a black gold card?”

“It is a supreme-level card and you can spend up to three hundred thousand dollars on this card, while the minimum amount for each transaction is fifty thousand dollars, sir!”

Gerald was even more confused at this time. He knew that their family was rich but he did not know that they were so rich!

“Sir, based on the items we are currently carrying in our store, you can’t use this black gold card on any of the regular luxury goods in this shop. However, you can easily reach the minimum transaction amount if you check out the collector’s edition bag. I will bring it over to you now.”

The salesgirl bowed again before she left immediately.

At the same time, Xavia and Yuri were still looking around the boutique store as they checked out all of the bags with a look of admiration on their face.

The young salesgirl unlocked the cabinet before taking the collector's edition bag out.

Rachel frowned immediately before she said, "Wendy, what do you think you're doing now?"

Wendy turned around and replied, "I'd like to show a customer this bag!"

"Is this the kind of bag that you should be showing to just any customer? Who are you showing it to?"

Rachel frowned as she stared at Wendy.

Wendy looked in Gerald's direction as she said respectfully, "This gentleman over here."

Yuri and Xavia also turned around to look at the direction that the salesgirl was pointing at before they burst out in laughter.

"Hahaha!"

Yuri could not hold his laughter in when he saw Gerald.

If he could, he would have already rolled on the ground as he laughed.

"What are you talking about? That man wants to see the collector's edition bag?" Yuri asked as he pointed his finger at Gerald.

This was a big joke to Yuri.

Yuri stared at Gerald with a contemptuous expression on his face and Gerald felt a little embarrassed at this time because there was a crowd of people staring at him.

Rachel also had an ugly expression on her face as she said, “Wendy! Do you really think this man would be able to afford to buy any of the bags in our boutique store? Who are you kidding?”

“No, Rachel. That customer has a black gold card. He is our VIP customer!”

“Hahaha!” Yuri laughed out loud again. “A VIP customer? He’s a famous pauper in our university!”

Xavia also glared at Gerald in disgust as she said, “Gerald, aren’t you ashamed of yourself? Why don’t you leave this place immediately?”

Hahaha...

Gerald looked around as the crowd of people continued ridiculing him. The young salesgirl was also placed in a very difficult position as Rachel was glaring at Gerald in disgust.

At this time, Gerald simply strode over to the counter before he placed his black gold card on the counter.

“I’ll buy that collector’s edition bag today!”

Chapter 3

“Gerald, why are you pretending to be rich?” Xavia asked contemptuously.

However, Rachel was startled after Gerald placed the black gold card on the counter.

This Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card for luxury stores was only available to the most wealthy and powerful families in the world.

There was no doubt that the owner of the black gold card was indeed very wealthy and powerful.

On the other side, Wendy quickly brought the card reader over to the counter.

After that, Gerald entered his birthday into the card reader as the passcode and the transaction was successful.

The transaction was successfully completed!

“Oh my god!”

Everyone in the crowd was shocked.

“Oh my. Did this young boy just buy the Hermes collector’s edition bag worth fifty five thousand dollars? He is really very rich!”

“Is this a boy really a very humble second-generation rich kid?”

Everyone was staring at Gerald with fiery eyes.

At this time, even Yuri was staring at Gerald in disbelief.

How could this pauper possibly be so rich? He felt a sharp pain in his heart.

Moreover, he was still showing off his knowledge on all of the luxury goods before this.

Now, he looked nothing more than a clown!

Xavia had a look of disbelief on her face at this time.

“You...you...Gerald, where did you get this card?”

How could he possibly buy the bag that was worth fifty-five thousand dollars whenever he wanted to? Xavia could not believe that Gerald also owned a Universal Global Supreme Shopper's Card. Even that luxury shopper's card was very valuable on its own!

Did he just buy the bag on his own?

Was it for real?

Gerald glanced at Xavia but he did not say anything at all.

He could still feel a sharp pain in his heart but he was still very cold towards Xavia. At this time, Gerald thought in his heart, 'My sister was the one who gave me this card and I can actually purchase something costing up to three hundred thousand dollars!'

"Sir, I will wrap this item up for you immediately! Please wait for half an hour."

"This is a very luxurious product so we must ensure that the packaging for the bag is perfect."

Gerald felt very embarrassed with the crowd of people staring at him so intently.

After he rejected the wrapping service, Gerald took the bag in his hand as he prepared to leave immediately.

"Wait a minute! Stop right there!"

Yuri had an ugly expression on his face as he walked in front of Gerald to stop him from leaving.

"What do you want?" Gerald asked in a cold manner.

Yuri snorted before he pointed at the black gold card in Gerald's hand. "I suspect that you've stolen this black gold card from its original owner. After all, it isn't that difficult to steal someone's password or passcode nowadays!"

After that, Yuri looked at Rachel before he said, "Rachel, I'd advise you to call your manager to look into this matter immediately. If this black gold card was really stolen, it'll leave a very bad reputation for your boutique store when this matter is exposed!"

Xavia came back to her senses at this time and she quickly chimed in, "Yes, Rachel. How can a pauper like Gerald possibly own such a supreme card and be able to purchase such an expensive bag?"

Xavia was still in disbelief.

Rachel felt that what they were saying made complete sense.

Therefore, she looked at Gerald before she said, "Sir, please wait here for a moment. Our manager will come over here right away."

After that, everyone blocked Gerald's way as if they were trying to stop a fraudster from escaping!

Gerald really did not expect to cause so much trouble just because he wanted to buy a bag.

However, he knew that he would not be able to leave now even if he wanted to.

He could only stand here and wait patiently for the store manager.

Very soon, a woman in her early thirties who was dressed very elegantly appeared in front of the crowd of people.

Rachel immediately told the manager that she suspected Gerald to be a fraudster who had stolen someone else's black gold card.

The manager looked at Gerald before she smiled and said, "I am sorry, sir but if you do not mind, would you please allow me to check out your black gold card?"

She was very polite and respectful because she was the manager of the store and she did not judge their customers simply by their appearances.

Gerald felt very helpless at this time and he could only hand his black gold card over to the manager without saying anything.

The manager brought out a special card reader.

After that, she skillfully placed the card inside.

"Sir, could you please give me your last name? I would also like to know your identification number," the female manager requested respectfully.

"My name is Gerald Crawford and my sister's name is Jessica Crawford!"

Even though his sister had put in his birth date as the passcode for his cards, Gerald was not sure if the card was under his name or his sister's. Gerald also handed his identification card over to the manager without any hesitation.

"Hm, let's see how he'll explain himself now!" Yuri said as he sneered. After that, he took out his cell phone so he could file a police report as soon as they found out the truth about Gerald!

The female manager proceeded with her inspection.

A short while later, a look of horror flashed through her eyes when she saw that Gerald was indeed the rightful owner of the black gold card.

He was indeed a supreme member and this meant that he was a member of a very wealthy and powerful family in the world.

The manager broke out in cold sweat immediately. Damn it! Rachel had actually made her offend such an important and powerful customer!

The female manager took the card in her hand before she walked over to Gerald and bowed before him in a respectful manner.

“Dear Mr. Crawford, I am so sorry if I have offended you. Please let me return your black gold card to you.”

“What?”

Everyone was stunned.

Rachel was standing in Gerald’s way because she was trying to prevent him from leaving and she felt extremely embarrassed at this time.

“Manager...are...are you sure you did not make a mistake? Is this person really the owner of this black gold card?”

The female manager raised her hand and slapped Rachel across her face. “Move aside now!”

Rachel covered her face with her hand as she quickly stepped aside.

Yuri and Xavia were in a daze.

The female manager knew that the two of them knew Gerald and they were the ones who were trying to ridicule and embarrass him.

Therefore, she thought that it would be best if she could gain Gerald’s favor by chasing them both out of the Hermes store today!

The manager quickly walked up to Yuri and Xavia before she said, "Excuse me, what are both of you trying to prove? Why did you induce our salesgirl to offend our most valuable customer?"

Yuri stared at the manager before he said, "I was simply giving you a warning as a kind gesture!"

"We appreciate your kindness but if you are not going to buy anything, we would truly appreciate it if you left our store immediately."

The female manager's words were very sharp and cold.

She was chasing them out of the store!

Xavia looked at Yuri, hoping that he would be able to get them out of this embarrassing situation.

However, Yuri was also sweating profusely at this time. Even if he forked out money to buy a bag worth ten thousand dollars, he would still be nothing compared to Gerald.

Gerald was a supreme customer!

"Let's go!"

Yuri gritted his teeth in anger as he dragged Xavia out of the store.

At this time, Rachel was also bowing down in front of Gerald. "Sorry. I am so sorry, Mr. Crawford!"

She regretted her actions and she really regretted judging her customers by their appearance.

Gerald turned a blind eye to her and he simply smiled at Wendy before he said, "Thank you so much for all the trouble today. I don't need you to wrap the bag up for me because I'm in a hurry. Goodbye!"

After that, Gerald took the bag in his hands before he left immediately.

This was the first time that he had ever won in a battle with money.

In fact, he was not the kind of person who would spend so extravagantly.

However, Gerald was finally an ordinary person who could live his life without worrying about money!

After leaving the store, Gerald's cell phone started ringing again. It was a phone call from Naomi.

Gerald could hear Naomi's anxious voice over the other end of the line as soon as he answered the call. "Gerald, I don't care what other people think about you but you're one of my closest friends! You have to come to my birthday party tonight. All of your dormitory mates are here already!"

Gerald smiled before he replied, "Alright, I'll be right there!"

"By the way, make sure that you look good today! I'd like to introduce someone to you!" Naomi said over the phone again.

Gerald could only shake his head helplessly. Since he could not possibly give Naomi the bag without wrapping it up, Gerald walked to a nearby supermarket to buy a plastic bag for twenty cents. After that, he put the Hermes bag into the red plastic bag.

He then hailed a cab before he rushed to Jade Restaurant.

At this time, at Jade Restaurant, Naomi hung up the phone before she smiled at the long-haired girl sitting next to her. The girl was absolutely beautiful and she looked like a goddess!

"Alice, Gerald is a very close friend of mine. He's a very good and studious person! I'd like to introduce you to him later."

Alice was wearing her earphones and she was shaking her legs as she listened to music.

She was really very pure and beautiful.

“Okay!”

Alice Bradford and Naomi were childhood friends who grew up together and they attended the same university even though they were majoring in different fields.

Since it was Naomi’s birthday today, she had invited Alice and some of her dormitory friends over to celebrate her birthday with her.

At this time, Naomi also knew that even though Alice was a goddess, she had been single since high school and she was currently looking for a boyfriend.

Alice opened a bottle of juice as she drank it in a graceful manner.

At this time, the door opened...

Chapter 4

However, the person who entered through the door wasn’t Gerald.

“Danny! What are you doing here?”

The expression on Naomi’s face changed as soon as she saw Danny.

Both of them were classmates and Naomi was once close to them.

However, Naomi had found out that morning that Danny had played a trick on Gerald. Therefore, Naomi lost her temper at Danny.

Unexpectedly, this guy was so thick-skinned and he actually came here even though she had just scolded him.

“Naomi, are you still angry? I was just joking around with Gerald last night. Who would’ve thought that he’d actually deliver the box to Yuri?”

Danny replied as he smiled cheerfully.

Several of his roommates also came with him and they all brought gifts with them.

Speaking of it, Naomi’s family was also very wealthy and Naomi had already offered to help Gerald several times. However, Gerald had always rejected her goodwill.

Danny had known Naomi ever since they were in high school.

“Naomi, is this the Gerald that you were going to introduce to me? What’s wrong?” Alice asked as she stared at Danny.

As soon as Danny saw Alice, his eyes were shining brightly. In fact, he had already wanted to get acquainted with Alice ever since a long time ago. Alice was the most beautiful girl that he had ever seen in the Broadcasting and Media Department.

This time, the only reason why he gathered the courage to brazenly come and apologize to Naomi was because he knew that Alice would also be here.

As soon as Danny heard Alice’s words, he quickly said, “Hello, the beautiful Alice. Gerald is my classmate! He’s a pauper that I made fun of yesterday! Hahaha...”

When Danny recalled that Gerald had delivered some birth control supplies to his ex-girlfriend last night, Danny could not help but laugh out loud.

“Shut up!” Naomi replied as she glared at Danny.

At this time, Alice had a very strange expression on her face.

Was there really such a huge distinction between the poor and rich students?

Gerald’s roommates also had a very ugly expression on their faces at this time.

“Okay, okay...I won’t say anything else.”

Danny laughed before he said, “Naomi, why don’t you take a look at what I got for you...”

At this time, someone pushed the door open once again.

After opening the door, Gerald walked in with a red plastic bag in his hand.

“Gerald, you’re finally here!”

Naomi immediately jumped up with a smile on her face.

Gerald nodded in acknowledgment and he immediately noticed Danny, who was staring at him with a mocking expression on her face.

In fact, Danny would have a humble expression on his face if it was any other second-generation rich kid. However...right now.

This was Gerald.

Alice also raised her head to look at Gerald at this time.

In fact, Alice really wanted to look for a boyfriend but she could immediately tell that Gerald was probably not from a wealthy family. Alice did not mind if he was from an ordinary family as long as he was handsome and attractive.

However, even though Gerald was handsome, Alice could tell that all the clothes that Gerald was wearing from head to toe were not worth more than fifty dollars.

He was too ordinary!

When Alice thought of what Danny had mentioned earlier, her impression of Gerald reached a new low point.

Alice's face was filled with disappointment.

"Gerald, this is Alice! Alice, this is my friend, Gerald."

Naomi introduced both of them with a smile on her face.

Gerald nodded before he replied, "Hello, my name is Gerald. Nice to meet you, Alice."

Gerald extended his hand politely.

However, Alice did not even bother to look at Gerald. Instead, she simply turned around and continued sipping her juice.

Gerald's hand was hanging in the air and after a short while, he had to take his hand back in anguish.

Naomi knew that her best friend had always had such a personality. If she was interested in the guy, she would talk more. Otherwise, she would simply ignore him completely.

Gerald did not say anything about it.

He simply walked over to sit down at the table.

At this time, Danny saw the red plastic bag in Gerald's hand.

Danny immediately said, "Well, Gerald, it is Naomi's birthday today. So, what birthday gift did you get here? Why don't you show it to us?"

The head of Gerald's dormitory could not stand it anymore and he quickly asked, "Danny, why are you always picking on Gerald?"

Danny simply laughed because he really enjoyed ridiculing and making fun of others.

Danny glanced at Gerald with a cold expression on his face before he took out the gift that he bought for Naomi first.

It turned out that Danny also bought a black branded bag for her.

"Naomi, I bought this for you. A Hermes bag."

As soon as Danny brought out the bag, Alice and all her beautiful roommates were immediately intrigued.

"A Hermes bag? The market price for one of these bags is at least eight thousand dollars, right?"

All of the beautiful girls immediately had a different impression of Danny.

This person was really very generous.

Alice, the goddess who had always been very cold to everyone else, could not help but glance at Danny at this time.

“It’s not that expensive. My dad knows the manager at Hermes very well, so I bought it for only seven thousand nine hundred dollars.”

Danny smiled as he enjoyed the admiring gaze that everyone was giving him at this time.

Even though Naomi really despised Danny, she took it in her hand without saying anything else.

“The Hermes Rumble is actually the latest bag launched by Hermes. It is very popular in Macau, Hong Kong, and Taiwan. This same exact bag costs about twelve thousand dollars there!”

Alice could not help but gasp when she heard Danny’s words.

Danny saw the expression on Alice’s face and he quickly said, “Alice, what do you think about this bag? Do you usually do any research on luxury goods?”

Alice looked at Danny and she finally smiled faintly before she replied, “I’d wanted to buy this exact same bag before this but the price is slightly too high...”

Danny quickly replied, “Alice dear, I’ll get you one for your birthday! Eight or nine thousand dollars is not a lot of money to me anyway. Moreover, I know everyone working at the Hermes boutique store across from our university.”

Alice did not say anything but she simply smiled at Danny.

Even though she did not know Danny personally, she had heard about him before and she knew that he was a playboy.

Unexpectedly, he was also so courageous and generous.

Alice could not help but feel a little impressed with him at this time.

After that, the head of Gerald's dormitory and all of his roommates also presented their gifts to Naomi, one after the other.

Their gifts were naturally not as expensive as Danny's luxury gift, but each of their gifts also cost three to four hundred dollars.

Gerald did not want to interfere and he simply planned to give Naomi his gift after everyone was done.

However, at this time, Danny looked at the red plastic bag in Gerald's hand before he smirked and said, "Gerald, please show us what you bought for Naomi. Just look at the plastic bag in your hand! It's really very festive."

"Danny, can you just shut up? I'd be very happy no matter what Gerald gives me."

Naomi warned Danny again.

However, Naomi was also looking at Gerald with a hopeful expression on her face.

Gerald regretted his action a little.

Since he was in a hurry, he did not want to wait half an hour for the salesgirl to wrap the bag up for him.

He thought that it would just be a simple gathering with a few of their close friends. He did not expect that b*stard Danny to be here too!

"Naomi, I bought you a bag too."

Gerald said as he took the bag out of the plastic bag.

Alice frowned at this time because she really could not believe her eyes.

This person was so poor! He was really unbelievable.

“Wow!” Danny yelled as soon as Gerald took out the bag.

“Gerald actually bought Naomi a Hermes bag too! He bought her a luxury item too!”

“Gerald, could you tell me which market stall you bought this bag from? Is it cheap?”

Danny’s words made all the girls present laugh out loud immediately.

Alice shook her head slightly at this time.

She originally thought that even though Gerald was poor, he would probably be a good friend.

However, Alice simply looked down on Gerald now.

“This is the limited edition collector’s Hermes bag that was launched during their 200th anniversary. There are only two hundred units of this bag in this world and each of these bags is worth fifty-five thousand dollars!”

Alice could recognize the bag immediately.

“There are also many imitations on the Internet and the counterfeit bag cost less than one hundred dollars! However, no matter how vain a person is, they wouldn’t buy the counterfeit version of this bag because it’s really embarrassing to use a fake high-end product!”

Alice was not polite at all as she glared at Gerald. This person really made her sick!

Naomi initially thought that Gerald would buy some gadgets for her but she really did not expect him to buy her an imitation item instead.

However, Naomi still smiled as she said, "Thank you, Gerald. I'm very thankful and happy no matter what you get me but you shouldn't spend so much money in the future. One hundred dollars is a lot of money for you!"

Gerald wanted to explain himself and tell Naomi that it was a genuine and original Hermes bag but he could see that Alice and her roommates were already giving him contemptuous looks.

Therefore, he knew that no one would believe him even if he tried to explain himself and he might end up making them despise him even more.

At this time, Alice looked at Naomi before she said, "Naomi, why did you become friends with such an unreliable person?"

Naomi did not want to put Gerald in a difficult position. Therefore, she tried to change the topic.

"Alright, everyone, it's my birthday today and I'm really happy to be able to celebrate it with all of you. Come on, let's make a toast!"

Alice and her roommates continued staring at Gerald in disgust while the other guys did not respond at all.

Danny and his friends simply sneered at Charlie.

Gerald did not want to make things difficult for Naomi because he knew that she was caught between him and her roommates.

He quickly stood up and said, "Naomi, happy birthday to you but I just remembered something I have to do back in my dormitory so I'll be leaving first. Have fun!"

Gerald knew that he was superfluous, so he got up to leave immediately.

“Gerald!”

Chapter 5

Gerald walked out of the room immediately.

At this time, Naomi and the head of Gerald’s dormitory, Harper, chased after Gerald immediately.

“What are you doing? I didn’t say that I don’t like your gift,” Naomi said anxiously.

Harper also spoke up at this time. “Gerald, don’t leave. Stay and have dinner before you go. If you leave now, we’ll be very bored here.”

Gerald smiled before he replied, “You guys can continue having fun here. There’s really something I have to do now but I hope you guys will believe I’m not the kind of person who would buy something fake!”

Gerald did not know if his friends would believe him.

As he thought about it, Gerald could only blame his sister for giving him the card with a minimum spending amount of fifty thousand dollars.

Even though Harper and Naomi kept persuading Gerald, he still decided to leave in the end.

“Did that pauper really leave?” Danny asked with a smile as soon as Naomi and Harper returned to the room.

Harper replied, “Danny, can’t you change the target of your bullying? Why are you always bullying Gerald? Isn’t he miserable enough?”

Harper could not tolerate it anymore.

“Hahaha. He was the one who asked for it himself! Why did he buy an imitation Hermes bag to gift Naomi? Moreover, he even chose to give her a fake limited edition collector’s item. He’s really the worst!”

Alice could only smile wryly as she shook her head.

Gerald walked on the street without any emotions on his face after leaving the restaurant.

When Gerald was really poor, all he wished for was to be rich. However, now that he was loaded with cash, he did not feel anything special at all.

Moreover, he bought his friend a bag that cost more than fifty five thousand dollars but he was still despised and ridiculed.

Just as Gerald was thinking of where he should head to, he suddenly received a phone call.

It was a phone call from his sister, Jessica.

Gerald immediately answered the call. “Sister!”

“Gerald! What are you doing now?”

“I’m not busy at all...”

“If you are free, could you do me a favor?”

Gerald was curious at this point.

“Do you know Mayberry Commercial Street? I invested in that street and developed it when I returned to the country to see you four years ago. I need to sign a renewal contract with some of the investors but I can’t return to the country now.”

“Back then, I included your name in the development of the project. Therefore, Mayberry Commercial Street belongs to both of us. It’ll be the same even if you sign the contract! Go and renew the contract on my behalf.”

“Hello? Gerald, did you hear what I just said?”

Of course, Gerald heard everything that she said.

However, he was really confused at this time.

Mayberry Commercial Street?

That was one of the highlights of Mayberry City.

There were many different shops and business establishments on the commercial street.

There was also a place called Wayfair Mountain Entertainment on top of the hill along the commercial street. This was a place that the wealthy and powerful people in Mayberry City would always visit.

So, according to his sister, they owned the entire Mayberry Commercial Street?

“Sister, are you telling me the truth? We own the commercial street?”

“Damn it! I’ve been talking to you for such a long time already and you actually think I’m just kidding? Why would I joke about this? I couldn’t get involved in so many industries on my own, and that’s why I used your identity card. You own half of the commercial street now.”

“I’ve already spoken to Zack, the owner of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. Once you arrive there later, just tell him your name and let him know you’re the second boss!”

“I...”

“Okay, okay, that’s all. I’ve something else to attend to so I’ll hang up first!”

Beep beep beep.

Gerald held the phone in his hand and he was completely at a loss for words.

He had never been to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment before and he didn’t know what to expect at all.

Gerald took a deep breath before he hailed a cab and headed straight to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Wayfair Mountain Entertainment integrated dining, entertainment, and accommodation in one building.

It was a huge manor located on the hillside on Mayberry Commercial Street.

Gerald raised his head before walking into the manor...

“Sir, please wait!”

Gerald was unexpectedly stopped by a few beautiful ladies as soon as he entered the manor.

“Sir, did you reserve a place here today?” one of the girls quickly asked as she looked at Gerald.

These girls were responsible for all the reception work at the front hall and they were already used to receiving many VIP guests.

However, Gerald was dressed very casually compared to all the other wealthy and powerful people who usually visited.

Even though the beautiful girls had contempt in their eyes, they were still very polite towards Gerald.

“I didn’t reserve a seat but I’m here to look for someone,” Gerald replied as he smiled.

At this time, he glanced at the beautiful girls in front of him and he finally understood why Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was considered a fairytale in Mayberry City.

These five or six receptionists looked like students who had just graduated from college.

They were all extremely beautiful and they had perfect figures like models.

“You’re here to look for someone? Who are you looking for?”

The beautiful girls could not help but frowned when they heard Gerald’s words.

At this time, there was a hint of coldness in their voices.

“I’m here to look for Zack.”

Gerald knew that the girls were all looking down on him but he told them the truth anyway.

After hearing Gerald’s word, the few girls exchanged glances with one another.

Looking for Mr. Lyle?

Did this poor man know who Mr. Lyle was?

Was Mr. Lyle really someone that he could see whenever he wanted to?

At this time, they finally concluded that Gerald was just a pauper who was here to experience what it felt like to be rich.

After all, Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was a famous place that many could never afford to enter.

There would also be others just like Gerald who would come by to say they were looking for someone just because they wanted to have a look around the manor.

However, they didn't want to put him down.

These beautiful girls were all college graduates. At this time, even though they despised Gerald for his actions, they tried to remain humble and polite.

"Sir, you'll need to make an appointment in advance if you want to meet Mr. Lyle. Please leave if you have not made an appointment to meet him."

At this time, Gerald immediately knew that these girls were assuming he was there simply because he wanted to have a look around the manor.

After that, he thought about calling Jessica so she could contact Zack on his behalf.

"Miss Jane, what are you doing? I've just realized that just anyone can step into Wayfair Mountain Entertainment."

The person who just spoke was a young man with oiled hair and he was dressed very decently as he was accompanied by a glamorously dressed lady with heavy makeup.

The young man looked at Gerald with a contemptuous expression on his face as he smiled at the receptionist.

“Sebastian, didn’t you say that this is the most luxurious place in Mayberry City? Why is someone like him here?” the woman asked in a coquettish manner.

Some people are just born this way and they do not have the ability to express their feelings without any sarcasm.

The lead receptionist, Jane, quickly apologized to the young man and said, “Sorry, Mr. Lewis. We’ll deal with this as soon as possible.”

Sebastian sneered before he said, “That’s good. I will be hosting a group of my friends from abroad here later and I think this manor is really the symbol of Mayberry City. Therefore, I hope you won’t degrade this place without reason. Miss Jane, I hope you understand that my father is very close to your boss, Mr. Lyle, and they often dine together.”

Sebastian looked even more reputable as soon as he mentioned Mr. Lyle.

When the woman in his arms heard that Sebastian was acquainted with Zack, she smiled immediately because Mr. Lyle was a prominent figure in Mayberry City and she had no idea that Sebastian was so well-connected.

At this time, all the beautiful girls at the reception counter were also staring at Sebastian because they were all hoping to attract his attention.

Jane nodded hurriedly before she replied, “Yes, I understand, Mr. Lewis.”

After that, Jane looked at Gerald with a stern expression on her face.

“Sir, please leave immediately. Do not cause any trouble for our establishment. Otherwise, I’ll have no choice but to call for security!”

“Okay then. I’ll just step out and make a call first.”

Gerald took a deep breath before he walked out of the manor. He took his cell phone out of his pocket as he walked out of the manor.

“Damn! What a poser! He’s definitely a faker,” Sebastian said in a cold manner.

“Please do not be offended, Mr. Lewis. This kind of situation occasionally occurs at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.”

Jane quickly appeased Sebastian with a smile on her face.

Sebastian nodded before he said, “Oh look. My friends are here already. Why don’t you come and have a few drinks with us later?”

“I’ll definitely drop by if I have the time, Mr. Lewis,” Jane smiled reservedly.

Sebastian looked at Jane with a perverted expression on his face before he nodded. Then, he took his wallet out from his pocket before he walked towards the front desk to pay for his room.

After that, the group of beautiful girls looked at Jane with an envious expression on their face as they said, “Jane, do you know Mr. Lewis too?”

Jane nodded arrogantly as she said, “Of course, we all started working here after graduating from college. What’s the point of working as a receptionist here if we don’t actually try to get to know more rich people like Mr. Lewis?”

“Did you see the coquettish woman in his arms just now? She is a second-rated actress...Mr. Lewis’ family is focused on the real estate business and their family has a net worth of more than two billion dollars!”

“Wow! It’s no wonder that his father is acquainted with our boss, Mr. Lyle. It turns out that Mr. Lewis’ family has such a high net worth too!”

The receptionists could not stop staring at Sebastian’s back as they were all obsessed with him.

“Hahaha. Do you know that the man just now was actually here to look for Mr. Lyle? Mr. Lyle is now busy discussing business with the chairman of the Mayberry Chamber of Commerce. That guy is seriously ridiculous...” Jane replied as she laughed.

After that, Jane was preparing to head over to chat with Sebastian again.

However, as soon as she raised her head, she realized that the poor man that she chased out had come back in again.

“Why are you back here again?”

Jane was startled.

The other girls also stared at Gerald with contemptuous expressions on their faces.

Chapter 6

At the same time, in the most luxurious room in the manor, a middle-aged man with a very majestic aura was socializing with a group of businessmen.

He was the owner of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment on Mayberry Commercial Street and this naturally made him the richest man in Mayberry City.

However, everyone was surprised at this time.

This was because as soon as Mr. Lyle answered the phone, he stood up in shock before he ran out of the room frantically.

“What’s wrong with Mr. Lyle?”

Everyone could not understand his behavior at all.

At the front desk, Sebastian had not entered his room yet and he saw Gerald entering the manor again. He couldn’t help but offer to help Jane get rid of Gerald.

“Miss Jane, why don’t you just call for security? There isn’t any other way to deal with this kind of hillbilly!”

Sebastian smiled coldly at Gerald.

Jane nodded before she motioned for a few security guards to step forward.

“Stop!”

At this time, Zack rushed out to the front hall as quickly as he could.

Everyone was stunned!

“Lyle...Mr. Lyle?”

Jane and the rest of the girls were in shock.

Sebastian quickly greeted Zack in a respectful manner. “Hello, Uncle Lyle. My name is Sebastian Lewis and my father is Jacob Lewis. We met during the last reception.”

Sebastian rushed forward to greet him immediately.

Unexpectedly, Zack did not even look at him.

However, he walked straight towards Gerald.

He even pushed Jane and the other girls away in a rude manner.

“Are you Gerald?” Zack asked respectfully.

Gerald nodded. “Yes, I am.”

“So, you know Jessica?”

“She’s my sister!” Gerald replied immediately.

Zack bowed ninety degrees respectfully in front of Gerald.

“Hello, Mr. Crawford. I am Zack!”

“Okay.”

This scene really surprised Jane and everyone else.

Sebastian was also shocked at this time.

Mr. Lyle actually bowed in front of this hillbilly?

Who was he?

Gerald was also dumbfounded at this time. He knew that his sister was the boss of this commercial street but he really had no idea that his sister had such a powerful presence here. He really couldn't believe that his sister actually had the power to make Zack give him this sort of preferential treatment.

To be honest, Gerald was still not used to the life of a second-generation rich kid!

Moreover, he was still in disbelief that this commercial street actually belonged to him.

"Yes, Mr. Lyle. My sister asked me to come over here to sign something," Gerald replied politely.

"Yes, Mr. Crawford, we'll need you to sign the renewal contract. This commercial street, including this manor, belongs to you and your sister. I've wanted to pay you a visit for the longest time but your sister did not allow me to do so."

Zack quickly wiped the sweat off his forehead.

He was really happy that Gerald was so polite towards him.

However, Jane and Sebastian were dumbfounded at this time.

What?

This pauper actually owned Mayberry Commercial Street?

He was actually the true owner of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment?

"Tell me! Who chased Mr. Crawford out of this place earlier?" Zack asked as he turned around and his eyes swept through the crowd of people with a cold expression on his face.

The identity of the real boss of the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, Jessica, was very special and she was the only reason that Zack could enjoy his current life.

Now, his subordinates had nearly chased the second boss out of his own building!

If Jessica were to find out about it, wouldn't he have to return to his miserable life overnight?

Jane was so flustered at this time and she kept her head lowered, not daring to look up or say anything at all.

At this time, Sebastian was still very suspicious of Gerald's identity. "Uncle Lyle, are you sure you're not mistaken at all? How could this pauper possibly be the owner of Mayberry Commercial Street?"

Slap!

Zack slapped Sebastian across the face as soon as he heard his words. "A*shole! What did you just say?"

"I'm sorry, Uncle Lyle. I didn't say anything..."

Sebastian used his hand to cover his face and he was filled with grievances at this time.

Even though he was also from a very wealthy family background, he was nothing compared to Zack.

"Men, throw this man out of this place immediately!"

Zack gave the security guards the order immediately.

"Yes, sir!"

A group of security guards rushed up immediately before pushing Sebastian and the second-tier actress out of the manor immediately.

That was embarrassing! Sebastian felt really very embarrassed today!

Gerald simply watched what was happening but he remained silent.

He really did not expect Zack to be so loyal even though he looked so domineering!

Ahh!

After that, Gerald followed Zack into the manor.

Zack quickly showed Gerald around the manor before he told him a little about himself.

At this time, Gerald finally understood that Zack and his wife used to sell buns from a small store.

Similarly, Jessica had also been very poor in the past.

At that time, Jessica had no money at all and she was about to beg for food from Zack and his wife. It was then that they had both given her a job instead.

Later, when Jessica overcame her poverty and became extremely wealthy, she was the one who had given Zack his current position.

Therefore, the only reason why Zack could become such a wealthy and influential person in Mayberry City was because of the Crawford family!

After that, Gerald signed the renewal contract and he realized that most of the shops in Mayberry Commercial Street were registered under his own name. Therefore, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that he was the owner of Mayberry Commercial Street.

Gerald would never have dreamt that he would ever be such a powerful and influential person!

After that, Zack set up a table for Gerald in a private room.

Since he had not eaten the whole day, Gerald was a little hungry at this time.

When Gerald was eating, Zack smiled and said, "Mr. Crawford, please enjoy your meal. Once you're done eating, let me bring you to visit some of your other businesses. Miss Crawford has given me this order, as she wants you to familiarize yourself with your family's industries as soon as possible so you'll be able to live the life of a second-generation rich kid and leave your past behind."

After that, a thought flashed through Zack's mind immediately.

"I'll be right back, Mr. Crawford."

After that, Zack walked out of the room to make a phone call and said one simple sentence, "I want all of you to come up."

After that, he went downstairs immediately.

Gerald did not know what the manager was up to. He was starving and he quickly ate the big Australian abalone that was served to him.

He was enjoying his food happily when the door to his private room was suddenly pushed open.

After that, five or six beautiful women walked into the room.

It was Jane and the other beautiful girls at the reception earlier.

At this time, they were looking at Gerald with a completely different expression on their faces.

Jane was also smiling sweetly at Gerald as she said, "Mr. Crawford, I'm really sorry for what happened earlier."

“Sorry, Mr. Crawford!”

All of the other beautiful girls quickly chimed in immediately.

“What are you doing here?”

Gerald wiped his mouth as soon as he was done with his dinner.

To be honest, even though the girls looked down on him at the front desk earlier, Gerald did not have any hard feelings towards them.

Instead, he simply wanted to get things done for his sister as soon as possible.

Then, he wanted to leave immediately.

However, it seemed as though Zack had already scolded all of the girls.

“We’re here to accompany you, Mr. Crawford. We’re willing to do anything for you as long as you forgive us, Mr. Crawford,” Jane said immediately.

The beautiful girls who were all working at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment undoubtedly had only one true purpose, which was to marry a rich man.

Therefore, they would definitely take advantage of this opportunity that Mr. Lyle had given them to make amends and build up a relationship with Gerald.

Even if they didn’t feel apologetic at all, they could not help but rush forward immediately.

What was a rich man?

The man standing before them now was a true rich man! He was the wealthiest and most powerful man here!

Gerald was shocked when he heard her explanation.

Six of them?

This was just too shocking.

Gerald was stunned. At this time, Jane took out a remote control before she pointed it at the wall.

Then, the entire cloth wall started separating like a curtain and what appeared before Gerald's sight was a huge indoor swimming pool.

So, there was another secret in this room!

After that, all of the beautiful girls, including Jane, quickly took off their skirts.

Jane also removed her blouse as she sat next to Gerald.

As Gerald was about to lose control and succumb to temptation, his cell phone started ringing.

It was his sister.

Gerald calmed down as he said, "Dear ladies, I will just step out for a moment."

After that, Gerald ran out of the room immediately.

It turned out that his sister was calling to ask him about the renewal contract. After that, Jessica also told Gerald to get used to being wealthy and she advised him to get out of the influence of poverty.

After hanging up the phone, Gerald wondered to himself if he should return to the room.

As he thought about it, he suddenly reminisced about the days when he was dating Xavia. Back then, Gerald was really deeply in love with Xavia and that was the reason why he respected her and nothing sexual happened between them at all.

Gerald could feel his heart aching when he thought about Xavia.

If Xavia were to find out that he was rich now, would she change her mind and choose to get back with him instead?

Ugh!

He suddenly thought of the times where they were both holding hands as they walked in the cafeteria, the library, and whenever they had spent time together.

At this time, Gerald's enthusiasm decreased because he did not want his first time to mean nothing at all.

After that, Gerald decided not to return to the room and he called Zack to inform him that he would be leaving first.

After leaving the manor, Gerald walked around Mayberry Commercial Street alone.

Everyone who walked the street were well-dressed young people or bosses who were coming in and out of the many different establishments.

He owned the Mayberry Commercial Street. Gerald should not feel so inferior to others anymore!

Gerald had to keep reminding himself of the fact.

At this time, a familiar voice suddenly rang in his ear.

“Gerald!”

When Gerald turned around, he saw Naomi and Alice standing in front of the entrance of a karaoke bar.

Moreover, Danny, Blondie and the other boys were also there.

“Well, Gerald, it’s really you! Didn’t you say that you were headed back to the dormitory? Why did you come to the Mayberry Commercial Street instead? Why did you lie to me?”

Naomi ran over to Gerald before she questioned him with a furious expression on her face.

Gerald was left speechless.

Chapter 7

Gerald scratched his head awkwardly.

In fact, he had been trying to avoid Naomi and her friends.

He especially wanted to avoid Alice since she seemingly hated him so much. Therefore, Gerald didn’t want to waste his time trying to butter up to her.

“Danny was the one who suggested that we have some fun at Emperor Karaoke Bar on Mayberry Commercial Street. If you try to run away this time, we’ll no longer be friends!” Naomi told Gerald upfront.

She had always been a very straightforward and outgoing person and she did not put too much thought into any situation at all.

Therefore, she would never be able to understand that Gerald was not from the same world as them.

Of course, this was all in the past.

When Naomi saw that Gerald was not saying anything, she quickly said once again, "Okay, let's go and have some fun together! I know you're afraid that Danny will try to make things difficult for you again, but don't worry about him. If he tries to pick on you again, I'll make sure to teach him a lesson!"

Gerald could only smile when he heard Naomi's words.

He knew that if he continued turning down her invitation, she would be really mad at him.

Alright, they should just have some fun together then.

Naomi hurriedly led Gerald to the entrance of the Emperor Karaoke Bar.

When Gerald looked at the name of the bar, he realized that this was one of the properties registered under his own name. Gerald had never had the opportunity to do this in the past but this time, he would finally be able to pay for his friends.

"Oh! Mr. Crawford is also here on Mayberry Commercial Street? Do you know the way around this place? Do you know where you can have a lot of fun here? I can show you around."

Danny walked over to Gerald with a sheepish smile on his face.

"Danny, shut up already! What did I warn you before this?"

Naomi glared at Danny with an angry expression on her face.

Danny smiled before he said, “Okay, okay. I was just trying to be nice to him. After all, Mayberry Commercial Street is where the rich and powerful people usually come to have some fun. Since Gerald would like to look around the street, I’d be more than happy to show him around.”

Alice could only glare at Gerald at this time.

She felt that it was really embarrassing to be seen with Gerald in public.

After that, Alice hurriedly asked, “Okay, why don’t we go in first? Danny, have you already booked the private room?”

“Yes, I’ve already booked the room, I asked a friend of mine to help me do so. After all, the rooms are usually fully booked at this time. Follow me!”

After that, Danny led the group of people into the karaoke bar.

This was the first time that Gerald had ever entered a karaoke bar and he thought that it was actually a rather luxurious place.

Moreover, the private room that Danny had booked for them was indeed very huge and luxurious. There was also a big fish tank with a few glittering gold arowana fishes in it.

After entering the room, the girls sat down at one corner whereas Gerald sat at another corner with the rest of his roommates.

At this time, they started taking turns to sing and the atmosphere in the room was very lively.

The girls continued chatting among themselves and Alice put her legs up on the sofa, showing off her long white legs.

“There are actually arowana fishes here?”

Gerald kept looking at the fish tank out of curiosity.

He had already read about how popular the arowana fishes were because of the good luck and fortune that they purportedly brought.

However, he felt as though these arowana fishes were completely different compared to the ones that he had seen in the books before.

Therefore, Gerald decided to ask Harper about it.

Harper nodded before he said, "Yes, these are arowana fishes but the ones here look a little different because they're imported from Malaysia. They're very valuable and only the really wealthy and powerful people can afford to buy these arowana fishes!"

Danny unintentionally heard Gerald and Harper talking about the arowana.

At this time, he couldn't help himself from smiling before he said, "Oh my god, Gerald. You can even recognize the luxury brand Hermes but you cannot even recognize this precious arowana fish?"

As soon as she heard the word 'Hermes', Alice could not help but frown again.

Blondie who had also been following Danny around laughed before he said, "Hahaha. Unfortunately, there are no fake fishes! Otherwise, Gerald would definitely be able to recognize it and he'd definitely buy it too!"

"This kind of arowana fish is considered a very auspicious fish that can bring good luck and fortune to the family."

Alice spoke up at this time.

"Ahh, Alice! You're really very knowledgeable!"

Danny gave Alice two thumbs up immediately.

“Of course! Our Alice is a very intelligent goddess, unlike some pauper.”

Alice’s roommates chimed in without any hesitation at all.

“Wouldn’t this private room be very expensive? Are you very close with that friend of yours?” Alice could not help but asked Danny at this time.

In fact, she was already very impressed with Danny as she got to know him better throughout the night. If Danny was a little more mature and stable, he would definitely stand a chance to be her boyfriend.

“It’s alright. This private room only costs four thousand dollars a night,” Danny replied in a triumphant manner.

After that, he slapped his forehead as though he had just forgotten something. “Oh my god. If you hadn’t mentioned him, I would’ve completely forgotten that I promised to give my friend a call once I’m here.”

After that, Danny stepped aside to make a phone call.

At this time, Gerald continued sitting at a corner as he chatted happily with his friends.

Even though Naomi had initially planned to celebrate her birthday with her roommates and Gerald’s roommates, it was obvious that her friends were more interested in the guys from Danny’s dormitory.

In fact, Danny and Blondie were getting along very well with all of the girls in Alice’s dormitory.

At this moment, someone suddenly pushed the door open.

A young man dressed in a black suit and a pair of bright leather shoes walked into the room immediately. He was very tall and he had very fair skin and he seemed to be a very temperamental person at first glance.

“Brother Nigel, you’re here!”

Danny stood up to greet the man as soon as he saw him.

“Danny, how are you? Are you satisfied with this private room?”

“Of course! Thank you for arranging this for me, Brother Nigel!”

Danny spoke to him in a cheerful manner.

At this time, Blondie and the rest of Danny’s roommates also greeted Nigel respectfully.

“Danny, stop talking already! Why don’t you introduce me to your friends?”

At this time, Nigel glanced at all the beautiful girls seated in the room and he was especially attracted to Alice, who was extremely gorgeous.

“Oh right! I forgot about that! Everyone, let me introduce my friend to you. This is Nigel Fisher and his family is in the food and catering business. He owns Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street and he is making tens of millions of dollars every year! He’s the reason we were able to book this private room tonight!” Danny proudly introduced his friend.

Grand Marshall Restaurant?

Wow!

Those who could open a restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street were usually extremely wealthy.

Moreover, they would definitely be making a lot of money!

Alice looked at Nigel with her bright and sparkling eyes at this time.

“Hahaha. Everyone, please don’t listen to Danny, he’s just spouting nonsense. My family’s business is really small. As for the reason why I could easily book a room in the Emperor Karaoke Bar, it’s simply because the manager is my father’s close friend. If you need help booking a room in the future, please don’t hesitate to approach me!” Nigel replied in a humble manner as he smiled.

“Brother Nigel, do you have a girlfriend?”

The girl seated beside Alice suddenly asked him a random question and everyone in the private room started laughing immediately.

Nigel smiled bitterly before he shook his head. After that, he looked at Alice before he said, “Hello, beautiful. It’s nice to meet you.”

“Hello!” Alice replied with a reserved smile on her face.

After that, Danny started to introduce everyone to Nigel one by one.

After introducing everyone in the room, Danny looked at Gerald who was seated at the corner.

He pointed his finger at Gerald before he said, “Brother Nigel, this is Gerald!”

Nigel held out his hand to shake hands with Gerald but his eyelids started twitching as soon as he heard his name.

“What? Is this the same Gerald who lost his girlfriend to Yuri and even delivered a gift to Yuri and Xavia when they were at the grove?”

Chapter 8

Danny sneered before he said, "Yes, it's him!"

Nigel had a very strange expression on his face and he quickly retracted the hand that he had held out to Gerald.

After that, he patted Gerald on his shoulder before he said, "Brother Gerald, I've already heard your name for a very long time. I have also met your ex-girlfriend, Xavia. She's really very beautiful. I'd like to apologize to you because my brother stole your girlfriend from you!"

"By the way, if you'd like to have some fun at Mayberry Commercial Street, just mention my name and you'll get a thirty discount immediately!"

Nigel apologized in a light manner.

"Brother Nigel, it's useless even if he mentions your name as he won't be able to afford anything on this street anyway!"

At this time, Alice and her roommates could not stop themselves from laughing out loud.

"I'm sorry! When Yuri said that he fell in love with a poor chap's girlfriend, I assumed that the girl wouldn't be that beautiful anyway. However, I caught a glimpse of the girl when I went to your university the other day. When I saw how beautiful Xavia was, I really thought that you must be a really rich person!" Nigel replied as he laughed.

"How's that possible? Hahaha..." Danny laughed. "Moreover, Brother Nigel, you were the one who gave Yuri the idea to text Xavia and spend some money on her so he could steal her from Gerald! Yuri took less than half an hour texting Xavia before she agreed to break up with Gerald!"

Harper was losing his temper at this time and even Naomi was furious when she heard Nigel's words.

"What do you mean? Are you guys that great simply because you're rich?" Harper stood up and yelled at Nigel.

Nigel's eyelids twitched slightly before he said, "Friends, it's not about money. Whoever can love and dote on the woman the most should be the one worthy of the beautiful woman! Why don't you ask the beautiful Alice if what I am saying is right?"

Alice, who had been paying attention to all of Nigel's movements throughout this time, felt that Nigel was actually pretty good looking and he had a great demeanor.

Moreover, since she had a bad impression of Gerald, Alice nodded as soon as she heard Nigel's words.

She had met Xavia before and she really felt that Xavia was too good for Gerald.

"So, do you think that someone deserves to die just because they're poor? So, do poor people not have any feelings at all? Does that mean you can just toy around with the feelings of others whenever you want to just because you think you're richer than they are?"

At this time, Gerald, who had been sitting patiently throughout this time, suddenly stood up.

His eyes were flushed red and he was clenching his fists as he glared at Nigel in anger.

So, he had been making fun of him and meddling in his life just for the fun of it.

Initially, Gerald had planned to endure all the humiliation and insults since it was Naomi's birthday after all.

However, Gerald could no longer hold his anger in!

Alice could not help but look at Gerald with disgust. Not only was this person poor, but he was also so impatient. Couldn't he just tolerate it if someone was saying a few bad things about him?

Blondie was also getting angry.

“Gerald, who do you think you are? How dare you talk to Brother Nigel in this manner? Do you even know what you’re doing?”

In order to prove himself in front of Nigel, Blondie picked up a bottle of wine before he threw it at Gerald.

This would not be his first time hitting Gerald.

Moreover, he had to do this because he wanted to show his loyalty and dedication towards Nigel.

“Gerald, be careful!”

Harper, who had quick eyes and hands hurriedly pulled Gerald aside.

The bottle flew past Gerald without hitting him.

Boom!

The fish tank that was placed in the private room shattered immediately.

Wow!

Everyone turned their eyes to look at the shattered fish tank.

This...

Blondie was stunned.

His face turned pale immediately.

Even Danny and Nigel were in shock at this time.

“Damn it! This arowana fish is very expensive!” Danny yelled as he stared at Blondie in horror.

Blondie was at a loss for words as he swallowed his saliva.

“Brother Danny, Brother Nigel, I didn’t do it on purpose. I really did not expect Gerald to avoid the wine bottle. I really did not mean to do it!”

After that, Blondie glared at Gerald with a furious expression on his face.

“That’s right. We shouldn’t blame Blondie for this! Gerald shouldn’t have avoided the wine bottle. After all, if he was hit, he should just receive it like a man. What’s the big deal anyway? Why did you move away?”

Even though the girls were terrified, they all blamed Gerald for avoiding the wine bottle!

“What happened here?”

At this time, one of the waiters who heard the loud shattering sound rushed into the private room with a few security guards.

The fish tank with the arowana fish in the private room was shattered to pieces.

The chief of the security team stared at the crowd of people before he asked, “Who did this?”

This arowana fish was imported from Malaysia and it was very valuable and priceless!

How could it be shattered to pieces while he was on duty?

The chief of the security team was dumbfounded.

“Brother Barry, this is all a misunderstanding! Do you think you can keep this matter from Brother Flynn?”

Nigel quickly took out a cigarette before he passed it to Barry.

Barry raised his hand to reject the cigarette immediately.

“Nigel, don’t get me wrong but you have to understand that this is a very expensive fish and fish tank. There is no way I can help you on this matter. I have no choice but to contact the manager immediately.”

After that, Barry spoke into his walkie talkie right away.

A short while later, a man in his thirties came over with a group of people.

He was none other than the manager of the Emperor Karaoke Bar, Flynn Lexington.

“Brother Flynn!” Nigel greeted him with a smile on his face.

Flynn looked at the mess in the private room.

After that, he frowned before he said, “Nigel, what happened? Why did you guys break the fish tank?”

“No, why would we dare to do that, Brother Flynn? One of my brothers accidentally broke the fish tank because he was getting too agitated.”

Nigel was very polite as he spoke to Flynn.

Even though Flynn was just the manager of the Emperor Karaoke Bar, everyone knew that he worked for Zack Lyle.

Even Flynn's own father had to be polite when he spoke to him!

Blondie swallowed his saliva before he stood up and said, "Brother Flynn, this is all my fault. I was really angry so I threw a wine bottle at him. As a result, he avoided the wine bottle and the wine bottle hit the fish tank instead!"

Flynn glared at Blondie with a furious expression on his face.

After that, he kicked Blondie in the stomach before he picked up another wine bottle and hit Blondie's head directly.

"You were angry? I'm angry now!"

"What!"

All the girls were terrified at this time.

"What should we do? The arowana fish tank was built to complement the interior decoration in this private room. Originally, you should be paying double the price of the fish tank for breaking it but Nigel, I'll show you some respect on behalf of your father and just charge you the original price of the fish tank, which is two hundred thousand dollars. Don't you say I'm not helping you!"

After that, Flynn walked out of the private room immediately.

Naturally, two bodyguards continued guarding the door at this time.

“What should we do, Brother Danny? I only have five thousand dollars!” Blondie said as he sat up with blood flowing out of his head.

Danny spoke up and replied, “I have fifty thousand dollars that is supposed to be my allowance for next month.”

Naomi was extremely furious.

However, since everyone was here to celebrate her birthday, it did not make any sense for her to just ignore this matter completely.

Therefore, Naomi replied, “I have about ten thousand dollars.”

Everyone in the private room started putting their money together.

Even Alice decided to contribute ten thousand dollars to pay for the damage.

At the end of the day, they couldn’t even gather one hundred thousand dollars.

“Don’t worry. Let me ask Brother Flynn if he can give us a further discount,” Nigel said before he slipped out of the room.

How would that even be possible?

The people in the private room were in trouble!

“I shouldn’t have celebrated my birthday! I’ll just call my dad now,” Naomi yelled as she stomped her feet anxiously.

Alice stopped her immediately before she said, "Naomi, how could we possibly ask you to pay this sum of money? I think that the one who started provoking others should be the one responsible to pay for the damages!"

After that, Alice looked at Gerald.

"Gerald, this is all your fault! You were the one who started provoking Brother Nigel. If not because of you, Blondie wouldn't have lost his temper and tried to hit you with the wine bottle."

Alice said in a cold manner.

"Yes!"

The group of girls agreed immediately.

At this time, Naomi spoke up again. "Please just stop it. Stop blaming Gerald for everything. All of you don't need to worry about this money. Since we're here to celebrate my birthday, I'll make sure to pay for the damages no matter what I have to do!"

After that, Naomi tried to call her father.

On the other hand, Harper and Gerald's other roommates also wanted to help but their monthly allowances were only around one thousand dollars.

In fact, Gerald was actually very angry.

He was really furious at Nigel, Danny and Blondie.

However, Gerald could not bear to watch Naomi placed in such a difficult position.

Even though he owned this shop, the manager, Flynn, did not know who he was.

Moreover, it would not be convenient for Gerald to call Zack in the private room.

Therefore, he simply said in a light manner, "I'm going to the washroom."

After that, he left the private room.

Alice's eyes widened in shock when she saw Gerald stepping out of the room.

"Oh my god. I've met so many different people in my life but I've never met anyone else more shameless than he is! Is he actually running away when the girls are still here?"

At this time, Gerald was already in the washroom.

He knew that it would be fine for him to make the phone call since the security guards would not say anything.

Inside the washroom, Gerald made the phone call.

"Brother Zack."

"Gerald! Please just call me Zack! What can I do for you?"

"I ran into some trouble..."

Chapter 9

Gerald quickly explained the situation to Zack and Zack quickly nodded in response.

"By the way, Brother Zack, do you know someone named Nigel Fisher? I heard that his family runs a restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street."

At this time, Gerald's brows were tightly knitted together.

He was not someone with any sinister thoughts.

However, Nigel was the one who had given Yuri the idea to steal Gerald's girlfriend, Xavia, from him. Nigel was the reason why he had to suffer so much humiliation.

Therefore, Gerald really wanted to know what would happen if Nigel and his family lost all of their money.

"Nigel? Yes, his father is one of my subordinates. Moreover, the restaurant that his family is operating is actually registered under your name. Did he offend you in any way?"

Zack was very cautious at this time.

After a short while, Zack quickly replied, "I know what I have to do, Gerald. Don't worry! Just leave it to me."

In fact, Gerald did not know what Zack was going to do.

This was because Gerald did not even know what he could possibly do to him.

This was the first time that Gerald had ever used his identity and power to coerce others. Even though he really hated Nigel, he had a strange feeling of discomfort after giving his orders.

Gerald chose not to think too much about it.

After ending the phone call, Gerald walked out of the washroom before he headed towards the private room.

However, there was a huge turning point in the private room at this time.

At this time, Alice, Naomi and the rest of the group were all trying to contact everyone that they could so that they could resolve this matter. They had to find a solution.

At this time, Flynn suddenly entered the private room, then bowed in front of them before he apologized immediately.

Naturally, he informed them that they would no longer need to compensate or pay the damages for the arowana fish tank.

Everyone was extremely confused at this time.

When Nigel suddenly walked in, everyone suddenly realized what was happening.

“Brother Nigel, was it you?”

All of the girls stared at Nigel with admiration written all over their faces.

Nigel was still wondering what they could possibly do to deal with this matter. As a matter of fact, he ran to the private room earlier because he wanted to hide himself. However, he decided to head towards the private room when he saw Flynn rushing there with a panicked expression on his face.

It turned out that the matter had been resolved.

Nigel did not confess that he wasn't the one who had resolved the matter.

Instead he simply smiled and said, “Brother Flynn and my dad are good friends! This is just a small matter.”

“Wow! Brother Nigel, you’re really incredible!”

“Brother Nigel, you’re the best!”

All of the girls started to worship Nigel immediately.

Alice was also staring at Nigel at this time and she was beginning to fall for Nigel.

After all, he was the owner of the Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street. He was really impressive and he came from a wealthy family.

At this time, the door was pushed open and Gerald stepped into the private room.

“Oh look! He’s only back upon realizing that the matter has already been resolved.”

The girls stared at Gerald in disgust.

At this time, Alice was even more disgusted with Gerald.

“Naomi, I’m really very curious. Why are you friends with someone like him?”

Alice snorted coldly.

It was then that Gerald found out the truth, that Zack had already handled everything for him.

Moreover, Flynn had come over to apologize and inform them that they would no longer need to pay for the damages.

Of course, this matter could be easily resolved. After all, Gerald was the owner of this property.

However, judging from the way everyone was staring at him, Gerald knew that they had misunderstood him once again and must have thought that the credit belonged to Nigel!

Explanation?

Hahaha. Gerald felt that it was totally unnecessary.

In fact, Gerald had initially thought that Alice was really beautiful.

However, after everything that had happened tonight, Gerald no longer had any interest in Alice.

In fact, the only reason why he chose to resolve this matter was simply because of Naomi.

Moreover, even if he tried to explain himself, Gerald knew that no one would believe him anyway.

Gerald didn't want to waste any time explaining himself.

"Okay! Since we've already resolved the matter, why don't we bring the party elsewhere? Let me treat all of you!"

At this time, Nigel clasped his hands together as he tried to change the topic.

He looked at Alice and all of her roommates.

"Yes! Of course!"

The crowd of people agreed immediately and Alice also smiled at Nigel.

Compared to Danny, Alice felt that Nigel was not only much more handsome, but he was also more mature and stable. Moreover, Alice felt that Nigel was very well-connected and his connections would definitely benefit her in the future.

Nigel certainly knew a lot of people!

Naomi had a straight expression on her face as she said, "Well, why don't we continue the party tomorrow instead? It's already almost four o'clock in the morning. I think we should head home now..."

Naomi was no longer in the mood to party after everything that had happened.

At this time, Harper also nodded and said, "Yeah, we won't be going anywhere else. We're also going home..."

In fact, Gerald's roommates were also feeling a little bored.

Initially, they were all excited to get acquainted with all the beautiful girls in Alice's dormitory.

However, it was now obvious that all the boys from Gerald's dormitory were actually redundant compared to Danny and his friends.

"Hahaha, that's okay. You probably wouldn't be able to enter the next place that we're heading to. Moreover, I'm afraid that I won't be able to bring so many people in with me too. Therefore, it's probably better if you choose to sit this one out!"

Nigel glared coldly at Gerald and Harper.

"Ahh? Where are we going next? Are we going to your restaurant?" the girls asked as they looked at Nigel.

Nigel stretched out his finger before he waved it in front of them. "No, I'm bringing you to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. Have you heard of it before?"

“The famous Wayfair Mountain Entertainment?” Alice asked in excitement. “That’s the highlight of Mayberry Commercial Street! Isn’t that the manor where all the wealthy and powerful people gather to have fun?”

Nigel was right. Some people would never be able to afford to enter that place in their lifetime!

Alice was from a rather wealthy family and she had the opportunity to catch a glimpse of the manor because of her extremely wealthy uncle.

Unexpectedly, Nigel could actually get them into the manor too.

“Since there are so many beautiful girls, let me get the car first. Wait for me at the entrance!”

Nigel waved his hand before he walked out of the private room.

Today, Nigel was really captivated by Alice’s beauty.

In fact, he wanted to use the same method that he taught Yuri to win Alice over.

He believed that every girl could be easily bought with money!

“Naomi, why don’t you come with us? Today is your birthday after all. Didn’t you say that you really want to see and experience Wayfair Mountain Entertainment for yourself? The opportunity is laid right in front of you now!”

Alice tried to persuade Naomi to come with them as she held onto her hand.

“Yes! All of us have never been there before, so why don’t we go there together today? Moreover, we have Brother Nigel to protect us tonight. He’s very reputable and it seems as though he’s very well-connected on Mayberry Commercial Street. There’s nothing we have to worry about since Brother Nigel is here with us!”

Danny also smiled expectantly.

At this time, Naomi frowned before she said, "There's something I simply can't figure out. Alice, don't you think that whatever happened just now was a little strange?"

Alice frowned before she asked, "Strange? What are you talking about? Are you referring to the incident about the arowana fish tank?"

"Yes," Naomi replied as she continued frowning. "All of you can clearly see that Flynn was very persistent and clear when he told us to pay the damages of two hundred thousand dollars. At that time, he didn't seem to show Nigel any consideration at all, and Nigel had to praise him and butter him up to make sure that he was happy."

"However, in less than ten minutes, Flynn's attitude changed drastically. He even came over to apologize to each and every one of us personally. Don't you find it a little strange?"

Naomi quickly explained the situation.

Everyone in the private room went silent immediately.

Harper suddenly replied, "Yes, I find it very strange too! Flynn doesn't look like an easygoing person. He's certainly not someone that anyone can deal with easily. No matter how good Nigel is at flattery, how could he possibly change Flynn's mind in just a few minutes?"

"Do you mean to say that someone else had helped us?" Alice asked as she also felt that the situation was indeed a little illogical.

She had been too busy admiring Nigel and she completely ignored the entire situation that they were in...

Chapter 10

"Huh? How's that possible? Who else would be as powerful or influential as Brother Nigel on Mayberry Commercial Street? Harper, are you talking about yourself?"

Danny sneered at this time.

Harper replied immediately, "I'm not saying that it was me but I just have my doubts about this matter. Moreover, some of us had actually called some of our friends earlier. Perhaps everyone should ask around and see if any of our friends have actually helped us resolve this matter? We should make sure that we're thanking the right person."

"That makes sense too!"

Alice had a solemn expression on her face.

"Alright then. Everyone, please check with the people that you called earlier so we'll know for certain if Brother Nigel was really the one who helped us."

Alice was also referring to Nigel in a very intimate manner.

After that, everyone started calling their friends and families.

Gerald felt a little awkward at this time.

Should he tell them the truth about the matter?

However, before Gerald could decide on what he should do, everyone else had already come to their own conclusion.

This was because none of their friends had the ability to help them to resolve the matter.

"Hmm, I'm certain that Brother Nigel was the one who helped us solve this matter. I really don't think there's anyone else as influential as he is. So, let's stop doubting him already!"

Danny glared at Harper with a cold expression on his face.

“Alright then, why don’t we head out already? Brother Nigel must be waiting for us at the entrance! Let’s not keep him waiting for too long!” Alice said as she glared at Harper and Gerald.

She felt some contempt in her heart.

She felt that Harper was simply saying that because he was jealous of Nigel’s capability.

At this time, everyone walked towards the entrance of the karaoke bar.

Nigel had already parked his luxury car upfront and he had a few friends with him.

“Naomi, are you coming with us?” Alice asked as she took Naomi’s hand.

“Sorry, Alice but I really don’t feel like going anywhere else today. I’ll go there when I have another chance to do so in the future!”

Naomi had always been a very straightforward person and she felt that Nigel was a little too hypocritical. Therefore, she didn’t quite like him.

Since Alice could not persuade Naomi to come along with them, she decided to leave Naomi behind and she left with her other roommates instead.

All of them parted in front of the karaoke bar.

Gerald looked at Naomi and Harper as they were leaving the karaoke bar.

He could see the disappointed expression on their faces. It was obvious that they also wanted to visit Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

However, it seemed as though Harper and Naomi were holding back because of him.

Gerald could not help but feel very guilty about the entire situation.

Therefore, Gerald made a promise to himself that he would definitely bring the both of them to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment so that they could see and experience the manor for themselves one day.

After about half an hour, Nigel and his friends parked their luxury cars in front of the entrance of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Alice and her friends got out of the cars one after another.

“Stop! You are not allowed to enter!”

Unexpectedly, before they could even step into the manor, a few well-trained security guards dressed in black stop them immediately.

“Eh? Brothers, don’t you remember me? I’m Nigel and my father is Adam Fisher. I brought some of my friends over here to have fun today...”

Nigel put his hands in his pockets and he smiled as he looked at the bodyguards, as though he was expecting something to happen.

“Hahaha. Nigel, you really think too highly of yourself. Something so major has happened to your family but you’re still out here having fun on your own, aren’t you? I’m afraid that tonight isn’t the only night that you won’t be allowed into the manor. I’m afraid that you will never be able to step into Wayfair Mountain Entertainment in the future.”

The bodyguards sneered at Nigel with a contemptuous expression as they looked at Nigel.

They even felt some sympathy towards him.

At this time, Alice and her friends could only exchange glances with one another, while Danny tried to challenge the bodyguards at this time.

He said in a cold manner, "Do you know who he is? He's Nigel Fisher! Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street belongs to his family!"

"Hahaha, yes you're right, but that is all in the past. After today, your family will no longer be the owner of Grand Marshall Restaurant. Moreover, all of your family's other businesses will also go bankrupt as of today! I believe that your father is currently busy dealing with the police, the business bureau, and all the people from the bank now. I can't believe that you're still in the mood to have fun now..."

The security guards shrugged before they smiled.

Nigel could not help but swallowed as he yelled, "Impossible! You are lying!"

After that, he hurriedly took out his cell phone before he tried calling his father.

After dialing several times in a row, his father finally answered the phone.

Nigel immediately asked if his family was facing any sorts of trouble.

At this time, the expression on Nigel's face changed and he turned pale immediately.

"No! No! That's impossible. It's completely impossible. How could this be happening?"

After that, Nigel dropped his phone to the ground.

It seemed as though all of his family's businesses had been barred because his father had broken the law.

All their bank accounts had already been frozen!

In other words, Nigel had nothing now!

Alice and the others obviously did not expect such a reversal.

They were all very embarrassed at this time because they didn't know how they should react.

"Impossible! This is absolutely impossible!"

Nigel sat on the ground in a daze.

Was he a pauper now?

At this time, Alice was extremely disappointed when she realized the situation that Nigel was in.

She thought that she had finally found someone who was worthy and qualified to be her boyfriend. However, it seemed as though everything was crumbling down for Nigel.

"Danny, can you ask your father to help me family? Could you please help me and my family?"

Nigel was at a loss and he really did not know what else he could possibly do.

"Damn! How can my family possibly be able to help you?"

Danny waved his hand before he said, "Nigel, I think that you should return home now and see your dad. It's no wonder why my dad had always said that the law will catch up to your father sooner or later! I finally understand why."

"Alice, what should we do now?"

All the girls didn't know what to do because they had initially planned to come and experience Wayfair Mountain Entertainment for themselves. Unexpectedly, Nigel's family actually had to go bankrupt at this time!

"I think we'd not be of any help even if we stayed here. We should just go home."

After that, Alice quickly hailed a taxi before she left immediately.

The group of people started dispersing one after the other.

At this time, Zack was actually observing the entire situation unfolding in front of the manor.

He made a phone call and said, "Hello, Miss Jessica. Gerald only asked me to take back the restaurant that the Fisher family owns on Mayberry Commercial Street. Do you really think it's okay for you to make their family go bankrupt without any hesitation?"

"Hahaha. My brother is just too soft-hearted. That is not the way the Crawford family does things. He shouldn't be so soft-hearted towards his enemies. Otherwise, I'd be really worried when Gerald takes charge of the Crawford family in the future! My brother should understand how wealthy and powerful he is now!"

Zack nodded in response.

Of course, Jessica from the Crawford family had already done everything that needed to be done.

In fact, Jessica was the only person who knew the best way to teach Gerald about how he should live as a wealthy and powerful person. In fact, no matter how much money Gerald spent, he would never reach the end.

This was because it was completely impossible to finish the Crawford family money.

The Crawford family owned more than one-third of the properties and industries in the world!

This was beyond what an ordinary person could ever imagine.

At this time, Gerald and Naomi had already returned to their dormitories.

Since Harper and the rest of the boys were a little upset, they decided to head to the internet café to let off some steam.

They wanted to invite Gerald to join them but he had never played the game before because he used to be really poor.

In addition, Gerald was also feeling a little tired and he simply wanted to rest.

However, as soon as he climbed into bed, his cell phone started ringing.

As soon as he caught a glimpse of the number on the caller ID, Gerald felt very confused.

It was Xavia!

After thinking about it for a moment, Gerald decided to answer her call.

“Gerald, why didn’t you answer my call as soon as your phone is ringing? What are you doing?”

Xavia’s faint voice sounded over the other end of the line.

As soon as he heard her voice, Gerald suddenly thought of his past with Xavia.

They used to call each other and talk to each other over the phone just like this.

“Well, what can I do for you?” Gerald asked in a cold voice.

“I’m waiting for you by the lake beside the campus. Gerald, if you refuse to come and meet me, I’ll jump into the lake and drown myself!”

Chapter 11

Gerald knew that whatever photograph she was talking about was just an excuse to meet him.

In fact, Gerald did not want to meet Xavia at all.

He felt very heartbroken because he really loved her before this.

However, he would be lying if he said that he did not have any feelings for her.

As soon as Gerald heard Xavia’s depressed voice, he agreed to meet her immediately.

He got up and looked for the pictures that he had been keeping in his cupboard all this while.

They had both taken these pictures by the small lake by the campus before this.

At that time, Xavia had held out her arms affectionately and Gerald had also taken her in his arms as he smiled sweetly at her.

However, now that the situation had already developed into the way it had, Gerald’s heart was aching badly.

Gerald stared at the one hundred thousand dollars that he had withdrawn from the bank that morning.

In fact, Gerald wanted to spend that money to enjoy life and make up for everything that he had missed out on in the past.

Gerald finally realized that he was being too naïve.

He didn't need any cash at all. He could do anything he wanted to with all the cards his sister had given him.

Gerald knew that leaving so much money in his dormitory was not a solution. How should he explain the situation to his roommates if they found the money?

Over the years, he had this bunch of sincere buddies by his side because of his poverty.

However, Gerald was afraid that he would lose them if he told them the truth now.

"Alright. I'll go down to meet Xavia before I deposit this one hundred thousand dollars back into my bank account."

Gerald could not find a nice paper bag. Therefore, he simply grabbed a black garbage bag from his dormitory before he placed the one hundred thousand dollars into the bag along with the picture that he had taken with Xavia by the small campus lake.

"I'm here, Gerald!"

Xavia started waving her hands at him as soon as she saw him walking towards him.

It felt exactly like the time when they were still dating each other.

In fact, Xavia was the one who felt the most uncomfortable today.

Gerald had bought a Hermes bag worth fifty-five thousand dollars today.

Fifty-five thousand dollars!

How long would it take an ordinary person to make that amount of money?

This was especially difficult because Gerald had become rich as soon as she dumped him! Xavia could not believe what she had missed out on.

That was the reason why she decided to use the photograph as an excuse to meet up with Gerald.

“What is wrong?” Gerald was still upset when he arrived at the lake but he didn’t show Xavia his soft and gentle side. Instead, he pretended to be cold and indifferent towards her.

Xavia could not help but glance at the black garbage bag in Gerald’s hand.

After that, she said, “Ahh! I thought you would’ve brought something else with you when you came to meet me.”

Xavia was very disappointed.

She was initially fantasizing that Gerald would bring the fifty-five thousand dollar Hermes bag along with him as he begged her to get back together with him.

Unexpectedly, he was simply going to throw his garbage out after he was done meeting her.

Gerald took the picture out of his pocket before he said, “Here, Xavia. After I return this photograph to you, we’ll both have no connection to each other anymore.”

Gerald was planning to keep the photograph as a memory but it seemed as though he no longer needed to do that!

Xavia was a little anxious at this time. She felt very aggrieved and she stomped her feet before she hit Gerald in his chest.

“You’re such an idiot! You really are an idiot! Did you really think that the reason why I asked you to meet me here is simply because I wanted you to return this photograph to me?”

Gerald had a surprised expression on his face. “If that’s not the reason, then why did you ask me to meet you?”

“Gerald! How can I make you understand the truth? Do you really think I have something to do with Yuri?”

Xavia said, “You’re a fool! I only did this because I was trying to test you!”

“Test me?” Gerald asked as he smiled bitterly.

She went to the grove with Yuri because she wanted to test him? At the end of the day, it seemed as though it was a test for herself.

Gerald did not want to say anything else anymore.

“Alright then, you can conduct whatever tests you want. I will just return this photograph to you and we should both just stay away from one another from now on. Goodbye!”

Gerald shook his head before he turned around to leave.

“You, you...Gerald, stop! If you walk away from me now, I’ll jump into the lake immediately!”

Xavia really did not expect Gerald, who used to be so obedient and thoughtful towards her, to act so indifferent and cold towards her now.

Xavia mustered up her courage as she stood towards the lake, just as Gerald had already expected her to.

Gerald knew that she was just trying to stall him, while he wanted to leave right away.

However, when he saw Xavia leaning towards the lake, Gerald kept feeling his eyelids twitching out of fear.

He hurried over to Xavia before he hugged her and stopped her from jumping into the lake.

There were tears in Xavia's eyes as she said, "Don't try and stop me! If you don't believe me, then I'd rather die! Just let me die! Let me die!"

Gerald took a deep breath. To be honest, he really did not trust Xavia anymore.

This was especially so after he heard the entire story of why Xavia dumped him from Nigel.

However, Xavia was threatening to jump into the lake if he left her and he felt that she was being sincere.

Gerald could not deny that he was a little moved at this time. After that, he hurriedly said, "Okay, okay, I believe you."

Xavia broke into a smile before she said, "I knew it, Gerald! I knew that you're still in love with me. Even if I jumped into the lake today, it wouldn't be because you bought the Hermes bag or because you're rich now, but I just wanted to prove to you that my love for you is real!"

"From the beginning to the end, I've never been a materialistic person. Otherwise, we wouldn't have been together for so long!"

Gerald did not say anything at all.

At this time, Xavia looked at Gerald suspiciously before she said, "By the way, Gerald, I'm really curious. How did you become so rich all of a sudden? How can you afford to pay fifty-five thousand dollars for a bag?"

Xavia could not help but ask.

Gerald knew that Xavia would definitely ask him this question.

However, he was no longer the Gerald who would tell her everything.

Similarly, Gerald wanted to test Xavia.

"Oh, so this is what happened. I rescued a young girl who was hit by a car just a few days ago and I would never have expected the young girl's family to be so wealthy. However, since they were in a hurry, her parents decided to give me a one-off shopper's card. They told me that it's a very valuable card and they simply wanted to express their gratitude to me."

Xavia's eyes widened immediately. "In other words, you can only use that Universal Global Supreme Shopper's Card once?"

Gerald nodded.

"Then, then...where is that bag now? You can definitely resell that bag for a lot of money!"

Xavia was a little disappointed.

She really thought that Gerald got rich overnight.

At least, he still had that Hermes bag that was worth fifty-five thousand dollars.

Gerald replied, "I gave Naomi that Hermes bag as a birthday present."

“What?!” Xavia was shocked. “You gave that bag away? You gave the bag that was worth fifty-five thousand dollars away? In other words, you are left with nothing now?”

Gerald nodded.

“Xavia, I really can’t believe that you're not a materialistic person. To think that you’re actually deeply in love with me. We should...”

Gerald wanted to hold Xavia’s hand at this time.

Slap!

“Get away from me! Why would I be in love with a pauper like you?”

After finding out the truth, Xavia gave Gerald a tight slap across his face.

“Damn it. I can’t believe that I wasted so much time and almost jumped into the lake because of you! This is ridiculous! This is just so stupid!”

Xavia yelled at Gerald as she glared at him in disgust.

Hahaha...

Gerald completely gave up on Xavia when he saw her acting like this.

It turned out that this was actually Xavia’s true colors.

“Xavia, I’m really very disappointed in you...” Gerald said as tears welled up in his eyes.

Both of them used to be so good together.

“Please don’t waste my time. I don’t care if a poor man like you feels disappointed in me! I really shouldn’t have bothered wasting my time on you. People like you should just pick up trash!”

To vent her anger and frustration, Xavia grabbed the garbage bag in Gerald’s hand.

She wanted to throw the bag of garbage directly at his face.

However, since she grabbed the garbage bag so hard, the garbage bag tore apart.

The one hundred thousand dollars scattered on the ground.

They were all red bank notes!

“What? This...”

Xavia’s eyes widened in disbelief as she stared at the money on the ground...

Chapter 12

Xavia stared at the money scattered all over the ground.

She was very confused.

She would never have dreamt that Gerald’s garbage bag actually contained a pile of money!

“What? This money...”

Xavia did not know what to think. “Gerald, where did you get this money?”

Gerald ignored Xavia.

Instead, he squatted down before he picked up the one hundred thousand dollars from the ground.

“Why do you care? Didn’t you say that I’m not worthy of someone like you because I’m just a poor man?”

After that, Gerald turned around to leave.

Xavia was getting impatient at this time.

If Gerald was really poor and if he had really bought the bag with that one-time shopper’s card, Xavia would not feel that it was a pity for them to break up.

She would never regret her actions!

However, now Gerald actually had one hundred thousand dollars in cash...

“Gerald, stop! You’d better explain this matter to me. Otherwise, I’ll scream!” Xavia yelled as she jumped anxiously.

She had to figure out the truth.

She didn’t know why she was especially afraid that Gerald had really become a rich man overnight.

Scream?

Hahaha.

Gerald smiled bitterly before he said, “Xavia, you can just do whatever you want to.”

“Ahh! Help! Help me! Someone is trying to rape me!” Xavia screamed as loud as she could.

Even though it was already late at night, there were still many campus couples who were out together.

As soon as they heard Xavia screaming, they looked towards the lake immediately.

“Damn it!”

Gerald would never have imagined that Xavia would actually scream for help and say that he was trying to rape her!

“Xavia, what are you trying to do? Okay, you win and I lose.” Gerald hurried back to Xavia before urging her to shut up.

“Gerald, I just want you to tell me why you have one hundred thousand dollars in cash! Tell me the truth now!” Xavia said as she frowned.

Gerald had already lost all hope in this woman.

He didn't want to have anything else to do with her.

Therefore, he decided to continue with his lie just so she would give up on him completely.

“Oh, I have to return this one hundred thousand dollars to someone. Didn't I tell you about the young girl that I saved a few days ago? Besides giving me the shopper's card, they also decided to give me a ten thousand dollar cash reward. However, they gave me too much and they gave me one hundred thousand dollars instead. That is the reason why I am going to return the ninety thousand dollars to them!” Gerald said in a sincere manner.

Xavia finally understood the whole situation.

First of all, she knew that Gerald was not a good liar.

Secondly, if Gerald really did become rich overnight, why would he still be dressed so casually?

He did not look like a rich man at all.

After listening to Gerald's explanation, everything finally fell into place.

Everything finally seemed very logical now.

"I understand now. In other words, aside from the ten thousand dollars in cash, you have nothing left!"

Xavia took a deep breath and she felt as though she could finally let go of Gerald with no regrets at all.

"If you're satisfied, I'd like to leave now."

After that, Gerald walked away with the one hundred thousand dollars in hand.

"A poor man will always be a poor man! It'd be better for me to go back to my Yuri!"

Xavia also left in a hurry after staring at Gerald's back contemptuously.

Gerald couldn't help but feel very distressed after depositing his money into the ATM machine.

Xavia had changed completely and he could not recognize her at all.

Xavia, Xavia.

If she could just forget about that Hermes bag and if she really did not care whether he had any money, he wouldn't have minded getting back together with her.

After all, Gerald did not only have ten thousand dollars. He had countless ten thousand dollars belonging to him!

Ahh!

Gerald sighed as he started walking back to his dormitory.

At this time, his cell phone suddenly rang.

It was a phone call from Naomi.

"Gerald, do you want to have some cake? If you'd like to, drop by the girls' dormitory! I'll bring you some!"

Naomi had always been very concerned and thoughtful towards Gerald.

In fact, both of them got along very well and Naomi had always felt very happy and relaxed whenever she was with Gerald.

She could also have sincere conversations with Gerald.

Unlike all the other boys, Gerald did not have any bad intentions and he was really her friend because he wanted to be her friend. He was not thinking of getting into bed with her at all!

Hmm!

"Cake? It's okay, I don't feel like eating anymore..."

Gerald laughed. He really cherished his friendship with his only female friend, Naomi.

“Okay then. Gerald, no matter what happened tonight, just remember that you’ll always be my good friend! I really like the bag that you bought me!”

The both of them continued talking for a short while before Naomi finally hung up the phone.

At this time, many of her friends were waiting in her dormitory.

“Naomi, why are you so nice towards someone like him?”

“Alice, I know that you look down on Gerald, but you have to believe me! He isn’t the kind of person you think he is! He’s a very genuine and nice person if you’d just try to get to know him better.”

Alice was also at Naomi’s room at this time.

In fact, the person who felt most distressed tonight was Alice.

She was planning to meet a nice guy that she could consider dating tonight but the first person she had encountered was Gerald. After that, she ended up having good feelings for Nigel, who lost everything overnight.

Alice felt really upset when she thought about how embarrassing it was when they were waiting outside Wayfair Mountain Entertainment but they could not get in.

It was such an unpleasant experience!

Alice felt that her bad luck had begun as soon as she met Gerald!

That was also the reason why she hated and despised Gerald.

“I can’t believe that he even gave you a fake Hermes bag! I wouldn’t have found that Gerald so disgusting if not for this bag!”

Alice felt very annoyed when she saw Naomi treating the bag that Gerald had given her like some sort of treasure.

She grabbed the bag from Naomi before throwing it into the trash can.

Naomi quickly walked over to the trash can to pick it up.

“Happy birthday, Naomi!”

Before she could do so, some of her good friends from the dormitory next door came over to her room with a big cake with them.

“Ah!! You girls are here!”

Naomi hurried over to the door to greet her friends.

After that, Felicity and Xavia walked into Naomi’s room.

Even though Naomi did not talk to Xavia much anymore because of Gerald, she still greeted her with a smile on her face.

“Wow! Naomi, you must have received a lot of fantastic gifts! How could you actually throw such a beautiful bag into the trash can? Oh my god. It’s even a Hermes bag!” Felicity said jokingly when she saw the Hermes bag in the trash can.

Felicity Nelson was definitely a goddess because she was so beautiful. Both Felicity and Alice could be considered the two most beautiful girls in the entire dormitory.

When Alice looked at Felicity, who was equally as beautiful and elegant as herself, Alice could not help but feel a little competitive.

“Hmm! So, what if it’s Hermes? It is just a fake Hermes bag bought by a very poor man!” Alice said as she frowned.

At this time, Xavia was standing next to Felicity and the expression on her face changed as soon as she saw the Hermes bag that they were talking about.

She naturally recognized that this was the Hermes bag that Gerald had bought for fifty-five thousand dollars that morning!

She felt very uncomfortable after seeing the bag.

“A fake?”

Felicity picked the bag up from the trash can before she looked at it carefully.

After a short while, Felicity’s eyes widened in surprise as she kept turning the bag around in her hand.

“This...I don’t think that this is a fake Hermes. I think that this is a genuine product!”

“Genuine?” The group of girls in the dormitory were all surprised. “How could that be possible? Gerald is so poor. How could he possibly afford to buy Naomi a genuine Hermes bag?”

“This bag is a limited edition collector’s item and it is selling for more than fifty thousand dollars!” Alice said contemptuously.

Alice did not know why she could feel her heart beating frantically when Felicity said that the Hermes bag was actually a genuine product!

“No, I’m certain that this is a genuine product. I’ve touched the genuine Hermes bag in their boutique store and it feels exactly the same. It’s completely impossible for a fake Hermes bag to have the same texture as the original. I have the phone number of the manager working at the Hermes boutique store directly opposite our university and I can call her to ask if someone has purchased this collector’s item from their boutique store. We’ll know the truth then!”

Felicity held the Hermes bag in her hand as if it was a very precious item.

Her remark made all the girls gasp immediately.

At this time, Felicity took out her cell phone as she prepared to call the manager of the Hermes boutique store.

“You don’t need to make the call...” At this time, Xavia suddenly spoke up. In fact, if Felicity wasn’t about to make the phone call, she wouldn’t want to tell the truth because Gerald had actually bought this expensive bag worth fifty-five thousand dollars for someone else.

However, since Felicity was going to make the phone call, she decided that she might as well tell them the truth directly.

“This Hermes bag is indeed a genuine product. When Gerald bought the bag this morning, Yuri and I...we were also at the Hermes boutique store. He paid fifty-five thousand dollars for that bag!”

“What?”

Bam!

Everyone in the dormitory froze in place.

Chapter 13

Xavia quickly explained what she had encountered that morning to all the girls in the dormitory.

“Oh my god. It’s actually true! That Hermes bag is actually worth fifty-five thousand dollars!”

“Gerald had always been living off the subsidy from the university and the money he made from running errands for everyone else. I really didn’t expect him to have such good luck! He actually received such a luxurious Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card!

“Damn it! If Gerald is willing to give me this Hermes bag, I’d definitely be more than willing to spend the night with him!”

“One night? No way! If Gerald is willing to give me this Hermes bag, I’m willing to be his woman for at least one month!”

“Oh, you’re so shameless!”

Even though they all knew that Gerald’s card was just for a one-time use, knowing that the Hermes bag was a genuine one worth fifty-five thousand dollars was still very shocking to everyone.

Even if they sold this bag, they could easily get forty to fifty thousand dollars!

This was still money!

Alice had a very ugly expression on her face at this time.

She never would have expected Gerald to actually give Naomi a Hermes bag that was worth fifty-five thousand dollars as her birthday gift.

She suddenly thought of all the contempt that she felt for him today as well as the envy and admiration that the other girls were feeling for the Hermes bag at this time.

Alice felt as though she had just been played.

She got even more furious at this time.

“Hahaha. Even if the bag is really worth fifty-five thousand dollars, doesn’t Gerald know that he could have just sold the Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card for more money instead of using it directly? This only proves that this person is very dim-witted!” Alice said after analyzing the situation.

Xavia also nodded in acknowledgement. “Yes! There’s definitely a problem with Gerald’s brain!”

“Hahaha. Please don’t be jealous! Gerald gave the fifty-five thousand dollars Hermes bag to Naomi as a birthday gift. We should be happy for her! Naomi, you should treat him to a meal!”

Felicity giggled.

She wasn’t only beautiful but she was also a live broadcaster.

She had already seen a lot in this world.

“Yes, yes! Naomi, you should treat him to dinner!”

“Naomi, can you just lend me this Hermes bag for one day? Just one day!”

All the girls were begging Naomi at this time.

Naomi was in shock. Why should she lend them the bag? The first thing that came to her mind was the fact that Gerald probably did not know that he could have sold the shopper’s card for more money instead! She was afraid that he had been fooled by the salesgirl.

After all, Gerald had never experienced this sort of luxury before.

“No, I’m going to return this bag to Gerald. If he decides to sell the bag, he can make at least forty to fifty thousand dollars and he’ll be able to live a carefree life in university without having to worry about money anymore!”

Naomi thought differently from others and she was actually worried about Gerald.

“No way!”

“No way!”

Unexpectedly, Xavia and Alice yelled out loud in unison.

Xavia was thinking to herself and she really could not accept the fact that Gerald would actually have fifty thousand dollars if that happened.

She didn’t want that to happen at all.

She didn’t want Gerald to be living a better life after she dumped him.

Xavia wanted Gerald to be poor and miserable without her.

On the other hand, Alice simply hated Gerald.

“Naomi, why would you do that? Gerald was the one who gave you the Hermes bag so why would you return it to him?”

Alice frowned immediately.

Felicity smiled before she said, "It's such a valuable Hermes bag. You shouldn't waste it just like that! I want to start a live broadcast and show my viewers this bag! Do you mind if I do that, Naomi?"

Naomi shook her head as she smiled.

Even though Naomi agreed to allow Felicity to show the Hermes bag on her live broadcast, she was thinking about how she would convince Gerald to return the bag to the luxury store the next day.

Even if they couldn't get back the original amount that Gerald had paid for the bag, they could at least get back forty to fifty thousand dollars.

Click! Click!

The group of girls rushed over to take pictures of the Hermes bag.

The Hermes bag finally fell into Felicity's hand.

She started her live broadcast immediately.

"Hello, babies! I've not seen all of you for a day and I really missed all of you. Besides, I have some beautiful babies with me here today as an added bonus!" Felicity said as she smiled cutely at the camera.

In a blink of an eye, there were already more than three thousand people watching the live broadcast.

Felicity had already been hosting live broadcasts for more than a year.

Since she was hosting a local live broadcast, most of her fans were her classmates and her university mates.

As soon as Felicity appeared, the discussion in the live broadcast room was extremely lively.

“Damn! This is really a bonus! I really like that tall girl with red hair!”

“Wow! Please give me the number of that beautiful girl with red hair!”

“Oh my god. Felicity, you’re actually friends with Alice from the Broadcasting and Media Department?”

“Ahh! Alice from the Broadcasting and Media Department is simply too gorgeous. You’re taking my breath away!”

On the other side, Alice, who had always had a cold expression on her face, finally smiled when she saw her name on the live chat.

She did not feel as depressed as she felt when she saw the beautiful Felicity earlier.

She nodded as she smiled slightly at the fans on the screen.

“Wow! Are you guys more interested in the other beauties now? Hmph! I’m so sad!”

Felicity made a gesture as though she was wiping the tears away from her eyes as she showed an aggrieved expression on her face.

After that, the crowd of people replied immediately.

“How would that be possible? All of you beauties are my wives! I love all of you.”

At this time, the live broadcast room prompted:

The wealthy and young Yuri is now online!

The super wealthy Danny is now online!

When their classmates saw that Felicity was online, everyone started watching her live broadcast immediately.

Felicity was really a very beautiful and gorgeous girl and she was very experienced and professional in her live broadcasts.

Therefore, she was many boys' dream girl.

However, Felicity also had very high demands and standards.

Both Yuri and Danny, who were from the next class, had already tried to pursue her before but they failed undoubtedly. This was also the reason why they would both always try to support and help Felicity.

They wanted to get in her good books!

"Babies, you're all in love with someone else now and I'm already crying! Aren't you going to send me some gifts? I am giving you guys the pleasure of looking at so many beautiful girls now!" Felicity said in an aggrieved manner.

Gerald's roommate, Harper, had always been in love with Felicity.

Therefore, he sent her ten roses at once.

Each rose was priced at one dollar.

"Wow, thank you so much Harper! I've received your love!"

Harper then replied, "You're so beautiful, goddess. By the way, isn't the bag in your hand the gift that Gerald had given Naomi today?"

At this time, Harper typed his comment in the live chat.

This instantly sparked a heated discussion among the viewers.

"Damn it! I didn't even realize that it's a Hermes bag. Moreover, it seems like it's the limited edition collector's item!"

"Oh my god! Felicity, are you getting sponsored by a man? My heart is breaking into pieces!"

Danny said, "Hahaha. Yuri told me that Gerald bought this bag for Naomi with a one-time shopper's card. Hahaha. I cannot believe that Gerald is so stupid!"

The netizens then replied, "Oh my god. He must be an idiot!"

Xavia had obviously told Yuri about how Gerald could afford to buy the bag and Yuri had told Danny and his friends about it.

After that, the online discussion revolved around Gerald.

Yuri: "Hahaha. I'm really stimulated by many idiots today. Xavia actually fought with me for the entire day because of what Gerald did! I really feel as though we wasted a lot of time because of that idiot!"

Harper realized that they were all mocking Gerald.

Therefore, he tried to change the subject by sending Felicity another ten roses, one after the other.

Danny said, "Harper, why are you sending Felicity this broken gift? Can you only afford to send her roses?"

After that, he continued typing.

"Why don't you send her a rocket instead?"

One rocket cost a hundred dollars.

"Danny sent you a rocket!"

"Danny send you a rocket!"

Danny sent five consecutive rockets in a row!

Felicity, Xavia and Alice were extremely excited at this time. They didn't realize that it was so easy to make money through a live broadcast!

Since he did not want to fall behind, Yuri sent Felicity ten consecutive rockets at the same time.

One thousand dollars.

He wanted to wipe out all the bad luck from his encounter with Gerald today.

Xavia was very proud at this time. This was her man Yuri!

Danny then replied, "Hahaha. Harper, I think even if everyone in your dormitory, including Gerald, were to pool all your money together, you wouldn't even be able to compare to me! You're all just six paupers to me! Do you want to compete with me in the live broadcast room today?"

Harper was furious at this time.

At this time, in Gerald's dormitory, Gerald sneezed and he woke up from his sleep.

After that, he saw all the messages that his classmates were sending, one after the other.

When he turned on his cell phone, he realized that his classmates were all talking about him and the Hermes bag that Felicity had shared on her live broadcast.

All the beautiful girls were saying that he was a fool.

What was happening?

Gerald was stunned. Were they mocking him?

When Gerald read through the messages from his classmates he realized that Felicity must have talked about him in her live broadcast.

Was he a part of her sharing today?

As he thought about it, Gerald quickly logged into Felicity's live broadcast.

As soon as he logged into the live chatroom, he saw Danny and Yuri insulting and making fun of his roommates.

"Six paupers?"

Gerald smiled coldly to himself.

Chapter 14

At this time, Yuri and Danny were creating a scene in the live broadcast room.

“Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!”

“Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!”

“Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!”

Ten consecutive international cruise ships were sent at one go!

The price of each international cruise ship was one thousand dollars!

“Wow!”

“Thank you, Ordinary Man! I love you, Ordinary Man!”

Felicity yelled out in excitement.

Each of the girls could not help but looked at the screen on Felicity’s phone at this time.

This was no ordinary person! He had actually sent her ten international cruise ships worth ten thousand dollars at one go!

Alice and Xavia were slightly surprised at this time.

They already heard that they could make money from live broadcasts a long time ago and they were finally convinced today.

“Ordinary Man, are you from our university? Which department are you from?” asked some of the girls at this time.

At the same time, Yuri and Danny, who were viewing the live broadcast, suddenly felt very languished.

Of course, they had ten thousand dollars. In fact, each of them had around twenty to thirty thousand dollars as their allowance every month.

However, if this tyrant could swipe ten thousand dollars at one go, he must really be an extraordinary person.

They would never be able to steal the limelight from him!

Felicity was also very excited at this time. “Yes, Original Man. May I know which department you’re from?”

Ordinary Man replied, “I’m from the Language Department!”

“Eh? The Language Department? That’s our department!”

“Apart from Danny and Yuri, who else is so wealthy in the Language Department?”

“I’ve never heard of him!”

All the girls were surprised.

If he was really from the Language Department, then they would have to make sure that they dressed up beautifully in future. Otherwise, they might lose out on the chance to get together with this ordinary man!

“Ordinary Man, which class are you in? Do you have a girlfriend? If you don’t, I can introduce one to you!”

At this time, Xavia quickly walked towards Felicity as she spoke to the camera.

In fact, Xavia was also an extremely beautiful girl with long legs and pinkish rosy cheeks.

Xavia was also thinking that she should also start a live broadcast so she would be able to make some money and get herself a rich man so that she could prepare for her future.

Therefore, she could not help but asked the question out of curiosity.

Ordinary Man: "No, I don't have a girlfriend."

"Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!"

"Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!"

"Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!"

Bam! Bam! Bam!

He sent another five consecutive international cruise ships to Felicity's live broadcast.

"Ahh!"

Felicity was so excited she could barely stand still.

All the other girls also took deep breaths at this time.

Felicity asked excitedly, "Ordinary Man, I can find you a girlfriend if you don't have one. We're all from the Language Department anyway! There are so many beautiful girls behind me, so why don't you tell me who you're interested in? I'm also available!"

In fact, Felicity was starting to regret doing this live broadcast in front of so many beautiful girls today.

She didn't want to share her potential suitor with anyone else.

She also felt very uncomfortable sharing this wealthy guy with the other girls.

She glanced at this person's account and she realized that he was actually a supreme member.

This meant that he had already recharged at least one hundred thousand dollars into his live broadcast account! That was the only reason why he had that verification icon on his profile.

If she could, Felicity really wanted to do a private live broadcast for Ordinary Man!

However, as she thought about it, Felicity felt that she could also gain a lot of benefits from having the other girls around on the live broadcast today.

"So, Ordinary Man, what do you think? Which one of these girls are you interested in?"

Felicity asked in a teasing manner.

"Does the girl standing behind you have a boyfriend?" Ordinary Man replied immediately.

The person standing behind Felicity at this time was none other than Xavia.

"Ahh, I...I...I...why don't you make a guess, Ordinary Man?" Xavia replied in surprise.

She didn't want to be so straightforward with her answer because she knew that Yuri was probably still watching the live broadcast.

"Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!"

“Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!”

Ordinary Man sent another five consecutive international cruise ships to Felicity’s live broadcast.

At this time, the management team for the live broadcast platform took notice of Felicity’s live broadcast because of the twenty consecutive international cruise ships.

Therefore, the management team quickly promoted Felicity’s live broadcast to the homepage. More and more of their university mates joined in the live broadcast at this time.

The number of viewers on Felicity’s live broadcast quickly exceeded more than five thousand viewers.

Ordinary Man then said, “I don’t want to guess. Why don’t you tell me the answer directly?”

Xavia took a deep breath and her face flushed red as she said, “I...”

She wanted to grit her teeth and say that she didn’t have a boyfriend.

Felicity was very jealous at this time and she quickly said, “Yes, she has a boyfriend! Her boyfriend is Yuri, who just sent me the rockets just now!”

Xavia was very annoyed. Did Felicity think she was that great? When she returned to her dormitory, she will look into starting her own live broadcast in the future! When that time comes, they’ll know who has a higher popularity then!

Hmm!

Ordinary Man: “Hahaha. He actually dares to show off when he’s just sending a rocket? By the way, the bag you’re holding in your hand seems to be worth a lot of money. I heard that it’s worth over fifty thousand dollars! I think that man who gave you the bag is the true hero!”

Felicity raised the Hermes bag in her hand before she said, "Wow! Ordinary Man, you can actually tell the value of this bag? You think that this bag is beautiful too?"

Felicity began to show off the bag in front of the camera.

At this time, Alice, who was standing next to Felicity, quickly barged in and said:

"Brother, I think you've misunderstood the situation. The person who gave our friend this bag isn't a hero! He is just a pauper from your Language Department!"

Alice couldn't take it when someone was actually praising Gerald for being a hero.

Therefore, she subconsciously stepped in to explain the truth!

"What if you find out in the future that the person who gave your friend that bag isn't actually a pauper? What if you find out that he's actually a very wealthy and powerful man? What would you do then? Don't you think that we shouldn't judge a book by its cover?"

Ordinary Man spoke up immediately.

Alice replied, "You sound like a very mature and stable man but I assure you that the person who gave my friend this bag is definitely a pauper! As for how he could afford to buy this bag, there's actually a long story behind it!"

Alice continued chatting with this Ordinary Man through the live broadcast.

However, she did not know why she had a strange feeling in her heart.

She felt as though this man was very mature and stable. Even though he was very wealthy, he didn't seem like a dull, ordinary second-generation rich kid.

Alice would love to have an opportunity to meet up with him.

“Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!”

“Ordinary Man sent you an international cruise ship!”

Ordinary man sent another five consecutive international cruise ships to Felicity without any hesitation.

Everyone was shocked.

“Ordinary Man, do you want to exchange numbers with me? I can give you a private live broadcast everyday if you want me to!” Felicity quickly said as she looked in the camera.

However, when Ordinary Man did not reply after a long time, she looked at the list of viewers and she realized that he had already gone offline!

Felicity felt very dejected. However, he had already given her twenty-five thousand dollars today!

Felicity could not help but feel a little excited.

At the same time, many of the girls had already downloaded the live broadcast software on their phones because they wanted to find out the details of the Ordinary Man in Felicity’s live broadcast so that they could chat privately with him.

This included Xavia...

At the male dormitory, Gerald could hear Danny from the dormitory next door cursing at the wealthy man who was showing off his wealth on Felicity’s live broadcast.

He tossed his cell phone aside with a bittersweet smile on his face.

Sure enough, anyone who had more money would always be the winner. He could do anything that he wanted to!

Hahaha...

Gerald was Ordinary Man.

When Gerald saw Yuri and Danny insulting and mocking his own roommates, he instantly recharged one hundred and fifty thousand dollars into his live broadcast account.

Sure enough, both of them shut up as soon as he appeared.

Gerald could hear Danny still cursing from the room next door, probably because his self-esteem was hurt.

In fact, Gerald was deliberately testing Xavia earlier on the live broadcast.

Just as he had expected, Xavia did not let him down at all. She was really a materialistic girl who was full of greed.

Gerald had completely given up on her!

Since he was already exhausted, Gerald decided to go back to sleep.

The next day, his roommates climbed over the wall at five o'clock in the morning to go back to their dormitory to sleep.

As they had to attend class today, they started running towards the lecture hall immediately after they were done with their breakfast.

“Gerald, stop right there!”

As Gerald was about to leave the cafeteria, he suddenly heard a girl’s voice stopping him from leaving!

Chapter 15

Gerald turned around as soon as he heard the girl’s voice.

He saw a tall and fair beautiful girl dressed in tight denim cropped trousers and a pair of high heels standing behind him at this time.

Her hands were on her hips as she glared at Gerald with a look of contempt on her face.

“Gerald, do you really think that it’s okay for you to rely on the student subsidy given to you by the student union when you could actually buy a luxury product worth fifty-five thousand dollars for yourself? Let me tell you something! We’re not going to include you in the school subsidy for next year!” the girl said to Gerald in a cold manner.

“Whitney, Gerald got the money as a reward for saving that young girl’s life! The young girl’s parents gave him the shopper’s card to thank him for his kindness. Why would you revoke Gerald’s subsidy? Do you really think you’re that great just because you’re the president of the student union?”

The president of the student union glared at Harper with a cold expression on her face without saying anything at all.

“What has this to do with you anyway? Don’t you know that the only reason why Gerald could actually receive a student subsidy is simply because of the student union? The reason why we fought so hard for his subsidy was because we knew he needed help! However, he actually bought a Hermes bag worth fifty-five thousand dollars for himself! Haven’t you heard the rumors that everyone is spreading around the school today?”

“You caused very serious damage to the student union because of your actions! This action alone is enough for us to revoke your subsidy!”

Whitney glanced at Gerald with disgust in her eyes. Everyone obviously knew about the Hermes bag because of Felicity's live broadcast last night.

Moreover, Whitney was the president of the student union who was also one of the chancellor's favorite students in the university.

Whitney Jenkins came from a very favorable family background and she was also very good at what she did. She could handle many difficult situations and since she was the president of the student union, she was in charge of almost all of the departments in the university.

All the lecturers and tutors from all the different departments were also very familiar with her.

She had the typical characteristics of a leader and therefore, Whitney did not care about someone who had no money or power such as Gerald.

However, she respected the fact that Gerald had always been very obedient and willing to do whatever she asked him to do. That was the reason why she always helped him obtain the subsidy every year.

The other poorer students in the university were all unwilling to act as a free laborer for Whitney just so they could obtain the subsidy.

This was also the reason why Harper disliked Whitney.

"Gerald, why don't you tell me what we should do about this?" Whitney asked as she glared at Gerald.

Gerald frowned. To be honest, he no longer needed to rely on the subsidy given by the student union.

However, even though Whitney looked down on him, the subsidy he had received in the past was due to her efforts.

Gerald asked, "So, what do you want from me?"

“Alright then. Since you’re asking, I’ll make sure that you can continue receiving the subsidy if you do something for me. If you do it well, I’ll forgive you for the damage that you’ve done to the reputation of the student union!”

Whitney was referring to the fact that everyone was scolding Gerald and calling him a fool because he used the shopper’s card to buy a bag.

Whitney was filled with hatred as she thought about it.

How could this pauper be so lucky? Why would anyone give him a Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card just like that?

Moreover, Gerald had even given someone else the fifty-five thousand dollar Hermes bag as a birthday present!

Fifty-five thousand dollars!

If he gave it to her, she would be so much happier.

However, Gerald did not say anything to her and he did not even think of her at all! So, Whitney decided to teach him a lesson by using the subsidy as a bargaining chip.

That fool!

“What do you want me to do for you?” Gerald asked with a calm expression on his face.

“It’s actually very simple. The student union will be holding a big event next week and we need someone to clean the venue up. Therefore, I want you to clean up the auditorium for us! If you do that, I’ll continue helping you to apply for your subsidy next year! Don’t you say that I’m not looking out for you, Gerald. I think you should just skip class today. I’ve already prepared a letter for you!”

Whitney said as she threw the fake letter at Gerald. After that, she turned around and walked away in her high heels.

“Damn it! That woman is such a bully!”

Harper cursed out loud immediately.

Gerald’s roommate, Benjamin was also very furious at this time.

“Don’t worry, Gerald. I think you shouldn’t clean up the auditorium. Do you know how big the auditorium is? How can Gerald possibly clean up the venue on his own? Let’s just head to class now.”

He patted Gerald gently on his shoulder.

“But what is going to happen to Gerald’s subsidy then?”

Gerald’s roommates were a little worried for him.

After thinking for a short while, Harper finally clapped his hands:

“It’s okay! Why don’t we head to the auditorium together to help Gerald clean up the venue? Since there are so many of us, we will be able to do it even more quickly.”

“Alright then! That sounds like a good idea!”

Gerald’s roommates nodded in unison.

Gerald felt warmth in his heart.

In fact, even though Gerald had suffered so much humiliation in university for the past three years, he was still very optimistic.

This was because he had managed to meet a bunch of people he could call his brothers because of his poverty.

These were brothers who really thought of what was best for him.

However, Gerald could never allow them to get punished along with him.

To be honest, Gerald really wanted to tell them that he was actually a second-generation rich kid.

However, Gerald was afraid that their friendship would come to an end as soon as he told them the truth about himself.

Gerald felt that their friendship and concern was the true wealth to him and he didn't want to lose that!

"Forget it. I'll clean up the venue on my own. It wouldn't be the first time that I'll be cleaning up the auditorium all by myself anyway. Moreover, all of you won't be as skillful as I am and I think you won't be able to help out much even if you did come with me!"

After thinking about it, Gerald decided not to reveal his identity yet.

Therefore, he could only endure this for the time being.

After that, Gerald headed to the auditorium by himself.

"Gerald, why did you take so long to come here? Do you really think you're that great just because you bought a new bag?"

Whitney started insulting Gerald as soon as he stepped into the auditorium.

“Hahaha!”

Everyone who were rehearsing for the upcoming event in the auditorium burst out in laughter as soon as they heard Whitney’s words.

This was because they would be putting up a performance next week.

Therefore, Whitney decided to ask the team from the student union department to rehearse for their performance here.

“Don’t say that! After all, he could afford to buy a bag worth fifty-five thousand dollars! How can we even be compared to him?”

“Yes, you better be careful when you speak, president! Otherwise, Gerald might actually turn out to be a wealthy and powerful man who can throw money at your face!”

The group of girls looked at Gerald as they laughed out loud.

Moreover, the group of boys were staring at Gerald with an envious expression on their faces.

In fact, they were all jealous. They were jealous of Gerald’s luck.

If they had fifty five-thousand dollars, they could buy the bag and give it to their president, Whitney, instead!

Gerald turned a deaf ear to them and he did not even bother to reply at all.

After that, he picked up a broom as he prepared to clean up the mess that they had left behind.

“Go away! Do you really think you’re a wealthy and powerful man now?”

At this time, a tall and muscular boy came over as he pushed Gerald aside in a harsh manner.

Gerald nearly fell down because of him.

Of course, Gerald knew who the boy was. His name was Victor Wright and he was the vice president of the student union and also the captain of the university’s basketball team.

His family specialized in trade and he was also very rich.

He also contributed a fair share to all of the humiliation that Gerald had suffered in his three years of university life.

“Victor! Why are you here?”

Whitney was very surprised and cheered up as soon as she saw Victor.

This was because Victor was the type of guy that Whitney was interested in. He was not only tall, handsome, and wealthy, but he was also a very good basketball player.

He was the type of boy that girls would fall head over heels in love with.

At the same time, many girls from the performing team looked at Victor as they blushed slightly.

“Oh! I’m here because I went out early to modify my car today,” Victor replied as he took a sip of water.

“Car? What? Victor, did you buy a car?”

Some of the girls asked in surprise.

“Hahaha. Yes, I bought an Audi A6 just to use it for fun!” Victor replied as he chuckled.

“Wow!”

All the beautiful girls were very impressed at this time

Even Whitney was slightly moved when she heard his words. “Is your car domestic or imported?”

In fact, it did not matter whether the car was domestic or imported because an Audi A6 was a very powerful car.

“Imported! My dad’s friend helped me to get it for one hundred thousand dollars cheaper! Hahaha,” Victor replied as he smiled.

At this time, there was a strange expression on Whitney’s face.

Moreover, Gerald, who was sweeping the floor, couldn’t help eavesdropping on their conversation when he heard that they were talking about cars.

Gerald had always dreamt of owning his own car.

He did not care about the brand of type of car as long as it was a car!

Why was this his dream? This was because in the past, Gerald would never have been able to afford to buy a car at all.

Therefore, he was very curious as he listened to their discussion.

He was very distracted at this time.

He didn't even realize that his broom was sweeping over a girl's feet as she sat on the rostrum.

"Ahh!"

Gerald only realized what he had done when the girl screamed out loud.

Chapter 16

Gerald accidentally swept the broom over the girl's feet.

She was wearing a pair of white shoes and her calves were extremely fair. She was also carefully listening to Victor as he talked about his car, her full attention on Victor's words.

Unexpectedly, Gerald had actually swept the dirty broom over her shoes, smearing dust all over her white shoes.

She couldn't help but scream when she realized what was happening.

Her scream unexpectedly attracted the attention of Whitney, Victor, and the others who were in the auditorium at this time.

"What's wrong, Mila?"

Whitney hurried over before she asked Mila with a concerned expression on her face.

Victor also rushed over to Mila immediately.

"No, no, I'm fine. There's no problem at all."

Mila Smith tucked her hair behind her ear and she took out some wet wipes before she leaned down and attempted to wipe the dust off from her shoes.

However, the more she tried to wipe her shoes, the dirtier they got.

Mila was also obsessed with cleanliness. Therefore, she couldn't help but frown when she saw the mess on her white shoes.

"Gerald, did you do that to Mila's shoes?" Whitney asked as she glared at Gerald.

She had a cold and aggressive expression on her face.

Moreover, Victor was also very angry at this time.

"Damn it, you pauper! Do you know how much Mila's shoes cost? You'll never be able to afford to pay for it!"

After that, Victor stepped forward before he grabbed Gerald by his collar.

"No, no, it wasn't him!"

When Mila saw that Victor was about to beat Gerald up, she quickly stepped forward to dissuade him.

In fact, Mila had already been paying some attention to Gerald for a long time. She felt that he was a very different person compared to everyone else.

Moreover, she could tell that he was not from a rich family background.

Perhaps that was the reason why Victor and the rest of the boys were always bullying him.

However, despite being bullied and humiliated all the time, Mila could not see the slightest look of inferiority in Gerald's eyes. He was completely indifferent and the fact that he was poor didn't seem to bother him in the slightest.

Gerald always had a very humble and sincere look on his face.

Even if Mila wanted to lose her temper, she couldn't bring herself to do so.

Therefore, Mila quickly stood up for Gerald when she saw that Victor was going to beat him up.

"Don't worry, Mila! We should at least make sure that this pauper pays you back for your shoes!" Victor replied in a vicious manner.

Mila was not from the Language Department, but she was a student from the Broadcasting and Media Department instead.

However, she had been friends with Whitney ever since they were young and the reason why she came over to the auditorium today was because she wanted to have some fun.

Though Victor liked Whitney, he was even more interested in her best friend, Mila.

"Oh, no! There's no need for him to pay me back for the shoes. I'll just go back to the dormitory and change into another pair of shoes!" Mila said in a hurry.

She also nodded slightly at Gerald.

"You're lucky today, kid!" Victor said as he glared at Gerald. In fact, Victor was glad that he was able to act as the hero in front of the two beautiful girls today.

When he saw that Mila was about to leave, he quickly approached her.

“By the way, Mila, why don’t we go out and have a meal together after you change into a new pair of shoes? After all, everyone must be tired from the rehearsal today. I’ll treat everyone to a meal at Orchard Gardens!”

“Wow! Orchard Gardens? I heard that the fruit salad and steak there is really delicious but dining there is also really expensive!”

“Brother Victor, I’d like to come too!”

All the girls were excited as soon as Victor said that he would be buying Mila a meal at Orchard Gardens.

“Sure!” Victor replied as he clasped his hands together.

At this time, Whitney grabbed Mila’s hand before she smiled and said, “Mila, we’ll wait below your dormitory for you!”

In fact, Gerald could tell that Mila did not feel like going at all.

However, Mila could tell that everyone was very excited to go there and Victor had just had a clash with Gerald because of her.

Therefore, she could not bring herself to turn down his invitation.

Mila nodded slightly.

“Okay, I will drive! See you guys there!”

Victor was very excited that his strategy to ask Mila out seemed to have succeeded. Therefore, he glanced at Gerald before he walked out of the auditorium.

Whitney turned and looked at Gerald before she said, "What are you looking at, Gerald? Do you really think that you are invited to join us for lunch too? Let me tell you, your subsidy isn't confirmed yet! You'd better stay back and make sure you clean up this auditorium properly! Otherwise, I'll make sure to teach you a lesson when I return!"

Gerald kept quiet as Victor and Whitney continued taunting him in tandem.

In fact, he was very angry at this time.

However, he knew that he would not gain anything from losing his temper and he would only be giving Victor the opportunity to beat him up.

It was really unwise to ask for a beating. Therefore, Gerald decided to just let it go.

"Come on, Mila! Let's enjoy the ride in Victor's new Audi A6 later!"

Whitney pulled Mila out of the auditorium after glaring at Gerald with a contemptuous expression on her face.

The other people also walked out of the auditorium, one after the other.

They would definitely not be able to get there in one car so Gerald couldn't help but wonder how they would be getting there.

Gerald thought to himself as he cleaned up the mess that they had left behind.

Should he get a car too?

He continued thinking to himself.

When Gerald was done cleaning up the auditorium, it was almost noon.

At this time, Gerald suddenly received an incoming phone call.

It was a phone call from Harper, the head of his dormitory.

“Gerald, are you done cleaning up the auditorium?”

Gerald nodded. “Yes.”

“Is Whitney crazy? We’ve already discussed this matter among ourselves and we’ve decided that if she dares reject your subsidy application, we’ll bring this matter up to the chancellor!”

Gerald felt warmth in his heart as he said, “Thank you for looking out for me!”

“Gerald, if you’re free, come and join us for lunch!”

Harper invited Gerald for lunch but Gerald could hear the sudden change in his tone.

It sounded as though Harper was a little embarrassed.

Gerald was so close to Harper and he naturally knew that there was something amiss. This man was usually very manly, so why did he sound so embarrassed and shy today?

“Will there be anyone else joining us today?” Gerald could not help but asked with a weary smile on his face.

“Bingo! Gerald, do you remember the girl named Hayley who was with Alice at Naomi’s birthday party last night?”

All the girls from Alice’s dormitories attended Naomi’s birthday celebration last night.

Gerald had a vague impression of Hayley Ians. She had short hair and she looked very cute and petite.

However, her character and personality was similar to Alice's.

She kept rolling her eyes at Gerald last night even though she did not say anything at all.

"Yes, I know who she is. Why? Did you ask her out?" Gerald asked with a surprised expression on his face.

"Well, I was heading back to the dormitory after class today when I ran into her. She lost her cell phone in the cafeteria and I offered to help her look for it. Fortunately, I'm quite familiar with some of the workers in the cafeteria. After checking out the CCTV and looking around the cafeteria, we finally found her cell phone!"

"I felt that it was fate because I was actually pretty interested in her when I met her last night. Therefore, I mustered up the courage to ask her out for lunch with me and my friends today. She agreed immediately!"

Harper was extremely excited over the other end of the line.

To be honest, Gerald was very happy for Harper when he heard his words.

However, Gerald really didn't feel like going out with Alice and her friends.

He simply couldn't tolerate them rolling their eyes at him!

"That's great, brother! I wish you all the best! I think I'll just skip lunch because I don't want to be a light bulb!" Gerald replied as he laughed.

"Damn it! How could you do this to me, Gerald? All our brothers have already agreed to come with me. Moreover, Naomi will also be there today! It seems as though Naomi is going to introduce someone very

important to you today. If you seize this opportunity and make the most out of it, you might be able to turn your life around in an instant!”

Harper was also very concerned about Gerald.

“A very important person?”

Gerald could not help but think to himself, ‘Damn it. Don’t tell me that Alice will also be there today?’

Chapter 17

Gerald could not describe the feelings he felt for Alice.

Alice was really beautiful, and elegant.

However, Gerald really could not tolerate her attitude because she wasn’t only very rude and arrogant but she also looked down on those who were poor.

Gerald could not understand what Naomi was thinking. How could she possibly have intended to matchmake him to Alice?

Therefore, Gerald really did not want to join them for lunch before he did not want the situation to turn awkward.

However, he could not reject Harper’s sincere invitation as he didn’t want to let his brothers down.

The place that they had decided to have lunch at was a western restaurant named Bludhaven.

Naturally, Harper could not afford to host a lunch at any five-star hotel unlike the second-generation rich kids such as Danny or Yuri.

The six girls from Alice’s dormitory turned up for lunch today.

Moreover, the six people from Gerald's dormitory also came with Naomi.

However, since Gerald was not with the rest of the boys in the dormitory, he did not go to the lunch place with Harper and the rest of the boys.

"In my opinion, Naomi, we only need the five boys from Harper's dormitory, you, and the six of us from my dormitory to come for lunch! Having the twelve of us eat together is good enough!" Alice said as she sat in her seat as she drank her juice.

The meaning behind her words was self-evident.

In fact, Alice had a good impression of Harper and she felt that he was also a very stable and mature man.

However, Harper's parents were just ordinary people who were teachers in a middle school. Therefore, he was naturally not up to Alice's standards.

"Yes, I agree with Alice. Why should Gerald join us for lunch today? As soon as I see him, I start thinking about everything that he'd done last night! It's so annoying!" Hayley also said jokingly at this time.

"Okay, okay. Alice, Hayley, please stop hating on Gerald. Did you know that he's actually a really good person if you'd just give him a chance and get to know him better?" Naomi replied as she smiled.

"Yes, Gerald is really a very good guy..." Harper said immediately after.

"Well, if he was really such a good person, he wouldn't make the twelve of us sit here just to wait for him alone, would he? Don't you think I'm right, Hayley?" Alice said as she snorted coldly.

"Oh look! Gerald is here!"

At this time, Naomi stood up excitedly as she waved at Gerald, gesturing for him to come over and join them at the table.

“I’m sorry for being late. I had to go back to the dormitory to make an important phone call. There was something that I had to deal with.”

Gerald said as he smiled at Naomi.

Naomi was sitting directly opposite Alice at this time.

Her eyes wandered for a moment before she stood up and pulled Gerald to her seat and said, “Gerald, sit here!”

Gerald knew what Naomi was trying to do.

He simply sat down without putting too much thought into it.

“Jacelyn! Let’s switch seats!”

Unexpectedly, Alice had a cold expression on her face as she asked one of her girlfriends to switch seats with her as soon as Gerald sat down in front of her.

“Sorry, Alice! I don’t want to switch seats with you. If I sit opposite that pauper, I’m afraid that people who don’t know the truth would actually misunderstand and think that he’s my boyfriend!”

“Why? Wouldn’t you be happy if Gerald was your boyfriend? He could buy you a Hermes bag worth fifty five thousand dollars! Hahaha!”

“Yes, yes, Jacelyn! You should grab hold of this opportunity that is given to you!”

Jacelyn Leigh was a very gorgeous girl who was very interested in fashion and makeup.

As she was also from a wealthy family, she naturally despised Gerald as well.

When Jacelyn heard her roommates making fun of her, she quickly replied, “If you think that Gerald is so good, then you should just ask him to be your boyfriend!”

“Ahh! I give up. I surrender.”

The beautiful girls stopped joking around as soon as they heard her words.

They were obviously very sensitive to the fact that Gerald might actually end up being their boyfriends and they would definitely be ridiculed then!

Harper and Benjamin were both a little annoyed when they heard the girls’ conversation. However, they could only endure it silently.

After that, Gerald decided not to sit with Alice.

“Naomi, come and sit over here. I’ll just sit at the side!”

Gerald couldn’t help but laugh because he was treated like a plague in the eyes of all these beautiful girls.

Even though he was a second-generation rich kid like everyone else, the treatment that he received from all the beautiful girls was totally different.

Gerald had so many assets under his name, but why couldn’t he be favored by these beautiful girls?

Gerald thought about using money to win these girls over but he couldn’t bring himself to do so

Ahh!

Gerald decided to just step aside.

Naomi really wanted to mend and get rid of the misunderstanding between Alice and Gerald because she really felt that they would make a good couple.

Moreover, both of them were her good friends!

“Alice?”

At this time, a man’s voice suddenly sounded.

A tall and handsome boy dressed in branded clothing from head to toe approached their table and he looked at Alice with a surprised expression in his eyes.

“Are you Quinton Ziegler?”

Alice was also stunned. She touched her hair before she stood up with a sweet and pleasant smile on her face.

“Yes, Alice. I haven’t seen you in over two years and you’re really looking more and more beautiful. I almost couldn’t recognize you,” Quinton replied as he smiled.

“By the way, Quinton, didn’t your dad send you abroad to study? When did you return home?”

“I came back two days ago and I was just asking around for your contact information! By the way, did you manage to resolve the incident that you got into at Emperor Karaoke Bar? Our high school classmate, Desmond, called me and told me that you ran into some trouble there!” Quinton said with a concerned expression on his face.

At this time, Alice covered her mouth in shock.

Alice's roommates had also come to a sudden realization.

"Ahh! Quinton, were you the one who helped us resolve the issue last night?"

Alice was very surprised.

In fact, Quinton had really wanted to help Alice out last night and he even asked his father to call the manager of the karaoke bar, Flynn.

However, Flynn did not pick up the phone.

When Quinton heard Alice asking him if he was the one who resolved this matter on their behalf, he did not think too much about it.

Instead, he simply nodded as he said, "Well, I asked my dad to help me deal with it."

Alice felt very proud and excited at this time.

Women were always the ones with the most pride and vanity!

Right now, Alice felt as though all her doubts had already been cleared. It turned out that the person who had helped them to resolve the problem was not Nigel or anyone else that they had contacted last night. Instead, her childhood friend, Quinton, actually turned out to be the one able to calm Brother Flynn down and get him to waive the damages for them.

Alice used to be really close to Quinton in the past because of the friendship between their fathers.

However, as Quinton's family business grew bigger and bigger, his father decided to send him abroad to further his studies.

Naturally, both of them no longer kept in touch after he left.

Unexpectedly, Quinton had actually done her such a big favor as soon as he returned to the country.

Moreover, Alice had no doubts that the Ziegler family would definitely be able to deal with someone like Flynn.

“Quinton, thank you so much for what you did for me!”

Alice was really very happy and grateful.

When Gerald saw how thankful Alice was towards Quinton, he could not help but feel a little uneasy.

He had just gotten rid of Nigel but the fruits of his victory were now stolen by this guy named Quinton.

Gerald had really wanted to tell them that he was the one who helped them to resolve the issue last night. He was the one who had gotten them out of that situation!

However, he knew that Alice would only hate and despise him more if he spoke up now.

Therefore, Gerald decided to keep quiet because he did not want to get into another argument with Alice.

He thought he should just let it go.

“I’m here to attend a birthday party organized by one of my high school friends. The birthday party is held upstairs. Alice, I will come down and chat with you again after giving a toast to my friend! You can also introduce your friends to me later!”

After that, Quinton smiled and bowed slightly as he looked at all the beautiful girls before he excused himself like a gentleman.

“Wow! He’s really very handsome!”

“Alice, how do you know him?”

“Alice, does he have a girlfriend?”

Jacelyn and the other girls were very curious at this time.

Alice proudly replied, “Quinton is a really amazing guy! Do you know the Southern Food Industries? That’s his family business and they are a tycoon in the food industry!”

“Wow! The Southern Food Industries is a public listed company and it is rated as one of the top companies in Mayberry City! That’s really incredible.”

All the girls started discussing this matter amongst themselves.

“Didn’t the news mention that Southern Food Industries is currently facing capital and financial issues?”

Gerald had been quietly listening in on their conversation but when he heard their conversation, he wanted to contribute to the topic.

As soon as he spoke up, the atmosphere around the table became cold within seconds.

At this time, Alice glared at Gerald with a furious expression on her face.

“What do you mean by that? Isn’t it common for huge businesses and industries to face capital and financial problems? Why are you so jealous?”

“Some people are just like this. They are jealous and envious of others and they seize every opportunity to target their weakness and shortcomings to put them down. Such people are really disgusting!” Jacelyn replied in a contemptuous manner.

Gerald’s sentence almost started a war...

“Alice!”

Fortunately, Quinton and one of his classmates started walking down the stairs at this time...

Chapter 18

“Alice, you look like you’re in a bad mood. Is something wrong?” Quinton asked as he walked down the stairs with his hands in his pockets.

Quinton felt that his heart was a little moved when he saw Alice, who appeared to be even more beautiful than she was two years ago.

“I’m fine. I’m just a little disgusted by some people!”

Alice then glanced at Gerald with a cold expression on his face.

“Exactly! How can you just spout nonsense without knowing your own place?”

Jacelyn and the other girls also seemed to hate Gerald. All of them were glaring at Gerald with a sharp expression on his face.

Quinton looked at Gerald.

When he came into the restaurant earlier, he seemed to have noticed that Alice was already displeased with Gerald.

However, after coming down the stairs, Alice looked even more unhappy and displeased with Gerald.

Was it possible...that this kid was in an ambiguous relationship with Alice?

Hahaha. No, that wouldn't be possible!

Quinton knew as soon as he looked at Gerald's outfit.

The total price of all of his clothing was not more than thirty dollars! How could Alice probably be in an ambiguous relationship with someone like him?

"Is there any misunderstanding between you two? Why don't you just talk it out? You're all classmates so you should try to get along well with one another!"

Quinton smiled but his eyes were focused on Gerald at this time.

"Hello, my friend. My name is Quinton. It's nice to meet you."

After that, Quinton stretched out his hand to shake hands with Gerald, revealing a gold Rolex watch on his hand.

The gold Rolex watch was extraordinary at first sight and all the girls stared at him with admiration on their faces.

Gerald could immediately tell that Quinton was not sincere and he had malicious intentions instead.

As he was about to shake hands with Gerald, Quinton suddenly asked with a surprise expression on his face, "Wow! My friend, what brand is your T-shirt from? I've not seen this brand before. Do you think it's because I've just returned from abroad?"

Quinton stared at Gerald as he made a jaw dropping expression on his face and his lips curled up slightly as he smirked at Gerald.

Quinton wanted to impress Alice and he could tell that Alice had a very bad relationship with Gerald. So, he might as well beat this kid down with a few words.

“Hahaha. It’s just an ordinary brand.”

Gerald did not intend to pick an argument with Quinton.

He couldn’t be bothered with someone like Quinton.

To be honest, Gerald had already planned to buy clothes using the Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card that his sister had given to him. However, he felt that the minimum consumption of fifty thousand dollars was a little too extravagant!

“Ooh. Is it really from an ordinary brand? By the way, Harold, have you seen this brand before since you’ve always been in the country?”

Quinton turned around to look at his classmate.

The man named Harold had blond hair and he had been busy staring at all the beautiful girls, from Alice to Hayley to Jacelyn.

Harold immediately knew what Quinton meant when he asked him the question.

After that, Harold shook his head before he smiled and said, “No, I’ve not seen this brand before. Would you like me to look it up on the internet?”

Both of them continued their discussion in a serious manner.

In fact, everyone could tell that they were just trying to mock Gerald.

However, Gerald did not look embarrassed at all.

At this time, Alice and the other girls had a satisfied expression on their faces as they looked at Gerald.

“Hahaha! Serves him right for being jealous of Quinton! Now we get to watch other people ridiculing him for being poor!” Jacelyn said as she laughed.

“After all, Quinton has just returned to the country after studying abroad. How could Gerald ever be compared to him anyway?” Alice also said in a low voice.

Alice obviously knew that Quinton was ridiculing and making things difficult for Gerald because of her. However, he was doing it in an indirect manner compared to Danny.

He was implying it without pointing fingers at Gerald.

This made Alice very happy as she felt that Quinton was a very intelligent person.

“Quinton, let me introduce you to my friends!”

After glancing at Gerald, Alice quickly introduced Quinton to everyone around the table.

After that, Quinton also introduced Harold to Alice and her friends. Harold’s family owned one of the biggest training academies in Mayberry City.

Both of them sat down at the table and Quinton naturally sat opposite Alice.

On the other hand, Harold seemed to be very interested in Jacelyn and Hayley.

The girls kept staring at Quinton and Harold as they continued chatting. The original theme of the lunch today was supposed to be the development of a relationship between Harper and Hayley.

Unfortunately, Quinton's presence suddenly changed everything and this made Harper feel a little unhappy.

Gerald could also tell that Harper was a little upset.

He could not simply ignore this and watch as his brother was neglected.

Fortunately, Gerald was already prepared for this kind of situation.

Before leaving the dormitory, Gerald had already made a phone call to Zack, the manager of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. He told him that he would like to bring a few friends there today and he asked Zack to make the necessary arrangements for him.

He did not want Harper to lose face in front of Hayley today!

Moreover, Gerald knew that Naomi had always wanted to visit Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

When Harold found out that Harper had invited Hayley out for lunch today, he started asking Harper all sorts of questions.

He kept questioning Harper about his family background and his parents' occupations. In other words, he was indirectly asking Harper if he was wealthy.

Gerald really wanted to bring up the fact that he had already arranged for the group to go to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment after lunch.

At this time, Quinton suddenly said, "By the way, I heard something when I came back to the country. I heard that the Fisher family has gone bankrupt and that they've lost Grand Marshall Restaurant that

they used to own on Mayberry Commercial Street! My dad used to be friends with Nigel's father, Adam Fisher. I am trying to get him to buy over Grand Marshall Restaurant!"

Alice's eyelids twitched slightly at this time.

Of course, they knew everything that happened to Nigel and the Fisher family.

This was because Nigel was right beside them when everything unfolded!

When the girls heard that Quinton was planning to take over Grand Marshall Restaurant, they could not help but feel extremely excited. They quickly made up their minds to become good friends with Quinton.

Alice nodded slightly before she said. "Yes, we know about what happened to Nigel and his family. We heard that he offended a very influential person in Mayberry City and that's the reason why his entire family businesses went bankrupt overnight! The Fisher family had always relied on the profits that they made from Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street, so I really wonder what they're going to do now that they are forced to withdraw their shares immediately."

Quinton watched in satisfaction as all the girls stared at him with admiration in their eyes. He really enjoyed the attention.

He nodded before he said, "Well, my father agrees with me and he wants to take over the restaurant too. After all, everyone knows the commercial value of any businesses or shops on Mayberry Commercial Street. As long as you can open a business there, you'll definitely make money like running water! My dad also mentioned that there is a very grand and luxurious manor there with a hot spring inside!"

"Wayfair Mountain Entertainment!"

Everyone was very excited when they heard the mention of the manor with the hot springs.

Quinton nodded and smiled before he said, "Have any of you been there before?"

When Quinton asked this question, Alice suddenly recalled how embarrassed they had been the night before.

However, she didn't want to hide the truth from Quinton.

Therefore, she quickly told him about everything that happened.

After listening to her explanation, Quinton smiled before he said, "Well, I really did not expect Nigel to make such a fool out of himself. Alice, since you did not manage to go into Wayfair Mountain Entertainment the last time, I can bring you there today! I just need to give my father a call."

"Ahh! Seriously? You're the best, Brother Quinton!" Jacelyn said in a charming manner.

"Of course I'm serious. Give me a minute. I'll call my dad now." After that, Quinton took out his cell phone before he made a phone call to his father.

After explaining the situation to his father, Quinton hung up the phone immediately.

"Should we head there now? I am afraid that they'll have more guests in the afternoon. If the place is overcrowded, there is nothing that my father can do for us then."

"Okay! Sure!"

All of the girls were more than willing to leave at this time.

"Alright then, I will go and get the cars with Harold. We will leave in two cars." Quinton said as he prepared to go and get the car with Harold.

"But Quinton, there are seven girls so two cars would be enough for us...but what about them?" Alice asked as she pointed at Harper and the rest of the boys.

Quinton looked at Harper before he asked, "Did you not drive here?"

Harper shook his head and he felt very embarrassed at this time.

"Forget it. We won't be joining you guys."

Naomi felt very uncomfortable to be caught in the middle. Therefore, she said, "Well, if they aren't going, then I don't want to go either!"

Gerald did not want Naomi to be placed in such a tough spot every time. He knew that she really wanted to go and check out Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Therefore, he quickly said, "Naomi, you can go ahead with the rest of them first. We'll join you later. After all, we've already ordered a table full of dishes!"

In fact, Gerald intentionally said those words and he was targeting Alice and Hayley at this time.

After all, Harper was treating them to lunch today and he had already ordered a table full of dishes but they were leaving without taking even a single bite. Gerald felt as though they were not taking Harper seriously.

Being the sensitive person that she was, Alice could immediately hear the contempt in his voice as soon as she heard his words. She quickly replied, "Hahaha. You'll come and join us later? Do you really think you'd be able to enter Wayfair Mountain Entertainment without Quinton? Moreover, why are you being so sarcastic? It's just a table full of dishes. Do you want me to pay for the food, then?"

Harper waved his hand in a hurry before he said, "No, no, you guys can just leave first. I will see you later, Hayley!"

Harper glanced at Hayley. He really wished that he would be able to see her later but he knew that Alice was right. How would they possibly be able to enter Wayfair Mountain Entertainment later?

After that, Alice and the rest of the girls left with Quinton and Harold. Harper was just glad that the situation did not end up as awkward as it was last night.

However, after the girls left, Harper felt as though he no longer had any appetite.

He felt very discouraged at this time.

“Harper, don’t feel so discouraged. I said that we’ll go to the manor and I will make sure that we do so. Just trust me.”

Gerald comforted Harper as he patted him gently on the shoulder.

Harper smiled bitterly before he said, “I know you mean well, Gerald. Forget it. Let’s just eat and enjoy the meal before we go back to the dormitory to sleep after this!”

Gerald knew that Harper simply thought that he was being stubborn.

He smiled because he knew that he could not be as low-key as he wanted to be anymore. This was because he knew that most of the time, Harper and the rest of his roommates were ridiculed and humiliated because of him.

Gerald was also very upset at this situation.

Therefore, Gerald took out his cell phone before he called Zack. “Zack, I will head over to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment with my friends later. If it’s convenient for you, could you send two cars over here to pick me up?”

Zack was very respectful on the other end of the line. “Of course, Mr. Crawford. Anything for you. Could you please send me your location?”

Gerald gave Zack his location over the phone before he hung up the phone immediately.

Harper looked at Gerald in surprise.

“Damn it, Gerald! Who did you just call?”

Chapter 19

Harper knew that Gerald was a very honest person, even if he could be a little vain sometimes.

Moreover, he knew that Gerald wouldn't continue lying to his own brothers after the rest of the girls had already left. However, they couldn't understand what was going on.

Did Gerald really have the ability to bring them into Wayfair Mountain Entertainment?

How could this be possible?

Gerald smiled as soon as he heard Harper's question.

He would find out later!

“Excuse me, sirs. Will all of you continue having your meal here?”

At this time, a beautiful waitress came over to their table as she asked them in a polite manner.

Even though she was speaking in a very polite manner, she could not hide the contempt that she was feeling in her heart.

She naturally knew who would be paying the bill today.

However, she had also witnessed everything that had happened earlier and she knew that all the beautiful girls had already been brought away by Quinton and Harold.

At the same time, the other people who were dining in the restaurant at this time were also looking at Gerald, Harold, and the rest of the boys as they laughed at them.

The situation that they encountered was similar to getting robbed of their girlfriends in public.

That was also the reason why the beautiful waitress came to ask them if they wanted to continue enjoying their meal there.

“No, just pack up all the food for us. We will bring it over to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment to enjoy the food there later!”

Gerald could see the contempt in her eyes.

How could he allow Harper to continue eating in this restaurant at this time?

However, he felt that it was really a pity to waste all of the food on the table.

The beautiful waitress and the people around them almost burst out in laughter as soon as they heard Gerald’s words.

“Is this guy a fool?”

“Who do you think you are? You actually want to pack your food from this restaurant to bring over to the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment as dinner instead?”

“Doesn’t he know that Wayfair Mountain Entertainment also serves food? Hahaha...”

“I guess they’re trying to save their own pride since the rest of the girls had already left with the other two guys earlier. Hahaha. I think college students nowadays really have no sense of shame at all. They can just brag out of pride.”

The people around them continued mocking them.

Harper couldn't help but lower his head in embarrassment.

The waitress rolled her eyes before she glanced at Gerald and said, "Alright then. In that case, may I know which one of you is going to settle the bill today?"

"Me, me, I'll settle the bill immediately," Harper replied in a hurry.

The dishes on the table would easily cost more than eight hundred dollars today.

That would be more than eighty percent of Harper's living expenses for the month.

Gerald took the plastic bags from the waitress as he started packing up the food on the table.

Even though all the customers were ridiculing and making fun of them at this time, he wasn't bothered at all.

"Sob. Sob."

At this time, three luxury cars suddenly drove past the restaurant.

After that, the three luxury cars stopped and parked right in front of the restaurant.

"Wow! Three Rolls-Royce Phantoms!"

"Damn? Who is so incredible? One of those cars is worth almost one and a half million dollars!"

"Oh my god! Look at the car license plate!"

The license plate for all three of the luxury cars were 689. That number alone was worth a few hundred thousand dollars already!

Everyone in the restaurant could not help but look out of the restaurant and even the waitress was stunned at this time.

If the owner of the luxury cars was going to dine in the restaurant, she would run out to meet him now so that she could win some of his favor.

The waitress quickly straightened out her clothes before she strode towards the door.

She wanted to see if the owner would come in for a meal.

At this time, three people stepped out of the car. These three men were dressed in black suits and they were all wearing sunglasses and Bluetooth headsets in their ears. They really looked like bodyguards that were usually seen in a movie.

The atmosphere was very solemn at this time.

“Gentlemen, may I ask if...”

The beautiful waitress rushed forward to greet them immediately.

However, the three men did not even bother to look at her and they simply walked straight to Gerald who was busy packing up the food at this time.

“Mr. Crawford!”

The three bodyguards greeted Gerald as they bowed respectfully at a ninety degrees angle.

“What? Mr. Crawford?”

“The bodyguards are referring to this young fool as Mr. Crawford?”

Everyone in the restaurant was shocked.

Harper and the other boys were even more surprised at this time.

What was going on?

Was Gerald really so awesome?

At this time, Gerald finally finished packing up all the food.

“Guys, why don’t we get into the cars so that we can get to the manor now?”

“Mr. Crawford, please let us carry the food for you.”

The bodyguards ran over before they took the packed food from Gerald’s hand.

Harper and the rest of the boys followed Gerald out of the restaurant, as though they were living a dream.

“Mr. Crawford, please walk slowly...”

The beautiful waitress’ face was already pale at this time and she greeted Gerald in a respectful manner, while Gerald simply nodded.

At the same time, he felt a little embarrassed. He really wasn’t used to people staring at him.

The few of them quickly got into the luxury cars as they headed towards the manor.

On the way there, Harper couldn't help asking Gerald about the situation.

"Gerald, this...what is going on?"

Gerald felt that it was still too early for him to reveal everything to them. Therefore, he simply said, "Brother Harper, I'll certainly explain everything to you soon. Just remember that we are brothers and whatever happens to you will always be my business. I will make sure that you will not lose face today!"

Harper nodded and he did not ask Gerald anymore questions.

After a short drive, they finally arrived at the manor.

Initially, the bodyguards were also given the task of bringing Gerald and his friends around and making sure that they could enjoy all the food and entertainment in Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

However, Gerald knew that Harper and the rest of the boys could not let loose and enjoy themselves with the bodyguards around.

In fact, even Gerald did not feel comfortable with the bodyguards around.

Therefore, as soon as they arrived in front of the entrance, Gerald asked the bodyguards to drop them off and he told them that they would like to go around the manor and have fun on their own.

"Damn! Gerald, you're really too amazing! I can't believe that we are really able to enter the manor today!"

Benjamin was very happy when they strolled around the manor.

“Well, I know the boss here! So, what would you guys like to do now? Tell me what you guys want to do!”

Gerald said as he smiled.

“Ahh! Gerald, is the boss that you are talking about the same person who gave you the shopper’s card before this?”

“Well, I guess you could say that it’s somehow related...”

This was somewhat true because his sister, Jessica, was the one who had given him the cards and she was also the one who had introduced him to Zack.

Harper nodded immediately.

At this time, the boys were thinking of what they could do in the manor.

The entire manor was very large and it was covering half of the mountain. Even though the scenery outside the manor was really beautiful, there was nothing interesting to do outside.

The hot springs and the dining area was in fact the core entertainment center in the manor.

Since Gerald was already relatively familiar with the place, he said, “Well, let’s head inside the manor and we can eat a little before we enjoy the hot springs.”

“Erm, Gerald, I saw on the internet that they usually charge us for entering the manor and using the hot springs, am I right?” Benjamin asked out of curiosity at this time.

In fact, he would already be very satisfied if he could just play outside the manor.

However, if he could enter the manor, that would be an added bonus!

“Don’t worry about it!”

Gerald smiled. Even though his sister was the one who had opened this manor, he was still one of the owners of this place.

Everyone started to relax a little.

Moreover, they had to pass through a quaint bridge before they can get from the outer periphery into the inner periphery.

Gerald and the boys saw Alice and the rest of the girls as they were walking inside.

They were all taking pictures of themselves inside the manor at this time.

“Look! It’s Gerald and his roommates! How did they manage to enter?” Jacelyn exclaimed in surprise when she saw Gerald and the rest of the boys walking in.

At this time, Alice was busy chatting with Quinton. When she heard Jacelyn’s words, Alice frowned before she turned around to look at the direction that Gerald and his friends were coming from.

Sure enough, it was really them.

“How did they manage to get in?” Alice asked in surprise.

Chapter 20

“Damn it! Don’t tell me they secretly sneaked in?”

It was Harold who said that.

He was staring at Gerald and the rest of the boys with a contemptuous expression on his face.

In fact, this was the same question that was running through the few girls' minds now.

Just think about it—what kind of place was Wayfair Mountain Entertainment? Was it possible for just anyone to enter this place whenever they wanted to?

Even someone as wealthy and powerful as Quinton had to call his father several times before his father could finally get someone to sort things out and ask the security guards to allow them in.

However, even if they could get in, they could only stay on the outer periphery of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

“Oh my god. How embarrassing would it be if they had really sneaked in here?”

“Yes, that would be really embarrassing! If the security guards find out about them and realize that they know us, wouldn't we get kicked out of here with them?”

The girls looked at Gerald with a contemptuous expression on their faces as they murmured amongst themselves in an anxious manner.

“Harper, how did you enter this place?”

Hayley did not speculate. Instead, she simply walked towards Harper and asked him in a low voice. She was obviously worried for him.

“We came in through the front door!” Gerald replied immediately.

After that, Harper nodded as he looked at Hayley.

“Hahaha. The main entrance? Do you think the security guards would really be that blind as to allow you to pass through the front entrance?” Jacelyn, who had been scratching her head at this time, yelled at Gerald immediately.

She vowed that if she got kicked out of this place today because of Gerald, she would definitely give him ten slaps across his face!

Ten harsh slaps!

Alice was also worried about the consequences if Gerald and his friends had really sneaked in!

Therefore, she stepped forward and approached Gerald with a stern expression on her face as she said, "Gerald, I hope you can tell us the truth now. If you really did sneak in today, then you'd better tell us in advance so Quinton can help us figure out a solution."

"Yes! Please don't make the situation bad for everyone!" Quinton added this sentence.

Meanwhile, Quinton thought to himself, 'Why are Alice's friends so weird?'

"Hmm..."

Gerald was silent as he listened to them nagging and yelling at him endlessly. He felt so helpless at this time. He had obviously come in through the front door and he was telling them the truth now.

What did they expect him to say? That he had crawled in through a dog hole?

"I'm telling you the truth. If you want to, I'll bring you into the manor and we can all have some fun together. We can eat, enjoy a bubble bath in the hot spring, and enjoy all the other facilities here."

In fact, the only reason why Gerald was offering to bring them in was simply because of Naomi.

At this time, Naomi was also feeling a little worried for Gerald. She was afraid that Gerald would get into trouble because of this. Even though he was offering to bring them in with good intentions, everyone stared at him as though he was an idiot.

“What did you just say? You want to bring us into the manor? Do you even know who you are? Why don’t you take a look in the mirror instead? Don’t you see the bodyguards who are standing guard outside the manor?” Jacelyn asked angrily.

“Yes! It is already difficult for someone like Quinton to bring us into the manor and you think that this is really up to you?”

The group of girls started to chatter among themselves.

“There are fourteen of us here. Even if we don’t talk about the cost of the food, entering the hot spring itself would cost at least twenty thousand dollars! Moreover, if we were to eat in the manor, it would cost us at least thirty to forty thousand dollars! It would be easier for me to make the necessary arrangements if there were fewer people here today but it’s also a little difficult for me since there are so many of us.”

Quinton looked at Gerald as he smiled wryly at him.

Alice could not help but feel moved when she heard that Quinton had already thought everything out for them. After that, Alice looked at Gerald with a helpless expression on her face as she said, “Forget it. Why don’t we leave now and come back again next time to avoid getting embarrassed if they get caught?”

“No! Why should we leave just because of this pauper?”

“Yes! Sister Alice, why should we leave? We’re finally here and I want to continue looking around the place!”

All of the girls stared at Gerald with a furious expression on their faces.

In fact, Alice had intentionally said those words as she wanted to force Gerald to leave.

However, at this time, Gerald simply smiled bitterly before he shook his head and said, "If you are willing to follow us, then you can just come with me. It's really up to you. You can do whatever you want to."

After that, Gerald looked at Naomi before he said, "Naomi, do you trust me? If you trust me, just follow me and I'll bring you into the manor."

Naomi gritted her teeth as she nodded.

After that, Gerald led the few of them across the bridge before he led them into the inner periphery.

"Hahaha! Just wait and see! Gerald will definitely get chased out later! I hope he won't implicate and embarrass us!" Jacelyn said as she watched silently.

"That guy really has no sense of shame at all!"

Quinton also stood aside as he waited to watch the show.

However, in the next second, their eyes widened in disbelief. They had initially thought that Gerald would definitely get kicked out immediately. However, Gerald managed to get into the manor. Moreover, the bunch of bodyguards also bowed respectfully when they saw Gerald.

"What's happening?" Quinton asked with an incredulous expression on his face.

Jacelyn was so shocked that she had no choice but to cover her mouth with her hand.

Initially, she was gloating because she thought that Gerald would certainly get beaten up. However, Gerald got in without facing any problem at all.

All the beautiful girls had a very complex and complicated expression on their faces and Alice was in utter disbelief at this time. In fact, if she had not witnessed this situation with her own two eyes, she wouldn't have believed that this was real.

In her eyes, Gerald had always been nothing but a pauper. She also knew that Naomi had been trying to get her to build up a relationship with Gerald. However, ever since she thought that Gerald had bought Naomi a fake Hermes bag, she already had a very bad impression of him and she really didn't like him at all. She thought he was just a boring pauper.

But now, he could actually go in and out of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment as he pleased.

It was even difficult for Quinton to bring so many people into the manor.

"Alice, what should we do now?" Jacelyn asked as she stared at Gerald and the others as they entered the manor.

At this time, Alice glanced at Quinton and Harold who were standing on the sidelines, with an inquiring look in her eyes.

Since Quinton's father had the ability to deal with Flynn from Emperor Karaoke Bar, Alice felt that they would certainly be able to enter the manor as long as Quinton's father was willing to help them!

Quinton had a very ugly expression on his face at this time.

It certainly felt as though Gerald had just given him two slaps across his face.

If Quinton managed to bring the girls into the manor, then he would be on equal footing as Gerald! Everything would be settled then.

What else could he do?

Quinton decided to call his father again. He really did not want to embarrass himself in front of Alice, nor did he want her to look down on him. Hence, Quinton quickly took out his cell phone before he told his father about the situation.

Quinton's father was also someone who cared a lot about his face and reputation. As soon as he heard that someone had beaten his son in terms of money, he could not tolerate it any longer.

Therefore, he did all that he could to ensure that Quinton could enter the manor with the girls.

Moreover, he had even promised to sponsor Quinton twenty thousand dollars for his expenditure today so that his son would not lose face.

Even though it was a lot of money, Quinton's father felt that it was necessary to save face!

"Hahaha! What's the big deal? Let's go, Alice! I'll bring everyone into the manor today," Quinton said as he smirked.

"Okay! You're really amazing, Quinton! How could a pauper ever be compared to you?"

Jacelyn and the other girls also cheered for Quinton at this time.

The admission price for each person was one thousand five hundred dollars each, excluding hot spring services, dining, gold, and any other services.

The admission fee for the eight of them had already cost twelve thousand dollars.

"So, what if Gerald could bring them in? I think that the only thing he's able to do is to let them look around! I can pay for everyone to go bowling today!"

Quinton and Harold winked at one another because they felt that the twelve thousand dollars that they had just spent was worth it.

If they had to, they would be more than willing to spend up to twenty thousand dollars today!

Bowling should be the cheapest activity in the manor. At least, Quinton was sure that it would definitely be cheaper than dining there!

All of them followed Quinton into the manor.

The inner periphery of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was indeed very different from the outer periphery. All of them felt as though they had just stepped into a new world.

It was no wonder why even the wealthiest and most powerful people from other provinces regarded this establishment as a paradise. It really felt like paradise!

Alice was shocked when she entered the manor, but soon started to calm down a little.

“Ah! Guys, look! What is that?”

At this time, Jacelyn, who was busy applying her makeup as she was preparing to take a selfie, realized that there was an elegant attic above the beautiful hot spring with a waterfall at the front.

Some people were eating in the attic at this time.

The surrounding water mist evaporated around them, creating an effect that looked like rainbow bedding around them.

Everyone looking up at the attic felt as though those people were dining on the clouds.

It was extremely gorgeous.

Alice also found it really beautiful. She couldn't help but feel envious because she really wished that she was the one eating there at this time.

“Is that the micro dining pavilion? Yes, that is the micro dining pavilion!” Quinton said in an envious tone.

“Quinton, how much does it cost to enter and have a meal at the micro dining pavilion? The name already sounds so exquisite. It should be really expensive, right?”

Jacelyn asked as she looked at the girls.

“Very expensive? It’s not just expensive. Do you know how much it costs to enter and use this micro dining pavilion? It costs forty-five thousand dollars, excluding the prices of the food!”

Everyone was shocked as soon as they heard the price.

It costs forty-five thousand dollars to enter this place?

Damn it!

Moreover, Quinton knew more about the place than the rest of them. “Moreover, even if you have money, you might not necessarily be able to eat here because you have to have a certain identity to dine here! Only the very wealthy and powerful can afford to enjoy their dinners here.”

Alice was shocked at this time.

“Hey! Look there! Alice, Quinton, take a look up there. Why do I feel as though those people really look like Gerald and his roommates?”

After staring at the group of people for a long time, Jacelyn felt as though something was wrong.

Hayley nodded before she said, “You’re right! I can see Harper from here!”

Alice felt a tug in her heart as she tried to make out the people on the micro dining pavilion alongside Quinton and Harold.

Upon closer inspection, they realized that it really looked like Gerald and his roommates.

“Impossible!”

Alice could not believe her own eyes. How could a pauper possibly afford to be up there?

It was absolutely impossible!

Ring, ring, ring.

Just then, Alice received a phone call.

It was a call from Naomi.

“Alice, why did you guys come in so late? All the dishes have already been served! I can see you! Look up here. The scenery from up here is really amazing. Why don’t you come and join us?”

Alice could see Naomi standing on the micro dining pavilion as she beckoned for them to come and join them as soon as possible!

“Oh my god. It is really Gerald, Naomi, and the rest of the boys. This...this...”

Jacelyn gulped at this time. This was unbelievable.

The expression on Quinton and Harold’s faces changed immediately. It seemed as though they would never be able to keep their heads up high today!

“Alice, let’s go up now!”

Jacelyn could not wait anymore! This was because many of the wealthy and noble people who were in the manor were already staring at them with envy.

She felt very satisfied at this time.

Alice bit her lip slightly as she said, “Yes! Let’s go up!”

She had to go up and ask Gerald what exactly was happening. Otherwise, she would definitely not be able to sleep at night!

Harold looked at Quinton with a nervous expression on his face as he said, “Brother Quinton, it seems as though that pauper is even more incredible than we thought he is. I think we should just leave instead of challenging him any further.”

Harold was already frightened because he did not expect Gerald to be this powerful.

Quinton snorted coldly as he said, “Damn it! Why are you afraid of him? I don’t believe that the pauper can actually be so powerful. Let’s go! We should go up and find out what’s going on!”

Chapter 21

Above the clouds, Gerald, Harper, Naomi and the rest of the boys were seated on the micro dining pavilion.

They were admiring the beautiful scenery around the manor.

Gerald also used the same answers when Naomi asked him how he had managed to do this. However, Gerald really did not expect Zack to go to this extent today. He thought that it must be really expensive for them to enjoy dining on the micro dining pavilion today.

However, as he thought about it, it was only natural for Zack to do that since the entire manor was owned by his sister and him. Gerald felt a different kind of excitement in his heart.

At this time, Alice and the other girls had already come up to the micro dining pavilion. There was a slightly ugly expression on Alice's face at this time. After all, she had always felt that Gerald was a pauper and had always looked down on him.

However, she now felt as though she could only see Gerald's back as she looked up at him and this made her feel extremely uncomfortable.

"Gerald! How can you afford to come here?"

This was the first question that Alice asked as soon as she came up. However, she was actually very afraid of his answer.

She was afraid that Gerald would tell her that he was actually a very wealthy and powerful person. If he was really very wealthy, this would definitely make Alice feel even more uncomfortable.

"Yes! Brother Gerald, how can you afford to dine up here? It's so expensive!" Jacelyn spoke to Gerald in a softer and gentler tone because she felt a little embarrassed at this time.

Meanwhile Quinton and Harold also arrived at this time.

Gerald smiled before he said, "Oh, I happen to know the manager and he arranged for me to enjoy a meal here with my friends."

Everyone felt very confused at this time. Even if Gerald knew the manager here, wasn't this a little too much?

Alice stared at Gerald in disbelief.

After that, Naomi could not help but reveal the truth to everyone.

She told everyone about how Gerald got to know the manager and why the manager had invited him to the manor today.

Alice was finally relieved at this time.

“Naomi, do you mean to say that the expensive Hermes bag that Gerald previously bought and the only reason he’s able to enter and dine at a place like this is just because he saved the manager’s daughter after she was involved in a car accident? Is that the reason why he’s receiving all this grand treatment?”

Naomi nodded her head slightly. “Gerald is really very lucky. I guess good people are always rewarded!”

‘That scared me to death!’ Alice thought to herself. She couldn’t help feeling a little more relieved at this time, and even Quinton took a deep breath as soon as he heard Gerald’s words. Gerald might be receiving even better treatment compared to second-generation rich kids like them.

However, this was all just a favor given to him by others. After today, what would Gerald be?

Alice and the other girls felt much better after the clarification.

Of course, Gerald could see that Alice no longer felt the same contempt that she felt for him before this but she did not feel any gratitude towards him at all. This meant that she felt that she was already giving Gerald face with her presence alone.

Gerald smiled as he thought about it.

“Oh, look! Is this an oil painting? Do you think it is painted by a real famous artist?”

The crowd of people sat down as they ate and drank together in the relaxing and cozy atmosphere.

At this time, Jacelyn was staring at the four oil paintings hanging on the four pillars of the attic. One of them was an antique oil painting by a famous painter in foreign history and Jacelyn could recognize it at a single glance.

'I think it is real...' Gerald replied as he laughed.

There seemed to be very little fake or counterfeit items in this place.

Everything was invested with a lot of money.

"What do you mean that you think so? Of course, everything here is real!" Quinton couldn't help but reply sarcastically when he heard Gerald's words.

He had just returned from studying abroad and of course, appreciating foreign artwork was one of his strong points.

Gerald was a pauper and he clearly had the ability to invite everyone here tonight but he knew nothing at all. Moreover, Gerald obviously knew nothing about art. Therefore, in order to save face, Quinton had to attack him so that he would stand out in some other way.

"The market price for this painting is a hundred and fifty thousand dollars. It's a very valuable and expensive painting! The other three paintings on the wall are also very valuable, so it's no wonder why it costs so much to dine here!"

"Oh my god. Is it really worth one hundred and fifty thousand dollars?"

All the girls were very impressed at this time.

Jacelyn was even more excited. "I have to take a picture with all these expensive oil paintings tonight!"

Everyone started laughing again.

After that, Gerald stood up before he took down the oil painting from the wall as he said, "If you want to, you can just take it down and have a look."

“Hey! Hey! Hey! Oh my god, what are you trying to do, Gerald? Are you sure you can afford to pay for the painting if anything happens to it?” Quinton yelled as he widened his eyes in shock.

On the other side, Harold also said, “Do you really think you’re the host just because someone invited you to have dinner here today?”

Even though Alice did not say anything, she was staring at Gerald. After that, she simply shook her head in disappointment.

Alice felt that Gerald was always lacking compared to others, no matter what he tried to do. He could never be compared to Quinton.

No matter what it was, he was just really embarrassing.

In fact, the only reason why Gerald had taken the oil painting down was because he wanted to build up a closer relationship with them.

Unexpectedly, everyone simply regarded him as a reckless person!

Gerald decided to just forget it and place the oil painting back on the wall.

However, his hand was a little shaky and he did not place it at the right angle, while a gust of wind happened to blow in their direction at this time.

The oil painting flew out and was blown directly into the water below the waterfall.

“What!”

This made everyone scream out loud in shock.

Even Alice stood up because she was utterly shocked!

Chapter 22

It was over. The oil painting was completely ruined.

One hundred and fifty thousand dollars!

Everyone could not help but swallow their saliva at this time.

Only Quinton and Harold were laughing in their hearts at this time. They could not help but wonder how Gerald would ever be able to pay for the oil painting that was worth a hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Even if the manager of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment owed him a favor, he would never be able to explain himself with regards to the oil painting.

Hehehe!

“Gerald, why don’t we leave now? Anyway, we’re almost done with the food,” Naomi said in a cautious manner at this time.

If they continued staying here for another second, Gerald would never be able to pay for the oil painting!

“Oh! Things don’t look good. It seems as though someone is coming up now!”

Jacelyn pointed at the staircase at this time and Gerald also looked in the same direction. At this time, Zack was walking towards them with a few waitresses and a bottle of good wine in their hands.

He was coming to give them a toast.

Gerald felt very helpless. He had already told Zack that he did not want to reveal his identity for the time being. Why was he still coming here to give him a toast?

Zack arrived a short while later.

Quinton also naturally knew who Zack was.

“Lyle...Mr. Lyle!”

Quinton quickly greeted him.

Unexpectedly, the manager whom Gerald was talking about was in fact one of the richest men in Mayberry City, Zack Lyle!

Alice was very surprised at this time and she did not dare to speak at all.

Good luck to Gerald!

As soon as he arrived, Zack nodded slightly towards the crowd of people.

After that, he looked at Gerald before he greeted him respectfully, “Mr. Ger...”

As he was about to greet him, Zack suddenly recalled that Gerald had already told him that he did not want his identity to be revealed.

Zack said: “Brother Gerald, are you satisfied with the arrangements I’ve made for you today?”

Gerald smiled as he nodded.

At this time, Quinton suddenly spoke up and said, “But Mr. Lyle, Gerald just ruined your oil painting by dropping it into the water!”

“Yes, Mr. Lyle! Even though we told him not to do it, Gerald took the oil painting down and he dropped it into the water!” Jacelyn quickly hurriedly chimed in as she did not want to bear the responsibility for the oil painting.

Meanwhile, Naomi quickly spoke up for Gerald. “Mr. Lyle, Gerald didn’t mean to do it!”

At this time, Harper also defended Gerald and he asked Zack what they could do in order to repay Zack for the oil painting.

Zack immediately understood the situation that was unfolding before him.

It seemed as though not everyone here were Gerald’s true friends and Zack knew that Gerald had not revealed his identity to anyone yet.

He also knew that Gerald was a very low-key and introverted person. It seemed as though he did not want to brag about the fact that he was actually very wealthy and powerful.

Moreover, Zack was not stupid and he clearly remember Gerald’s reminder to him. Therefore, he would not do anything to cause the crowd of people to have any suspicions about Gerald’s identity.

Zack had a shocked expression on his face as he exclaimed, “What? The oil painting was dropped into the water?” Zack started trembling with a frightened expression on his face. It seemed as though he really cared about the oil painting!

The atmosphere suddenly became very tense and Naomi asked anxiously, “Mr. Lyle, we’re really sorry about the oil painting!”

“Brother Gerald, do you know that the oil painting costs over a hundred and fifty thousand dollars? Moreover, my boss really likes this oil painting very much. Tell me, what should I do if my boss asks me about this painting?” Zack asked as he stared at Gerald.

Gerald knew that Zack wanted to give him a way out of this matter without revealing his identity or the fact that he was indeed the real owner of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. That was the reason why he could only react this way,

Hehehe...Zack was a rather interesting person.

Gerald had a very regretful look on his face as he said, "Mr. Lyle, I really didn't expect this to happen but I can tell you that this isn't entirely my fault."

"Not your fault?" Zack asked as he frowned.

Jacelyn, who was standing aside, thought that Gerald had wanted to push the blame to her. Therefore, she hurriedly said, "Gerald, it's your fault! The oil painting dropped into the water because it flew out of your hands! You shouldn't try and blame anyone else for your own mistake!"

"Exactly! If you've done something wrong, you should have the courage to step up and admit your mistake. Otherwise, how can you call yourself a man?"

The girls were all very contemptuous at this time.

"I guess Gerald is just afraid he'd have to pay the one hundred thousand dollars out of his own pocket. That must be the reason he's trying to push the blame away from himself," Harold quickly said as he was still jealous of Gerald.

Gerald did not only prove that he was better than Quinton or Harold, but he also made them very envious and jealous of him.

Gerald smiled before he said, "Mr. Lyle, I admit that I was the one who had taken the oil painting down in the first place. The reason why I said it isn't entirely my fault or responsibility, however, is because there was a gust of wind when I was trying to put the oil painting back in place and it blew the oil painting away."

"Hahaha. Gerald, you're really ridiculous!"

The crowd of people could not help but feel contempt at this time.

Quinton said, "Gerald, are you seriously trying to put the blame on the gust of wind? Don't you think you're trying too hard?"

Zack looked as though he was thinking hard about what Gerald had just said.

After a short while, he finally patted his forehead and said, "Brother Gerald, thank you for explaining the situation to me. So was that actually what happened? I'm sorry for misunderstanding you. I guess we can only blame the gust of wind for blowing the oil painting away and causing it to fall into the water. I suppose it really isn't your fault at all!"

"Yes, you shouldn't hang the oil painting here. It's very dangerous when the wind is strong," Gerald replied in a hurry.

"Yes, yes, Brother Gerald. Thank you for the reminder. I'll ask my staff to deal with this matter. I guess it's our fault for putting this oil painting here in the first place."

What?

Everyone was shocked at Zack's reaction. Was Zack convinced just because of a few words by Gerald?

Quinton felt a lump in his throat at this time. He felt very uncomfortable, while Alice and the rest of the girls felt even more uneasy.

"Well, in that case, I would like to thank you for your hospitality today, Mr. Lyle. If it's fine with you, we'd like to go home now."

Gerald smiled. He thought that the way that Zack cooperated with him with regards to this situation was indeed very funny.

After leaving the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, all of them could not help but look at Gerald in a daze. This was especially so for Alice, who felt that everything was too unreal and she couldn't understand Gerald at all.

"Gerald, you are really amazing! I can't believe that you actually managed to persuade Mr. Lyle with just a few words when he seemed to care so much about that oil painting!"

Naomi couldn't help but admire Gerald after leaving the manor.

Alice was also listening in at this time.

She felt very doubtful about the whole situation. Were things really as simple as they seemed?

Chapter 23

After returning to the dormitory, Alice and the other girls still felt very unpleasant and surprised.

If Gerald was really poor and if he had won hundreds of thousands of dollars from the lottery, they would not feel so uncomfortable.

However, he was actually able to buy such an expensive limited edition luxury bag and he could even afford to treat them to a meal at the most expensive spot in the manor.

Moreover, when it came to the oil painting, Gerald could actually persuade Zack to let the matter go just like that.

How was that possible?

"Alice, what do you think of the incident today?"

Alice was sitting on her bed as she listened to Jacelyn, who was removing her makeup at this time.

After that, she frowned before she said, "I don't know. Perhaps we're overthinking this. Didn't Hayley already call Harper to ask and confirm the situation with him? After all, the only reason why Zack is treating Gerald so well is because Gerald saved his daughter's life!"

"I guess Zack is just trying to come up with a reason just so Gerald wouldn't feel too embarrassed about the oil painting. After all, Gerald saved his daughter's life and that must've been a big deal to him."

Alice felt much better as she thought about this reason.

"Well, I guess that makes sense. I actually thought Gerald was a rich man now! That really scared me to death!" Jacelyn said as she let out a long sigh.

"What? You aren't calling him Brother Gerald anymore?"

The other girls started laughing among themselves.

"Who's addressing him in that endearing manner? If he could actually ask Mr. Lyle to give me a good position in any of his businesses in the future, I'll definitely refer to him that way! At least I wouldn't have any worries in life at all."

"Gerald is really lucky. I guess Mr. Lyle would regard the incident today as though he had already repaid Gerald for everything that he had done for his family."

The girls continued gossiping among themselves.

Alice felt very relieved when she heard what they said. After all, the more Gerald had to suffer, the more relaxed she felt.

It was a strange feeling.

Meanwhile, Gerald did not think too much about this matter at all.

After returning to the dormitory, Gerald and his roommates fell asleep very quickly as they were exhausted after playing and spending the whole day outside.

The next day, it was time for them to go to class.

At this time, Gerald saw Harper and the other boys writing their names on their checks.

When Gerald read the messages in his group chat, he realized that it was time for them to pay their tuition fees.

“Gerald, are you going to wait for the subsidy that you’ll be receiving in two weeks’ time before you pay your tuition fees, or do you have any other way to pay it off?”

In fact, Harper wanted to ask Gerald if Mr. Lyle had given him some money to pay his tuition fees.

However, when he thought about the oil painting last night, Harper did not bother to ask that question anymore.

He was afraid that Gerald would be a pauper again today.

Gerald smiled before he said, “It’s okay. I still have some money left in my bank account and it should be enough to cover my tuition fees. By the way, I’ll go to the classroom a little later because I’ll have to withdraw some cash from the bank!”

Harper could tell that Gerald was not lying. Gerald might actually have some money left to pay for his tuition fees. With this, Harper felt much more relieved.

At this time, Gerald arrived at the bank in front of the university campus.

“I’d like to withdraw one thousand five hundred dollars!” Gerald replied as he passed his bank card to the banker.

The banker inside was a little taken aback.

After checking Gerald's bank card, she looked at Gerald before looking at the bank card in her hand.

After that, she finally asked Gerald in surprise, "What happened to your bank card? Why did you make so many changes to your bank account?"

There were changes to his bank account?

Gerald was also startled at this time.

In fact, the female banker felt that Gerald was just an ordinary student with no money at all because of the way he was dressed.

Therefore, she spoke to him in a rather impolite and impatient manner.

However, only some of the top customers in the bank could make such changes to their bank account.

At this time, she quickly explained, "Yes, there has been a major change in your bank account. The minimum withdrawal amount for your bank account is now thirty thousand dollars! You cannot withdraw just one thousand five hundred dollars."

The female banker looked Gerald up and down.

No matter how much she looked at him, this student did not look like he was a wealthy person.

Who made the changes to his bank account?

Gerald knew who had made that change to his bank account.

He knew it right away.

Who else could it be, apart from his sister Jessica?

He really could not understand his sister at all. He was not the type to spend so much money but now, his sister was setting a minimum limit for the amount of cash that he had to withdraw from the bank! She wanted him to live like a second-generation rich kid!

At this time, he took out his cell phone to make a phone call.

The person that he was calling answered the phone right away.

“Sister, were you the one who made the adjustments to my bank account?”

“Yes, I was the one who adjusted and set the minimum withdrawal limit. I know how you’ve been living and I want you to live like a second-generation rich kid now instead of acting and living as though you are still a pauper! I want you to slowly adapt to your new status so you can get a foothold in our family in future!”

Gerald was dumbstruck.

“By the way, I would have called you even if you did not call me today. Changing the minimum withdrawal limit for your bank account is not the only thing I did. Do you remember the Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card that I gave to you?”

“There is about one and a half million dollars left in the card. I’ve set the expiry date for the money for the end of the month. If you don’t spend the money in the card by the end of the month, then the money in the card will just go to waste!”

“What?”

Gerald’s eyes widened in shock.

Too ruthless!

This was too cruel.

She was forcing him to live like a second-generation rich kid.

“You’d better get used to your new status and life as soon as possible. Otherwise, your parents and I will have to worry about how we can finally get you out of the shadow of poverty every day...”

After that, Jessica hung up the phone immediately.

“What’s wrong with you? Are you withdrawing the money or not? Can you stop delaying and wasting our time?”

Unknowingly, there was already a queue behind Gerald and there were about five or six students waiting behind him because they wanted to withdraw money too.

The person who just spoke was a boy who was well-dressed and he had his arms around a beautiful girl as he glared at Gerald with contempt.

Today was the day of their tuition fee payment.

Therefore, it was not surprising that many students were here at the bank to withdraw money to pay for their tuition fees.

When the boy saw how Gerald was dressed and when he saw him talking on the phone for so long, he assumed that Gerald had no money left in his bank account and that was why he had no choice but to call home to ask for money.

“Oh, so did you manage to get your family to put together some money for you? Do you know that all of us are already late for class because of you?”

At this time, the girl in the boy's arm spoke as she glared at Gerald.

"Alright then, I will withdraw the minimum amount."

When Gerald saw the long queue behind him, he quickly spoke to the female banker.

Chapter 24

Gerald wanted to withdraw his money as soon as possible so he could leave the bank immediately. Therefore, he decided to withdraw thirty thousand dollars immediately.

He quickly gave his instructions to the female banker behind the counter.

The female banker was doubtful. However, she entered the figure into the computer and subsequently, her computer directly displayed that the withdrawal was successful!

The female banker's eyes widened in shock immediately.

Thirty thousand dollars!

Oh my god. This student was really rich!

"Sir, your withdrawal is successful!"

After that, the female banker straightened her hair before she stood up and expressed her respect for Gerald.

After that, she picked up the bundle of cash before she placed it onto the money counter.

Buzz buzz...

The machine sounded immediately.

It was all money!

The students who were queueing up in the bank to withdraw money froze in place.

The boys and girls behind Gerald gasped and at this time, people could even fit two eggs into their mouths!

The two people behind him had been ridiculing him earlier because they thought he did not have enough money in his bank account!

However, it seemed as though he had more than enough money!

All the girls in the bank cast a strange look at Gerald at this time.

They seemed to be saying, 'Handsome guy, please look at me! Please take a look at me!'

Gerald rubbed his nose because he felt a little embarrassed.

After that, he realized that there was no way he could carry so much money with him and he could not possibly carry all that money in his hand.

He looked around and he caught a glimpse of the black garbage bag in the trash can in front of the counter. It had just been replaced so it was still brand new.

Gerald took the black garbage bag before he placed it on the counter.

"You...you want to use this?"

The female banker was utterly surprised.

Was everyone who was wealthy so peculiar?

“Yes!”

Gerald did not say much. Instead, he simply took the stack of cash and placed it into his black garbage bag before he took his identification card from the female banker and walked out of the bank.

“Just look at that! He’s rich and you were just ridiculing and making fun of him earlier! Are you even half as rich as he is?”

As soon as Gerald left the bank, everyone began whispering amongst themselves.

At this time, the girl who was in the boy’s arms gave him a look of disgust as she punched him in his chest.

The boy simply glared at Gerald’s back as he replied angrily, “Well, damn it! Why would a wealthy person dress like that?”

Even though Gerald did not want to be late for class, he was already late because of the delay.

“Report!”

Gerald stood at the classroom door.

Cassandra McGregor, the young and beautiful female class representative, glared at Gerald.

“Hahaha. I thought that you’d be too scared to come for class since we’d be paying our tuition fee today!”

After that, Cassandra glanced at the black garbage bag in Gerald's hand before she said, "Why? Did you go out to pick up garbage because you don't have enough money to pay your tuition fee?"

"Hahaha..."

As soon as Cassandra said this, everyone in the classroom burst out in laughter.

Gerald did not say anything.

This was because he knew that his class representative had always been very biased towards the rich and she treated the poorer students very differently.

What else could he say?

Therefore, the only people that Cassandra treated very well in class were the wealthy ones such as Danny and Yuri.

They would even go out and have fun together after classes.

Danny, who usually skipped classes and missed out on his exams, could still obtain a high credit score.

He did not even have to apply for time off at all.

However, if Gerald missed a single class without applying for leave, Cassandra would threaten to expel him immediately! Even though it might seem to be an exaggeration, it was nothing but the truth!

"So, I guess you're going to have to rely on the subsidy to pay your tuition fee for this semester, am I right? I didn't see Whitney giving any reports about this matter. Anyway, Gerald, let me warn you that the deadline for the tuition fee payment is the end of the month! If you do not pay your tuition fee on time, then I'll expel you and kick you out of this university without any hesitation at all!"

Cassandra glared coldly at Gerald before she continued, "Alright, take your trash with you and go back to your seat now! How embarrassing!"

Cassandra knew all about Gerald's situation.

However, Gerald was not mad at all.

"Hmph!"

Danny, Blondie and the rest of the boys were laughing at this time.

Gerald had an indifferent expression on his face as he said, "Class representative, who said that I am going to delay payment until the end of the month? I'm here to pay my tuition fee today."

"What? What? You're going to pay your tuition fee today?"

Cassandra was very surprised.

At this time, Xavia, who was sitting in the middle of the classroom, gave Gerald a cold look.

"Gerald, please don't do the same thing as you did previously! You paid your tuition fee with one and five dollar notes and I had to count each and every note for a very long time with the help of your classmates!"

Cassandra had a worried expression on her face. During the last semester, Gerald gave everyone a shock when he paid his tuition fee.

Since he did not manage to get the subsidy from the university last semester, Gerald had to pool together all the money that he had earned from his part-time jobs to pay for his tuition fee. At that time, it caused a huge sensation in the university.

Was there really such a poor student in the university?

Cassandra was afraid there would be a repetition of the same scene last year and she would be embarrassed all over again!

“Oh, class representative, I think we’ll have to work overnight again! I feel sorry for my right hand. I thought I’d be able to use it to eat and play games instead!”

Danny, Blondie and the rest of the boys pretended that their hands were hurting and they walked to the front of the class at this time to help the class representative to count the money that Gerald was going to use to pay his tuition fee.

In fact, they were trying to insult and humiliate Gerald.

The expression on Xavia’s face changed immediately because she felt very ashamed that she was Gerald’s ex-girlfriend!

“Hahaha. Alright then. If you want to count the money so badly, then count it slowly and let me know once you’re done counting!”

There was a trace of anger on Gerald’s face at this time.

He dropped the garbage bag in front of the classroom.

Wow!

At this time, the garbage bag spilled open and the notes scattered all over the front of the classroom...

Chapter 25

“What?”

All of his classmates were startled.

Danny, who was taunting Gerald and standing at the front of the classroom, had an incredulous expression on his face at this time.

Why was Gerald so rich?

Cassandra also gasped in shocked and she felt a little out of breath at this time.

Even Xavia was shocked at this time.

This money...there was at least thirty thousand dollars there!

“Gerald, where did you get so much money?” Cassandra could not help but ask at this time.

“Yes, Gerald. I think there should be at least twenty or thirty thousand dollars there, right?”

The female students could not help asking.

“Well, yes, it is thirty thousand dollars. As for where it came from, it is because...I won the lottery!”

Gerald replied immediately.

He could not tell anyone that this was simply because his sister had set the limit for his bank account to a minimum of thirty thousand dollars per transaction because everyone would treat him as a fool...

Gerald did not like to show off his wealth unless he had no choice to do so, like he did today.

“You won the lottery?”

Gerald's words caused quite a huge commotion among all his classmates.

Danny and Blondie looked like fools as they stood at the front of the classroom at this time.

They were initially planning to taunt and humiliate Gerald in front of their classmates but who would have expected Gerald to actually throw thirty thousand dollars in front of them just so they could count it?

Both of them felt very embarrassed.

They could only stand awkwardly in front of the classroom as it would be even more embarrassing for them to retreat now.

At this time, Xavia asked with a nervous expression on her face, "Gerald, how much did you win from the lottery?"

She was breathing very fast at this time.

She was afraid that Gerald would have won millions of dollars in the lottery. If that really happened, she would really want to jump off the building!

No! Absolutely not!

How could someone who was just dumped by her have such good luck?

No way!

Gerald smiled indifferently before he said, "Not much. Not that much!"

“How much is not much? Thirty thousand dollars?”

Cassandra asked as she looked at Gerald with a strange expression on her face.

“More than that...” Gerald simply replied.

What did that even mean?

All of Gerald’s classmates felt very anxious at this time because they wanted to know how much money Gerald had won. This was because all of them, including Cassandra, had always despised and looked down on Gerald. To them, Gerald had always been a pauper who deserved to be mocked and ridiculed.

However, now that he had won the lottery, his classmates’ self-esteem started to fall!

They were all envious and jealous of him!

“It should be easy for you to count one thousand five hundred dollars, right?”

Gerald said as he glanced coldly at Danny who was dumbfounded at this time.

He took out one thousand five hundred dollars from the pile of cash before he threw it in front of Cassandra.

After that, he turned around and faced his classmates as he said, “Which one of you would be willing to lend me your backpack today?”

Since he had already revealed his riches, Gerald no longer felt the need to act as pitiful and useless as he did before. He wanted to be a little more like Danny and Yuri, who could use money to their own advantage, and get people to work and butter up to him.

Therefore, Gerald decided to borrow a backpack to place his money in instead!

“Gerald, you can use my backpack!”

“Gerald, why don’t you take my backpack instead? I don’t really need it today.”

“Gerald, Gerald...”

At this time, all of his classmates quickly called him by name because they wanted to offer Gerald their backpacks.

In the end, Gerald simply borrowed one of his classmate’s backpack.

After that, he placed the remaining twenty-eight thousand five hundred dollars into the backpack.

“Why are you sucking up to him? He only has thirty thousand dollars anyway! Moreover, he even has to pay by cash! He’s nothing but a nouveau riche.”

Danny and Blondie said in a vicious manner.

Xavia looked at Gerald with an extremely uncomfortable look on her face. She wanted to talk to Gerald but she felt very embarrassed.

She did not know what to do.

If she had broken up with Gerald just a few days later, she knew that he would have spent the thirty thousand dollars on her without any hesitation at all!

“Gerald, you’re so lucky. Moreover, it seems as though you’re really popular among your classmates! All of them are offering to lend you their backpacks! Since you’re already rich now, don’t you think you should treat your classmates to a meal?”

At this time, Cassandra, who was standing at the front of the classroom, suddenly spoke in a bitter manner.

“Yes! Gerald, you have thirty thousand dollars in cash! You should treat all of us to a nice dinner!”

Chapter 26

“I wonder if you’d be willing to treat us to dinner, Gerald? After all, we’ve been classmates for more than three years,” some of the girls chimed in at this time.

Gerald thought to himself. Since he had already said that he had already won the lottery, people would feel uncomfortable if he did not offer to treat them to a meal.

In fact, Gerald was initially planning to treat Naomi and his roommates to a nice dinner.

But now...

Gerald simply replied, “Alright then. I’ll treat all of you to dinner tonight. Anyone who would like to come can do so.”

In fact, the meaning behind Gerald’s words was that people who felt they were close to him could attend the dinner if they wanted to.

“Yay!”

All his classmates started cheering immediately and their lessons seemed even more interesting that day. Moreover, more and more people were gathering around Gerald as they wanted to know how much money Gerald had won from the lottery. However, Gerald refused to say anything at all and this made all his classmates very anxious!

“Brother Danny, are we going for the dinner tonight? Should we? I think that kid is trying to provoke us on purpose!” Blondie said in a bitter manner.

The person that he had been bullying and despising all this while was suddenly better than him! Of course, he would feel uncomfortable about the situation.

Blondie felt that way.

“Hahaha. Of course we have to go! We have to go so we can make this kid bleed tonight...”

Danny smiled and stroked his chin as he stared at Gerald.

Blondie understood what Danny meant immediately. “Alright, Brother Danny! You’re really the best!”

Later at noon, Gerald decided to book a restaurant to host the dinner that night. He had to show his classmates that he was more than willing to treat them to dinner so of course, he had to host the dinner at one of the restaurants on Mayberry Commercial Street.

However, he knew that he could not choose a restaurant that was too luxurious and high end. Otherwise, everyone would say he was pretending to be a wealthy person when he was not that well-to-do anyway.

Therefore, Gerald decided to book a restaurant called Homeland Kitchen to host the dinner at instead. This was because this was much more casual compared to the luxurious Grand Marshall Restaurant down the street.

As soon as he entered the restaurant, Gerald saw a few people whom he knew in the restaurant.

“Manager, I’ve spent quite a lot of money here today. I paid more than three hundred dollars per head! You have to give me a discount when I come here again in the future...”

“Hahaha. That would be no problem at all, Mr. Wright. I’ll definitely give you a discount when you come again next time!”

“Brother Victor really has a very good reputation!”

“What nonsense are you spouting? Do you know who Victor is? He’s driving an Audi A6 now! Moreover, Homeland Kitchen is one of the most prestigious restaurants on Mayberry Commercial Street. Whoever marries Victor will definitely live a good life in the future!”

“Whitney, the reason why we can come and eat at this restaurant today is because Brother Victor is giving you face...”

Gerald looked around at the group of people in the restaurant at this time. Whitney, the president of the student union, Victor, the vice president of the student union, and a few of Whitney’s friends were here at this time.

They were all looking at Victor with admiration written all over their faces.

“Hello, sir!”

Gerald did not want to run into any of them and he especially wanted to avoid Whitney because her mouth was like a cannon. He wanted to turn around and host his dinner at another restaurant instead. However, the waiter discovered him and he quickly bowed as he greeted Gerald in a very loud voice.

Victor and the other guests turned around to look at them immediately.

When Victor saw Gerald, his eyes lit up in an instant.

“Gerald!”

Whitney shouted suspiciously. After that, she asked, “What are you doing at a place like Homeland Kitchen?”

In her eyes, Gerald was someone who had to work hard every day to make enough money to sustain himself. If he did not think of how he could make some money today, he would definitely have to worry about what he could afford to eat tomorrow.

Why would he possibly come to such a high-end restaurant as this?

“Perhaps he’s taking up a part-time job here!”

“Hahaha. We still have classes later in the afternoon and he’s here to take up a part-time job now?”

“Hahaha. I guess he came out here secretly because he doesn’t have enough money to pay off his tuition fee today! I guess he’s trying to work part-time and earn some extra money here today! Otherwise, he’d be expelled for being unable to afford to pay his tuition fee.”

The four or five girls who knew all about Gerald’s situation laughed as they talked among themselves.

Whitney had a cold expression on her face as she continued questioning Gerald. “Gerald, are you trying to take up some part-time job now when we still have classes in the afternoon? Do you believe that I’ll report this to the student department so that you will get a penalty and credit deduction? Even if you make enough money to pay for your tuition fee, I will make sure that you can’t graduate because you do not have enough credits to do so!”

Victor sneered as he stared at Gerald. Gerald had always relied on his good academic performance to continue studying in this university. However, despite running into him, the vice president of the student union, Gerald did not even bother to greet him at all. Victor wanted to see how Gerald was going to survive without the student union’s help and subsidy.

“I’m not here to work part-time. I’m here to book a room for dinner.”

Gerald was also a little furious and frustrated when he heard Whitney and the rest of her friends insulting and making fun of him, so he simply replied to her in an indifferent manner.

After that, he headed directly to the counter.

“What? He’s here to book a room for dinner?”

Whitney and the rest of her friends were stunned at this time and they were filled with even more contempt and disgust for Gerald...

Chapter 27

“Gerald, you want to book a room for dinner? Based on your ability? Oh my god. Do you even know how much it costs to have dinner here?”

Whitney looked at Gerald with a cold expression on her face as though she was staring at an idiot.

She thought that this guy was crazy. Why would he possibly think that he would be able to afford a meal at Homeland Kitchen?

“Beauty, do you know this man?” the manager asked as he looked at Whitney with a smile on his face.

To be honest, looking at Gerald’s dressing and the clothes that he was wearing, the manager did not feel that Gerald would be able to afford a meal here.

This was because the prices to dine here ranged from one hundred and fifty dollars to two thousand five hundred dollars per person.

Two thousand five hundred dollars was the price for the booking of a private room, excluding the cost for the consumption of food and drinks.

This was because on Mayberry Commercial Street, Homeland Kitchen was known for the taste and quality of their food!

If the customer could only afford to pay one hundred and fifty dollars, they could only get a seat in the main hall. There was a different entrance fee for each floor.

However, the manager felt that Gerald might be able to afford the cheapest entrance fee. The manager was not snobbish and she did not look down on Gerald but she had only asked about Gerald because she was curious as they knew each other.

“Of course we know him! This person is famous for being a pauper in Mayberry University! He’s so poor that he can’t even afford to pay for his own meals or his tuition fees!”

“Yes, and he’s still thinking of dining at this restaurant?”

The two girls standing behind Whitney also spoke up at this time.

Victor laughed before he shook his head and said, “Whitney, don’t say that. Who knows if Gerald is here today because he’s running an errand for Danny or any of the other boys? Perhaps he’s just here to book a room on their behalf?”

“That’s true...”

At this time, the manager smiled before she looked at Gerald and said, “Sir, may I know if you’d like to book a room for yourself or a friend? I’m not implying anything by this. I’m simply trying to confirm your booking. Besides that, which package would you like to book?”

Gerald was relieved because this female manager was actually very polite and she was not in the least snobbish at all.

He quickly nodded before he said, “I’m booking the room for myself. I’m treating some of my friends to dinner tonight and I’d like to book three tables.”

“Hahaha. You’re making the booking for yourself and also treating others to dinner? Are you kidding me?”

Whitney laughed as she held onto her belly.

Even though they had already settled the bill, they had no intention of leaving at all. They wanted to stay and see how Gerald could afford to pay for the private room that he wanted to book.

Gerald could not be bothered with them. He had heard that Whitney and the rest of them had ordered the three hundred dollars package for each of them.

However, after looking at the menu, Gerald felt that there was nothing delicious on the menu. If he wanted to treat his classmates to a delicious meal, he had to pay for a more expensive package per head.

Therefore, Gerald replied, "I'd like to book the six hundred dollar package! Please help me book three nice tables!"

"Alright then, sir. You'll need to pay five thousand dollars as a deposit! "

The manager smiled slightly at this time, while Whitney and the rest of them were startled. Gerald was actually asking for a more expensive package compared to Victor and he was actually booking three tables for dinner tonight!

Was he going to order this expensive package and eat only spicy and sour potato shreds?

Crazy! This man was absolutely insane!

Was he rich?

This was ridiculous.

Gerald did not even hesitate before he simply took out five thousand dollars from his backpack and placed it on the counter in front of the manager.

Whitney was stunned for a moment. "Okay, Gerald! It seems as though you have enough money to come out for a good meal! Then, let me tell you that I won't be helping you apply for any subsidy to pay off your school fees! You won't receive any money to pay for your tuition fee this semester!"

"Thanks for worrying about me but I've already paid my own tuition fee."

Gerald did not know what else to say to this girl.

Even though Whitney was very beautiful, she was very snobbish and she only had eyes for the rich and wealthy. She always treated those who were poorer as dirt on the ground.

However, Gerald felt that Mila, the girl whom he had met in the auditorium the other day, was really nice. The impression that Gerald had of her was that she was very beautiful and quiet, and just one glance at her made Gerald's heart palpitate uncontrollably. Unfortunately, she was not here today.

Whitney's eyes widened in shock at this time. "What did you just say? You've already paid your tuition fee for this semester? You even have five thousand dollars on you now? Does that mean you have some money now? What...what's going on?"

"Oh, I won the lottery."

Gerald was helpless. If he did not say anything to clarify the situation, this woman would continue nagging him until she died. Therefore, he decided to carry on with his lie.

"You won the lottery? How much did you win?" Whitney asked in a hurry.

She felt that Gerald was not acting himself at all. First of all, he was being too generous. The deposit that he paid for the three tables alone was five thousand dollars! Moreover, he would also have to fork out money for drinks tonight. After all, this restaurant was famous for their wine and liquors. This way, Gerald would have to pay tens of thousands of dollars for dinner tonight.

In other words, Gerald must have won more than thirty thousand dollars. No, he must have at least fifty thousand dollars or more! Otherwise, he could not possibly be so arrogant!

"Uh...not much, not much."

After that, Gerald closed his backpack before he turned around to leave immediately.

Why did he have to reveal so much to Whitney?

Anyway, he did not want anything to do with her at all.

“What? So, he just won the lottery? What’s the big deal? He can’t even be compared to the rich second generation anyway.”

When he saw the arrogant expression on Gerald’s face and how uncomfortable Whitney felt, Victor spoke up immediately.

“Whitney, what is the point of getting angry at someone like him? When I return to the university later, I’ll ask Danny and his friends to take care of this arrogant kid!” Victor said coldly.

“Yes! Isn’t it just tens of thousands of dollars anyway? Why is he acting so arrogant?”

Whitney’s friends also chimed in at this time.

After that, Whitney made up her mind. She had to get to the bottom of this matter and find out how much money Gerald had actually won from the lottery!

Chapter 28

She felt so anxious right now!

However, Gerald had already taken a taxi back to their university.

During their classes in the afternoon, Gerald was very happy because the look of contempt that his classmates previously had for him had completely disappeared. In fact, there were still a number of people who were jealous of him.

“Gerald, what place did you book for dinner tonight? Is it an ordinary small restaurant?”

As soon as classes ended, Danny and Blondie went over to Gerald as they asked him with a sly smile on their faces.

At this time, most of his classmates looked at Gerald out of curiosity.

Gerald smiled before he replied, "Well, since this is the first time that I'd be treating all my classmates to dinner, I've already booked three tables at Homeland Kitchen tonight."

"What? Homeland Kitchen?"

Danny was stunned and all of Gerald's classmates also cast shocked glances in Gerald's direction.

"Gerald, are you talking about the Homeland Kitchen restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street?" Xavia asked in a cold manner as she walked towards Gerald.

Homeland Restaurant was a luxurious restaurant that would easily cost more than a few thousand dollars per head, without any drinks.

If Gerald had only won thirty thousand dollars from the lottery, he would have to spend almost all that money just to buy his classmates a meal tonight.

Even though Xavia had already broken up with Gerald, she felt very distressed for the way that he would be spending that thirty thousand dollars.

She was not feeling sorry for Gerald but she wanted Gerald to spend that money on her instead. She felt as uncomfortable as she had when Gerald was buying the Hermes bag that cost him fifty five thousand dollars!

In her opinion, she felt that Gerald should spend all of that money on her!

"Yes, that's the restaurant that I am talking about," Gerald replied as he smiled.

“Damn it. You’re a lunatic!” Xavia roared as she glared at Gerald.

“Hahaha. Gerald is just being generous towards his friends. By the way, Gerald, are we allowed to bring our boyfriend or girlfriend with us tonight?”

Even though Danny was pretending to be very respectful, he could not hide the contempt he was feeling in his heart.

Harper stood up at this time before he said, “Danny, aren’t you ashamed of yourself? How could you actually have the audacity to show up at the dinner tonight after the way you’ve treated Gerald this whole time?”

“Harper, Gerald is treating all of us to dinner tonight. Since he’s won the lottery, we’re all also feeling very happy for him. So, how could we possibly not show up for the dinner tonight?”

Danny smiled satirically.

At this time, Gerald replied in a helpless manner, “Sure, you can come along if you want to. You can also bring your girlfriends along with you.”

Gerald knew what Danny was planning to do but he could not be bothered at all.

“Yay!”

All the boys and girls in the classroom were very excited at this time.

When Xavia saw Gerald’s indifference and how he did not seem to care about the money at all, she could not help but feel very upset. She was initially planning to take Gerald’s money from him!

However, Gerald was even more hateful!

Good!

She would do as he pleased then. She would ask Yuri to come along with her tonight so he could eat as much delicious food and drink as much wine and liquor as he could!

Xavia pondered to herself.

Was that what Danny meant anyway?

After that, someone naturally informed Yuri about the dinner tonight.

Moreover, Cassandra had also decided to attend the dinner. She even drove Danny and his friends along with her.

At this time, Gerald and Harper also went to the restaurant by a taxi.

“Oh my! Gerald really booked a room at Homeland Kitchen!”

Danny was really surprised. However, this was exactly what he planned for.

“Mr. Crawford, I’m afraid that the original three tables you’ve booked wouldn’t be enough to accommodate all of you. I think you have to add on at least another table,” the female manager hurriedly said when she saw the crowd of people in the lobby.

“Alright then. I will add on another table!” Gerald replied immediately. This was the first time that he had really spent so lavishly after becoming part of the rich second generation.

“Wait a minute! Gerald, if we are really going to add another table, don’t you think you should also book another luxurious private room since our class representative is here?” Danny smiled as he asked Gerald at this time.

“Yes, since our class representative is here, how could you possibly expect her to share the same room as the other students?”

Danny and his friends started booing Gerald at this time.

Cassandra simply stood at the side as she crossed her arms in front of her chest because she wanted to see how Gerald would reply. Meanwhile, Harper was standing beside Gerald and he would have attacked Danny if the class representative was not around.

Gerald did not reply.

At this time, Yuri sneered before he laughed and said, “Well, I also think that you should add on another luxurious private room, Gerald. If you feel reluctant to spend so much money tonight, then I can just pay for the additional luxurious private room for the class representative. What do you think?”

Yuri sneered. In fact, he was just trying to humiliate Danny as much as he could. After booking the private room, he would make sure that he ordered more food and wine there so that Gerald would have to pay a lot more for the final bill tonight. Most importantly, Yuri said that because he wanted to show that he was capable and wealthy.

Sure enough, at this time, Cassandra looked at Yuri with a look of appreciation on her face. Xavia also felt very proud of Yuri at this moment. After all, Gerald had always been nothing but a pauper!

Just look at Yuri. This was what a real second-generation rich kid was like!

“Another luxurious private room? If that is what you really want, then I am fine with paying for it,” Gerald replied as he smiled faintly. Since Yuri wanted to do this, he could do whatever he wanted to. Anyway, Gerald owned this restaurant...

Chapter 29

After that, Gerald added the luxury private room that was worth more than two thousand five hundred dollars per head.

Those who could be in the luxurious private room were naturally the most popular students in the classroom—Danny, Xavia, Yuri, Cassandra, Gerald and his roommates, and last but not least, Naomi.

The other students could only head to the other private room.

“Yuri, since we’re already in this super luxurious private room, who would place the order for food today?” Gerald asked as he smiled at this time.

“Don’t you have any manners at all? Yuri is our guest today so it is only natural for him to order what he wants to eat first! Why? Are you afraid that Yuri will order too much and you won’t be able to afford to pay for dinner tonight?” Xavia suddenly said in a contemptuous manner.

Of course, Yuri had to order some food first. Otherwise, Xavia was afraid that Gerald would only order spicy and sour potato shreds.

If that was really the case, then their plan to spend all of Gerald’s money would not work at all.

In fact, when they were in Yuri’s car on the way to the restaurant, they had already discussed this matter with Danny and the other boys.

They were planning to make Gerald pay more than tens of thousands of dollars for the dinner tonight.

After that, they had to make sure that he spent an additional ten thousand dollars at least. They wanted Gerald to pay at least twenty thousand dollars or more for the dinner tonight. Moreover, Yuri had already decided to combine forces and financial resources with Danny to defeat Gerald tonight.

That would be more than enough!

“Alright then. Just order whatever you want to!” Gerald replied as he smiled bitterly.

Harper, who was sitting at the side, kept nudging Gerald to remind him of the situation but Gerald simply shook his head, motioning for them not to worry about him because he knew what he was doing.

“Alright then, thank you!”

Yuri took the menu in his hand before he started looking at the menu from the last page.

After all, Homeland Kitchen’s signature dishes were all listed on the last few pages of the menu and these were the more expensive dishes.

“The Australian big lobster! The Australian abalone!”

Danny and the rest of the boys observed the expression on Gerald’s face as Yuri continued ordering some of the signature dishes. They wanted to see the anxious and tangled expression on his face.

However, Gerald was still indifferent and he showed no fear on his face at all.

Even though Yuri was ordering the food at this time, he was still calculating in his heart.

After all, he only had three thousand to four thousand dollars left for the month and Danny only had one thousand five hundred dollars. That meant that they only had a total of five thousand five hundred dollars to splurge today.

In other words, they had to make sure that they did not spend more than ten thousand dollars today.

Otherwise they would really be embarrassed when they couldn’t afford to settle the bill.

Yuri ordered some of the famous signature dishes from the last few pages of the menu.

After doing the math, he realized that the four dishes that he ordered would already amount to four thousand five hundred dollars, excluding the cost of wine and liquor.

After that, Yuri handed the menu over to Gerald with a cold expression on his face.

Even though he was going to spend a lot of money here today, he was more than willing to do so because he wanted Gerald to spend all the money that he had here today. Otherwise, he would feel very uncomfortable.

“What? You only ordered four of the signature dishes from the last few pages of the menu? That would only cost around three thousand dollars!”

Gerald laughed out loud at this time.

“What do you mean by that? You can pick more of the signature dishes if you want to. Anyway, you can never compare to Yuri no matter what you do!”

Xavia was extremely dissatisfied when she saw Gerald mocking Yuri.

At this time, Cassandra, who was on her cell phone, could only shake her head slightly as she listened in on the conversation.

She thought that Gerald was really stupid. How could he possibly compare and compete with someone like Yuri when he only had that small sum of money that he had won from the lottery?

“Waitress, how many signature dishes are there on the menu?” Gerald looked at the waitress as he smiled.

“Sir, there are a total of twenty signature dishes on the menu and all of these are the top dishes in Homeland Kitchen. Only the wealthiest people can usually afford to order four of these signature dishes at one go! The price of these four dishes already amount to around four to five thousand dollars. What ordinary dishes would you like to add on to your order?”

“Oh, so that is it?”

Gerald closed the menu immediately.

“Alright then, just bring us all twenty signature dishes from the menu. We will enjoy it slowly!”

“What?”

The waitress was shocked and she dropped her ordering machine on the floor.

The twenty dishes would probably cost more than fifteen thousand dollars!

Oh my god!

She had never served food like this before!

“Damn it! Gerald, are you insane? The price of these twenty signature dishes and the package will amount to at least twenty thousand dollars!”

Danny was shocked.

Yuri also felt very nervous as he calculated the amount of money that he had on hand. Initially, he was just trying to play around with Gerald so that he could humiliate him. However, he did not expect this reaction from Gerald at all.

Gerald could see the abnormal expression on Yuri’s face and he realized that he had been silent all this while. Gerald smiled before he said, “Yuri, why don’t we order some drinks? Why aren’t you saying anything at all? ARE the dishes I’ve ordered too expensive for you?”

“How could it possibly be too expensive for me? You can dream on! This is just a small sum of money to me. I’m just afraid that you wouldn’t be able to pay for all the three tables downstairs with just thirty thousand dollars! I’m afraid that you’d embarrass all of us here today,” Yuri retorted immediately.

Was a pauper who everyone looked down on actually ridiculing him at this time?

This was totally unacceptable!

“Yeah, Gerald do you even know what you’re doing now? Yuri might be splitting the bill with you for the luxurious private room but you have to remember that you still have to foot the bill for the three tables that you’ve booked downstairs too! Although they have not ordered any of the signature dishes, I’m sure they must have also ordered drinks for each table! That would definitely cost you a few thousand dollars already!”

“Are you sure you’ll be able to pay for the dinner tonight or are you just trying to save face when you order all those items? Remember that this is Homeland Kitchen on Mayberry Commercial Street!”

The girls who were close to Xavia were already worried at this time.

“Don’t worry, I know what I’m doing. Moreover, I have Yuri here with me. Since Yuri has said it’s okay, we should order some drinks too!”

Gerald turned around before he asked the waitress, “By the way, how old is the red wine that you serve here?”

“We have quite an extensive collection of red wines. The oldest red wine is from 1995 and it’s a bottle of luxury wine that costs one thousand and five hundred dollars.”

The waitress immediately recommended Gerald the most expensive wine in the restaurant when she saw that Gerald was so generous anyway.

Gerald could just reject the offer. After all, the dishes were already so expensive. Secondly, if Gerald did not want to reject the offer, she would be able to earn more commission anyway.

One thousand five hundred dollars for a bottle of red wine?

When Danny and Yuri heard the price of the red wine, they broke out in cold sweat immediately. Even Cassandra and Xavia were taken aback at this time.

“Gerald, I’m warning you that you’d better calculate and keep track of how much you can afford to pay for dinner tonight. Otherwise, you might end up not having enough money to pay for the dinner tonight!”

Xavia was also feeling a little afraid because of the amount of money that they were spending tonight. She was really afraid that Gerald would order another two bottles of red wine on impulse.

“Bring a box of that red wine here!”

Unexpectedly, Gerald placed the order for the red wine without any hesitation at all.

There were six bottles of red wine in a box.

Wouldn’t that amount to more than nine thousand dollars?

Oh my god!

Chapter 30

“Gerald, are you serious? You want a box of the red wine?”

This had seriously exceeded Yuri’s expectations. However, it was too late for him to retreat now or Gerald would beat him just like that.

“Of course I’m sure about my decision. However, if you find it too expensive, you can change the red wine for something cheaper, Yuri...” Gerald said once again.

Gerald had already been despised and bullied by these boys for the past three years. This was nothing to him today. He wanted to seek justice for all that he had suffered in the past.

After listening to Gerald's ridicule, Yuri simply gritted his teeth and said, "I don't think it's expensive at all! You can just order whatever you want! I will just split the bill with you at the end of the day."

"Okay. Okay then. I can rest assured now. By the way, waitress, I hope you remember that this young man and I will be splitting the bill for this luxurious private room!"

Gerald was afraid that Yuri would not admit it in the end. Therefore, he decided to remind the waitress of this fact in front of everyone.

The waitress nodded before she said, "Yes, sir! I know. If that's the case, I'll serve the food right away!"

The rest of them did not care at all. No matter what it was, it seemed as though Gerald and Yuri would not admit defeat anyway. This would be the most record-breaking meal that they ever had in their life.

Everyone started drinking the high-end red wine at this time. As they were eating and drinking, Gerald opened a special system website on his cell phone. This was a website used to manage all of the shops and businesses on Mayberry Commercial Street, with detailed information on each and every one of these shops here.

In fact, Zack had handed this website over to Gerald when he signed the renewal contract the last time. Therefore, Gerald decided to log in to take a look at this time as he wanted to check out the prices of the dishes and wine that he had ordered.

The import prices for the six bottles of red wine was a little more than six thousand dollars. Furthermore, the cost for the ordinary dishes for the three tables in the private room downstairs and the signature dishes that they enjoyed in the luxurious private room cost about three thousand dollars. Therefore, Gerald would lose about nine thousand dollars for this meal tonight.

However, Yuri and the others would have to spend at least ten to eleven thousand dollars tonight! Otherwise, Gerald would not have continued fighting against Yuri in this manner.

The classmates continued enjoying their food and drinks for more than two hours.

Yuri and Danny were not very happy as they ate their dinner. They kept holding their cell phones in their hands and everyone else did not know what they were doing...

After they were finally done eating and drinking, Gerald looked at Yuri and Danny, who had anxious looks on their faces.

“What now, Yuri? If we’re done with dinner, should we checkout and pay for the meal now? By the way, Yuri, the waitress already knows that we are splitting the bill for this luxurious private room. So, don’t tell me you have no money to pay for the meal later! Otherwise, you’d really be in a lot of trouble tonight!”

“What? Why would I be afraid of you?” Yuri said in a bitter manner.

To be honest, he did not have enough money at the moment. In fact, he had already spent the whole night trying to raise more money with Danny. As Gerald had already specifically mentioned the fact that he would be splitting the bill with Yuri to the waitress, there was no way for Yuri to get out of this at all!

Moreover, all of the friends that he had texted did not bother answering their phones or replying to his messages as soon as they saw that he wanted to borrow some money from them!

Damn it!

“Gerald, what are you implying? After paying for this meal tonight, you’ll be nothing more than a pauper once again! So, why don’t you worry about yourself instead?” Xavia said as she glared angrily at Gerald.

After that, she looked at Yuri before she said, “Brother Yuri, why don’t we go to the counter to pay for the food now? Let’s see who shall be the one crying later!”

Even though Xavia also felt distressed because Yuri had to spend so much money on this dinner, she thought that it was totally worth it since Gerald would become a pauper again after tonight!

As they were talking, the group of people, including all their classmates who enjoyed dinner at the other three tables, also headed downstairs.

Everyone was gathered in the lobby at this time.

Gerald's classmates were undoubtedly very happy with the meal that they had enjoyed tonight.

Even though most of them did not get to enjoy their dinner in the luxurious private room, they still felt very grateful towards Gerald.

"Hello, sir. In addition to the three tables in the private room downstairs, Mr. Crawford and Mr. Lowell will be splitting the bill for the luxurious private room upstairs. Each of you will need to pay eleven thousand dollars after splitting the bill."

What?

"That meal cost twenty two thousand dollars? Oh my god!"

Everyone was shocked at this time.

Gerald was indifferent as he took out the money from his backpack before he immediately settled the bill for the eleven thousand dollars and the three tables for his classmates downstairs.

At this time, it seemed as though Gerald only had six to seven thousand dollars left.

However, this meal had actually cost him only about seven to eight thousand dollars.

After paying the bill, Gerald looked at Yuri before he said, "Yuri, aren't you going to settle the bill now? Everyone's waiting to go home!"

"Hmph!"

Yuri looked a little embarrassed at this time.

He regretted his actions now. He had only decided to continue fighting heads on with Gerald because he was angry earlier. Moreover, he thought that he would be able to borrow some money from his friends before settling the bill. Unfortunately, he did not manage to do so.

Everyone was staring at Yuri at this time and this made him feel very stressed and embarrassed.

“Well, miss, could you please put this bill under my name and I’ll settle the payment tomorrow instead?” Yuri asked with a softer tone at this time.

He did not know what else to do.

“Sir, please don’t joke around with us. We do not accept credit payment here!”

When the manager saw the awkward expression on Yuri’s face, she started being very rude and impolite to him.

“If you really don’t have enough to pay off this bill, why don’t you call your parents or borrow some money from your friends?”

At this time, Yuri looked at Xavia and all of her classmates.

All of Xavia’s classmates looked out of the restaurant at this time, as though they had already made an agreement to do so.

Yuri was very annoyed at this time. He did not dare to call his father as if his father found out that he had spent eleven thousand dollars on a meal just to prove he was richer than his friend, his father would definitely kill him!

His family only owned a factory!

"I can offer you another way out. You could leave one of your classmates here to wait for you and leave the restaurant to find a way to raise the money. Moreover, I see that you have a car parked outside. You could leave the car behind as collateral."

"No! How could I possibly leave this car here tonight? This is my father's car! I have to drive it home tonight!" Yuri said anxiously.

Homeland Kitchen was located on Mayberry Commercial Street and Yuri cannot afford to offend anyone here.

He was already at a dead end.

"Shh..."

Gerald's classmates began whispering among themselves at this time. It turned out that the car actually belonged to Yuri's father.

Xavia also felt very embarrassed.

The manager spoke up and said, "Well, it looks like you can only leave someone here to wait for you while you raise the money then."

"Hello? Hello? Okay, Dad I am going home now. Wait for me!" As soon as he finished this sentence, Danny rushed out of the restaurant to answer a phone call.

These were not his classmates.

Therefore, in the end, Yuri could only look at Xavia as he said, "Manager, may I leave my girlfriend here to wait for me?"

Chapter 31

"I...I will not stay here!"

When Xavia looked at Yuri, she knew exactly what he meant.

This was too embarrassing!

Xavia continued shaking her head.

“My dear, please remember how kind I’ve always been to you. Just wait for me here. I’ll head home and look for some money, then drive back here to pick you up. After that, we can just stay outside for the night, okay?”

Yuri glanced at Gerald as he said that sentence. This was also a reminder to Xavia that the reason why they came for the dinner tonight was because they wanted to embarrass Yuri and she should not forget that!

Okay!

Xavia calmed down when she thought of Gerald.

Of course, Xavia had to prove that her new boyfriend was definitely a hundred times better than Gerald!
A hundred times better!

She must not lose face in front of Gerald.

“Okay, fine, I’ll stay here and wait for you. Anyway, I know that you’re rich and you’ll definitely come back for me.”

Xavia intentionally spoke very loudly at this time.

When Yuri saw that Xavia had already agreed to stay, he hurriedly withdrew from the restaurant.

Xavia had originally wanted some of her friends to stay behind to accompany her. However, Cassandra said that it would not be good for so many people to be out of the dormitory so late at night. Therefore, she took the rest of the girls back to the campus with her.

Gerald was the last one to leave the restaurant. In fact, Gerald felt a little distressed when he saw Xavia in this state.

Seriously!

How could Yuri actually leave Xavia alone at the restaurant all by herself in the middle of the night? Gerald could not help but feel his heart aching.

After all, he had already been in a relationship with Xavia for more than three years and he would be lying if he said that he did not have any feelings for her at all.

Even though Gerald was very disappointed with Xavia, he could not bring himself to hate her at all. He kept persuading himself that Xavia was not really a bad person.

Gerald did not feel happy at all to see Xavia in this kind of situation. If Xavia would just beg him and ask for his help, Gerald would definitely agree without any hesitation at all.

However, at this time, Xavia simply glared at Gerald with a cold expression on her face. She was confident that Yuri would definitely come back for her in a short while.

Ugh!

Gerald could not help but sigh to himself. If that was the case, then he did not need to worry anymore.

Perhaps the Xavia that he felt distressed for was the sensible and well-behaved Xavia in the past, and not the vain and materialistic Xavia that she had become today.

Hence, Gerald left the restaurant without turning back.

Gerald got back to the boy's dormitory a short while later. Gerald had humiliated Yuri in front of all of his classmates and it was supposed to be a very happy day for him.

However, Gerald was not happy at all.

At this time, Harper came over before he patted Gerald gently on his shoulder. "Gerald, are you okay with spending so much money for dinner today? We tried to stop you a few times but in the end, you ended up spending so much money anyway. You should have kept the thirty thousand dollars instead of spending it all at one go so you can enjoy and spend the rest of your days in university more comfortably."

Gerald smiled before he said, "Huh? Who told you that I only won thirty thousand dollars from the lottery?"

"What?"

Gerald's roommates quickly gathered around him because they were all in shock at this time.

"Well, I have a lot more money than this and even though the meal tonight cost quite a huge sum of money. In actual fact, I did not spend that much at all."

Gerald quickly explained the situation to his roommates.

"How much did you win from the lottery then, Gerald?"

"Yes, how much did you win from the lottery, Gerald? Don't keep us in suspense any longer!"

At this time, Harper and the rest of his roommates were all lying on Gerald's bed as though they would not let him go to sleep if he did not tell them the truth.

Gerald was helpless and he could only show them his fingers.

“Eight? Eighty thousand dollars?” Harper asked with a shocked expression on his face.

“Let’s go to sleep already! It’s Saturday tomorrow and I have to go to the library early in the morning to study. I have to go to bed early in order to wake up early tomorrow!” Gerald replied as he covered his face with his quilt as he got ready to sleep.

“Tell me! Is it eighty thousand dollars or eight hundred thousand dollars?”

Harper was very anxious. However, after harassing Gerald for a short while, Harper decided to give up.

In fact, it did not matter to him whether Gerald won eighty thousand dollars or eight hundred thousand dollars. All that mattered to him was that Gerald finally had some money.

Harper felt very content as he thought about it.

As Gerald was hiding beneath his quilt, he could not sleep even though he really wanted to sleep.

This was because he was still worried for Xavia.

He did not know if she had already returned from the restaurant.

In fact, Gerald had actually conducted an investigation on Yuri before and he found out that his family was not exactly very rich. Yuri’s father owned a factory and he gave Yuri about one thousand dollars for his allowance every month. Moreover, Gerald knew that Yuri did not have a lot of savings.

He would definitely not have enough money to pay the bill tonight.

Moreover, based on his personality, Gerald knew that Yuri would not go back and pick Xavia up from the restaurant.

Gerald thought that Xavia would definitely call him to ask for his help. However, Gerald waited until midnight and Xavia did not call him at all.

Why was he worried about her in the first place? The person that she loved was Yuri, and not him...

Gerald felt very helpless at this time.

The next day was a Saturday. While Gerald's roommates were still lazing in bed, he received a phone call early in the morning but it was not a phone call from Xavia. Instead, it was a phone call from Zack!

Chapter 32

Gerald got out of bed before he rushed into the bathroom to answer the call.

"Good morning, Mr. Crawford!" Zack greeted Gerald respectfully.

"My. Lyle, thank you for calling today. I'd like to ask you something..." Gerald asked as he smiled.

"Mr. Crawford, please let me know what you'd like me to do. You can just give me your instructions and I'll get it done immediately!"

Gerald told Zack all about the money that he had spent at Homeland Kitchen last night.

"Oh! Is that so? Mr. Crawford, I don't think you spent ten thousand dollars anyway. After all, the high-end red wine that you ordered last night, which cost you nine thousand dollars, is actually produced by the Crawford family abroad. Therefore, the cost of the red wine was only a few hundred dollars. Hahaha..."

Zack smiled. To be honest, it was really a shame that Gerald had only spent so little money just like that. However, Gerald was already showing progress in the task that Jessica had already entrusted him to do.

"Mr. Crawford, what can I do for you? Do you want me to refund you the twenty thousand dollars? I'll get to work as soon as you give me the order to do so..."

Zack listened as he said again, "Ahem. Forget it. After all, the money is also going back into my own business."

Initially, Gerald was planning to get his money back.

However, after listening to Zack's tone, he felt that it would be really embarrassing if he asked him to transfer that money back to him.

Moreover, he would also feel a little embarrassed if he asked Zack to do that.

Anyway, the money that his sister had given to him came from all these industries and businesses that they owned.

"By the way, is there a reason for you calling me today, Mr. Lyle?" Gerald asked immediately.

"Yes, there's something I'd like to tell you. After finding out that your poverty-stricken days are over, the bosses of most of the major businesses on Mayberry Commercial Street would like to hold a special banquet as a celebration for you. I was just wondering if you'd have the time to attend the banquet since it is a Saturday," Zack said in a soft tone.

Initially, Gerald had planned to go out to relax.

However, since everyone had specially put together a special reception for him, he did not want to let them down. Moreover, Gerald really wanted to get acquainted with more people. Otherwise, he would always look like a pauper and a fool.

Therefore, Gerald immediately agreed to attend the banquet.

In order to express the grandeur of the banquet, they had chosen for the banquet to be held at an exceptional and five star luxurious hotel instead of holding the banquet at one of the establishments on Mayberry Commercial Street.

It was a really luxurious restaurant!

After talking to Harper and his other roommates, Gerald went downstairs as he prepared to head out of the campus. As he was passing by the girls' dormitory, he looked up and he saw a person walking out of the girls' dormitory.

It was none other than Xavia.

"Huh? Why is she back at the dormitory?"

Gerald originally thought that Xavia would be spending the night out with Yuri after he rescued her from the restaurant.

In fact, Gerald was feeling a little distressed because of that.

As soon as Xavia saw Gerald, she said, "Hahaha. Gerald, are you heading out for your part-time job since it's already the weekend? Did you run out of money after spending so extravagantly last night?"

"Let me tell you something. You can never compare to Brother Yuri. Did you know that Brother Yuri came back for me in less than an hour last night? We were initially planning to spend the night outside together. However, we decided not to do so since I'm on my period anyway..."

Xavia stared at Gerald with a triumphant look on her face. In fact, she had deliberately said all of this because she wanted to provoke Gerald.

She was Xavia, the goddess he would never be able to get in this lifetime!

"Okay!" Gerald replied with a bittersweet smile.

At this time, a white BMW 3-series roared in front of the campus. As soon as he rolled down the car window, Yuri looked at Xavia with a smile on his face before he glanced coldly at Gerald.

“Hahaha. Gerald, I know that you were trying to make a fool out of me last night. Unfortunately, you didn’t succeed in doing so. Did you really think that I wouldn’t have money to pay for the meal?” Yuri asked as he glared at Gerald.

After that, he took out a diamond ring from his pocket before he said, “Xavia, I bought this for you. Do you like it?”

“Wow! It’s a diamond ring. It must cost at least one thousand five hundred dollars! I knew that you’re rich, Brother Yuri, unlike some people who have simply won a little money from the lottery!”

“Of course I’m rich. I have plenty of money. Xavia, I’ll bring you to a nice place today and we will be spending a lot of money! However, some people will have to be poor in the future! Come, get in the car!”

Xavia was very excited and she quickly got into the car. Then, Yuri glanced at Gerald contemptuously before he drove out of the campus.

Xavia was very excited after getting into the car and she asked Yuri, “Brother Yuri, why don’t you tell me how you managed to raise so much money last night? Moreover, why does it seem as though you became richer overnight? Did your father give you all this money?”

Yuri chuckled as he continued using his cell phone as he drove.

After that, he deleted a piece of software on his cell phone without leaving any traces behind. “Don’t worry about it. Anyway, just remember that Gerald can never compare to me! He’s just a piece of trash!”

“Wow! I’m really very happy!”

After getting ridiculed by Yuri and Xavia early in the morning, Gerald no longer had the mood to go out. Moreover, he could not help but wonder how Yuri managed to get so much money overnight.

Hahaha...

Gerald laughed to himself because he did not know why he was taking it to heart.

He headed straight to the library before reading some books and spending some of his time studying.

When it was almost noon, Gerald called for a cab before he headed to the Brilliant Star Restaurant. It was a six-star restaurant in Mayberry City. Of course, it could not be compared to any of the restaurants on Mayberry Commercial Street. However, it was still a very luxurious and expensive restaurant.

Because he had been busy reading and did not estimate the traffic on the road, Gerald arrived a few minutes later than the time that they had agreed on.

He walked very swiftly as he was in a hurry.

Boom!

“Ahh! Are you crazy?”

When he was passing through the turnstile, Gerald had pushed the turnstile a little too hard and he unintentionally hit the girl who was behind him.

The girl clutched her chest tightly as she cursed at Gerald and this attracted the attention of many people as they gathered around to find out what was happening...

Chapter 33

“Sorry...”

Gerald hurriedly apologized.

After that, he raised his eyes before he stole a glance at the girl behind him. He was immediately shocked by the girl's beautiful appearance.

She was wearing a tight-fitted dress and she had very long, flowy hair that fell over her shoulders. She looked about the same age as he was but her body had already developed perfectly at this time.

She was definitely one of the most beautiful girls that Gerald had ever seen.

“Sorry? Do you think it’s over just because you say you’re sorry?”

The girl continued cursing violently at him as she rubbed herself gently.

When Gerald indirectly hit her with the turnstile, she had injured herself and he could feel a fiery pain on her body at this time.

In fact, it was obvious that she was the one who had bumped into Gerald but since she saw that Gerald was dressed in such a casual manner, she decided to put the blame on him instead.

“If I wasn’t in a hurry, I’d definitely teach you a lesson today!” The girl continued shouting at Gerald.

After that, she pushed Gerald out of the way as she yelled, “Get out of my way, dumbass!”

After she was done cursing at him, the girl walked towards the elevator. Gerald really did not expect such a beautiful girl to actually be so violent. However, he could not help but smile as he thought about it.

At this time, Gerald stepped into the elevator when it arrived at the ground floor.

“What are you doing here?”

As soon as he entered the elevator, Gerald was unexpectedly greeted with a hostile attitude from the girl who had bumped into him a short while earlier.

What she meant was how could a dumbass like him actually think of riding the same elevator as her? This was very humiliating for her!

“Oh, I have to go upstairs because there’s something I need to do!” Gerald replied immediately.

After that, the girl turned around to face the other side because she did not want to look at Gerald.

Ding ding...

At this time, Gerald suddenly swallowed his saliva.

The girl’s fair and snow-white thighs were really very alluring.

Gerald turned away, pretending to look aside as though nothing had happened. After that, he secretly glanced at her thighs again when she was not paying any attention.

It was really exciting!

Who asked that crazy girl to bump into him, and then yell at him for no reason at all? Well, it was only reasonable for him to take advantage of her a little as a form of payment, right?

Gerald tilted his head a little because he wanted to glance at the girl’s thighs again. However, he realized that the girl had already turned around to face him at this time.

Right now, she was staring at Gerald with hatred in her eyes.

“You...you...you’re really a scumbag! How dare you peek at me even when you’re at such a high-end location? You’re despicable!” the girl yelled at him angrily.

Forget about his trashy dressing! This person was just so wretched and disgusting!

She felt that she was going insane!

“Who said I’m peeking at you? Does it mean I’m peeking at you just because I lowered my head and looked at the ground?” Gerald retorted even though he had a guilty conscience.

Slap!

The girl raised her hand before she gave Gerald a tight slap across his face. “You’re a scumbag! Don’t go! Wait for me to deal with you!”

After that, the girl pressed the elevator before she stepped out of the elevator with a furious expression on her face.

“Damn it. It is such a waste that she is beautiful because she has such a bad temper!”

Ugh!

However, Gerald did not feel that he had been mistreated when she slapped him across the face. In fact, he did not lose out at all because he was checking her thighs out after all.

It seemed that it was necessary for him to look for a girlfriend now that he had decided to give up on Xavia!

As he thought about this, Gerald took the elevator to the VIP room on the seventh floor that Zack had already told him about earlier.

It was a large and luxurious private room suitable for hosting all sorts of parties and large gatherings.

Chapter 34

When Gerald stepped into the room, he realized that there were many people inside.

The atmosphere was pretty lively. There were about a hundred women and men of all ages in the room, and the waiter and waitresses shuttled back and forth while the drinks were all self-service.

If Gerald did not guess wrongly, then these people should be the bosses and owners of the shops and establishments on Mayberry Commercial Street.

Gerald glanced around but he could not find Zack.

He took out his cell phone as he tried to call Zack, only to realize that his cell phone had already died a long time ago.

Ugh!

Gerald had been using his cell phone last night and had forgotten to charge it!

Forget it! Gerald decided to just wait for Zack to come over and greet him when he arrived at the room later.

After walking around the large room for a short while, Gerald could only smile helplessly to himself before he found a quiet corner to sit down by himself.

After that, he decided to have some fruits and drinks first.

The waiter and waitresses were so busy and they did not notice even Gerald. As Gerald was drinking and eating the refreshments that were served, he was noticed by a group of rich second generation young ladies from Mayberry Commercial Street.

“Look at that guy. It has already been a while since he’d been eating and drinking while sitting in that corner. Do any of you know him? Is he really from Mayberry Commercial Street?”

“I definitely have not seen him before!”

The girls frowned as they shook their heads.

“I don’t think he is someone from Mayberry Commercial Street. How can that be possible? Just look at the way he’s dressed! I think he’s just someone who snuck in to enjoy the food and drinks here for free!”

“You think that he came in here to steal food? No way! Could there possibly be such a shameless person?”

“Why not? I do think he’s really that shameless! Look at him. He’s dressed so shabbily and there must be a reason why he chose to sit in that quiet corner all by himself.”

“That makes sense!”

The sons and daughters of several owners of the businesses on Mayberry Commercial Street started discussing and talking about Gerald.

“The boss of Mayberry Commercial Street, Gerald Crawford, will be coming here today. I don’t want someone like that shabbily-dressed man to ruin the atmosphere!”

“What would Mr. Crawford think of our parents’ ability to do things? How can someone like him be allowed to enter this venue?”

A young and charismatic man dressed in white sneered as he looked at Gerald.

“Oh, look! Elena is here!”

At this time, one of the girls exclaimed as she pointed at the entrance.

“Elena, come here!”

The girl waved at Elena Larson.

As soon as Elena entered the room, the eyes of the young boys brightened up immediately.

Elena was wearing a short dress and her long hair was draping over her shoulders. Her beautiful face was perfect and she really looked like a goddess compared to all the other girls present in the room.

When Elena walked towards her friends, some of the older guests could not help but glance at her long, fair legs with perverted expressions on their faces.

At this time, the young boys were also staring at Elena.

“Elena! Why are you only here now? Didn’t we agree to come here together?”

“Elena, why do you look so unhappy? Did something happen?” the young man dressed in white suddenly asked, with a face full of concern.

“Ugh. Don’t mention it anymore. When I was downstairs, I ran into a wretched scumbag! First, he touched me in an inappropriate place. After that, he was peeking at me as we took the elevator up together! That’s why I had to stop by the washroom to fix my clothes!” Elena complained as she exhaled with a pale expression on her face.

She was quite fluent and good at talking.

The first reason why she had hurried out of the elevator earlier was because she did not want to stay in the same elevator with that perverted scumbag.

Secondly, she felt as though her underwear had moved when she slammed into the turnstile earlier. Therefore, she went to the bathroom to fix her underwear and her clothing.

She was very annoyed!

“Damn it! How can something like this happen?”

The boy dressed in white and the other brothers and sisters were all very furious at this time. How could anyone touch Elena inappropriately? She was their goddess and the boys here did not even dare to touch her hand!

“Alright, Elena. Wait for us to get rid of this sneaky little thief first. After that, we will head to the surveillance control room and look for that man that you were talking about!”

The young man dressed in white glanced at Gerald, who was enjoying his fruits and vegetable salad at this time.

“Yes, we should get rid of that thief first!” echoed all the girls at this time...

Chapter 35

“A food thief?”

Elena was startled and she looked in the direction that the young man dressed in white was pointing at. As soon as she saw the man that he was pointing at, Elena’s eyes widened immediately.

“It’s him!”

“Who is that? Elena, do you know that food thief?”

“Hmph! He is that wretched scumbag I was talking about!” Elena said in a furious manner as she walked towards Gerald.

The rich and young wealthy girls and boys followed behind Elena at this time.

At this time, Gerald was enjoying all his food and he was thinking about how he was going to greet the bosses and owners of the businesses on Mayberry Commercial Street later.

After all, this was the first time that Gerald had ever attended an event like this.

At this moment, it suddenly became very dark in front of him.

Gerald lifted his head and he saw a group of people standing in front of him. Gerald realized then that the leader of the group of people was none other than the beautiful but violent and aggressive girl that he encountered in the lobby earlier.

“It’s really you!”

“Why are you here?” Gerald exclaimed with a shocked expression on his face.

“You, you...you aren’t only nasty but you actually dare to sneak in here and steal our food? I think that you must be really tired of living!” Elena yelled angrily before she continued, “Sisters, this is the man who was peeping at me in the elevator just now!”

“Hmph! Let’s teach him a lesson!”

After that, the group of five or six girls started attacking Gerald under Elena’s orders. They pounced on Gerald and they started scratching him, choking him, pinching him, and tearing at his clothes!

The rich young boys were much calmer and they simply watched as they stood at the side. After all, there were so many seniors there today.

If Gerald fought back, it would not be too late for him to fight him then!

“What are you doing? Don’t think that I won’t hesitate to fight back...”

Gerald’s hair was already all messed up. His clothes were completely torn and he had purple bruises all over his face because the girls had been pinching and beating him.

He was starting to lose his temper.

At this time, Elena slapped him across his face again.

“Who asked you to peek at me? I’ll kill you for peeping at me!”

Crazy woman! They were a bunch of crazy women!

Gerald protected his head as the bunch of girls continued attacking him aggressively as they pushed him on the ground.

“Stop!”

At this time, a middle-aged man stood up before he stopped the girls. In fact, many people had already surrounded them because of the huge commotion.

The middle-aged man was wearing glasses and he sounded very gentle but he had some sort of magnificent aura around him.

As soon as he spoke, Elena and the other girls stopped hitting Gerald immediately.

“Dad! Don’t worry! Just let me kill this wretched scumbag! Did you know that he was actually peeping at me when we were in the elevator earlier? He even has the audacity to sneak in here to steal our food now!” Elena said as she stomped her feet angrily.

Warren Larson was at a loss for words as he stared at his daughter.

Warren knew that his daughter had a bad temper and a strong sense of justice. However, he did not want to make the situation so uncomfortable for the rest of the guests present here today.

He could vaguely remember the incident last year when Elena had witnessed one of her female classmates getting bullied by another rich young man. In an attempt to get justice for her female classmate, Elena attacked the rich young man and took away his manhood.

Therefore, when Warren saw that his daughter was beating someone up again, he hurried over immediately so that he could stop her before anything happened.

“What is happening here? Young man, could you tell me who you are?”

Warren frowned slightly when he saw Gerald with his tousled hair and messed up appearance. He did not recognize Gerald as someone from Mayberry Commercial Street and Warren knew everyone from the Mayberry Commercial Street, regardless of their age.

“I am...”

Gerald was about to reveal his identity at this time. However, Elena had already raised her leg to kick Gerald’s crotch. Gerald stopped her before she could do so.

Damn it! If he did not react fast enough, he would have already lost his manhood!

This woman was insane!

He was going to teach her a lesson in future!

Gerald secretly swore in his heart while Elena was still trying to attack him. However, a team of men entered the room under Zack’s leadership at that moment.

“Mr. Lyle!”

“Mr. Lyle!”

Chapter 36

Everyone in the room greeted Zack in a respectful manner, including the group of young men, who also stood up as they greeted him.

Elena also gave up attacking Gerald at this time.

“What’s happening? What’s everyone up to now?”

Zack had an extremely strong and majestic aura around him and at this time, he glanced at Elena and the rest of the people who were crowded at the corner.

“Fortunately, Mr. Crawford isn’t here yet! Otherwise, what would he think of all of you?” Zack yelled at the group of young men before he glared at the young man dressed in white.

The boy dressed in white felt very wronged at this time because he did not do anything at all. However, he was also a part of the group.

Warren quickly changed the topic at this time. “Mr. Lyle, didn’t you say that Mr. Crawford was about to arrive?”

Zack replied in a cold manner, “Well, I can’t seem to get in touch with Mr. Crawford now. I think that he has already turned off his cell phone.”

“Would Mr. Crawford decide not to come after all?”

At this time, the crowd of people had a sad expression on their faces. This was their best opportunity to meet and present themselves to Gerald Crawford.

Sure enough, it was not as simple as they thought it would be. Gerald was simply not someone that would show up just because they invited him to the banquet.

At this time, Zack seemed to be able to read their minds and he knew exactly what they were thinking.

After that, he said, "Don't worry, Mr. Crawford isn't the person you think he is. He's a very peace-loving and amicable person and if he's told me he'll be here, then he'll definitely be here today!"

After he was done speaking, Zack turned around to look for a young man before he said, "Flynn, find a way to contact Mr. Crawford as soon as possible! We have to look for him as fast as we can!"

Flynn quickly stepped forward before he nodded respectfully at Zack.

"Uncle Zack, we're supposed to host a banquet for Mr. Crawford today but it seems as though someone had tried to crash our banquet. How should we deal with him?"

Elena looked at Zack in a coquettish manner at this time.

"Oh? Is that so? What does my niece want to do with that man?"

Zack smiled before he looked at Elena.

Elena was really very beautiful, lively, and pleasant. In fact, Zack had always doted on her because he really admired her strong sense of justice.

"Hmph! I suggest that we hand him over to Brother Flynn and bring him over to Brother Flynn's martial arts studio to beat him up and teach him a lesson!"

Flynn could not help but smile when he heard Elena's words.

Zack glanced at the figure of the young man who was lying on the ground because he had been beaten beyond recognition by the group of girls.

After that, he gave a wry smile before he said, "Alright then. Flynn, just do as Elena suggested then...but first, you have to go and look for Mr. Crawford!"

“Um...Mr. Lyle, you don't have to look for me. I'm here!”

Gerald only intervened at this time.

Boom!

As soon as Zack heard Gerald's voice, his body started trembling uncontrollably. Then, he looked at the young man who was lying on the ground with tousled hair and a messed up appearance.

Zack's eyes widened in shock as he looked at Gerald. At this time, the crowd of people could only exchange glances with one another, unable to comprehend what was happening.

“Hmph! You nasty guy! You still dare to talk now? Who did you say you are?” Elena asked in a contemptuous tone as she glared at Gerald.

“Hahaha! You're really good at acting! You're even pretending to be Mr. Crawford now, aren't you?”

The group of girls were also very annoyed at this time.

After Zack regained his senses, he turned a deaf ear to what the young girls had said, as he was really confused at this time. They were supposed to give Gerald a welcome party today but he was beaten up instead?

Zack walked up to Gerald before he shouted in a respectful manner, “Mr. Crawford! I am so sorry for what happened!”

Zack was bowing before Gerald at a ninety degree angle!

“What?”

The crowd of people were all shocked at this time. Elena and the other young ladies were also very confused.

Was this person...really the boss and owner of Mayberry Commercial Street? Was he really the one who was backing Zack up all along? This man here...was Gerald Crawford?

Warren had already turned pale and he quickly said, "Mr. Crawford, I'm really happy to meet you today."

After that, he bowed in front of Gerald in a humble manner.

He felt that his life was over. His daughter had just beaten Gerald up so badly!

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Crawford!"

The rest of the crowd also bowed as they greeted Gerald.

However, Elena and her friends were still standing straight and they did not bow in front of Gerald at all.

At this time, Gerald looked at Elena with a playful look on his face as he said, "So, young lady, how should we deal with this matter now?"

Chapter 37

"I...I don't know..."

Elena felt very ashamed and angry at this time. It felt as though she had already knocked over a bottle of wine. She would never have thought that this wretched and disgusting man would actually turn out to be the famous Gerald Crawford.

He was truly part of the rich second generation in every sense!

“Mr. Crawford, I apologize for everything that my daughter had done earlier. You can punish my daughter however you wish to.”

Warren was bent over and he did not dare raise his body at all.

To be honest, when he saw Elena and Warren acting this way, Gerald’s anger had already subsided.

In fact, Gerald knew that he was also at fault because he had indeed behaved a little wretchedly earlier. However, it was all because Elena was showing off her long and beautiful fair legs!

This was the first time that he had ever been surrounded by so many women in his life!

Based on Gerald’s personality, he would not regard this as a big matter and he would simply let this matter go just like that. He would just endure this humiliation on his own.

However, Zack could read his mind and he said in a low voice, “Mr. Crawford, you have to punish them because they were trampling all over your family tradition. After all, if you don’t punish them after they have already publicly offended you, the damage would definitely be irreparable when your sister finds out about this matter in the future. The consequences aren’t as simple as you think they are!”

At this time, Gerald looked at Warren, who was still bowing in front of him.

Gerald knew that he would have to punish Elena and her friends.

Otherwise, all the big bosses on Mayberry Commercial Street would not fear him.

Alright then, he would have to punish them.

Gerald looked at Elena and all the other beautiful girls with a cold expression on his face before he said, “Brother Zack, please arrange for a big room for me and bring all the girls into the room on my behalf!”

Zack got to work immediately without saying anything else and Elena bit her lips gently. It seemed as though she already knew her own fate and she was filled with shame and anger at this time.

However, Warren and the other fathers took a deep breath after listening to his instructions. Everyone understood Gerald's intentions immediately.

But this kind of punishment? Was it even a punishment?

It was simply a reward!

Once his daughter was done with her service and if she was favored by Gerald, then the Larson family would also gain an advantage.

Warren thought that he could take advantage and make use of this opportunity to replace Zack's position so he could gain control over Mayberry Commercial Street instead.

Obviously, the fathers of the other girls also had the same thing in mind. They were constantly winking at their daughter, as though they were trying to convince them to perform and serve Gerald well.

At this time, Zack had already prepared the room that Gerald had asked for. After that, Gerald brought Elena and the four other girls into the room with him.

Zack naturally waited outside the door.

"Mr. Crawford...what...what do you want?" a young and beautiful girl suddenly asked with an embarrassed look on her face.

"Hahaha. What do you think I want? The five of you have beat me up like this and you're actually asking me what I want?"

Since he was angry anyway, he should just release his anger now. He should let it all out.

“I want all five of you to lie on the bed now!”

“What?”

Elena clenched her fists slightly at this time.

She really did not expect Gerald to be such a nasty person. If it wasn't because of her fear that her family would collapse and pay the consequences of her actions, she would never do anything that Gerald wanted her to do.

Hahaha. Elena did not know what to imagine now.

After all, she had always despised such nasty people and all these nasty things, but she was actually being forced to do these nasty things with so many other girls now!

However, Elena still gritted her teeth as she obeyed Gerald's instructions and lay on the bed with the four girls.

Slap!

Gerald slapped one of the girls.

After that, he continued slapping them, one after the other.

The girls felt very embarrassed and they were also hurting but they had no choice but to endure it. At this time, Elena was on the verge of breaking into tears after getting slapped by Gerald.

“You want to hit me? Let's see if you still dare to hit me in the future!”

Gerald gave each of them another tight slap across their faces. After that, he finally heaved a huge sigh of relief as he felt so much better at this time.

Chapter 38

If he really wanted to do anything, he would have chosen Elena, but Gerald did not have that type of overlord personality and character.

However, Gerald had to punish them. So, he thought of giving them this kind of nasty punishment so they would always remember this day.

“Sob. Sob.”

After half an hour, the girls walked out of the room. All of them had a painful and miserable expression on their faces. At this time, all the second-generation rich young lords were stunned.

Damn it! Mr. Crawford was simply too amazing. He could actually punish all five of the beautiful girls within half an hour and those girls could barely walk in a straight line now!

The young boy dressed in white also secretly admired Gerald. Since Gerald was still interested in Elena and the other girls, however, he did not dare harbor any other ideas.

Today’s meal was very interesting.

When all the wealthy businessmen, including Warren, learned that their daughter did not have sexual intercourse with Gerald, they were all extremely disappointed.

“Mr. Crawford, why don’t I send you back home?”

The reception banquet ended perfectly and Zack and his entourage quickly followed after Gerald as he offered to send him home.

Gerald was about to nod when at this time, a middle-aged man with a big belly suddenly squeezed in before he said, “Mr. Crawford, why don’t you allow my son to send you home instead? This is my son, Aiden Baker. He’s studying at Sunnydale University, which isn’t too far from Mayberry University!”

The middle-aged man did not seem to care about the type of car that someone like Gerald should be sitting in. In fact, he did not really care about Gerald's existence at all. All that he wanted was for Gerald to ride in his son's car and his purpose in doing so was just so Gerald would remember his son's name! That was sufficient for him!

Of course, Aiden was none other than the former second-generation rich kid dressed in white. At this time, Aiden was a little shy as he stood in front of Gerald with his hands behind his back. After all, the Crawford family was a very wealthy and powerful family! How could he possibly not be nervous in front of Gerald?

However, Gerald did not say much and he simply nodded and said, "Alright then. I am sorry to trouble you, brother."

"What? It's no trouble at all. No trouble at all!"

Aiden's father was pleasantly surprised that Gerald was actually so easygoing.

Aiden was also very excited at this time. He left in a hurry before driving his car to the main entrance.

Aiden was driving a Ferrari that was worth about seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

"Hey, Fatty Baker, how could you possibly ask Mr. Crawford to ride in this kind of car?"

The other people tried to stop him as soon as they saw Aiden's car. "Mr. Crawford, why don't you ride with me instead? I have a Rolls-Royce!"

"Yes, Mr. Crawford, you cannot possibly ride in this car! How is it befitting of your status?"

The other bosses and businessmen competed for Gerald's attention at this time.

"No, this car is fine. I will go back to my campus now. Let's get together again sometime in the future!"

In fact, Gerald was so mesmerized that he could barely move his eyes as soon as he saw the Ferrari.

He had always dreamed of buying a car but he did not even dare to dream of owning a Ferrari.

Therefore, even though he had a vast collection of Ferrari posters, he never had the opportunity to sit in a Ferrari before.

Gerald could not take his eyes off the Ferrari.

As soon as he got into the car, Aiden quickly said goodbye to everyone before he drove off immediately.

Elena could not help but blush when she looked at Gerald's back as he was leaving the venue. She felt very confused at this time.

The other bosses and businessmen were looking at Gerald and they were all filled with admiration for Gerald.

"Mr. Crawford is unexpectedly such a gracious and humble person. He is so low-key and down to earth! His future is really limitless! Limitless!"

Even though Aiden was also very excited, he was very low-key in front of Gerald.

Gerald did not allow him to drive him directly into the campus. After all, it would be too high-profile for such an expensive Ferrari to drive into their campus. This was not in line with Gerald's low-key and introverted character.

Therefore, he asked Aiden to drop him off in front of the university gate.

At the same time, Gerald really enjoyed his ride in the Ferrari.

Since his sister wanted him to spend the three million dollars on his Universal Global Supreme Shopper's Card, perhaps he should just use the money to buy a car then?

As he was thinking about this, Gerald started walking towards the university.

However, he did not notice the pair of eyes that was already fixed on him at this time.

"Gerald, you...you...stop right there!"

Chapter 39

Gerald could hear a girl calling out to him.

When he turned around, he realized that it was none other than Whitney, the president of the student union.

Obviously, Whitney had already witnessed the scene where Gerald had gotten out of the Ferrari. At this time, she was staring at Gerald in disbelief with an extremely shocked expression on her face.

"How can I help you?"

Gerald did not expect that he would still be seen by an acquaintance even though he had already asked Aiden to drop him off such a long way from the campus.

Gerald knew that the reason why Whitney called out to him was because she wanted to find out why he had gotten out from the Ferrari.

However, Gerald pretended to be a little confused.

Seriously...

"You, you, you...why did you just get out of a Ferrari?" Whitney asked him directly.

During her last few encounters with Gerald, she had really experienced many shocking revelations.

First of all, she found out that Gerald won the lottery and he could actually buy everyone a meal at Homeland Kitchen last night. Moreover, he did not hesitate to splurge at all.

Therefore, Whitney decided to ask Gerald's classmates about this matter because she wanted to find out what exactly was going on. The answer that she got from them was that Gerald had won the lottery and he won thirty thousand dollars.

However, at this time, many of the students were already speculating that Gerald won much more than thirty thousand dollars from the lottery.

This made Whitney feel very uncomfortable. How could Gerald, who was nothing but a pauper have such good luck? Was God blind?

It was only normal for her to feel this way.

After all, no one would feel comfortable or happy if someone that they had been bullying all their lives was suddenly living a better life than they were!

Whitney had been meaning to find Gerald and get to the bottom of this matter.

How much did he win from the lottery?

Unexpectedly, she ran into him as she was about to leave the university and she saw him getting out of the expensive Ferrari.

"Oh, that is my friend's car. He's just dropping me off at school," Gerald replied lightly.

"Hahaha. Your friend's car? Who is your friend? Would you, Gerald, actually have friends who are so wealthy? I won't believe you even if you kill me!"

Whitney was not convinced at all.

“Well, it doesn’t matter to me whether you believe me or not. Besides that, whether I have any rich or wealthy friends has nothing to do with you at all, has it?” Gerald replied as he was starting to get annoyed.

This woman was just too unreasonable.

Gerald was also starting to discover that after he had gotten some wealth, he was also undergoing a subtle personality change. Before this, he would never have had the courage to speak to Whitney in this manner.

Whitney was really dissatisfied with Gerald’s tone at this time.

“You! Wow! Gerald, don’t you know how to appreciate others’ concern for you? I’m just worried that you’ve been cheated by some MLM organization. Don’t you know how some MLM organizations work to deceive people? First, they try to draw the person’s attention by using various means to please you. After that, they make you vain and materialistic. Once you get used to living like a rich person, you’d have to continue working for them to maintain the lifestyle that you’ve already gotten used to! Otherwise, you’ll only be a useless person!”

“Furthermore, as the president of the student union, don’t you think I have the right to meddle in your private affairs? If you really did join an MLM organization, you’ll only discredit the student union department! I’m only trying to advise you because you’ve been poor all your life and you know nothing about anything that’s going on in this world!” Whitney continued speaking in a sarcastic manner.

Gerald smiled bitterly before he shook his head and said, “I’ve already told you the truth. There’s nothing else I can say. The car really belongs to my friend!”

“Fine! Let’s forget about the car then. Let me ask you about the lottery that you won yesterday! I heard people saying that you spent more than twenty-two thousand dollars for dinner last night! Is it true? I thought you won thirty thousand dollars in the lottery? Did you actually spend twenty-two thousand dollars just like that?” Whitney asked as she looked at Gerald.

Chapter 40

"Thirty thousand dollars? Who said I won thirty thousand dollars? That is all their own guesses and assumptions. I only withdrew thirty thousand dollars from the bank but who said that I won thirty thousand dollars from the lottery?" Gerald replied with a confident expression on his face.

When Whitney saw the expression on his face, she could feel her heart sinking immediately.

Sure enough, her guess was right. Since Gerald was more than willing to spend twenty-two thousand dollars at one go, Gerald must definitely have won more than thirty thousand dollars in the lottery.

"How much did you win, then?"

"It isn't convenient for me to tell you that much. Anyway, it isn't too much! Not too much at all! Okay, Miss President Jenkins, if there isn't anything else, I'd like to leave now!" Gerald replied with an indifferent expression on his face.

Whitney felt as though she was about to explode at this time!

"Hmph! Do you really think you're so great? You're just fortunate to win some money from the lottery! However, you can never be compared to a second-generation rich kid like Victor!"

Whitney stomped angrily because she could not stand Gerald's current attitude towards herself.

Victor was also a second-generation rich kid. Though he was not very capable nor impressive, no matter what it was, in Whitney's eyes, a second-generation rich kid was definitely better compared to Gerald who had merely won the lottery.

Beep. Beep

At this time, an Audi A6 stopped right beside Whitney.

After rolling down the car window, Victor stuck his head out as he looked at Whitney.

“Whitney, why is your complexion so pale? Are you feeling unwell? Or do you not want to accompany me for my Audi A6 maintenance appointment?” Victor asked casually.

“No, Victor, it isn’t that. I’m just feeling a little depressed. Actually, I’m feeling a little confused right now and I’m also feeling inexplicably depressed! Ahh! Why am I feeling so depressed?”

Whitney could not explain her feelings at this time.

When Victor saw that Whitney was feeling so upset, he knew that his opportunity had come and he hurriedly comforted her. “Whitney, why don’t you get into my car first? You can slowly tell me what happened. Perhaps I will be able to help you then...”

Whitney nodded.

Since more and more of the students were coming out to play at this time, Whitney felt very good and proud to be sitting in an Audi A6.

After getting into the car, Victor parked his car at the entrance of the university and he did not intend to drive away at all. At this time, Whitney quickly told Victor about her encounter with Gerald.

“Pfft!”

Victor sneered before he said, “Whitney, why are you so worried about Gerald? So, what if he won the lottery? I heard that Gerald has already become a pauper again! Hahaha. I had actually wanted to tell you all about it today!”

Last night, Victor had also been embarrassed because Gerald had actually paid for a more expensive package at Homeland Restaurant compared to him. He had also been very curious and concerned about Gerald winning the lottery.

Therefore, he sent someone to look into the situation.

“What? So, has Gerald really turned into a pauper again? Who did you hear the news from? According to one of Gerald’s classmates, Gerald won more than thirty thousand dollars from the lottery and that’s the reason why he was more than willing to spend twenty-two thousand dollars on dinner last night!” Whitney said immediately.

“Hahaha. Yes, it’s true that Gerald won thirty thousand dollars from the lottery. The reason why he spent twenty-two thousand dollars on dinner was because he wanted to fight against his love rival, Yuri. Both of them had wanted to show off in terms of who had more money and they decided to split the bill for one of the most expensive private rooms with signature dishes. Gerald went all in and that was the reason why he paid so much money for the dinner last night. Even though Yuri had also lost face last night because he could not pay eleven thousand dollars on the spot, I would say that they were both the losers last night!”

“Ahh! So, it turns out to be like that. I knew that Gerald would never be so lucky but...”

Whitney continued speaking. “Victor, did you know that Gerald actually got off a Ferrari in front of the school entrance just now? Moreover, that Ferrari is an international limited edition worth at least seven to eight hundred thousand dollars! I asked him about it and he told me that the Ferrari belongs to his friend!”

“Oh? Did something like that happen? Did you see clearly? Was it really an international limited edition Ferrari?”

“Yes, I saw it clearly!”

“Damn it! How could Gerald possibly know someone who drives a limited edition Ferrari?” Victor mumbled to himself.

Both of them felt very depressed at this time.

How could Gerald actually have better connections than they had?

How could that be possible? How could they allow it?

No! Absolutely not!

Chapter 41

Both of them were very depressed as they headed for the first round of maintenance for his Audi A6.

Victor was very proud of his car but the Ferrari driven by Gerald's friend made him feel a little embarrassed. Both of them had a tacit understanding and felt that they had to find out the truth behind Gerald's friend.

After that, at the car maintenance shop, as Victor was waiting for the maintenance to be done, he started a conversation with the boss because he wanted to gain some admiration and respect from these people who were looking at him with admiration in their eyes at this time.

At this time, the person who was responsible for maintaining Victor's vehicle said, "Sir, I think that it's very wise of you to choose a high-end Audi as your personal car. Our Audi cars are unlike any of the other high-end or luxury cars in the market. For instance, a Ferrari sports car only makes people feel as though they are well-respected. Only rich people would invest in those kinds of cars."

"Now, most ordinary wealthy businessmen would focus on cars such as Audi or BMW instead."

"But, don't you think that it is much better to be driving a Ferrari? You'd definitely gain much more attention and face if you are driving a Ferrari!" Whitney could not help but say in a sour manner at this time.

"Hahaha. Beauty, you should also take note of who's using or driving the luxury car, then. Let's not talk about anything else. Let's just talk about Ferrari sports cars. These are absolute luxury cars costing at least a few hundred thousands of dollars each. Owning a Ferrari is equivalent to branding yourself as a rich and wealthy man."

"Just a few days ago, they proposed a set of marketing plans in order to stimulate the development of the junior and middle-class. As long as you're willing to pay a deposit of seven thousand dollars, you'll be assigned a designated driver to drive you around in their most luxurious Ferraris! Moreover, you'd also be given the opportunity to test drive the car yourself!"

“I’m glad that the really wealthy people such as yourself aren’t influenced by such vehicles or offers, Mr. Wright. On the contrary, there are many other young people nowadays who aren’t down to earth and are only filled with vanity. Even though their families don’t actually own any big businesses and despite some of these people facing their own financial difficulties, they’re more than willing to pay the deposit just to satisfy their own vanity and have an opportunity to test drive the Ferrari.”

As soon as they heard the man’s words, Whitney and Victor exchanged glances with one another.

It seemed as though a big rock in their hearts had been overturned.

“Sir, do you mean to say that as long as you’re willing to pay seven thousand dollars, someone will drive you around so you can experience what it feels like to ride in one of those Ferrari sports cars?” Whitney asked with a shocked expression on her face.

“Yes, but according to insider news, I heard that this promotion will be cancelled in a few days’ time. This is because the promotion seems to be rather useless and many people have criticized Ferrari, saying that this is too flashy!”

“Ahh! I finally understand now!”

Whitney heaved a huge sigh of relief.

It turned out that in an effort to satisfy his own vanity, Gerald actually spent seven thousand dollars just to experience what it felt like to be driven around in a Ferrari. Whitney could not believe that Gerald was actually such a disgusting person!

At this time, Whitney was speculating that Gerald was not trying to avoid getting seen by any students but instead, he had intentionally stopped at the entrance so that she would see him getting off the Ferrari!

This person was really disgusting!

Pfft!

“Ah-choo!”

Gerald had just gotten out of the driving test registration center on campus and he started sneezing as soon as he walked out after signing up for the driving test.

This driving school directly collaborated with the campus and the campus rented out part of the venue for them to run a driving school.

Gerald had already decided to buy a car since he only had a few more days until the end of the month.

He had to spend the three million dollars on his Universal Global Supreme Shopper’s Card.

However, how could he possibly consider buying a car if he did not own a driver’s license?

In the past, Gerald did not even have money to sign up for the driving test to obtain a driver’s license. He finally had enough money to do so now!

Gerald was very excited and full of expectations at this time.

But...

He really did not know why he was sneezing so much lately. Was someone cursing at him?

Hmm...

Gerald decided to head back to the dormitory to rest. At this time, his cell phone suddenly rang. It was a phone call from his roommate, Harper.

“What’s up, Harper?”

“Gerald, where are you? Are you coming back to the dormitory? Alice has suggested that we should all get together and go out. So, should we go? Anyway, Hayley was the one who asked Alice to invite us to join them...”

As Gerald listened to Harper’s words, he felt that Harper was no longer as masculine as he used to be ever since he fell in love with Hayley.

However, he knew that he should not judge Harper like that. After all, when he was in love, he was also acting the same way.

He would always be thinking of Xavia, and he would always be considering her feelings first no matter what he did. When Xavia was happy, she was happy. When Xavia was sad, he was sad. There was no reason to explain why he felt this way.

Perhaps, that was what it was like to love someone.

“Oh! I don’t think I’ll be joining you guys. After all, I’m sure Alice wouldn’t want to see me!” Gerald quickly replied.

Chapter 42

“No, the reason we’ve decided to call you and discuss this matter with you is because Alice specifically asked us to bring you along to the gathering this time!” Harper quickly informed Charlie.

“Huh?” Gerald was taken aback.

It did not make sense at all. Wasn’t Alice always very annoyed whenever she saw him? Why would she specifically invite him to a party?

To be honest, Gerald had already drunk and ate a lot of food during the banquet at noon today, so he wasn’t hungry at all. Instead, he was mostly really exhausted because he had been entertaining and chatting with the businessmen during the banquet earlier.

He really did not feel like going at all.

Moreover, since it was only a simple gathering, Gerald really wanted to get ready for his driving test instead.

Perhaps this was God's will. After all, most of the lives of the rich second generation started with gatherings and socializing. Even though he had not revealed his identity, all kinds of parties, entertainments and gatherings seemed to be revolving around him already.

When Gerald refused to attend the gathering, Harper also said that he did not feel like going anymore. This made Gerald feel very entangled and finally, he reluctantly agreed to join the party that night.

Gerald went back to the dormitory and changed into a new set of clothes. After that, Gerald and his roommates met up with everyone else as they gathered outside the school gate.

"Alice, why did you suddenly decide to treat us to dinner? Where are we going?"

Naomi was also here and she suddenly asked Alice this question out of curiosity.

"Hahaha. To be honest, it is not my treat tonight but Quinton's! Their restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street is opening soon. If the meeting has gone smoothly in the afternoon and if they've obtained approval, then Grand Marshall Restaurant will officially belong to Quinton's family!"

A look of arrogance flashed through Alice's face and she could not help but raise her eyes to look at Gerald's expression at this time.

Hmph!

Did Gerald really think that he was so great just because he could afford to invite everyone to have dinner at the most luxurious place inside Wayfair Mountain Entertainment?

This really made Quinton and Alice feel very embarrassed at that time.

But...what would happen again in the future?

Gerald was still going to be the pauper that he had always been. Could he ever afford to bring everyone to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment again?

However, Quinton was different. The Ziegler family did not only own their own factory but they also owned one of the restaurants on Mayberry Commercial Street.

If he could build up a good relationship with the business tycoon, Zack Lyle, then Quinton's future would be crystal clear.

Alice was the one who insisted on inviting Gerald to join them tonight. She wanted Gerald to know that he could never compare to Quinton and she wanted to see the awkward and embarrassed expression on his face.

However, Alice was a little disappointed. This was because Gerald had a blank expression on his face and it seemed as though he was indifferent to the situation.

'Okay then! Just wait and see!' Alice could not help but think to herself.

"Alice, since it is the opening of Quinton's restaurant, wouldn't it be inappropriate for you to bring so many of us with you there today? After all, we aren't that close to him..."

Naomi was a little worried at this time.

Jacelyn, who was fixing up her makeup at this time, suddenly announced excitedly, "Hahaha! How could it be inappropriate? The reason why Alice is treating everyone to dinner today is because she wants to make an important announcement. I believe that everyone remembers what happened at the karaoke bar last week. In fact, Quinton had been the one to ask for his father's help to deal with this matter. What Quinton did for us really touched Alice's heart."

“For the past few days, Quinton had been fiercely pursuing Alice and after much consideration, Alice has finally decided to give Quinton a chance. She’s going to be in a relationship with him and he’s going to be her first love!”

“What?”

Everyone was shocked after listening to Jacelyn’s words.

Unexpectedly, Gerald was the first to scream out loud.

Damn it! Someone had stolen his credit again?

Chapter 43

Gerald felt very uneasy after hearing this news. He was clearly the one who had resolved the matter that Alice was referring to.

Indeed, Gerald did not want to have anything to do with Alice. Moreover, the only reason why he decided to step up and resolve the situation that night was for Naomi’s sake.

However, at this moment, Alice had obviously misunderstood that Quinton was the one who helped her resolve the matter. She even felt that Quinton was very awesome and that was the reason why she made the decision to get together with Quinton.

Alice was indeed a very beautiful girl and she had never been in love before. She was an absolute goddess.

Gerald would be lying if he said that he was not captivated by Alice’s appearance at all.

Should he look for an opportunity to tell Alice the truth? Even if she did not want to thank him, at least she would find out the truth and she would not end up getting in a relationship with someone just because of a mere misunderstanding!

Gerald thought to himself at this time.

The group of people continued talking and laughing before they took a cab to Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street.

The opening ceremony of Grand Marshall Restaurant was naturally very lively because of all the people that they knew and the entire lobby on the first floor was overcrowded at this time. Those who came in and out of the restaurant were all wealthy and powerful people.

“Quinton is really amazing! Alice, does it mean that Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street will belong to the Ziegler family in the future? Can we come here and play whenever we want to?” Jacelyn asked as she looked at Alice.

“Of course! Alice won’t forget us just because she has Brother Quinton now! Isn’t that right, Alice?”

After the girls stepped into the restaurant, they were all very excited and they could not help but look around the restaurant.

“Well, we’re all sisters. Of course, you can come here whenever you want to!”

“In fact, you might not know some news but Grand Marshall Restaurant doesn’t belong entirely to the Ziegler family!” Alice suddenly told the girls as they were all walking around the reception area.

“What? Didn’t the Ziegler family buy Grand Marshall Restaurant?”

“No, the Ziegler family only bought the rights to operate Grand Marshall Restaurant. The real moneymaker and owner is the big boss who owns the entire Mayberry Commercial Street. In fact, the whole commercial street belongs to this big boss!” Alice said as the expression on her face changed immediately.

“Everything on the Mayberry Commercial Street is all owned by one person? Isn’t this place organized by the Mayberry Chamber of Commerce?”

“Oh my god. Who does not know that the Mayberry Commercial Street is like an endless stream of money? Wasn't it reported on the news that the total amount spent on Mayberry Commercial Street on a daily basis is about fourteen million dollars? That is billions of dollars worth here!”

“Of course, Grand Marshall Restaurant also accounts for more than a few million dollars every month and that would amount to more than tens of millions of dollars a year! The owner is making tons of money without even lifting a finger!”

Jacelyn and the other girls almost exploded when they heard the news.

It turned out that Mayberry Commercial Street was not organized by the Mayberry Chamber of Commerce. Instead, one single big boss owned almost every business on the street.

Wow! How much would that be worth?

“No way! I'm going insane just thinking about it. I want to find out if that big boss has a son. If he has a son, I hope I can marry him!”

Jacelyn and the other girls were all obsessed at this time.

Alice smiled bitterly before she shook her head and said, “Quinton told me that the big bosses of Mayberry Commercial Street are a pair of young brother and sister. Among them, the brother owns seventy percent of the business and establishments on Mayberry Commercial Street. The people here refer to him as Mr. Crawford and everyone says he seems like a very cool person. They even held a welcoming banquet for him at noon today. Unfortunately, Quinton only received the confirmation to run the restaurant later in the afternoon and he did not have the chance to meet the owner!”

At this time, Alice could not help but think to herself. This young man was such an extraordinary person. How could he possibly be attracted to an ordinary girl like herself? Moreover, Alice really wanted to find out more about this young owner and she tried to look him up on the Internet but she could not find any news about him at all.

Ugh!

At this time, Gerald was listening to their conversation and he could not help but feel a little embarrassed. This was especially because Alice said that Mr. Crawford was very young and cool.

Was he very cool?

Chapter 44

Could it be that everyone had misunderstood when he hit Elena and the other girls?

At the same time, Gerald felt a little weird inside.

He wondered how Alice and Jacelyn would react if they knew that the young boss that they were talking about was him...

“Alice! Why didn’t you tell me that you’re here?”

As everyone was eagerly discussing the restaurant, Quinton, who was dressed smartly in formal attire, walked over with Harold by his side.

Quinton was especially handsome today. At least, he was really handsome in front of the group of girls!

“I saw that you were busy socializing and entertaining your customers...are you tired?”

Alice smiled as she spoke in a soft manner. She had never been in a relationship before and she was not the kind of girl who would act coquettishly in front of guys, which was the way her roommate, Jacelyn, would always act.

Therefore, she could only speak in a shy manner.

“I’m fine! Some of the uncles and owners of the businesses on the Mayberry Commercial Street have come to visit us today. I just found a table for them. Come, Alice! I will get you guys a table now,” Quinton replied with a bright smile on his face.

At this time, he suddenly saw Gerald who was standing right at the back of the crowd.

Gerald was touching a small wooden horse that was placed on a shelf. The small wooden horse looked very delicate and it was made out of sandalwood. Gerald was immediately attracted to it.

He was filled with curiosity at this moment.

“Hey! That thing is very fragile. Please be careful, Brother Gerald!” Quinton quickly said in a sarcastic tone.

In fact, Quinton was still a little displeased and envious of Gerald because he had embarrassed him at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Yes, even though the only reason Gerald could afford to bring them in to enjoy a luxurious meal inside Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was because Zack owed him a favor for saving his daughter’s life, Quinton was still very jealous of him.

However, Quinton felt a little better because his family was now acquainted with Zack.

Quinton felt that the relationship between Gerald and Zack would not possibly last forever. After all, it would not be possible for a person to feel thankful to a person for a long time.

What’s more, Gerald was just a vain and silly fool!

“Hey! Don’t drop that wooden horse, Gerald. What if you’re careless and break it again? What if you damage the small wooden horse, just like how you damaged the oil painting the last time? Quinton doesn’t owe you anything, so how are you going to repay him then?”

“Exactly! He’s really a country bumpkin! He wants to touch everything that he sees!”

“I really don’t understand why Alice wants to invite Gerald here with us today! He’s making everyone feel so uncomfortable!”

Jacelyn and the other girls quickly expressed their dissatisfaction towards Gerald.

In fact, the reason they were blatantly ridiculing and criticizing Gerald was because they knew that Quinton did not like him.

If Gerald had been nice and friendly towards Quinton when they were at the manor, then Jacelyn and the other girls would definitely keep that in mind.

However, that did not happen. Moreover, Quinton was already unhappy to see Gerald here and it seemed as though Gerald had no clue about anything at all.

Anyway, how could Gerald possibly compete with Quinton?

The girls quickly attacked Gerald because they wanted to express their positions in front of Quinton.

Meanwhile, Alice could only shake her head helplessly. At first, she was planning to take revenge against Gerald. When she thought about it now, her plan felt so ridiculous.

It was so ridiculous for her to even be worried about this person in the first place!

“Naomi! Harper! Why are you here? Damn it. Gerald, you’re here too?”

At this time, a woman’s voice sounded behind them and she sounded very surprised.

When Gerald heard this woman’s voice, he lifted his head and turned around, only to realize that it was Xavia!

Chapter 45

Xavia was holding onto Yuri’s arm in an intimate manner at this time.

She looked at Gerald, Naomi, and the others in surprise.

Unexpectedly, they could also afford to attend such a high-end occasion.

Gerald looked at Xavia and he saw that she was dressed in gold and silver. After that, Gerald suddenly thought of the diamond ring that Yuri had bought for Xavia earlier today. He must have bought all these items for Xavia to wear to the opening ceremony of Grand Marshall Restaurant tonight.

Xavia looked very proud and happy at this time.

Gerald could not help but think to himself, 'Perhaps Xavia and Yuri are really in love with one another.'

Perhaps he was really just a tool for Xavia to relieve her boredom in the past.

As he thought about it, he felt that he was really ridiculous. To think that he was actually worried about Xavia last night. He did not need to worry about her at all!

"Brother Quinton, you and Gerald unexpectedly know each other too?" Yuri asked in a respectful manner.

In fact, the Lowell family's small factory could not even be compared to the heights of the Ziegler family. The only reason why Yuri could come to the opening ceremony today was because Yuri's mother and Quinton's mother had been college roommates who shared a close relationship with one another and had always kept in touch with one another. When Yuri heard about the opening ceremony, he asked his mother for help and this was the reason he could come here with Xavia tonight.

"They are all Alice's friends. Yuri, do you know them too?" Quinton asked.

"Yes, Brother Quinton! They're from the class next door!"

"Brother Quinton, Gerald is really a piece of trash! This is such a high-end and luxurious opening ceremony but he isn't showing any respect at all! Look at what he is wearing today! He is really lowering

the standards here!” Xavia said as she glared at Gerald contemptuously at this time. She even tightened her grasp around Yuri’s arm. It was as though Xavia was trying to show Gerald that her life had improved so much after getting together with Yuri.

Moreover, Xavia wanted to show Gerald that she was eligible to come to the opening ceremony of the Grand Marshall Restaurant after breaking up with him. In Xavia’s opinion, Gerald was really lucky to have won thirty thousand dollars from the lottery but he was still nothing compared to everyone else!

Quinton was also very satisfied with Xavia’s comment and he placed his hands in his pockets as he laughed and said, “If he’s going to lower the standard, then just lower the standard. After all, when it comes to elegance and common appreciation, not everyone has a high standard!”

“Hahaha! Quinton is really amazing. What he said is so accurate!”

“That’s right, Brother Quinton is right. What he said really made sense. If there are no low standards, then how could there possibly be high standards then?”

“Okay, okay. Let’s stop already. Is it really okay to talk about Gerald like this even though it’s true? Hahaha...”

This time, Xavia had a tacit understanding with Jacelyn and the rest of the girls as they agreed with what Quinton had just said.

Gerald was also starting to get angry as he listened to what they were saying. At this time, he thought to himself about how much this group of girls loved money. Alright then! He would just throw money at them later.

Okay! He was angry!

At this time, Quinton looked at Gerald before he smiled and said, “Brother Gerald, don’t get me wrong. I was just joking. You aren’t angry, are you? Well, I know that Brother Gerald will definitely not get angry. Are you really someone who can’t take a joke?”

Gerald simply replied in a cold manner, "Quinton, are you deliberately finding trouble with me today?"

Gerald had initially thought that the reason Alice had invited him here today was because she wanted him to mend his relationship with Quinton.

After all, even though he did not get along with Quinton, he had still invited all of them to enjoy dinner with him at the most luxurious and expensive spot in the manor.

He thought that it was only natural to do so.

However, Gerald finally understood that they had only invited him here today to taunt him!

"Oh! It seems as though Gerald is really angry now. Brother Quinton did you a huge favor by giving you the opportunity to come here today and you still dare to lose your temper at him? Hahaha..."

Xavia found it really enjoyable when she saw everyone belittling Gerald. Moreover, she felt even happier when she realized that Quinton seemed to hate Gerald a little.

Therefore, she kept insulting Gerald because she wanted to leave a good impression in Quinton's heart.

"Alright, stop it already. Quinton, where's the table that you reserved for us?" Alice quickly asked at this time.

Chapter 46

After all, Alice was the one who had brought him here and if Xavia continued ridiculing Gerald, then it would really embarrass her.

After all, only an owner should be able to hit their own dog, right?

"Come, why don't you sit here? Since Yuri and Xavia are also from the same university, all of you should sit together!"

Quinton brought Gerald and everyone else to a huge table. After that, he assigned them one by one so they could sit down. Yuri and Xavia did not decline sitting with them because if they sat with them, Xavia would be able to show off!

However, as soon as Yuri and Xavia arrived, the table that could actually accommodate fifteen people suddenly became slightly crowded. The six of them in Alice's dormitory, five of them in Harper's dormitory, and Naomi would make up a total of twelve people. At this time, Xavia, Yuri, and Quinton would also be sitting at this table.

Therefore, this naturally meant that there would be no space for Gerald at all.

"Oh no! This is really embarrassing! Brother Gerald, I'm sorry but there isn't a seat left for you."

Quinton smiled coldly before he behaved as though he felt very apologetic at this time.

Harper hurriedly said, "Gerald, why don't you come over here and squeeze with us instead?"

"It wouldn't be nice for us to squeeze together. After all, many wealthy and powerful people come to this place. If we squeezed together, it wouldn't look good at all..."

Quinton scratched his head and he could not help but sigh at this time. "I was originally planning to sit here with all of you so we could chat and talk before I go up on stage to participate in the opening ceremony. Since I won't be eating anyway, I will just go up on stage and Gerald can take my seat instead!"

"No way! No way! Absolutely not!" Jacelyn and the other girls yelled immediately. "If you give up your seat to Gerald, then he will be sitting between Alice and I! Absolutely not! Moreover, we don't want you to leave, Brother Quinton! We still want to listen to more of your stories and gain some insight from you!"

Everyone continued speaking, one after the other and this placed Gerald in a very difficult position.

Damn it!

He would definitely take his revenge on them later.

Gerald could not help but feel a little hatred in his heart. He was about to leave at this time so that he did not need to look at their faces anymore. After all, he was already in a bad mood.

At this time, the host's voice suddenly sounded on stage:

"Quiet! Everyone, please be quiet. Tonight..."

The opening ceremony is about to begin and the host was giving his speech at this time. Everyone quickly took their own seats and the atmosphere in the banquet hall was very quiet at this time.

Gerald did not have a seat and he was standing awkwardly in the middle of the banquet hall. Naturally, he attracted the attention of many people.

"Oh my god. Look at that person. Why is he just standing there in such an awkward manner?"

"Is he a waiter? No, he doesn't look like a waiter. Just look at the way he's dressed! Do you think that he secretly sneaked in here to steal food and drinks?"

"Hahaha! This is so embarrassing. That poor man has no seat? How did the Ziegler family plan their opening ceremony? Why is their guest standing awkwardly in the center of the banquet hall with no allocated seat?"

A few of the guests started whispering among themselves.

At the same time, at one of the main tables closer to the stage, a group of young men and women were seated together at this time. This table was usually reserved for people with distinguished statuses and strong family backgrounds.

The banquet hall in Grand Marshall Restaurant was very large and even though Quinton was the one who had personally arranged the table for Alice and her friends, he could only get a table in the center of the banquet hall for her.

Therefore, this group of young men and women were obviously very wealthy and powerful.

One of the young men smiled at another young man who was dressed in white before he said, "Brother Aiden, Sister Elena, look at that! I think that Grand Marshall Restaurant messed up today! Hahaha! Someone had actually come in here to beg for food!"

The young man dressed in white quickly raised his head as he glanced at the direction that his companion was pointing at.

After that, he rubbed his eyes to confirm that he was not seeing things before he exclaimed, "Damn it! It's Mr. Crawford!"

As soon as she heard the words 'Mr. Crawford', Elena, who had always been very cold and indifferent, suddenly raised her head because she was startled. In fact, Elena could still remember how Gerald looked when she saw him the first time.

"It's really him!" Elena muttered to herself.

Chapter 47

"Oh my god. It really is Mr. Crawford."

The other young men and women suddenly recognized Gerald at a single glance.

Everyone was nervous and confused at this time.

"Mr. Crawford? What are you talking about? Brother Aiden! That is obviously a beggar. Are you sure..."

Slap!

The young man dressed in white was none other than Aiden. When he saw the young men calling Gerald a beggar, he gave him a slap across the face immediately.

“Damn it! Who are you calling a beggar? Are you tired of living?”

The young men covered his face with his hand with an aggrieved expression on his face.

“Since Mr. Crawford is here, should we go and say hello to him, Brother Aiden?”

Several of the young men spoke up at this time. Gerald was one of the big bosses behind the entire Mayberry Commercial Street and the strength of the Crawford family was even more unimaginable. Whoever could get acquainted with Gerald would definitely be able to soar up into the sky and that person would never be exhausted for any resources in this lifetime. Moreover, Gerald was also the boss of Aiden and his family.

He was incredible.

“Wait a minute! It seems as though something is wrong!”

Aiden remained calm as he observed the situation at the center of the banquet hall. He could see Gerald standing alone in the center of the banquet hall and some of the girls seated at the table beside him were all laughing at him at this time.

It suddenly became clear to him.

This was because Aiden already understood Gerald’s situation when he sent him back to his campus yesterday.

Gerald had not revealed his identity yet.

Aiden knew this because Gerald would not be so humble and low-key if he had already revealed his identity to his friends and schoolmates. Moreover, if his identity had already been exposed, there would definitely be a number of bodyguards protecting the entrance and exit of the university. More importantly, Gerald would not even continue studying at Mayberry University.

If they rushed over there right now, they would definitely expose Gerald's identity and this would undoubtedly place a lot of attention on Gerald. Moreover, they might even cause a lot of unforeseen trouble to Gerald. At that time, he would only be stabbing himself in the foot.

Aiden's father was very well versed in reading and handling people and awkward situations and Aiden was not that bad at it too.

"Oh no, Brother Aiden! It seems as though Mr. Crawford is getting ridiculed by those scumbags. This is our chance to step in and assist him! We shouldn't just sit here and watch them ridicule him, right?" one of the second-generation rich kids said anxiously.

"Of course not! However, you should all remember that you mustn't expose Mr. Crawford's true identity. As for what we should do next, you should all just follow in my footsteps!"

Aiden already had a plan in mind and he quickly told his group of friends everything that he knew.

After discovering the truth, the group of people heaved a huge sigh of relief. After all, if they had rushed over to Gerald earlier, they would have already exposed his identity.

As for Gerald, he was already getting ready to leave right then. After all, he was already feeling very embarrassed because everyone was staring at him. Therefore, he turned around as he prepared to leave the banquet hall.

"Friend, please stay!"

Aiden and his group of friends suddenly stood up at this time and everyone looked towards Aiden at this time.

“Friend, if you don’t mind, why don’t you come over here for a drink instead?”

“Yes, my friend! Come over here and join us for a drink! We have an extra seat here!”

At this time, all of the people with Aiden who were part of the rich second generation also stood up at this time, and one of them was even breaking out in cold sweat.

“Huh? What is happening?”

“The young boss of Imperial Treasure Pavilion, Mr. Aiden, is actually inviting this beggar over to his table?”

“Yes! Moreover, Mr. Aiden and the rest of the young men and women seated at that table are representing the nine supreme businesses on Mayberry Commercial Street! They are of very noble statuses!”

“Aside from Aiden from the Baker family, even Miss Elena from the Larson family is also sitting at that table now. This...this...”

No one knew what was happening.

The Baker family, the Larson family, and even the Fisher family, who was formerly in charge of Grand Marshall Restaurant, started their businesses entirely on Mayberry Commercial Street and this was how they had made a huge fortune!

They were all very close to Zack!

Each and every one of these young men and women was very distinguished.

Chapter 48

In fact, Xavia, Yuri, Alice, and everyone else were all startled at this moment.

They had obviously already heard of who those young people who were seated at that table were, but they had never had the opportunity to meet them. They were very shocked that those people would actually invite Gerald to sit with them.

At this time, Gerald was also surprised that Aiden, Elena and their friends were all here at the opening ceremony tonight. He had not paid any attention to all the other guests earlier. However, he suddenly heard their invitation now.

Gerald thought to himself and he knew that if he walked out of the banquet hall now, everyone would definitely think that he really came here to beg for food! Therefore, he felt that it would be better for him to accept the invitation and go over to sit with Aiden and the rest of the young people instead. At least, he would be able to make those who looked down on him shut up momentarily.

Gerald nodded immediately. "Okay!"

After that, Gerald walked towards the front of the banquet hall, step by step under everyone's astonished gaze, before he finally sat down in the empty seat between Elena and Aiden.

"Shameless!"

"He really doesn't know his own place!"

"He actually dares to sit at the same table with them! Doesn't he know his own status at all?"

"Moreover, he's sitting so close to our goddess, Elena!"

There were many other second-generation rich kids who were full of envy and hatred at this time.

Alice, Yuri, Xavia and the rest of the group also looked at Quinton in shock before they asked him what exactly was going on!

They were very unhappy that Gerald was currently sitting with those young people. After all, their table was placed at one of the most prestigious positions, all the way up front by the stage, whereas their table was only at the center of the banquet hall.

“So, if someone invited you to sit at the table, do you have to accept the invitation?”

Quinton felt even more uncomfortable because he was actually the main character and he was supposed to be the focus of everyone’s attention tonight!

Therefore, Quinton walked over to Aiden and the rest of the young people before he said, “Mr. Aiden, what do you mean by this? How can this young man possibly sit at this table?”

“Why can’t he sit at this table? If this friend of ours isn’t allowed to sit here, then we’re all leaving too!”

Aiden snorted before he stood up directly.

Among the crowd of people, some of the bosses who worked closely with and for Aiden’s family also stood up at this time. If Aiden decided to leave, then naturally, they would also follow in his footsteps and leave the banquet hall immediately.

“This...”

The expression on Quinton’s face was extremely ugly.

It was the opening ceremony for Grand Marshall Restaurant that they had just taken over today and he knew that he could not afford to offend the Baker family.

However, Quinton really could not comprehend why the usually arrogant Aiden would be so polite to Gerald.

“Of course he can sit here! Since you’ve already spoken up, Mr. Aiden, then he’ll naturally be able to sit here!”

Quinton glared angrily at Gerald before he turned around and returned to his own seat.

“Quinton, what’s the situation? What’s going on? Why did Aiden invite that piece of trash Gerald to sit at that table with them?”

“I’m not sure but I guess it is because he’s unhappy that we got the rights to run the restaurant instead of his family! The Baker family was originally intending to take over the rights to run Grand Marshall Restaurant. However, we managed to get it in the end because my father had put in a lot of efforts and used plenty of connections before he finally succeeded. I think that is the reason why Aiden is holding a grudge against us. However, since it’s still our opening ceremony today, we can’t afford to offend him. After all, the Baker family is a really big and powerful family in Mayberry City.”

“That must be the reason!”

Everyone finally understood what was going on.

Alice heaved a huge sigh of relief and Xavia finally felt as though she could breathe again.

If Gerald really had a good relationship with Aiden from the Baker family, then Xavia would definitely feel very uncomfortable. Yuri did not even have the right to get to know him, so how could Gerald possibly be friends with someone like Aiden?

On the other hand, Gerald did not bother about what Xavia and the rest of his friends were thinking or saying about him at this time. After being seated at the table, he felt that it was really interesting to look at all the beautiful girls who were already blushing when they saw him.

This was especially so for Elena.

“Unexpectedly, we meet again so soon?” Gerald said as he smiled.

“Yes, Mr. Crawford. I think this must be fate!” the beautiful girls replied as they looked at Gerald with a sweet expression on their faces.

Elena felt very entangled when she thought of what her father had said to her, earlier this afternoon. She decided to obey her father and she nodded gently at Gerald.

“Mr. Gerald, you don’t have a very good relationship with Quinton, do you?” Aiden suddenly asked at this time as he narrowed his eyes to look at Quinton.

“No, we aren’t close at all!” Gerald replied truthfully.

“That’s great. Mr. Crawford, we actually have a plan to humiliate and destroy the reputation of Quinton and his family in public today. However, we were all afraid of Uncle Zack so we dared not do anything at all. However, if you’re willing to support us and back us up, we can make sure that we destroy Quinton today! Hehehe!”

Chapter 49

“What’s the plan?” Gerald could not help but ask out of curiosity.

When Quinton came over to talk to Aiden just now, Gerald also noticed that even though Quinton was very polite towards Aiden on the surface, it was obvious that they did not have a good relationship.

Quinton was simply being polite and backing off because of the strength and power of the Baker family.

“Hahaha. I’ll let you watch a video!”

After that, Aiden took out his cell phone before he showed Gerald a video that they had recorded.

It was a video in a big bedroom. At this time, Quinton was walking into the bedroom with an unconscious woman. This woman looked about thirty years old and she was very beautiful.

As for what happened next, there was really no need to elaborate.

Unfortunately, the video was only three minutes long and Quinton was already done.

Even Gerald felt a little embarrassed after watching the video.

“Why do you want to destroy him? Isn’t it normal for young people to pick up girls?” Gerald asked with a bitter smile on his face.

Aiden remained silent for a moment before he said, “Mr. Crawford, yes it is true that we do enjoy picking up girls. However, it is different for Quinton! Do you know who the woman in the video is? She is his stepmother!”

“Damn it!”

Gerald’s eyes widened immediately.

This was too much stimulation.

“Do you really hate him so much that you had him followed and investigated?” Gerald could not help but smile helplessly.

Aiden replied, “Who asked them to break the unspoken rule between all owners of the businesses on Mayberry Commercial Street? The Baker family was originally intending to buy the rights to run the Grand Marshall Restaurant. Moreover, we were already the highest bidder at that time and there is a tacit understanding between all of us who participate in such large auctions. During the last three minutes, we’re usually not allowed to put in any more bids! However, the Ziegler family placed another bid in the last minute and that was the reason they had won the rights to run the restaurant!”

“Since he started a war with my family, then I will start a war with him!”

Gerald understood that they did not dare to carry out their plan before this because they were afraid that Zack would pursue this matter and hold them responsible for it. After all, it was taboo for business owners on Mayberry Commercial Street to fight among themselves.

“So, you want my acquiescence?”

“Yes! As long as you can back us up and tell Uncle Zack not to blame us, you can just leave the rest to us!”

Gerald did not say anything but he simply took a sip of red wine from his wine glass.

Aiden instantly understood what he meant and he quickly gave instructions to his younger brother. The younger brother took the cell phone before he said, “Okay, get ready to watch a good show...”

After that, the young boy quickly ran towards the back of the banquet hall.

Since Gerald had no money in the past, he had no choice but to be bullied and humiliated all the time. Why should he continue being bullied by others, now that he was already a rich man?

Therefore, Gerald was more than willing to back Aiden and his friends up.

After all, he found Quinton’s behavior very peculiar and disgusting.

The opening ceremony continued proceeding smoothly. Then, it was finally time for the ribbon-cutting ceremony. As the young owner of Grand Marshall Restaurant, Quinton naturally had to go on stage to cut the ribbon.

“Alice, why don’t you come with me?” Quinton asked as he gently grabbed Alice’s hand.

Many people in the banquet hall were envious of Quinton at this time. Xavia felt especially jealous because she could not understand why she was so unlucky. First, she dated that useless pauper, Gerald. After that, she was dating an ordinary second-generation rich kid like Yuri.

It would be great if she could find a boyfriend like Quinton who had extraordinary wealth and power!

Alice naturally did not turn down Quinton’s invitation.

This way, Quinton and Alice held hands as they walked towards the stage. As they were walking past Gerald's table, Alice could not help glancing at Gerald. It felt as though she was trying to show him that no matter where he was, they would always be a gap between them. She was trying to tell Gerald that he could never be compared to them.

Quinton also looked at Gerald in a triumphant manner, as though he was trampling all over Gerald under every one's watchful eyes.

In fact, the reason why Quinton hated Gerald so much was because as he was growing up, his self-esteem had been hurt by another poor man similar to Gerald!

"In the days to come, I'll make sure that I trample all over you and keep you under my feet! You won't just be a poor man then!" Quinton thought to himself.

Gerald was still drinking his red wine when Aiden's younger brother returned to the table. After that, he nodded slightly at Gerald, indicating that the matter had already been resolved and they would just have to wait to watch the good show.

At this time, Gerald looked towards Quinton who was looking very energetic on stage.

Both his father and stepmother were there on stage and Gerald could tell that there was a very abnormal expression on Quinton's stepmother's face when she saw Quinton holding Alice's hand as he led her to the stage.

"Everyone, I want to introduce my girlfriend to you. This is Alice!"

At this time, everyone sitting in the banquet hall were all staring at Alice, who was holding hands with Quinton.

After that, Quinton introduced her to the crowd of people.

Alice had a very beautiful appearance that even Gerald could not deny. It was only natural for Quinton to feel very proud because she was his girlfriend.

“Alice, why don’t you say hello to everyone?” Quinton whispered to Alice.

Alice said nervously, “Hello, everyone. I am Alice!”

“Wow! Beauty, how did you meet Quinton? Or did you decide to start a relationship with him after some sort of memorable encounter?”

“Yes! Tell us about it so that we can learn from Quinton’s experience!”

At this time, there were many second-generation rich kids who knew that it was impossible for them to get close to a magnate like Aiden. Therefore, they decided to suck up to Quinton instead.

Alice ran her fingers through her hair before she said, “I’ve already known Quinton for a long time. Uncle Ziegler and my father used to be comrades in arms. As for the reason why I decided to start a relationship with Quinton, this is solely because he did something for me after he came back to the country and that really moved me deeply!”

“Wow!”

Chapter 50

“It turned out that way. Quinton is really cool! The best way to pursue a girl is to move her!”

Everyone could not help but feel envious as they heard Alice talking about the relationship between Quinton and herself.

Gerald felt a great discomfort in his heart at this time.

“This couple here today are really a picture of happiness! Grand Marshall Restaurant will begin the ribbon-cutting ceremony now. Next, I will show you a message from the chairman and CEO from all over the world. Please take a look at the big screen!”

The host was very lively and he quickly changed the topic to save time.

The lights dimmed immediately.

Alice was looking at Gerald with a smile on her face as he smiled back at her. In fact, Alice felt that the smile on Gerald's face was just a bitter smile.

Hahaha! He must be green with envy and jealousy!

However, as soon as the video began playing, everyone was shocked. What was playing on the scene was not just a message from the chairman or CEO, but a hotel scene instead!

"Eh?"

Everyone in the audience could not help but watch the video in shock.

"This...this...oh my god!"

After that, everyone watched a scene of Quinton holding a woman as they walked into the bedroom. Moreover, that woman was not just any woman but she was his stepmother!

Boom!

Everyone in the audience was shocked. At this time, Quinton also had a very ugly expression on his face before he turned pale.

Alice was also dumbfounded.

The most exciting scene on stage was the reaction of Quinton's father and his coquettish stepmother.

“This...you! B*stard! B*stard!” Quinton’s father started yelling at him.

“No, it isn’t me! Who did it? Who played the video?”

Quinton was trembling uncontrollably as he spoke.

Even though he was yelling for them to stop the video, the video continued playing on the big screen.

It was really unsightly.

Alice shook her head in disappointment. She was not only disappointed, but she was also insulted and humiliated on stage! She had just introduced herself as Quinton’s girlfriend on stage but now, someone was actually showing everyone a perverted and disgusting video of Quinton. Besides that, there were many reporters from the local news at the banquet hall today.

She, Alice, had already become famous!

How could she possibly be as arrogant as she had been earlier?

“You b*stard!”

Slap!

Alice gave Quinton a tight slap across his face. He had really lifted her up in the sky before he dropped her to the ground without any warning.

Alice covered her mouth with her hand as she cried and ran out of the banquet hall.

“Alice! Alice!”

Naomi really did not expect the situation to end up like this. She knew that Alice must have felt seriously hurt today and she hurriedly chased after her out of fear that something terrible would happen.

Meanwhile, on stage, Quinton's father was also hitting Quinton for shaming and humiliating him in public. Everyone in the banquet hall was watching this scene as excitement filled their hearts.

"Hahaha..."

Aiden smiled as he said, "Are you satisfied, Mr. Crawford? To think that this kid actually dared to tease you in public just now! Moreover, he was also trying to humiliate you by deliberately embarrassing you and placing you in a tough spot! I guess he really did not expect something like this to happen."

Gerald could only give Aiden a wry smile.

At this time, he glanced at Quinton who was still on stage as he was covering his face with his hands so that the reporters would not be able to take any pictures of him.

After that, Gerald said, "Okay, the excitement is over. It's time for us to withdraw."

Gerald did not feel bad for him at all. As he thought about it, he felt that Quinton really deserved it!

After talking to Aiden and his friends, Gerald decided to go back to Harper and the rest of the group. It did not make sense for him to stay here any longer and he decided to leave the restaurant and take a cab back to the dormitory.

At this time, Yuri happened to drive pass with Xavia and he deliberately slowed down in front of Gerald.

"Oh, it's not easy to hail a cab at this time of the night, right?" Yuri said in a cold manner. In fact, he originally wanted to appear to be really cool tonight but he did not get to do anything at all.

In fact, he had almost been defeated by Gerald, as Aiden actually invited Gerald to sit at their table. If not for Quinton's explanation, Yuri and Xavia would probably not have been able to sleep again that night!

After that, both of them left shamelessly.

"Damn it! What are they trying to prove?" Harper asked angrily.

"Hey! I heard that Yuri made some money again. Wasn't it difficult for him to even raise ten thousand dollars that day? I heard that he got a huge sum of money again today and he bought a lot of gifts for Xavia!" Benjamin said in a helpless manner.

After that, he could not help himself from sighing out loud.

After receiving a signal from Harper, Benjamin suddenly recalled that Yuri was the one who snatched Gerald's girlfriend from him. Therefore, he did not continue elaborating anymore.

In fact, Gerald was also a little curious as to where Yuri was getting his money from but he could not be bothered to look into it.

At this time, Gerald suddenly received a phone call from Naomi.

"Gerald, where are you? Can you come to Emperor Karaoke Bar? Alice is in trouble!"

Chapter 51

"Oh, Alice is in trouble? That's fantastic! This isn't the first time that Alice has targeted Gerald anyway. It seems like there really is a retribution!"

Gerald's roommates were all gloating at this time.

Harper scratched his head as he said, "But aside from Naomi, Hayley and the rest of the girls had also chased after Alice earlier!"

“Then, what should we do now, Gerald?” Benjamin asked as he looked at Gerald.

Since Naomi was the one who called him, Gerald naturally had to go there. Moreover, all of this was happening in Emperor Karaoke Bar and it was his own property.

“Well, let’s go and check it out then. After all, we all came out here together!”

Gerald could not be bothered about Alice at all but he was helpless at this time.

The group of boys hailed two cabs before they headed straight to Emperor Karaoke Bar.

At this time, in a private room, there were several bottles of red wine that had been smashed to the ground in front of Alice. Moreover, Alice was also aggressively pouring red wine into her mouth.

“Why? Why is Quinton this kind of person? I thought that he was really a gentleman who had just returned from abroad. He always had such a good temperament and he’s so good at everything that he does! I thought that he would always be good and loyal to me!”

“But why? Why is he such a sick and perverted person?”

Glug. Glug.

Alice raised her head before she took a few sips of red wine before she smashed the bottle of red wine onto the ground immediately!

“Alice, stop breaking the wine bottles already! You’ve ordered all the most expensive red wines! We don’t have enough money to pay for all of this!”

Naomi, Hayley and Jacelyn quickly moved all the remaining unopened bottles of red wine away from Alice.

Today's event had left a great impact on Alice and since it was broadcasted in public, Alice felt really humiliated and she could not stand it anymore. That was the reason she had chosen to come to the Emperor Karaoke Bar to get herself drunk. She had fallen in love with Quinton here and she wanted to forget him here.

That was also the reason she decided to order the most expensive box of red wine at one go.

After taking a few sips, she would just smash the wine bottle.

"Hahaha. This site belongs to my boyfriend, Quinton. As long as my boyfriend says the word, the boss of Emperor Karaoke Bar will just let us go! So what if I smash a few bottles of wine? Who says that I can't do it?"

Alice really could not believe that her first boyfriend would turn out to be a scoundrel. She was in disbelief!

Therefore, she really wanted to get drunk and forget everything that happened today.

"Naomi, do you think we should call Quinton now? This red wine costs more than three thousand dollars a bottle! Alice has already broken four bottles and we don't have enough money to pay for all these bottles and the damages!"

"Yes! Call my boyfriend so you can see how amazing he really is!" Alice yelled mockingly.

At this time, the door of the private room was pushed open and Gerald and Harper quickly walked into the room.

Gerald was slightly startled when he saw the mess on the floor. It seemed as though this woman was really crazy when she was upset.

"Gerald, you're here!"

Naomi hurried over to Gerald. She was really worried and she did not know what to do.

“Hahaha! Did you come over here to make fun of me or to laugh at me?”

Before Gerald could even speak, Alice who was sitting on the sofa was also staring coldly at him as she questioned him.

“Yes, you must be here to laugh at me! Gerald, I know that you hate me for constantly targeting and bullying you. Now that I’m in this situation, you must be the happiest person on earth, right?”

“Alice, you really have a very deep misunderstanding about Gerald. I was the one who called him. I told him that something had happened to you and that you were in trouble, and he rushed over here immediately!” Naomi hurriedly explained.

“Yes, he came here in a hurry because he wants to mock me!”

Gerald really wanted to leave and if Naomi was not there, he would have left without any hesitation at all.

At this time, someone suddenly pushed the door open. One of the security guards had heard the commotion and he walked into the room immediately.

“What is going on here?” the security guard asked as he stared at them with a cold expression on his face.

What was even more of a coincidence was that this security guard was the exact same security guard that they had encountered during the previous incident.

Alice could recognize that he was the same security guard and she said, “Who are you to ask me that question? Get out of here! I want you to call your boss over here now!”

Alice was really acting like a crazy person at this time.

“Hahaha. You want me to call my boss here?” the security guard asked as he looked at the shattered wine bottles on the ground. After that, he sneered before he said, “Alright then, it might actually be a good idea for me to call my boss. After all, you are causing a lot of damage to our room! There aren’t many people who actually dare to act like this here...”

The security guard could not help but feel that this group of people were deliberately creating trouble.

“You’d better call your boss now or you might even lose your job otherwise! Do you know who this girl is? She’s Quinton Ziegler’s girlfriend! The Ziegler family owns Grand Marshall Restaurant on Mayberry Commercial Street. Do I need to explain anything else to you?”

Jacelyn was afraid that they would have to pay for the damages and the bottles of red wine. Therefore, she quickly brought up Quinton without even considering Alice’s feelings.

Unexpectedly, the security guard had a cold expression on his face as he said, “Yes, I know the Ziegler family and I know that they have recently gotten the rights to run the Grand Marshall Restaurant, but what has that got to do with me? Do you really think that you can come to Emperor Karaoke Bar and cause trouble just because you’re friends with the Ziegler family? They are nothing compared to Brother Flynn!”

Jacelyn really did not expect the security guard to be unmoved even after she brought up Quinton’s name.

“Quinton was the one who made the phone call to Mr. Flynn, asking him to apologize to us and let us go the last time! I remember that you were also here that night!”

Jacelyn suddenly felt that something was seriously wrong.

“What? Miss, I think you must have made a mistake. You said that the Ziegler family gave us a call? Even if they had really called, do you think a petty ant like them would be able to make Brother Flynn bow down to them?”

After Jacelyn's reminder, the security guard finally remembered that this was the same group of people who smashed the arowana fish tank the last time. At this time, his tone eased a little.

After listening to this conversation, Alice finally sobered up a little. The meaning behind the security guard's words were obvious. The Ziegler family meant nothing to him at all.

So, why should Flynn be bothered by them?

Even though the Ziegler family was powerful, they obviously could not beat Flynn. How could they possibly make Flynn get on his knees?

"Beauties, I think that you must have made a mistake. Let me tell you the truth. The reason Brother Flynn decided to let you guys go the other day was because he received a phone call from our mysterious boss. This has nothing to do with the Ziegler family at all...hahaha!"

"Mysterious boss?" Alice asked as she took a deep breath.

It seemed as though she had been mistaken the whole time! She had even agreed to become Quinton's girlfriend because she was moved and deeply touched by what he had done for her.

No! How could this be true?

Alice immediately took out her cell phone before she called Quinton. She had to wait for a long time before Quinton finally picked up the phone. It was very noisy and it seemed as though there was still a huge commotion over there.

"Alice, I was wrong. I know that I'm in the wrong. Please forgive me..."

"Quinton, there's something I want to ask you. Did you or did you not ask your father to call Mr. Lexington to apologize to us at Emperor Karaoke Bar? Did your father ask him to bow down and apologize to us that night?" Alice asked Quinton the question coldly over the phone.

“Ahh? Mr. Lexington? He bowed down and apologized to you? How could that be possible? Mr. Lexington is a close friend of Mr. Lyle. How could he possibly...”

“I understand now!”

Chapter 52

Alice hung up the phone immediately.

This misunderstanding was really too much. At first, Alice had truly believed that it was Quinton.

Alice did not question Quinton regarding this matter in detail because she did not want Quinton to feel that she had agreed to get into a relationship with him simply because she was feeling grateful toward him for his help.

Now, everything was clear.

Quinton had not resolved this matter at all. So, who could it have possibly been?

At this time...

The security guard suddenly received a call from his headset. There was a surprised expression on his face as he replied with three respectful ‘yes’s.

His face turned pale immediately.

Right afterward, the security guard bent over before he bowed and said, “Dear ladies, I am really sorry. I made a mistake. Your consumption here tonight is all free. You... you can leave now!”

Upon saying that, the security guard remained bent over and did not dare to straighten his back at all.

“This...”

Alice and the rest of the girls were all stunned.

This scene was exactly the same as the last time, aside from the fact that Flynn had not made an appearance here today.

Who was the one who had called for help? Who had this kind of power?

Naomi was also extremely surprised. "I think we should head back to the campus first. We will discuss this matter after we get back to the dormitory."

Then, Naomi looked at Alice with a worried expression on her face.

"Mm... let's go back first."

Alice was very confused at this time.

What was the problem?

Who was the one who had been helping them all along?

Everyone was ready to leave the karaoke bar at this time.

"Eh? Where is Gerald?"

Naomi wanted to look for Gerald, but she realized that Gerald was nowhere to be found at all.

"Yes! Where is that Gerald? D*mn it! He was just standing behind me just now!"

“Hmph! I bet he ran away again because he’s afraid that he would have to fork out some money. Isn’t this the same as last time? As soon as he realized that something was wrong, he hurriedly came up with an excuse to leave and go to the bathroom. He only dared to come back after we had already resolved the problem!” Jacelyn said in contempt.

“No! Gerald is not that kind of person!”

Naomi defended Gerald before she continued looking around for him.

Just then, Gerald suddenly opened the door and came into the room.

At the same time, he was putting his cell phone back into his pocket.

“Is everything settled? If everything has been settled, let’s leave now. I’ve called for three cabs and they’re already waiting outside!”

Gerald spoke to the group of people lightly.

Then, he turned around and left the room.

Everyone in the private room was startled, especially Alice.

She could feel her heart beating uncontrollably.

Gerald had already called for three cabs for them. This indicated that he already knew that everything would be alright.

It was the same situation as the last time when Gerald had secretly run out during the commotion.

When he came back, everything had already been resolved.

Was this simply a coincidence?

Could it be... that the person who had called for help... was none other than Gerald?

How could that be possible?!

“Gerald, stop right there! Tell us the truth now!”

Alice chased after Gerald immediately. At this time, there were already three cabs waiting for them outside the karaoke bar.

Alice ran toward Gerald as she demanded answers.

“The truth?” Gerald asked.

He was already very disappointed with Alice, and he knew that it was impossible for both of them to even become friends at this point. So, why was she constantly pestering him?

“I am asking whether you were the one who made the phone call and requested for help. Was it you?”

Alice was very nervous at this time.

This was because she felt as though everything was connected. From the expensive fifty-five thousand dollar Hermes bag to the exclusive invitation to the manor, Gerald being invited to sit with Aiden and the rest of the group, and also the attitude of the security guard at the Emperor Karaoke Bar just now!

Everything seemed to revolve around Gerald.

Had Gerald really gained all those favors just because he had saved Zack's daughter? Regardless, wouldn't there be a time when the favor would have already been fully repaid?

Alice was very scared. She was afraid that she had been hating on someone who was wealthy and powerful all along.

She would not know how to face the consequences then.

"Was it you?" Alice asked anxiously.

"If you hoped that it was me, then it was me. If you hoped that it was not me, then it was not me. Hahaha..."

Gerald replied indifferently before he turned around and got into one of the cabs.

Meanwhile, Jacelyn and the rest of the girls had also happened to overhear the conversation between Alice and Gerald, and they were all shocked.

Oh my! Was it really possible that all of this was because of Gerald?

He... wasn't he just a pauper?

Alice was in tears at this time because she did not know what else to think.

Finally, Jacelyn, Naomi, and the other girls dragged Alice into the cab.

"Alice, are you okay? Gerald is a good person. Even though he might be poor, he is still a very good person. Don't think too much about it!" Naomi persuaded Alice helplessly.

"No! I'm not thinking too much..." Alice suddenly raised her head as she looked at Naomi and Jacelyn.

“Do you still remember what I told you today? I told you that seventy percent of the Mayberry Commercial Street was owned by a young boss. I even told you that this young man was very humble and low-key, and even though I tried searching, there was no information about him at all on the internet...”

“Of course I remember. You said that the young man’s last name was Crawford. Everyone calls him Mr. Crawford... ahh! Crawford?”

Jacelyn was in shock as she seemed to have thought of something at this point!

“Could Mr. Crawford actually be Gerald Crawford?”

This... how could it be possible?

All the girls, including Jacelyn, turned pale immediately.

If Gerald was indeed the Mr. Crawford that everyone was talking about, a lot of things would make perfect sense.

Nonetheless, if this was true, then Jacelyn wanted to die immediately!

She wanted to hit the wall because she was filled with regrets!

These girls were always like that.

“Alice, I think all of you are thinking too much. If Gerald is really the same Mr. Crawford that everyone is talking about, why would he be living off the subsidy that he receives?”

Naomi quickly assured and comforted Alice when she saw the pale and frightened expression on her face.

“Yes, yes...”

Alice simply nodded, but she had already made up her mind. She was going to investigate and look into this matter because she had to uncover the truth...

Chapter 53

After returning to the dormitory, Gerald spent the entire night quietly looking through the test questions for test subject one.

In the morning the next day, Gerald originally planned to go to the venue for test subject two.

At this time, he suddenly received a text message from his sister:

“Gerald, there are less than three days to the end of the month. I just checked and I realized that you only spent fifty-five thousand dollars out of the three million dollars in the black gold card. If you do not spend all the money by the end of the month, the three million dollars will expire...”

Gerald was taken aback when he realized that it was already the end of the month. He had three million dollars in his black gold card, but he had not used any more of the money in the card aside from the fifty-five thousand dollars that he had used to buy the limited edition Hermes bag.

According to his sister, if he did not use the money, the three million dollars would expire and go to waste.

No, he had to spend the entirety of the three million dollars!

Gerald felt very distressed when he realized that the deadline for the three million dollars was coming soon.

Gerald naturally had an idea about what he wanted to spend the money on. He wanted to buy one of his favorite things in the world. A car!

Therefore, Gerald got up early before he headed over to Mayberry Automobile City.

He wandered and walked around for a long time.

However, he could not help but feel a little disappointed.

There were too few luxury cars that were worth more than one and a half million dollars! Moreover, most of the luxury car shops did not have ready stock for luxury cars.

“How much is the most expensive luxury car in your shop? It would be best if I can get the car by the end of the month with all of the completed forms and procedures.”

At this time, Gerald had just stopped by a BMW shop.

However, it was a pity that the only most expensive car in this BMW shop that could be delivered and handed over to Gerald by the end of the month was just worth a mere three hundred to four hundred and fifty thousand dollars. That was too cheap. He had to buy at least seven or eight of those cars to use up the money in his black gold card.

Still, why would he buy so many cars for himself?

Gerald scratched his head anxiously.

“Sir, this is the most expensive luxury car range in our shop. However, I would like to suggest that you take a look at the domestically produced BMW 3 Series instead. The lowest price for a fully equipped BMW 3 Series is only about thirty thousand dollars...”

The salesgirl at the BMW shop did not even bother to hide her contempt.

She simply did not show it through her language.

She could not understand why someone who was dressed in such cheap and casual clothing would actually be asking for the most expensive car in the shop. She never expected to run into such a troublemaker so early in the morning.

The salesgirl was rather upset. Even if she recommended him the cheapest car in the shop, he might not even be able to afford it.

“Um... thirty thousand dollars? It’s too cheap. Forget it. I’ll go and look somewhere else...” Gerald sighed before leaving the shop with a disappointed expression on his face.

“D*mn you! You’re insane!”

The salesgirl was rendered speechless as she stared at Gerald who was walking away from the BMW shop. Right after, she dropped the professional smile on her face before cursing at Gerald unceremoniously.

Gerald truly did not expect that he would be regarded as a lunatic. He simply wanted to look for the most expensive luxury car that he could find so that he could use up the money in his card.

Fortunately, as he continued looking around, Gerald found a Lamborghini shop!

Lamborghini was considered one of the leading brands for sports cars.

Even the cheapest Lamborghini sports car would have to cost more than a million dollars!

In the past, Gerald could only look at all these sports cars in a magazine, but now, he could actually afford to buy one for himself.

Gerald felt as though he was dreaming at this time!

Presently, there was a super luxurious sports car that had been produced by Lamborghini called the Reventon. The most expensive and premium version of the Revention would cost at least two million

and six hundred thousand dollars. Most importantly, the Lamborghini shop had ready stock, and Gerald could take the car home immediately.

At this time, Gerald ignored the contemptuous look on the salesgirl's face as he sat inside the car to experience what it felt like.

"My dear, it's the Reventon! What a cool car! Why don't we sit inside and experience what it feels like?"

At this time, a young couple who were holding hands walked into the Lamborghini shop.

The couple was dressed in branded clothing, and anyone could tell that they were wealthy from a single glance.

"Didn't you say that you wanted to come and see the Gallardo? The Reventon is too expensive. Even the cheapest version would cost at least two million dollars. Even if I could see or experience it, I cannot afford to buy it!"

The young man glanced at the watch on his wrist as he smiled helplessly.

"It's okay even if we don't buy it. I just want to experience what it feels like to sit in the Reventon! This is the most luxurious and expensive car produced by Lamborghini!" The girl replied in a coquettish manner.

Chapter 54

The salesgirl who was about to drive Gerald away had already set her sights on the young couple at this time.

She could tell that they were wearing branded clothes worth thousands of dollars, and they were definitely from a rich and wealthy family.

Moreover, this young couple was here to buy the Gallardo. This meant that they could definitely afford to buy a Lamborghini today.

The salesgirl simply felt that Gerald was just a poor boy who was sitting inside the Reventon to gain some insight, and he definitely would not be able to afford to buy a car here today. He was really thick-skinned!

“Handsome, beauty, you truly have good taste. My name is Vanessa. How can I help you?” Vanessa asked respectfully.

“Oh, we originally came here because we wanted to take the Lamborghini Gallardo for a test-drive. However, my girlfriend saw the Reventon and wants to try and test-drive the Reventon instead. If you do not mind, we would like to pay for the test-drive deposit...” the young man replied as he smiled.

“Yes, of course you can bring it for a test-drive. As for the test-drive deposit, you don’t have to worry about it. I will waive it just for you...”

After all, this young couple really looked like they were here to buy a car today. The salesgirl could tell at a single glance that the watch on the young man’s wrist was already worth more than fifteen thousand dollars.

Vanessa hurriedly laughed at this time.

“Hm... but it seems as though there is a customer in the car...” the young man replied with a bitter smile on his face.

“Ahh? Oh! Sorry, sir. That man is not a customer. I will ask him to get out of the car right now!”

The salesgirl knew that she had to weigh the pros and cons now!

As long as she served this young couple well, they would probably end up buying the Gallardo, which was sold at the price of four hundred and fifty thousand dollars! At the very least, they would end up buying an ordinary Lamborghini!

Anything would be better than wasting her precious time on this pauper.

“Excuse me, sir. If you are not going to buy this car, please get out of the car immediately!”

Vanessa opened the car door and spoke to Gerald in a very cold tone. At this time, Gerald was still studying the interior of the car.

However, the eviction order had already been issued.

“I did not say that I was not going to buy it. I am just taking a look at it first...” Gerald truly liked the car and wanted to look at its every detail.

‘Do I look like I care if you are going to buy the car or not?!’ As Vanessa glanced at Gerald and the way he was dressed, she really could not comprehend how he could actually have the courage to step into a Lamborghini shop just to look at the cars.

Even if he really wanted to look at cars, he should just go to an ordinary BMW shop.

However, since Gerald was already in the Lamborghini shop, he was also considered a customer, and Vanessa could not be too rude or mean to him.

“Ahh! Oh my God! Why is someone like this looking around in a Lamborghini shop? I instantly feel as though this luxury sports car is so low-grade and cheap now!”

The woman in the young man’s arms covered her mouth with her hand as she exclaimed in surprise.

Both of them had been in a very good mood earlier because they felt that the people who could actually step into a Lamborghini shop were all wealthy and powerful figures in Mayberry City, such as themselves.

Even if they did not know each other, they could understand one another and gradually become friends.

However, they never expected to see someone like Gerald in the car after Vanessa had opened the car door.

The young couple was suddenly very disappointed.

This was especially so for the young woman, and she did not even bother to hide the look of contempt on her face.

“Yes. Miss Vanessa, is your Lamborghini shop really so lenient with its customers? Why did you let someone like this into your shop? To think that you actually even allowed him to sit in the most luxurious Reventon?”

The young man was very shocked, and he did not even bother to take a look at Gerald at all.

This was because he felt that Gerald was simply not from the same class and status as him.

Moreover, he was also feeling a little angry. He felt that he was losing face in front of his girlfriend because a pauper like Gerald was able to sit in a luxurious car such as the Reventon.

The reason why he brought his girlfriend to the Lamborghini shop today was just so he could show off!

Vanessa could not help but feel a little anxious when she heard the young man’s words.

At this time, Gerald was still looking at the interior of the car, and he was checking out the smart console.

“Get out of the car now!”

Vanessa yelled as she reached out her hand and grabbed Gerald by his collar. She wanted to pull Gerald out of the car...

Chapter 55

Vanessa really wanted to earn the business transaction from the young couple.

Therefore, she subconsciously used a little too much strength.

Gerald had not expected Vanessa to be so rude and rough with him. At this time, he accidentally bumped his head against the car, and it was very painful.

“If you refuse to step out of the car, I will call for security immediately!” Vanessa yelled as she frowned.

Gerald stepped out of the car as he held onto his head.

D*mn it. He really did not expect to be dragged out of the car by this woman when he was still observing the interior of the car.

“I came here to buy a car, so why can’t I take a look at it?!” To be honest, Gerald was holding in his anger right then.

“Buy a car?! What kind of car do you think you will be able to afford to buy from our shop? I simply allowed you to come in to take a look at the cars, but you actually think that you really belong here now!”

Vanessa was very rude and cold toward Gerald in an attempt to please the young couple that was standing behind her at this time.

The commotion attracted the attention of many onlookers around the automobile shop.

However, the young couple was not done complaining.

“Husband, since that pauper sat inside a Lamborghini, I do not want to buy a Lamborghini anymore! Ahh! This is such a disappointment!”

The young woman continued adding fuel to the fire.

The Reventon was certainly not a car that they could afford to buy.

However, it was also good enough if they could afford to buy the Gallardo.

In fact, the woman felt that it would be a shame if she did not get to experience and test-drive this famous luxury car for herself.

After all, everyone had a vain side to themselves. No matter whether they were rich or poor, it seemed as though they would not be able to reflect on how awesome they were if they did not belittle others.

Vanessa bowed slightly in front of the young man and woman. "Sorry, I will handle this matter right away!"

She truly regretted allowing that pauper to step into their Lamborghini shop!

When Vanessa turned around, she realized that Gerald had already left.

However, he was not walking toward the door.

Instead, he was heading directly toward the manager's room.

"That's the manager's room! What are you trying to do?! Come back here!"

Vanessa yelled as she stomped her feet angrily.

What did he want?

First, he had tried to cause trouble here, and after creating a series of problems, the main problem was himself!

Now, Vanessa was certain that Gerald was going to the manager's office to report her.

Under pressure from the customer, the manager would surely blame her for causing so much trouble!

Also, it would be terrible if she could not seal the deal with this couple today.

However, it was too late for her to chase after Gerald now. By this time, Gerald had already walked into the manager's office.

"Miss Vanessa, don't worry. We are definitely going to buy the Gallardo today. Even if that man really reports you, I have a way to make sure that your manager does not punish you!" The young man chuckled as he spoke.

"Thank you, sir!" Vanessa quickly bowed to express her gratitude.

At the same time, Gerald was still rubbing his aching head as he stepped inside the manager's office.

There was a middle-aged man who was carefully analyzing and checking through the year's sales report in the office at that moment.

He was slightly taken aback when he saw Gerald walking into his office.

After that, he stood up immediately.

This young man did not dress in an outstanding manner, but as the manager of the shop, he had to have an extraordinary temper.

Moreover, the middle-aged man could not help but notice the sharpness in the young man's eyes.

Therefore, he did not dare to be too frivolous.

“Sir, what can I do for you?”

“I came here to buy a car, but your salesgirl refused to allow me to take a look at the interior of the car. She even used violence on me! Is this the service attitude that employees of your shop have?”

Gerald confronted the manager directly.

To be honest, after hitting one wall after the other today, Gerald was already starting to get a little impatient. He felt even more unhappy and embarrassed when the salesgirl had dragged him out of the car by force.

Most importantly, he had to buy a car today.

“Is that so? Sir, may I know which car you were interested in?”

The middle-aged man was already mature and experienced, and he could tell at a single glance that someone dressed so casually would usually not be able to afford to buy a Lamborghini. Therefore, it was normal and nothing out of the ordinary if the salesgirl despised and looked down on him.

Therefore, the manager assumed that Gerald was only here to make a report because he wanted to save face.

That was the reason why the manager immediately asked Gerald which car he had been interested in.

“The Reventon sports car that is worth two million and six hundred thousand dollars!” Gerald replied lightly.

“Hahaha. Sir, that car...”

Chapter 56

Smack!

Before the middle-aged man could even finish his sentence, Gerald immediately placed his black gold card on the table.

Upon picking it up, the manager took a closer look at the black gold card, and the expression on his face changed immediately.

He obviously knew about the black gold card.

Only a few people in this world could afford to own this card.

“There is basically a balance of approximately three million dollars in this black gold card. Isn’t that more than enough for me to buy the Reventon?” Gerald asked casually.

“Yes, that is naturally more than enough money!”

However, even though he was replying to Gerald’s question, the middle-aged manager was still a little skeptical at this time.

No matter how he looked at it, the person standing in front of him did not look like the holder of this black gold card at all.

Could he have picked up this card?

Immediately after that, the middle-aged man flashed an apologetic smile at Gerald.

Then, he immediately turned on a device before swiping the black gold card on it.

In an instant, a string of messages appeared on his computer.

“What is your name, sir?”

The middle-aged manager asked pleasantly and respectfully.

“Gerald Crawford.”

“Mr. Crawford, I am so sorry for being too presumptuous earlier. Please forgive me for my behavior.”

As soon as he spoke, the middle-aged manager walked around the table toward Gerald before bowing slightly in front of him.

“My name is Wilson, and I will serve you wholeheartedly, Mr. Crawford!”

Wilson was already breaking out in cold sweat after confirming the owner of the black gold card and Gerald’s identity.

The young man standing in front of him was indeed the owner of the gold black card even though he was dressed so casually.

He must come from a very wealthy and powerful family.

This was just a car that was worth about two and a half million dollars. Wilson knew that as the holder of the black gold card, Gerald would definitely be able to afford to buy a car that was worth fifteen million dollars if he wanted to.

D*mn it! Which one of the salesgirls actually had such bad foresight to have offended such a powerful man?!

“I would like to settle all the documents and procedures immediately because I intend to take that Reventon home today. Thank you for the trouble, Manager Wilson.”

Gerald spoke to Wilson politely because he saw that the manager's attitude was pretty good.

Then, Gerald turned around and walked out of his office.

"Yes, definitely, Mr. Crawford!"

Wilson wiped the sweat off from his forehead before he took the black gold card in his hand and contacted the financial manager.

When Gerald came out of the manager's office, Vanessa was still showing the young couple the Reventon.

Even though she knew that the young couple would not be able to afford to buy the car, as a potential customer, Vanessa naturally had to serve them to the best of her ability.

She even took the time to explain all the specific details of the car to them.

"Wow, husband! This car is really so cool and amazing! It's no wonder why this car is worth two million and six hundred thousand dollars. Husband, when can we afford to buy this car?" The woman asked as she sat inside the Reventon, clearly already in love with this sports car.

The external appearance of the car was already so cool, but the interior of the car was even more impressive. It was fully automated, intelligent and it had all the top luxury configurations set in it.

The woman could not help but exclaim in joy!

"Well, you will have to wait for me to inherit all of my family's property from my father..." the young man replied with a wry smile on his face.

"I don't care, husband. Anyway, I want to own this sports car one day! Eh? Husband, look! That pauper is here to look at the sports car again!"

The woman started complaining in a coquettish and spoiled manner.

When she turned around, she noticed that Gerald, who had left earlier, had already returned.

Moreover, he was even checking out the headlights of the car right now.

At this time, Vanessa and the young man also saw Gerald standing near the Reventon.

Vanessa became very anxious at this time. "Hey! What are you doing here again? Didn't I ask you to leave? Did you think that I would be afraid of you just because you reported me to my manager?"

"Exactly! Some people are just too vain for their own good. They do not even know their own place..."
The young man said as he raised his watch once again.

Gerald looked at Vanessa coldly as he said, "Miss, your job scope does not only encompass the sales industry, but you are also in the service industry. If you find out one day that the person you were trying to drive out was in actual fact one your biggest customer, wouldn't you feel ashamed of yourself?"

"Hahaha! You are such a funny and ridiculous person. Based on your ability? Very well, then. I will wait for that day to come. Now, can you leave this shop this instant?"

Vanessa stared at Gerald as though he was a mentally retarded person. The contempt and disgust in her eyes were self-evident.

Gerald nodded helplessly before he said, "You do not need to wait for that day to come. You can already feel ashamed of yourself now."

"Mr. Crawford, I have already called all the relevant financial personnel who will complete all the form and documentation procedures for you. I promise that you will definitely be able to pick your car up today!"

Just then, Manager Wilson led a group of people with him, and they were carrying all sorts of large and small instruments as they hurried toward Gerald.

Vanessa's eyes widened in shock, and the young couple who were standing at the side also had an incredulous look on their faces as they witnessed the scene in front of them...

Chapter 57

"Manager Wilson, what's going on?"

Vanessa could not react at all for a moment.

However, her instincts told her that she might have done something that would make her regret for life.

Thus, Vanessa hurriedly stepped forward as she asked the manager the question.

"Get out of my way now! I will settle this with you later!"

Wilson reprimanded Vanessa as he glared at her furiously.

At this time, the financial manager and the handling clerk also came in behind him, and they were all looking at Gerald with a polite and respectful expression on their faces.

Vanessa was completely dumbfounded. She truly thought that Gerald was nothing but just a miserable pauper.

She assumed that Gerald only came here to look at the Lamborghinis that he could never afford to buy.

Therefore, in an effort not to offend the young couple who could actually afford to buy a Lamborghini, Vanessa had not hesitated to offend this young man whom she thought was a pauper.

But how could a pauper possibly make her manager act this way? Was he truly going to buy the Reventon?

Oh my God. How wealthy was he?!

The young couple was in shock at the moment.

The young man felt as though he had been greatly humiliated. "Manager, I would advise you to figure out that I am your real customer!"

"Yes! We are going to buy the Gallardo from this young lady today. If you continue treating her like this, we might change our mind and choose not to buy from your shop anymore!" The woman also yelled as she tried to speak up for Vanessa.

"I do not care whether you want to buy a car from us or not. And you, woman! Who allowed you to sit inside the Reventon? I want you to get out of that car right now!"

At this time, Wilson was thinking to himself that this young couple was nobodies compared to the holder of a black gold card.

The young woman was sitting at the driver's seat inside the Reventon as she tried to experience what it felt like.

"I..." Her feminine face turned pale as soon as she heard Wilson's eviction order.

Wilson smiled before he looked at Gerald and said, "Mr. Crawford, look. Next..."

Gerald knew that he was asking if they could begin with the formalities.

Therefore, he simply nodded as he took the black gold card in his hand.

Then, Gerald aimed the black gold card at the sensor on the equipment before he input his password directly.

Ding!

“Two million and seven hundred thousand dollars have been credited!”

A system prompt sounded immediately.

“What?!”

Right then and there, everyone present, including all the other people who were looking at cars in the Lamborghini shop, were all surprised.

This young man had just spent two million and seven hundred thousand dollars to buy the most expensive luxury sports car produced by Lamborghini!

Tyrant!

“Who is this young man? His appearance and clothes looked so shabby. I thought he only came here to look around. Oh my God. Who would have ever expected him to be the real deal instead?”

“He looks like he is just a college student! Do you think he won all that money from the lottery? Oh my God! How much did he win? It must not be less than fifteen million dollars!”

“Oh my! I wonder if that young man already has a girlfriend or not? Otherwise, I will introduce my sister to him!”

“...”

There was a slight commotion in the Lamborghini shop at this time, and everyone had focused their attention on Gerald.

Gerald could feel his face burning red.

On the other side, the young couple was so ashamed that they did not know what to do or where to hide their faces at all.

The car that Gerald had just bought was easily worth six Gallardos.

They had even tried to drive Gerald out of the Lamborghini shop not too long ago, and could not help but feel a little embarrassed as they thought about it.

“Madam, please make way for me. I want to have a look at the interior of my car again...”

Gerald walked toward the car door as he watched the young woman reluctantly make her way out of the car.

“Ahh... I... I...” She had really wanted to test-drive the car and bring it out on the road. When that happened, everyone’s eyes would surely be fixed on her!

That was all she wanted. Everyone’s attention and envy.

However, her boyfriend could only afford to buy a Gallardo. She was truly dying with envy at this time. Ahh!

The young woman quickly ran out of the Lamborghini shop because she felt very ashamed and embarrassed.

Everyone was waiting for Gerald to be done inspecting his car.

After a short while, Gerald was finally done looking at the interior of his car, and he stepped out of the car.

Chapter 58

By this time, Wilson was also done with all the verification and transfer documents.

“Mr. Crawford, this is your car key and my business card. From now on, please do not hesitate to ask me for anything if you have any special requests. Even if it has nothing to do with cars at all, you can always ask for my help!” Wilson said respectfully.

This was because Gerald meant more to him than just a regular customer who was buying a car. He knew that Gerald came from a very wealthy and powerful family.

Wilson felt that he would not lose out if he got acquainted with Mr. Crawford.

“Okay, thank you, Manager Wilson. To be honest, there is something that I would like to ask of you if it is not too much trouble, Manager Wilson.” Gerald said with a smile on his face.

“Yes, please. Just give me your instructions!”

“Please, can you get someone to help me drive this car back? Hahaha. Actually, I have not gotten my driver’s license yet...”

“Oh! If that is the case, I will do it for you right away!”

“Mr. Crawford, why don’t I drive the car back for you?”

“Mr. Crawford, I can drive the car back for you too! I have already obtained my driver’s license for more than two to three years!”

“Mr. Crawford, which driving school are you studying at?”

Immediately after his words fell, a crowd of people quickly gathered around Gerald as they grabbed his arms frantically.

They kept asking Gerald about which university he was studying at and which driving school he was taking classes at.

Gerald was prevaricated with his replies. Fortunately, Wilson was very sharp and alert, and he quickly offered to personally drive Gerald back.

At this time, Vanessa was standing by the door as she glanced at Gerald and the crowd of people. She was biting her lips, filled with regrets. She truly wished that she could slap herself in the face!

She had actually looked down on and despised someone, but unexpectedly, that person had turned out to be the true king!

Vanessa could not help but slump to the ground as she thought about her actions. Her career was surely over!

However, Gerald did not ask Wilson to drive him back to the campus.

After all, this was such a cool and luxurious Lamborghini. Even when they were driving on the road, a crowd of people was already staring at his car.

If he were to drive this car into the campus, he would definitely attract too much attention.

That would be too high-profile.

It would feel as though Gerald was trying to show off his wealth.

Gerald hated people who were arrogant and enjoyed showing off their wealth the most.

Therefore, Gerald asked Wilson to park his car at a carpark that was located not too far from their campus.

Then, he asked Wilson to take a cab back to the Lamborghini shop.

Alas, Gerald had bought a car but he was too embarrassed to drive it. This was really so ridiculous!

Still, Gerald was very satisfied with this car, and he felt as though he was dreaming.

After putting away his car key, Gerald felt a little thirsty and decided to head toward the shop next to the campus to buy a cup of milk tea.

“If you do not have cash on you, you can use electronic payment instead!”

“Sorry, boss. My cell phone is dead, and I forgot to bring my wallet here with me. Otherwise, can you allow me to leave the cups of milk tea here first? I will return to the dormitory to get my wallet before I come back to grab these milk teas...”

As soon as Gerald arrived at the shop, he saw a girl holding a bag of milk tea as she spoke to the boss.

It seemed as though the girl had only realized that she did not bring her wallet out with her after she was done purchasing the milk tea. Moreover, her cell phone was out of battery and she could not pay using electronic payment either. This was indeed quite embarrassing.

However, after looking at the girl’s profile, Gerald was a little startled.

“Huh? It’s her?” Gerald was a little surprised.

She was the girl he had met when Whitney had instructed him to clean up the auditorium the last time. At that time, Gerald had accidentally soiled and dirtied her white shoes when he was too engrossed in Victor’s speech about buying a car.

Gerald could remember her clearly because she was not only very beautiful, but she was also non-judgmental at all, unlike Whitney. She was very demure and nice.

Therefore, Gerald had a very deep impression of her. He could even remember her name clearly. Mila Smith!

“Young sister, don’t make this kind of joke. You bought six cups of milk tea in one go and even took a few sips of one of the milk teas. If you leave them here and do not come back for it, what am I supposed to do with all these milk teas?! Who am I supposed to collect the money from, then? Miss, I am just running a small business here. So, please do not make things difficult for me!”

The male boss inside said helplessly.

At this time, Mila had a very anxious expression on her face as she frantically wiped the sweat off her forehead.

“How much is it? I will pay for her...”

Just as Mila was feeling very flustered, a voice suddenly rang behind her ears.

Mila heaved a sigh of relief before she turned around to see who had come to her rescue. As soon as she saw Gerald, she smiled unexpectedly.

“It’s you?”

“Yes. It seems as though we meet again!” Gerald smiled and could not stop his face from turning red...

Chapter 59

“Thank you so much for your help. I can’t believe I forgot to bring my wallet out!” Mila said as she smiled.

She did not directly refuse Gerald’s offer to pay on her behalf, and she was also very polite.

She was a very kind and generous girl.

Mila was a little surprised to run into Gerald today.

Still, Mila had a deep impression of Gerald after running into him at the auditorium the last time.

She recalled that this student had been very indifferent and was not affected at all even though everyone had been ridiculing and humiliating him at that time.

“You are welcome,” Gerald replied as he smiled.

“Don’t worry, I will definitely return the money to you as soon as I get my wallet. By the way, do you have an electronic wallet? If you have one, I can transfer the money to you through electronic payment directly...”

“Yes!” Gerald did not push back and forth either. Even though the girl before him was very beautiful, it was still a very happy meeting.

Furthermore, he did not have the habit of beating around the bush.

Under normal circumstances, any other ordinary guy in this situation would definitely have insisted that the girl did not need to return the money and could just take it as a treat from them.

Perhaps, they would even try to invite her out to dinner and try to befriend her or something like that.

However, Gerald had a very straight character and had always been this way. Since Mila wanted to return the money to him, he had no reason to turn down her request.

“I will go back to my dormitory now and transfer the money back to you later in the evening! Thank you for your help today. My name is Mila Smith!”

“My name is Gerald Crawford!” Gerald replied as he smiled.

After that, Mila waved at Gerald before she left in a hurry.

“She truly is very beautiful...” Gerald muttered to himself as he stared at her back.

Hey! When did he become such a fool?

With a faint smile on his face, Gerald turned around and picked up his milk tea before he decided to walk toward his car and appreciate it a little longer.

This was the first time he had ever bought a car for himself, and he would never have dreamt that he would ever be able to own this car. Therefore, he was very excited.

“Wow! Come and take a look at this! What kind of car is this?”

“Oh my God! It’s a Lamborghini sports car! It’s really too cool. This car should be worth a few million dollars, right?”

“This is the Reventon! It’s one of Lamborghini’s most expensive luxury sports car! It’s priced at more than two and a half million dollars! Wow. He must be an extremely wealthy person!?”

When Gerald arrived at his car, he was shocked to see that there were already many people surrounding his car at this time.

Most of them were girls, but there were also a few boys there.

They were all staring at his car in awe, and everyone was also having an enthusiastic discussion about the car.

A lot of the girls were extremely attracted to the car, and their eyes shone brightly as they stared at the car.

“Wow! This cool sports car is worth more than two and a half million dollars. I would be willing to die if I could just sit in this car for a short while!”

“I can’t help but wonder which rich man owns this car? Is there such a wealthy person in Mayberry University? If there is, I would really love to become his girlfriend!”

“Come, come, hurry up and take a picture for me! I really want to take a picture with the car!”

Click! Click!

The sound of the camera shutters rang continuously.

Some girls also wanted to take pictures with the car but were too embarrassed to do so.

Moreover, they were not only staring at the car, but they were also observing their surroundings at this time.

Everyone wanted to find out who the owner of this car was. They wanted to know if it belonged to a boy and whether he was a student from Mayberry University. If he was a fellow student, they wanted to seize the opportunity to get closer to him.

Perhaps... that wealthy guy would take a liking to them!

“Well, excuse me. Can you let me pass...” Gerald scratched his head as he decided to bite the bullet and walk directly toward his car.

“Get out of here! Why are you trying to squeeze through?!”

Unexpectedly, Gerald was pushed aside by a very frustrated girl.

At this time, Gerald could not help but feel anger rising in his heart. What the hell! You did not even ask for my permission and you dare to sit on top of my car! Who do you think you are?!

“Look at this person. He is such a d*ck! He is actually coming forward to take pictures of the car. Isn't he disgusting?”

“Hahaha. I think he's trying to take advantage of the situation right now. He is probably trying to find a girl since there are so many beautiful girls here. I have never seen a more disgusting person in my life!”

“It would be fine if the owner of the Lamborghini comes and sees a bunch of beautiful girls here. However, just imagine what he would think if he saw such a disgusting boy in front of his car? It would be strange if he did not get angry at all!”

Then, the bunch of girls quickly took out their cell phones and started snapping pictures of themselves with the Lamborghini.

“Look! Why are there so many people gathered over there?”

Chapter 60

“It seems as though there is a very wealthy boy in our university now! He just bought the Lamborghini Reventon sports car!”

“D*mn it! That car is worth about one and a half to two over million dollars! Let's go over and take a look!”

Gerald was violently pushed outward by the few girls, and at this time, more people were running toward his car.

Gerald felt completely helpless. If he wanted to give them a slap across their faces right now, he could simply take the car keys out of his pocket and unlock his car directly.

However, Gerald did not have that kind of habit, especially not in front of such a huge crowd of people.

Unexpectedly, parking the car here at the car park had almost the same effect as stopping the car directly in front of the university entrance.

Gerald looked around him and decided that he would have to wait until the car park was completely empty before he moved his car elsewhere.

That was the only way!

Alas. Gerald could not help but sigh.

Thus, Gerald put his car keys away before he turned around and left the car park.

After walking a few steps, his cell phone suddenly rang. It was a phone call from a strange unknown number.

Gerald answered the call immediately.

“Gerald, right? I forgot to inform you this morning that you will have to come to the North Playground at one o’clock in the afternoon to practice Subject Two!”

A female’s voice sounded faintly over the other end of the line.

As soon as she was done speaking, she hung up the phone immediately.

He would have to acquire Subject One the next day, so it was no wonder why he would have to practice Subject Two today.

Regardless of the caller’s cold and rude attitude, Gerald hurried over to the North Playground because he wanted to get his driver’s license as soon as possible.

After a short while, he finally arrived at the location.

Training on the field had already begun.

At this time, an instructor wearing a pair of sunglasses was teaching a student how to reverse a car.

There were probably about eleven people waiting in line at this time.

It was a mixture of boys and girls.

Everyone was standing at the side as they watched the instructor guide the student on how to drive and handle the car properly.

“D*mn it! It’s really Gerald! Is he seriously going to learn how to drive?”

As Gerald walked toward the crowd of people, a fellow female student immediately covered her mouth in surprise, a look of disbelief plastered on her face.

“Hahaha. So, what now? I told you it was him! Quinn, you lost the bet. You have to eat dinner with me tonight!”

At this time, a boy smiled as he exclaimed excitedly.

“Oh, it doesn’t count! That does not count at all. Who would have thought that Gerald would come and take the driving test?! This is simply too illogical! Nathaniel, I think you made the bet with me only because you already knew that Gerald signed up for this driving lesson! You lied to me!” The girl named Quinn retorted immediately.

The thing was, they had seen Gerald’s name on the list of students when they arrived for their driving lesson.

The two of them had then placed a bet on whether it was the same Gerald from their department.

As a result, after the staff from the driving school had made the phone call and asked Gerald to come over, they found out that it truly was him.

They were completely shocked!

In truth, Gerald was not that familiar with these two students. He had only ever met them a couple of times in his department.

Why did he meet them? Only because these two students were also part of the student union. The boy was Nathaniel Lawson, the committee member for the Disciplinary Department, and the other was Quinn Zager, the committee member for the Health Department.

As a poor student who was receiving subsidies from the student union, Whitney would often assign Gerald to do all sorts of odd labor for them. Therefore, it was only natural for everyone in the student union to know all about Gerald.

After all, who would not have heard of this pauper from their department?

After listening to the conversation between Quinn and Nathaniel, the other boys and girls who were also students at the university could not help but stare at Gerald.

Some of the boys even laughed contemptuously. "Brother Nathaniel, is this pauper from your department really that poor?"

This boy felt that his own worth would undoubtedly be raised if he ridiculed and humiliated others, thus, he did not hesitate to insult Gerald because he felt that he obviously did not have any status at all. If so, why should he give him any face?

"Yes, he is poor! So poor that you cannot possibly imagine it. Hahaha!" Nathaniel replied as he laughed.

Gerald simply snorted coldly at their sarcastic and satirical remarks. Then, he turned around and walked away as though Nathaniel and Quinn did not exist at all.

After all, why did he have to bite back if a dog bit him?

When he realized that Gerald was simply ignoring them, Nathaniel could not help but feel a little angry.

Just as he was about to attack Gerald, the student who had been training inside the car was already done with her training, and the car door was slowly opened.

At this time, a white and slender wrist was exposed.

All the boys and girls who were waiting for their turns including Gerald quickly turned around to look toward the direction of the car.

“Look, everyone! That beauty is coming out!”

Chapter 61

Many boys gathered around immediately, and even Nathaniel was looking in that direction.

Gerald also looked in that direction with a curious expression on his face.

The girl who had just stepped out of the car was indeed very beautiful, and Gerald also knew who she was. In fact, they had just met not too long ago.

Who else would it have been if it was not Mila?

“Ahh. She is so beautiful! It would be perfect if she could become my girlfriend.” The boy who was standing next to Nathaniel said, his eyes filled with affection.

He looked like a fool at this time.

“D*mn you! Who said that you could dream about her ever becoming your girlfriend?! Let me tell you, this is the girl our Brother Victor is interested in! You can just treat her as eye candy, but you should not hope for her to ever become your girlfriend!” Nathaniel said in a disgusted tone.

“Ahh! Brother Victor. No wonder. Brother Victor is so handsome, and it’s no wonder why the girl that he likes is also so extraordinary!”

When the other boy heard the name ‘Victor’, he naturally took a step back and drooped a little.

Brother Victor was none other than Victor Wright, the vice president of the student union in the Department of Language and Literature. Everyone knew that he came from a very well-to-do family and that he drove an Audi A6. There was not a single person in university who did not know who he was.

How could anyone possibly afford to offend him?

“Who dares to ask this beauty for her phone number? If anyone can give me her phone number, I am willing to pay you fifteen dollars for it!”

“It’s useless. Someone tried to ask for her number earlier, but she refused to give it!”

“Furthermore, didn’t you hear what that kid said just now? That beautiful girl is the girl that Victor is currently pursuing...”

“Victor is the one who drives the Audi A6 in our school. He specially arranged for someone to come here to keep an eye on his girl today!”

Some of the girls were very dissatisfied at this time. After all, Mila’s appearance and her beauty far eclipsed the rest of them.

Everyone was gazing intently at Mila.

Gerald was also no exception and was also staring at Mila.

Smack!

At this time, a small pebble hit his face out of the blue.

What? Who did it?!

Gerald turned around and saw Quinn glaring at him.

“Gerald, you pauper! Who gave you the right to look at that beautiful girl?! Do you have to look just because the other guys are also looking at her? Don’t you know your own place at all?”

Quinn was a little unhappy because she would have to have dinner with Nathaniel after losing her bet with him because of Gerald. Besides, she was also jealous and envious of Mila.

Was she not good enough to attract the attention of a pauper?

“Quinn, you’re crazy! What do you think you’re doing?!” Gerald cursed out loud as he was extremely annoyed.

He really wanted to straighten things out with Nathaniel and Quinn.

“Gerald!” Just then, Mila, who had just stepped out of the car, quickly greeted and called out to Gerald as soon as she saw him.

Mila had been in a hurry earlier because she had had to come here for her driving lessons.

Unexpectedly, she was closely watched and stared at by the group of boys as soon as she had arrived.

Most girls enjoyed the feeling of being watched and stared at by boys. However, Mila could not help but feel very awkward and embarrassed because they had been staring at her from the very beginning to the end. They were even intensely looking on as she was practicing her driving.

Fortunately, Mila had seen Gerald as soon as she stopped the car.

Mila did not know anyone in the entire training ground, and the only person that she knew was Gerald.

At this time, Gerald also smiled as he nodded slightly at Mila.

“Oh my God! Why does it seem as though sister-in-law knows this pauper?” Nathaniel was very confused.

Even the other boys were staring at Gerald with a curious and appalled look on their faces.

“Why does it seem as though this poorly dressed person actually knows the goddess?!”

“Moreover, it seems as though he has a very good relationship with the goddess! Both of them are talking and laughing together!

Everyone’s jealous and suspicious gazes were all projected and fixed on Gerald at this time. They really could not understand why the goddess could become friends with someone like him when she was not even interested in looking at any of them.

Truth be told, Gerald was also very surprised.

“Unexpectedly, you are also learning how to drive here...” Gerald smiled slightly.

“Yes! I came and registered for the class yesterday! I think both of us are really fated! By the way, thank you so much for paying for my milk tea earlier this afternoon...”

Gerald's conversation with Mila was very simple.

Aside from Xavia and Naomi, Gerald hardly had any other female friends at all. Thus, he did not have much experience when it came to speaking to girls, and he did not know how to start a conversation at all.

He could only ask a question when he thought about it or answer a question when someone asked him one.

Chapter 62

Even though the speaker did not intend for anything, mindless listeners could take their words seriously.

Nathaniel frowned as soon as he heard that Gerald had paid for Mila's milk tea.

He could tell that both of them obviously knew each other. Moreover, Gerald had paid for Mila's milk tea? Was there something more than this between them?

As he thought about it, Nathaniel immediately sent a text message to Victor.

Then, Nathaniel looked at Gerald who was about to continue chatting with Mila before he said, "Gerald, are you here to practice how to drive, or did you come here to chat with girls? It must have already been hard enough for you to save enough money to pay for your driving lessons. Aren't you going to pay more attention to the driving lessons instead?"

Several girls who were standing at the side also looked at Gerald with contempt in their hearts. They had initially thought that this person was quite honest, but it seemed as though he had completely lost his train of thoughts as soon as he saw a beautiful girl.

Mila could tell clearly that Nathaniel was attacking Gerald, so she quickly defended him. "Nathaniel, what are you trying to say? Why are you attacking Gerald? You have failed Subject Two twice but you are still attacking others in vain. If you have that much time, you should focus on studying by yourself instead."

"I..." Nathaniel's face turned black immediately.

Vroom!

At this time, the sound of a car roaring suddenly sounded near the playground.

Everyone turned to look in that direction in an instant.

After that, a few of the girls pointed outside as they shouted, "Wow! That Audi A6 is so beautiful!"

"Oh my! Does that car belong to the Brother Victor that he was talking about earlier? I heard that he's the vice president of the student union for the Department of Language and Literature!"

"So cool!"

The group of girls could not help but look at the direction of the car enthusiastically.

Meanwhile, the car finally stopped in front of Mila, and the tall Victor stepped out of the car immediately, Whitney following suit.

As soon as Victor got out of the car, his eyes naturally fell on Mila and Gerald.

He could not believe it when he received the text message from Nathaniel earlier. However, he realized that Mila was indeed standing next to Gerald at this time.

"Mila, do you know Gerald personally?" Victor asked curiously.

He was afraid that Mila might have fallen for Gerald's petty tricks and lies.

"We met and got to know each other today. What's the matter?" Mila was very displeased with Victor's questioning tone.

“Nothing’s wrong. Did Gerald tell you anything suspicious? Did he tell you that he has some friends who are driving some limited edition Ferraris? I’m telling you, that’s all fake! We found out that he is just lying about those so-called friends that he has!”

Victor had already looked into the matter. He believed that it was highly likely that Gerald had spent seven thousand dollars to experience what it felt like to ride in a Ferrari because he wanted to use this as an opportunity to get close to girls.

Unexpectedly, Gerald also seemed to be interested in Mila.

Mila could not help but frown as soon as she heard Victor’s words.

At this time, Gerald was simply staring at Whitney who was standing beside Victor.

Needless to say, she had taken everything he had said to coax her the last time to heart, even conducting her private investigation into this matter.

What was wrong with this woman? Why was she so interested in his private affairs?

“Well, Gerald, let me give you a warning now. You’d better stay away from Mila from now onward. Mila is a girl that you will never be able to have or reach in your entire lifetime! Besides, you are a very hypocritical person, and I absolutely despise you!”

Whitney could still remember everything that Gerald had told her when she saw him getting out of the Ferrari the other day. He had told her that his friend had driven him back in his Ferrari.

Whitney was still very furious because she could not believe that this guy was so full of shit!

Moreover, Victor also said that Gerald had actually bought milk tea for Mila.

Was this toad trying to get a taste of a swan’s meat?

Whitney's words made Nathaniel and everyone else at the North Playground look at Gerald as they sneered.

"Whitney, why are you saying all this about Gerald..."

Mila had already known and observed that Whitney was very cold and impolite toward Gerald ever since the last time.

"Mila, I'm just afraid that you will be deceived by this jerk! Gerald is not as simple or honest as you think he is!" Whitney replied as she glared at Gerald with a stern expression on her face. "By the way, Mila, will you be free tonight? Brother Victor is the host and he would like to bring you to Homeland Kitchen for dinner tonight! I can come along if you go!" Whitney continued in a sour tone.

"I will have to practice driving in the afternoon so I might not have time to go for dinner tonight..." Mila did not really want to go for the dinner with them.

"Oh, can't you just practice driving some other time? Do you honestly have to practice driving today? Mila, don't tell me that the reason you are turning down Victor's invitation to dinner is because you want to practice driving with Gerald? Don't you think that that's a waste of your time?"

Whitney's words placed Mila in a very difficult spot. It would be wrong for her to go, and it would be wrong for her not to go.

If she agreed to go for dinner, she would indirectly be saying that she did not want to spend time with Gerald. That would only embarrass Gerald and put him down.

Truthfully, Gerald was a very good person, or at the very least, Mila felt so.

However, if she declined the dinner, Whitney would never let her off.

Finally, Mila replied, "Okay, I will come for the dinner, but I want to bring someone with me. After all, he helped me out today. I will be the host tonight and all of us can go for dinner together, okay?"

Then, Mila turned around and looked at Gerald who was standing quietly at the side.

Chapter 63

"What?! Mila, you want to bring Gerald with you?" Whitney asked in surprise.

Gerald was also slightly surprised at this time. Through their short-term contact today, Gerald already knew that Mila was the kind of girl who had a very kind and gracious heart. She did not look down on the poor, and she was not the type of person who disliked the poor and loved the rich. As long as it was a good person, Mila would treat them as her good friend.

Mila was a sharp contrast in comparison to Whitney, and she was also a very considerate person.

However, Gerald was not interested in attending the dinner with Victor, Whitney, and the rest of their group of friends.

Not one bit!

Mila nodded before she said, "Whitney, Gerald helped me out a lot today. That is the reason why I invited all of you out for dinner tonight. Of course, Gerald has to come today!"

"Why don't you all go out and have fun without me instead?" Gerald replied as he smiled at Mila. Naturally, he understood Mila's intentions for inviting him to join them for dinner tonight.

"No, you have to come!" Truthfully, Mila had another purpose for inviting Gerald to tag along for the dinner tonight. How could she possibly not know of Victor's intentions and interest in her?

This was the only way for her to stay away from Victor as she did not like Victor at all.

At this time, Victor had a very ugly and dissatisfied expression on his face.

He could not say that he would not allow Gerald to attend the dinner tonight, and he could not possibly allow Mila to bear the costs.

Even if Gerald were to come for the dinner tonight, Victor would never allow Mila to pay for the dinner.

Was he that ungentlemanly?!

Therefore, Victor replied bitterly, "Mila, it's settled then. I will buy you dinner tonight. You did not follow us for lunch at Homeland Kitchen the last time, so you have to come along with us for dinner tonight. As for Gerald, he can come if he wants to..."

Mila nodded slightly.

Whitney glared at Gerald as she said, "Hmph! You're lucky that Victor is allowing you to join us for dinner tonight! However, you should remember that the only reason you're invited to dinner tonight is because you helped Mila. Otherwise, you should not even be dreaming about it!"

After saying that, Whitney turned around to look at Mila before she said, "Mila, I will see you tonight then!"

As soon as she was done speaking, Whitney turned around and left with Victor.

'Ugh!' Gerald could not help but sigh in his heart.

If this was the case, there was nothing else he could do but tag along for the dinner.

As Gerald did not want to think of anything else, he simply focused on his training.

He continued practicing his driving until late in the evening.

Whitney came to pick Mila up in Victor's car.

Quite a few people were joining them for dinner that night, and most of them were the boys and girls who were also close to Victor as they were part of the student union.

Quinn and Nathaniel were also amongst the crowd of people joining them for dinner.

They arrived at Homeland Kitchen after a short drive. Victor was very generous and had already booked a very luxurious and exquisite room for them.

Gerald simply followed them into the room without saying anything at all.

Gerald did not pay much attention to his surroundings and did not even notice a waiter glancing at him as he walked passed him. The waiter had a surprised look on his face before he hurried downstairs for inexplicable reasons.

“Mm. I guess this must be the first time someone has ever stepped foot into this restaurant. I’m afraid that he will not have a second chance to do so!”

Everyone was very excited at this time. Moreover, Quinn was glancing at Gerald as she targeted her sarcastic remark at him.

“Quinn, you’re wrong. Gerald has already been here before. He bought his classmates dinner here last time, and I heard that he spent a lot of money here that night!”

Whitney quickly replied as she explained what she recalled the last time.

Quinn and Nathaniel were both very surprised when they heard Whitney’s words.

At this time, Whitney continued talking about how Gerald had won the lottery and immediately splurged on his classmates.

Everyone could not help but stare at Gerald as though they were looking at an idiot.

Gerald could not be bothered to explain himself to them and simply sat quietly in the corner.

“Did you win the lottery?” Mila suddenly asked in surprise.

Chapter 64

“Yes, I won a bit of money!” Gerald replied as he smiled.

“Why did you spend all that money? Didn’t you save some money for yourself?” Mila asked.

“Save some? Gerald is such a vain person, so how could he possibly have saved any money? Hahaha...”
At this time, Victor had just walked into the room, and he happened to hear everyone discussing how Gerald had won the lottery.

How could he possibly not take advantage of this opportunity to trample on Gerald?

“Okay, okay, everyone, please take your seats. By the way, I ran into the president of the student union from the other department when I went downstairs just now. I invited a few of them to come over and join us for dinner later!” Victor said as he laughed.

“That would be perfect, but Victor, even though our room is very luxurious and exquisite, I’m afraid that we will not be able to fit so many people into our room.”

When Whitney heard that the president of the student union from the other department was also here, she became very interested and happy.

Whitney really wanted to meet up with them because she was someone who loved to make good and close relationships with anyone who had power and status.

“Yes! Three of them will be coming over to join us. If it was just two of them, it would be easy for us to squeeze them in. However, it is clearly difficult for us to squeeze another extra person in!” Victor said anxiously as he scratched his forehead.

Gerald knew that he was deliberately saying those words to him.

Now, the only reason why Gerald came for the dinner tonight was because he was giving Mila face.

Gatherings with friends were always like this. One friend would be invited, and he would invite another friend, and so forth.

Even though the host would feel uncomfortable with this situation, he would not be able to say anything at all.

Gerald was placed in a very tough spot because Mila was the one who had invited him here tonight.

Sigh. Tough love. Gerald could not help but sigh to himself.

When he saw the jug of juice on the table, Gerald wanted to pick it up to pour himself a cup of juice.

However, before he could pick up the jug, someone turned the Lazy Susan around and moved the jug of juice away from him.

Since there was now a pot of tea in front of him, Gerald decided to drink some tea instead.

However, before he could pick up the pot of tea, someone turned the Lazy Susan again.

Who was it?

Gerald was startled and raised his head to look around, only to notice that Whitney had one hand placed on the Lazy Susan. She was also glaring at him.

“Gerald, didn’t you hear what Victor just said? He said that this table would be overcrowded and there would be one extra person at this table!”

What did it have to do with him even if there would be one extra person at the table?

He really had to teach this woman a lesson when he had the opportunity to do so.

Gerald had truly had enough of Whitney's nonsense.

"He is so shameless! He is eating for free, and he is actually occupying someone else's seat as though he belongs here!" Quinn also chimed in contemptuously.

She naturally said this on behalf of Victor and everyone else at the table. After all, she had nothing good to say to Gerald since she also personally despised and looked down on him.

"Mila, why don't you ask Gerald to go back first? You can just invite him out for dinner next time. Just look at how messy and difficult the table arrangement and seating is now! This is completely unnecessary!" Whitney began to persuade and work her charms on Mila at this time.

Mila frowned immediately. If she had known that something like this would happen, she would not have come here with Gerald at all.

At this time, Mila was contemplating whether to leave the restaurant with Gerald.

Before she could say anything, Quinn pointed at a small table next to them before saying, "Well, Gerald does not necessarily have to leave. However, he will need to go and sit at that small table over there to eat his dinner instead. We will give him some dishes on a plate. That would not make much difference for him anyway, right?"

"Okay then, I think that's a great idea. Since Gerald is just a pauper, we should not let him get used to eating too many good dishes anyway. Otherwise, he will not be able to afford to pay for his appetite in the future!" Nathaniel agreed with Quinn as he laughed.

These bunch of people really had very foul mouths!

To be honest, Gerald just wanted to slam his hands on the table and leave immediately.

However, as soon as he stood up, Gerald changed his mind immediately.

Leave?

If he left, wouldn't he be teased and ridiculed all day by them for no reason at all?

D*mn it! He was not going to leave today! After all, how could he possibly allow them to bully him in his own territory?

This thought ran through Gerald's mind in an instant.

After that, he nodded before he said, "Okay, that's fine. I will just sit at that small table."

After he had spoken, Gerald grabbed his stool before sitting down directly in front of the small table.

At this time, someone suddenly pushed the room door open...

Chapter 65

At this time, one young man and two young women walked into the room with the floor manager from last time.

The young man and the two young women looked like students from the other department in their university.

The young man was very handsome and tall, and the two young women were dressed in short skirts and were both very beautiful.

This felt like a scene where the guy had won over two beautiful girls for himself.

Gerald could not help but feel a little uncomfortable when he witnessed this scene. Why couldn't he be liked by beautiful girls such as this? Ugh...

The tall young man greeted each of them one by one.

Just then, he suddenly saw Gerald who was sitting alone at the side.

"Hello, brother! My name is Lenny Dumont! I am the president of the student union for the management department. Let's... be friends?"

The young man quickly greeted Gerald with a very sophisticated smile on his face.

The two beautiful girls who had come with him also stared curiously at Gerald.

However, when they saw his casual clothes and the way Gerald was dressed, they started feeling a little contemptuous.

"Hahaha! Lenny, you don't have to introduce yourself to him or befriend him. His name is Gerald, and he is just a pauper in our department! He came here today just to enjoy a free meal!" As a committee member of the student union, Nathaniel naturally knew Lenny. Therefore, he quickly spoke up as he smiled.

"Oh... I thought so too! Hahaha!" Lenny hurriedly retracted his outstretched hand as he laughed faintly.

Then, he continued laughing and chatting with Victor.

Mila was really angry at this time. She truly regretted bringing Gerald here with her today, and she honestly felt like leaving with him.

However, Gerald was still smiling, and it did not look like he had suffered any damage to his self-esteem despite their constant attempts to ridicule and humiliate him. Mila could not help but feel a little curious.

“Craw... Crawford!”

The floor manager who had just entered the private room was completely stunned when she saw Gerald.

She had been dubious when one of the waiters had informed her that the rich man from last time was here again.

Of course, Gerald was not just any ordinary rich man. Otherwise, the floor manager would not have been so shocked to see him.

In fact, the lobby manager already knew of Gerald’s identity because of the general manager at Homeland Kitchen.

Gerald was the overlord of Mayberry Commercial Street. He was Mr. Crawford! The Mr. Crawford!

The reason why she had not said anything earlier was because she had been confused by Victor and Nathaniel’s words.

Wasn’t Gerald the protagonist today?

As the floor manager did not understand what was going on, she did not dare to continue respectfully greeting Gerald as she did not want to expose his identity.

“Why are you here?” The floor manager asked Gerald in a soft, yet excited manner.

“Oh, sister, didn’t you hear what they said? I’m here to enjoy a free meal!”

Gerald replied as he smiled slightly. Fortunately, someone had recognized who he was. Therefore, it would be easier for him to place an order later.

“Yes, yes, I heard it!” The female manager nodded quickly.

“Sister Jenny, did you come in person just to take our order?” Victor smiled as soon as he saw the floor manager. He felt that she was giving him so much face!

Sister Jenny did not say anything at this time, but Victor did not notice anything amiss and simply continued ordering a table full of dishes.

“Brother Victor, are you going to just order two signature dishes? Can’t you order two more signature dishes for us?” Quinn asked hopefully at this time.

Wasn’t the taste and characteristics of the signature dishes the thing that stood out the most at Homeland Kitchen?

In truth, Whitney also hoped that Victor would order an additional two signature dishes. However, those signature dishes were very expensive and she did not want Victor to spend too much money because of them.

Therefore, she hurriedly said, “Two signature dishes would be more than enough! Did you know that one of those signature dishes already costs more than a few hundred dollars each?”

“Wow!” Quinn was stunned at this time.

Even the two girls that Lenny had brought with him here today were also taken aback at this time.

The dishes at Homeland Kitchen were truly extraordinary indeed.

“Sir...what would you like to eat?” The floor manager asked Gerald cautiously.

“Hahaha. We will just give him some of our leftovers later! Why should he be ordering his own food?” Nathaniel replied as he snorted coldly.

“Exactly! What is his status anyway? He should be grateful that we are giving him our leftovers,” Quinn added as she glared at Gerald.

Victor smiled but did not say anything at all. To be honest, he felt that Gerald was not even worth a plate of potato shreds.

Thankfully, he had invited Nathaniel to come along for the dinner tonight.

Otherwise, Victor did not know how else he could humiliate and insult Gerald in front of Mila!

Chapter 66

At this time, Victor was watching the show happily.

“Forget it. Victor ordered food for all of you. If so, I will order something for myself!” Gerald replied with a wry smile on his face.

He had initially planned to slaughter Victor severely tonight, but he knew that this group of people would only ridicule and make fun of him instead.

Secondly, Gerald knew that he would definitely not be able to order any expensive dishes with Whitney and Nathaniel around. Moreover, Gerald was not that thick-skinned!

Therefore, he decided to order some food for himself instead.

“That is much better, but what can you afford to order for yourself?” Quinn replied coldly.

“Mm... please fry me a plate of spicy and sour potato shreds. I want it extra spicy. Can you also make me a bowl of hand-sliced noodles?” Gerald said as he smiled at the floor manager.

“Hahaha! What the hell? Is he trying to make a joke?”

“What? What kind of pathetic person is this? He actually ordered a plate of potato shreds and hand-sliced noodles at a place like this?”

Everyone in the private room was all stunned, and they could not help but look at Gerald in contempt as soon as they heard his words.

“I will prepare it immediately!” The floor manager did not dare to neglect Gerald’s commands.

The reason Gerald ordered these dishes for himself was simply because he did not want to hear their constant chattering and ridicule. He could have just ordered many signature dishes for himself like he did the previous time.

However, he decided to just have a simple meal today.

At this time, Mila could not help but stare at Gerald, filled with great interest and curiosity.

Gerald smiled at Mila before he said, “If you do not have enough food over there later, you can come over and try my hand-sliced noodles!”

“Okay!” Mila smiled happily when she saw that Gerald was fine.

“This brother is really incredible!” Lenny smiled helplessly as he shook his head.

“Hahaha. Lenny, don’t talk about him anymore. Let’s talk about you. What method did you use to get these two beautiful girls to come out with you today?” Victor asked as he looked at Lenny with a smile on his face.

The two girls that were with Lenny were indeed very beautiful.

Their long, fair, and slender legs were especially alluring.

“Hahaha. I did not do anything. I simply promised to bring them for a spin in a luxury sports car owned by a good brother of mine!” Lenny replied with a treacherous look on his face.

“Good brother? Luxury sports car? What kind of luxurious sports car did you use to attract these two beautiful girls to you?” Nathaniel could not help but ask out of curiosity.

Lenny lit up a cigarette before he said, “Oh! Don’t you know about the Lamborghini Reventon parked nearby our university?”

“Lamborghini?”

Everyone was shocked because they had never seen anyone driving a Lamborghini in their university.

“D*mn it! The Reventon costs about two and a half million dollars, right?” Nathaniel exclaimed in shock.

At this time, Whitney’s eyes also widened in surprise.

“Yes, that’s the one. It’s parked in the carpark not too far from our university! It belongs to one of my good brothers!” Lenny took a deep breath before he smiled faintly.

Gerald, who was sitting at the side, was also stunned at this time.

When had he ever become good buddies with this guy?

After giving it some thought, Gerald seemed to understand what was going on. Lenny must be taking advantage and making use of his Lamborghini Reventon to get girls to go out with him.

Gerald knew that something was not right when he saw the treacherous and villainous look on Lenny’s face.

“I see! So, the picture that was posted on the university forum was real! It turns out to be true!” Quinn yelled excitedly.

Then, she took out her cell phone to look for that particular picture to show everyone who was seated around the table.

“Let me see! Let me see!” Whitney also took a deep breath when she saw the picture.

All the girls quickly gathered around Quinn.

“Wow! What a beautiful and cool Lamborghini!”

The girls could not help but scream in excitement.

Even Victor was attracted to the cool and exquisite body of the sports car. The main reason he was in awe was because the car cost at least two and a half million dollars!

“Lenny, are you honestly telling us the truth? How did you meet such a wealthy and awesome person? When and how did you meet him?”

Victor asked Lenny up front because he was very jealous.

At this time, Gerald also turned around to look at Lenny.

Yes. When and how did you meet him?

Chapter 67

“We have a very close friendship, but it would not be convenient for me to reveal his identity. My good brother wants me to keep his identity a secret! Hahaha!” Lenny replied as he put his cigarette out.

At this time, he also had a faint smile on his face.

Everyone was looking at Lenny in amazement right now, and this was especially so for Whitney, who was staring at Lenny in admiration.

Quinn's eyes were also sparkling at this time. If what Lenny said was true, would she also have the opportunity to ride in that Lamborghini that everyone was so crazy about?

Even the boys were all jealous of Lenny at this time.

"Lenny, are you telling us the truth? Or are you using the same trick that you used to trick that small celebrity into dating you? Are you just bragging now?"

Victor could not believe his ears. After all, he knew all about Lenny's house and his family's financial powers. At most, Lenny could only be regarded as a very small rich second generation.

How could he possibly have gotten to know someone that powerful?

Furthermore, he knew that Lenny had a bad habit of bragging.

"How can that be possible? How could I possibly brag about the Lamborghini Reventon? You should know that it's true!" Lenny replied with a wry smile on his face.

"Lenny, I believe you!" Whitney replied as she flashed a charming smile at Lenny.

She glanced at the picture of the luxury sports car from time to time, and she felt very excited whenever she looked at it. She would be satisfied if she could sit in that car just one time.

Whitney felt that her only chance to do so would be through this young man, Lenny!

Gerald had a bitter smile on his face.

The Lamborghini Reventon car keys were sitting quietly inside his pocket.

As a result, he had become someone else's 'good brother'.

This was not the only thing that made Gerald feel really uncomfortable.

Truthfully, Gerald felt even more uncomfortable because of the two beautiful girls who were going out with Lenny because they thought that he knew the owner of the sports car.

Would he actually be able to pick up girls if he drove the sports car himself?

Would Whitney also fall for it then?

At this time, Gerald could not help but wonder if he had been too low-key all this while. He was really losing out!

Smack!

Gerald suddenly felt something hit his face.

When Gerald raised his head to look up, he realized that Whitney had thrown a small paper ball at his face.

"Hey! Why are you eavesdropping on our conversation? Why? Are you dreaming of sitting in a Lamborghini? Please stop dreaming. Why don't you become a transgender instead..." Whitney sneered as she glared at Gerald.

"Why would anyone care about a poor transgender?" Nathaniel quickly chimed in at this time.

Gerald could only look at them helplessly as he listened to their insults once again.

Fortunately, the waiter had already started serving up the dishes at this time.

Even Gerald's hand-sliced noodles and stir-fried potato shreds were here already.

"Wow! The food looks so delicious and exquisite!"

"Of course, what else would be a better combination than good food and red wine! I will order a bottle of red wine that costs three hundred dollars for everyone to try today!" Victor quickly announced as he smiled.

Everyone was looking at Victor with admiration on their faces.

Meanwhile, they all ignored Gerald who was sitting by himself at the other table in the corner.

Gerald was busy eating his hand-sliced noodles and stir-fried potato shreds as he was very hungry.

Just then, the door was suddenly pushed open again, revealing a row of waiters who were standing outside the room.

After that, they walked in with a series of high-end signature dishes from Homeland Kitchen.

All of these dishes had been changed into a smaller dish because they could not possibly fit so many dishes on Gerald's small table.

"This... all of our dishes have already arrived. Are all of these your signature dishes?"

Victor was startled when he saw the waiters walking in with all the signature dishes.

“Hello, sir. Sorry, but these dishes are not for you. These dishes are for Mr. Crawford!”

Gerald looked at the waiter in surprise because he had not ordered those dishes either.

“Wait a minute. Just let me make things clear first. I am only going to settle the bill for the food that I ordered for my table. If Gerald ordered these dishes, I want to clarify that it has nothing to do with us at all!”

Victor was completely taken aback. If he had to foot the bill for all these signature dishes, he would definitely not have enough money to pay for the dinner tonight.

That was also the reason why he had only ordered two signature dishes.

“Hahaha. Please do not get me wrong. We are giving Mr. Crawford these dishes for free because of the food that he ordered!” After saying that, the waiter clapped her hands together.

The waiters outside walked into the room one after the other as they placed the signature dishes on Gerald’s table. Some of the girls had never even seen some of those dishes before in their life.

At this time, the waiters placed twelve different signature dishes on Gerald’s table.

These dishes would easily cost at least three to four thousand dollars!

“This... this... he simply ordered stir-fried potato shreds and you are giving him so many signature dishes for free?!” Whitney asked as she stood up in shock, utterly stunned.

She too wanted to taste all of the signature dishes at Homeland Kitchen, but it would only be possible for them to order two of the signature dishes at most each time they came here. Therefore, she would probably have to come here ten to twenty times before she could finally try all of the signature dishes.

However, who would have the capital or ability to treat her to dinner at Homeland Kitchen ten or twenty times?! These signature dishes were all very expensive!

Yet, Gerald simply ordered a bowl of hand-sliced noodles and stir-fried potato shreds and they had given him twelve signature dishes for free?!

All of these were top-notch signature dishes!

At this time, Whitney, Quinn, and everyone else was all stunned as they stared incredulously at Gerald.

Honestly, Gerald had not expected the floor manager to go through all that trouble.

Moreover, he would never be able to finish all of these signature dishes by himself.

Therefore, Gerald casually looked over at Mila before he asked, "Mila, do you want to come here and eat with me instead?"

Mila did not feel awkward or embarrassed at all.

At the same time, Mila also felt that Gerald was truly shrouded in mystery.

Why was everyone treating him with so much respect? Why did they give him so much face?

Mila simply smiled before she nodded and went over to Gerald's table, sitting directly across him.

The expression on Victor's face became very ugly when this happened.

"Ahh! Will we receive all these free signature dishes if we ordered stir-fry potato shreds as well? Is the restaurant having some sort of promotional activity?"

Quinn could barely believe her eyes. She really wanted to try those signature dishes, but at the same time, she was way too embarrassed.

Chapter 68

"Yes, yes, yes! I think the restaurant must be engaging in some special promotional activities!"

Victor also chimed in as he was very unconvinced at this time.

When a waiter walked into the room, Victor asked him directly, "By the way, can I ask you a question? Will we be given all the special signature dishes for free as long as we order a plate of stir-fry potato shreds?"

The waiter could not help but look at Victor in confusion. Then, the waiter replied in contempt, "Are you crazy? Are you seriously asking me whether you will be given all our signature dishes for free if you order a plate of stir-fry potato shreds?! There must be something wrong with your brain!"

After saying that, the waiter shook his head before turning around and leaving immediately.

Homeland Kitchen was one of the most prestigious establishments on Mayberry Commercial Street. Who gave an ordinary guest such as Victor the audacity to cause trouble for a waiter?

Victor felt as though he had been slapped right in the face.

To think that he had actually dared to ask the waiter that question.

"Gerald, can you even finish so much food all by yourself?!" Whitney could not help but ask angrily.

She was very annoyed and frustrated that Gerald was not offering them any of his delicious food at all.

"Oh. If any of you want to try some of these signature dishes, please do not hesitate to come over here!"

"You!" Whitney was utterly angry at this time. She felt as though the food she was eating was completely tasteless at this time. She really wanted to try the signature dishes on Gerald's table.

“I know!” Victor, who had been very flustered, suddenly exclaimed out loud. “Hahaha. Gerald, you must have spent a lot of money the last time you were here, right? I heard that you spent more than fifteen thousand dollars that night. I guess that is the reason why the floor manager is giving you special treatment and sending you so many signature dishes for free! Am I right?”

Victor did not dare to think of any other possibilities at all. This was the only possibility and explanation that he could accept.

“Perhaps...” Gerald replied as he smiled. Then, he continued feasting on his food.

“Alright, then. You should continue eating! I will wait and see how you are going to have the mood to keep eating later!” The expression on Victor’s face suddenly changed at this time.

After that, he stood up immediately.

Gerald had really given everyone in this room a slap across their faces because of the preferential treatment he was receiving.

Victor was especially embarrassed because he could only afford to order two signature dishes, but the restaurant had actually served Gerald twelve signature dishes all at once.

Moreover, Gerald obviously knew that Victor liked Mila, but he had actually invited Mila to eat with him in front of everyone else!

Victor was extremely annoyed!

“Victor, what do you mean?” Whitney suddenly asked at this time.

“What do I mean? Whitney, didn’t you say that Gerald won thirty thousand dollars from the lottery? Yuri and the rest of the guys have already cheated him out of more than twenty-two thousand dollars for the dinner the last time. Moreover, Gerald even spent seven thousand dollars to rent the Ferrari and the driver to drive him around for the day. That could only mean that he is left with nothing at all now!”

“The restaurant is only giving him so much face because they think that he is rich and has a high consumption and spending ability. If we tell the floor manager that this guy here is just a pauper who has nothing at all, how do you think they are going to react, then?” Victor replied coldly as he glared at Gerald.

“Hahaha. The only reason the restaurant is giving him so much face is just because they are hoping that they will be able to attract the customer to come back and patronize the shop again in the future! If they find out that Gerald will not be able to afford to come back here, they will definitely not let him off so easily!” Nathaniel could not help but sneer.

“This guy is really unbelievable. He only won thirty thousand dollars in the lottery and he actually spent everything in one go! He’s pretty remarkable!” Lenny was also laughing when he heard these words.

At the same time, the beautiful girls who were all sitting at the side shook their heads slightly as they stared at Gerald.

“Oh, no! Brother Victor, if we only tell them about this later, do you think the people at Homeland Kitchen will think that we are in cahoots with him? Do you think they will try to settle the score with us then? After all, we are all in the same room as him!” Nathaniel patted his forehead as he asked Victor anxiously.

“That’s right! I think we should go down and tell the manager about this matter immediately, lest people misunderstand us!”

“Yes, I agree!”

Victor glared at Gerald before he headed out of the room and went downstairs immediately.

Mila was also feeling a little nervous at this time. “Gerald, is what they said true? Did the floor manager really give you so many signature dishes just because you spent more than twenty-two thousand dollars here?”

Gerald smiled before he replied, "Mila, it's okay. Everything is fine. Have you eaten enough? Are you full yet? If you're full, let's go to the counter and settle the bill now. You don't have to worry about me at all!"

Mila nodded as she listened to Gerald's words. Then, she followed Gerald down the stairs.

At this time, Whitney and Victor were already talking to the floor manager.

"Just listen to me, manager. Gerald is just a pauper. He is not the wealthy or powerful man you think he is at all! He is so poor that he cannot even afford to buy a pair of new pants!" Victor said as he pointed his finger at Gerald.

"That's right! You gave this person so many free signature dishes for nothing at all! If we did not bring him here today, he would never have had enough money to come in at all!" Nathaniel chimed in immediately.

"Why don't you ask him to work here to pay off his debts? After all, it would be a complete waste to let him eat those signature dishes that are worth three to four thousand dollars for free! Do you know that he won thirty thousand dollars in the lottery and spent twenty-two thousand dollars here straightaway?! After spending the rest of his winnings, he has no more money left!" Quinn added coldly.

The floor manager simply stood quietly without saying anything at all.

By now, many people had already gathered around the ground floor because of the huge commotion.

"What is happening here?"

"It seems as though there is a pathetic trash who is pretending to be a wealthy and powerful man. However, it seems as though his cover has been blown!"

"D*mn! There are so many weird people in this world!"

Gerald simply turned a deaf ear to the conversation and discussions going on around him.

He walked down the stairs calmly and headed toward the floor manager.

Then, Gerald smiled as he asked, "Sister Jenny, how much money do I have left in my account?"

This so-called account Gerald was talking about was the money that Zack had already remitted into Gerald's account after that night.

This was because they had to calculate the money and return it to Gerald yearly anyway.

"The money that was returned to Mr. Crawford... there is still thirty thousand dollars in your account!"

"Ahh!" As soon as Sister Jenny spoke, everyone in the room could not help but gasp in shock.

"Alright, then. I will top up another forty-five thousand dollars into my account today." As he spoke, Gerald took out his bank card before swiping it on the POS system. Within a few seconds, the system displayed that the forty-five thousand dollars had already been received!

"What?"

"Godd*mn it!"

"Forty-five thousand dollars?!"

Victor's eyes widened in shock. He felt that the scene before him was simply too unreal.

Everyone else's mouths were also wide open at this time.

How could this be possible? They had initially thought that Gerald would not have any money left because he would have already spent all of the thirty thousand dollars.

Unexpectedly, Gerald had thirty thousand dollars in his account at Homeland Kitchen, and he was actually adding another forty-five thousand dollars to his account!

That was seventy-five thousand dollars!

"Gerald! How much money did you actually win in the lottery?!" Whitney could not help but exclaim out loud at this time.

She had an intuition that Gerald might have won several millions of dollars...

Chapter 69

"Alright, Mr. Crawford. We will arrange for a car to send you home right now!"

The female manager quickly spoke respectfully.

Not long after that, a BMW 7 Series that was worth at least one hundred and fifty thousand dollars rolled up, waiting for Gerald outside.

Victor and the rest of them were all dumbfounded at this time.

They had initially thought that Gerald had already spent the thirty thousand dollars he had won from the lottery. Unexpectedly, Gerald did not win a mere thirty thousand dollars.

He had won much more than that!

At the same time, everyone could tell that Gerald did not care much about the seventy-five thousand dollars at all.

In other words, Gerald's winnings were probably much more than any ordinary person could ever imagine.

"Mila, do you want to go back together with me?"

As soon as Gerald got into the car, he rolled down the car window before he smiled at Mila.

To be honest, Gerald had always had a good feeling about Mila who was not only extremely beautiful but also very kind-hearted.

It might be a little inaccurate to say that she was very kind-hearted.

However, at the very least, Mila was not like Xavia and Whitney who only loved the rich and was very crude and rude toward those who were poor.

"Okay!" Mila smiled before she got into the car.

Whitney's face turned pale immediately.

The BMW 7 Series was a fully imported car.

She was also very curious and wanted to sit in the fully imported luxury car that was worth one hundred and fifty thousand dollars! However, Gerald had already instructed the driver to leave without even taking a single glance at her.

At this time, Victor's face was already green with envy and hatred.

Meanwhile, Gerald and Mila headed back to the university.

"Gerald, can you tell me how much money you won from the lottery?"

As Gerald and Mila were both sitting at the back of the car, Mila could not help but ask Gerald curiously.

“To be honest, there is a slight misunderstanding here. I did not win any money from the lottery. I simply made that reason up!”

Even though Gerald did not want to reveal everything to Mila, he did not want to lie to her either.

“Then, what exactly is going on here?”

Mila felt that Gerald was becoming more and more mysterious by the second.

“I will tell you more about it in the future! Just wait for the time to come. After all, we will not be friends for just two or three days, right?”

“Of course, not!” Mila could also tell that Gerald was not that keen to reveal his secrets.

This was also a good thing. After all, if Gerald revealed everything to her immediately, there would be no sense of mystery left anymore. It was much better this way.

Gerald instructed the driver to take Mila back to the girl’s dormitory.

After that, he got out of the car before telling the driver to go back. Then, he started walking back to his dormitory by himself.

“Gerald!”

Suddenly, a girl jumped out in front of Gerald, and he was shocked by her sudden appearance.

When Gerald raised his head to look at the figure in front of him, he realized that it was Quinn.

“How are you back so soon?”

Gerald was rather surprised.

In his opinion, Quinn was not any different from Whitney at all. Both of them were equally despicable and they hated those who were poorer, only falling in love with the rich and wealthy boys.

Aside from these factors, Gerald had also heard many stories about Quinn in the past.

She was a very beautiful girl with big breasts, long and slim legs, and a very fair face.

She was the kind of girl who looked very sexy and attractive.

However, she was also the kind of person who liked to mess around with good people.

That was also the reason why she had been many different guys' girlfriend before.

She was also very high maintenance.

Gerald had heard rumors that Quinn had been in a relationship with Victor in the past.

Therefore, this only made Gerald dislike her even more.

“Hmph! You are really amazing. You just left in the car and did not even bother to invite me to join you at all!”

Quinn did not answer Gerald's question. Instead, she simply poked Gerald in the chest with a coquettish and spoiled expression on her face.

She had done a one hundred and eighty degree change in her attitude within such a short time frame, and Gerald could not accept it at all.

“Quinn, it’s already late. You should go back to your dormitory.” Gerald hurriedly replied as he did not want to spend a single second longer with her.

“Hmph! I can’t sleep even if I go back to the dormitory now. Why? Do you hate me that much? I know... you must be annoyed because of the way I used to treat you. Do you know why I treated you that way?” Quinn asked as she placed her hands on her waist.

“Why?”

“I know that you are a good person. However, even though you wear good clothes all the time, you have very bad taste in fashion! Just take a look at your clothes now! You’ve washed your clothes so many times that it is already so tattered and worn out! I really hate people who do not have good taste!”

Chapter 70

“I really don’t know how you got together with Xavia in the past, but I know that both of you have already broken up. Therefore, I know that you have one less girlfriend who knows how to help you dress up now!”

The meaning behind Quinn’s words was very clear.

She could not help but believe that Gerald was actually wealthy. Very, very wealthy!

If she became Gerald’s girlfriend, Quinn was certain that Gerald would definitely spend most of his money on her.

Besides, aside from his clothes and the way that he dressed, Gerald was actually very handsome.

Now that he was a rich and wealthy guy, he was certainly worthy of becoming her boyfriend!

As for whether or not she felt that she was being very shameless for trying to get together with Gerald after what she had done to him in the past...

Hah! What was the point in taking care of her own face?

“Um... girlfriend? I have not thought about it yet.”

Even if Gerald honestly wanted to look for a girlfriend, he would not want Quinn as his girlfriend!

After all, Gerald was certain that she would absolutely cheat on him!

“Well, I can’t stop myself from thinking about it. Gerald, why don’t I lose out a bit and be your girlfriend instead? Anyway, I really do not feel like going back to my dormitory tonight!”

After she spoke, Quinn fluttered her eyes as she leaned toward Gerald.

Truthfully, aside from her bad personality, Quinn was indeed a very beautiful girl.

Gerald felt slightly moved at this time. Of course, he would never take someone like Quinn to be his girlfriend. However, he would have his revenge if he just had a one-night-stand with her.

Just as he was thinking about it, Gerald’s cell phone suddenly rang.

As soon as he looked at the caller ID, he realized that it was a phone call from the head of his dormitory, Harper.

“Hello, Harper. Why are you looking for me?” Gerald calmed himself down before answering the phone call immediately.

“Gerald, hurry up and come back to the dormitory! Hurry! Something has happened to Harper!”

It was not Harper who spoke to Gerald over the phone but one of his good friends, Benjamin.

He was speaking in a very anxious tone.

Gerald was afraid that something bad had happened, and he ran in the direction of his dormitory immediately.

Meanwhile, Quinn could not help but stomp her feet in frustration. "Hmph! Gerald, you will not be able to escape from my clutches! I will make sure that you fall for me sooner or later!"

Gerald was very worried about Harper, and he ran at the speed of light. As soon as he arrived at his dormitory, he hurriedly pushed the door open.

Unexpectedly, someone opened a bottle of beer in front of him, and the beer sprayed all over Gerald's face.

Immediately afterward, his roommates burst out in laughter.

"D*mn it! What's going on here?" Gerald asked as he wiped the beer off his face.

He could see Harper, Benjamin, and the rest of his roommates gathered in the dormitory at this time.

Moreover, the table in the dormitory was filled with beer and other dishes that were still untouched. The boys were obviously waiting for Gerald.

"Gerald, it's a good day today! Our boss is finally taken!"

Benjamin quickly explained as he laughed.

Gerald could not help but sigh out loud as soon as he heard their words. They had really scared him to death. He had thought that something bad had happened to Harper.

However, Gerald was very happy for his brother when he heard that Harper was finally attached.

“So, who is my sister-in-law?”

Gerald took the bottle of beer from Benjamin’s hand before drinking a mouthful. It was so cool and refreshing!

“Hayley! We had dinner together at the cafeteria tonight, and she agreed to become my girlfriend!” Harper replied as he scratched his head, smiling like a fool.

In fact, Gerald had already guessed that Harper’s girlfriend would be Hayley. After all, during this time, even though Gerald knew that Hayley was close to Jacelyn and Alice, she was not the same kind of person as they were. She was actually a pretty nice and easy-going person.

Moreover, Gerald knew that Harper really liked Hayley. If Hayley felt the same way about him, Gerald truly felt very happy for his friend even though he was a little envious.

“Come on, let’s drink and cheer for the boss!”

“Cheers!”

The six brothers were filled with laughter as they drank and chatted together.

At this time, Harper suddenly received a video call from Hayley.

“Harper, what are you doing now?” Hayley’s gentle voice sounded from over the other end of the line.

“I am drinking with my brothers in the dormitory...”

“Hahaha! Harper, brother-in-law, when will you bring us out for drinks?”

At this time, Jacelyn and the rest of the girls had already gathered around Hayley as she was talking to Harper through the video call.

“Okay! However, you have to wait until all my brothers in the dormitory are in a relationship too! That is why you have to figure it out for me!” Harper smiled as he pointed his camera toward Gerald, Benjamin, and the rest of the boys.

At this time, Gerald saw Alice sitting next to Hayley. She had clearly just taken a shower as her hair was wet and she was about to remove her makeup.

At the same time, Alice unmistakably saw Gerald as well...

Chapter 71

At the female dormitory.

Alice looked at Gerald who had just appeared in the video call and suddenly felt her heart twitching and tightening.

Even the originally cool expression on her face became a little nervous at this time.

A lot of things had already happened between Alice and Gerald during this recent period.

Alice had never taken Gerald to heart before until the scene that night during the opening ceremony at Quinton’s Grand Marshall Restaurant.

That was when she had begun suspecting that Gerald was in fact the wealthy and powerful Mr. Crawford that everyone was talking about.

Even so, Alice just could not live with it.

She could not believe that the same person she had been so bored and disgusted with was actually a rich second generation who had an absolutely prominent identity!

That would be a very hard slap across her face.

However, Gerald seemed to be acting as though he had absolutely nothing to do with that magnate, Mr. Crawford at all!

In short, Alice was now very confused because of Gerald.

Whenever she closed her eyes, all she could see was Gerald.

The person who helped her was probably Gerald, but she had mistakenly thought that it was Quinton. She had even agreed to become Quinton's girlfriend because of that mistake. Now that the truth was out in the open, should she agree to become Gerald's girlfriend instead?

"Hey, Gerald! Why didn't you say hello to us?"

Hayley quickly noticed that something was wrong when she saw the look on Alice's face. Therefore, she hurriedly smiled and changed the topic so that they could avoid any embarrassment or awkward situations.

Harper and Hayley were very cooperative, and it was as though they had a tacit understanding with one another.

Both of them were pointing their cameras toward Gerald and Alice, as though they were the protagonists for the video call tonight.

"Hello! Congratulations, Hayley! I am really glad both of you lovebirds have finally gotten together!"

Gerald quickly congratulated Hayley as he waved his hand.

However, Gerald was already too lazy to even be bothered to become friends with Alice any longer.

Gerald simply did not want to make the situation awkward, and he did not want to stiffen the atmosphere because he wanted to give Harper and Hayley face.

To Gerald, Alice's various actions could only boil down to one single word: disappointment!

"Thank you, Gerald. Actually, I was just discussing this matter with Harper tonight. Shouldn't you be looking for a girlfriend too? If there are any girls you are interested in, I can definitely match her up with you!"

After that, Hayley blinked her eyes at Gerald, as though she was trying to suggest that Gerald go after Alice instead.

"Yes, Gerald! If you were to find a girlfriend, I will have to train and help you to do so!" At this time, Jacelyn leaned directly in front of the camera as she spoke.

Gerald was a very mysterious person to this bunch of girls right now.

Moreover, Jacelyn was certain that Gerald was not a simple person!

After all, Aiden Baker would never invite any ordinary and mediocre person to sit at the same table as him and his friends!

Thus, Jacelyn was prepared to get closer to Gerald and find out the truth about him in the days to come.

"Sure. I have not thought about it, so we should just talk about it later. You girls can continue chatting with brother Harper first!" Gerald smiled before he looked away.

Then, he continued drinking with Benjamin and the rest of his roommates.

Since everyone was very happy tonight, Gerald also drank quite a lot.

Late at night.

Gerald was lying on his bed as he thought about everything that had happened over the past few days.

During this time, Gerald had encountered several girls who seriously moved his heart.

Naturally, Xavia was one of them.

Then, there was Alice.

Even though Alice despised and looked down on him, Gerald could not deny that the beautiful Alice had indeed moved his heart at first.

After that, Mila had appeared in his life.

Gerald felt as though he was living a dream.

In contrast, Mila was even more beautiful and elegant as compared to Alice.

Since Gerald was also a guy, he obviously enjoyed looking at beautiful girls.

What's more, Mila was a beautiful girl who did not look down on anyone poor, and she was not the kind of person who only befriended those who were rich.

'Should I really look for a girlfriend?'

Gerald could not help but feel a little tempted.

The next day, after finishing the first class in the morning.

“Gerald, do you have any plans after this?” Harper approached Gerald as he patted the latter on his shoulder.

“Nope, no plans!”

“Alright then, why don’t you accompany me to the gift shop? I want to buy a gift for Hayley. I need your opinion and help!”

Chapter 72

Harper smiled as he spoke to Gerald.

To be honest, Gerald was the only one in their dormitory who had been in a relationship after entering the university. Moreover, he had even gotten together with Xavia, who was a girl who could not be easily satisfied at all. Harper knew that Gerald had bought many gifts for Xavia in the past, and he had plenty of experience in this area.

Therefore, he decided to invite Gerald to go to the gift shop with him.

Of course, Gerald agreed without any hesitation at all.

He was already interested as soon as Harper mentioned the gift shop.

Last night, Gerald had already made up his mind. No matter whether he would succeed or not, he had decided to try and go after Mila.

Of course, he had to buy a gift if he wanted to go after a girl.

Gerald and Harper went to a mid-range gift shop that was located in front of the university.

Although it was not all luxury products, there were also some high-end products that cost at least three to four thousand dollars each.

There were all sorts of clothing, shoes, bags, and many other things in the gift shop.

This could be regarded as a middle-class consumption shop!

Since Harper came from an ordinary family, his willingness to buy a gift from this gift shop showed his sincerity for Hayley.

The two young men continued looking around the gift shop for a short while.

After that, they finally came to the section displaying high-end women's clothing.

At this time, Gerald was looking around to see if there was anything that would be suitable for Mila.

Bang!

As Gerald was walking pass the fitting room, the fitting room door was violently pushed open, and the door hit Gerald directly.

After that, he heard a soft and charming voice say, "If I say no, it will not happen no matter what you say. Even if it is going to happen, it will not be happening here! You can buy me this dress first!"

It was a female who was speaking very coquettishly at this time.

"Ahh, I've already bought you two dresses today. The clothes here are very expensive!"

There was actually a young man and woman stuffed inside the small fitting room at this time. After listening to the conversation between both of them, anyone could guess what the boy had been trying to do earlier.

Many people in the gift shop were looking in their direction.

“No, no, no! I want this dress. The two dresses earlier only cost around four thousand dollars! Didn’t you say that you would buy it for me? Hmph! Didn’t you say that you have lots of money now?” The girl exclaimed in dissatisfaction.

After that, she stomped out of the fitting room.

When she saw a young man stupidly blocking her way, she pushed him angrily as she said, “Get out of my...!!!”

The girl was stunned and could not even finish her sentence as the boy standing in front of her was none other than Gerald.

Gerald was a little confused at the moment and felt as though his head was buzzing because he had been knocked on his head earlier. At this time, the girl standing in front of him was not anyone else but Xavia!

“D*mn it! I must have really bad luck. Gerald, I never expected to see you here!” Xavia said as she glared at Gerald coldly.

Then, she ran her fingers through her hair to smoothen out her dazzling long hair. At the same time, Yuri also stepped out of the fitting room.

As soon as he came out, he stared at Gerald mockingly.

“What are you looking at, pauper? Why is your face so red? Are you feeling uncomfortable because you heard that I almost had sex with someone else? Are you feeling particularly jealous right now? Are you jealous that my new boyfriend, Yuri, is so rich compared to you? Gerald, you know that you are nothing

more than a fool who won the lottery but got so easily carried away just because of it, right?" Xavia insulted Gerald as she looked at him with a triumphant expression on her face.

She could vividly remember the last time something had almost happened between Yuri and herself in the grove.

At that time, she had just broken up with Gerald, but Gerald had unexpectedly caught both of them in the act.

When that happened, Xavia had simply told Gerald that she wanted to break up with him because she wanted some quiet time to herself.

That was the reason why she had felt particularly embarrassed and awkward when Gerald had caught her in the act.

However, Xavia had a different sense of pride and excitement in her heart today.

She enjoyed seeing the uncomfortable look on Gerald's face. She enjoyed taunting him because he could only look at her but never get her for himself. Xavia felt that this kind of feeling was really very refreshing!

Gerald was very disappointed with Xavia, and he really could not accept seeing Xavia act this way.

After listening to Xavia's words from earlier, it was clear that Yuri had not succeeded in getting his way with Xavia yet.

However, Gerald could not help but feel a little angry when he thought about Yuri pressing against Xavia and feeling her up in the fitting room.

"Xavia, even though we have already broken up, I really hope that you can have some self-respect and that you will take good care of yourself!" Gerald replied lightly.

“Hahaha. Who gave you the right to control me? I can sleep with anyone I want! Gerald, do you dare to say that you have never thought of sleeping with me? Are you feeling jealous now? Hahaha...” Xavia smiled triumphantly before she said, “Gerald, let me tell you something. Girls are very realistic. They will get together and choose to be with anyone who can give her good things. Yuri did not only give me a brand new cell phone, but he also bought me these dresses that cost a few thousand dollars. What about you, Gerald? What have you ever bought for me? You finally got a universal global supreme shopper card, but you actually spent all that money on Naomi instead! You deserve to be in this miserable state!”

Chapter 73

Xavia was particularly aggrieved because of the incident from last time.

This was especially because Gerald had bought an expensive bag for another girl. This made Xavia and Yuri feel positively embarrassed!

That was why Xavia pointed her finger at Gerald as she cursed at him, simply wanting to stimulate and humiliate him.

“Hello, fellow students. This is a public place, so please do not make so much noise here!” Just then, a salesgirl walked over as she smiled politely at Xavia.

This was because Xavia was speaking so loudly that it was interrupting other customers who were shopping in the gift shop at the time.

“What do you mean? Are you trying to chase me out of your shop? Can’t you open your eyes and see how many things I’ve bought in your gift shop today? He is the one you should be driving away!”

Xavia then reluctantly continued, “Ask your manager to come over here! Are you going to drive away your most distinguished customers who can afford to buy the clothes in this shop, or are you going to let these people who have no money at all simply hang around in your gift shop?”

The salesgirl was terrified at this moment. After calling for her manager, the salesgirl felt that this girl was not that easy to deal with, and she was surely going to lose her job at this point.

The salesgirl was placed in a very difficult position.

On the other hand, Yuri was simply observing the scene and enjoying the show with a smile on his face.

He felt that he had a lot of face, especially since so many people were staring at them at this time.

Harper had initially picked a dress that was worth a few hundred dollars, but when he heard Xavia ridiculing Gerald, he decided to put down the dress before pulling Gerald aside and saying, "Gerald, let's go and shop somewhere else instead!"

In truth, he had already decided to buy that dress for Hayley. However, he knew that if he went to the counter to pay for the dress, Xavia would not mock him, but she would definitely continue mocking and insulting Gerald. Harper did not want to make things difficult for Gerald.

After all, the only reason why Gerald was at the gift shop was because of him.

"Leave?" Gerald asked as he smiled faintly.

"Why should we leave when we are also going to buy some clothes here?" Gerald continued speaking as he glanced at Xavia and Yuri.

Gerald had always felt that Yuri was acting a little strange. During this time, Gerald had heard stories and rumors about Yuri being more generous than ever. This meant that he had gotten a lot richer than he was before.

Still, even if his family was wealthy, it was not normal for him to be spending money so nonchalantly.

Furthermore, he was even spending thousands of dollars just to buy some clothes for Xavia right now. It was a huge increase in his standards.

Gerald could not understand why his self-esteem and pride would always be aroused and challenged whenever he ran into his ex-girlfriend, Xavia.

Perhaps it was because Gerald had really loved Xavia deeply in the past, and he was also truly hurt by her actions and words.

At this time, Gerald turned around and looked at the salesgirl before saying, "Please take out some of the most expensive clothes in your gift shop so that we can choose from that selection instead!"

"Huh?" The salesgirl was taken aback for a moment, but since the customer had already said so, she could only do as he asked.

"Hahaha. Gerald, can you even afford to buy any clothes from this shop? You must have spent every single cent from the thirty thousand dollars that you won from the lottery. What are you even going to buy here?" Yuri sneered.

"Yes, don't make a fool out of yourself!" Xavia chimed in as soon as she heard Yuri insulting Gerald.

In her heart, Xavia was wondering how Gerald could possibly compare himself to her. How could he possibly compete with her?!

Gerald shook his head wryly.

Could he afford it? If he really wanted to, he could buy up all of the clothing in this shop!

Xavia, oh Xavia. If she had not broken up with him, Gerald would definitely be willing to buy her anything that she wanted in this world!

Just then, the salesgirl came over with a few pieces of precious and expensive clothing in her hand.

Xavia was stunned when she saw the price tag on the clothes. The most expensive piece amongst these dresses was already worth more than twelve thousand dollars!

Oh, my God!

The salesgirl had listened to Gerald's demand and brought out all the most expensive clothing that she could find in the gift shop.

In fact, the salesgirl only did so after careful consideration.

Judging by Gerald's clothing and dressing, she knew that he obviously could not afford to buy any of the clothes in their shop.

However, since there were so many people who had gathered to watch the show, she felt that it would be the best time for her to take out some of these clothes and take advantage of the situation to advertise their products at the same time.

These five pieces of clothing were all one of a kind, and they could easily add up to a total price of more than thirty thousand dollars!

At this time, Xavia could not help but feel excited as she looked at the dresses in the salesgirl's hands.

She quickly turned around as she looked eagerly at Yuri.

Yuri could feel his cheeks burning up. Out of those five dresses, the cheapest one already cost ten thousand dollars!

It was simply too expensive!

"Help me pick one! Brother Harper, you should pick one too. I will buy it for you as a gift!"

Chapter 74

Gerald smiled as he spoke.

Harper was initially very reluctant to accept Gerald's offer. After all, the clothes were too expensive. He did not want Gerald to spend too much money at this shop today.

Harper also assumed that Gerald had probably spent most of the money he had won from the lottery.

In the end, when Harper saw the affirmative look on Gerald's face, he knew that Gerald was not joking at this time.

Therefore, he simply nodded in response.

In the blink of an eye, Gerald and Harper had already chosen the two most expensive dresses amongst the five pieces of clothing.

"Huh, can you even afford to buy it?!" Xavia was not convinced at all.

After that, Xavia looked at Yuri before she said, "Brother Yuri, I want to buy one too!"

"This pauper can never afford to buy those clothes! He is just being very shameless right now! Xavia, I do not have any more extra money to spend this month!" Yuri suddenly felt very anxious when he saw that he was about to finish spending all the money that he had gotten.

Therefore, he tried persuading and coaxing Xavia at this time.

The salesgirl obviously did not expect Gerald to buy anything at all. After making his selection, Gerald took out his bank card to pay for the clothing.

Two pieces of clothing were already tens of thousands of dollars! Moreover, Gerald even chose the most expensive ones!

"D*mn it! Is he really going to buy those clothes?"

"I thought this was just a drama between the ex-boyfriend who ran into the ex-girlfriend with the new boyfriend! That is why they have a grudge between them. Unexpectedly, he is going to spend tens of thousands of dollars here today. Can this kid truly afford to buy these clothes?"

“Hahaha! It seems as though the new boyfriend is lagging behind right now. Everything depends on whether this ex-boyfriend can actually afford to pay for this clothing.”

The crowd of people watched in excitement as they fixed their eyes on Yuri and Gerald.

Yuri was about to lose face again. However, he maintained his calm and composure.

He did not intend to leave at all. He wanted to stay back and watch the show. He wanted to see how Gerald would embarrass himself today.

It was tens of thousands of dollars... If Gerald could take out that sum of money, Yuri would be more than willing to eat shit!

“Sir, have you seriously thought this through? Are you really going to buy these two pieces of clothing?” The salesgirl asked Gerald once more as she held the POS machine in her hand.

“Yes, just these two,” Gerald replied.

After saying that, he swiped his bank card on the POS machine.

Everyone stared intensely at the machine until they heard the sound of the machine beeping.

The salesgirl was surprised at first, but when she heard the beeping sound, she was instantly disappointed.

“Um! Sir, it seems as though you do not have enough money on your card!”

The salesgirl finally understood the situation. This young man was simply trying to act tough and prove himself.

In truth, the salesgirl had not expected Gerald to be able to afford to buy any of those expensive clothing that she had shown him.

Gerald had even said so confidently that he would buy the two most expensive dresses. As a result, he did not even have enough money to pay for the items.

Well, what was she thinking? Just one look at this person's dressing and clothing and she would have already known that he did not have any money at all. So, why was she wasting her time on him?

"Hahaha!"

Xavia could not stop herself from laughing out loud at this time. "Gerald, you must be dreaming! Let me tell you something. In the past, I only despised you and broke up with you because you were poor. However, now that I am finally getting to know you better and have seen your true colors, I realize that you are truly a hypocritical and shameless person! I certainly made a wise choice by breaking up with you!"

Yuri also smiled bitterly as he shook his head.

"This brother is really amazing!"

"I actually thought that he might be a wealthy young man!"

Many of the girls who were present at the scene covered their mouths as they laughed and stared at Gerald as though he was a fool.

Harper's face was also flushed red at this time.

Gerald could only scratch his head helplessly.

He suddenly remembered that the minimum transaction limit for his bank card was thirty thousand dollars.

Moreover, he knew that he had about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars left in his black gold card, and the minimum consumption amount was forty-five thousand dollars.

Unfortunately, he completely forgot the fact that his sister had also tampered with his bank card.

Gerald had really wanted to act cool in front of Xavia today to her to know that he was not a good-for-nothing!

Unexpectedly, he had made a fool out of himself. This was embarrassing indeed...

Just then, a clear and beautiful voice suddenly rang out.

“He can definitely afford it. There is probably nothing in our shop that Mr. Crawford cannot afford to buy.”

Chapter 75

At that moment, a sweet voice suddenly sounded in the shop.

This mid-range gift shop was somewhat similar to a big mall, and this clothing shop was just one of the shops inside.

At this time, a young and beautiful girl started walking toward them.

The salesgirls quickly bowed as soon as they saw her arriving at the shop.

“Oh my God. She is so beautiful!”

“She is so beautiful that she looks like an immortal goddess! She is simply too beautiful.”

“Is she the owner of this shop? Why is everyone being so polite and respectful toward her?”

Many boys at the scene were all staring foolishly at her at this time.

Gerald turned around to look at the girl as he raised his brows slightly in surprise. "Elena?"

Truthfully, Gerald had a very deep impression of her. This violent and aggressive woman had almost disfigured him during their last meeting. However, in the end, he had punished her by hitting her bottom.

Gerald particularly remembered her beautiful legs.

Long, fair, and slender.

She was simply too gorgeous!

Elena had already reached the group of people by this time.

In actual fact, she had already been there for quite a while. As soon as she arrived at the shop, she saw Gerald being surrounded and attacked by a group of people.

Elena would never forget Gerald's face.

After all, this young man was the first person who had ever humiliated her!

Moreover, Elena's father had already ordered and reminded her many times that she had to please Gerald and make sure he was satisfied with their family's performance.

"Hello, Mr. Crawford! It seems as though we meet again!" Elena greeted Gerald as she bowed slightly.

Everyone was stunned.

“Oh my God. Did that beautiful girl just refer to this young man as Mr. Crawford? What is going on here?!”

“This young man who was bragging actually knows this goddess?”

Even Xavia was stunned at this time.

This girl was definitely more than a hundred times better compared to her, and Xavia felt very uncomfortable at the thought of Gerald being so close to another girl.

What was even worse was that this girl was a hundred times more beautiful and gorgeous compared to her!

To be honest, Xavia would already feel uncomfortable if even an ugly girl favored Gerald.

“What did you just call him? Did you recognize the wrong person? He is not any wealthy gentleman! Why are you calling him Mr. Crawford when he is just a pauper?” Xavia asked Elena as she pointed a finger at Gerald.

Yuri was even more jealous.

This girl was perfect. She was so on point, so why was she being so respectful and polite toward Gerald?

It would be awesome if she treated him in the same manner.

“Yes, Miss Elena. It seems as though we meet again. I originally intended to buy two dresses from this shop. Unexpectedly, my transaction cannot go through because I did not meet the minimum consumption limit of thirty thousand dollars!” Gerald replied as he raised his hands helplessly.

“What? This kid is saying that his card has a minimum consumption limit of thirty thousand dollars?!”

If it weren't because of the presence of the goddess who was respected by all the salesgirls in the shop, no one would have believed Gerald's words at all!

Xavia's eyes widened in shock as she said, "Gerald, what nonsense are you talking about?! You only won thirty thousand dollars in the lottery! How could you possibly have another thirty thousand dollars? You are just lying!"

"Who told you that I only won thirty thousand dollars?" Gerald replied with a wry smile on his face.

Elena maintained a smile on her face. However, when she saw that Gerald was clearly buying some dresses for a girl, Elena could feel some bitterness in her heart.

That's right. Elena's standards for men were very high indeed. Moreover, her requirements for the man's status and identity were even higher.

However, when a person was glorious to a certain level, all of his shortcomings would automatically be covered up.

No one else knew, but Elena knew it very well.

She knew that Gerald was the heir to an ancient and powerful family who owned more than half of the wealth in this world!

Therefore, it was simply impossible to say that Elena did not feel anything for Gerald at all.

"Mr. Crawford, since you like it, why don't I give you these clothes instead?" Elena replied indifferently as she took a deep breath.

After all, Elena knew that these tens of thousands of dollars were not even worth a penny to Gerald.

“Alright, then. It is not that convenient for me to withdraw any money today. I will take these clothes with me first, and I will return the money to you later!”

By this time, more and more people had already gathered around, and Gerald did not want to be polite and beat around the bush any longer.

After all, he did not like to be stared at by so many watchful eyes.

Chapter 76

"Alright then, Mr. Crawford. I will walk you down..."

After Elena was done speaking, she grabbed hold of Gerald's arm gently as both of them walked down the stairs together much to the horror of the crowd of people.

“This, this, this...” Xavia was very anxious at this time.

What had that woman called him?

Mr. Crawford?

Moreover, Gerald had even said that his minimum consumption limit was at least thirty thousand dollars! This proved that Gerald still had a lot of money!

She was certain about that.

Gerald had more than thirty thousand dollars. He definitely had more money than that!

Those two dresses alone cost more than fifteen thousand dollars!

Xavia suddenly felt that Gerald was truly shrouded in mystery now.

It was even more awkward and embarrassing for Yuri to stand here at this time, and he wanted to pull Xavia away.

“Sir, we have already wrapped up the two pieces of clothing you wanted earlier. The final bill is five thousand and three hundred dollars. Would you like to pay using your bank card or cash?”

The salesgirl standing in front of Yuri quickly asked at this time.

In the current situation, it would not be plausible for Yuri not to buy the clothes today.

To be honest, the only reason Yuri was willing to spend such a large sum of money today was simply because he wanted to impress Xavia. He originally thought that he would be able to open a room and make love to Xavia today if he could coax and impress her enough.

However, the atmosphere did not seem right anymore!

Even if he bought these two dresses worth more than five thousand dollars for Xavia, he would still be losing to Gerald.

Yuri had no choice but to buy those dresses since there were so many people surrounding them at this point.

Yuri gritted his teeth and paid the five thousand and three hundred dollars before he left with Xavia.

At the gift shop downstairs.

Harper had already left, and he was waiting for Gerald at the entrance of the university.

At this time, Elena was still holding onto Gerald’s arm as they walked along the roadside.

“Mr. Crawford, can I ask whether you picked these dresses out for your girlfriend? Can I know who the lucky girl is?” Elena asked Gerald the question with a little jealousy in her heart.

In truth, Elena had been observing Gerald ever since the opening ceremony of the Grand Marshall Restaurant.

She knew that Gerald was not an ordinary rich second generation. He was different. He was calm, simple, and he was also very sincere toward others.

If Gerald truly started a relationship and made someone his girlfriend, he would surely stick with the same girl. He would not be like the other rich second generations who would change their girlfriends as they pleased.

If this girl got married to Gerald, she would become the future wife to the heir of the Crawford family in the future!

“No, I am planning to give this to my friend. She’s not my girlfriend!” Gerald smiled as he replied. He felt very grateful because Elena had really helped him out and saved him a lot of face today.

At the same time, Gerald was also very curious and confused. “Elena, it seems as though that gift shop belongs to the Larson family?”

Elena was very pleased to hear that Gerald did not have a girlfriend.

Therefore, she smiled as she replied, “Yes, the Larson family owns many gift shops like this near all the universities around the entire South Province. This is just one of the many gift shops that we own! I had nothing to do today, so I decided to come and walk around while I take a look at this shop!”

Elena did not reveal that the only reason she had come here was because she knew that Gerald was studying at this university. Moreover, she came here to walk around because she was secretly hoping to run into Gerald!

At this time, Gerald quickly thanked Elena as he turned around to leave.

After all, it was too eye-catching for him to be hanging out and walking with such a beautiful girl.

“Wait a minute, Mr. Crawford!” Elena yelled as she tried to stop Gerald from leaving. “There will be a carnival sorority party next week. Aiden and the rest of the group will also be going together with me. Mr. Crawford, will you be free, then? Do you want to come out, have some fun, and hang out with us?”

Elena bit her lower lip gently as she invited Gerald to join them for an outing. She knew that there was an eighty percent probability that he would turn down her invitation. After all, what was Gerald’s status?

However, to her surprise, Gerald nodded before he said, “Okay, then! I will be free next week, so we can all hang out together then!”

After all, Elena had really helped him a lot today.

What was even more important was that Gerald genuinely wanted to change himself.

He did not want to be so shy, humble, or conscientious anymore. The only way he could change himself was if he could get to know more people!

“Alright, it’s settled then!” Elena replied as she waved excitedly at Gerald.

Gerald and Harper then headed back to the dormitory.

Harper naturally went to look for his girlfriend as soon as they got back.

Gerald also wanted to go after Mila, but he did not know how to do so.

After all, he had had very few interactions with Mila. He was afraid that she would dislike him if he acted too rashly.

Just as Gerald was thinking about it, he suddenly received a phone call.

Gerald was a little happy and excited when he saw the name on the caller ID.

It was Mila.

“Gerald, are you busy now? If you’re not busy, do you want to come and practice Subject Two with me?”

“No, I’m not busy,” Gerald replied as he smiled.

“Okay, then! I’m already at the venue for Subject Two. Come here! I will introduce a friend to you when you get here!”

Chapter 77

Gerald hung up the phone. Instead of going back to the dormitory, he went straight to the driving school.

In his hands, he held the new dress he had bought for Mila.

The dress was carefully packaged in a luxurious box.

Gerald was planning to give it to Mila when he got the chance.

It would be easy for him to tackle girls like Xavia and Quinn who always told their friends that they liked receiving gifts.

However, when it came to Mila, Gerald did not think it was a good idea to do so.

It might even be counterproductive.

Either way, Gerald was curious about who Mila wanted to introduce to him.

But as Gerald stood in front of the driving school, he got nervous when he saw the scene before him.

Mila was right there, sitting on a long bench just outside the driving school, facing away from Gerald.

The thing that made Gerald nervous was the man sitting closely beside Mila.

Moreover, Mila was holding the man’s arm, and they looked rather intimate.

They were chatting happily while leaning against each other.

Dang!

Gerald felt as if his head had exploded.

It was too drastic, too sudden for him.

His whole mind was about to be shaken!

Did Mila get a boyfriend already?!

Gerald felt discouraged.

He had finally gathered his courage to pursue a girl that he liked, and she was indeed a very kind girl.

Even on his way there, Gerald's mind had been running wild. He was imagining how Mila would react when he gave her the gift. Would she be surprised? Or would she turn him down politely after knowing his feelings toward her?

'What should I do if I am rejected?'

Nevertheless, Gerald was eighty percent sure that Mila would accept his gift.

Still, Gerald had never expected to see what was before his eyes right now.

"Hey! Gerald, we're here!"

Just as Gerald was standing there blankly, Mila waved at him.

"Why didn't you make a sound when you are here already, Gerald? Why are you just standing there?" Mila was still holding the man's arm when talking to Gerald as he walked toward them.

"It's... nothing!" Gerald looked awkward.

Looking at the man beside Mila, he could guess that he was about their age, and he looked rather handsome and smart with a pale complexion.

When standing beside the man, Gerald felt intimidated as his outfit was rather shabby.

It was only normal for a pretty girl like Mila to have pursuers.

"Gerald, let me introduce you. This is my cousin, Kyle Smith. Kyle, this is Gerald that I have been telling you about."

Mila walked toward Gerald, hand-in-hand with Kyle.

Gerald was startled once more.

'Whoa, he is Mila's cousin?'

Gerald's heart felt light again as if he had been resurrected from death.

"Ooh, he's the one you have been telling me about. I heard that you were very lucky to hit a jackpot, Gerald!" Kyle Smith smiled.

However, his smile still could not hide the sinister look in his eyes.

Let's think about it.

He had come to discuss some matters with his cousin. Then, his cousin had said that she wanted to introduce a good friend to him.

She had told him that her friend was a good man and he had won a jackpot recently.

Thus, Kyle had thought that it was not a bad idea to meet a new rich friend.

But unexpectedly, Gerald had come to meet him in such a shabby outfit. He'd had enough.

Ugh, was he a hillbilly?!

He did not look rich at all!

Kyle was rather disappointed.

"I'm Gerald."

Gerald nodded to him politely and stuck out his hand for a handshake.

"Alright, sister. I've met your friend. I need to go back to the university now. It's Grandmother's birthday next month, I guess we have decided on what present to give her already. So, goodbye!"

Kyle ignored Gerald altogether, putting his hands into his pockets and leaving swiftly after talking to Mila.

He had come here today mainly to discuss the present they were preparing for their grandmother on her birthday.

"Kyle, you brat!" Seeing her close cousin being so rude to Gerald, Mila became irritated.

"I'm so sorry for my cousin's attitude, Gerald. I will give him a good scolding when I get back!" Mila said apologetically.

Chapter 78

Gerald withdrew his hand and said, "It's alright!"

To be honest, although Gerald was a little annoyed when he had been belittled by Kyle Smith, there was nothing he could do about it.

Why?

Because Gerald felt as though the whole world had stopped when he mistook him as Mila's boyfriend.

And when he knew that he wasn't, the whirlwind of emotions had made him unable to get angry with him anymore.

"Oh right, Gerald!"

Mila's beautiful sparkling eyes looked at Gerald with concern. "You looked pale just now. What's wrong?"

Although Mila had been busy introducing her cousin to Gerald, she was still observant enough to sense the changes in his mood.

“Nothing, really. It’s just that I thought he was your boyfriend!” Gerald replied with a wry smile.

“Pfft! What?! You thought my cousin was my boyfriend? Haha!” Mila laughed out loud.

“How is that even possible! Actually, I have never gotten into any romantic relationships. Maybe I have high standards when it comes to choosing a boyfriend.”

Mila sat down, and her remark triggered Gerald’s interest.

“What standards do you have for your boyfriend?” Gerald asked tentatively.

“The first thing I want my boyfriend to have is poise. Whether he is rich or poor, he must have a good poise! And the second thing is that he must not look ugly at the very least. Thirdly, he should have a kind heart and is loyal to his partner. Fourthly...”

“There’s still a fourth standard?!”

Gerald was getting a headache.

He could barely pass half of the first three.

He did not look ugly, and he perceived himself as a kind man.

As for his poise, Gerald admitted that even he himself thought that he was quite a hillbilly.

Although it was undeniable that he was a second-generation rich, he did not show any confidence of being one whatsoever.

This was his biggest flaw!

It looked as though he could not keep a low profile any longer!

Gerald decided that in his heart.

Meanwhile, Gerald had planned to give her the gift, but he changed his mind in the end.

Although Mila had told him about her dream man casually, that was still what she wanted.

Since Gerald had not fulfilled all the criteria, he bet it would not be easy for him to pursue her.

It would be a better idea for them to be friends first. There was no need to rush.

So, over the next few days, while they were attending their driving lessons, Gerald did not show any intention of him wanting to pursue Mila, and they simply got along as friends.

In fact, they got along pretty well and Mila had started to open up to Gerald, sharing all her thoughts.

Gerald was even getting suspicious of the action Mila had taken in telling him about the qualities her dream man should have. Did she tell him on purpose to stop him from pursuing her? Was she hinting that they should just remain good friends?

Was she trying to turn him down without hurting his feelings?

It was until that day when they were supposed to take the driving test together that it happened...

They had agreed to go back to the university together after the test.

However, after Gerald had finished his test, he could not see Mila anywhere.

Gerald tried to call her, but her phone was switched off!

They had two chances to pass the test. Even if Mila had to take the test twice, she should not have taken so long.

Right then, Gerald saw a man who was in the same group as Mila walking out of the driving school looking dejected.

Gerald approached him right away.

“Oh! That beauty, she did not take the test. It seems that when it was about to be her turn, she received a call and left in a hurry.”

Mila was a beautiful lady. People would take notice of her wherever she went.

Gerald did not find it strange that this man would take notice of her.

But one thing that bothered Gerald was what happened to Mila. Why did she leave in such a hurry without even informing him? And she had even switched off her phone.

Did something bad happen to her?

After much consideration, Gerald decided to make a phone call to Whitney.

“Why do you care so much about Mila, Gerald? Did you really think that you could pursue her once you hit the jackpot? Don’t even think about it, you worthless man!”

It was obvious that Whitney still remembered the incident in Homeland Kitchen where Gerald did not give her face.

She bombarded Gerald angrily as soon as she picked up the phone call.

“Do you know where she is? If you tell me now, I will repay you in the future. I will give you a Bienvietto dress,” said Gerald calmly.

He had not given Mila the dress he had bought from Elena’s boutique. Now, he had a chance to make good use of it.

Gerald needed to know what happened to Mila mainly because she had left without a word, and he was worried about her.

It was not because he liked her. Gerald would do the same for all he considered as friends.

“Are you serious?! Can you even afford a Bienvietto? Their clothes cost tens of thousands!” Whitney shrieked.

“Of course. I will send it to you in a moment.”

“Alright, then. Since you finally know how to deal with me, I will tell you. Sigh, I received the news about Mila’s family just now. Her family business failed, and they are now on the brink of bankruptcy. That’s why she needed to go back!”

Chapter 79

“We’re visiting her later. Tag along if you like.” Whitney hung up the call right after.

Gerald was only starting to reveal his financial capacity. Until now, Whitney had no idea how much he had in his hand.

For this very reason, she was less domineering toward Gerald now when talking to him.

However, she still looked down upon him even if he had won a two million lottery.

He was just a nouveau riche. How could he be compared out-and-out with a second-generation rich like Victor?

Gerald decided not to go with them. Besides, Victor had already said that his car was fully occupied.

Hence, Whitney just gave Gerald the address, and Gerald took a cab there after buying some fruits and gifts.

Gerald had been acquainted with Mila for almost two weeks now, and they seemed to be getting along very well. To him, she was like Naomi, one of the close female friends he had.

Not to mention, he had feelings toward her.

Therefore, he had to help her out when her family was in trouble.

The cab stopped outside the entrance of Paradise Ville.

Gerald had learned that Mila’s family was quite an influential one. Her parents ran a profitable company. They were considered a big family, with all their relatives involved in all sorts of businesses.

By the time Gerald arrived at Mila’s home, the mansion was already full of people. Apart from the elders of their family, the rest was Mila’s friends and classmates.

“Gerald, you’re here!” Mila’s eyes were teary and red. She was sitting on the sofa, talking with Whitney.

Meanwhile, Whitney’s parents were lending a helping hand to entertain Mila’s classmates.

After all, the company was on the brink of bankruptcy due to capital constraints.

No one could be happy at this moment, not even Mila.

It was even more apparent to Mila’s on what true friendships were.

When they were rich, all kinds of people had tried to get close to them. Now that they were poor, not even one person came to visit.

The mansion which had always been lively was now quiet and dead. Apart from Mila’s friends, who else would want to come?!

“Yeah!” Gerald, not knowing what to say to make Mila feel better, put down the fruits he had bought and greeted her parents.

“Why is he here?” Right then, he heard a mocking voice.

A handsome man came in hand-in-hand with a beautiful girl.

He sneered at Gerald, somewhat contemptuously, his remark clearly pinpointing Gerald.

Gerald turned around and saw Kyle, Mila’s cousin.

He was a somewhat arrogant man.

Kyle’s family also owned some businesses. Thus, it was only natural that they would help Mila’s family. They had contributed a large fund to help Mila’s family, but it was of no use, and because of this, they were also not having a very good time now.

Kyle was in a bad mood since his family was also having a hard time, but when he saw the rich friends of his cousin today, he felt a little bit relieved.

Perhaps these people could help his cousin’s family overcome the crisis they were facing and even recover the funds of his family.

Under the circumstances where he was having a bad mood, Kyle would not feel any better when seeing the pompous ass, who had just won a lottery, he met that day.

He would not have much money, and his network would not be of any use. Why had he come here?

“Kyle, he is Mila’s friend. Watch your attitude!” Mila’s mother chided.

“Aunt, do you know who Gerald is? He is a famous figure in Mayberry University. He was a pauper until just recently. After he won a lottery, he started to show off in different ways. I even heard that he sent condoms to his ex-girlfriend after being dumped by her. He is just a weirdo! Now that he is so eager to get close with Mila, I don’t dare say he doesn’t have a motive!” Kyle said scornfully.

Many of Mila’s classmates present looked at Gerald sinisterly.

“Bah! Is there really such a lowly person? Does he think he is so great after winning a lottery?”

“Absolutely! He can merely be considered an ignorant nouveau riche. Look at him. He is just a hillbilly!”

Some girls covered their mouths and laughed.

Chapter 80

“Shut up, Kyle!” Mila threw the cushion in her hands at Kyle angrily.

“Nonsense! Yes, Gerald won a lottery. But, are you jealous of him?”

Hearing Kyle’s mocking words toward Gerald, Mila felt sick. He even said that Gerald had given his ex-girlfriend condoms. That was just too disgusting. He was clearly insulting Gerald, wasn’t he?!

Mila had always thought of Gerald as her good friend.

“What do you mean, Sister? Are you saying that I’m talking nonsense?”

Kyle mocked him further as he laughed. “If you don’t believe in what I said, you can ask Victor Wright, the vice president of the student union, who is also his coursemate. Even Whitney knows about this. He really did run an errand to get his ex-girlfriend some condoms for the mere sake of ten dollars!”

Mila frowned, and the way Mila’s parents and her friends looked at him changed totally.

“He seemed to be a decent man. I didn’t expect him to be so pathetic for the sake of money!”

“Disgusting!”

They all murmured, judging him.

Gerald took a deep breath and glanced at Victor who had been keeping mum since the beginning.

Victor had known it all along, and he was most probably the person who had told Kyle about this.

Among all of them, Gerald bet he must be the one whom Victor hated the most.

Mila cast a questioning look at Gerald, and Gerald nodded. “Yes, I did.”

He had had no money then. So, was it wrong to earn some living expenses by running errands for other people?

Gerald did not think it was shameful.

That night, Danny had tricked him into sending the condoms to Xavia.

It was a fact, and he did not intend to hide it anyway.

“Gerald, you...” Mila stared at Gerald, her eyes widened in disbelief.

Honestly, Mila had never experienced poverty, but in her mindset, she thought that a person would deem his dignity as something important no matter how poor he was.

She did not expect that Gerald would do something like this.

Moreover, she had been defending Gerald all this time.

Mila was shocked now that Gerald had admitted it himself.

At the same time, Mila’s parents’ faces stiffened with dismay as soon as they heard Kyle saying that Gerald had had feelings toward their daughter.

What a mess!

Now, there was a sense of annoyance when Mila’s mother looked at Gerald.

Knock, knock!

Somebody knocked on the door. Soon, a young man appeared at the door.

Seeing this young man, Gerald’s face changed. Although it was subtle, he looked sinister.

“Quinton!”

“Yo, Quinton!”

Kyle was surprised, and so were Mila’s parents. Once they saw him, their eyes shone with hope, like a duck to water.

“Hey, wasn’t he the one who drugged his own stepmother a few days ago?”

“Yeah. He is quite a nasty man. Nevertheless, he is very wealthy. He is one of the Mayberry Commercial Street magnates! He even has a contract with Grand Marshall Restaurant!”

“Hmph! So what?! Who in this world has never done nasty things? I heard that after that incident, Quinton truly learned his lesson and changed for the better. His willingness to change is priceless.”

Many of Mila’s female friends looked at Quinton.

His unsightly past was perfectly covered by his current brilliance, and he gained much admiration from the pretty girls.

Quinton walked in with a bag in his hands. Not a single trace of shame from what happened days ago could be seen on his face.

However, when he walked past a certain person, he was taken aback and even moved a few steps back.

Looking at that person in utmost surprise, he asked as his face turned pale, “Gerald, why are you here?”

Chapter 81

“Quinton, how did you get to know each other? Look at you. You are carrying so many things! Come and sit here.”

Mila’s mother was Helen Smith, and she was the vice president of their company.

Hence, she had a wide social network.

Although Quinton had been involved in an ugly scandal days ago for his immoral actions, Mrs. Smith was well aware of the potential of his family. Besides, it was acceptable for a young man to misconduct sometimes in his life.

More importantly, the Ziegler family had expanded its business in Mayberry Commercial Street. They would rise to power soon.

If her company could receive help from the Ziegler family this time, wouldn’t it mean that their crisis would be solved?

Upon hearing Mrs. Smith’s questions, Quinton gave Gerald a dirty look and said, “Of course I know him! He is a notorious character in the university!”

Thinking of how Gerald was present during his last few embarrassing moments, Quinton’s hatred toward Gerald began to grow.

After making those icy remarks, Quinton sat down on the main seat of the sofa.

Victor had heard of Quinton Zeigler before and knew what kind of a character he was in society, and so, he smiled and nodded at the latter politely.

Whitney also did the same, hoping that Quinton would take notice of her presence.

She did not mind his nasty past as he was undeniably the son of one of the richest in Mayberry!

However, Quinton's eyes were on Mila alone.

After what had happened just recently, Quinton and Alice had broken up for good.

Luckily, Quinton's father was a businessman who had a huge network.

Coincidentally, Mila's father's company had a business relationship with theirs.

Previously, Quinton had attempted several times to ask Mila out for dinner but was rejected. So, to Quinton, Mila Smith was a cold-hearted goddess who had never acknowledged him.

However, the situation had changed. Now that Mila's family was facing a huge crisis, Quinton could reignite his plan.

He ought to act as a kind man at the very least.

"Mr. and Mrs. Smith. My father had received news about your company, so, I am here on behalf of my father to gain a better understanding of you in person. I will make a call to my father later to explain the situation to him and see if he can help out. Besides, all these friends of Mila who are here today are no commoners. We can work together to figure out a good way to help you overcome the crisis!" Quinton said with a confident smile.

"Indeed. You are absolutely right, Quinton. I truly hope those of you who have connections with influential people can help us if possible." Helen Smith started to take a liking toward Quinton.

She had decided to turn a blind eye on his nasty past. All she could hope for now was Quinton becoming her son-in-law!

Victor and the rest nodded in agreement.

"Quinton is right. Although we might not be as powerful as the Ziegler family, we can still contribute as much as we can. After all, Mila's company is just facing some capital constraints, it still retains its potential."

"Yeah. One of my mother's friends holds a high position in the bank, maybe we can get a loan from her bank!"

Everyone was working hard with what they had to help. Some helped with their own money, some used their connections to get funding.

Helen was very glad to see them all willing to help.

She was very clear about the backgrounds of her daughter's friends. Not one of them was from a mediocre family.

However, when she looked at Gerald, she felt disgusted.

Gerald was looking at his phone, swiping his finger on the screen, as if he was looking for something. How pretentious.

Since when did Mila get to know someone so low?

And it was a horrible nightmare when she realized that this man had feelings for her daughter!

“Gerald, don’t you have lectures to attend? Thank you for your concern, but you should not neglect your studies. Why don’t you go back first?”

Helen Smith had sensed Quinton’s hostility to Gerald, so, she acted quickly to send him away.

Her action surprised Gerald who was just about to call Zack.

Somehow, he could understand why she did so. She must have thought that he was the useless one and apparently, she had chosen to side with Quinton.

Gerald felt bitter.

He admitted that he had done some bad things before, but that was nothing in comparison to Quinton’s deeds. Just because he was a famous second-generation rich, his dreadful past was easily forgotten by others.

As for him, being forgiven by the other people seemed impossible. To them, he was simply disgusting!

Why did they receive different treatment from others? Well, Quinton was rich, and he was penniless.

“Duh, look at him! He’s acting as if he is calling someone for help. As if he could!”

Chapter 82

Kyle smirked.

“Huh. Is he thinking of taking out all the money he won? I bet it wouldn’t be enough.”

“It’s my first time seeing this kind of person!”

Listening to their mockery, Gerald had the urge to reveal his identity.

However, he calmed down quickly, because once he did that, he could never live the same life again. He would never be able to finish his studies peacefully, and he would be forced to leave.

This was because his father would not let him be alone in the university.

If so, his life would be disrupted completely, and Gerald did not want that to happen.

He just wanted to improve himself at his own pace, quietly. He was satisfied as long as he was not short of money.

Gerald sighed. Then, he said, “Right, I have a class later. I shall take my leave, then.”

Gerald stood up and left.

“Gerald!” Mila caught up with him.

She felt dreadful, especially when she, at one point, looked down on Gerald when he talked about his past.

She truly regretted it.

'Why didn't I think from Gerald's perspective? Who would be willing to do that if he was out of money? Besides, Gerald has treated me nicely all this while. Now that he heard that I am in trouble, he came to see me. He even brought me a gift.'

Mila thought that she had wronged Gerald.

"Gerald, are you angry with me for not standing up for you when they jeered at you?"

Mila bit her lips.

"No, I'm not angry. I just want to know if that's what you think of me. Do you think the same as them, that I am a man with no borderline when money is involved?" Gerald looked at Mila with a smile.

"I did a moment ago, but not anymore. Gerald, I still think we are good friends!"

Mila moved closer toward Gerald.

"Alright!"

Gerald did not say anything. He just nodded and left.

Outside Paradise Ville.

Gerald let out a long breath. He felt a bit sad when he learned that Mila would think of him the way the others did.

Gerald was having mixed feelings. He could not describe them with words.

Nevertheless, he took out his phone from his pocket and made a call to Zack.

"Mr. Crawford, is there anything I can do for you?"

"Brother Zack, I need a favor from you. There is a company called FuturTech Inc., and it seems to be in trouble. Can I invest in that company?"

"Invest?" Zack was taken aback for a moment, and then he was overjoyed from what he heard. "Of course you can! Miss Crawford will be so glad that you did. No problem. There is no problem at all! I will take care of it immediately!"

"Alright. Don't use my name. Use the company name instead, Brother Zack." Gerald reminded him.

"Yes, I will settle this matter in an hour!" Zack said happily. Mr. Crawford had made a great improvement!

After hanging up the call, Gerald was ready to head back to the university. He was currently preparing to take the next driving test, so, he planned to practice for a little bit.

However, just as he arrived at the campus, he received a call from Harper.

“Hahaha! There’s good news, Gerald! Terribly good news!” Harper said between laughter.

“What is it?” Gerald was startled by the words of his dormitory head. He always tended to act impulsively.

“It’s about Xavia. She fought with Yuri. Even the police have come, saying they are here to arrest Yuri. It’s a mess now. We are all going to the girls’ dormitory to see what’s going on!”

Xavia fought with Yuri? And the police had come?

Gerald was so confused. How did they get into such a big fight?!

He ought to go and see!

Gerald hung up the phone, still unable to comprehend the situation. Thus, he decided to go to the girls’ dormitory.

Chapter 83

“Gerald, here!”

By the time Gerald had reached the dormitory where Xavia lived, it was already crowded with both male and female students.

The police were there. Cassandra was also there, as was the representative of Yuri’s class.

It was hectic.

Among the crowd, Gerald saw Harper waving at him, so he walked toward him.

Then, he saw Xavia and Yuri.

They must have had a fierce fight judging from the slap mark on Xavia’s cheek and her messy hair. She was shouting and crying at the same time.

As for Yuri, he was being held by the police, handcuffed. His face was so pale, he had to be very scared.

One of the police was interviewing the class representatives.

“What happened?” Gerald asked.

“What happened!? D*mn! Gerald, you are curious about how Yuri became rich since that day, aren’t you? Guess what? He’s a fearless lad, I tell you. He first borrowed a hundred thousand dollars from an online loan company for seven days. After seven days, because of the high interest rates, he had to pay back five hundred thousand dollars! There must be a black box operation behind this. And then, it seems as though Yuri had put down the shares of his father’s company on mortgage! In short, it’s a big mess right now. Also, it was his father who reported it to the police!” Harper explained, and then he continued, “Now that Yuri was desperate, he asked Xavia to return the money he spent on her. I heard that he had spent almost a hundred thousand on Xavia. However, Xavia refused to give him the money, so he beat her up! D*mn! These loan sharks are ruthless. I read a news article about a person who needed to pay back a hundred thousand dollars for borrowing just ten thousand dollars. It was ten-fold as much, man! I thought it was fake news, but now, I believe it. It’s so scary!”

After Gerald heard the whole story, he looked at Xavia who was in tears.

As Yuri was escorted to the police car, he was still yelling at Xavia. "Let me tell you, b*tch! I didn't even get to touch you after spending a hundred thousand dollars on you. Just you wait! If you don't give me back the money, I will ask my men to kill you!"

"Get in!" Before Yuri could finish his words, the police forced him into the car.

"You jerk! Asking back money from me? Did I become your girlfriend for nothing?" Xavia stomped her feet angrily. "Serves you right, you liar!"

Although Xavia was scolding him fiercely, she was scared. The Lowell family was powerful, more powerful than hers at the very least.

Seeing Yuri leave with the police, Xavia's heart was still beating fast.

Suddenly, she saw Gerald among the crowd.

Right then, she teared up.

She rushed toward Gerald and gave him two loud slaps!

"You b*stard! You saw me getting beaten up by someone but you just stand here watching?! You should have beat him up!"

Xavia grabbed Gerald's shirt and cried hysterically. In her mind, Gerald would do anything for her. Before they broke up, Gerald would carry her on his back to the infirmary when she had a mild cold. If she told him she was hungry, Gerald would sneak out from the dormitory to get her some food even if it was midnight. If she wanted a mobile phone, Gerald would get some part-time jobs to earn enough money to buy it for her.

So, when she was beaten, she thought that Gerald would get all worked up about it.

Instead, he had just stood there and watched! Xavia was so angry that she almost went crazy.

"Xavia, I am no longer your boyfriend!"

Gerald honestly wanted to slap her back, but he could not do it when he saw her face. The earlier marks were still there.

So, he just pushed her away.

He had once loved her sincerely after all.

"Yeah, you are not my boyfriend anymore. Don't you want to reconcile with me?!" Xavia shouted in her crying voice.

She had regained her composure.

But now, Gerald seemed very foreign to her. Could it be that this poor hillbilly did not love her anymore?

How could it be?!

'I am Xavia. Gerald should be the one who kneels before me.'

“I don’t want to. Not anymore!”

Gerald shook his head as he turned around and left. Truthfully, his heart ached.

“You jerk! If you don’t get back with me, how will I pay him back the money?! Had it not been for Yuri wanting to compete with you by showing off his money, would I have ended up like this?”

Xavia had become hysterical!

Gerald no longer loved her and she now owed the Lowell family one hundred thousand dollars. That family was not one she could mess with!

Chapter 84

‘What now? What should I do?!’

One hundred thousand dollars was not a small amount! She could not earn that much even if she sold her own body.

Xavia knelt on the ground and broke into tears.

Meanwhile, Gerald had gone back to the dormitory in confusion. He wanted to take a nap, but he couldn’t.

He felt pain when he thought of the slap mark on Xavia’s face.

If Xavia had stayed with him like before, she would have been able to get anything she wanted.

If she was bullied, of course he would take revenge for her.

But ironically, she had betrayed him.

She had lied to him. She told him that she needed some time to clear her mind, but she had started dating another man in just three days.

Gerald never mentioned this, but he would never forget it.

Lying on the bed, reminiscing about the good things about Xavia as well as the way she had ridiculed him, half an hour passed without him noticing.

Suddenly, Gerald’s phone rang again.

It was from Mila.

“Where are you, Gerald? Come to my house quickly. The food is served. We are throwing a party!”

Mila sounded pretty excited.

“I’m already back in the dormitory. What is it?”

Gerald could roughly guess what had happened, but he pretended not to know about it.

“Well, we have overcome the crisis! And you know what, our company has just received a one hundred million dollar funding from Mayberry International Inc! Come here quick, let’s party!”

Mila sounded extremely happy. Gerald was happy as well and also quite surprised.

Brother Zack was fast and efficient in handling this matter. Nevertheless, what Gerald did not expect was that he had actually invested one hundred million dollars in her company! That was a whole lot of money! Gee...

Before the incident at the dormitory, Gerald would have been happy to go to Mila's house to have some fun since Mila had invited him over. But after seeing what had happened to Xavia, he was feeling downhearted.

"I'll just pass. You all have fun. I feel a bit tired now. I want to get some sleep."

"Hey, buddy. Why don't you come? Are you scared that they will jeer at you again? Don't worry, I won't let them do so!"

"That's not it. I'm really tired."

"Alright. Later, when I get back to the campus, I will treat you alone. By the way, I have always wanted to treat you to a meal! Now I've got the chance.

"Alright!"

Gerald hung up the phone. He was considering whether he should find a chance to tell Mila it was him who had actually helped her.

'Should I reveal my identity to her?'

He just did not know how to say it.

'Would it be too sudden?'

Argh! Gerald felt as though his head was about to explode!

In the meantime, at Mila's house.

"Why? Is your poor friend not coming? How dare he act so arrogant!"

Mrs. Smith saw the disappointment in Mila's face when she hung up the phone.

She could not understand why her daughter cared so much about that lad.

"It's better that he doesn't come. Mila, I think you should spend less time with him. You know that you two are people living in two different worlds. This time, the Smith family will surely rise to power after getting the funding from Mayberry International Inc. You should stop his desire for you, the earlier the better!"

"That's right. You should not be friends with him." The young people commented.

"By the way, was it your father who got the investment from Mayberry International Inc. for our company, Quinton? It's the biggest company in Mayberry! Why would they fund us so suddenly?"

Mrs. Smith brought up the topic of Mayberry International Inc. It was the biggest doubt she had right now.

Quinton shook his head.

“It can’t be my father. Only two people can move the investment funds of that company. Not even Zack Lyle can decide on this! So, I think it must be one of the Crawfords. Since Miss Crawford is not in the country, I’m guessing the person who invested in your company must be the young Mr. Crawford!”

“The young Mr. Crawford? I have never heard of him before.”

All those present fell into silence.

They knew that Zack Lyle was ridiculously rich in Mayberry. Now that they knew that he had two big bosses and one of them was the young Mr. Crawford, wouldn’t it mean that the Mayberry Commercial Street was his?

If so, how rich would he be?

Quinton described him respectfully. “This young Mr. Crawford is a mysterious man, and nobody can imagine how wealthy the family is. Now that he has come to Mayberry, he will definitely want to show off his skills. Therefore, I bet your company must have gotten the chance just in time, Mrs. Smith!”

“I think we have!” Mrs. Smith nodded, feeling glad and surprised.

The girls, including Whitney, could not sit still anymore.

“Quinton, please tell us more about this young Mr. Crawford. Didn’t you say that the whole Mayberry Commercial Street is his? Holy sh*t!”

Quinton chuckled. “What did you say? Mayberry Commercial Street? Let me tell you this. I heard this from my father. The Mayberry Commercial Street, which is literally a cash printing machine, is nothing in their eyes. It is just a fragment!”

“What!?”

Chapter 85

It was such a huge street and yet, it was nothing in the eyes of the young Mr. Crawford.

How powerful was this Crawford family?!

Whitney and the rest of the girls fell for Mr. Crawford immediately. How they wished to become his girlfriend.

“Still, aren’t you exaggerating this?”

“If it is such an influential family, we should have seen it on the Internet!”

The girls doubted it.

Quinton laughed. “Those that you see online are not the most powerful ones. Think about it. What kind of an existence would a company be when all the big companies you know online are supported by it? Many of the large industries are supported by such a powerful company, and such companies are run by families of whom we don’t usually hear their names!”

“Hmm, it makes sense.”

The girls were now convinced.

Ring!

The phone rang.

Mrs. Smith picked up the phone. She was shocked when she saw where the call was from. “It’s from the Bureau of Commerce!”

Helen was getting anxious.

Were they going to seize their assets? It was true that their company almost went bankrupt, but Mayberry International Inc. had just announced their investment to their company.

Everyone knew that the bank would not show any mercy to the companies who owed them money. Once the company could not repay the loan, the bank would inform the bureau immediately.

They all knew clearly how it worked.

Everyone stopped talking and waited patiently.

“Thank you, Mr. Harrison. Yes, yes, yes! Thank you for your encouragement and support! Okay, goodbye!”

Everyone was confused upon seeing Helen speak in such an excited manner.

“Mr. Harrison?” Mila’s father was surprised.

Their company was considered a small company. So, they were always very scared of authority.

Seeing Mrs. Smith's reaction, he knew it was not bad news.

“Yes!”

And she recounted their conversation.

“It must all be thanks to the young Mr. Crawford! Otherwise, it would be impossible!”

“Mr. Crawford is indeed very influential and powerful!”

Everyone was very impressed by this man.

The incident had sparked curiosity among many of them. Who was this mysterious Mr. Crawford?

Over the following days, Gerald did not do anything that attracted attention to himself. Besides, he spent all the money on the card his sister had sent him which was loaded with twenty million dollars. There was about one million dollars or so left on the card, so he bought himself some branded outfits as well as some accessories like watches and stuff.

Xavia did call Gerald up once to borrow some money, but he refused to lend her any.

He was not being ruthless. He just wanted her to learn her lesson.

Blindly pursuing money was useless. Sometimes, when you thought you were about to have it, you were actually losing it.

He really hoped Xavia would not continue living like this.

Otherwise, she would lose herself one day.

After Gerald refused to help her, he had not heard about her for days.

So, he focused on preparing for his third driving test.

“What are you doing, bro?”

It was Saturday. Gerald was reading a book, laying on the bed, while Harper and the rest had gone out to have some fun.

Just as he was feeling bored, his sister, Jessica, called him.

“I’m reading a book. What is it?”

Gerald felt rather helpless when dealing with his domineering sister. His head ached when he heard her voice.

He could still remember the one time he had been beaten by her just because he had wanted to buy an ice cream. They had still been poor at that time.

Chapter 86

He was rather annoyed by his innocence back then.

Now that his peculiar parenting was over and he had spent so much money, he was still being scolded by his sister!

Gerald felt that his life was quite dramatic, almost as if it was a dream.

“Hey, I’ve checked the transactions of your card. You have spent all the money! Haha, great job! I heard from Zack that you have improved a lot. You even learned to use our company funds to invest in a small company! I did a background check on the company you helped. Did you fall in love with that girl? Are you getting me a sister-in-law?” Jessica asked playfully.

It was true that Gerald had been keeping in touch with Mila over these past few days and they were indeed growing fond of each other. Mila chatted with him about almost everything, and he was very happy to chat about anything with her.

However, the closer they got, the more Gerald became reluctant to take the first step in pursuing her.

He did not expect his sister to find out about this.

“No, I’m not!” Gerald said bitterly.

“Okay, I will stop teasing you. I just want to tell you that since you have started investing, you reminded me of my plan to build some schools or shopping complexes in Mayberry. Why don’t you try to do it for me instead?” Jessica gave him an unforgiving challenge.

“What?! But Sister, I know nothing about investment!”

“That’s why I want you to learn. It will be alright. Zack will form an exceptional team to help you do this. You can take this chance to learn how to make use of the assets. Otherwise, if you cannot pass the last test in the future, Daddy will not...”

“What test?”

Gerald sensed something strange from his sister’s words.

Since the day his sister had sent him the money, she had been acting strangely. She forced him to spend at least two hundred thousand dollars at a time, and then, she told him to spend the whole twenty million dollars. It didn’t seem like she did it just because they had plenty of money.

She seemed to have a motive behind this.

Judging from what she had said just now, he must have guessed it right!

“It’s nothing. It’s not something you should know, and don’t ask for now. Just do as I said. Starting from now, focus on your investment. You can invest in any industry that you think will earn a profit, whether it is business, education, entertainment, or anything. You can invest in the name of Mayberry International Inc., and they will provide you the funds.”

After Jessica had reminded him to get started as soon as possible, she hung up the phone.

Gerald scratched his head helplessly.

He knew nothing about all these things.

Right then, the phone rang once more.

It was Zack. He called just at the right time.

“Are you busy, Mr. Crawford? If you are not, can you come to the manor for a bit? Mr. Harrison from the Bureau of Commerce, Mr. Armstrong from the Bureau of Education, along with many influential people in the city wish to meet with you!”

“I’m not busy. Okay, I will go now.”

Gerald refused to let Zack send a car to fetch him and just took a taxi.

Gerald had always hoped to meet with more people and build a strong network. This would help him improve himself.

As he sat in the car, Gerald thought of him getting a driving license. Once he got his driving license, he would be able to drive his own car. He was anticipating the arrival of that day.

Soon, he arrived at the manor in Wayfair Mountain.

Gerald walked into the lobby casually.

“Mister, did you make an appointment?”

Unexpectedly, Gerald was stopped by a receptionist from getting in.

The receptionist did not think he was someone who could afford the expenses here.

However, the voice of the receptionist was very familiar to Gerald. Gerald shuddered and turned to look at her.

As their eyes met, the receptionist opened her mouth in shock.

“Gerald?”

“Xavia?”

“Why are you here?”

“Why are you here?!”

...

Chapter 87

Gerald was truly surprised when he saw Xavia working as a waitress in the villa.

No wonder she had disappeared these days, it turned out that she had come here.

Nevertheless, Gerald was happy for Xavia.

How should he put it... Although Xavia remained hostile toward him, she had not fallen and had found a job after that incident, working hard to earn money.

Compared with other consequences, Gerald preferred to see her like this.

“Gerald, why are you here?! Is this a place where you can come and go freely? Get out now!” Xavia said coldly.

“Hey, Xavia! Do you know this guy?”

A few waitresses around Gerald’s age walked over and stood beside Xavia.

They were in their senior year, similar to Xavia, and were about to embark on their internship. Hence, they wanted to work in the villa to earn some money.

They heard that they would be able to meet many people with big names here, but they were all puzzled when they saw Gerald.

This guy did not dress like those second-generation rich frat boys. Thus, they doubted that this guy just wanted to come and see the world.

There were rules in the villa. No outsiders were allowed to enter the villa!

“Hmph, of course I know him. He’s my ex-boyfriend!” Xavia stared at Gerald in resentment.

“What?! So, he’s the scumbag who dumped you after winning the lottery? The one who acted like a rich guy?”

“D*mn, how dare he when he looks so ugly? There are so many rich guys outside who are wealthier and stronger than him, such as Mr. Bale. He’s such a scumbag!”

“How can this person even compare with Mr. Bale? Xavia, luckily you saw through this scumbag early, otherwise, you would regret it if you gave yourself to him...”

The beautiful girls kept scorning and gossiping about Gerald endlessly.

They might not have a noble status. However, they had met many people with big names ever since they had started working at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Hence, they were hardly impressed by him and were a bit arrogant.

They felt that they did not have to worry at all about Gerald who was a loser!

Gerald sighed helplessly.

He had been about to ask why Jane was not there.

Had she quit?

However, he was unable to do so since the girls were scorning him and making him speechless.

Xavia was so good at blaming others. Was she not the one who had betrayed him first?

Regardless, Gerald was too lazy to argue with her on this issue.

The two had now broken up regardless of what she said.

Although Gerald still had some indescribable feelings for Xavia, he had no intention of getting back together with her.

Thus, whatever she said was not important!

“Gerald, let me tell you. Don’t think that you’ve become so great after winning the lottery. I was wrong. It was my fault. I had not seen the world during my freshman year. You were always fake around me. I was so stupid to have been moved by your sincerity and got together with you! Heh, after that, I was with Yuri. I thought he was better than you and would make me happy. Yet?”

“Indeed, I’ve always been living under a rock and was very short-sighted. You know what? It’s like opening up a brand-new world for me ever since I came to work in this villa. You winning a million or even five million, now, it means nothing to me. In my heart, you are nothing more than a nouveau riche!”

“So, you should not think that you are great. To me, you are just a piece of garbage!” Xavia said emotionally.

She who owed Yuri about a hundred thousand dollars had asked Gerald for help a few days ago, even offering to get back together with him and be his girl if he helped her.

However, Gerald had rejected her.

Furthermore, Gerald had suddenly become rich after breaking up with her.

This caused Xavia to be ashamed and angry.

Chapter 88

Now, she wanted to vent all her inner resentment toward him.

You—Gerald was a nothing! What was there to be so proud of!

“Hmph, you loser. Get out. If you don’t get out now, I will call the security guard!”

The few girls spoke coldly. “This is not the place... Ah! Xavia, look! Mr. Bale is here!”

They suddenly pointed at the gate excitedly while mocking Gerald.

A luxury car stopped by the gate, and a handsome young man in a blue suit came down from the car.

He walked in confidently with one hand in his pocket.

“Mr. Bale!” Several female waitresses waved toward him happily.

On the other hand, Xavia became very reserved and behaved like an elegant lady.

“Xavia, you guys are busy...” Mr. Bale came over and smiled.

“No, we are not busy, Mr. Bale. We are just stopping a loser from getting in just in case he disturbs your father and other people’s meeting inside!” She stood beside Bale as she spoke.

As for Bale, he hugged Xavia’s waist lightly and looked at Gerald who was standing at the side.

“Where did you come from? This isn’t a place that you can come into. Get out!” Bale shouted at Gerald.

Gerald was stunned.

Not because of Bale, but because of Xavia.

It seemed that he had thought wrongly of her. He had initially thought that Xavia would become less snobby after that incident.

He had not expected her to get worse.

It was clear now that she had come to the villa because she had bigger fish to fry—wanting to find a rich husband.

Gerald initially did not intend to reveal his identity although he heard their ridicule.

He could still give Xavia some face.

But in this case, he did not have to pretend anymore.

“Xavia! There’s one thing that I’ve been hiding from you for a long time. I’ve decided to have a showdown with you today!” Gerald smiled slightly.

“Huh? What cards do you have on the table? Don’t tell me that you’ve been faking your identity all along. Are you actually a rich and handsome guy? Hahaha, if that’s the case, I will truly regret it!”

Xavia retorted sarcastically as she moved closer to Bale who was standing beside her.

“You’re right. I am a rich second generation. I only learned about it three days after we broke up. I turned out to be a rich second generation and am quite rich. Haha...”

“Hahahaha...” Xavia laughed out loudly.

“Gerald, you are unbelievable! I know you have the pride of a man and are very afraid that others will look down on you, but I did not expect you to be so phony. You? A rich second generation?! If so, I’m a rich daughter from a wealthy family!”

“This guy is shameless! How dare he call himself a rich second generation? Didn’t he merely win the lottery?”

“Don’t you know? He may be jealous seeing the beautiful Xavia being favored by Mr. Bale. That’s why he says he is a rich second generation. Maybe he wants to let Xavia change her mind and dump her once again after that. I’ve seen many losers doing this!”

“I am a rich second generation. Xavia, I don’t want to lie to you. Not only I am rich, but seventy percent of the buildings in the entire commercial street are under my name!”

Gerald smiled bitterly.

He was telling the truth. Why did they not believe him?!

Chapter 89

“Are you crazy? How could the entire Mayberry Commercial Street be yours? Why don’t you go to heaven, then?”

The girls were looking at Gerald as if they were looking at a fool.

As for Bale, he was laughing so hard due to Gerald’s remarks.

Mayberry Commercial Street? This guy said that it belonged to his family.

Gerald smiled bitterly. Right at that moment, his cell phone rang.

The call was from Zack.

“Mr. Gerald, have you reached yet?”

“Yes, Zack. I’m in the front hall,” Gerald said.

“Ah! Okay, okay. Mr. Harrison and Mr. Henderson from the Bureau of Education are with me. We are coming to meet you there right away! They have long wanted to see you after hearing that you are going to invest in some public welfare projects as well as commercial projects.”

“Uh... alright!”

Gerald had not expected the directors to come so soon, and he hung up the phone after he was done talking.

On the other hand, Mr. Bale and the others were looking at Gerald in surprise.

“This loser is acting as though he’s rich. Oh, my gosh! He even called Mr. Zack intimately. People who don’t know the truth may think that he is indeed close to Mr. Zack!” The girls despised him.

“Gerald, I didn’t expect you to become like this. To be honest, I am very happy that you have become like this. Look at what’s become of you after leaving me! Haha!”

Meanwhile, Xavia had a different kind of sick pleasure.

She liked seeing Gerald being humiliated and ridiculed.

The more miserable Gerald was, the more excited Xavia felt.

In this case, it showed that she did make the right decision to leave Gerald.

Furthermore, he should be getting worse and worse after being dumped by her!

Just as Xavia was about to call a few security guards in to drive Gerald out and was ready to record the scene, a girl standing beside her exclaimed, “Xavia, Mr. Bale, look! Why are there so many people rushing over here?! It seems to be Mr. Zack, right?”

“Yeah! It’s not just Mr. Zack, but also Mr. Harrison and Mr. Henderson. They are all people with big names in Mayberry City. Why are they in such a hurry to come to the front hall? Shit, isn’t that my dad in the back? Why is he running toward here too?!” Bale’s face suddenly turned pale.

His family ran an international trade business.

In the early days, they had started their family business with the investment of Mayberry International Inc. Now, they had become one of the most famous and rich families in Mayberry City, and their status was noble.

Although his father was very respectful to Zack, he had never had to run toward him.

Furthermore, Mr. Zack, who was the tycoon of the commercial street, was running in front of them all.

“What’s the matter?!” Bale was shocked.

Xavia was also startled to see them running to the front hall.

They all hurriedly stepped aside in confusion, including the girls.

Only Gerald stood still in the middle of the lobby.

“Gerald, are you looking for trouble?! Mr. Zack is coming, you should get out of here soon! There must be famous people coming too, you should get out now!” Xavia shouted in a hurry.

Still, Gerald did not budge.

Besides, it was too late to move now. The group of people had already appeared in the hall.

“Good day, Mr. Zack...” Xavia and other girls quickly bent over with a dark face, thinking that they would be scolded.

However, they were ignored by Mr. Zack and the others.

Zack walked directly to Gerald and smiled respectfully. "Sorry to keep you waiting, Mr. Gerald. Let me introduce you..."

Mr. Gerald.

The atmosphere instantly tensed, especially Xavia, whose face was frozen.

"Mr. Zack! How did you address him just now? Mr. Gerald?!" Xavia suffered a critical hit as if she had been struck by the thunder!

The famous Zack Lyle was being so respectful to Gerald.

Was it possible that what Gerald had said just now was true? He wasn't faking his identity?

Oh gosh!

As for the other girls, their mouths were opened wide as if they could swallow an egg whole at this moment, not to mention Bale who was swallowing nervously at the side.

"Yes, he is the big boss behind all the businesses of Mayberry Commercial Street, Mr. Gerald. Why are you still here? Who let you speak? Where is Jane?" Zack questioned them when he saw his waiters being so impolite.

He immediately called out to Jane who was behind him.

After all, these people had all been invited by Jane.

Chapter 90

Jane and the other experienced waiters had been busy during the dinner just now. Hence, she had just only arrived.

Upon hearing that, Jane slapped Xavia's face coldly.

"Go and stand at the back right now!"

Although it was an honor to be able to work in the villa, one must understand the rules while working here!

Xavia was stunned by this slap.

Really?!

She only knew that she was not dreaming when she felt the pain.

All of this was true!

Gerald did not lie. He was indeed a rich second generation. Both Yuri and Mr. Bale were no match for him!

He was the owner of the commercial street, which meant that he was the richest man in Mayberry City or even in the world.

Xavia felt very hurt. Did that mean if she hadn't broken up with Gerald, she would be a rich lady now?!

She certainly would be since Gerald had loved her so much!

“Mr. Gerald, after entering the office, I will introduce them to you one by one...”

Zack Lyle made a gesture, and Gerald nodded his head.

Then he glanced at the dumbfounded Xavia.

He did not feel much after getting back at her.

“Well, let’s go in!” Gerald turned around and was prepared to go in.

“Stop right there!” Xavia suddenly shouted at this moment, shocking Gerald.

Then he saw Xavia rushing over.

Not toward him, but Jane.

Slap!

Xavia raised her hand and slapped Jane heavily.

“You... Xavia, how dare you hit me?! Security, Security!” Jane was a little lost. This was the first time she had been slapped by another person.

Xavia’s face was red and full of dissatisfaction. “Why not?!”

The security guards had heard Jane’s words and had rushed in, and they were ready to grab Xavia.

“Who dares to touch me? Do you know who I am?!” Xavia suddenly shouted.

“I’m Gerald’s girlfriend! Mr. Gerald’s girlfriend! Don’t you touch me!” Xavia clenched her fists.

She had been with him for two years, only finding out that he was a rich guy after they had broken up.

She could not accept that she would not get anything from him!

She had also been beaten! How could she be willing?!

“What?! Girlfriend?”

The security guards immediately stopped and dared not move after hearing her words.

Zack also frowned, and everyone turned to look at Gerald.

Gerald was startled by her words. This girl was completely crazy.

Gerald then said indifferently, “She used to be, but now, she’s not my girlfriend!”

Now that he had revealed his true identity, he was determined to completely break off his relationship with Xavia!

He turned and left after saying those words.

Zack understood what Gerald meant, and signaled the guards to drive Xavia out.

“Gerald, you b*stard! Did you forget who spent two years with you even when you had no money before? You’ve always felt that you were the only one sacrificing things in our relationship. I’m sorry that I broke up with you, but have you ever thought about me? I have never forced you to buy me anything expensive in those two years. You involuntarily bought them for me!”

“Moreover, at the time, it was just me who was willing to get along with you. I was the only one who walked beside you at school. We ate together and held hands. You even felt inferior and dared not hold my hand when we were on our first date. I took the initiative to hold your hand! Yet, you are treating me like this now?!”

Xavia cried as she was restrained by the guards.

Gerald was about to enter the villa, and he unconsciously stopped in his tracks as he listened to Xavia’s words.

Did Gerald always have a love-hate relationship with Xavia?

That was all because of their memories. He still hoped that Xavia would do well no matter how she treated him.

Still, Gerald was offended by Xavia’s words, and he slowly turned around...

Chapter 91

Gerald turned around and looked at Xavia indifferently. “Xavia, of course I have not forgotten the things that you said. Indeed, it was because of you that made me feel that there is hope in my life during that period. Did you know? I was willing to give you everything at that time. However, it was you who broke up with me. To be honest, I’m still hurting even till now. I just hope that you can always be well. It will be the same in the future. You should get on with your life!”

It was no longer possible for him to get back together with Xavia after experiencing the things that had happened over the recent days!

It was not perfunctory, and he meant it sincerely.

Xavia finally calmed down after hearing these words, and her face grew very red.

Once, there was a boy who loved her so much and was willing to sacrifice everything for her.

Alas, she had wanted to seek comfort.

Even now, Xavia did not dare to say that she used to love Gerald whole-heartedly.

At that time, she had just wanted to find a boy who was willing to like her.

Later, she saw that many girls, even those who were not as beautiful as her, had found very handsome and rich boyfriends.

Hence, Xavia’s heart had faltered.

She had only heard of Yuri Lowell before but did not know him.

Thus, she had been tempted when he drove a BMW and stopped in front of her to ask her for a date.

Gerald was no match for him.

She did feel slightly distressed when she had broken up with Gerald, but the pain had soon disappeared when she received an Apple mobile phone from Yuri.

Now, it turned out that Gerald was a rich second generation, a top-class second generation at that!

Xavia truly regretted it.

She had lost out on the most important person!

And Gerald had already said it now. He would never get back together with her!

She felt as humiliated as if she had been stripped naked and thrown on the streets.

“Alright, I get it!” Xavia’s eyes turned red. She clenched her fists and said, “Gerald, don’t you forget. I will not let you look down on me forever. I will let you look at my back one day! I will repay all the humiliation that you gave me today!”

Xavia wiped away her tears and glared at him. Then, she tore off her work attire and threw it to his feet, leaving immediately after.

Gerald looked at her retreating back that still looked so ruthless at the end, and he did not feel good about it.

All the same, he hoped that she would do well.

No one had expected this to happen, and Jane, who had suffered a slap for nothing, did not dare to say anything at this moment.

Even if she was just an ex-girlfriend, she used to be Mr. Gerald’s girlfriend.

She could only endure it unwillingly.

They soon came to the room.

Mr. Harrison of the Bureau of Commerce and Mr. Henderson of the Bureau of Education purposefully came to meet Gerald respectively for the investment in some regions as well as some projects for childrens education, such as building a primary school, and they hoped to get help from Mayberry International Inc.

These were all done under the order of his sister, Jessica Crawford.

Gerald also understood what his sister meant to do, which was to help them as a favor, and so, he happily signed it.

Mr. Harrison and Mr. Henderson were very grateful as each of these projects signed by Gerald was not simple.

For example, for the Hope Primary School project, a total of more than twenty schools would be built in Mayberry.

They then enjoyed the meal happily, and Gerald also got to meet with other merchants in Mayberry City.

“Mr. Gerald, this is my name card. If you need any assistance in the future, don’t hesitate to call me!”

Mr. Harrison shook Gerald’s hand before he left.

Chapter 92

He had never expected Mr. Gerald, who was a top-class wealthy man, to be so down-to-earth.

It was very different from what he imagined!

Moreover, the latter had offered him a great help this time.

For his part, Gerald knew that he was still not very sociable, but he was not in a hurry, and he knew to take his time.

“Mr. Gerald!”

Gerald was preparing to leave after the guests had left. He had an exam to attend tomorrow, so, he needed to go back and practice again.

Jane was walking over with a blushing face at this time. She had just been slapped earlier, and it was somewhat embarrassing for her to face Gerald now.

Gerald also felt sorry toward her.

This beautiful senior had always been very fierce, even he had almost surrendered last time!

“Yes? Do you need anything?” Gerald asked.

“It’s like this. I don’t have any shifts in the afternoon. Hence, I’m going home now. Would you like me to drop you off at the university since we are heading in the same direction?”

Jane purposely tried to get close to Gerald. Other than having a sense of respect toward Gerald, Jane was also bolder toward him after knowing that he was very down-to-earth and introverted.

After all, if she had a good relationship with Gerald, she might have a chance of being his partner. Even if she was just a sex partner, Jane was willing to do so.

“Alright!” Gerald agreed without thinking much.

He felt bad as she had had to endure the humiliation of being slapped by Xavia just now. To put it bluntly, it was also because of him.

Jane was very happy to hear this and hurried to the car.

Gerald did not expect her to drive so fast and her driving skills to be that good.

It seemed that Jane got along well with the people here, and the two had a little chat in the car.

At this time, Jane’s cell phone rang.

She picked it up, took a look, and hung up impatiently.

Soon, the phone rang again.

She picked it up and hung up yet again.

“Just answer the call. Are you afraid that I might hear it?” Gerald smiled in amusement.

Jane blushed. “No. Why would I? I don’t have any secrets to hide from Mr. Gerald. I will satisfy you no matter what you want to see or hear...”

Jane said these words gently, slightly lifting her legs to reveal a pair of white thighs.

Gerald felt very hot at this moment.

He was extremely tempted to reach out to them, but he was a little embarrassed.

Just then, the phone rang again.

Jane did not hang up this time. Instead, she answered the call. “Luke, are you out of your mind? Why do you keep calling me? I have already said that it was not because of your wealth that I left you. It’s impossible for the two of us! I already have someone in my heart. You’d better go find someone else and move on! You are rich, so there will be many women surrounding you!”

Jane hung up the phone fiercely after she was done speaking.

She had deliberately spoken very loudly. Firstly, she wanted to tell Gerald that she was being chased by a rich guy, but she was not a person that looked down on the poor.

Secondly, she was trying to tell Gerald that she was single, so, he could do whatever he wanted with her!

It was a pity that Gerald had not taken any action yet. Did she have to take the initiative?

Just as the two were waiting for each other to act first, the car had arrived at the gate of the University of Mayberry, and the seven million dollar Benz naturally attracted a lot of people.

“Alright, let’s get down here!” Gerald saw the students’ gazes. If they went further in, they would surely be stared at by more people, and it would be very uncomfortable.

However, Jane remained silent at this moment. She frowned and looked at the men and women standing at the school gate before shyly whispering, “Mr. Gerald, can I drop you further in, or should we go for a drive outside? Just don’t get down here, please?”

“Huh? Why?”

Chapter 93

Gerald glanced at Jane’s expression and realized that something was wrong.

He then looked to the direction that Jane was looking at, and he was quite surprised.

There were two men and one woman. One of the men seemed to be a high society person, and a Maserati was parked in front of him.

He was currently talking to the other guy and the woman, and to Gerald's surprise, he knew both the man and woman.

It was Danny Xanders from the same class and Jacelyn Leigh, Alice Bradford's roommate.

Oh gosh! When had they become a couple?

Gerald was surprised.

Also, it seemed like Jane knew them too.

The man suddenly saw them and quickly ran toward Jane's car in excitement.

"D*mn! Ah! Mr. Gerald, I'm not scolding you. I'm just scolding that guy—Luke Evans. I did not expect him to be here. He just won't go away!" Jane was rather upset.

Her plan to seduce Gerald had been going so well. Unfortunately, she just had to run into Luke at this moment.

On the other hand, Gerald did get a rough understanding of the issue.

Luke must be Jane's admirer. However, Jane did not like him.

What Gerald did not know was Jane still had a bit of feeling for Luke, but that was before she had met Gerald.

At this time, Gerald felt that it would be a little awkward to get off the car when he saw Danny and Jacelyn walking toward them with a smile.

"Well, you'd better go down and talk to them. I'll wait for you in the car. After that, you can just drop me off at the door of the dormitory!" Gerald scratched his head helplessly.

"Alright, Mr. Gerald!" Jane responded and got out of the car.

"Luke, why are you here? And also, why did you keep calling me just now? You're so annoying!" Jane was truly annoyed.

"Jane, I also did not expect to meet you here. I'm here to send my cousin and his girlfriend back to the university. I remember you said that you would often pay a visit to your alma mater. Hence, I made a call and wanted to ask you to come around!"

Luke smiled and continued, "Jane, let me introduce you. This is my cousin, Danny. He's a junior. This is his girlfriend, Jacelyn. She's from the broadcasting faculty and is also a junior!"

"Hey, sister-in-law! You are so pretty!"

To be honest, Danny was actually in awe seeing the beautiful and sexy Jane.

Jane then laughed. "Who is your sister-in-law?! I'm not Danny's girlfriend!"

Jane just wanted to get this over with, and her expression was not friendly.

Danny was startled. He could already feel it just now when he heard the conversation between Jane and his cousin, but Jane's tone was really cold.

It was not like what his cousin said. Women were like this, they needed to be pampered.

Still, her attitude and expression was not right, indicating that something was wrong. There was no need to pamper her!

However, Luke felt slightly embarrassed and tried to cover it up.

He quickly smiled and said, "That's enough, Jane. Stop making a fuss. Go and park your car and the four of us will go shopping together!"

"Just who is the one causing trouble?! Luke, I have already said it very clearly. It's impossible for us. I have someone in my heart. You are rich, you will be able to find another beautiful girl easily. Don't waste your time and energy on me!" Jane said mercilessly.

At this moment, many students had come out to play, and they were all attracted by this scene.

Two luxury cars, a man and a woman arguing... it was hard not to be noticed.

Especially when Jane was speaking so loudly, it was so embarrassing for Luke.

"Jane, tell me. Who's in your heart? Don't tell me, is it your godfather who gave you this Mercedes-Benz? He's almost sixty!" Luke's face turned dark.

"D*mn! Luke, can you watch your words?!"

Chapter 94

Jane was grinding her teeth in consternation.

Beside her, Jacelyn was clinging intimately to Danny's arm while sizing Jane up at the same time.

Truth be told, when she saw the gorgeous Jane emerging from that fancy car, Jacelyn was immediately overcome with envy.

What's more, Jane herself hadn't spared her so much as a single glance, and Jacelyn was not pleased by that one bit.

Having heard something interesting, she whispered to Danny and Luke, "Goodness me, that Jane really gets around! She's got powerful friends, buys an expensive car like it's nothing... but does she have someone special? Perhaps, rather than those big tycoons, she might have picked up some new toy boy!"

Smack!

The moment Jacelyn said that...

Jane slapped her right across the face. "You'd better watch your mouth. What's this 'toy boy' nonsense?"

"Did you just... slap me?!" Jacelyn held her face, quite nearly slapped senseless.

Jane seemed ready to strike her again.

However, Luke caught her hand. "Jane, dear, tell us if there's any truth to Jacelyn's words. Have you gotten yourself a pet lately?" He seemed genuinely nervous about this.

“Let go of me, Luke! What business of yours is it, whomever I like?” At this point, Jane sorely wished she’d stayed in the car. Even if Luke had caught sight of her, all she’d had to do was step on the gas and make a break for it.

Now, there was all this talk about tycoons and toy boys... She had gone through so much trouble to improve her image with Gerald, and now, all that had gone to waste!

But the more she behaved this way, the more Luke feared it might be true.

D*mn it, how much money had he spent on this girl already? And to think she’d been keeping a little something for herself on the side?!

Gerald sat in the car, listening to them squabble.

There wasn’t much to be said.

Jane loved money. Gerald had known that all along.

Once a hostess at some hot springs resort up in the mountains, she now held an executive position. There was no way she wouldn’t have some dirty little secrets here and there.

At the moment though, Gerald would much rather for Jane to just drive away right now.

Suddenly, a shadow loomed beside him as someone appeared by his side.

It was Jacelyn.

After the slap she had taken, she was anxious to see if there was any swelling. If so, there would be hell to pay.

As such, she turned her head this way and that in front of the passenger-side window. She even pouted a little to see if her cutesy charms had been diminished in any way.

Good, still cute!

Jacelyn nodded contentedly. Then, a shiver of alarm ran through her.

Through the glass, she had noticed the vague outline of another person. A man.

How scandalous!

Right now, nothing else could have mattered more.

She smirked at Jane, and said to Luke, “It’s true, Luke! There’s another man she’s been seeing, and he’s in the passenger seat of her car right now, too scared to step out into the light!”

It was as though Jacelyn had happened upon a whole new world of wonder.

Compared to Danny, Luke came from an even more well-off family. They were very influential around these parts, too.

Jane was about to receive her reckoning. Served her right! Feel the pain!

“What?!” Hearing this, Luke and Danny both peered into the passenger seat. Because the windows were tinted, neither had paid much attention at first nor noticed anything.

Upon closer examination, there was indeed someone inside there.

Unbeknownst to them, Gerald was already belting out wall-to-wall expletives!

For crying out loud! Now he was getting caught up in all this mess?!

He had a bad feeling about this whole thing—because right now, a crowd was rapidly growing outside the car!

Chapter 95

“What’s going on?”

The crowd swelled in size. Curiosity was mounting.

“Not sure yet, but it seems that hot babe had something going with that rich dude, but she’s also been cheating on him with a toy boy on the side. Now, they’re making a scene!”

“That’s right! The other guy is in the car as we speak! This is going to be the dramatic reveal! I’m dying here!”

“Heh, heh... If only it were me in that car right now. That girl is totally fine! Ah-woo!”

Many of the guys present were making no secret of their envy.

Sitting in the car, Gerald wished he could smash his head against something.

“Danny, what’s going on?” Two figures appeared from the crowd. One, a man, and the other, a woman, both who came over to join Danny.

“Oh, Victor, Whitney... we need some help over here!” Danny said.

He briefly explained the situation.

Everyone craved the spotlight. When something was going on, especially with such a large audience gathered, there would always be people who wanted to get themselves involved and be a part of it!

“So that’s how it is. Alright, we’re all friends here. Let’s resolve this matter together. Whoever’s in that car, could you please step outside so we can clear this up?” Victor wore a mask of disdain.

“That’s right, that’s right! Come out so we can talk!” Jacelyn echoed excitedly.

“No way! Who do you think you are? Get lost, all of you!” Jane snapped and then turned on her heel, storming off. At this rate, Gerald’s good name was going to fall to ruin. She wouldn’t be able to make up for that!

But this was only making Luke more anxious.

Burning with jealousy, he was losing all sense of reason.

“Jane, don’t you walk away! One way or another, I’m getting an answer out of you!”

Then Danny and Victor were there, trying to open up the passenger door.

However, there was no need.

Seeing how things had reached this point already, Gerald opened the door and stepped out on his own.

The way he saw it, if he hesitated any longer, it would only make matters worse!

“Gerald!”

“I’ll be d*mned!”

“The hell?!”

“What?!”

Danny, Jacelyn, Victor, and Whitney all planted their jaws on the ground.

“Why are you here?!” Jacelyn gasped.

In truth, these few days, Jacelyn had been harboring a major crush on Gerald. Unfortunately, he had remained oblivious to all the hints she’d been giving him.

The reason she was going out with Danny was thanks in part to Gerald.

Since he had shown no interest in Jacelyn, she had decided to go after one of his classmates instead, hoping to incite his jealousy!

Furthermore, he was her main suspect as the true identity behind a certain legendary figure!

For the sake of a catch like him, a few underhanded tactics were perfectly justified!

However, this proved to be too big a plot twist.

“D*mn! And here I was wondering how you’d suddenly struck it rich... Now I see that you were somebody’s toy boy all along! And to think you were even flaunting your money for everyone to see!” Danny muttered darkly.

Honestly, finding Gerald in there had just made this much more interesting for him.

Gerald put on a relaxed smile. “Jane was just giving me a lift back to school, haha... You guys are making too much out of this!”

It was an embarrassing situation, but he kept his cool.

“The hell we are!” Danny hollered. “Don’t try to wriggle out of this. Our Jane’s been keeping you around as her plaything, hasn’t she? All that money you’ve been splurging might very well have come from Luke!”

“What’s this? Danny, you know this guy?” Luke regarded Gerald with open hostility.

“Hah! Not only do we know him, but we’re also classmates with him! A penniless wretch who became rich all of a sudden... spinning some tale about winning the lottery, but it turns out he was just somebody’s pet!”

“Right! That’s right!” Whitney piped up. “I heard Gerald was shopping for clothes once, in that upmarket place outside campus... He didn’t have enough money on him at the time, but then a girl our age showed up and paid in his stead! And then, he gave those clothes to me! The young woman in that story was loaded and owned the whole store chain... Maybe she’s also one of the girls holding your leash, eh?”

What had happened was that when Gerald had given that gift to Whitney just a few days ago, she had paid a visit to that same shop at the first opportunity to investigate if he had deceived her somehow.

Chapter 96

When she’d found out those clothes cost well over ten thousand bucks, Whitney had been shocked beyond words.

However, perhaps because the salesperson in the shop had made a fuss over how that woman’s gift to Gerald had ended up in another girl’s hands... Whitney had been too embarrassed to bring it up until now.

She had only just found out that he was actually poor.

Indeed, she had always wondered where all his wealth had come from.

Now, it all made sense. Just like he had told her online, he had a patron.

And not just that... She was even chauffeuring him around in a Benz! Last time, it had been a Ferrari!

Now, all the pieces fit into place!

“Hmph!” Victor snorted. “Gerald, you always seemed like such a nice guy. To think that you were up to something like this... and Mila’s supposed to be best friends with a loser like you?”

The crowd exploded into chaos.

“Wahaha, he’s the king of gigolos!”

“He’s a little fairer than usual, but no God among men. How could he be so popular with so many babes?”

“Ah, you must not know this, but... some women like this type of guy!”

Everyone was abuzz with chatter.

Fuming with rage, Luke was ready for a fight.

Smack!

And yet, it was Jane who vehemently slapped Luke across the face.

“What I do is none of your concern. You lot can just scram!” Jane was going hysterical.

Luke had always been annoying, but Jane had still been able to tolerate it. However, if he laid a hand on Mr. Crawford today, she would have killed him before he had any idea what was going on!

“Jane, darling... you struck me... for the sake of your little toy boy, you actually struck me!” Sputtering from the humiliation, his hands were clenched into fists as he turned and stomped away.

As he left, he gave Gerald one last warning glare.

People were taking photos on their handphones now, and he didn't dare linger here any longer.

That was when Gerald's phone rang. It was Elena.

What was going on today?! He didn't know anymore.

“Hello?”

He then heard Elena's gentle voice. “Mr. Crawford, I just wanted to inform you that the grand banquet at the end of this month will be taking place aboard the Heaven's Bounty cruise liner. Reservations have already been made, so you have to be there! When Aiden and the others heard you'd be coming, they were overjoyed!”

“Oh, the Heaven's Bounty? That's great!”

“Well then, shall I pick you up on the day, sir?”

“Pick me up? No need. I've got my own car and I should be getting a driving license by this month's end. Just let me know where to go and I'll drive there myself!”

“Very good!”

With the matter concluded, Gerald hung up.

Then, he saw Danny, Jacelyn, Whitney, and Victor all staring at him in awe.

“Heaven's Bounty?” Victor gasped. “You're going to the party aboard the Heaven's Bounty cruise liner later this month?”

“You'll be driving there? Gerald, you have a car?!” Whitney asked in disbelief.

“That event aboard the Heaven's Bounty... If toy boy here weren't completely out of the loop, he'd know that the head of the Mayberry group as well as all the rich kids of the south will be making an appearance there. The whole internet is abuzz over it! What sort of act is he putting on?”

“Hah, he's just trying to save himself some face! Just check him out!”

The gathered onlookers smirked at him as though they watching a loony.

Suffering through all this mockery, Gerald wanted nothing more than to lash out at them.

It would be simple. All he had to do was walk over to the park, get into his Reventon, and drive one lap around the campus. Still, that wasn't his style.

Heh. Well, say whatever you wanted to!

Gerald thanked Jane and then took his leave.

“D*mn it, what’s that toy boy swaggering around for?! I’ll give you a good what-for!” Danny stared daggers into Gerald’s back.

Gerald then made his way to the driving school.

“Gerald!” All of a sudden, Mila’s voice rang out from behind him.

Chapter 97

Gerald turned to look. It was Mila.

“Here to practice driving?” He called out with a smile.

“Yup, yup! I’m taking the second test tomorrow. Oh, yeah! Will you be taking the third test then?” Owing to what had happened last time, she had run off without finishing the second test.

Naturally, she had to retake it.

Gerald nodded in response.

“Great! Let’s go together and hope that we both pass!”

“Sounds good! Let’s go~ To driving practice!” Seeing Mila was cheering him up already.

In the past, he would have been stuttering and stammering around her.

If you wanted to see the world, it was good to have friends in high places.

It really broadened one’s outlook.

They practiced the whole afternoon, and the next day, they each went to take their respective tests.

Things went smoothly for Gerald both in the theory and practical sections.

In just a couple of days, his driving license had been acquired.

As he had made an agreement with Mila, they met up at the gates and went for lunch together.

Since his was a double test, he naturally came out later than her. When he did, sure enough, there was Mila, waiting for him.

Just that, there was a young couple with her as well, and all of them were chatting about something.

Gerald slowly made his way over. All three were engrossed in their conversation, and no one noticed him approach.

“Mila, besides our family gatherings, we almost never see you at all! What are you doing out here all by yourself?” The girl wore a smile, but it didn’t reach her eyes. There was something faintly mocking in her tone.

“That’s right, Irene. We never talk at all! But I must say, you always amaze me... Is this your latest boyfriend?” The way Mila spoke to her was completely off as well.

It was as though they were bitter enemies, always ready to attack on sight!

A lifelong feud!

This last line invoked a slight grimace from the handsome young man beside Irene.

“Mila, no matter how you slice it, I’m a few months your senior. You should show more respect when you speak to me. Have you never learned any manners?” Irene seemed angered.

Certainly, they were both Smiths. Irene’s father was Mila’s uncle. Along with Kyle, they were all cousins.

The thing was, while it was nice to be among people the same age as you, there were pitfalls as well.

Since childhood, the equal standing between both girls had always been a problem. As such, they competed over everything, just as they’d done since they were little girls.

Whether it was about studies or popularity, Mila had always been ahead of Irene.

During family gatherings, one thing the elders always liked to say was, “Irene, you could learn a thing or two from Mila!”

Irene had grown up in Mila’s shadow, and it had made them bitter rivals, always trying to get one up over the other.

They were grown up now, but they still hadn’t gotten over their long-standing grudges.

You could hear it in the way they spoke to each other!

“Mhmm... I know, Mila. You’ve always been a little withdrawn and you’ve got high standards... and for all that, after all these years, not a single boyfriend in evidence. What can you pretend to know about love and heartbreak?”

Irene crossed her arms and went on with a sneer, “Here you are, alone as usual. Kenneth can’t stand being left alone for even a moment and always needs to have someone with him!”

Kenneth Lee smiled shyly, his arm around Irene’s slim waist.

If he helped defeat her hated enemy, perhaps Irene would be in a good enough mood to spread her legs for him!

Indeed, this line of conversation was starting to upset Mila.

She had been single all this while, unimpressed by all hopeful comers.

She hadn’t expected that she would bump into her cousin Irene while taking her driving test here, boyfriend in tow, putting on all kinds of airs...

Chapter 98

After years of bitter rivalry, even the smallest conflict could lead to explosive consequences.

Mila was on the verge of losing it... but there was nothing she could say.

“Mila!”

Gerald had been watching from a distance for a while now. Now that Mila was losing, it was time to join the fray.

“Ah! Gerald!” Mila leaped in shock when she saw him.

He wasn’t supposed to catch her like this with her weakness in full view!

“Whoa, Mila, who’s this?” Irene looked him up and down. Seeing his plain clothes, a smile bloomed across her face. All her own friends were people of note. Mila, on the other hand, was keeping this kind of company...

And the casual way he called out to her... Did that mean that something was going on between them?

“This is my friend, Gerald. What about it?” Mila announced without reservation.

“Oho, and here I was thinking that this might be your brother-in-law, Irene!” Kenneth was holding out his hand to show off his watch, a golden Rolex, by way of challenging Gerald to a cockfight.

But if he was just a friend, then never mind.

“How could that be, Kenneth?” Irene cried out in mirth. “How could Mila have possibly found herself a boyfriend being the ice queen that she is! Besides, just take a look at this friend of hers... what is he even wearing? Mila’s boyfriend, indeed!”

She attacked Mila viciously, never sparing a thought for Gerald’s feelings. Evidently, she already regarded him as less than nothing.

“Haha...” Faced with these insults, Mila was strangely more pleased than vexed. “How wrong you are, Irene. Gerald and I are more than just friends—we’re going steady!”

With that, Mila traipsed over to Gerald and embraced his arm.

This soft sensation... it set his whole body quivering.

So now, he had become Mila Smith’s boyfriend?

It was something he had always desired, but he had never imagined his dream coming true thanks to such a turn of events.

It was a complicated tangle of emotions he was experiencing right now.

Meanwhile, Irene and Kenneth were both dumbstruck.

“Heh... Mila, you’re just saying that to get a rise out of me, right? Even if you’re out of your mind and wanting to get a boyfriend so you can keep up with me, perhaps eventually even a husband to give you the good life, he would still have to be a somebody, am I right? Not something like... him.”

“By the way, I guess I haven’t properly introduced Kenneth to you yet. He’s the heir to the Lee family enterprise. Do you know what car he drives? A Ferrari. By this token alone, Mila, you’ve already lost to me!”

Irene was red in the face now.

Well, now... Mila, you've never been willing to admit defeat to me, huh? Show me what you've got, then! We'll see who gets the last laugh!

Sure enough, Mila refused to back down. "Heh! And what does that mean? My boyfriend, Gerald, is a wealthy heir in his own right. He just doesn't parade it around everywhere unlike some people's boyfriends who can't stop showing off!"

Mila was gripping both of Gerald's hands tightly. She was really putting herself out there right now.

"Ahaha! What? This Gerald guy is rich? He's just keeping a low profile?" Irene guffawed raucously. "You've got me there, Mila, you've truly beaten me this time! In this respect, I definitely can't hold a candle to you!"

Meanwhile, Gerald's heart was steeped in doubt.

A moment ago, he had been amazed at how serious a childhood rivalry could be. Not even a goddess like Mila could rise above it.

Calling him her boyfriend... it was only for the sake of this contest with Irene.

However, that last thing Mila said had caught him completely off-guard!

"Mila, did you already know about it?" He had been agonizing over how to reveal the truth to his friends, but now that she had said it herself, he felt a great weight lifted off his shoulders.

Taken aback, Mila asked, "Did I already know about what?"

"About me being a wealthy heir!"

Chapter 99

"What did you say? Wealthy heir, are you?! Hahaha!" Irene was thoroughly enjoying herself now.

Mila had always been untouchable, beyond anyone's reach... to think that she would have picked such an oddball as her boyfriend!

What a moron.

Kenneth was sneering as well. "In that case, Gerald, if I may be so bold, what sort of work do you do? Which field is your family involved in?" As he said this, he brandished his wristwatch again, as though worried people might fail to notice his Rolex.

Gerald regarded the two of them coldly. "You don't deserve to hear about my family business."

"Bwahahahahaha!" Clutching their bellies, they burst into laughter.

Mila tugged gently on his shirt, pleading for him to stop talking.

She had said all of that just now because she had been in a panic. She hadn't expected Gerald to take the ball and run with it.

Mila was well aware that Gerald came from modest means and was always getting bullied too. It was just that he had won a lottery later on.

Still, lottery or no, he was nowhere near someone like Kenneth Lee.

She had just wanted to stand up to Irene.

Instead, this had only made things worse!

As the four of them were wrestling with their own inner demons...

Bang!

A bottle was hurled to the ground in rage.

"I don't care, I don't care! I just want my license! I want to start driving today! I don't care what you have to do as long as it gets me my driving license!"

Gerald glanced over.

A young woman in her twenties was throwing a tantrum at her boyfriend, and both were fashionably dressed.

The girl had probably failed her test, hence, her current mood.

"Calm down, Mina. I'll think of something. Maybe I can pull some strings and get that license issued for you somehow!"

"Hmph! That's more like it. It's not fair that all the other girls can get theirs so easily. Anyone could see that there was something wrong with my car, otherwise, how else could I have screwed up reverse parking?! Aaah! I have to be in your Lamborghini Gallardo as soon as possible so I can show off at my old school!"

Mina was losing her mind while the guy was just trying to reason with her.

Gerald sighed gently. Those two seemed familiar but he couldn't quite place his finger on it just at the moment.

"Sean, Mina!" Kenneth called out cheerfully.

"Oh? Kenneth, you know that big guy with the Lambo?" Irene asked, combing her hair a little.

"Yup. Sean Girard, my senior back at Sunnydale University. His family is in dairy, they're old money. When I checked up on him recently, he had just bought a Gallardo for almost six hundred thousand dollars. Holy cow!" Kenneth was clearly delighted to be acquainted with such a personage.

"Wow! Half a million for a sports car! That's awesome!" Irene was seeing stars now.

Kenneth's Ferrari had only cost a trifling hundred thousand or so.

This new guy sounded very sexy.

Kenneth took a moment to tidy his clothes and then hurried over to say hi.

"Kenneth, so it's you!" As he approached, Mina stopped her boo-hooing instantly, and everyone began exchanging pleasantries.

“What a coincidence! Come to think of it, it’s been years since graduation, huh? Yo, let’s see, here... You’ve got a Ferrari? Looking good!” Sean laughed wryly.

“What’s my car compared to your Lamborghini? Oh, right—have you got it here now? I’d love to see it up close!”

Clinging to Kenneth’s arm, Irene gave Sean a little smile.

That counted as a greeting too.

Chapter 100

“Oho, you must be Kenneth’s girlfriend, Irene! My car is right over there, haha! Look all you want, it’s nothing special. Half a million, barely worth anything! After you’ve finished your inspection, let’s all go grab a bite to eat!” Saying this, Sean led them off jovially.

“Hey, hey! Mila, don’t you want to see it too? Oh, that’s right... best not to, perhaps. Even if you saw it, it’s not like your boyfriend could afford one for himself. Not like Kenneth, who has a Ferrari. Also, also, Mila... Do you need some spending money? I hope you understand. If it were not for Sean offering to treat us to a meal, I’d ask Kenneth to give you guys a lift. However, since we’ll be leaving with Sean in a bit, if you need some cash for a taxi, all you need to do is ask!” Irene hugged herself and giggled.

She absolutely had to capitalize on every advantage.

Coming from anyone else, Mila wouldn’t be troubled. But this girl, whom she had always beaten at everything over all these years, to finally be lording it over her like this... it irked her all the way to her bones.

“Who cares! No one wants to see it, anyway!” Mila was spitting fire and was just about to drag Gerald away with her.

“Let’s go see!” Gerald suggested suddenly, rubbing his nose with a grin.

Firstly, it felt as though Mila was curious to see this Lamborghini herself, and she definitely didn’t want to walk away still fuming over Irene.

Secondly, Gerald himself wanted to see it. He was interested in making a comparison against his own Lambo!

More importantly, there was something very familiar about those two...

“Alright, alright, let’s all go have a look. But Sean is only friends with Kenneth, don’t expect him to treat you guys as well!” Irene grinned.

Gerald then led Mila over to join everyone.

The moment he clapped eyes on that Gallardo, a memory came flooding back to him!

No wonder he felt as though he’d seen them before.

These two had been with that salesperson, back when Gerald had been shopping for his car!

The girl had been wearing heavy make-up at that time. Today, she'd had to take a test, so she was only wearing light make-up. That was why he had failed to make the connection right away.

He could remember this Mina girl sitting in the car, refusing to get out.

Haha, what a small world!

"I say, you can really tell this sports car cost over half a million. It's simply majestic! It's something else!"

"Sean, will we all be going in your car later?" Irene cooed enviously.

"No problem! Oh? Kenneth, are these two here your friends?" Sean turned when he noticed Gerald and Mila.

Of course, the one he noticed wasn't Gerald, but rather, the invigorating, captivating, and otherworldly beauty named Mila.

Gorgeous. Even more of a looker than Kenneth's girlfriend, Irene.

"Hoho, this is my younger cousin, and that loser beside her is her boyfriend!" Irene announced sourly.

She put particular emphasis on the word 'boyfriend' as though she wanted everyone to pay close attention to that fact.

"I see!" Sean smiled brightly and walked up to shake hands with Mila.

Put off by the unconcealed lust in his eyes, she backed away from him.

Sean's handshake was intercepted by Gerald, instead. "How do you do?"

"Argh!" Sean frowned darkly, annoyed to be shaking hands with some bum. Deflating somewhat, he glanced at Gerald briefly. "How do you—the hell?! You again?!"

He instantly recognized Gerald and stood there stunned. In fact, he was shaking with disbelief.

Not that Gerald was ugly by any measure, but stick him in a crowd and he'd blend right in, especially with the sort of clothes he typically wore. He wasn't the eye-catching sort of guy.

It was only at this moment that Sean had detected his presence here and was paralyzed by this discovery.

This was the Mr. Crawford who had put down nearly three million for a car without so much as batting an eyelash!

"Why, Mr. Crawford! What a pleasure to see you again!" Sean shook his hands enthusiastically.

"What, what?" Irene gabbled.

"Sean, what did you just call him?!"

Chapter 101

"Mr. Crawford, here to accompany your girlfriend for her driving test, are you?"

That day, Sean had already discovered the truth about Gerald.

Just imagine... Two and a half million dollars, all without breaking a sweat.

That was true wealth.

Sean had also heard other rumors. Although they were not directly related to the mysterious Mr. Crawford, he now knew that the manager of the Lamborghini dealership was someone of note within the Mayberry group.

Even he had shown so much deference toward Gerald. It was clear that he was not your ordinary guy!

“No, no... we’re both taking the test!” Although both these people had been rude to him before, seeing this well-mannered reception now, he responded with courtesy in kind.

Irene and Kenneth were utterly confounded by all of this.

This was Sean they were talking about?! Why was he showing such reverence for a penniless wretch like Gerald?!

How could they not be surprised by this?

“In that case, how about this, sir? I just so happen to be headed in the direction of Mayberry University. May I offer you a ride?” Sean said amicably.

He had to make good with someone like Mr. Crawford. It would be of tremendous benefit to him.

Well, since he was going their way... Gerald had no objections, and Mila was okay with it too.

Just like that, Irene and Kenneth were left standing there, gawking as they were left behind.

“That Gerald... Do you suppose Mila was telling the truth? About him being a wealthy heir in secret? Why else would Sean have treated him that way?” Irene’s expression was a sight to behold.

This should have been a rare chance to knock her nemesis down a peg or two. Let her enjoy the bitter taste of defeat for once. Let her know the shame of not even being able to hold up her head.

Vulgar though it may be to be flaunting one’s boyfriend and money, as long as it was something she had that Mila didn’t have, that was reason enough!

Irene was stomping mad.

“Hmph! Irene, don’t be so quick to jump to conclusions,” Kenneth muttered grimly. “I have my own connections in Mayberry University. Just hold on while I get to the bottom of this and find out which hole this Gerald person crawled out from!”

After all, it wasn’t just Irene who had lost out this time. Gerald had greatly offended Kenneth as well!

As Sean dropped Gerald off, he also bald-facedly asked for his contact information.

A shrewd fellow, this guy. Since he had just done Gerald a favor, Gerald could hardly refuse.

Just as well. Better another friend than another enemy!

Turning down an offer of a meal as well, Gerald and Mila walked side-by-side back to campus.

Truth be told, it wasn't the first time they had walked together like this.

Just, it hadn't been this awkward the last time.

After all, Mila had just named him her boyfriend.

Gerald was not such a fool that he would be delighted at the prospect of being a decoy boyfriend, but the strange thing was that he genuinely did harbor feelings for her, and for a brief moment, she had been his.

What a paradox. He wanted to be happy about this, but he shouldn't be. And yet, he wasn't displeased about having been used.

Anyway, that was how he was feeling about all of this.

"Gerald, I'm sorry... What happened just now, I just lost control of myself, so I told them that you were my boyfriend without even asking for your permission!" Mila was embarrassed about this whole thing herself.

"It's alright. Isn't this great, though? You defended your pride, and for well over an hour, I had a ravishing beauty as my girlfriend!" Gerald said wryly.

Mila glanced over at him. "Gerald, when did you learn to be such a sweet-talker like all those other guys? I hate that sort of thing!"

"Does that mean you hate me too, now?" With all the exciting twists and turns that were transpiring today, Gerald was speaking more boldly with each passing moment. Gone were the doubts of before.

"Hmph! While I hate that type of guy, it's alright if it's you. I couldn't hate you if I tried!"

Chapter 102

These words made Gerald feel very happy inside.

"But Gerald, I feel that you are hiding something from me. That Sean does not look like an ordinary person at a single glance. Why is he so respectful to you? No, he is not only respectful but it seems as though he is flattering you."

Mila could not take it anymore. She felt that Gerald was becoming even more and more confusing.

In fact, this was exactly the reason why Gerald eventually became friends with Sean.

During their entire conversation, as long as Sean did not mention it, Gerald would never say that he bought the Reventon.

It made Gerald feel that he knew how to act accordingly. Gerald learned about this.

At this time, Gerald simply smiled before he said, "Didn't I say this in person? I am actually a top rich second-generation. However, I really do not want to abandon my current lifestyle and friends. That is why I have always lived a low-key life. Of course, Sean has to be very polite to me!"

"Mere puff!" Mila smiled as she said, "Gerald, I realize that you are getting worse and worse. There is no truth in anything that you say at all. However, I will not force you if you do not want to tell me the truth. Okay, I have to go back to the dormitory now. Mr. Crawford, now that you already have your driver's license, I hope that you will hurry up and buy a luxury car so that you can take me for a drive!"

Mila blinked, as she pretended to be full of admiration for him.

"Don't worry. I will definitely take you out for a drive!"

Although he knew that Mila did not believe him, Gerald nodded his head. To be honest, he really hoped that his driver's license would be here now. After that, he would be able to drive around for fun.

After bidding farewell to Mila, Gerald returned to his dormitory.

"Damn it, Gerald! What were you doing? Your cell phone was turned off and we could not get in touch with you at all!"

Harper started complaining as soon as Gerald came back.

All of them were very busy changing their clothes at this moment. They were all dressing up as though they were going on a blind date.

"When I went out this morning, my cell phone was already almost out of battery. I turned it off for my driving test. When I turned it on to use my text messaging app, it turned off automatically by itself after a while!"

Gerald replied helplessly as he started charging his cell phone. "Brother Harper, Benjamin, where are we doing?"

"If we did not have to wait for you, we would have left already. Hurry up, Gerald! Change your clothes. We will go downstairs and wait for you!"

Benjamin said as he looked into the mirror to fix his hair.

"What is it? Why are you so mysterious?"

Gerald became very interested.

"Hehehe. It is Hayley's birthday today. She said that she wants to introduce some girls to us, including you! Hurry up! Today is the day where our brothers will no longer be a single man!"

Benjamin was smiling very beautifully like a flower.

"Hahaha. Congratulations, but I..."

"We will kill you if you are not going!"

Before Gerald could even finish his sentence, his group of friends suddenly pounced on him.

"Go, go, go! I did not say that I would not go!"

Gerald smiled bitterly.

He wanted to take a short break.

However, he had no choice but to follow Harper and the rest of the boys to the place where Hayley would be celebrating her birthday.

The location that was chosen was a place called Merlin Manor.

Farm style.

It felt like a picnic, where all of them could just eat, drink and enjoy the scenery together. It was a pretty good place to eat.

Although this was a very simple place, there were many luxury cars parked at the foot of the mountain.

It was obvious that many people with high status and identities liked to come to this place. Firstly, it was quiet and secondly, it was the atmosphere!

It gave people a feeling of returning to the countryside.

“Harper, Gerald, here!”

As soon as Gerald and the rest got out of the car, Hayley and the others were already waiting at the entrance as they waved at Harper and the rest of the boys.

Those in Hayley’s dormitory were all here. There were also a few young and beautiful girls which should be some students having a better relationship with Hayley in her class.

They were all looking in Gerald’s direction.

After all, it was Hayley’s birthday and she already told them that all of Harper’s roommates in his dormitory would be coming here today.

And they were all single.

It so happened that Hayley's friends were also single.

Therefore, the boys and girls obviously only had one clear purpose today. They were all hoping to meet someone worthy of their trust today!

"Gerald, you are here!"

At this time, Alice who was standing next to Hayley, straightened out her hair before she spoke softly to Gerald...

Chapter 103

Alice was always a little awkward whenever she saw Gerald now.

After all, who was the person who looked down on Gerald the most in the past? It was Alice.

Now, the pathetic pauper that she used to despise could most likely be a rich young master.

His identity and status were not that simple.

In short, Gerald could be a really incredible figure.

Alice wanted to get closer to him.

"Well, it is Hayley's birthday today!" Gerald replied as he smiled.

He was not a person who held a grudge, let alone seek revenge on a person who was making peace with him.

Hayley and Harper looked at the both of them before exchanging glances with one another. It seemed as though they wanted to matchmake them on purpose.

At this time, they greeted everyone and welcomed them into the room in the manor.

When they were allocating seats, Harper and Hayley had already obviously discussed this in advance. They deliberately arranged for Alice and Gerald to be seated together.

As for Benjamin and the others, they were also seated next to a group of girls to facilitate communication.

“By the way, why don’t I see Jacelyn around?”

Benjamin looked around, only to realize that Jacelyn was not around. Therefore, he asked about this immediately.

“Jacelyn went out to play with her boyfriend. Every time she goes out with him, it will be for a day and night. Alas, she told us that we do not need to wait for her. She will come by later and she said that she would give us a big surprise then!”

Hayley smiled.

She had deliberately mentioned the fact that Jacelyn has a boyfriend. This was because Harper has already told Hayley that Benjamin has feelings for Jacelyn.

But, how should we say this? Jacelyn seems a little too powerful.

Besides that, Jacelyn already has a boyfriend. Hayley felt that it would be better to tell Benjamin about this matter in advance.

Benjamin let out a languid cry.

The atmosphere was a little awkward.

Alice smiled before she said, "Jacelyn became even more mysterious after she got together with Danny. She kept telling us yesterday that she was going to give us a big surprise but she is still keeping us in suspense now!"

After she spoke, she looked towards Gerald who had not said anything at all, "By the way, Gerald, do you know that Jacelyn has gotten into a relationship with Danny from your class?"

"Yes, I know!"

Of course, Gerald knew. He almost had a conflict with him the other day.

Danny could be regarded as his own enemy. However, Gerald did not want to deal with him because there were too many people there that day.

After thinking about it, Gerald felt that he should teach Danny a severe lesson.

Otherwise, he would be like a fly that is constantly buzzing around him, annoying him to death.

He should just step on it to death!

Very soon, all the food and wine were already served.

Alice was extraordinarily gentle and temperamental. She kept taking food for Gerald and she specifically picked all the dishes that Gerald liked.

To be honest, Gerald was a little moved.

He had already been despised for a long time in the past. Even though Alice has already looked down on him more than once, Gerald did not hate the fact that she was treating him so well now.

Everyone also exchanged glances with one another. It seemed as though if anyone were to end up becoming a couple today, it would be Alice and Gerald.

Moreover, Alice was equivalent to a goddess who was being proactive and chasing after the guy instead!

“My dear, sorry that we are late!”

The door of the room was suddenly pushed open. At this time, Danny and Jacelyn came in, followed by a young man who looked about the age of twenty-five years old.

Jacelyn said out loud.

“Jacelyn, we have been waiting for you! Why are you only here now? Danny, please have a seat too. Who is this?”

Hayley looked at the handsome young man who was standing behind them.

“Oh! Oh! This is Danny’s cousin, Chad. His family is doing some business. The three of us went out to play together. When he knew that we were in a hurry, he offered to drive us here!”

Jacelyn said with a smile.

“Hello, everyone. I used to study at Sunnydale University too. I graduated about two years ago so I can still be considered your peer! Hehehe. Okay, since I have already sent my brother and sister-in-law here, I will go back first. You guys should have fun! Just give me a call if you need me for anything!”

Chad smiled before he shook the Maserati car key that he had in his hand.

“Since you are Jacelyn’s cousin brother, then Brother Chad, don’t leave. Anyway, there is an extra seat here!”

Hayley said politely.

This was because if they were to ask him to leave directly, it would not look good for Jacelyn too. After all, they were living in the same dormitory. It was just an extra seat, anyway.”

“Wouldn’t I be intruding, then!”

Chapter 104

”It’s okay, cousin brother. Just sit down. After all, I really cannot bring myself to announce the big surprise today if you are not here!”

Jacelyn smiled and her eyes suddenly turned cold as she glanced at Gerald who was in the room with them.

She had a smug and arrogant look on her face.

“Jacelyn, what the hell is this big surprise? You have already been keeping us in suspense for such a long time. Hurry up and tell us!”

“Yes, what is it about?”

All of her roommates were already impatient.

When Gerald saw that Jacelyn’s gaze was fixed on him, he suddenly understood something.

Oh my! Was the so-called big surprise directly related to him?

“Of course! I am going to tell everyone about it now!”

Jacelyn smiled triumphantly as Danny glared coldly at Gerald.

“I will start with you!”

Jacelyn walked directly over to Gerald before giving him a slap across his face.

He was stunned. This woman was really dying to be taught a lesson!

Gerald stood up as he stared at Jacelyn.

D*mn it! Did she just slap him without any explanation?

“Look? Gigolo! Pathetic jerk! Scumbag! What do you think you are looking at?”

Jacelyn crossed her arms in front of her chest and she looked very proud and arrogant at this moment.

Gerald, you are very awesome, right?

You, Gerald, used to make us lose face in front of you, right?

I, Jacelyn, used to think that you, Gerald, were really awesome. I even flattered you all the way but you were cold to me in the end. You looked down on me, right?

Hahaha...

For this reason, Jacelyn had been depressed for a short while.

It was only until some time ago that Jacelyn specifically decided to hook up with Gerald’s mortal enemy, Danny just to annoy and make Gerald angry.

Just the day before yesterday, she discovered that Gerald was not the young rich second-generation Mr. Crawford at all! He was just a gigolo! A gigolo!

Danny even consulted with Victor and Whitney about the situation at that time.

They discovered that Gerald was not only the gigolo of Jane, who was working as a receptionist at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, but he was also another young lady's gigolo!

Nowadays, there were too many handsome young men who were very pretentious and wanted to act as though they were really wealthy. Therefore, it was not surprising that many rich women would be interested in a handsome and honest young man like Gerald.

However, it was Gerald's fault if he used this fact to act as though he was really amazing!

"Jacelyn, what are you doing?"

Before Hayley could speak, Alice stood and spoke up for Gerald with a puzzled expression on her face.

"Oh, Sister Alice, why are you still speaking up for him? The reason why I hit Gerald is because of you! Amongst all of us, you are the one who has seriously been deceived by Gerald!"

Jacelyn stomped her feet anxiously.

"What are you talking about?"

"He, he... Gerald is not who we thought he was! Gerald is nothing more than a gigolo who is taken care of by some other women. Those women did not only drive him around, but they also gave him money and bought all sorts of things for him!"

"Moreover, some of these women are hotshots at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment! Otherwise, how else could Gerald possibly bring us into the villa the other day?"

Jacelyn revealed everything that she had seen with her own eyes and all the speculations that she had come up with, all in one breath.

Everyone was stunned and they looked at Gerald in disbelief after listening to her words.

“I can testify that the Jane that I was chasing after has a lot of connections with many big and powerful men in Mayberry City. I am not afraid that anyone will laugh at me or treat me as a joke. The reason why I was so chasing so anxiously after Jane is actually because of her connections and resources! I felt that it would be very helpful for my career!”

“Unexpectedly, Gerald is already being taken care of by Jane. Besides, I heard Victor, the vice president of the Student Union, saying that in addition to Jane, there was a young woman from a large chain of commercial buildings who gave Gerald some things too!”

Chad stood up as he sneered.

“How is this possible? How can it be possible?”

Alice could not believe it.

All the girls were also stunned because they did not know what to do.

After all, they have always thought that Gerald was a very mysterious young man. To be honest, even though they knew that they could not be compared to Alice, they were all secretly fighting to gain his attention.

As a result, the atmosphere ended up being so awkward and embarrassing when they have already put in the effort and taken a step forward.

“I can testify about the clothes!”

At this time, another girl stood up.

Chapter 105

The person who stood up was Hayley.

At this time, she had a very complicated feeling in her heart.

She only knew that Gerald was Harper's good brother.

However, she really did not expect Gerald to hide everything from them or to deceive them for so long.

Therefore, she felt that it was necessary for them to tell everyone whatever she knew.

And Harper was the one who told her this.

"There is a woman who bought clothes for Gerald and she spent more than fifteen thousand dollars on it! In fact, the clothes that I am wearing today are the clothes that the young woman had given to Gerald. After that, Gerald gave it to Harper!"

"Hayley, what are you talking about?"

Harper was anxious.

In fact, Harper had been joking around with Hayley in the past.

He said that his brother, Gerald really had a way with women. He could get them to buy him anything that he needed without even blinking his eyes at all. He also mentioned that Gerald could have been kept by that woman. Harper joked that he also wanted to be kept by a woman.

At that time, Hayley said that she would castrate him if any girl dared to treat him so nicely!

Hayley scolded him in anger.

This was all a joke that neither one of them took seriously at that time.

However, combined with these things in the past and with everything that Jacelyn had witnessed with her own two eyes, Hayley was really starting to believe it.

Gerald was being kept by a woman!

Harper was afraid that Gerald would continue to become everyone's target. Therefore, he hurriedly stopped Hayley as he asked her not to say any more nonsense!

"Hey, Alice! Do you believe that I am not lying to you now? That is hundreds of thousands of dollars, not to mention the fact that Gerald used his shopping card to buy a bag that is worth fifty-five thousand dollars! I wonder which woman was the one who gave that to him!"

"What was Gerald doing with all that money? He was trying to go after you, Alice! He wanted the goddess, Alice, to be chasing after him, and he wanted you to finally give yourself to him willingly!" Jacelyn replied coldly.

If she did not see Jane being so kind to him and being so protective and caring towards him, Jacelyn would never believe that Gerald was being kept by a woman.

But now, she completely believed it!

Gerald was too scheming.

"What?"

Alice turned pale because she was utterly shocked when she heard these words.

The other girls were also all in shock.

“Oh my God. It turns out that Gerald is secretly in contact with so many other girls. I really cannot believe this. I have always thought that he was a very honest and low-key person!”

“Yes, but it is our own fault for being so foolish. If Gerald was really a rich second-generation, then will he still be in this miserable state? Wouldn’t he be able to get any girls that he wanted?”

“Yes, yes, everything makes sense if he was a gigolo. This is the method that Gerald uses to become a gigolo that is kept by others. He makes people think that he is very innocent and pitiful. In actual fact, he actually has a very dirty heart! He is nothing but a scumbag!”

All of the girls in the group started to look at Gerald differently in an instance.

Hahaha.

Gerald could only laugh bitterly inside.

He was surprised.

He was really surprised at two main points.

Firstly, he really did not expect that Jacelyn, Alice, and the other girls had always been so worried and concerned about his identity. Moreover, Jacelyn was even investigating and looking into his background everywhere.

It seemed as though it was really difficult for them to accept the fact that a person who had constantly been despised and looked down upon by them, would actually turn out to be a rich person overnight.

The second point that really surprised Gerald was Jacelyn’s reasoning and deducing ability.

Some very simple things ended up being a very complicated matter because of Jacelyn’s speculations.

Gerald wanted to explain himself.

Jane was simply a staff member working for the manor and Elena was just the daughter of one of his subordinates. As for the purchases that he made using the universal shopper's card, that was given to him by his own sister.

However, Gerald knew that even if he tried to explain himself, Jacelyn would never believe him.

Moreover, she would continue insulting him and she would even insult his sister at that point.

If anyone dared to insult his sister, Gerald would definitely not be able to bear it.

Today was also the birthday banquet of his good brother, Harper's girlfriend. He could not simply say or do whatever that he wanted to!

So, Gerald felt very tangled and complicated inside.

After thinking about it, Gerald decided to just forget it for the time being. He would be getting his driver's license tomorrow. By that time, everything would be resolved!

This was because Gerald has decided that it was time for a showdown!

"You can think whatever you want to think about me. Anyway, I, Gerald Crawford, have a clear conscience!"

Gerald replied faintly.

However, this sentence made everything think that Gerald was simply admitting it in default.

Boom!

At this time, Alice was so angry that she kicked the stool behind her.

Yes. Today, she, Alice, had undoubtedly become the joke to everyone at the scene once more!

Chapter 106

She did indeed have a good impression of Gerald because she felt that Gerald did not only have a good personality, but he was also very practical. Moreover, it seemed as though his background was not as simple as it looked.

She could actually consider getting into a relationship with Gerald and the both of them could become boyfriend and girlfriend.

For this reason, Alice took this initiative to approach Gerald without any hesitation at all.

She wanted to draw Gerald's attention to herself again.

But the result was...Ahh! She did not want to say anything anymore!

"Hayley, I am going to the washroom!"

She was dumbfounded and quickly came up with an excuse to leave the room.

After that, Jacelyn followed anxiously behind her.

After all, she felt that she was also responsible for the reason why Alice ended up this way.

No one spoke at all in the room.

There was silence in the room for at least ten minutes.

Finally, Harper broke the silence. "No matter what everyone thinks, deep down in my heart, I believe that Gerald is not that kind of person!"

What he said to Hayley in the past was really just a joke between lovers.

However, he never expected Hayley to take his words so seriously.

"We believe in Gerald too!" Benjamin and the other guys also nodded as they looked at Gerald.

"Come on, everyone. Let's have a drink together!"

Harper suggested.

As a result, none of them raised their glasses aside from Gerald's roommates.

Gerald felt very embarrassed at this time. Alice had already run away out of anger, and he was already at this point again now.

A good and pleasant birthday banquet had turned out this way.

Moreover, it was all because of him. If he continued to stay here, he was afraid that he would cause any further embarrassment for Harper and Hayley.

If he knew that this would happen, he would not have come at all!

Gerald was about to say that he would also be leaving.

At this time, the door of the room was suddenly pushed open. It was Jacelyn who was rushing into the room in a hurry, and she was covering her face with her hand.

“Danny, I got hit! They are dragging Alice along with them now. They want to force Alice to accompany them and drink with them!”

“What?”

Danny was taken aback when he heard that his girlfriend had been hit. This was really shameful and humiliating.

He looked at Chad hastily.

Chad said coldly, “Don’t they know who this land belongs to? They actually dare to act so bold and recklessly? I think that they do not want to live anymore!”

At this time, the two cousins stood up immediately and walked outside with one hand in their pockets.

Harper, Gerald, and the rest of the group also hurried out when they heard that something was wrong.

Gerald found out the ins and outs of the matter as Jacelyn continued yelling about it.

It turned out that when Alice went to the washroom earlier, Jacelyn had followed behind her and she was washing her hand at the basin.

A few young men had walked by and seen that Alice and Jacelyn were both exceptional beauties.

This was especially so for Jacelyn who was dressed very sexily.

A young man who had obviously drunk too much came forward to ask them for their number, even trying to touch them inappropriately.

Alice had given that man a slap across his face directly, and Jacelyn had also hit the man in his head.

After that, the man had slapped Jacelyn, and Jacelyn had quickly run away in a hurry after she had gotten hit.

The young man called a few of his friends to come over before they blocked Alice's way. They kept forcing Alice to drink with them.

Jacelyn kept yelling and shouting as she ran back to the room.

After that, Gerald and the rest rushed over immediately.

At this time, the two parties had already confronted each other.

There were four men who were dragging and forcing Alice to drink with them. They were all quite young and they seemed to be students who were about the same age as them.

Chad kept making phone calls on his cell phone, as though he was calling for backup.

At this time, Jacelyn pointed at the four students as she continued cursing at them.

Although Alice did not get hit, everything that happened today made her feel extremely depressed.

"Today, I am going to deal with each and every one of you. Since you dare to hit my sister-in-law, none of you are going to leave this place unscathed today!"

Chad yelled arrogantly after he made the phone call.

He was very familiar with this scene, and he also knew the owner of this place very well.

The four young men were dressed extraordinarily and they were all very unconvinced and displeased at this time. They really wanted to see what Chad was going to do to them.

“Fa la la!”

Not long after, several vans stopped in front of the entrance.

More than a dozen men with a buzz cut stepped out of the car as they entered the manor. The manor was suddenly crowded with people...

Chapter 107

Chad was very influential.

He had called a dozen people out there.

The four students were all frightened.

They said nothing at all.

Slap!

Jacelyn walked up and raised her hand as she slapped the four of them across their faces.

The four of them were furious but they did not dare to say anything.

“What are you looking at? You dared to hit me? I will teach you a lesson for touching me today!”

“You dared to hit me? If you dare to hit me, just wait and see how I am going to deal with you!”

The leader of these four men was the one who had taken the initiative to try and molest Jacelyn and Alice. He responded aggressively as he held his face with an aggrieved expression.

He was frightened, but he was also very angry.

He rarely ever failed to get any girl that he wanted. However, he really did not expect to get slapped by this beautiful girl before getting slapped by this little shrew.

He had never been insulted and humiliated like this before!

“D*mn it! Does he still want to talk back? Beat them up!”

Chad was very arrogant and full of pride at this moment. As soon as he waved his hand, the crowd of people rushed up and surrounded the four young men.

They started beating them up.

Danny also followed behind them as he hit and kicked those men a couple of times.

The four men got beaten up until they were already holding their heads in their hands as they tried to scurry away. In the end, the boss of the villa stepped in to stop the fight. He pulled them apart before he asked the four young men to leave immediately.

He felt that someone would lose their life if he allowed this to continue!

“Wow! Brother Chad is amazing!”

“Unexpectedly, Brother Chad is really very stable and mature! I did not expect to see this side of him at all!”

“Awesome! He is so cool!”

The group of girls instantly became Chad's fans.

For those who were mixing around, the more power they had, the more they would be able to give a sense of security to these beautiful students.

They had this kind of mentality.

"Brother Chad, thank you for everything today!"

Alice was actually feeling pretty refreshed right now.

The depressed feeling that she had before had already been completely wiped out.

To be honest, she really liked those who were mature and stable in the past.

However, at this point, she suddenly felt that the more arrogant and domineering a person was, the better it would be. This was because only this kind of person would be able to give her a great sense of security.

What about someone like Gerald?

Oh my God. Why did she suddenly think of him again? It was simply a waste of her time!

"It's okay, Alice. We should exchange phone numbers later so we can keep in touch in the future!"

Chad smiled as he looked at Alice. In fact, he had already noticed Alice a moment ago, and he felt that this girl was really very beautiful.

The more he looked at her now, the more he felt that she was even more and more beautiful.

In fact, any ordinary man would be moved at a single glance when they saw a beautiful woman like Alice.

“Okay, it’s okay! Let’s go back into the room and continue our party!”

Chad smiled heartily.

“Ah? We are going to continue our party? Brother Chad, shouldn’t we be leaving?”

“Yes! What if someone over there decides to come back to seek revenge?”

Some of the girls were worried.

“Hey! Who do you think Brother Chad is? So, what if they came back to seek revenge?”

Jacelyn replied proudly as she reapplied her makeup and looked in the mirror. After all, her makeup had been smudged when she cried after getting hit earlier.

“That’s right. Why should we be afraid when we have Brother Chad here with us?”

“Come, let’s go! We should go back in and celebrate Hayley’s birthday!”

The girls were all relieved.

“Alright then, Hayley. I will be going back first. I wish you a happy birthday!”

Gerald did not want to continue staying here any longer.

“Yes. Thank you, Gerald. I will call for a cab to take you back!”

Alas, Hayley was powerless.

Hayley was close to everyone in Harper's dormitory including Gerald because of her relationship with Harper.

However, since something like this had already happened, it would be very difficult for Gerald if she insisted that he stayed.

In fact, the reason why Hayley spoke out against Gerald earlier was because she was a little angry when she found out that Gerald was actually a gigolo and had lied to all of them.

However, her anger had already dissipated, and she suddenly felt a little sympathy for Gerald.

Perhaps, even a good person would be driven crazy if they have been poor for too long!

"No, it's okay. I can call for a cab and go home myself!"

Gerald nodded with a wry smile on his face.

Chapter 108

"Get lost! Get lost as soon as possible! I feel sick when I see you!"

Jacelyn yelled unceremoniously.

Alice did not say anything this time. She simply turned around as she returned to the room. Since the person who made her feel sick and disgusted was already gone, she naturally did not have to leave anymore.

Gerald walked alone on the campus.

He was thinking about all the recent events.

It was Gerald's nature to be low-key. Even if he had money, Gerald could not be as arrogant or domineering as Aiden and the others. Gerald would never be as extravagant as this.

However, being low-key was not necessarily the best option.

Just like this time, Gerald did not know how much wrong he had suffered.

Did he really have to make his wealth known to the public?

Gerald could only smile bitterly in his heart.

At this time, he suddenly received a text message in his class group chat.

It was an announcement made by Cassandra.

"Classmates, Xavia has already dropped out of school because of certain things!"

"What? Xavia dropped out of school?"

"Oh my God! When did this happen?"

"It should be because of Yuri. If you think about it, the incident involving Yuri really had a huge impact on Xavia. Xavia will definitely feel very ashamed to continue living in the school. Therefore, dropping out of school will definitely be her best choice!"

"Yes. Xavia has always loved her face the most. First, she dated that pauper..."

"Withdraw!"

“Yes, Xavia really loved face the most. First, she dated Gerald. After that, she got together with Yuri. As a result, Yuri is not any better compared to Gerald. He was simply borrowing money because he had no money. At the very least, Gerald has some money now because he won the lottery!”

“Hmm, if I were Xavia, I would have no face to continue attending school anyway! Ahh!”

After the news was revealed in the group chat, everyone continued discussing this matter.

It seemed as though this result was really unexpected.

Gerald was stunned as he held his cell phone in his hand.

Gerald was heartbroken when he saw the news that Xavia had dropped out of school.

After all, both of them had gone through three years of college together.

He could still vividly remember the beautiful memories during that period of time.

Gerald was also blaming himself at this time.

He knew the reason why Xavia dropped out of school very well.

If he did not stimulate Xavia at the manor the other day, Xavia would have probably continued her studies.

After all, they were about to graduate.

If he did not say those heartless and unfeeling words to her that day, Xavia would not be so discouraged.

As he thought about the desperate look in Xavia's eyes the other day, Gerald felt his heart aching a little.

Were his insults to her too serious?

Gerald could only blame himself and he regretted it a little as he was filled with self-reproach.

This was especially so when Gerald unknowingly walked to the small lake on campus.

This was the place where he had his first date with Xavia.

Since Gerald was poor, he could not afford to bring her to a café for a date.

He could still remember that he came late that day and he made Xavia wait for more than ten minutes for him.

However, Xavia did not blame him at all. Both of them had held hands as they walked around the small lake in circles, one after the other.

They did not chat a lot, but both of them were silent, and they did not say anything most of the time. He would glance at her and she would glance at him from time to time.

It was not the same kind of love that you witnessed on television.

However, Gerald had a taste of love because of this.

Gerald clearly remembered that they had said that they would get married after their graduation, and both of them would return to this small lake to take their wedding photos then!

Those were really the good and wonderful days!

However, after some experiences, Xavia had changed completely. In fact, Gerald was also a different person now.

Gerald did not know whether he felt sorry for the Xavia he knew before, or whether he felt sorry for the Xavia now.

In short, he was very upset.

After that, Gerald called Xavia because he wanted to persuade her. As a result, the call could not get through, and Xavia had already canceled her phone number.

He could not reach her on her QQ account or text messaging app.

“She’s really gone!”

Gerald sat down by the lake as he was momentarily at a loss.

At this time, he suddenly received a phone call on QQ.

Gerald picked up his cell phone and realized that it was a phone call from Xavia’s roommate, Felicity.

“Where are you?”

Felicity’s tone was very cold, but she had always been this way toward Gerald.

“The small lake...” Gerald replied.

“Oh, oh! Wait there for me. Before Xavia left, she asked me to tell you something in person!”

Chapter 109

Felicity arrived at the small lake quickly.

She was wearing a short skirt, her long hair draping over her shoulders. She had bright and fair skin, and she really looked like a popular internet celebrity.

However, unlike any other internet celebrities, Felicity's beauty was truly natural.

Gerald had already seen Felicity without any makeup, and she could definitely be regarded as a beauty amongst all other beauties.

Hehehe. In fact, Gerald felt a little embarrassed as he thought about this. During their freshman year, Felicity had been sitting in front of Gerald.

Gerald secretly liked Felicity too!

Unfortunately, compared to other girls, Felicity's standards for guys were really high.

Yuri, who was rich and wealthy, and even Victor, who had pursued Felicity desperately, had both been ignored by her!

Not to mention Gerald.

"Well, well, you really are sitting by the lake very leisurely all by yourself! Xavia asked me to pass a message to you!"

Felicity spoke coldly as she crossed her arms across her chest.

"What did she say?" Gerald asked.

"She said that she will come back sooner or later, and she will definitely make you feel embarrassed, Gerald. She asked you to wait for it!"

Gerald lowered his head. It seemed as though he had really irritated Xavia this time.

She probably really hated him to death now.

However, as he thought about it, he felt that it was a good thing. Xavia would probably not be doing anything bad in the future. No matter what it was, everything was good as long as she was fine!

“Oh!” Gerald responded.

“Hey! It looks as if you were the one who chased Xavia away. What did you do to embarrass her?”

Felicity scanned Gerald up and down.

Even if Gerald had already won the lottery, Felicity did not care too much about it.

“Nothing much!”

Gerald’s mind was in a messy and confused state. Besides, it would not be good for him to talk about the events that had happened that day, let alone tell Felicity about it.

This person would definitely talk about all of his affairs in her live broadcast.

It would not be the first time that she would be doing something like this.

“It is up to you whether you want to say it or not! Anyway, I have already told you the message that Xavia wanted me to pass to you!”

Felicity snorted coldly before she turned around and walked away.

In truth, although Felicity and Xavia were roommates, their relationship was generally so-so.

This was because Xavia was also very beautiful. After all, there could only be one alpha!

However, Felicity felt a lot more relaxed now that Xavia was already gone.

Felicity had also taken care of Xavia's affairs on her behalf.

Gerald continued to stay by the lake. He felt really tired right now. Therefore, he laid down as he used his arms to support his head.

The moment of silence that he enjoyed here could truly calm Gerald's heart down.

Suddenly, he heard the sound of footsteps approaching him.

Immediately after that, there was darkness in front of him.

A figure appeared before his eyes.

She was just standing about one meter in front of him.

Gerald laid down and was stunned when he looked up.

"Hehe. Gerald, since you are so idle, I happen to have something that you can do for me!"

The person who had come back was none other than Felicity.

The reason why Gerald was stunned was simple.

He was lying down at this time and Felicity was wearing a short skirt as she stood in front of him.

Gerald has already seen everything that he should and should not have seen.

Black color!

“Oh my!”

Gerald blushed as he hurriedly stood up.

“What did you say?”

“Hehe. You are really pathetic. You have a bit of money now because you won the lottery but you do not even look like you have any money at all. You look like you have never seen a girl before. Why? You were together with Xavia for so long but nothing happened between the both of you? Based on the look on your face, it is needless to say that nothing more happened!”

Felicity said contemptuously.

She knew the reason why Gerald was blushing. However, Felicity was a very open-minded person, and she did not care about all this.

Chapter 110

She looked down on Gerald's depravity.

“I asked you to do me a favor. Some of the female anchors in our guild will be coming to the campus later. We are going to do some outdoor activities together. I need someone to record the live broadcast for me. So, I want you to come and record the live broadcast for me!”

Felicity said as she handed her iPhone over to Gerald.

Her cell phone was fully equipped. It was specially equipped with additional cameras, radios, and other necessary equipment for an outdoor live broadcast.

This made Gerald feel as though he did not know whether to go or not to go with her.

After all, Felicity had done his ex-girlfriend a favor. Moreover, she had also handed her equipment over to him. He would feel bad if he handed her cell phone back to her now.

He did not know if the fact that Felicity helped his ex-girlfriend had anything to do with him, however, Gerald did not turn down her request anyway.

He simply followed after Felicity anyway.

He could simply forget about Felicity's attitude and the way she obviously looked down on him.

Gerald did not have much feeling for Felicity and he did not really care about her either way.

On the way, Felicity walked in the front as Gerald followed behind her.

"Felicity, when did you sign a contract with the guild?"

Gerald started the conversation randomly, mainly because he was already getting bolder when it came to chatting with girls now.

"Some time ago. Why? Didn't you watch my live broadcast then?"

Felicity replied coldly.

"Which one?"

"You good-for-nothing! I'm talking about that live broadcast where the rich young man in my live broadcast gave me three thousand dollars that day. After receiving the income that day, I got more than

ten thousand followers. After that, I also appeared on the home page, and the people from the guild approached me to sign a contract with me then. It is also a very strong guild!”

“Oh, I see. Congratulations!”

Gerald did not know anything about these live broadcasts.

However, he understood that the reason why Felicity could sign a contract with the guild had something to do with him being in Felicity’s live broadcast room that night.

Gerald remembered that he had recharged fifteen thousand dollars into the live broadcast platform that day.

This was simply because he wanted to fight with Yuri and Danny.

As a result, both of them had already admitted defeat after he had spent three thousand dollars. He had topped up fifteen thousand dollars into the account for no reason at all.

There was a park not too far from the school. Their live broadcast venue was this place. Men and women would often come here in pairs to have fun here.

“Felicity, we’re here!”

Three of four youthful live broadcast beauties who were obviously internet celebrities hurriedly waved at Felicity.

They naturally also brought their assistants along with them.

They came in an SUV.

Gerald was very familiar with this site.

Why was he familiar with it?

This was obviously because Gerald had parked his Lamborghini here.

Their SUV was parked right next to the Lamborghini.

However, the parking spaces on both sides of the car were all vacant. Obviously, no one was willing to park their cars next to the Lamborghini.

Many people were gathered at this place. Gerald really did not expect that so many girls would still come here to take photos with the Lamborghini after so many days.

“All of you are here so early!” Felicity said with a grin as she abandoned the serious expression on her face.

At the same time, she also glanced at the Lamborghini.

The luxury of this luxury car really had a great impact on every girl and boy.

It was really a pity that no one knew who this car belonged to, even after so many days!

But a lot of girls were anxious!

“Yes, Felicity. We came here early. By the way, who is the owner of this sports car?”

The anchors who came over here asked in surprise.

“I don’t know. To be honest, no one in our school knows who the owner of this sports car is! Why? Are you interested in the owner? I heard that the owner is a really wealthy and rich second-generation!”

Felicity smiled.

“Wow! I really want to get acquainted with him if I have the opportunity to do so. If I can get to know someone like that, I will not need to do any live broadcast to earn a living. I will ride in his car and travel around the mountains and world every day!”

“Hahaha! Fool! If I could become this rich man’s girlfriend, I will want to open my own live broadcast guild. After that, I can easily attract all kinds of rich men, and I do not need to continue looking for a rich young master like this!”

“Just look at all of you!” Felicity smiled bitterly.

Although they were joking, Felicity had also imagined being the girlfriend of this rich young man!

“Hahaha, stop acting like a fool! Let’s get back to reality. By the way, Felicity, we will be broadcasting live later and we will need an assistant to help us. Why didn’t you bring an assistant here with you today?”

One of the beautiful girls asked curiously.

“Who said that I did not bring one? Gerald, come here!”

Felicity pointed at Gerald who was holding her cell phone at this time!

Chapter 111

“Ahh? Felicity, is he the assistant that you arranged for?”

The three female anchors were all a little surprised.

Even though Gerald looked pretty handsome, he looked like a country bumpkin because of the way he dressed.

Look at the assistants that they had brought with them instead.

All of them were dressed very nicely, and all of them were very young and handsome.

One of the boys was even a suitor who was pursuing one of the female anchors. He was the one who had driven the SUV here today.

The contrast was simply too great.

After all, this was an outdoor live broadcast. Just look at their faces. To think that they would have to bring a country bumpkin around with them today. Wouldn't that be lowering everyone's grades and standards today?

"Yes. I did not have time to look for an assistant, so I simply dragged one of my fellow students from university here with me!"

Felicity's face was also burning.

She felt very ashamed.

"Hehehe. Let me see, why don't we just ask him to carry all of our belongings as he follows us around then? It's no big deal. I can just hold two cell phones then!"

At this time, one of the boys looked at Gerald as he shook his head with a wry smile on his face.

The disgust in his words was self-evident.

"I think that Hector is right. It will be fine if he just carries our belongings and follows behind us then!"

One of the beautiful anchors said.

“Okay, Gerald. Why don’t you hand my cell phone over to Hector? You can just carry all our things from us and follow behind us from a distance!”

Felicity said hurriedly.

Gerald could not help but feel a surge of anger in his heart. D*mn it. I came here to help you today. Did you really think that I am here to be your hired worker?

However, as he thought about it, since he was already here, there was no point for him to leave right now.

Even if he disliked it, he would simply be leisurely carrying things around for them.

“La, la, la, my dear fans. Good afternoon, everyone!”

“Good afternoon, babies!”

“I am your Sweetie! I missed all of you to death!”

The live broadcast began soon, and the several beautiful girls started their live broadcast with their own opening remarks.

“Hector! Hector! Hurry up and help me aim the camera at this luxury sports car!”

The yellow haired beautiful anchor named Sara Wester exclaimed excitedly.

Felicity also took advantage of this opportunity to come next to the Lamborghini.

They continued talking and laughing.

Gerald watched from the sidelines until he got a little bored. At this time, he took out his cell phone before he logged into Felicity's live broadcast room.

Unexpectedly, her live broadcast room was still very popular.

The comments area was exploding at this time.

"D*mn it! What kind of car is that?"

"It that the Lamborghini Reventon! It costs about three million dollars and is filled with all sorts of luxurious configurations!"

"Yes, the interior design of this car is absolutely world-class! Just take a look at the interior of the car!"

"D*mn it! Can we have a panoramic view of the car? Give us a panoramic view of the car!"

"Who is driving this car? He must be a really wealthy person!"

"This is such a cool sports car! Roar, roar, roar!"

"..."

The live broadcast of all four of the beautiful girls became very hyped.

At this time, no one was focusing on the beauties anymore. Instead, everyone's attention was placed on the car. Felicity and the other girls were all struggling to ask for gifts while satisfying their fans' requests. They filmed the appearance of the sports car from far and near.

They also received numerous gifts at this time.

There was a rich person in Felicity's live broadcast room who gave her nine hundred dollars worth of gifts.

This brought the atmosphere of the live broadcast room to a small climax.

"Thank you, Brother Jazz. I love you, Brother Jazz!"

"..."

An hour passed by just like that.

The four of them did not continue walking around outdoors.

They simply conducted their live broadcasts right next to the Lamborghini.

Each of them had already attracted quite a huge popularity and following at this time.

"Oh, you guys really do not know how to dote or pamper us at all! I need to take a short break now."

More and more fans entered the live broadcast room as they requested to look at the car.

After talking for so long, Felicity and the other girls were already tired.

"Darlings, please be good. I will continue broadcasting live after drinking some water!"

"Sara, did you bring any water with you?"

“No, we did not bring any! Why don’t we buy some? My throat is already dry!”

“Hmm, I am thirsty too! I also feel like eating some watermelon now!”

The female anchors said playfully.

“Well, Gerald, why don’t you go and buy some water and a watermelon for us now? Go!”

Felicity ordered as she pointed her finger at Gerald.

Gerald was going insane.

What was she treating him as?

Alas, speaking of it, he was also feeling a little thirsty after following these girls around. He also felt like eating some watermelon.

Gerald decided to go and buy it out of desperation.

He bought a pack of mineral water, a big watermelon, and a watermelon knife.

Gerald came back carrying a big bag of items with him, and he was really exhausted.

At this time, Felicity and the rest of the girls were still broadcasting live about the prospects of the car.

Chapter 112

“Gerald, hurry up and cut the watermelon! D*mn it. Why did you bring the whole watermelon back here? Are you stupid? Why didn’t you ask the person to cut the watermelon for you before bringing it back to us? I’m speechless!”

Sara also said unceremoniously to Gerald without even regarding him as an outsider at this time.

D*mn it. If all of you have not been so eagerly waiting to eat the watermelon, I would have waited to cut the watermelon there.

D*mn it!

Gerald cursed in secret.

He could only cut the watermelon.

Where should he cut it?

He could not possibly cut it on the ground.

Hmm?

Oh, he got it! He could just use the hood of the car as a fruit table to cut the watermelon! After all, it was not easy for the paint on the Reventon to come off.

As he thought about this, Gerald walked over to the car.

Bang.

He threw a bag of mineral water directly on the hood of the Lamborghini.

After that, he put the watermelon on the hood before he started cutting it with the knife.

This scene caused Felicity and the rest of the girls who were doing their live broadcast to be stunned.

Their live broadcast was also interrupted.

Many of the beautiful girls who came here to take photos of the car also opened their mouths in surprise!

D*mn it!

D*mn it!

D*mn it!

These were the two words that came up in everyone's hearts tacitly!

This person was actually using the front hood of the Lamborghini to cut the watermelon?

"Gerald, are you fucking insane?!"

"Ahh! Take that away right now!"

Felicity turned pale in fright.

She was the first person to speak up.

Gerald must be sick. Absolutely so!

If he cut the watermelon and scratched the Lamborghini whilst doing so, she would never be able to afford to pay for the damages in this lifetime.

"Did this b*stard come here to create trouble on purpose?"

Sara and Hector were also stunned.

Fans in the live broadcast room were all booing at this time.

They said something about one hundred and fifty thousand or three hundred thousand dollars.

“Why are you standing there in a daze? Hurry up and take everything down and wipe the car clean! What if someone finds out about this? You will not be able to leave, then!”

Felicity was filled with regrets. If she could not find an assistant, she should have just spent some money to hire one! Why did she bring Gerald here with her?

Why?!

“Oh, it’s okay. Even if the car is scratched, it’s fine!”

Gerald smiled bitterly.

If the car was really scratched, he was the one who scratched it himself anyway. He did not need to ask anyone for any compensation. Why were they so nervous?

What do you mean it is okay even if the car is scratched? Hurry up and take those things away now!”

Felicity stomped her feet angrily.

Gerald had no choice but to take the watermelon and the pack of mineral water down. He was initially thinking of eating the watermelon like this so that everyone would not need to sit on the floor and eat. He simply wanted them to eat more comfortably.

It seemed as though he had been thinking too much!

Felicity came over and pushed Gerald away. After that, she carefully wiped the car clean with her own wet wipes. After making sure that there were no scratches on the car at all, she was finally completely relieved.

“Felicity, is he from your class? Why don’t you ask him to leave now? It was really a very dangerous scene just now!”

Hector said contemptuously.

The SUV next to this car belonged to Hector, and he seemed rich.

He had already looked down on Gerald as soon as he saw him. However, when Gerald was acting like a fool and almost scratched the luxury sports car, he could feel goosebumps all over his body!

He was really frustrated.

“Yes, Gerald, you can leave now. I was wrong! I, Felicity, really made a mistake by asking you to come with me to be my assistant!”

Felicity spoke in a very direct and blunt manner.

“Okay, I will just take a bottle of water with me then!”

Gerald left after grabbing a bottle of mineral water.

It was rather embarrassing. Gerald thought about taking his car key out and pressing it. That would have been really simple!

However, Gerald felt as though he was putting on a show in front of the netizens who lived in the same city since live broadcasts were going on at the time.

Besides that, he originally did not plan to buy such an expensive car, but he had to do so because he was forced by his sister.

Therefore, Gerald left happily.

He did not want to have too much interaction with Felicity anyway.

Gerald did not go anywhere else this time.

He went straight back to his dormitory and finished gulping down a bottle of water.

Then, he laid in his bed to get some rest.

Shortly after that, Harper and the rest of the boys came back to the dormitory.

“You guys are back so soon. How was the party with Hayley and the others?” Gerald asked with a smile on his face.

“Gerald, it is good that you are also in the dormitory. Let’s go over to Hayley’s dormitory together!”

After coming back, Harper, Benjamin, and the rest of the boys were either flipping through their wallets or making phone calls nervously.

“Ah? What is wrong?”

“D*mn it. Don’t mention it. Alice is in trouble!”

Chapter 113

What could have possibly happened to Alice?

Gerald was surprised.

However, since Harper was asking him to accompany them to Hayley's dormitory, it would not be good for him to turn down his request.

Moreover, Gerald really wanted to go and find out what exactly happened to Alice.

Although this girl made him feel a little touched before this, her attitude had taken a one hundred and eighty-degree turn after Gerald was slandered by Jacelyn.

After all, she was still a friend!

In fact, Gerald was simply making up all sorts of reasons for himself. Even though he said that he did not care about Alice at all, as a normal man, how could he possibly be indifferent to such a beautiful girl?

At Alice's dormitory.

The six boys, including Gerald and Harper, signed in downstairs before they came in.

After coming in, they saw Alice crying as she sat on the bed. Jacelyn was also crying at this time.

Jacelyn's face was pale, and she seemed to be really frightened.

"Alice, Jacelyn, we came here to see you!" Harper replied.

On the way, after Gerald had asked about the matter, Gerald also found out about the ins and outs of this matter.

It turned out that the identities of the four people who were beaten up at the manor were in fact extraordinary.

It would not be an exaggeration to say that one of the young man's family industries was one of the biggest in the whole of Mayberry City.

Aside from Mayberry International Inc., the young man's family business was the best.

Who was this person?

His name was William Rye, and his father's name was Henry Rye. He was one of the biggest real estate bosses in Mayberry City.

It just so happened that even though he was a rich second-generation, William was usually a very low-key person.

He had gone to the manor to accompany a few friends to have a drink that day.

After drinking on a whim, he had seen Jacelyn and Alice. He especially took notice of Alice, who was exceptionally beautiful.

That was the reason why he teased the two girls under the influence of alcohol.

Unexpectedly, he had gotten beat up twice.

Moreover, he was beaten up until he was bloodied all over.

After returning home, William had called for help.

His whole family was shocked at this sight.

Although the parties did not seek revenge directly, Danny, Chad, Jacelyn, and Alice's family received a warning to varying degrees.

Chad's family ran a family business, and all of their supplies had been cut off immediately.

Alice's family also had their own company, and her family was in a similar situation to that of Chad's.

As for Jacelyn and Danny, their parents were also threatened and given a warning.

It felt as though they would have to pay the price for rubbing this person the wrong way.

In short, Alice and the others were all terrified now.

This was because William had threatened to destroy them completely within a month!

"What should I do now? What should I do now? My dad has already contacted a lot of people, but they could not do anything at all!"

Alice was crying desperately.

Jacelyn's parents were also laid off with immediate effect.

"Alice, can't Danny and Chad help with this matter?"

Harper could only ask them this question. After all, he could not do anything to help as he watched from the sidelines.

“Oh, what could they possibly do? I heard that Chad and Danny even went to the other party’s company to look for him. They knelt down and apologized to the other party, but they were subsequently thrown out of the company by the security guards.”

“We really got into big trouble this time. I heard that Danny also slapped himself desperately in front of the other party, but it was all useless!”

Another girl in the dormitory was also very worried.

Alice cried even harder.

Jacelyn was also the same. They did not look as arrogant as they did before.

“Why don’t we call the police, then?”

Benjamin said as he scratched his head.

Who would not know about the Rye family in Mayberry City? They were really awesome and powerful.

Most people could not afford to offend them.

Alice shook her head as she said, “No, it’s no use. Moreover, we were the ones who beat them up in the first place, and they did not fight back at all. Even if we make a police report, we will be the ones getting arrested instead!”

When everyone heard this, they felt that this was indeed the case.

“Don’t be so sad anymore. There will always be a solution to the problem!”

Gerald, who had not spoken at all, suddenly spoke up at this time.

He really did not know how else to persuade them.

Chapter 114

However, he decided to give face to Harper and Hayley. After all, this had happened during Hayley's birthday banquet.

Gerald was intending to ask Zack if he had any good solutions to deal with this matter.

"Ahh? You're here too? Crap! Crap! Crap! Who gave you the courage to come here? Why do you even have the face to show up here?"

Jacelyn lost her temper and got very furious when she heard Gerald's words.

She was even scolding and mocking him now.

Who was the source behind this whole matter?

Wasn't it all because Gerald was a pathetic jerk?

If it weren't because of Gerald, would Alice have felt so ashamed that she had rushed to the washroom immediately?

If Alice did not run to the washroom because she was angry, would she have followed her all the way to the washroom then?

If neither of them went to the washroom, would they have provoked someone of William's background then?

The culprit behind this matter was Gerald!

Yet, he actually had the face to show up here?

Jacelyn jumped off her bed as she raised her hand at Gerald. She really hated this scumbag!

Slap!

The slap that she was planning to give to Gerald did not happen as planned.

As she raised her hand in the air, Gerald stopped her before she could slap him.

“Jacelyn, enough is enough!”

Gerald pushed her to the ground fiercely.

Gerald had a good temper. He usually had a very good temper, but this did not mean that he would not get angry.

He had been belittled by this girl and slapped by her several times.

Xavia was his ex-girlfriend, so he could never bring himself to fight her whenever she slapped him.

But who was Jacelyn to him? Nobody!

Therefore, Gerald could not hold back his anger anymore.

“Ahh! You dared to hit me?!”

Jacelyn acted like a crazy person as she sat on the ground with red and swollen eyes and continued crying.

“Okay, enough! Enough!” Hayley and the other girls hurriedly persuaded Jacelyn.

Alice looked up at Gerald before she sneered and said, “Gerald, did you come here to make fun of us and treat us as a joke?”

Alice really hated Gerald to the core.

However, she did not act as Jacelyn did.

“Alice, Jacelyn, Gerald only came to see how you girls were doing because he heard that something happened to you. Why would he possibly be treating you as a joke?”

Harper hurriedly intervened because he really could not stand it anymore.

“Pfft. What is he doing here if he is not here to make fun of us? I know that he must be holding a grudge against me because I found out that he is a gigolo! I know him too well. To be honest, I even thought of going after him and pursuing him before this!” Jacelyn scolded as she jumped up.

She understood Gerald’s past and was really interested in Gerald.

Jacelyn was about to continue arguing with Gerald. However, at this time, Alice’s cell phone suddenly rang.

“Dad, how did it go? What did the powerful and influential person you asked for help say?”

Alice asked nervously.

Jacelyn had finally calmed down and was listening to Alice attentively.

The only person she could rely on right now was the connections that Alice's family had.

"Dad, don't be sad. If he said that he is busy, perhaps he is really busy. Don't think too much about it. I am still in my dormitory now. Some of my friends came to see me. I am not hungry. No, I have not eaten yet, but I do not have much appetite. No. Ahh? Okay, let me ask them then..."

After that, Alice hung up the phone.

She had a somewhat disappointed expression on her face as she said, "My dad is at the restaurant, and he was trying to ask someone to put in a good word for us, but the other party turned him down because he said that he was busy. My dad is asking me to go over to the restaurant now because he has already ordered a lot of dishes and cannot ask for it to be returned anyway. Why don't we go over there together, then? After all, all of you have been accompanying me throughout the entire afternoon."

After she was done speaking, she looked at Harper and the other boys. "Harper, why don't all of you come with us too? I finally understand what I have to do now. It is useless for us to continue worrying about this matter now. What's the big deal? I will just go over to his company tomorrow and beg William personally!"

"Alice, you...?"

Hayley naturally understood the meaning behind Alice's words. She wanted to stop her but she could not say anything.

Was there any other way out of this?

The crowd of girls went downstairs.

Alice felt very helpless at this time, and what she wanted the most right now was for her father to be by her side.

Jacelyn and the rest of the girls were also very willing to go there. This was because having an adult around them would at least give them a sense of security. After all, all adults were rich in experience.

Therefore, they would certainly be better equipped to deal with this kind of situation compared to these young people.

Harper could not bring himself to turn down her request, so they naturally followed them.

Surprisingly, Gerald did not retreat this time.

He simply followed silently behind them.

No matter what it was, he had already encountered this incident today. Therefore, there was no reason for him to just ignore it!

Chapter 115

Alice's family ran an information company.

Their annual profit was about nine hundred thousand dollars to one million dollars.

It was not very high, but it was already pretty good.

The location of the restaurant was inside a very luxurious hotel. After Gerald and the others entered the restaurant, they realized that Alice's parents had indeed ordered a table full of high-end wine and dishes.

Unfortunately, the person who he really wanted to invite to come over here today was not here at all.

"Alice, you are here!"

George smiled as he stood up. Now that his daughter had caused such big trouble, his company was also in a dire situation now. His company was most likely about to face bankruptcy within a month after William's cruel words and threats.

He would be losing more than ten years of hard work just like that.

He could only force a smile at this time.

“Hello, uncle, auntie!”

Everyone greeted each other.

“Alice, dad wants to ask you something. Didn’t you say that one of your classmates is really amazing? I heard you saying that he has a very strong network and connection with some very powerful people. Is this classmate of yours here with you today?”

George recalled hearing his daughter mention the fact that one of her classmates had a very close relationship and connection with someone from the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

That was the reason why George asked her this question.

If he could help them, their lives would be much easier.

“He is here today, dad, but things are completely different from what we thought. His personal connections and relationship are not what I thought it was before...”

Alice replied with an indifferent expression on her face.

She did not make a clear statement on whether Gerald had come here with them today or not.

“Alice, why are you still giving him face at a time like this? Yes, uncle. We initially thought that Gerald was a good person and had a very good connection and network of friends. However, we found out today that he is nothing more than a gigolo who is kept by others just so that he could enter and leave the manor freely. He is just a young man who is being kept and taken care of by more than one woman!”

“He might look really incredible, but he is nothing at all! I don’t think that anyone will help her just because they want to give him face!”

Jacelyn cursed as she stood up.

In fact, she started to regret her words as soon as she started cursing at him.

This was not right!

She seemed to have forgotten about Gerald. After all, Gerald could even make someone like Flynn bow and apologize to all of them.

This proved that Gerald’s connection and contacts were indeed very incredible.

If he asked his lovers for help, who knew, he might probably be able to resolve this matter for them!

Alas, Jacelyn only thought of this at this time.

However, no matter what it was, Gerald was still not the rich second-generation she had imagined him to be. Since she had had such high hopes and expectations for him, the disappointment that she felt when she found out otherwise was even greater.

Jacelyn’s emotions were up and down and she completely disregarded this.

“So, that is the case!”

George and his wife could not help but feel a little disappointed when they heard this.

They were only meeting Gerald for the first time today, but they really did not expect this seemingly handsome young man to be so despicable.

They really did not know why their beautiful daughter would actually be friends with someone like this?

George and his wife were a little unhappy.

Gerald sat there without saying a single word at all.

He simply turned the Lazy Susan as he ate.

There were so many good dishes on the table and Gerald was really hungry.

When they saw this scene, the disgust that George and his wife felt for Gerald grew even stronger.

“Since you are hungry, you should just order a bowl of white rice to eat!”

Alice’s mother was a tall and stunning beauty.

Although she was already about forty years old, she did not look like she was more than twenty-five years old.

She had extremely fair skin.

At this time, she crossed her arms across her chest as she spoke coldly to Gerald. White rice? A bowl of white rice? She was intentionally criticizing Gerald!

“Hmph! Exactly! He should just eat plain white rice! He must be drunk! All he knows how to do is to eat even at a time like this!”

“What do you think he is doing here, anyway? He will not even be able to help in any way! All he knows how to do is to eat and drink for free! Even though he is kept by someone else, he has still not gotten rid

of his attitude of taking advantage of petty gains! He would eat a free meal whenever he could get a free meal!”

“I really do not know what those women are thinking! Why would they even want to keep a gigolo like him?”

Several girls who were led by Jacelyn also said mockingly.

Gerald could only smile wryly in his heart.

Scold. Scold as much as you want to. You will be crying sooner or later anyway.

“D*mn it!”

At this time, the door of the room was suddenly pushed open.

Chapter 116

A young man dressed in a suit and leather shoes opened the door and walked in.

Well dressed, he looked to be about twenty-seven or twenty-eight years old.

As soon as he came in, George and his wife immediately stood up as a gesture of respect.

“Yuvin, what did Charles say about this?”

The man standing in front of him was Charles Zeller’s secretary. He was also the son of George’s wife’s distant cousin.

They were somehow connected in some way, where he was also a distant cousin of Alice.

George intended to ask for Yuvin's help in creating a path for him so he could depend on Charles' connections. At the very least, he didn't want his company to go bankrupt, just like that.

Yuvin shook his head and smiled wryly.

"I'm sorry, Uncle. Charles came to this restaurant just now, so I thought he would come down. However, it seems he's busy entertaining a very important guest here. It means he's really indisposed at this moment. I told you not to wait for him here."

"I know Charles is not going to come down, but Yuvin, can we at least go up and give him a toast and express our feelings?" George bitterly pleaded.

He knew it was very impolite.

However, Charles' connections were his last resort, and without them, he would really have no other way out.

Having offended an influential family in Mayberry City, they were basically done for.

George was also in a rut himself.

"Yes, cousin Yuvin. If you are to help, help our family, then!"

Although Alice had always been an icy, arrogant person, she had no choice but to beg for Yuvin's help this time.

Yuvin sighed. "As your nephew, Uncle and Auntie, I understand your feelings very well," he said. "However, what you're asking is impossible; perhaps I'll help you if there's a future opportunity?"

And that was what he said.

If this matter were not resolved today, there would be no future at all anyway.

George quickly came to a realization.

It wasn't that Charles was busy. He simply refused to help them.

After all, it would be too much of a hassle since this was the Rye family they were talking about.

Thus, their last glimmer of hope was diminished.

Everyone had grim expressions on their faces.

"The boundless horizon is my love. The flowers bloom at the foot of the mountain range. What rhythm has the most swing? Which song is the happiest one?"

It was then that Gerald's ringtone played the song 'Coolest Ethnic.'

Ahh!

Since when did he turn that into his ringtone?

How could this be?

Thanks to the sudden tune, the atmosphere in the room became very awkward.

The corners of George's mouth twitched a little.

Alice, Jacelyn, and the others all stared at Gerald in disgust.

“Oh my god. How could such a person exist? How pathetic!” Jacelyn roared unceremoniously.

At that moment, Gerald had already answered the call.

It came from an unknown number.

“Hello?”

“Is this Mr. Crawford?”

The voice of a middle-aged man came over the other end of the line.

Gerald could guess that it was Wesley as soon as he heard the voice.

Wesley Harrison from the Bureau of Commerce!

“It’s me!”

“I know it’s a little presumptuous of me to call you. It is like this, Mr. Crawford, we’ve already gathered the leaders from different regions to discuss some issues of the company’s land and several entertainment centers that you’ve invested in. I’d like to take the liberty of asking if you have any spare time? We do hope you can make a trip here in person!” said Wesley with a smile.

“Oh, oh, yes!”

Gerald decided that he’d go over and take a look since he was almost done eating anyway.

“That’s great, Mr. Crawford! We’ll be meeting at the Majestic Phoenix Restaurant now. Where are you? I’ll arrange for a driver to go pick you up.”

“Huh? The Majestic Phoenix Restaurant? It happens that I am at the Majestic Phoenix Restaurant now too!”

Chapter 117

“You’re dining at the Majestic Phoenix Restaurant too? That’s great, Mr. Crawford! I’ll come over, and we can toast to a glass of wine!”

Cough. Cough.

If anyone were to make a toast, it should have been Gerald. No matter what it was, Wesley was still his senior, after all.

But since Mr. Harrison had invited him, he should just come over anyway so they could enjoy a drink together.

How could he not give face to Mr. Harrison? He even gave his room number to Mr. Harrison.

It was no big deal. At most, he would simply invest more in the future.

Gerald hung up the phone.

George and everyone else was still staring contemptuously at Gerald.

“That’s unexpected! A person of this sort could have friends in the Majestic Phoenix Restaurant?!”

“Yeah. How pretentious!”

The girls sneered.

Now, Gerald’s status in their hearts had significantly plummeted. Yes. Gerald was either a low profile second-generation heir or someone who had won the lottery of their hearts before this.

He was really very wealthy.

They could have garnered heaps of benefits from him.

At this time, however, Gerald was nothing more than a playboy. He was loved when he had money, of course, but what would happen when his lovers got sick and tired of him?

What would he be then?

As a result, everyone had a surprisingly consistent attitude toward him.

Then, the door to the room suddenly opened.

A large number of people were outside. About twenty to thirty middle-aged and elderly all dressed in suits and leather shoes, had gathered outside.

They all stood outside the door with wine glasses in hand.

George was left dumbfounded.

Even Alice and everyone else became extremely nervous.

What was happening?

“Zeller...Charles Zeller?”

“This...this...this...Mr. Harrison?”

“Chairman Myers, Chairman Lloyd, why are you guys here?”

George trembled as he spoke.

Amongst the twenty-odd people who were standing in front of him, which one of them wasn't an influential figure of Mayberry City?

Even Wesley Harrison from the Bureau of Commerce was here.

Also, Charles Zeller, the most influential and powerful figure in George's eyes, was here, standing amongst the crowd, laughing with a glass of wine in his hand.

Could they have all gathered here for me?

George was in a hazy, dreamlike state.

“Sit down, please have a seat!” George and his wife exclaimed in excitement.

“You're too polite. We are just here to make a toast, and we'll be leaving after that!”

Wesley bowed slightly as a gesture of respect towards George.

This respect, however, was actually not for George, but it was because of Gerald.

Wesley held a wine glass in his hand. Amid the room's exciting atmosphere, Wesley stood before Gerald, followed by the large group behind him.

“Raise your glasses to a toast for Mr. Crawford!”

After that, he finished the glass of wine.

“Mr. Crawford, a toast from us to you!”

Standing behind Wesley were investors for this project, and many of them were officials from the Bureau of Commerce.

Gerald was also speechless.

He initially thought that Wesley would come here on his own, even thinking of asking him to help with Alice’s matter.

Gerald would never have expected so many people to come at once.

Not wanting to be impolite, he hurriedly finished his glass as a reply.

The scene left George dumbfounded as well.

Alice had stiffened up, seeming startled and shocked.

Jacelyn’s mouth was opened so wide that an egg could easily fit inside.

Of course, they had initially thought he was nothing but a playboy.

But whatever their impression on him was, even the renowned Wesley Harrison from the Bureau of Commerce was present.

Moreover, they all addressed him as Mr. Crawford.

What did this indicate?

Gerald couldn't simply be a rich playboy! After all, Wesley was one of Mayberry City's most prominent and influential!

Chapter 118

"Mr. Crawford, when your banquet is over, please, come up and join us to discuss the issues I mentioned earlier."

Wesley then warmly shook hands with Gerald.

When the young man waved his hands, he couldn't help but wonder how many companies would rise overnight in Mayberry City.

Mayberry City's economy had already improved significantly.

It was all because Gerald signed his name a few times.

He was a young man of such power and stature, yet, never one to be pretentious or showy, from the very beginning to the end. He remained polite to everyone around him.

Rare! This was really rare!

After he was done talking, Wesley left the room with everyone else.

The room was all but dead silent at this time. Nobody spoke a word, all looking toward Gerald with open mouths.

George and his wife thought to themselves.

They had initially thought that Charles was the greatest man around, albeit a little arrogant.

However, now, it seemed the really powerful person turned out to be this young man standing in front of them!

“Gerald, what did they call you? Did they just address you as Mr. Crawford?”

Jacelyn swallowed hard.

Alice looked at Gerald in shock as well.

“It is just a title!” Gerald replied with a slight smile.

He really didn’t want to appear to be pretentious or ostentatious. Seeing how things had turned out, Gerald could not help but feel a little embarrassed.

“Could Gerald be the Mr. Crawford from the Mayberry Commercial Street?”

“Mr. Crawford? The Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street? It seems it’s the only reason Mr. Harrison has been so respectful toward him, right?”

“Impossible. How could this be? How could Gerald possibly be so rich?”

Everyone continued speculating, but Jacelyn, on the other hand, was simply in utter disbelief.

If this was indeed the truth, she really wanted to die!

“Thank you for your hospitality, Uncle and Auntie Bradford. This incident occurred thanks to the birthday party of my good brother’s girlfriend. Allow me to deal with it on your behalf. Please excuse me. I’ll be retiring to my room upstairs.”

From the way he had been stared at, Gerald would have been very uncomfortable if he stayed any longer.

So he took this opportunity to slip away.

Gerald neither confirmed or denied anything when they asked if he was Mr. Crawford from the Mayberry Commercial Street.

After leaving the room, Gerald called Zack, asking him to come forward as a mediator to deal with the matter.

Zack quickly followed suit.

“Alice, could you have been mistaken? Didn’t you say he was a player?” George asked with a hint of regret.

If he had known this was the truth, he wouldn’t have mocked and satirized him.

Earlier, when Wesley bowed a little to George, he was so excited that he almost peed his pants!

Alice Muttered to herself. “Impossible! There has to be something hidden behind all this. How could Gerald possibly be the Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street? To make matters worse, we even offended the Rye family this time. How could Gerald have possibly settled this with one word?!”

Undoubtedly, the knowledge of this matter had taken a tremendous toll on whoever was listening.

Then, George’s cell phone suddenly rang.

He was surprised when he saw the number.

“It’s me. It’s me. Hello? Okay! Okay! Okay! Huh? What did you say? ...that’s great! Thank you. Thank you so much!”

George hung up in excitement.

Everyone looked at him.

“Alice, this time, we have really met a very noble person. Seriously! Gerald... no, Mr. Crawford is really our benefactor! A senior from the Bureau of Commerce just called to tell me that a very powerful and influential person had just come forward. The matter has been resolved successfully!” said George.

Alice slumped weakly into her chair when she heard this.

Everything was really linked to Gerald. He was indeed very powerful!

But what was going on? Who was this Gerald?

Everyone had lingering doubts in their hearts.

Gerald was already upstairs in his room. He had called Zack to help the people from Hayley’s dormitory, both Alice and Jacelyn’s families. He didn’t care for Chad and Danny, though, and did not want to care for them. What did they have to do with him anyway?

Gerald thought no more about the matter. After entering the room, he continued drinking with Wesley and the others.

As for the essential matters that Wesley spoke about, he was simply hoping that Gerald would be able to attend the opening ceremony on the day the major entertainment establishments opened.

Since it wasn’t an issue, Gerald agreed immediately.

It was almost eleven o’clock when Gerald returned to the campus.

He was lying on his bed but kept tossing and turning around as he found himself unable to sleep.

“Ding! Ding!”

Notifications rang on Gerald's cell phone, one after the other.

"Gerald, Gerald... are you asleep yet? Let's meet up early tomorrow morning at our school's west cafeteria! I have something important to tell you! You don't need to reply to this!"

At first glance, it was a text message from Mila.

Chapter 119

Early the next morning.

Since it was a Saturday, Harper and the rest of the boys wanted to wake up at their own time.

Gerald did not bother them either, heading to the west cafeteria on his own.

Mila had arrived early, and she was already waiting for him there.

She even brought two sets of breakfast.

Fried rice with egg and ham!

"I bought some rice for you! Hurry up and eat it!" said Mila with a smile.

Gerald wasn't shy at all. "What's up, Mila? What did you want to tell me?" he asked as he took a bite.

Mila was dressed beautifully today. Her fair legs were exposed, and it made his heart flutter.

Gerald couldn't help but stare at her.

"Hehe! It is my grandmother's birthday today. I'll be going back to celebrate it for her!"

Mila blinked. "You should know about my relationship with Irene, right? Don't blame me for being petty. In fact, I am not the kind who likes to compare or make comparisons. That said, my relationship with Irene is very special. We've been like that ever since we were born. We compared everything, from whose name sounded better, to who was better at studying, who wore the prettier clothes, and who received more praise from everyone!

"I don't know if she was born with her competitive nature, but no matter what it is, I don't want to lose to her!"

"Oh, right! Do you get what I was saying?" Mila asked as she pouted.

Gerald seemed to understand, albeit very little of it.

"I don't quite understand!" he lamented.

He didn't really get what she was saying. Perhaps it was because Gerald grew up in a completely different environment. After all, he knew that there would always be people in this world who lived better and had better things than him.

Even if Gerald wanted to compare, he once used to be so poor that he couldn't even afford new clothes for the New Year. Compare? How could he possibly compare to anyone at all?

Naturally, Gerald had always been a little disgusted over those who would fight over or show off their wealth.

There was even some resistance from the bottom of his heart.

Perhaps, it could be said that he was deeply troubled because of the antics of the rich.

Although he was filthy rich himself, Gerald never understood the wealthy's thoughts and in what direction their mentality went.

"I'll just tell you this plainly. Gerald, you know she has a boyfriend, right? I heard Kyle saying that Irene will be bringing back that bastard boyfriend of hers to celebrate my grandmother's birthday. I also heard that the bastard prepared a special gift for her.

"When that happens, many will be complimenting Irene. So, I've decided that I should bring a boyfriend back with me too!"

"Are you asking me to pretend to be your boyfriend?"

Gerald seemed to understand what was really going on now.

"Um, yes! I want you to keep pretending you're my boyfriend, and you can continue pretending to be a wealthy heir too. I'll return to my dorm to wash up before I go out and buy you some clothes.

"Gerald. Good old Gerald. Please help me till the end!" Mila flirtatiously cooed.

To be honest, this young girl was really very beautiful.

Gerald found he couldn't turn down her request when she blinked her beautiful eyes and opened her beautiful small lips.

He, however, felt a very strange feeling.

Apparently... he wanted to be her real boyfriend. Hehe...

"Actually, there is no need for me to pretend anymore. I am really a rich heir!"

Gerald smiled bitterly in his heart.

Once he agreed to Mila's request, she brought him out to buy some new clothes.

Gerald really looked very handsome once he was all dressed up.

Now, both of them were rushing to her grandmother's birthday feast.

Mila's phone suddenly rang. "Huh? What did you say? Okay, okay. I will get there first!"

After hanging up the phone, Mila let out a long sigh.

"Gerald, I have to leave first. Kyle and I ordered a birthday gift for my grandmother, but apparently, there's something wrong with it. It is making me really anxious. Why don't we do this? Let's meet at 11 in front of the Royal Dragon Villa's entrance. I'll call you!"

"No problem!" Gerald nodded.

Mila hurriedly called for a cab before she left.

Gerald smiled bitterly. It was only a little past nine in the morning. What was he going to do for two hours?

Oh, right!

Driving license!

His driving license should have been mailed to him!

He made a phone call to ask about it. As expected, the package had already arrived at the courier.

"Damn!"

Gerald was so excited he nearly jumped up high.

Chapter 120

His biggest dream was to drive a car. He wanted to drive a vehicle that belonged to himself, and it needn't be an expensive car.

Now, he could finally drive!

Not to mention, he had a Lamborghini! He would be lying if he said he wasn't excited!

After picking up his driving license, Gerald went to his car.

"Vroom! Vroom! Vroom!"

A brand new black Passat skidded past Gerald's body.

After that, the beautiful car drove around the park.

Many people were walking around the park, and the Passat also attracted many girls' attention.

"Wow, it's a Passat! It's the latest model from this year. Looks pretty good!"

"Isn't it more than thirty thousand dollars?"

"Looks like it's the top-spec. That car should be at least forty-five thousand dollars!"

"Oh, god. More than forty-five thousand dollars?! Must be another rich guy!"

A group of girls quietly whispered among themselves as they pointed at the luxurious cars.

This park was popular thanks to the Lamborghini.

The past few days saw a strange but familiar pattern. Everyone from university who had a car would drive around this park to attract beautiful girls' attention.

Especially if it was a new car.

The owner of this Passat was obviously driving around the vicinity to show off to the crowd.

"Haha, isn't that Gerald? What a coincidence!"

The car suddenly stopped, and the windows came down. A handsome young man poked his head out of the car.

When Gerald saw who it was, he realized he knew him.

It was Jordan Lourd, a guy who attended driving lessons with him.

It was the guy who mocked him together with a student from his department called Nathaniel.

In the beginning, Jordan was interested in Mila, but when he heard that Victor was pursuing her, he immediately gave up.

Both Jordan and Gerald took the same course, and Jordan had instantly purchased a car after passing the exams.

He was obviously here just to show off.

Gerald did not like him that much, merely nodding slightly.

"I just bought this baby for fifty-two thousand dollars! We just got our driving license today, Gerald. You should drive a little. Otherwise, you might just forget how to!"

Jordan smiled triumphantly.

Many girls looked over when they heard Jordan speaking loudly.

They could see that Jordan was mocking Gerald.

Although Gerald had nothing against Jordan, he had his own reason for doing this.

First, he looked down on Gerald because he was a pauper and felt a sense of accomplishment after trampling all over him.

Then, Jordan wanted to talk to Mila when they had their driving lessons. Mila, however, was only interested in talking to Gerald.

This had incredibly upset Jordan.

After mocking Gerald, Jordan couldn't help but feel even more fulfilled and satisfied.

"Jordan, where are you headed? We feel like going out for a stroll. Can we take your car?"

A few girls finally came over shyly.

"Oh, of course!"

Jordan laughed. After that, he turned to Gerald again.

“Gerald, would you like to drive my car and take the girls for a drive?”

Gerald shook his head, “Forget it.”

“Oh! Jordan! You are so bad. Who wants to be in a car driven by your sort, eh?”

“Exactly! Just look at his state. Looking at him is more than enough. I’d be extremely embarrassed to ride in the same car as him!”

“Haha. Even if Jordan is willing to lend him his car, will he dare drive it? If it gets damaged, he wouldn’t be able to pay even if he sold himself!”

The three girls laughed. After that, they got into Jordan’s car.

Ladies nowadays were all very bold. All they wanted were rich boyfriends or sugar daddy’s that would pamper them through their college days.

They could save their own money and still buy themselves lots of nice clothes.

How perfect would that be!

Gerald said nothing after listening to their nefarious insults.

He simply pulled out the key to his Lamborghini and walked toward his supercar.

Chapter 121

“Hey, Jordan, look! The pathetic guy you talked to is walking toward the Lamborghini!”

“Hehe! Lamborghini is a reputed brand. That pathetic jerk must be trying to gain some insight. He might even take some pictures and post them on social media to show how awesome it is. There are many people like that!”

The girls replied in contempt.

“Perhaps. There is nothing those sorts are incapable of doing!” smirked Jordan.

“By the way, Jordan, do you know who owns this car?”

“I really don’t know, but I can tell you a lot about the configuration and interior of this car. It a first-class design! Even a simple part is made through strict data calculations, all personally supervised by a master with decades of experience!” Jordan replied with a smile.

“Ahh? You’ve aroused our interest, Jordan. Care to explain more to us so that we can learn more about the car?” one of the girls asked, with a surprised look on her face.

They were saying this, not just because they wanted to learn more about the luxury car but to simply drag time.

Think about it. It was only nine in the morning, and even if they gave him a location and Jordan sent them there, it would only be a momentary encounter.

If they delayed him for a while, it would be lunchtime. Wouldn’t Jordan have to treat them to lunch then?

Wouldn’t that deepen their relationship?

The girls were really good at mind games.

Jordan did not overthink it, parking the car at the side before leading the group of girls to the luxury supercar.

He wasn’t jealous of the Lamborghini at all, knowing well enough that even if he worked like a bull for a lifetime, there was no way he would reach such a point.

At the same time, Gerald had also walked toward his Lamborghini.

“Erm, miss? Mind if you move aside?”

Gerald rubbed his nose as he stared helplessly at a long-haired girl, now boldly sitting on the hood of his Lamborghini.

“Why are you asking me to move to? Who are you? Get out of my way!” the long-haired beauty yelled at him.

This man wore new-ish clothes, and they looked pretty good on him. However, she had already seen many handsome heirs. Who did he think he was?

How dare he ask her to move?!

“Exactly! That’s right! Who are you? Just look at you. What right do you have to ask us to move away?”

“Hehe. I know that as girls, we are a little vain, and we enjoy taking selfies. Moreover, we get a little envious when we see luxury cars. I really didn’t expect a guy to be disgusting enough; he actually thinks of taking a selfie too!”

“Yeah! Stop embarrassing yourself!”

The girls surrounding the long-haired girl ganged up, throwing insults and jeers at Gerald.

Gerald was stunned by the arrogant and rude remarks.

Damn it. He only said one sentence, and he got attacked by so many people?

Jordan walked up to Gerald, sneering with his nose up high. "Brother Gerald, what could you be thinking? Why take a selfie? Would you like me to help you, eh?"

After that, he immediately turned his gaze to the hot chick sitting on the front hood.

"Beauty, you can sit on the car hood as long as you want to. The Lamborghini's chassis is like no other supercar. It's solid. It'll definitely withstand your lightweight body!"

"Hahaha! Thank you, handsome! You talk pretty sweet, unlike some really disgusting dude! By the way, handsome, can you take a picture for me? Capture me with this car from afar!"

The long-haired beauty seemed to have an excellent impression of Jordan.

Of course, Jordan was more than willing to snap her a photo. After all, why did he even buy a Passat? Wasn't it all for the ladies, anyway?

He nodded vigorously at the request.

"Say, Brother Gerald, can you stop blocking the shot?" Jordan shook his head as he reminded Gerald, who was standing beside the car.

"Damn it. Get lost!" the long-haired beauty yelled as she waved impatiently.

"Hehehe! I'm afraid you guys are the ones who should get lost!" Gerald replied coldly.

He initially had a very simple thought. He wanted the beautiful girl to move aside so that he could drive his car out. After that, she could take whatever picture she wanted to.

Instead, his generous gesture was replied with ridicule, even to the point of getting scolded by the hot chick.

It was especially true for Jordan, enigmatic from the moment he saw him. Did he just use Gerald as a comparison just so he could appear stinking rich and charming in front of the girls?

Was he using Gerald's humility to prove how strong and capable he was?

Was he mocking to satisfy his own vanity?

Gerald felt that everything would be over for him if he continued keeping a low profile. Soon, everyone would be trampling all over him.

If that were to be the case, why continue keeping a low-profile then?

"Who are you asking to get lost? You actually dare raise your voice at me?"

Chapter 122

The long-haired beauty yelled in shock.

As soon as her violent temper flared up, she raised her hands, wanting to hit him.

Beep! Beep!

Suddenly, the Lamborghini's four lights, which had been silent for over a month, flashed brightly.

Then, almost instantly, the engine came to life with a low rumble.

The doors unclicked and opened upwards.

The car seemed to be glowing extremely brightly, its body letting out a sheen under the bright sunlight.

It looked as though it had been waiting a long time for its owner to return.

Gerald put down the key in his hand.

After that, he slowly walked over to the car and went straight for the driver's seat.

It was completely silent even though more than a dozen girls were standing nearby at this time.

The sudden silence felt as though the world had already planned it in advance. The whole area had become completely silent.

Everyone's eyes were wide open as they witnessed the scene.

Jordan's mouth and eyes opened up as large as they possibly could.

This... Gerald turned out to be the owner of this Lamborghini?

"Ahh!"

A loud, harsh scream broke the complete silence.

"It's him! The owner of the car turned out to be him! Ahh!"

"Bro, you are one hot guy! What is your name, bro?"

"Can I have your number, bro?"

There were even some girls who dare act as though they had just met their biggest idol. They rushed directly in front of Gerald's car.

A Lamborghini, worth two million six hundred thousand dollars. It was the absolute luxury beast everyone dreamt of!

The car alone had generated so much hype.

They had all been impatiently and eagerly waiting for this day to arrive. Now, the young owner of the car had finally appeared in front of them!

Gerald was in the car. Although the car was soundproofed well, he could still hear the screams of the girls outside.

In fact, he felt very good now.

He could finally drive his own car, but most importantly, he could finally hold his head up high.

"Di! ~Didi!"

Gerald wound down his car window.

He smiled at Jordan, now completely dumbfounded at the side, as he said, "Jordan, would you like to try driving this car?" he jeered.

Gerald returned the exact question to Jordan using the same manner.

Jordan could only gulp. He wouldn't dare the slightest to drive this car.

His face had even turned a shade of green.

The person that he had been looking down on was actually filthy rich!

Not to mention how he even tried to make fun of him earlier.

He was no coward, and he simply didn't want to fight back. Jordan was actually nothing more than a clown in front of Gerald.

His Passat was worth a mere forty-five thousand dollars. Gerald's car, a whopping two million six hundred thousand. Damn it! That was enough for sixty Passats!

Worse was the fact that Jordan had no idea who or what he had just offended!

The three girls who initially got into Jordan's car were speechless as well, not to mention the long-haired beauty who sat on the hood of Gerald's car.

In short, everyone was shocked as they witness the unbelievable scene!

Gerald drove away amid the chaos.

This was the first time that Gerald showed off like this in public. Moreover, he only did it because he felt that it was already intolerable.

Gerald's phone rang all of a sudden. It was Mila calling him.

He immediately connected the call.

"Gerald, where are you? Why aren't you here yet? Hurry up and come over! Take a cab if you can't make it on time. I am waiting for you in front of the entrance of the Royal Dragon Villa!"

“Okay, I will be there soon,” replied Gerald.

Before he hung up the phone, Gerald seemed to hear Mila nervously saying: “I’m finished! I accidentally said the wrong thing!”

It also seemed as though a girl was standing next to her, asking what sounded like: “Mila, isn’t Gerald, your boyfriend? Isn’t he like very rich or something? Why is he taking a cab?”

Chapter 123

Gerald did not think too much after hearing the voice on the other end of the line.

He simply sped up as he rushed over to the Royal Dragon Villa.

This was a villa that was similar to Mountain Wayfair Entertainment.

There was integrated entertainment and catering in it.

However, when it came to the facilities, this place could not be compared to the Mountain Wayfair Entertainment at all.

Of course, despite this, this was still the best place for second and third-tier family gatherings.

Mila’s grandmother’s birthday banquet would be held here today.

After arriving, Gerald drove his car to the parking lot at the side.

“Okay...okay, okay, okay...okay, done!”

The security guard was an uncle who was in his fifties and he seemed to be stuttering.

Under his command, Gerald would have definitely driven into the ditch if it was not because of the automatic parking system in his own Lamborghini.

Gerald could only smile helplessly.

He raised his hand before he gave the uncle fifteen dollars.

He wanted to treat him to a pack of cigarettes so that he could smoke it.

“Thank, thank, thank....thank you!”

An excited but slow thank you followed behind him.

At the same time.

At the entrance of the villa.

“Oh my god. Mila! It is almost eleven o’clock now. Why hasn’t your boyfriend, Gerald showed up yet?”

A young woman stood beside Mila.

She seemed about twenty four years old. She was wearing glasses and gave off a cold, arrogant vibe. But of course, she was undoubtedly, strikingly beautiful.

“Second cousin, don’t worry! Gerald will be here soon!”

Mila replied as she smiled bitterly.

Her second cousin was the second daughter of her aunt’s family. Her name was Rita and she was extremely gorgeous. She had a close relationship with Mila ever since their childhood.

She used to be the prettiest girl when she was still in school.

Even now after graduating and working in a company, she still had plenty of bees swarming around her in the company too.

Despite her looks, Rita's personality is rather hostile and arrogant. She had very high standards and she would not be interested in any ordinary boys at all.

It has already been more than three years since she graduated.

Getting into a serious relationship was never in Rita's thoughts until today, but she was ironically very interested in Mila's boyfriend.

The interest that she had in him was simply that of a family's affection.

Well since her cousin sister had a boyfriend, wouldn't it only be the right thing to do to check him out to see if he was truly qualified?

"Mila, I'm sooo sorry for making you wait so long!"

Gerald's voice suddenly burst through the silence.

Mila had initially thought Gerald would be taking a cab over instead. Bearing that in mind, she had already planned out an excuse to handle her cousin, Rita.

But Gerald took Mila by surprise when she saw him walking towards them from the opposite direction.

"Gerald, you're finally here! Come on over! Let me introduce my ultimate bestest sister to you!"

Mila cluttered Gerald's arm affectionately.

"This is my second cousin, Rita! She is four years older than us. What do you think? Gorgeous, isn't she?"

Gerald glanced at Rita before giving a tiny nod.

This woman was indeed very beautiful.

"Wait. If you're saying that my cousin is beautiful, then does that mean that I am not beautiful to you anymore?"

Mila said coquettishly.

Seriously.

Her acting was completely believable.

"No, no. You are Mila...well, both of you are beautiful. Both of you are beautiful."

Gerald replied as he brushed the sweat off his forehead.

"Oh, Mila! Stop teasing Gerald already!"

Rita actually felt a little uncomfortable at the sight of the young couple flirting in front of her. Perhaps it was also because she had been single for quite a while and found it difficult seeing others showing affection for one another.

Including her own cousin.

Rita folded her arms as she looked at Gerald.

So this was Mila's boyfriend!

His outfit paired really well and he had a pretty decent appearance. He had a firm gaze and looked very confident.

She would probably have given him a score of nine for his initial impression, out of a hundred.

Her judgement reflected just how cold and arrogant Rita was, and definitely one of the main reasons she was still unable to find a boyfriend till now.

Chapter 124

"Hello, Gerald. So Mila told me your family is running a business. What sort of business is your family doing, if I may ask?"

Rita quizzed as her arms were still tightly folded across her chest.

"Oh, well, all sorts really, just into different businesses and industries."

To be honest, it was a question Gerald never really knew how to answer.

After all, his sister always mentioned that their family had too many different ventures. Basically, the family is involved in almost half of the world's capital or industries.

Plus, he came from a huge family whose businesses had been passed down for hundreds of years.

Jessica did not exactly share much about their family.

Hence with only limited knowledge about his family, he could only answer those questions from others very generally.

“There seems to be no solid answer at all, eh? It’s so confusing!”

Rita shook her head as she smiled wryly.

“I heard that Mila and you met when the both of you were learning how to drive. You must have already gotten your driver’s license then! Have you bought a car yet?”

Rita prodded again.

“Yup, he has one. He bought a BMW 7 Series. His family told him he should practice how to drive well first. But Gerald doesn’t really dare to drive well at the moment. Hence, why I asked him to just get a cab here.”

Mila knew for the fact that it wasn’t the wisest to hide some things from Rita. This time round, she had no choice but to lie in order to prevent Gerald from feeling stressed out.

She had to hide the truth.

“Hah. BMW 7 Series? There’s this annoying dude in my department who drives the exact same car. He tried to pursue me and I simply told him to scoot off!”

Rita replied, shaking her head.

But looking at the circumstances, Gerald’s family business must be doing pretty well.

Nevertheless, he would still be too far behind of a match if he wanted to be Rita’s boyfriend.

Rita was really, quite the bombshell.

So, this was her capital.

Her goal was to be married into an extremely wealthy and powerful family. She wanted to find a rich husband who would be able to give in to all of her whims.

In fact, his age wouldn't matter even if he was older or younger than her.

Most importantly, he just needs to be from a wealthy family!

For her, a wealthy man isn't just defined as someone who has started his own company and has assets worth more than fifteen million dollars.

She was referring to those who inherit huge family businesses and empires.

Rita did not know when it was that she started having these thoughts and ambitions. But one thing for sure that it was very apparent.

At that very instance, Rita quickly shook her head and flashed a forced smile before she said, "Well, Mila. Grandma's birthday banquet is about to begin. We should head in now."

Rita had by then already lost all interest in continuing a conversation with Gerald.

Mila stuck out her tongue before whispering softly, "Gerald, please don't hold it against my cousin. She has always been like this. No one can ever be good enough for her unless he's a son of an extremely wealthy and influential family. Though she really shouldn't continue being this way."

But what else could Gerald do? Should he be telling her that he was actually the son of one of the wealthiest and most influential men in this world, so that her cousin could marry him instead?

That was obviously, quite the impossible.

Moreover, Rita was really a little too haughty for his liking.

Forget it. After all, he was really just helping Mila put on an act today. It wasn't something to be taken too seriously anyways.

The three of them then walked inside.

Almost the entire family turned up to attend the birthday banquet today.

Her uncle, father, third uncle, big aunt, second cousin brother, and many other relatives were also present.

Basically the entire Royal Dragon Villa was booked out for this special banquet today.

Dozens of people started flocking in when it was almost time for the banquet to begin.

"Grandma, I wish you longevity and I hope that all of your wishes will come true! Hahaha!"

The silver-haired woman was dressed festively, beaming as she was sitting in the center.

She looked at her granddaughter, Irene as she said:

"Irene, I don't really hope for longevity anymore. But if you are hoping for all of my wishes to come true, then my biggest wish is for you to get married as soon as possible!"

It isn't like how it was for them back in those days, compared to young parents nowadays. What the elderly always look forward to was that a girl should already be looking for a man to marry when they reach the age of twenty three or twenty four years old!

"Yes, grandma. Please allow me to introduce you to my boyfriend, Kenneth!"

Irene smiled before she gently pulled Kenneth over to her side.

As he stood beside, many relatives and friends could not help but chuckle in approval as they commented, "This young man really looks like a talented person!"

"I also heard that his family is really rich!"

"Grandma, this is a little something from me. Please have a look and receive it!"

Kenneth smiled as he took something out from his pocket.

The moment he took it out, everyone immediately started gawking...

Chapter 125

"A jade ring!"

"What a filial man you are, Kenneth! The value of this jade ring is worth at least ten to twelve thousand dollars! Tsk tsk tsk!"

Everyone could not help but continue to exclaim in admiration.

After all, it was really very filial of a boyfriend to give his girlfriend's grandmother a piece of jade ring for her birthday.

"Alright, alright. Irene, hurry up and ask Kenneth to sit down!"

Her grandmother was so elated upon receiving the ring that she couldn't even keep her mouth closed anymore. She couldn't even bear to put the ring down.

The more she looked at Kenneth, the more she liked him.

Even Irene's father felt immensely proud at that very moment.

In fact, the reason why everyone gathered here today to celebrate and congratulate the golden lady for her birthday, wasn't just merely to show filial piety.

That was just, but a small part.

The larger reason was the fact that the old lady was still holding onto all the assets that were left behind by the old man when he passed away. There were three sons and two daughters altogether, but it was this old lady who got to ultimately decide who these assets would be passed down to.

Hence, the extravagance of the birthday banquet every year.

"Grandma, this is my girlfriend, Claire. We would also like to wish you a very happy birthday."

Kyle wished and was smiling broadly as he handed his gift over to his grandmother.

The old lady couldn't help but smiled even wider this time.

Next was a young man who was about twenty five or twenty six years old.

He was wearing a blue suit and his hair was brushed sleekly to the back.

He exuded with charisma. Anyone could tell that he looked like one of those successful men at first impressions.

Mason Smith was his name, and he was Mila's cousin brother and Irene's biological brother.

All eyes were fixed on him as he stood out.

Mason was very mature and he had a very stable career. Moreover, he has always been the one with the strongest ability in the family. He also had the best grades amongst all of the children and grandchildren in the family.

Not to mention, he was also the future heir of the Smith family.

“Grandma, your grandson wishes you a good and abundant life with good fortune!”

“By the way, grandma, this is my new girlfriend, Queenie!”

Mason quickly introduced.

“Good, good, good. All of you are really giving me big surprises today! I really have to take a good look at my future daughter-in-law then. Queenie, what are you working as?”

Queenie replied: “Grandma, I now work at BMW. Currently the deputy manager, thanks to Mason!”

“That’s good! Did you meet Mason then when he was buying a car?”

Mason nodded as he said, “Yes, grandma. Didn’t I mention that I bought a BMW sports car some time ago? Well that was when I met Queenie!”

“I see, alright Queenie. Come. Come and sit here with me.”

His grandmother beckoned.

“Brother, sister-in-law, come and sit down!”

Irene also greeted with a smile.

This pair of siblings really made quite an impression today in the family.

All her children had already wished and given their blessings according to hierarchical order and most of the grandchildren had also given their blessings to their grandmother. With that, the birthday banquet should have been ready to commence.

However, the celebrated golden lady of the day seemed to be not ready.

It seemed as though she was still waiting for someone.

She felt as though the celebration was not complete, if this person had not yet come up to wish her.

Who was it?

But of course, it was none other than Mila, the old lady's most beloved granddaughter!

"My second son, where is my granddaughter, Mila?"

The old lady questioned out loud.

Mila's parents, Gavin and Helen were also present today.

It happened a while ago where Gavin's company nearly closed down due to his poor business management and the old lady was extremely furious over that matter.

Unexpectedly in the nick of time, an investment from Mr. Crawford of Mayberry City was the saving grace that helped to resolve the crisis.

Not only were all of the company's problems resolved, but the company even skyrocketed to a whole new level.

This made the old lady very happy.

Because of this, she began to dote Mila even more.

The moment she questioned Mila's attendance, Irene and Mason's faces twitched and turned a shade of grey.

They could only suppress the jealousy that was bursting inside.

"Mila's waiting for a friend and she will be here soon!"

"Oh? Does Mila have a boyfriend too?"

"Seems like it..."

Gavin replied nonchalantly.

Anyways, Mila had given him a heads up that she would be bringing her boyfriend here today.

Chapter 126

Helen started probing about her daughter's boyfriend's identity but Mila refused to reveal anything.

She simply told them to be patient and cooperate.

Gavin and Helen couldn't understand what she was thinking either.

"Mom, look, Mila's here!"

At that very moment, Mila gingerly took Gerald by her side as they breezed through the crowd of people.

They would've reached much earlier if it weren't for Gerald who needed to use the bathroom.

"Wow, our niece, Mila is really getting so much prettier!"

"Look! Is the person holding Mila's hand her boyfriend?"

"Who's this guy? Whose son is he? Why haven't I heard of him before?"

"Anyway, that guy is really blessed!"

A group of relatives and friends pointed at him.

"It's him!"

When Helen saw Gerald, her eyes widened in disbelief.

No wonder her daughter kept refusing to reveal who her boyfriend was. It turned out to be none other than this intolerable young man!

That's right. If Mila had told her about this, it would be impossible for her to allow the both of them to be together.

"Hmm? Who is he?"

The old lady asked at this time.

Helen didn't dare answer her question. What would the old lady do if she found out that her granddaughter was together with someone like him?

"Grandma, allow me to introduce him to you. This is my boyfriend, Gerald!"

Mila completely ignored Helen's glaring look of disapproval as she introduced Gerald to her grandmother.

"Oh? Mila, you have a boyfriend too?"

The old lady was suddenly overjoyed.

This was her most loved and favored granddaughter. She knew her granddaughter very well and she knew that the boyfriend of her choice would definitely be extraordinary.

"Gerald, do say hello to my grandma."

Mila said gently as she held onto Gerald's hand affectionately.

Was this the first time for Gerald to attend such a large gathering?

Gerald couldn't help but feel a little awkward as he knew this was all just an act.

His mind wandered, as Gavin, Helen, Kyle and Irene were all staring at him in an extremely hostile manner.

He was about to speak up when he Mila dove right in.

"Wait!"

Just then, an icy voice pierced right in.

Obviously, it was Irene.

The last time Mila was with Gerald, Irene and Kenneth were slapped right in the faces in front of Sean.

She was directly humiliated in front of Mila.

The amount of hatred and resentment pent up caused Irene to suffer from insomnia throughout this entire period.

She had been very curious ever since and wondered who Gerald was.

After digging through a background check from their university, she found out that Gerald was nothing but a mere rich second generation son who had hit jackpot.

He was probably nothing more than a pathetic pauper who had no money or power before that!

Plus, he had been dumped by his own girlfriend before.

He then met Mila when they were learning how to drive. But Irene felt that there was simply no reason Mila would fall for someone like him.

Why would Sean even be acquainted?

Hah. Hilarious. It wasn't that hard to guess the reason though.

After winning the lottery, Gerald had been splurging everywhere. He even purchased a bag worth fifty five thousand dollars and spent a tonne at various restaurants on Mayberry Commercial Street.

Perhaps, Sean ran into Gerald then and thought Gerald as someone really awesome.

In fact, Sean wasn't the first to have ever encountered such a situation which made other find Gerald so admirable.

As Irene found Mila's courage to bring Gerald here amusing, she questioned with cold expression:

"Mila, Gerald, since you're here today, aren't you going to give grandma a gift?"

"Of course I'm giving grandma a gift."

Mila retorted icily.

"Your gift is yours personally to give. The question was for Gerald. Since he is your boyfriend and since you said that Gerald's a rich second generation, then wouldn't he be more well-off compared to Kenneth then? If so, all of us are really curious to know what sort of gift Gerald has installed for grandma."

"That's right. Since it is their first time meeting, he should bring a gift with him."

"Who is he? It seems as though his family is quite capable?"

Relatives and friends suddenly gathered around in curiosity.

They were dying to find out what was the gift the boyfriend of her grandmother's favourite granddaughter had brought...

Chapter 127

"I didn't bring a gift."

Gerald could not help but offer a regretful smile.

He originally wanted to prepare a gift for her grandmother but Mila stopped him. She felt that the both of them could just give her grandmother one gift and naturally she would look for the gift herself.

Hence the reason Gerald turned up empty handed today.

He simply came to attend the birthday banquet to make Mila's grandmother happy. Who would have known that Irene would deliberately bring this up to make things difficult for him?

"What? He did not bring a gift? I thought that Mila's boyfriend would be bringing something valuable along with him too!"

"Isn't Mila's boyfriend also a rich second generation? Logically speaking, he should also be well-versed with basic etiquette and manners. This is the first time that he's meeting her grandmother, but he did not bring anything with him at all?"

"He definitely falls short compared with Irene's boyfriend, Kenneth!"

Hush whispers and mumbling echoed amongst the relatives and friends.

Despite the soft chatter, their conversations were still quite clearly heard amongst everyone present.

Upon observing the situation, the old lady failed to keep a straight face.

She was not the kind of person who enjoyed receiving gifts but as an elderly person, image and reputation were the most important things.

She then dropped her sense of affection towards Gerald as she had been to Kenneth.

She simply replied that it was alright and asked Gerald to take a seat at the side.

After that, she asked faintly, "Gerald, I heard that your family's business is doing pretty well. What kind of business does your family do?"

"Oh, we dabble in almost everything!"

Gerald replied lightly.

Although Gerald was simply telling the truth, it felt like his reply was being a little disrespectful through the lens of Mila's grandmother and others present.

Dabble in everything?

What kind of industry was that?

How could he answer a question so carelessly and casually?

Mila quickly laughed it off as she said, "Grandma, it's his first time coming here. If you keep firing him with so many questions, I'm afraid that you'll end up scaring him away!"

"Okay, okay. I'll leave him alone."

The old lady replied as she then immediately changed the topic.

After all, the old lady adored Mila the most.

"Wait what? Is he scared because grandma is asking him too many questions or is he actually just afraid to tell the truth? Sister, why don't you tell us what kind of family business Gerald's family is doing? I think you should know it better than anyone else anyway!"

Irene suddenly threw a strange question.

She could no longer take it as she felt her grandmother always sided whatever Mila said or did and thought it would always be right.

Her grandmother was always spoiling Mila.

The rest of them were all her grandchildren too but she would always throw a fit at them even for the smallest mistake.

Although it wasn't in Irene's plan to have a row with Mila, she simply could not tolerate it anymore!

She wanted to see how stuck-up Mila could still be today!

Surely enough, this question caught the old lady's attention immediately.

She then suddenly recalled her daughter-in-law, Helen's demeanor earlier towards Mila.

The old lady frowned as she asked, "Mila, are you hiding something from grandma? What business does Gerald's family do?"

Mila's face tightened immediately.

At the same time, she turned around to look at Kyle.

If Irene knew of anything, then it must have something to do with her brother, Kyle.

As she had expected, Kyle did not even dare to meet his sister's gaze.

"No grandma, I am not...", Mila replied nervously.

“Hahaha. Are you too embarrassed to tell the truth? Alright then, I will explain everything on your behalf then! Grandma, do you know what kind of person Gerald is?”

“He used to be a well-known pauper from Mayberry University who earns his living by running errands for others. Of course, Gerald indeed got some money later on after he won the lottery. Guess what happened after that? Gerald...”

Mila didn't know where Irene got all these information.

It seemed as though she was rather well-versed as she told his story and had personally witnessed everything with her own eyes as she revealed all of his humiliating past that had happened to Gerald before.

This included how he squandered his money after winning the lottery.

She revealed everything, in public.

“What? And Mila found this kind of person to become her boyfriend?”

“She even said that he is a rich second generation? I think that this kid is deliberately deceiving Mila by lying and making up his own identity!”

“Well, people who have already been poor for a long time are always like this. They will not even remember their own last names as soon as they get their hands on some money! He simply won some money from the lottery. Does he need to go that far?”

Chapter 128

Gossip is a fearful thing.

And suddenly, it was as though there were countless strange voices in Gerald's ears.

Everyone was staring at Gerald in a completely different light.

“Okay! So this young kid is lying to our Mila?”

Rita had an atrocious temper. She immediately stood up before raising her voice to Gerald coldly.

The old lady’s face also turned unmistakably sour at that point.

Irene glanced at Kenneth before giving off a sardonic smile.

She was immensely satisfied being able to release all of her hatred and resentment!

Rita turned to Mila and asked: “Mila, didn’t you say that Gerald just bought a BMW 7 Series? I already sensed that something wasn’t right earlier. Gerald could’ve just driven here but he did not do so. Let me ask you, have you ever seen his BMW for yourself?”

Mila was speechless because she did not know what to say.

“BMW 7 Series? Rita, we have a total of three BMW branches in the whole of Mayberry City. It has been a while that we have not been selling any of this model at all. I would have definitely known it if we sold any of it!”

“Hang on, wait a minute! I remember now! I remember who he is now!”

Mason’s girlfriend, Queenie, pointed at Gerald as she exclaimed.

Ever since Gerald was present, Queenie had already been eyeing on Gerald the entire time.

She felt that he was very familiar and had a feeling that she had seen this person before.

But Queenie could not remember where exactly she saw him.

The moment Rita mentioned the BMW 7 Series...

Queenie suddenly remembered.

How could she forget? She saw him in the BMW shop!

“Queenie, do you know him?”

Mason quietly asked.

In all honesty, it was very humiliating for family members to face their relatives and friends as Mila’s boyfriend was someone of that sort.

Because of that, Mason was also unable to contain his pained expression upon seeing Gerald.

After all, he had always been secretly fighting with his second uncle’s family.

He really wanted to express his rage there and then, and he wanted Queenie to expose everything that she knew.

“Yes, of course I remember him! Mason, do you remember what I told you a few days ago? Some time ago, a very strange young man came to our BMW shop to look for a car. As soon as he came into the shop, he asked for the most expensive car that we had in the shop. I recommended the most expensive cars in our shop to him but he actually said that he could not buy those cars because they were all too cheap! After that, he left our shop with a pained expression on his face!”

“Of course, I remember! Why? You’re saying Gerald’s that weirdo?”

Mason was really taken aback.

Queenie nodded her head. "Yes, it is him! I remember that he was dressed very shabbily at that time. I couldn't recognise him at all because of how he is dressed today!"

The atmosphere immediately hyped up as everyone stared at Gerald.

"Oh god, what kind of boyfriend did Mila find?"

"He seems a little deranged!"

Mila anxiously replied, "Stop the nonsense! Gerald would never do things like that!"

She felt like collapsing at the ongoing ruckus. What was happening?

She thought that things were going to be pretty easy. She simply wanted Gerald to pretend to be her boyfriend, to make her grandmother happy.

Secondly, she wanted to prove it to Irene.

After all, Gerald had already thrown them off yesterday!

Never would've Mila thought that her cousin sister would actually be so ruthless. She would never have expected her to investigate and look into Gerald's background like this!

Moreover, what are the odds that Mason's new girlfriend would have actually bumped into Gerald before.

To make matters worse, she even put him down and made him seem like a fool.

You could say that everything was totally backfiring and going in the opposite direction than what Mila expected.

“Gerald would never do things like that? Mila, do you really think that your sister-in-law would lie to you? If you don’t believe me, you can just ask your boyfriend, Gerald, whether everything I said is true. You can ask him if all that happened at the BMW shop that day.”

Queenie replied.

Gerald had been quietly listening in on the conversation from the side. At that instance, a sudden recollection of Queenie hit him.

Besides, regardless of whatever it was, it was simply a one-sided encounter with Queenie that day. She was wearing a black uniform. She was constantly speaking to other customers and did not take him seriously when she was introducing some cars to him. They basically did not have much interaction at all.

Gerald also recalled that Queenie had reprimanded and cursed at him when he walked out of the shop that day.

He didn’t care that much about it at that time.

But was Gerald going to refute her words? How was he going to? After all, what she claimed was nothing but the truth.

As everyone was watching him, Gerald slowly nodded and replied, “Everything she said is true. Indeed. It was indeed tormentous because I could not choose or buy any of those expensive cars at the BMW shop that day. It is simply because the cars there are really too cheap!”

Gerald quipped.

Chapter 129

As everyone started chattering away, one after the other, Rita suddenly received a phone call.

Her face lightened with joy as she squealed, "What, sister? You have already arrived at the airport? Didn't you say that you will not be able to make it back for grandma's birthday? Ahh? Okay! Okay! Okay! I will come and pick you right now!"

Hanging up right away, Rita said, "Grandma, my sister will be arriving in a bit. She came back all the way from M country and she is already waiting at the airport now!"

"Oh that child, Cara...alright. I knew that she would definitely be back..." The old lady smiled as she immediately said: "Then Mason...Mason you can go and pick Cara up! You may go alone. I want Queenie to stay and accompany me."

"Okay, grandma!"

Mason smiled as he waved, clutching the BMW sports car key in his hand before quickly excusing himself.

Mila's face was clouded with disappointment.

Cara was Rita's sister.

Ever since childhood, Mila had always had the best relationship with these two sisters.

Her grandmother knew it too.

It only made sense that her grandmother would have told her to pick Cara up too, however she clearly told Mason to go alone.

This reflected how unhappy her grandmother was with her.

After Mason's departure.

Everyone's topic of conversation and focus fell on Gerald again.

Yes. No one would have thought that Gerald would be such a jerk.

Since he was also making an appearance as Mila's boyfriend, the focus of this topic was obviously of high importance.

Gerald remained silent as he continued listening to the accusations.

He was of course enraged to hear all the slander and ridicule of others.

But he also knew he needed to take care of Mila's reputation.

The best he could do was to only endure it.

At the same time.

Queenie's cell phone suddenly rang.

"Mason is calling me! Maybe he wants me to accompany him, grandma!"

Queenie smiled before answering the call.

Her face immediately ashened.

"Grandma, something bad has happened! Mason crashed into another car!"

"What?"

“When he was reversing his car out from the parking lot, he accidentally crashed into another car!”

“Ahh! I was wondering if something major happened. Is Mason’s car okay?” the old lady hurriedly asked.

“It is not a big deal. If there is no major damage to Mason’s car, then you can ask him to go and pick his cousin sister up first. I’ll take care of the rest of the matter for him.”

Kyle replied and smiled.

How difficult was it to deal with just a rear end collision?

“Mason, you can leave first. Kyle said that he will help you to deal with this matter! What? Okay, okay!”

Upon hanging up, Queenie looked at Mason’s father worriedly and said, “Mason said that he is too afraid to leave the car. He is also asking you to go over there and take a look, uncle. It seems as though Mason is in big trouble!”

“Huh? What’s going on?”

Everyone whispered amongst themselves.

All of them headed out to the parking lot in curiosity.

The old lady also went along.

Mason was usually a very calm and composed person. He would not be acting this way if it was any ordinary matter.

“Gerald, let’s head out and take a look too.”

Mila suddenly said.

Gerald nodded with a smile.

Chapter 130

When Gerald walked over, the entire Smith family was already gathered here.

Concurrently, Mason was explaining the situation:

“Dad, I really didn’t mean it. This is all this security guard’s fault! I was relying on his directions and he kept telling me to reverse. That’s when I crashed into the car!”

“This car is the most expensive car produced by Lamborghini. It will cost at least a hundred to a hundred and twenty thousand dollars to fix the damages caused by this accident. Plus, the car’s front lamps are already broken!”

Some of the relatives who recognized this car could not help but exclaim out loud.

“Whoever is driving this car is definitely not just anybody. We can definitely afford to pay that price to fix the damages. But we might also be offending a very powerful figure. On top of that, this looks like it’s a new car that someone just bought!”

“Just think about it. In Mayberry City, which son of which wealthy and influential family would be able to drive this kind of sports car that is worth approximately one million five hundred to three hundred million dollars?”

Everyone continued discussing this matter amongst themselves.

Upon hearing this, Gerald started feeling anxious.

Damn it. His car was parked at this position. Could it be that Mason had crashed into his Reventon?

As he squeezed through and made his way through the crowd, Gerald choked.

It was really his own car.

The body of the car was fine, but there were some scratches on the car after the hit. However the worst damage was that the right front headlight was already broken!

A right front headlight isn't very expensive, but neither is it very cheap either. Since there were also scratches on the car body, it would probably cost him about two hundred and sixty thousand dollars to fix the damages.

But as someone had mentioned, this was his new car.

The old lady grew anxious: "Mason, you were too careless. The security guard is obviously a stutterer. Can't you tell? This is bad. This time round, not only are we paying hundreds of thousands of dollars for damages, but we will also be offending a very powerful figure!"

"Mason, grandma, I think that we might have really gotten into big trouble this time! We cannot afford to offend the owner of this car at all!"

Queenie grabbed Mason's hand as he pulled him aside.

She saw how crucial it was beyond this matter.

"Queenie, why do you say that? Do you know who owns this car?" the old lady hurriedly questioned.

"Yes!" Queenie replied as she nodded frantically. "I just sent a photo of this car to the employees of our company, because some of our employees used to work for Lamborghini. He replied in the group chat, saying that this car was sold a few days ago at a transaction price of two million six hundred thousand dollars. It was bought by a young man. He said that the manager of the shop was following behind him, and he was very polite and respectful towards the young man on that day when he was buying the car!"

“Not only that, do you know who the manager of the Lamborghini shop in Mayberry City is? It is Wilson Quare!”

Queenie carefully explained.

“Is it really Mr. Wilson? Was he really very respectful towards this car buyer?”

“The reason why Mr. Wilson is so powerful in Mayberry City is entirely because of his contacts! He has very powerful connections here!”

With that being said, the old lady grew even more anxious.

“Then we should get out of here soon. Otherwise, we will be in trouble when the young man arrives!” the old lady panically cried.

She might be naïve, but she clearly knew what the consequences of offending a big and powerful family was. Even the slightest issue would affect everything else!

“Grandma, we absolutely cannot leave right now! There are surveillance cameras everywhere now!”

Irene and Rita started persuading her.

To be honest, Irene’s eyes had not left the Lambo for even a second. She was fantasizing about how she would look if she were to be sitting in this luxurious car.

It would simply be perfect if her boyfriend, Kenneth could own this car!

But, that would be impossible.

As for Rita, she was even worse. She was actually thinking of waiting for the owner of the car to arrive.

If he could own a luxury car worth about three million dollars, then this person was undoubtedly a very rich and wealthy person.

Does this mean that she was one step closer to her own dreams and expectations?

It would be great progress even if she managed to grab a short encounter with that young man!

“Oh! We should get someone to go and pick Cara up first! Irene and Rita are right. We should not leave. It would be okay if we do not leave but if we leave now, then we will really be in big trouble!”

The old lady’s tone was dead serious. She felt like she was becoming a dotard.

“Grandma, I would love to go and pick her up now, but I do not dare to leave just yet,” Mason replied, swallowing his own saliva.

“It’s okay. You can go and pick her up first. Grandma, all of you can go in and enjoy your birthday banquet first. Since this car is already hit, just let it be then. It’s okay!”

Suddenly, a voice broke out behind everyone.

It was Gerald.

Chapter 131

After saying that, Gerald walked up to the car to take a look.

He would be lying if he said that he wasn’t distressed at the sight of his broken car at all.

Moreover, what could he possibly do now? What has happened, has happened. Plus it was Mila’s grandmother’s birthday banquet today.

If he demanded them to pay for the damages incurred, what would it make Mila look like?

Besides that, it was also have been too embarrassing.

Out of no choice, he was left to bottle his bitter sufferings in silence.

And with that, Gerald could only ask them to carry on whatever they were doing. He could perhaps later on drive his car to the 4S shop to fix the damages.

“Who do you think you are? Do you think that everything will be okay just because you say that it’s okay?”

“Those who don’t know any better would actually think that you are actually Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street. Let’s only talk about all these when you finally reach that point in life!”

“Exactly! If we leave right now, then this will definitely be treated as a hit-and-run case. Adding on to that, we’ll have to bear a very huge responsibility because this would be a case that costs so much money! How can you have no legal consciousness at all!”

A group of Mila’s cousins, aunts and uncles immediately began mocking Gerald.

Irene grabbed this opportunity to add to the flames, “He is just a country bumpkin who does not know anything at all. So, how can you talk about legal consciousness with him?”

“Right okay, let’s not talk about him anymore. He can’t be of any help anyway. We might as well use all of our efforts to see if we can use any of our connections to resolve this matter instead.”

Rita glanced at Gerald faintly before she fixed her attention back to the topic of the car.

“Rita is right. Since it has already happened, escaping is not a solution. Ah! If we really have no choice, then I will contact Mr. Logan from the Bureau of Commerce. Back then, your grandfather had a very close relationship with him. Perhaps, he might know the identity of this young man!”

The old lady replied.

Many people started whipping out their cell phones to call their own contacts.

Kenneth did not want to be outdone. He wanted to see if he could use his connections to find out more about the owner of the car.

Gerald shook his head wryly.

If this continued, everyone would be placed in a very awkward situation.

Ugh!

Gerald sighed before he took out his car key.

Beep! Beep!

Two beeps.

The lights started flashing.

“Ahh?”

All of them were taken aback.

They then saw Gerald slowly walking forward.

He pressed a button again.

There were two buzzing sounds.

The Lamborghini made a mechanical sound and the sunroof opened automatically, as it folded into a kind of roadster.

Gerald picked up a bottle of mineral water from the driver's seat.

He was really thirsty.

After taking a few mouthfuls, he wiped his mouth before he said, "I've already told you, that it's no big deal. You can go and get busy with your own plans."

No one replied to Gerald at all. Instead, he was greeted with a pin-drop silence.

Smack!

Kenneth was just about to make a phone call when his cell phone fell to the ground because he did not hold it firmly in his hand.

Glup!

Kyle and his girlfriend could only swallow their saliva.

Irene started breathing rapidly as her mouth gapped slightly, indicating the intense shock she was feeling at that very moment.

Rita was standing next to Gerald. A confused look ran all over her face before she slowly looked at Gerald in surprise.

The old lady was also stunned.

Everyone was flabbergasted.

“This car...belongs to Gerald?”

No one knew who broke the silence first.

More so, that person who spoke out captured everyone else’s inner consternation with much precision.

Mila was also very surprised and she asked, “Gerald, this car is yours?”

“Of course, it is mine. Didn’t I tell you earlier that I’ll be bringing you out for a drive one of these days?”

Gerald replied.

Mila remembered now.

It was the day of the driving test. When Gerald was sending her back to her dormitory, he said that he would drive her around in a luxury car soon.

Back then, she replied that she would be waiting then!

And as for Gerald, he then told her that he was actually a rich second generation.

To that statement, she playfully responded, “Mr. Crawford, I would be waiting for that day to come.”

Mila was simply joking around to play along with Gerald’s joke back then.

Who would've thought that seeing Gerald open his Lamborghini sports car's door right in front of her eyes, Mila felt as though she was dreaming.

"Gerald, is this car really yours? I don't believe it! I don't believe it! I don't believe it!!!"

Irene finally came to her senses and she felt her cheeks were sore and started acting up hysterically.

Gerald, you are nothing but a pathetic jerk. A pathetic jerk who won a small prize.

How could you possibly afford to buy such an expensive car?

Chapter 132

Two million six hundred thousand dollars!

What kind of status was this?

Impossible!

Irene rushed over to the car before she unceremoniously flipped out the car driving permit.

"Snap!"

Upon looking at the permit, Irene froze as she dropped the car driving permit to the ground.

She was dumbfounded.

"If you don't want to look at it, just don't look at it. Why do you have to throw it on the ground?"

Gerald could not help but smiled wryly.

“Some people do not have any knowledge or experience. Likewise, her father and mother too. They do not have any knowledge or experience in this at all. Gerald, why don’t you tell auntie how you met our Mila?”

Helen quickly ran over to pick up the car driving permit before glancing at it. She then grabbed Gerald’s wrist the next immediately second..

She started acting very cordially as though she was holding her own son’s hand.

“Oh, auntie. We met when we were learning how to drive!”

Gerald replied.

“Hahaha. I knew all along that our Mila has such good taste. In fact, I already knew that you were not just a simple man when I first saw you, Gerald. How can those people such as Quinton or Victor possibly be compared to you?”

“Umm...”

These words put Gerald in an awkward spot.

After all, who was that person who drove him out of their house in the past?

“Yes, Gerald. Cough. Cough. I am so sorry about this matter. Our Mason crashed into your car and damaged it!”

The old lady’s tone drastically changed, it was more pleasant and caring.

She walked towards Gerald with a smile on her face.

She was really shook to the core because of this incident.

But, it then turned out that the owner of this luxurious car was actually her grandson-in-law.

Aside from a handful who still couldn't comprehend the fact that Gerald was indeed a local tycoon, everyone else started to open up and speak to Gerald.

Since he was in a hurry to go and repair his own car, Gerald didn't bother waiting but was getting ready to leave even before the birthday banquet was over.

"Gerald, I'll be heading to school later in the afternoon. Why don't I accompany you to repair your car then?"

Mila asked playfully.

What a day. Both experiencing shocks and also a pleasant surprise.

To sum it up, she was filled with inexplicable excitement.

"Of course! After all, I told you that I'd bring you out for a ride. Get in!"

Although it was an important birthday banquet, the fact that Mila was able to go out with Gerald felt like the best gift to the old lady.

They then took off together.

"Gerald, are you really a rich second generation? So you've been lying to me all this while? Wait a minute, don't tell me that you're really the top young master, Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street?"

Mila shot off curiously as she perched in the passenger seat.

Gerald did not know how he should answer her questions.

He was indeed the Mr. Crawford that they had been talking about.

Was he really going to fully disclose his own identity? This could only end up with one result. He would not be able to stay in this school any longer.

Because of that, Gerald decided to hide it.

He shook his head and asked, "So are you hoping that I'm Mr. Crawford, or are you hoping for me not to be him?"

"Not! Because if you really are Mr. Crawford, then you'll not belong in the same world as us anymore. I will lose a good friend like you then!"

"Hehehe. I am not. Besides that, how can someone like Mr. Crawford possibly be driving a car that is only worth one million five hundred thousand to three million dollars? And also, just take a look at me! If it weren't for you who picked out my clothes and matched it for me, I wouldn't be wearing such nice clothes!"

"I simply won the lottery. I won a lot of money!"

Gerald replied as derailed.

"Hmph. That is also true. So, you are still my good friend, Gerald!"

Mila replied with a bright smile.

Gerald then realised that although Mila was someone highly intellectual, she would never think about the complexity of a question.

If it was any other girl, she would definitely be pestering him to get to the bottom of the matter.

However, Mila did not question him any further after finding out that Gerald was not Mr. Crawford.

To her, it was the same, regardless of whether Gerald was rich or not.

Gerald had sent his car to the Lamborghini shop and Wilson helped arrange for the most professional technician to repair his car.

Once that was settled, Gerald went for a walk with Mila.

“Let me buy you a cup of milk tea,” Gerald flashed a tiny smile. The both of them spotted a milk tea shop by the roadside as they were walking.

“Haha, you don’t have to! Remember that I still owe you a cup of milk tea? Plus, it’s me who asked you to pretend to be my boyfriend today. So, I owe you!”

At the mention of milk tea, Mila couldn’t help but think of the first time they met.

She was already walking towards the milk tea shop as they were conversing.

Gerald remained silent and he simply waited for Mila. A cup of milk tea was probably not enough to repay the debt that she owed him!

Gerald was waiting by the side of the road when he suddenly heard a cry for help.

“Help! Help!”

Gerald turned around and he saw that the Mayberry City’s moat was not too far away. A woman was yelling frantically.

Chapter 133

Gerald felt his heart skip a beat when he heard the cry for help.

He hastily rushed over.

The moat was pretty desolate as there were no parks or anything else nearby.

The woman was crying and she was drenched from head to toe.

When she saw Gerald, she almost collapsed to her knees. "Hurry! Hurry! Hurry! Please help save my daughter!"

The woman was beautiful and appeared to be wearing a lot of fine jewelry. It seemed as though she was quite a figure.

She hurriedly pointed at the river and Gerald could see a young girl flailing about in the water.

Her daughter had obviously tripped into the water. The woman tried to rescue her daughter but she could only plead desperately for help as she didn't know how to swim.

Gerald watched in horror as the young girl's body slowly stopped moving and started sinking.

He knew that it would be way too late if he did not act upon it now.

Without thinking twice, he dove into the river at an accelerated speed.

Gerald's family used to live in a village in a small county town. There was a river by the village and Gerald learnt how to swim ever since he was a young child.

Fortunately, the water in this moat was not too deep.

Thankfully, the young girl knew some basic swimming skills which made it easier for Gerald to save the young girl, but the experience she went through was simply daunting, though without any serious mishaps.

After he carried the young girl up, the child choked a little and her face was flushed red.

Her mother was so distressed and she kept patting her back gently. She kept thanking Gerald profusely.

“Call 120 first!”

“Yes, the child is too young. Oh! What kind of mother are you? How can you allow your child to come to the water all by herself?”

Several citizens ran over as soon as they heard the commotion.

Some were making phone calls while several older women started criticizing the young mother.

“Don’t accuse my mom. Uncles and aunties, please don’t scold my mom. Tessa is the one who insisted on coming here to release my wishing boat. This has nothing to do with my mom!”

As soon as the young girl heard her mother getting ridiculed, she cried out in defense as she tried to explain herself.

“What an obedient child!”

“Yes, she is really a good young lady. Ma’am, you have to take good care of your child. If this man did not rush over here on time, the consequences would have been disastrous!”

“This young man is quite amazing!”

A few citizens who were standing at the side looked at Gerald who was completely drenched, with a look of admiration on their faces.

The mother hurriedly hoisted a weak Tessa over as slowly walked over to Gerald.

“Young man, thank you so much. What is your name? Where do you live?”

She asked for his address as she wanted to thank Gerald.

It was too obvious for Gerald to not know the intention of her query. All he did was save a person. Gerald believed that most people would have done the same to save a person in such a situation.

He simply waved it off.

“It’s alright. You should take your daughter to the hospital quickly!”

Gerald turned around to leave as he replied.

“Big brother, will I see you again?”

A weak Tessa asked.

She felt as though she was this close to death and was shaken to the core.

But there Gerald was, who jumped in to save her without any hesitation at all. This was the sole reason why she wanted to see him again.

“Yes!” Gerald did not want to let the young girl down. After smiling at her, he ignored the young mother who was still calling out to him and he left right away.

This was probably one of those once-off encounters anyway.

Gerald hurriedly ran back to the side of the road.

By now, more than twenty minutes have already passed.

Mila should have already bought her milk tea a long time ago.

When he got to the side of the road, Mila was nowhere in sight.

Hmm?

Shouldn't she have already bought the milk tea after such a long time?

He quickly took out his cell phone and glanced at it. It was dripping wet as it had been completely soaked in water. The cell phone had also been turned off.

Could it be that Mila already went back to the car shop since she could not reach him on his cell phone?

Gerald went to the milk tea shop and looked around but he could not find her there.

He had no choice but to return to the car shop first, but attempted to switch on his phone before that. Thankfully, it worked.

Wilson suddenly called him at the same time.

He wanted to tell Gerald that his car had already been repaired.

It was not difficult to replace all the damaged parts of the car, under the intensive care of a few experienced technicians in less than forty minutes.

“By the way, Mr. Wilson, did the girl who came with me just now return to the car shop?”

“Ahh! No? She didn’t come back here again after she left with you. Is there a problem, Mr. Crawford? Did something happen? Just let me know if something happened.”

“Thank you, Mr. Wilson. No worries, everything is fine.”

Gerald felt a little puzzled after hanging up. This was strange. Where could Mila have gone?

It was impossible for her to go home. She would not have gone home alone just because she could not find him.

She wasn’t anywhere nearby to be found and she was not at the car shop either.

Where could she have gone?

Chapter 134

Gerald looked around everywhere but he could not find her at all. Plus, his phone had died again.

In just about an hour of searching, he was now drenched in sweat.

Mila came out with him. Could something have happened to her? Gerald had already ruled out all of the possibilities and had already been waiting around the area for such a long time.

But he still couldn’t see Mila anywhere at all.

The more he thought about it, the more Gerald started to break out in cold sweat.

Gerald decided to return to the car shop to see if he could get his cell phone to turn on.

After fiddling with it for a while, he finally managed to turn on his cell phone.

As expected, Mila did indeed make many phone calls and sent many text messages to him.

However, his cell phone had been turned off at that time.

Gerald hurriedly returned her call but he realized that Mila's cell phone was already turned off.

What was happening?

Gerald couldn't remain his composure any longer.

He tried calling Mila's house but he noticed that she did not go home either.

Something definitely had happened.

Gerald suddenly raised his head.

Things seemed to be a little suspicious.

"Mr. Wilson, do you know the manager of the milk tea shop? I want to take a look at the surveillance camera recording! We need to hurry!"

Gerald immediately got up.

Wilson stuck by Gerald the entire time after he came back to the car shop.

When he realized that Gerald's girlfriend might be in trouble, he was constantly on his toes.

Wilson nodded as he exclaimed that he knew the manager. He quickly led Gerald to the milk tea shop.

After looking at the recording of the surveillance camera, Gerald starting figuring it out slowly.

Everything happened about two hours ago.

After Mila bought the milk tea and stepped out of the shop, she realized that Gerald was gone.

She then hurriedly tried to call Gerald but discovered that Gerald's cell phone was turned off.

Mila was very anxious.

She squatted by the roadside as she waited for ten minutes, but Gerald did not come back at all.

During those few minutes, a black Passat suddenly stopped right next to Mila.

A young man with a cap stepped out of the car.

"Are you Mila?" the young man asked with a smile.

Mila nodded slightly as she said, "And you are?"

"Oh, oh, I am a cab driver sent here by Gerald, or Mr. Crawford. He asked me to come and pick you up. He had to leave earlier because he had an emergency at home. He asked me to come to send you back to Paradise Ville!"

The man who was wearing a peaked cap smiled as he explained.

He then turned around quickly to observe his surroundings as he looked carefully towards the direction of the moat.

“Oh, thank you. I will give Gerald a call again. Why is his cell phone turned off I wonder?”

Unassumingly, Mila did not have any doubts because the man knew of Gerald’s name and he even knew hers.

Mila did not know what Gerald’s family was doing but since he left in such a hurry, then something must have come up. He called for a car to send her home because he must be worried about her.

In addition, this man knew that she lived in Paradise Ville. Looking at all these right signs, Gerald must be the one who told him this.

Mila had no doubts about these.

However, Mila was still feeling a little uneasy because she could not contact Gerald at all.

She tried calling again several times but she could not get through his cell phone at all.

“Miss Mila, are we leaving? I still have to pick another customer up!”

The driver urged.

“Oh, I am leaving! You can send me home first!”

Mila got into the car because she didn’t want to make the other party wait any longer.

She felt a little angry with Gerald. Why? Why did he leave just like that? He did not even bother to call her at all.

Did he think that she would not be able to call for a cab herself?

About ten minutes after the car left.

Gerald walked over to the milk tea shop in his wet clothes.

“Stop! Rewind the screen! Zoom in on the driver’s face!”

Gerald yelled when he saw this.

The owner of the milk tea shop did not know who this person was but he did not dare to reject a request as such since a manager like Mr. Wilson was also treating him with so much respect.

He followed Gerald’s instructions and he rewound the video before zooming into the driver’s face.

Gerald stared at the driver’s face carefully.

The brim of his cap was pulled down low and there was slight stubble around his mouth.

Despite that, Gerald could still recognize the person.

It was him?!

Chapter 135

Nigel!

As Gerald zoomed into the screen and fiddled about for a bit, the person shown in the picture was none other than Nigel from the Fisher family. No matter how much Nigel tried to disguise himself, he would never be able to fool Gerald because of the smile that he always had on his face.

From the start, Nigel was the trigger and the direct cause of Gerald and Xavia’s breakup.

Moreover, when they went over to the Emperor Karaoke Bar after Naomi's birthday party, Nigel has also been keeping tabs on him. Out of anger, Gerald called Zack for help, to teach Nigel a lesson.

The moment his sister found out about this matter, she simply did not just teach Nigel a lesson. Instead, she made the entire Fisher family go bankrupt.

At last, Nigel was taken away at the entrance of the Mountain Wayfair Entertainment.

Ever since that day, the Fisher family was completely destroyed. They had to hand the Grand Marshall Restaurant over and the restaurant was now managed by the Ziegler family instead.

Just like that overnight, Nigel turned from a rich second generation into a pauper.

In addition to that, he already turned out this way before he even knew what was happening.

But now...why was Nigel kidnapping Mila?

Gerald was baffled.

Was he simply kidnapping her to blackmail them for a sum of money?

However, when he looked at the situation, it did not seem that way.

He had obviously told Mila something and he finally convinced Mila before she agreed to get into his car.

Gerald also noticed another detail.

When Nigel was talking to Mila, his eyes were constantly looking towards the direction of the moat where he had been.

It was as though he knew and was worried that Gerald would suddenly come back.

Did this mean that Nigel had already been planning this for a long time? Was he kidnapping Mila because of him?

If Nigel found out later on that his family was completely ruined because of him, then it would certainly make sense for Nigel to retaliate against him.

No matter what it was, what Gerald was most certain of was that Mila was in danger. Extreme danger!

Gerald thought hard about the countermeasures.

At that very instant, Gerald's cell phone suddenly rang.

It was from an unknown number.

"Hehehe. Gerald. Oh wait, that's not right. I should call you Mr. Crawford instead. Do you remember me?"

An indifferent and arrogant voice crackled through from the other end of the call.

"Nigel, it is really you!"

Gerald immediately recognized the voice as soon as he heard it.

"That's right. How unexpectedly, a big shot like you would actually remember someone like me. Hahaha. This feels like a drama indeed. Gerald, back then, everyone simply thought that you were nothing but a pauper. But what? You are actually the wealthy and influential young master who owns the entire Mayberry Commercial Street? I used to think that my dad was really bullish but he was just working for you all along! If it wasn't for me who heard Zack secretly making a phone call to you when I was

planning to retaliate against him, I would never have imagined that you were the one who destroyed my family with just one phone call!”

“But, Mr. Crawford, why do you have to hold it against me when you are already so rich and powerful? Yes, I was the one who asked Yuri to snatch your girlfriend from you. It was wrong of me. But then, you destroyed my family and you left me with nothing at all! Don’t you think you were being too cruel?”

Hearing this, Gerald replied, “You know I did feel that I was being a little too cruel and heartless at that time, but now I do not think so anymore!”

“Nigel, whatever it is, this is between the both of us. Mila is innocent. Let her go. I’ll come to you wherever you are now and I’ll agree to any of your terms or conditions!”

“Hehe. Gerald, you are really a pompous ass! You were my main target. I originally planned to hit you with my car so that the both of us can die together! On a second thought, it felt too boring. What more, I have such a beautiful young woman next to me right now. This is really worth it! So Gerald, she’s your girlfriend? Do you want to listen to her voice now?”

“Gerald, you must not come here! He is a lunatic!”

“Don’t come! Sob...sob...”

Mila cried and yelled over the phone.

Gerald grew extremely anxious.

Although he was simply pretending to be Mila’s boyfriend, Mila was still out with him today.

The reason why Nigel kidnapped Mila was because he wanted revenge on him.

Everything was all because of him.

“Gerald, if you want to save your girlfriend, then you should come and see me at the unfinished building in the south of the city. Do not contact Zack. It will be useless anyway. If anyone else comes, then I will just perish with your girlfriend! Come and see me within an hour!”

“Du...du...du...”

Nigel hung up as soon as he was done speaking.

Gerald grew pale.

It seemed as though he had guessed everything correctly. His identity had been leaked and he had attracted Nigel’s attention. And look where this brought him, Nigel who was already mentally unsound is now launching a revenge against him.

Gerald was certain that this guy would be capable of doing anything now.

Looking at the situation, it wouldn’t be enough to rely on his own strength to resolve this matter.

He had to look for Zack so that he could help him to come up with a solution.

Gerald quickly called Zack and filled him in. Zack took this matter very seriously.

Chapter 136

Zack even urged him repeatedly to wait for him so that they could discuss things further when he arrives.

He told Gerald not to act rashly. Zack couldn’t afford to see Gerald lose it at this point.

If that happened, then Zack would have to resign. No, worse still he’d rather die.

Gerald hung up before Zack could even finish talking.

He hurriedly returned to the car shop with Wilson. He then told Wilson to wait for Zack to come here.

He said that he had to leave first.

“Oh! Isn’t that Gerald?”

“Oh my! It is really him! What is he doing in the Lamborghini car shop?”

“I heard that the store is recruiting some sales representatives at the moment. Is he trying to apply for the job? Doesn’t he know that the shop has very high requirements for their sales representatives?”

“Yes, look at him. Even if he really won the lottery, he still has a very poor temperament. It makes people sick to even just look at him!”

Gerald’s presence was unexpected.

And he could already hear were their ridicule that was directed at him.

Gerald was feeling just all messed up inside. He simply glared in their direction.

It was Quinton and his classmate, Howard. The both of them each had a beautiful girlfriend with them as they looked at the cars.

To make matters worse, the two who were following behind were none other than Nathaniel and Quinn from the same faculty as him back in university.

“Hahaha. Speaking of the devil! Cousin, you told me that Gerald had turned things sour for you in the past. You should have told me that the person was him then I would have told you all about his story!”

Nathaniel laughed as he spoke to Howard.

“That’s it. It’s not just you, cousin! In fact, I have also been fascinated by Gerald for quite some time!”

Quinn had already gotten together with Nathaniel at this time. She got to know Howard through Nathaniel and then, she naturally got to know Quinton too.

Her horizons did not just expand a little.

A while back, when she was eating with Victor and the others, she found out that Gerald was really rich.

Initially, Quinn was very tempted by the prospect and she even took the initiative to try and gain his favor. She was even ready to bring Gerald to open a room and spend the night with her.

Gerald ignored her completely and Quinn was indulged in the thought for quite some time.

It was only until much later when she received an invitation to attend a party from Nathaniel. That was when Quinn met Howard and Quinton and she felt as though she had just stepped into a brand new world.

Was this what a real rich second generation community was like?

As for Gerald who had just won the lottery, he was nothing more than an ugly and disgusting sideline!

Quinton stared coldly at Gerald the entire time.

He then said, “Perhaps he had already finished spending almost all of his money. That is why he is so desperate to look for a job right now. Hahaha. Let’s not be bothered about him anymore. Let’s continue talking about this Reventon!”

All of them surrounded the newly repaired Lamborghini Reventon as they savored it inch by inch carefully.

All Gerald could think about was Mila, he was very worried and anxious. So, how could he possibly be bothered about them at all?

He didn't even have time to pay any attention to their cynicism.

Beep! Beep!

Two beeps.

Gerald pushed Quinn away from the car door and stepped into his car hurriedly.

He then revved up the engine and zoomed out of the shop immediately.

Quinton was stunned and Quinn, who was about to curse at Gerald, was also caught off guard.

In short, all six of them were dumbfounded as they continued staring.

Gerald just drove the car away? This was Gerald's car?

Ahh!

How could that be possible?

Quinn felt as though she had just been slapped across her face. "Look! That man just stole a car!"

Quinn shouted.

“Give instructions that our shop will be closed today. All employees who have worked for less than five years will be on vacation and they can leave immediately. Some of Mr. Crawford’s important subordinates will be reaching anytime soon!”

Wilson did not pay any attention to Quinn or Quinton but he simply gave his instructions to his secretary.

The secretary got to work immediately.

Quinton and the rest of them were still standing dumbfounded at this time.

“Brakeee!”

Suddenly, a burst of emergency brake sounds screeched from outside the shop.

Over a dozen Rolls-Royce Phantom had already lined in front of the entrance of the car shop.

At that moment, Zack stepped out of the car before dashing right into the shop...

Chapter 137

“Zack? Uncle Zack!”

Quinton was surprised when he saw Zack here. He could see the expression on Zack’s face at that time and he did not dare to go forward to say hello to him.

Quinton also had not fully regained his senses and composure from the shock he witnessed just now.

“Mr. Lyle!”

Wilson greeted him immediately.

“How are things? Where is Mr. Crawford?”

Zack hurriedly asked.

“Mr. Crawford has already gone over there first. He’s afraid that he’d be too late!”

Wilson hurriedly said.

“Ahh! That is not good. Hurry, take me to the place that Mr. Crawford is headed to. No matter what, nothing bad can happen to Mr. Crawford today!”

As Zack spoke, he was already calling his men as he walked out of the door. Concurrently, Zack also sent a text message to Gerald first before carefully taking out a machine with a red button and pressed it...

Quinton, Quinn and the others were all stunned.

“What? Crawford...Mr. Crawford?”

How could they not have understood what this meant? The Mr. Crawford that Zack was referring to seemed to be none other than Gerald!

Gerald was Mr. Crawford? Mr. Crawford was Gerald?

Everyone was shocked. How could they not have heard of the infamous Mr. Crawford’s name on Mayberry Commercial Street? His great name had already been the talk of the town at this point.

No one thought that this would be possible...

Yes! When Gerald walked into the car shop, he looked very anxious. Moreover, even though they were taunting him, Gerald ignored them completely and he simply drove away.

And the Lamborghini Reventon.

That was Gerald's car!

If they had thought about it again, Gerald hosted a banquet in one of the most expensive rooms in the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

He had been extremely extravagant.

How could they have not known? Gerald was that Mr. Crawford!

Quinton almost sat down on the ground.

He was still in disbelief and he asked the sales consultant at the side:

"Is the Mr. Crawford that Mr. Wilson and Mr. Lyle are referring to, called Gerald Crawford? He owns the car that he drove off just now?"

The sales consultant nodded before he replied, "Yes, don't you know him?"

He felt a little weird as he asked the last question.

After all, he had been very surprised that this group of people actually dared to talk to Mr. Crawford in that manner. He initially thought that they were possibly even more powerful compared to Gerald. As a result, they did not even know anything about Mr. Crawford's identity at all!

"Oh my god!"

Quinton was utterly stunned at this moment.

Quinn had an even more strained expression on her face. The person that she despised and looked down on, was actually someone whom she could never even be compared with?

At that very instance, Quinn and her group of friends were clouded by a lot of feelings and they really just wanted to disappear and die.

“You know what, why don’t we go and take a look? Perhaps, there are two people with the same names?” Howard and Nathaniel stuttered almost simultaneously.

They were clearly still in self-denial and couldn’t face reality just yet.

“Okay, I agree!”

“I agree!”

“Hurry up! Otherwise, we will not be able to catch up with them!”

Quinton wiped away his cold sweat before he hurried off to get his car with Howard.

On the other hand, Gerald was stepping on his accelerators like a madman.

He even ran through a dozen red lights.

Not long after, he finally arrived at the unfinished construction site as Nigel mentioned.

It was already barren and there were only a dozen floors built in this building before the project was abandoned because of some issues with the foundation.

The intersection of the downstream branches of the moat at Mayberry City was directly behind this block of buildings.

It was a very rapid river.

The foundation of this building was originally quite a distance away from the surface of the river. However, due to soil erosion, the water bank was almost directly below the building now.

Hence, it had become very dangerous and they had to stop the construction of this building.

Gerald had seen this place in the news before.

“Gerald, I did not expect you to come so soon!”

A voice suddenly echoed from the top of the building. It was Nigel, who was looking down at Gerald from a peak.

Gerald was filled with anger and remained silent. Instead, he simply dashed to the top of the building.

Nigel was still wearing a peaked cap but this time round he seemed to look much darker. He was also undoubtedly a lot stronger. He wore a scraggly beard and looked rather barbaric.

Mila was right next to him. Nigel had bound her up tightly and he even sealed her mouth with a duct tape.

“Woo...woo...woo...”

Mila shook her head frantically as she stared at Gerald. She was trying to yell, why are you so silly?! What are you doing here? Hurry up and leave!!

Chapter 138

"If you let her go, I'll give you as much money as you want!" Gerald said firmly.

"Hahaha. Money? Gerald, do you really think that money can solve everything? Let me tell you something. I hate money now! And of course, you Gerald, are even more spiteful than money! I don't want anything else other than your life right now!"

"This might not seem like the most show-stopping method, but it doesn't matter as long as I am happy and satisfied! Gerald, Mr. Crawford! When I was having a chat with your girlfriend earlier, I realized that your girlfriend does not know about your true identity at all!"

Gerald felt that the person that he was looking at right now was a complete pervert who had already lost all his senses and rationale.

The Nigel who used to be extremely wealthy, arrogant and domineering had always enjoyed trampling on other people.

But the absence of money has really triggered him to go to an extreme measure.

"Mila, let me tell you something today. The person standing in front of you is not an ordinary man. He is the wealthiest person in Mayberry City. No, he could even be considered the wealthiest person across the whole country. The entire Mayberry Commercial Street belongs to him, Gerald!"

Mila's eyes widened in bewilderment as soon as she heard this.

She had already been making her own assumptions before this, but she really did not expect it to be true.

With that being said, Gerald had been the one helping her family all these while!

"Nigel, I'm seriously advising you to let her go now. If you let her go, I can offer you a sum of money. Otherwise, you will definitely regret it!"

“Regret? Hahaha. Gerald, I used to think that I could do anything as long as I have money but right now, I am going to show you that money is not everything! It is impossible for me to let her go today! I am going to let you watch her die before your own eyes!”

Once he was done speaking, Nigel went completely out of control.

He grabbed Mila and attempted to ditch her down the building.

“Bzz! Bzz! Bzz!”

A loud roar suddenly pierced through the sky.

Nervous and stressed, Nigel’s eyes widened as he looked hysterically.

Even Gerald was also caught by surprise.

Around twenty to thirty helicopters appeared out of nowhere outside the building.

The helicopters then began surrounding the entire building.

They quickly ejected large and condensed nets simultaneously.

It was quite a spectacle.

If anyone were to look at it, it was obvious that if anyone had jumped off the building, they would only fall directly onto the safety net.

“Gerald! You...!”

Nigel almost vomited a mouthful of blood after watching this scene.

Money was not everything. Nigel finally understood this statement.

He wanted to use these words to prove his point to Gerald, who was the top rich second generation.

But it was beyond his expectations that Gerald could actually do this?

More than two dozen helicopters? It has only been about twenty minutes since Gerald arrived and it has only been about forty minutes since he called Gerald.

How did he mobilize so many helicopters?

Even if he jumped down now, he would only fall onto the net. He could not die even if he wanted to!

Gerald was also shocked.

He did not expect the text message that he received from Zack to be so useful.

“Mr. Crawford! Do not be impulsive. You just need to delay him for thirty minutes. Just thirty minutes and everything will be fine!”

Zack had always been a very capable and steady person.

There was no reason for him to lie at such a crucial point of time, so Gerald naturally believed him.

More than forty minutes have passed since Gerald arrived.

Gerald was not a soft-hearted person!

But when Zack said that everything would be fine, he really did not expect him to send twenty helicopters over here.

Gerald was shocked by such a commotion.

“Ahh!”

Just then, the dumbfounded Nigel screamed out loud and he fell directly to the ground as his body shook uncontrollably.

His eyes were flushed red as he could only glare at Gerald with a discontent look on his face.

A helicopter then landed on the rooftop as Zack hurriedly jumped out of the helicopter.

“Mr. Crawford, you must have suffered quite a fright!”

Zack hurriedly exclaimed.

He was really quite in shock.

Despite that, Gerald quickly untied and freed Mila first.

Approached Zack, he asked, “Zack, were you the one who mobilized all these helicopters?”

Gerald was surprised.

“Yes, I used the family’s special support resources. I was afraid that you would’ve suffered an accident or something worse today, Mr. Crawford. That being said, Mr. Crawford, I really think that it is about

time that you found out about your family's true potential and power! Consider this my last act of service for you!"

Zack replied with a sad smile.

Chapter 139

Gerald and Mila were successfully rescued without suffering any mishaps. As for Nigel, he was taken away and handed over to the authorities.

Downstairs.

Quinton and Howard had already driven everyone with them to the scene.

They were all even more shocked when they saw what unfolded before them.

All they could do was stand still on the spot.

Was this Mr. Crawford's power?

Twenty dozen helicopters!

"Zack, what do you mean by that? You last act of service for me?"

Gerald was completely taken aback by Zack's last sentence.

He wanted to find out more about his own family but it seemed as though Zack was already bidding farewell to him.

"Yes, Mr. Crawford. This machine is a special support grade instrument that is used to support the family. I was worried about you today and that is the reason why I made use of the special resources. Even though all of those helicopters were all quite a distance away from Nigel, as long as he tried to do

something, he would have been subdued immediately. This group of team members have already formulated and came up with no less than ten solutions for your current situation!”

“But because I activated the special resources, this also means that I have been seriously negligent! Therefore, I will be forced to hand in my resignation!”

Zack said dejectedly.

However, there were no signs of regret on his face at all.

Gerald felt extremely bad about this entire situation.

After all, putting everything into account, all of this started because of him.

What his sister said at the beginning was right. If he were to trample on someone, then he would have to trample on the person to the point that he would not even be able to stand up again.

He did not understand this at that time.

However, this incident was the best proof.

He did not completely resolve the matter involving Nigel. After Nigel found out about his identity, he began to retaliate against him by acting irrationally.

Although the matter involving Nigel has already been resolved now, he still felt a little traumatized when he thought about it. If he had not been able to stall some time, then Mila would have suffered an innocent death because of him!

No matter what it was, Zack still got implicated in this matter and he had been forced to resign.

“Zack, it is okay, I will talk to my sister about this!”

Gerald replied.

Coincidentally as he was speaking, Gerald suddenly received a phone call from his sister, Jessica.

“Brother, how are you? You must be extremely shocked!” Jessica’s concerned voice pierced through the other end.

“Sister, how did you find out about this matter so soon?”

“What nonsense are you talking about? You have already called for the special support so how can I possibly not know about this? You should be more careful and cautious when you handle your affairs in future!”

“I got it. By the way, sis, can Zack be allowed to stay? After all, he was only trying to save me.”

Gerald immediately asked.

“Impossible! He did not complete the task that I assigned to him. According to the rules of the family, he would have to resign and leave immediately! He has the responsibility to save you, even if he has to give up his life to do so!”

Jessica replied in a hostile tone.

Zack, who was standing by the side, could hear Gerald’s conversation. While he was very grateful towards Gerald, he was not angry hearing Jessica’s words and was still very respectful towards him.

Yes. Everything that he has today was given to him by the Crawford family. Moreover, the Crawford family were also the ones who saved his life in the past and brought him up to where he is today.

Even so, he did not fully fulfill the responsibility of protecting the young master of the Crawford family.

He did not fully eliminate all the potential threats.

This was a serious breach of responsibility on Zack's part.

"Well, even if I cannot use Zack anymore, if you are willing to take him in, you will be able to get him to work for you directly then. The family rules do not state that you can't rehire a person!"

Jessica seemed to understand the guilt her younger brother felt because Zack was going to lose his job because of him. Hence, she came up with an idea for him right away.

"Really?!"

Gerald was ecstatic to hear this.

"Yes, but the premise is that you will have to be running your own business. Otherwise, he will not be able to come back to work for the Crawford family! After you set up your own company, you will be able to ask Zack to stay and work for you or help you if you want him to!"

"That's perfect!"

Gerald finally resolved the feeling of self-blame and guilt that was clogged inside.

At the same time, Zack was feeling exceptionally grateful towards Gerald.

"Mr. Crawford..."

He had so much that he wanted to say, but only two words could come out. Nevertheless, Zack meant it from the bottom of his heart!

Mr. Crawford really did not have to do this. It was not necessary at all, but Mr. Crawford was actually going all out for someone like himself.

Zack really did not know how he would be able to repay this debt!

From now onwards, Gerald would be Zack's direct boss!

As Zack trailed behind Gerald, he started telling him about some of his family matters.

"Gerald, there are some people who were snooping around downstairs. We have already caught them. What should we do now?"

A man clad in black came over.

"Alright then. Let's go over there and take a look!"

Gerald nodded.

Downstairs.

"Let us go! We are Gerald's classmates. You cannot kill us!"

Nathaniel cried as he pleaded out loud.

Chapter 140

The scenario just now was just too much to comprehend and he was really afraid that this group of people would really kill them.

"Exactly! Do you know that I nearly became Gerald's girlfriend? How dare you treat me like this?"

Quinn also shrieked.

When they saw the group of respected people who were clustering around Gerald earlier at the top of the building, they were already extremely shocked.

Quinton and Howard fell silent throughout the whole time as their faces were pale with fear.

“Let them go...”

Gerald said as he walked down.

“You heard him! He asked you to let us go!”

Quinn shouted.

Gerald was really the Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street. He was the Mr. Crawford who owned the entire Mayberry Commercial Street. He was simply too amazing!

This whole surprising reveal was just too shocking!

Quinn was about to reach her maximum limit!

“Gerald! Gerald! I always knew that you were different compared to them. I was wrong in the past. I always wanted to get your attention and that is the reason why I used to mock you in the past. In fact, I was only doing it because I liked you but you did not like me at all!”

Quinn kept trying to flatter Gerald as she rushed in front of him.

Gerald felt goosebumps creeping all over his body as soon as he heard her words.

Fuck! This kind of explanation was simply too cringy, right? She had always been taunting him and mocking him because she wanted to get his attention?

“Mr. Crawford!”

Quinton, Howard and both of their new girlfriends were all suddenly respectful towards Gerald all of a sudden.

How respectful were they willing to be?

It is to the point that anything Gerald would request of them to do, they would be willing to do it completely!

He could do and say as he pleased, just like those big shots in the movies.

But at that instance, there were flashes of evil thoughts briefly through Gerald’s mind.

After all, deep down, Gerald had never been the kind of domineering person.

“Mr. Crawford, what do you plan to do with them? You can take necessary measures when it is necessary!”

Zack hinted him from aside. After all, Gerald’s identity has already been exposed to these few people!

“No, no, no! Mr. Crawford. Ahh! No, I mean Gerald, you are still the pathetic pauper, Gerald. We don’t know who you are and we have already completely forgotten everything that happened today!”

Quinton was always the smartest amongst the lot.

He immediately caught on and understood what Zack meant.

He spoke in a hurry as he knelt down in front of Gerald with a loud thud.

“Yes! We don’t know that you are Mr. Crawford!”

Howard and Nathaniel also quickly jumped in.

“It would be best if you could just forget everything that happened here today. Otherwise, there will definitely be more trouble for you in the future,” Gerald said briefly, before he turned around and left.

These people were already acting this way, so Gerald could not possibly get rid of them all just because his identity has been compromised.

They eventually got through this daunting experience anyway without any mishaps. Zack was also then talking to Gerald about some of his family matters in private.

He only gave him a general outline but Gerald found out that the Crawford was a very wealthy and powerful family that has been passed down for hundreds of years. They also had countless industrial assets in their possession!

This resulted in the Crawford family having many rules and steps in inheriting the family, and its assets were even more cumbersome.

For instance, the first test was when Gerald had to live in poverty for more than ten years!

Gerald would have to face even more complicated tests in the near future and Zack urging Gerald to be fully psychologically prepared for these challenges.

...

Gerald sent Mila back home later on before driving back to school again. He stopped his car not too far away from the school gate.

Many pretty girls cast their gazes on him.

Some of them were even screaming out loud.

Gerald had already gotten accustomed to all these.

To be honest, Gerald felt that he was quite a scumbag at this rate. Yes, he was indeed rich now but showing off in front of everyone like this still made him feel very uncomfortable.

To put it bluntly, no matter how much Gerald had changed, he could not change his low key and down-to-earth character and personality.

However, it was not the case if he had to drive this luxury car to go everywhere in future.

It seemed as though he would have to buy himself a house in Mayberry City.

This way, he would be able to park his car in the house and it would be very convenient for him, regardless of whether he wanted to start his own company or do something else in future.

Most importantly, he would be able to go to class, rest and live a normal campus life as he wanted to, every day!

Gerald could not help but think about all this as he sat in the driver's seat.

Suddenly, a piece of news exploded in the class's group chat.

"Shocking news! Look at this! This is simply too shocking!"

"Image!"

“Image!”

“...”

A student from their class posted all the pictures that he had taken inside the group chat!

Chapter 141

About a dozen pictures were posted in the group.

These pictures had caused a huge sensation in the group.

“Damn! Are these pictures fake? This definitely cannot be true! This looks just like an American blockbuster!”

“Yes! There are so many helicopters! No one else can beat this!”

“Isn’t this the unfinished building at the south of the city? Why are there so many helicopters flying around and surrounding the whole building?”

There was a heated discussion in the group.

“I do not know the specific situation but at that time, some of us were preparing to go out for a picnic. We happened to be at the scene at this time. Looking at the pictures doesn’t do justice at all. You guys should have gone to the scene to see it for yourself! It was absolutely crazy!”

“666! Didn’t you guys take a video?”

“We didn’t dare to take a video because there were a lot of people there at that time. I was afraid of getting spotted. So I just left immediately after I took some pictures!”

“Oh dear what a shame!”

Everyone continued discussing this matter.

Cassandra, the counselor, who had not said anything, could not help but voice out: “These pictures are all true. Many people photographed these helicopters rushing to the south of the city earlier today. But in less than an hour, all the photographs that were posted on the Internet are all gone!”

“These are not commercial helicopters but it seems as though these are private helicopters. Some of my friends in my social media said that these helicopters were going there to pick up a rich young master!”

“Damn!!”

The group continued their speculations even more heatedly. “Who is this young master? He must be extremely rich and powerful!”

Gerald could not help but chuckle as he looked at these pictures as he sat in his car.

These helicopters were all there to save him today. How would these group of people react if he exposed this news to them?

As he thought about this, he couldn't help but feel a tinge of guilty pleasure. Hahaha...

Right at that moment.

Cassandra: “Harry...stop acting like a fool over there. By the way, Felicity's live broadcast for the popular star competition in the same city will begin in an hour. All of you are classmates, so you should try to support her later. Even if you are not going to support her with many, you should also log in to view her live broadcast.”

“Just look at Felicity! She is already earning over one thousand five hundred dollars a month even before her own graduation. Since there will be a popular star competition later, then I will also go and watch Felicity’s live broadcast then!”

“Okay, counselor!”

“No problem! She will definitely make it to the top!”

The students chimed in one after the other.

“Thank you, everyone! Kisses! If I manage to win the popularity award this time, then I will definitely treat everyone to a meal! I love all of you, ma babes!”

Felicity sent a voice note directly into the group chat.

A group of pathetic jerks were all wailing all over the place. Her voice was too soft and sweet!

Gerald also secretly placed his cell phone against his ear to listen to Felicity’s voice clearly.

At that very instance, Felicity’s fair and delicate face flashed through in his mind. She was simply too beautiful.

Although Felicity had always been very contemptuous towards Gerald, it would be a lie to say that Gerald had no feelings at all for such a beautiful girl.

Since everyone was going to play, then he might as well join in the fun then.

Anyway, he still had fifteen thousand dollars in his live broadcast account and he would not be able to take the money out anyway.

@Gerald, are you here?

The counselor, Cassandra, suddenly called Gerald out.

Gerald immediately replied.

“Well, since you will not be able to support Felicity in any way during her live broadcast later anyway, you might as well ask the poverty group from our class to help me move houses then. I will be waiting for you at the west gate later!”

Damn it!

Gerald really felt like scolding someone after reading Cassandra’s message.

Cassandra was only about twenty five years old and she was equivalent to the kind of new teacher who had just graduated from university.

Under any normal circumstances, she really disliked the poor and she really loved those who were rich. She would always play and get along very well with the young and rich students and she was more like a friend to them, rather than a teacher.

However, she had always been very strict and serious towards Gerald and the other poor students. It was as though she was a real teacher.

The poverty group, as the name suggested was a group of five or six poor students in their class.

They were in dire need and Gerald was the leader of the poverty group.

This was because Gerald was the poorest amongst all of them, the most honest and also the person who worked the hardest!

That was the reason why Cassandra made him the leader of the group.

Chapter 142

In Cassandra's heart, although Gerald had already won the lottery and paid all of his tuition fees, she was already used to him being a pauper. No matter how rich he was, she would still think that he was a poor person whenever she looked at him every once in a while.

To her, Gerald did not even look like a rich man at all!

Despite feeling really angry and annoyed, Gerald finally agreed to her request. After all, what else could he do if he refused to agree to her request?

At the same time, Gerald then sent another text message to the poverty group, telling all the members to gather at the west gate.

He drove his car and parked it at a hidden, secluded place. After that, he went to the west gate.

"Gerald, why is the counselor always asking us to help her move things?"

"Yes, by the way, Gerald, haven't you already won the lottery? You have a lot of money now. So, how can you possibly still be the leader of the poverty group?"

The poverty group consisted of only five people, including Gerald.

There were three boys and two girls in the group.

The boy named Ywain Woods was very thin, weak and a little tanned. He would always be focused on studying and he would not usually be talking to anyone else.

There was also a girl named, Layla Hack, who wore glasses. She was very fair and not very tall.

Anyone could tell that she was a very geeky person at first glance.

This was mostly because of her family's upbringing where she would often have a sense of inferiority. She did not like to hang out with her classmates because she would always feel a little inferior compared to them.

Hence, she doesn't usually talk much.

The group of people tend to only converse more when they are with Gerald.

This wasn't because they looked down on Gerald, but simply because they felt that Gerald was relatable and belonged to the same world as them.

Gerald could sense Ywain's dissatisfaction and Layla's persuasion were both due to the fact that they had suffered injustice and their self-esteem had been seriously hurt in the class group chat.

Unfortunately, Gerald couldn't comment anything on this and after all, he was also a little angry about this matter.

It seemed as though he would have to look for an opportunity to teach his counselor, Cassandra a lesson then.

"Everyone is here, right? Layla, you and Lora can go to the faculty's new house to clean the rags and wash the cloth first. Gerald, you can go with Ywain and the rest. The three of you can help the workers to move the furniture for me. Listen to the worker's instructions before you do anything! Be careful not to break any of my furniture!"

After Cassandra was done speaking, she turned around as she prepared to leave.

She then suddenly received a phone call.

She looked really annoyed to answer the call.

“Myra Jensions, what do you mean? I have already told you many times that I am not the one who reported you to the head of the department. You can look for whoever you want to. Why do you have to...you are the bitch! You better watch your mouth! Your whole family are all shrews! I am even having an affair with your husband!”

Cassandra completely lost her cool after there was some disagreement over the phone.

She started scolding the other party over the phone.

Gerald could not help but to listen in on their conversation. The person named Myra joined the university one year before Cassandra. She was also one of the counselors for one of the classes in their department.

The reality is that there can only be one alpha, which makes them both quarreling with each other always.

What’s more, Myra has recently married a very wealthy husband. In that sense, she seemed to have suppressed Cassandra in various aspects.

Having said that, they would often quarrel about almost everything.

Perhaps Cassandra felt as though she had not cursed enough. She then threw Gerald an ice cold stare and snapped:

“What are you looking at? Get out of my sight and get to work!”

Upon hanging up, she turned around and left immediately.

Gerald was so angry that he really wanted to pull her skirt off, before he pressed her down on the ground and *** fifty times.

However, he had no other choice but to get to work for the time being.

There were a lot of things and an hour had already passed when they were done moving the items.

Their group chat on the other hand was also exploding.

“Hey babes! Felicity’s live broadcast is starting now! Hurry up and join in now until ten o’clock tonight. Whether I can become the new star anchor in this city or not will depend on all of your support!”

Felicity sent a message to everyone in the group chat.

Everyone in the group chat and Felicity’s live broadcast also began to be the peak focus...

Gerald was almost done with his work here. He saw Cassandra sitting at the side of her bed as she started swiping on her cell phone.

He also plopped himself down on the sofa before he entered Felicity’s live broadcast...

Chapter 143

After Felicity roped everyone in.

Suddenly, many classmates started gathering in her live broadcast room, accompanied by her two to three thousand fanbase that she had accumulated during this period of time.

She started typing on the public screen.

After signing with the live broadcast guild throughout this period, Felicity has really learnt and acquired a lot of live broadcast skills.

She was already very proficient at chatting and keeping a conversation and also showing off her talents on her live broadcast.

“Babes, can you send me a wave of gifts? Kisses!”

“I will give all of my babes a big kiss! I will sing a song, ‘Meow, Meow, Meow’ for all of my babes today!”

Fans: “Oh, oh, oh! Felicity is really very beautiful. I love hearing Felicity’s voice!”

“Ordinary Man! Jersey! I hope that the two local tycoons are going to come in to support me soon! I will be joining the competition soon. I’m going to need your help real soon!”

“Hurry up and sing!”

Felicity smiled sweetly before she turned on the special effects. She instantaneously became a little kitten because of the special effects.

“Let’s learn to meow together, together meow, meow, meow, meow, meow, being coquettish with you in your arms, oh let’s meow, meow, meow, meow, meow...”

Jersey sent you a rocket!

Jersey sent you a rocket!

Jersey sent you a rocket!

As Felicity was singing, Jersey hastily sent many gifts in Felicity’s live broadcast.

There were also continuous interactions in the live broadcast room.

It was very lively.

Gerald was also watching the live broadcast at this time and he originally planned to give her some gifts.

However, Felicity's performance style this time was indeed very different compared to her other live broadcasts before. In general, she was fixated more on making money and there was no purpose in her live broadcast at all.

It did not feel like a genuine live broadcast anymore.

If Gerald gave her a gift now, then he would feel as though he had been cheated.

Hehehe. He would have to wait a little longer.

Gerald looked around the room at this time. Cassandra was also looking at the live broadcast in a serious manner.

Layla and the others were all also gathered together as they watched the live broadcast together in an envious manner.

After all, vanity was a temptation that not every girl could resist and that explains their jealousy.

As for Gerald, he felt that Felicity's live broadcast room had already become too boring. He then left her live broadcast room and decided to go into another female anchor's live broadcast room.

Unexpectedly, he ended up in a live broadcast belonging to someone named Quera Zane.

This female anchor had a popularity of almost ten thousand fans. In fact, she was actually quite beautiful.

It was no wonder why she had so many fans supporting her.

There were many comments on Quera's live broadcast room during this time. She was simply facing the camera as she applied makeup on her face and was not talking or interacting much with any of her fans at all.

Nearly ten thousand people were simply watching Quera put on her makeup.

“When will you be performing and showing us your talent?”

Gerald typed into the public screen.

He wanted to see this beauty singing and dancing.

Since Gerald was a verified member, the public screen would be very conspicuous when he typed something. Moreover, the live broadcast window on Quera’s side would also buzz a little.

“Are you blind? The person called Ordinary Man!”

Quera unexpectedly frowned as she snapped at Gerald directly. Her attitude was as terrible as it could possibly be.

“Can’t you see that I am putting on my makeup now? Why are you rushing me for? You can keep watching if you want to and you can just leave if you don’t want to!”

Quera replied coldly.

Hahaha. He must have thought that he was so great and awesome just because he was a verified member.

Quera had already seen all sorts of people and members on the live broadcast platform. She despised and felt most uncomfortable with those people who think they are somebody just because they’ve managed to top up their account with some money.

All the more, she already had the support of a lot of elder brothers. That being said, she had already long dismissed and ignored all her smaller fans or smaller members who were not as rich.

“Um, I was just asking you a question. Since you are a live broadcast anchor, shouldn’t you be performing some talents for us?”

Gerald was really pissed. He wanted to come online to have some fun but he got scolded instead. Who wouldn’t be angry at that?

The moment Gerald finished typing, he got muted by the field control.

“Damn it! You should seriously perform your own talents then! The person with the name, Ordinary Man, why are you pretending to be so great just because you topped up some money into your account?”

The field control started typing and cursing at Gerald.

By then Quera was already done applying her makeup and she said:

“Now, there are many pathetic jerks like this on the internet. They top up some money and they want to go around flaunting it and pretending they are so great. You can win some newcomer anchors with this scam of yours, but you should just get lost and go as far away as you can from me!”

“Hahaha. Quera is angry. This Ordinary Man is a joke. Doesn’t he know that Quera is already the top broadcast anchor in the city now?”

Chapter 144

“Exactly! Quera has more than a dozen big brothers. I heard that they are all big bosses in Mayberry City. Even Brother Yoshi alone usually drives a Range Rover on a daily basis!”

A swamp of fans continued typing below as they continued cheering for the person called Brother Champion.

Champion: What is the matter, Quera? Are you lacking in gifts? I have already added another fifteen thousand dollars into my account today. As for some pathetic dicks, you can just kick them out of your live broadcast if you want to.

“Ahh! Champion is here!”

As soon as Quera saw Champion typing, she immediately put her cosmetics aside. After that, she jumped around excitedly, and she was really cute!

“Brother Champion, I thought that you didn’t care about me anymore. I am not happy anymore!”

Quera said as she acted cute.

“Why would that happen? Why wouldn’t I come?”

“Okay! Okay!”

As Quera spoke, she was smiling at the screen as she moved the cursor using the mouse in her hand.

Brush!

Gerald was kicked out of the live broadcast room.

“Fuck!”

Gerald could not help but curse out loud. He was really furious.

It was anger and annoyance.

He simply wanted to watch a live broadcast. Why was it so difficult? He only said two sentences but he got kicked out of the live broadcast room by the female anchor.

Add to that, he was kicked out of the live broadcast room after getting insulted.

He was probably the first person to top up fifteen thousand dollars into the live broadcast account.

When he was Gerald, he used to be in this situation. But how could he possibly be in the same situation now when he was already using another identity as Ordinary Man? How could he possibly tolerate this?

Should he just top up some money and fight back?

That would be too simple.

To be honest, Gerald already had some thoughts in his mind when he was Felicity's assistant the last time.

He had been thinking about how he could further develop himself in the future.

Moreover, his sister had been telling him to do this for a long time now. He would definitely need to start something on his own in future.

Gerald had been wondering if he should start investing in some small assets to start practicing and accumulating experiences first.

Gerald did not understand things like real estate or commercial streets for the time being.

On the contrary, he was pretty familiar with many things on the internet.

At that split second, he really wanted to try investing in a live broadcast platform.

Initially, Gerald did not have the opportunity to consider it in depth because of Mila's matter.

But now...

For him, it would be killing two birds with one stone!

As he thought about this, Gerald secretly ran to the bathroom to call Zack.

He told him that he needed some funds to invest in a live broadcast or something like that.

To summarize, he wanted to make an investment.

Of course, Zack had no issues with that. He then assured Gerald that it would be done within an hour.

After Gerald came out of the toilet, he saw that Ywain and the others were all watching the live broadcast intensely!

“Gerald! Gerald! The popularity competition has already begun! Felicity is really amazing. The number of gifts that she has received has already exceeded three thousand dollars now! She has already defeated two other female anchors!”

Ywain said excitedly.

Gerald nodded before he logged back into Felicity’s live broadcast room to take a look.

Felicity was very proud right now because she had a winning streak in a row. Moreover, she was over the moon when she saw the number of gifts that she was receiving in the background!

“Oh, I love all of my babes so much. Stay with me for another round and I will be able to advance directly then!”

Felicity said as she laughed.

“Sure to win!”

The fans shouted.

The so-called popularity competition is a little similar to the way that the two persons were conducting a live broadcast. The two beautiful anchors would appear in the same frame and they would have a progress bar below them, recording the number of gifts that they have received. The person who received more gifts would knock out the other party directly.

This was a big event which was organized by the live broadcast platform to get more income.

The connection activity continued...

Felicity was waiting fearlessly for her next opponent to appear. As the female anchor was connected, the look on Felicity’s face changed immediately.

Gerald was also very surprised!

Chapter 145

It was none other than Quera, who kicked him out of her live broadcast room just now.

So much for coincidence.

Gerald thought.

A female anchor with a popularity of ten thousand fans, would not usually meet a newcomer like Felicity.

However, Felicity’s live broadcast popularity had already reached almost seven thousand fans.

It was obvious that they were barely a match for one another.

In fact, Felicity was completely aware of Quera's skills.

After all, she was the top female anchor in their same city live broadcast.

This time, she really encountered a tough spot.

However, Felicity wasn't too afraid. Regardless of the outcome, she would definitely work hard this time round.

"Damn, the newcomer who is broadcasting live actually looks really pretty too. But how can she possibly be compared to the goddess, Quera? Big brothers, kill her!"

Some of the fans typed.

Felicity refused to show signs of weakness. She mustered up her courage to ask for gifts.

Both sides were at war and the progress bar began to move.

Both sides of the female anchors' screens were shown to all the audience.

So, those with a lower progress bar began to desperately raise the number of gifts for their fans.

Even though this was the case, Felicity was still too weak after all. Two minutes in later, and her gift progress bar has already been directly suppressed by the other party.

"Hehehe. New anchor, you really don't seem to understand the rules at all, do you? If you had been willing to come forward and give in directly like the other anchors did, then perhaps I would have interacted with you a little, just so that you can increase the number of fans and gifts that you have. You brought this upon yourself!"

Quera sneered.

Felicity's face flushed red at the brink of losing.

But she still had one last chance. That was Ordinary Man!

"Ordinary Man, are you here? I'm about to lose. I can see that you are online now. If you are there, can you say that you will support me? Ordinary Man, I don't want to lose!"

Felicity broke into tears as she was speaking.

There was a huge gap in her heart.

Everything had been smooth sailing earlier but now, not only was she despised by Quera, but she was even getting mocked in front of her own fans.

She could not even raise her head in front of her own fans.

Jersey alone would definitely not be able to defeat their opponent.

Felicity could not refute anything that the other party said.

She was feeling really frustrated right now.

In that split second, she suddenly thought of her supporter, Ordinary Man! After all, he was someone who never failed to surprise her all the time!

The comments on the other side of the screen were exploding.

“Hahaha. Ordinary Man? I clicked into his profile and checked him out. This Ordinary Man seems to be the same Ordinary Man who got kicked out by Quera just now!”

“Yes, yes, it’s him! Hahaha. To think that he is running here to pretend to be a big brother!”

“Bah! Come, come. Fake local tycoon! If you have the guts to, then you can come and compete with our Brother Champion! We will show you what a real local tycoon is!”

The fans on the other side continued clamoring.

“Hahaha. Newcomer, it is useless for you to cry. Let me tell you something. Your Ordinary Man, who is your local tycoon, was kicked out from my live broadcast room just now! He only ran back to you after that! Why don’t you ask him about it? Why don’t you ask him if he dares to appear in front of me now?”

Quera asked contemptuously.

Felicity’s face started to turn a shade of purple.

She felt extremely humiliated today.

“Who is Ordinary Man?”

Gerald was about to start cursing!

Cassandra suddenly asked as she walked out, wearing her slippers.

“Oh, oh, counselor, Ordinary Man is one of Felicity’s first big brothers. In fact, the reason why Felicity hit her first monthly income of more than thousands of dollars is because of Ordinary Man.”

Ywain hurriedly replied.

“Hahaha. Is he a rich man just because of three thousand dollars? I have seen many more big brothers on a larger live broadcast platform. As soon as they logged in, they would be swiping tens of thousands of dollars just like that, from the very beginning! Those are the true rich tycoons! I think that Felicity is done for this time. It seems as though the other party has a real big brother over there!”

Cassandra said as she put down her cell phone.

She had always been keeping an eye on live broadcasts and knew that this was a profitable industry as long as the person was attractive.

They could also gain fame through this.

As such, many girls could not resist being addicted into live broadcasts.

As she spoke, Cassandra suddenly glanced at Gerald who was sitting at the side.

“Gerald, who said that you can sit on my new sofa? Get up now!”

Chapter 146

It was only now that Cassandra discovered that everyone else was sitting on a stool and Gerald was happily sitting on her newly bought sofa.

This sofa was rather expensive and it cost her more than one thousand five hundred dollars for the entire set. She couldn't bear to allow someone like Gerald to sit on her sofa!

Cassandra's sudden loud voice startled Gerald.

Wasn't he simply just sitting on her sofa? What was the big deal?

As Gerald knew that Cassandra really despised him, Gerald couldn't be bothered to argue with her.

He stood up as he got ready to sit at the side.

“Hmm...Layla, you can go back with Ywain and the others first. Anyway, what’s next up is cleaning. I think that Gerald can settle this by himself.”

“Gerald, don’t be upset and think that I am targeting you. I’m actually doing this for your own good. Just think about it. Even though you have a lot of money now because you won the lottery, this bit of money won’t be able to last you a long time. Just look at you now. You are not even studying as hard as you used to study before this! Layla and the others are all still working and studying hard. I’m worried that you will get left behind if you continue acting like this!”

“Do you know what it feels like to be scrapped?”

Cassandra questioned in disgust.

She has always been this way. She would find all sorts of reasons to justify why she was targeting you.

After all, everyone knew that Cassandra disliked the poor and she favored the rich. But Cassandra really despised people like Gerald in particular, who started off poor but struck sheer luck and won the lottery. She was very jealous and she couldn’t comprehend why she could never come across such luck, but instead such good luck had to fall on a man who had never been taken seriously instead?

Cassandra’s inner thoughts were pretty self-evident even without having to say it out loud.

Layla and the others really wanted to stay back and help Gerald but they could obviously see that Cassandra was not pleased with Gerald at all. Hence, they left because they did not want to intervene in that situation.

Cassandra pointed at various places before she asked Gerald to clean the place up. She then returned to sit down in her room.

“Fuck! Fuck you!”

Gerald threw the mop down.

Wasn't it damn obvious that Cassandra was bullying him?

He was about to go and confront Cassandra directly this time.

At the same time, Felicity was already crying even more pitifully in the live broadcast room.

"Brother Ordinary Man, please answer me if you are here! No matter what others say about you, I trust you and I believe in you. I know that you really care about me!"

"Yes! Brother Ordinary Man, if you are here, please just say something. At least give Felicity some gifts. Don't let her lose so miserably!"

There were many fans who were desperately pleading with Gerald.

"Hahaha! That scumbag will not dare to come out!"

Quera on the opposite screen replied, as she smiled helplessly.

"Who said that I dare not?"

Gerald finally spoke out.

He began typing directly on the screen.

"Brother Ordinary Man is here! Brother Ordinary Man is here!"

Everyone shouted excitedly.

Swipe! Swipe! Swipe!

Gifts for Felicity were flying all over the sky.

Gifts worth more than thousands of dollars.

With the power of just one person, Felicity's lifeline which had been trampled, was restored immediately.

Quera was a little dumbfounded at this sight of this. What? This Ordinary Man was really rich?

He also had fifteen thousand dollars?

"Damn it! He must have stolen money from his house!"

"How can he be that rich? Isn't he a fake local tycoon?"

"Yes! He must have stolen this money! Brother Champion is the real local tycoon!"

"Exactly! I advise everyone not to be deceived by this kind of illusions. Some people are willing to spend several tens of thousands just to fish for a female anchor that they are interested in. When that time comes and the female anchor actually believes that he is really a local tycoon, then it'll be way too late for the female anchor. This Ordinary Man is probably that kind of person who is just fishing too! Don't be afraid! He will not be able to do anything else soon!"

How the tables turned totally shocked Quera and her fans who were mocking Gerald earlier and they couldn't stand it anymore. It was simply too embarrassing.

Some of her fans came out to persuade her.

Quera agreed and chimed, "That's right. I really have not heard of anyone named Ordinary Man in our city's live broadcast platform."

But her face suddenly tensed up the instance she saw a piece of news suddenly appearing on the screen of the city live broadcast platform software.

"Warmest congratulations! This live broadcast platform had just received a financing of fifteen million dollars from Mr. Ordinary Man."

"Warmest congratulations! This live broadcast platform had just received a financing of fifteen million dollars from Mr. Ordinary Man."

"..."

The news kept appearing in turns and every single audience could see it clear as the day. It was enough to witness the current uproar of the live broadcast platform company right now!

"Damn it?! Fifteen million dollars?" Everyone on the live broadcast platform exploded.

"What? Plop!"

Gerald was outside the room but he could hear the sound of Cassandra's cell phone dropping onto the ground in her bedroom!

Chapter 147

Fifteen million dollars!

Look at the official sliding news!

Seriously!

Everyone was shocked.

Quera was trying hard to comfort herself and she was about to persuade Brother Champion to help her again.

After all, in the earlier battle, Brother Champion had only spent two thousand and two hundred dollars.

All of the gifts here would've added up to no more than four thousand and five hundred dollars.

However, Ordinary Man swiped fifteen thousand dollars in one go directly.

He even invested fifteen million dollars in the live broadcast platform.

The live broadcast platform even officially mentioned and gave a shout out to Mr. Ordinary Man. Who else could it be, aside from the Ordinary Man who had been kicked out of her live broadcast room earlier? Who else could it be!

Quera's face turned green. It was fifteen million dollars. He was an absolute local tycoon with strong influence!

He dropped by her live broadcast room just now and he must have taken a liking to her appearance. That was probably the reason why he asked her very tactfully to perform and show off some of her talents.

But why?

Why did she have to say that he must have been blind?

The reason why he asked her to show her talents was simply because he had fancied her.

What was even more regrettable was the fact that he actually did not leave the room even after getting scolded by her, but she kicked him out of her live broadcast room! She actually kicked an absolute local tycoon out of her live broadcast room!

Quera was filled with an unspeakable amount of regret!

All of her fans have already stopped talking at this time. Seriously. These waves of slaps to their faces felt like a sharp blade that was repeatedly stabbing their hearts.

They were still mocking others? Why didn't they take a good look at themselves first?

As for Cassandra, she was really shocked by the emergence of the fifteen million dollars figure.

She really would not have imagined that the person who had always supported Felicity would actually be a millionaire. No wait, he was most likely a billionaire!

He was simply too generous.

To be honest, Cassandra was even jealous of her own students now.

She was so beautiful herself. She was even more beautiful and feminine compared to Felicity. So, why couldn't she gain the favor of those rich men then?

Oops! When she thought about it, she could not help but feel that fate was seriously unfair!

Gerald could only smile when he saw the official announcement on the public screen.

He did not display much feelings about it.

If he had any to begin with, then it would be best to say that he was really surprised. He was surprised that he asked Zack to invest in the live broadcast platform, but why did he invest fifteen million dollars in it?

When he thought about it, he finally understood. Putting aside his sister, perhaps fifteen million dollars was not even a huge sum in Zack's eyes too!

Forget it, he has already invested in it anyway. In future, he might be able to gain some profits from this live broadcast platform. Perhaps, he would be able to make a lot of money and gain fifteen million dollars to thirty million dollars instead!

After the investment, the live broadcast platform grew even more lively.

The news that a local tycoon had invested fifteen million dollars in the live broadcast platform was actively circulating around the forum.

Felicity was also going with the flow at this time. Her live broadcast room was crowded because of her rising popularity.

Anyone with a popularity of ten thousand viewers would have already become the main anchor on the live broadcast platform.

But Felicity's popularity was already approaching fifty thousand viewers!

Felicity was completely ecstatic that she was jumping up and down in her live broadcast room.

She was going insane.

Her big brother, Ordinary Man, had actually become the biggest investor in the live broadcast platform. This was really a huge boost to her own reputation!

"Brother Ordinary Man, which class do you belong to in the Department of Language and Literature? Can I ask for your name?"

"Damn it! I didn't know that there was such a big local tycoon in our Department of Language and Literature. Is he really a local tycoon? Who could it be?"

This was because when Gerald first appeared in Felicity's live broadcast room, he had mentioned that he was from the same department as Felicity, which was the Department of Language and Literature.

After that, Felicity had been guessing the identity of Ordinary Man for the longest time but she could not guess it right at all.

But things are completely different now!

Who was Ordinary Man? This had become a very hot topic for the Department of Language and Literature, and even the whole university.

Chapter 148

He must still be in university, but he actually could make an investment of fifteen million dollars. That was bold!

"By the way, do you remember the two million six hundred dollars Lamborghini at the school gate? Do you think that car belongs to Ordinary Man?"

"Yes! Yes! That must be it!"

"Everyone had been guessing this since the very beginning. But now I think that it is almost certain that this person is indeed from the Department of Language and Literature. Plus it is very likely that he is in his third year now."

"Ahh! Ahh! Ahh! Who could it be?"

More girls were shouting from their dormitory at this time.

These girls were mostly from the literature department. They would never have imagined that there was a local tycoon in their department.

Moreover, he could be hidden in any of their classes. It made everyone excited just to think about it!

Some girls were even calling their boyfriends now and they were repeatedly questioning their boyfriends about their family's background. They could not help but wonder if their own boyfriends could be this Ordinary Man!

If that was really the case, then from now on, wouldn't she be able to...

Unfortunately, there were no ifs!

On campus.

"Victor, Sister Whitney, have you heard about it? There is a big local tycoon in our Department of Language and Literature!"

"I just heard about it! But who could he possibly be?" Whitney was very anxious about this.

After all, she was still single. It would be really nice if she could meet with the other party or even fall in love with the other party before graduation!

Victor crossed his arms across his chest with a practical and firm look on his face as he said: "That is really difficult to gauge but I think that we can probably get some clues from his username. His username is Ordinary Man! It seems like this guy likes to keep a low profile. If the car does not belong to Ordinary Man who likes to keep a low profile, then the owner of the car would have already driven the car around everywhere just to show off! These clues are enough to prove that this Lamborghini really belongs to Ordinary Man!"

"That makes sense, Brother Victor! Who else could possibly achieve this point in the whole Mayberry City?"

Someone asked again.

Victor sighed with a wry smile of his face as he replied: "I don't know the answer. After all, there are many local tycoons in Mayberry City who have not publicized their own wealth or identity!"

Ugh! In short, after learning that the great god Ordinary Man was in the Department of Language and Literature, everyone could not keep their calm anymore.

This included Cassandra who could not sit quietly without doing anything.

Gerald was listening at the side and he could hear Cassandra lying to Felicity. She told her that she might probably know this Ordinary Man. She wanted the new WeChat account that he initially opened because of Felicity.

Gerald could only smile sarcastically.

True enough, this was a very realistic world. You could have everything if you had money but you would also have nothing at all if you do not have money!

Perhaps Gerald really wanted to take revenge on Cassandra.

Gerald actually logged into the new WeChat account to accept Cassandra's friend request.

"Ordinary Man, hello! I heard that you are in our department. I am Felicity's teacher and I am a teacher in your department. Have you seen me before? Mischievous."

Cassandra sent him a text message as soon as he accepted her friend request.

"Yes. I have seen you before!"

"Really? Wow! I am actually getting a little excited right now. Cough. Cough. Which class are you in?"

Gerald: "..."

Cassandra: “No, no, no. I forgot that you cannot just reveal this information so casually. Alas, you don’t know it but I can’t help but wonder if you are a student from my class? I have never thought that there would be such an outstanding student in my class!”

Gerald: “Um, Miss Cassandra, I feel that a lot of students in your class are really outstanding and excellent. I only have a little money but that does not necessarily mean that I am outstanding!”

Although this was quite a mean thing to do, Gerald could not help but feel a strange sense of excitement.

“Seriously. I am not lying to you. There are really not any excellent or outstanding students in my class. Moreover, there are no students who are as rich and low-key as you are either. However, there are a few students who are poor and one student who is particularly poor in my class! Hahaha...”

“My ass!”

Gerald really wanted to scold her. The particularly poor student that she was talking about would definitely be him.

In Cassandra’s heart, Gerald was not just poor economically. It was not as simple as that anymore. Gerald was also poor spiritually to her. In short, he was just a pauper!

To be honest, even if he wanted to scold her, and even if he scolded her, Cassandra would probably still be very smug and sinister.

As Gerald thought about it, he decided to let it slide. He did not want to go overboard.

“Slap!”

As he was in deep thought, someone suddenly gave him a slap across his face...

Chapter 149

The person who hit him was none other than Cassandra.

He didn't know when did she even come over and she glared at Gerald angrily as she said:

“Gerald, what do you want me to say about you now? You are really getting more and more useless by the day. I asked you to clean up but you are actually secretly playing your cell phone here? Alas, do you know that you simply won the lottery and that is it? People who are really rich are also still working hard at this time. Let me tell you something, Gerald. You have no capital to compare with anyone else anyway but your thoughts are still so habitual! Do you know that this will lead you to mediocrity forever?”

After getting slapped, it was followed by a series of rebukes and endless remarks by Cassandra.

Damn it!

If Cassandra did not add him on the WeChat account, Gerald would have already lost his temper by now.

He couldn't help but think about the fact that Cassandra was treating him like this in reality, but she was treating him so differently on WeChat.

Gerald enjoyed this kind of good but evil feeling.

It might be a little perverted, but it really felt very good.

Gerald did not say anything and he hurriedly cleaned up the room for Cassandra.

After that he went back to his dormitory.

On the way back.

Cassandra sent Gerald a text message again: "Oh, Ordinary Man, do you think that some students are destined to be mediocre in life? Alas, there is a student named Gerald in our class. I don't know if you will recognize him but he is the kind of pathetic jerk who makes people feel disgusted with him even at first glance!"

"But God must be really blind to let him win the lottery. Do you know what a show off he is? All of his actions and behaviors simply proves that he has no future at all. It is also very painstaking for me to teach someone like him. How can I possibly have a student like him?"

Cassandra sent two successive messages to express her dissatisfaction.

Although there was some sort of nasty enjoyment in texting her, Gerald could not help but feel furious when he saw her messages.

Cassandra, oh Cassandra. No matter what it is, I am still your student for so many years after all. I have always done everything that you asked me to do.

In the end, in your heart, I am just a student who makes you feel disgusted? I am just a student who is so disgusting to the point that I cannot even disgust you any further?

"You bitch!"

Gerald replied directly.

"Ahh? What's the matter? Ordinary Man, I know that as his teacher, I should not be saying these kinds of things about my student. However, when you see him for yourself, then you will definitely know what I am talking about. Yes, he does look quite handsome but apart from that, he is really useless!"

Cassandra did not dare to curse at him even after getting scolded.

Instead, she kept explaining herself, out of fear that she would be leaving a bad impression of herself on Ordinary Man.

Hahaha. What would her expression be when she finds out that the person that she was chatting with right now, was none other than the student who has always made her feel sick and disgusted?

Gerald could not help but grin wickedly.

He replied a few words in a prevaricating manner before he returned to his dormitory.

Today was Friday and there were no classes.

Harper and the others would usually be at the internet cafes on any ordinary day.

But since Felicity was doing a live broadcast later in the afternoon, it would be a very difficult one, so everyone chose to stay back at the dormitory to watch her live broadcast.

“Felicity will definitely be able to win the popularity competition this time. She even earned more than fifteen thousand dollars a month! Ordinary Man is really damn cool! He turned Felicity into a popular female anchor with his very own hands!”

“Ahh! Felicity is going to become a real internet celebrity in future, earning big bucks for herself. On the other hand, just look at us! I don’t even know where I am going to do my internship! Ahh!”

As soon as Gerald returned to his dormitory, he could hear Harper talking to Benjamin.

How do you put it? There was a hint of jealousy and envy.

After all, he was a man but he would not be able to make as much money as a girl.

Gerald had already estimated this outcome.

After all, Felicity was promoted on the official public screen because of his own financing.

This was equivalent to doing indirect advertising for Felicity.

When he left her live broadcast room, her popularity had already broken through the seventy thousand viewers mark.

This way, she would be able to garner enough support based on the other gifts given to her by her other new fans and the other big brothers who were also attracted to her. She would undoubtedly be able to pass the competition and become the uncrowned anchor of the live broadcast platform.

There was no need for anticipation at all because she would undoubtedly win the top spot in the competition tonight.

“Gerald, you are back! By the way, when we went to pick up the courier this afternoon, there was also a package that came for you. It seems like a piece of paper. Take a look at it!”

Harper replied before he handed a small envelope over to him.

Gerald wondered in curiosity as he took the envelope and plonked on his bed to rip it open.

It turned out to be a ticket to the Rivington Beach Entertainment Night.

The sender was Elena.

Gerald suddenly recalled Elena informing him that the party would begin on Saturday and it would end on Sunday night. It would be two days in total.

Chapter 150

The location was at Rivington City!

Gerald’s cell phone suddenly rang.

At the corner of his eyes, he saw that it was Elena.

“Mr. Crawford, have you received the admission ticket?”

“Yes, I got it. You should have just given it to me personally when you have the chance to do so. Why did you have to go all the way and trouble yourself just to courier it over to me?”

“Hehehe. Mr. Crawford, so this is what happened. I already arrived at Rivington City yesterday to visit my aunt. I also suddenly recalled just last night, that you do not have an admission ticket. Hence I decided to mail it to you overnight!”

After finding out Gerald’s identity, Elena had been very respectful towards him.

Elena was initially forced by her parents to please Gerald at the very beginning.

After spending a few days getting along with Gerald, Elena discovered that he really had a very special charm about him.

He was a rich second generation but he did not have the domineering vibe to him. He was really very down-to-earth and low key.

It made Elena want to get closer to Gerald’s heart. So, this time, she was the one who personally wanted to invite Gerald over!

“Are there any other fun places in Rivington City aside from the Rivington Beach?”

“There are many more exciting places. You’ll just need to come, Mr. Crawford. Once you arrive at the place, you only need to show them the admission ticket. The people over there will arrange for a hotel for you. Once everything is settled, I will come to you!”

“Okay then!”

After discussion, Gerald hung up.

To be honest, Gerald had always been nestled in a small town in his small county ever since his childhood. It was only after he was admitted into Mayberry University that he finally had his opportunity to live in a metropolis and big city like Mayberry City.

However, Gerald was too poor. Because of that, Gerald had never been to any other city.

“Should I ask Mila to come with me this time?”

Gerald thought to himself.

The relationship between the both of them was already somewhat ambiguous.

However, after thinking about it, Gerald decided to scrape the thought. After all, Mila had been so frightened by the incident involving Nigel. Moreover, she did not even turn up to school today because she decided to rest at home. Looking at things, Gerald decided to let her rest!

Gerald fell asleep early that night.

The next day, Gerald woke up early.

Aiden and the others had already arrived a day earlier.

Gerald was not too familiar with the road to begin with, so he didn't drive but he chose to take the train there.

He arrived at the entrance of the Rivington Beach event at eight o'clock in the morning.

“Hello, sir. Please show me your admission ticket!”

As soon as he arrived at the door, Gerald was stopped by a very beautiful female receptionist.

She raised her hand to ask him for the admission ticket.

The receptionist was squinting at Gerald up and down.

This was probably because Gerald was wearing his old clothes that he had just washed. No matter how she looked at him, the receptionist could not help but wonder if this was just a pathetic stranger who wanted to join in the party and experience the world.

Even though she was being very polite and respectful, she was obviously having doubts about Gerald as she stared at him.

It seemed as though she was saying: "Go in if you have a ticket and get lost if you don't!"

How could Gerald fail to see the look of contempt in the female receptionist's eyes? He really did not understand the qualities that all these receptionists seemed to have. Why do they seem to have such similar virtues and personalities?

Hahaha.

Gerald chose not to say anything. He simply took out his admission ticket before taking out his cell phone as he got ready to call Aiden who was already having fun inside!

He then breezed straight into the venue at the same time...

"You..."

The beautiful receptionist was very angry at Gerald's disregard. But then again, there was no problem with his admission ticket at all. Even though she suspected that this could've been a counterfeit, she had no evidence to prove whatsoever.

The receptionist nervously stood up straight again.

Many luxurious cars had stopped in front of the entrance. A group of young men and women got out of the car...

“Hahaha. A lot of rich and young masters will be here in the next two days. I will be able to make a lot of new friends. Besides that, there will also be a lot of beautiful and rich women!”

“Is that what you stand for? All that you know how to do is to look for fair-skinned, rich and beautiful girls! Don’t your family own billions of dollars in wealth? Why are you still looking for the miss perfect? Hmph!”

A few people walked up jokingly before they took out their own admission tickets.

The boy who was clamoring for a rich woman suddenly jumped:

“Damn it! Did any of you see my admission ticket? How did I lose it?”

Chapter 151

“Are you kidding me, didn’t I just see you holding it?”

They arrived at the entrance, and other rich young men advised him.

“Yeah, but just now I had to pee, didn’t I? The car stopped somewhere on the way and I peed in the woods. Damn it, I was holding on the admission ticket, and after I finished peeing, I don’t seem to remember holding anything in my hand, I guess that’s when I lost it!”

The group started poking fun at him, but they were clearly just joking as friends.

Everyone was getting a bit anxious.

“Let’s look for it again, but if we can’t, we’ll go back and get it...”

“That’s pretty far from here!”

They discussed and explained to the female receptionist about how he had the ticket but he lost it, and if he was still allowed to enter and such.

The female receptionist directly denied their entrance.

“What’s the matter?”

At this moment, a middle-aged man in a suit walked towards the group of men and women.

“Oh, you must be Yancy Zimmerman.”

The middle-aged manager originally had an indifferent expression across his face, but when he saw the person who had lost his ticket, his face brightened up.

“Do you still remember me? I had dinner with your father, Mr Taylor Zimmerman, in a restaurant in the county state. You were there with us!”

The middle-aged manager smiled.

“Oh, I remember, are you Ted Lopez, the manager of the tour company?”

“Yes, yes, yes it’s me. So, what’s all this commotion here about?”

Ted asked with a smile.

Usually, Yancy had an easy-going personality and everyone loved to joke around with him, but his family's billion dollar assets were considered big in the County state.

And it was obvious that Yancy was the main focal in the group of men and women.

So, no matter how much they fooled around, once they heard that Yancy is in trouble, none of them would leave his side.

Especially the girls.

"Hahaha, well, Mr Lopez, I lost my entrance ticket, but if I go back to search for it, that wouldn't be such a great idea. So, is it okay if I can enter without the ticket?"

Yancy smiled, thinking in his mind, everything would be fine.

He tried to brush it off and was ready to step inside.

"No, Yancy!" Ted stopped him. "If it were the usual old days, you could do whatever you want, but this time, it is a special occasion. I'll just give you a direct explanation. On the surface, this cruise party was seemingly organized by Mr Holden for a group of rich young people to have fun and party. But in actual fact, Mr Holden actually wanted to invite Mr Crawford from Mayberry!"

"Mr Crawford?"

Yancy and the others looked at each other.

"Ahem, I don't think you'll know who Mr Crawford is based on my direct explanation, but you must've known about the commercial street at Mayberry, right?"

"Nonsense, the street was known as the Gold Fountain of Mayberry! That street was always bustling and crowded. I used to want to go to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, but I almost could not afford it!" said Yancy.

“Ahem, forget about Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. Actually, the entire Mayberry Commercial Street is owned by one person, and that person is Mr Crawford!”

“What!”

Yancy was shocked.

The pretty girls next to him were all shocked as well.

Some of the second-generation rich people were indeed rich, but they got the money from their parents. As for someone like Gerald Crawford, who had his own big industry, he was simply way too up there. They were wondering who were the ones supporting him from behind.

The entire crowd was shocked.

“Yancy, that is why the entrance rules are stricter this time. They’re afraid some nasty people or the paparazzi would sneak in or something.”

Ted explained, patiently.

“Okay, okay, then we’ll go back and look for the ticket!”

They drove back and searched for half a day, but to no avail.

“F*ck, does this mean I can’t get in?”

Yancy said bitterly.

There was only one admission ticket per person, and this was not a commodity that one could just buy.

And at that very moment, the female receptionist who had been standing quietly by the side, suddenly turned red.

She was dying to say something just now, but she did not dare because what the manager had said was a little too frightening.

She did run into a very suspicious person going in earlier that evening.

Should she say or not?

She was afraid she would get fired if she said it, but if she did not, thinking about it, she felt like she should as this was a very grand event.

She could not bear the burden even if it kills her.

In the end....

She decided to say it out loud.

“Mr Lopez and Mr Zimmerman, you don’t have to worry. Maybe the reason you can’t find your ticket was because someone must have picked it up!” The female receptionist immediately spoke up.

“What? By whom?”

Yancy asked.

Hadley Zamora, the female receptionist, immediately told everything that she had seen about the suspicious man right on the spot.

“Why didn’t you call out to me then, if something like this happens, we’ll all be in trouble, didn’t you know that!”

Ted slammed his thighs.

He hated the sound of this person whom Hadley had described to the very detail.

In that instance, he ordered Hadley to look for the person.

As for Yancy and the others, they went in and mingled with the crowd.

Gerald seemed to not know anything that was happening outside. He was enjoying the wide, beautiful golden beach.

As he listened to the sea whistling, he figured the party that will be held tonight would be really cool.

Next to the beach was a hotel overlooking the ocean.

Gerald took the admission ticket and entered the hotel under the guidance of another male receptionist.

Earlier that day, Aiden Baker gave him a call.

They were still in their rooms and they had not woken up yet. They never thought Gerald would come so early.

They immediately went out to find Gerald.

“Stop right there, someone please stop him!”

Suddenly, Ted ran all the way here and saw Gerald was about to enter the elevator. He immediately shouted at him.

Gerald saw a group of people running towards him.

Chapter 152

Gerald was surprised. He stopped to see what they were up to.

“You! Show me your admission ticket right now!”

Ted Lopez’s anger was overwhelming.

To be honest, Gerald looked nothing like a rich young man.

He doubted earlier that this could’ve been a mistake, but after taking a look at Gerald’s clothing.

This definitely was not a mistake!

Ted hated him to the bone.

“Didn’t you check my admission ticket earlier!” Gerald pointed at the female receptionist.

“If I didn’t check, how would I know that a loser just sneaked in!”

“Mr Zimmerman, this is the person, I think he picked up your admission ticket!” Hadley shouted at him, rudely.

After saying that, she approached Gerald and snatched away the admission ticket from his hands.

“Geez, the world is really big and there are all kinds of people, and people like you really think you can just join tonight’s cruise party!”

A few girls covered their mouths as they snickered, their eyes were filled with contempt.

Only then did Gerald understand.

He had a feeling that they called out to him because they suspected that he had picked up someone else’s admission ticket, and it just so happened that someone had lost a ticket, so the first person that they suspected was him!

Gerald was left speechless.

“Mr Lopez, call the police, this person must be trying to plot something bad!” The girls said.

Hedley had already taken out her phone and was ready to call the police.

“Mr Crawford, so you’re here!”

Just then, Aiden Baker and the others arrived.

They came running over.

“Huh? Aiden, it’s you!”

Yancy said at the same time.

“Nice to meet you, Aiden!”

The few beautiful girls beside Yancy greeted him respectfully.

The Baker family’s assets were over a hundred million dollars in total.

“Oh, Yancy, so it’s you guys!”

The group, like Aiden, were all third-year students at Johnhurst University.

Of course they all knew Aiden Baker, the big bully of Johnhurst University.

“Mr Crawford, do you know them?”

Aiden laughed and asked Gerald.

“I don’t know any of them. They accused me of stealing their ticket and sneaked in, they were even going to call the police to arrest me!”

Gerald smiled bitterly.

“What? Steal their tickets? Who the f*ck said that?”

Aiden was furious.

Hadley was stunned. She had heard of Aiden Baker, and he was considered quite famous, just like Mr Holden.

But why was Aiden so polite towards this loser?

And what did Aiden just call him?

Mr Cra...Crawford?

"Mr Baker, please let me explain, I think there might be some misunderstanding. We were just suspicious of this young man and we only wanted to check his admission ticket. After all, you know how important this cruise party is!"

"Hehe, of course I know! Ted Lopez and Yancy Zimmerman, do you both know who this person is?"

Aiden pointed at Gerald.

"He's Gerald Crawford, the owner of Mayberry Commercial Street. Do you seriously think he would steal your tickets?"

"What? He's Mr Crawford?"

The crowd had their jaws dropped all the way to the ground.

"Oh! Mr Gerald, I'm really sorry!"

Hadley's legs were trembling.

She immediately bent and bowed at him.

The words that came out of Aiden's mouth were obviously valid.

"Umm, Mr Crawford, I'm really sorry. I really didn't expect..."

Ted felt a lump forming in his throat, he tried to apologize respectfully.

Not to mention, the girls who stood next to Yancy and mocked Gerald were simply nymphomaniacs.

So, he was the super-duper rich guy, Gerald Crawford!

Ah!

And they have just said something so mean towards him.

Ugh!

Gerald was used to all the mockery. He did not feel like he needed to slap them across their faces. Even if he wanted to, he would have slapped Hadley right in the face when she tried to stop him earlier.

He was only here for a simple meet-up, and he did not want to cause a scene.

All he did was to flash a tight smile across his face, then he headed into the hotel with Aiden Baker and the others.

His phone rang again, and it was Elena Larson calling.

“Mr Crawford, have you settled in yet? I’m afraid I won’t be able to get over to you!”

“What’s the matter? Is something wrong?” Gerald tried to listen closely as Elena sounded quite anxious.

“Argh, I think I’m about to go mad! As you know, I’m at my cousin’s house now, and guess what. My cousin wants to introduce a boyfriend to me, but I don’t want to! My cousin is not letting me go and there’s no way I can hide, argh, Gerald, what should I do!”

Elena had always been well-mannered, but from her tone, Gerald could tell that she was really frustrated and helpless at the same time.

“Oh, it’s simple, just tell them you have a boyfriend!”

“But here’s the problem, I got all excited and told her that my boyfriend is already here, but I can’t go out to meet other guys and such. My cousin started forcing me to introduce my said boyfriend to her, but where am I going to find a boyfriend? This is such a mess!”

Suddenly, Elena lowered her voice, “Gerald, can you do me a small favor?”

“Oh sh*t, what do you mean by that?” Gerald’s eyes widened.

Chapter 153

Gerald knew what Elena meant without even thinking about it!

She was definitely trying to get him to pretend he was her boyfriend so she could use him to deal with that cousin of hers.

Gerald had done enough pretending, though, let alone pretending as her boyfriend.

“Gerald, please, I beg you, please pretend you’re my boyfriend. Aiden and the others look too much like gangsters; they are not as composed as you are. You’re the best candidate for me. If you’re not going to help me, my cousin will definitely hook me up with that guy, and I really don’t want to meet him!” begged Elena.

Although Gerald wanted to refuse, he could really find no reason to. After all, Elena had helped him a few times before, and now she was just asking him to return the favor. It was a simple request, and it would be embarrassing if he refused.

“Alright!” Gerald nodded and agreed.

After hanging up the phone, Gerald did not go upstairs with Aiden and the others. Instead, he took a taxi to Elena's cousin's house.

Her cousin's family was also quite wealthy, having owned a villa in Rivington City.

When he arrived, Elena was already at the entrance waiting for him.

And next to her was a girl who looked to be Elena's age.

No matter how Gerald looked at it, the scene reminded him of the time when he went to Mila Smith's house. One day, would he run into all of them by pretending to be someone else's boyfriend?

Gerald got out of the car and greeted Elena.

"AH! My gosh, cousin, is this Gerald? Is he the boyfriend you mentioned earlier? Why did he get a cab here?"

The girl next to her was relatively fair and pretty, but when he saw Gerald, he looked at him with a mix of resentment and disappointment.

It seemed Elena didn't reveal his identity.

The rich and fair girl had no idea who he was at all.

Judging by how he dressed, he looked like some poor loser no matter which way he was looked at. Besides, wasn't he ashamed of taking a cab here?

She was disappointed.

"Amber, what are you talking about? Gerald is a very nice person! What's wrong with him being my boyfriend!"

Smiling sweetly, Elena ran over and held Gerald's arm.

Alas, how nice it would be if Gerald was really was her boyfriend, Elena thought to herself.

"Alright, alright. I hope my parents and relatives won't say anything when they see him later!"

Amber curled her lips, not bothered to look at Gerald any longer.

She turned and went inside.

"Damn... didn't you say I only had to meet your cousin? Why are there so many other people?" Gerald was stunned.

"They only came after I called you. I'm so sorry, Gerald... help me just this once!" Elena popped out her tongue.

"Alright, just this once!" replied Gerald helplessly.

What Gerald had in mind before he came here was actually quite simple. Once he met up with Elena's cousin's family, her cousins would definitely start comparing him with other guys. He would then bring out some of his assets and let them play compare.

It was that simple.

But now, all of Elena's aunts and uncles were there, and that gave him a headache.

It turned out everyone heard that Elena was coming today, and her family and her cousin's side were usually quite close.

They even had ties with one another when it came to business dealings.

What more, they heard that Elena had found herself a boyfriend.

So, they all came here.

Chapter 154

“Is he your boyfriend, Elena?”

Upon entering the house, a group of young men and women of about the same age approached them before the adults even spoke a word.

Each one of them sized up Gerald.

It wasn't long before these people revealed their mind.

‘Wow, Elena is so beautiful, and yet she has such horrible taste? It's obvious that her boyfriend is far from it!’

“Elena, we were going to ask you to join us at the cruise party together, but you always say you have something to do. Hmmm, so you brought your boyfriend with you!” said one of the girls.

“Yeah, but what a coincidence... we can go together!” Elena smiled and held Gerald's hand, never letting it go once.

None of her cousins greeted Gerald at all.

Elena knew that they looked down on him too.

However, she didn't dare reveal Gerald's identity without his consent. Seeing that Gerald seemed alright, she was relieved.

But Gerald was far from happy, numbed from attending such occasions too often. He simply chose to remain silent and keep his composure.

“Okay, Elena, have a seat!”

At this time, a middle-aged lady stood up. She was Elena’s aunt, Ruby Larson.

She ran her own beauty company, making tens of millions of dollars in annual profits.

Her skin was maintained exceptionally well, and she was used to seeing many wealthy. When she saw an ordinary person like Gerald, she felt extremely uncomfortable.

“You must be Gerald! Where do you live? What does your family do?” Ruby asked.

The group of rich heirs sneered at Gerald’s direction.

“I don’t think he will answer that question. His family must be from the countryside, and they own a farm, right?”

“Ugh, I really can’t fathom how Elena could find such a shabby-looking guy when she’s so pretty and rich? If he was my boyfriend, I would’ve jumped out of the building and died!”

“Look at him; he’s been quiet from the moment he entered the house. Obviously, he’s nervous because he has never seen such a nice house before. He must be overwhelmed by the luxurious surroundings. He’s no competition for Dickson Wayward!”

“Fuck! What are you talking about? He, a competition for Dickson Wayward?”

On one side, several men and women were crossing their arms as they gossiped about Gerald.

When Amber heard that they were comparing him to Dickson Wayward, she immediately frowned in disdain.

Who was Dickson Wayward anyway? He was the guy that Ruby introduced to Elena; his family owned a hotel chain. He was a graduate of Johnhurst University and the president of the Department of Economics and Management's student body!

'He's someone with great achievements. This guy right here will never be a match for him!'

Gerald heard everything since they were all chatting loudly.

He wasn't angry, only slightly depressed.

Did a person's wealth really matter that much? When did the criteria to differentiate between a good or bad person change from morality to wealth?

If you had the wealth, everything that you said and did was always right; but if you were poor, you were nothing!

Gerald reminisced about all the things that happened in the past.

Only then did he look at Amber. "My family is now in a small town in the country. My parents run a small business!" Gerald said truthfully.

"Pfft, he really is from a small rural village! His parents probably just run a small kiosk in town... my goodness!"

Amber and the others were even more despicable.

Ruby, who had not said anything about letting Gerald sit down, became more serious when she heard this.

“Then what kind of merits do you have to fall in love with Elena? What nerve!”

Chapter 155

“Auntie, don’t say that!”

Elena glared at her with widened eyes.

She really did not expect such cruel words to come out from her aunt’s mouth.

She really had no idea who the person standing in front of her was. He was truly a great tycoon and a great patron of the Larson family!

Elena was a little shocked.

After being scolded so much, Gerald was only slightly agitated. The words and mockeries seemed to have numbed him.

Ruby was about to reprimand Gerald even more. She wanted to make him understand that he had to stay away from Elena.

Suddenly, her phone rang, and she picked it up to answer the call.

“Oh? Dickson Wayward? Huh? Didn’t I say I’d let you come next time? What? You’re already at the door? Okay, okay, I’ll go get you now!”

The call was from Dickson Wayward. Ruby had already told him that he wouldn’t be coming today.

But who knew that Dickson would still insist on coming here?

It was Elena’s boyfriend who was coming over, after all, Ruby thought. She was quite pleased with Dickson and wanted Elena to get to know him, perhaps, even get to pull a few strings.

But what if Elena's boyfriend was even better than the handsome Dickson Wayward?

What if her boyfriend was even richer than the already wealthy Dickson Wayward?

What if...

Ruby had thought of countless what-ifs, but this wasn't what she had expected.

She did not even want to say it.

Elena had to break up with Gerald, or she would let her dad what kind of mess his daughter was in!

"Woah Woah Woah, Dickson is here! Elena, since Dickson will be attending the cruise party as well, you can get to know him more, right?"

Amber and the others had already put Gerald aside. As of now, they intended to set up Dickson with Elena.

Right at that moment, Dickson entered the house with Ruby.

"Dickson, you're looking great!"

Amber smiled sweetly when she saw him.

Dickson was tall and handsome. He wore silver and gold rings and watches on his hands, and it made him look rich.

"Haha! Amber is really getting better with her sweet compliments!"

Dickson shook the watch on his arm and smiled.

His gaze slowly shifted, and that was when he spotted the beautiful, heavenly Elena Larson.

“Let me guess, she must be Elena Lawson, that pretty cousin of yours from Mayberry, right?”

In actual fact, Dickson had met Elena a long time ago. They were both from Johnhurst University, and how could he not notice an impeccable beauty the likes of Elena Larson?

With just a mere glance, Dickson found himself falling in love with her.

She was simply too beautiful, so beautiful his heart was about to explode!

So, when Dickson heard Auntie Amber’s intentionally planned meeting, he was over the moon. But then, he was suddenly told that their meeting was canceled.

Anyhow, a socialite like Dickson wanted to know why she had to cancel the meeting. The more he was not allowed to come, the more he insisted on coming!

“Well, hi there!” Elena greeted politely but immediately stood next to Gerald after that.

Was he really that unattractive?

Dickson felt grim.

It was then that he shifted his gaze to Gerald.

“So, you’re Elena’s boyfriend?” Dickson laughed confidently, attempting to give off the impression that he was a generous and capable person.

“I am!”

Chapter 156

“So you’re saying you’re also from Sunnydale University? I’ve never seen you around, though!” Dickson was smiling the whole time.

“No. I’m from Mayberry University.” Gerald knew how to stay calm no matter what kind of vibes the other people were giving him.

“Mayberry University is fine. Anyways, what does your family do? How did you make Elena fall for you?” Dickson asked.

“Well, Dickson, allow me to tell you. He came from a small village, and his family runs a tiny grocery store! How do you still not understand by the way he dresses?” Amber answered.

The highest state of ignorance was pretending someone didn’t exist even when he was just right in front of you. Although it was hurtful, nobody would actually point it out. However, Amber had been doing that to Gerald all along, and it showed how much she despised him.

“Oh, it must have been tough studying in Mayberry coming from a small village. Do let me know if you’re in any kind of trouble. My father knows the dean, and I can get things settled for you. If you need a loan, you could always come to me too. I’m from Sunnydale, but I’m actually well connected! Anyways, have you taken any sort of loans before?”

Dickson soon noticed that Amber had been ignoring him...

“Yes, I did apply for a three-year loan. I used the money to pay for tuition!” replied Gerald.

Gerald initially intended to prove that Elena was wrong, but now he decided it best to keep a low profile.

There were three reasons for it:

One, Gerald did apply for a loan and did indeed pay the tuition fee with that money.

Two, even if he was trying to help Elena, there was no need to go to such an extent. Gerald realized that Elena wasn't just pretending that he was her boyfriend, but she actually wanted to develop a different kind of relationship. It wasn't him being narcissistic. He could actually feel it. Even though Gerald did fancy pretty girls and would easily fall for any one of them, he wasn't a bad person in general.

Gerald had always wanted his girlfriend to connect with on a deeper level, but Elena was definitely not that person. This was because the first time they met, Elena injured his face, resulting in Gerald not wanting to date her.

Three, he did not want to expose his true identity. He was uncomfortable each time he became the center of attention. He never understood why anyone would like that.

"Damn! You had to pay your school fees with a three-year loan? You must be broke!"

"Fuck! This is big news. How could someone be so poor they had to apply for a three-year loan? I'd be embarrassed even if I had to just apply for one. I'd probably kill myself!" Amber and the girls mocked.

Ruby frowned, thinking Elena must have gone crazy to have chosen a guy like him!

Why would she choose someone like him!

"They say children from poor families are more independent. Well, it does seem right. But if you require money, you can always approach me. I'll gladly lend it to you since Elena, and I are schoolmates. We can be friends too!" Dickson smiled.

Even though it was a small gesture, it was clear they were mocking him.

Being the student president, he was clearly good with words. Every sentence that came out of his mouth subtly insulted Gerald.

"There is no need for that, but thank you anyway." Gerald smiled and politely rejected his offer.

“You’re always welcome. Anyways, since you’re studying at Mayberry University, have you been to the nearby attractions? You should go check out Mayberry Commercial Street and Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. How could you not when you’re already at Mayberry, right? Why not I show you around after this?. My father knows the CEO of a restaurant on Commercial Street. I could bring you there!”

“Hey Dickson, don’t you remember what Elena's family does? Even if Gerald pays a visit, Elena could bring him!” said Amber smiled as she smiled.

“Oh, right. How could I have forgotten? I only remember that Gerald is a pretty poor pauper who hasn’t been anywhere before. Well, it seems like he’s been frequenting Mayberry Commercial Street after being in a relationship with Elena.”

“Oops... definitely my fault for having bad memory! Hahaha!” Dickson hit his head as he laughed it off.

Chapter 157

Dickson had been showing off his family’s connection with Mayberry in the rest of the conversations while poking fun at Gerald.

It would be unreal if Gerald was not angry at all. At this point in time, he would have really loved to punch Dickson in his face. All Dickson could ever do was to just show off and mock people. Other than those things, he had no greater purpose.

That afternoon’s family gathering was quite awful. They continued talking after lunch, and soon, it was past noon.

Gerald had been awake since early that morning, and he was starting to get exhausted.

Amber suddenly shouted, shocking Gerald. “ Dickson, Elena. It’s almost five, and the party is about to start soon! Let’s go get ready now. It’s not nice to be late!”

“Right! Yoel Holden organized it, after all. We mustn't be late!” Dickson said.

“Okay, you should get going now. Dickson, please take good care of Amber and Elena!” Ruby said, leaving Gerald out of the conversation deliberately.

“Yes, ma’am!” Dickson replied.

They went to pick up their cars, and Gerald hopped onto Amber’s Porsche. It was only because Elena insisted. If it wasn’t for her, they would probably not have let Gerald into the car.

Elena held onto Gerald’s arm tightly, a gesture to tell him that she was sorry. She never thought they would be so mean to him. She apologized on behalf of her family.

Gerald shook his head with a bitter smile on his face.

As they were talking, they reached the entrance of Mayberry Beach.

“Does Gerald have an entrance ticket?” Dickson wanted to ask that question early on. Still, he waited until they all arrived at the entrance before asking just to embarrass him.

“I do have it!” Gerald nodded as he reached into his pocket for the ticket.

“You must have gotten it from Elena. Seriously Elena, why are you even so nice to him! Don’t you know? You’re just going to ruin his life if you bring him into our world. Why not just let him live his own life?” Amber complained.

Amber didn’t usually sound like an adult, but now, she was acting like one. There was even a hint of sophistication in the tone.

She would usually treat Elena with respect, but she had enough for today. It was the gathering of the wealthy, and everyone there would be really rich. She understood that her sister really loved this Gerald and intended to show him their world. But wouldn’t it hurt his pride after seeing so many rich people inside?

“That’s quite enough, Amber. Don’t be a nuisance!” Elena was frustrated.

“You two have to stop arguing now, okay. Let’s just go in and have a look, alright? If there’s anything that Gerald is afraid of answering, I’ll answer it for him!” Dickson took advantage of the situation.

“Dickson, you’re such a gentleman!” Amber complimented as she rolled her eyes at Gerald.

It was only five in the afternoon, yet the beach was already crowded.

“Dickson is here!”

“Amber, you’re here too! We have already started up the barbeque!”

Chapter 158

A few rich young men waved at Dickson when they arrived. They all seemed to know each other.

“Wow, so many friends are here. Come, Elena. Let me introduce them to you!” Dickson said.

The youths in question were playing around while eating and drinking, all having a blast.

Gerald was exhausted, not in the mood to meet new people anymore. He really needed a place to rest, then find out where Aiden and the others went.

“You guys have fun. I’ll be heading to the washroom. You guys don’t have to look for me!” Gerald told them and left by himself.

“Is he really just heading to the washroom, or he is embarrassed to let anyone know that he’s from a poor family?”

“I know, right! Doesn’t he know what social setting this is? And he’s probably regretting now!”

Everyone was talking about him.

Elena wanted to follow Gerald, but she knew she had troubled him way too much today. She didn't want to bother him anymore.

"Who was that person? He just went off without saying anything?"

One of the young men was unhappy.

"Don't bother. Just a stupid peasant!" Amber replied.

Meanwhile, Gerald was already on the other side of the beach. He loved the feeling of walking by himself.

After grabbing a glass of wine from a waiter holding a tray, he lay on a chair and slowly sipped the drink.

Finally, his ears were free!

His phone rang. It was Zack.

"Mr. Crawford, how did the party go?"

Gerald had mentioned the party previously, and he knew all about it.

"It's alright!" Gerald smiled bitterly.

"That's good to hear. I hope Yoel has been treating you well... there are things I shouldn't tell you, but I'll just let you know anyways. The person that organized the party, Yoel Holden, has a profound connection with your sister. He organized this gathering all because of you!"

“Huh? What does it have to do with me?” Gerald was confused. If the party was because of him, then why did he get the ticket from Elena?

And what did the son of the richest man of the county have to do with his sister?

“Hmm. Holden’s family only sprung up because of the support that Ms. Jessica gave. Yoel’s mother was your sister’s godmother. Understand it now?”

Gerald would have never known that such a history existed. It seemed he was the only one clueless about his sister’s developments.

“I’m only telling you all these things because this family can be quite pretentious, just like how they tried to get close to your sister after learning about her actual identity. They acted as if they helped her during her poor days and when she had become successful, they pretended that they wouldn’t try to get any advantage out of it. Your sister was touched by their actions hence the support she’s giving to them!

“But then again, they have been really loyal to Ms. Crawford too!”

“I believe this Yoel Holden is pulling the same trick to get your attention, and since you’ve told me about the party, I’ll be really guilty if I didn’t tell you all of this!”

“Okay. Thanks a lot, Zack!”

“You’re welcome, Mr. Crawford. It is my pleasure!”

Gerald hung up the phone after that conversation.

Through the call, he had gained some information that made him feel differently about some things.

Zack was not very fond of the Holdens, and he implied that their family was using dirty tricks too. What were they up to?

It was Gerald's first time being in a situation like this, and he did not want to ignore what Zack said either because that would make him feel guilty.

Gerald drank as all these thoughts flooded his mind.

"Hey, look! That guy has been watching us for quite some time now. He must be having dirty thoughts because we are in bikinis!"

"Huh? No way?! Why on earth would there be people like that?"

Suddenly, Gerald noticed a bunch of pretty girls wearing bikinis staring at him coldly while murmuring to themselves.

Chapter 159

The bikini-clad girls were playing volleyball by the beachside while Gerald lay down by the chair. He was too tired, and he was not even sure where he was looking, but the girls got the wrong idea.

They thought he was staring at them with dirty thoughts.

At first, those girls thought it would be acceptable to be slightly exposed to the guys since they were out here to have fun, but the man staring at them was way too undesirable. He even daydreamed while watching them!

The girls thought they knew very well what was going on, and they felt disgusted.

"Look! He's so disgusting, and he's getting excited while looking at us!"

"He must be looking at Crystal. Her outfit is more daring than her usual ones today. Even that rich young man over, there was even trying to get a picture of her. Once he heard that she's very close with Yoel Holden, though, he immediately backed off!"

"I know, right? This guy must have a death wish. He probably even has all of our pictures on his phone. He'll bring them back to his hotel room and jerk off with it. Oh my goodness... that is so disgusting!"

“What do you think, Crystal?” All the pretty girls looked toward a girl with long hair, fair skin, and a hot body.

She was gorgeous and was probably the center of attention of the whole volleyball court.

Most men knew that she was very close to Yoel Holden, and they would not even dare to look at her.

This automatically made Gerald an outlaw.

Crystal brushed her hair with her fingers. “Hmm... I’ve seen all kinds of dirty men before. Sisters, let’s go check his phone and if he really did sneak some photos of us. We shall beat him to death!”

“That’s right! If it was Yoel or Aiden, it would have been fine, but it’s a dirty little peasant! What humiliation!” the girls went on, as they stormed toward Gerald.

Gerald wanted to run, but it was too late.

“You! Were you staring at us the whole time while thinking about dirty stuff?” one of the girls shouted, her large breasts bouncing as she walked.

“I...I wasn’t!” Gerald spoke the truth as he was innocent. He wasn’t even paying attention to them.

He did not even realize that there was such a pretty girl among them. If he had noticed her, he would have been long staring at her by now.

“Ya, right! Who are you trying to fool, huh? You’re already drooling all over the place. I’ve never seen such a disgusting person like you! Show us your phone!”

“Yes! Show us your phone, you disgusting pervert! You better listen before Yoel comes and screws you up!” the girls yelled at him.

Crystal was hugging her arms and looking very satisfied.

It was true that Yoel was popular, and he and Crystal were close, but until today their relationship was still not confirmed.

Crystal knew that things that were easily obtained weren't even worth a penny. It was why she'd always kept her distance from Yoel no matter how hard he tried to win her heart.

She had fallen for him already since she knew Yoel was the son of the county's richest man, a genuinely wealthy heir.

Just like she planned, as long as she kept her distance from him, he would try even harder. This would give Crystal the upper hand since the girls always saw her as the leader.

"I told you, I did not take any pictures of you all!" Gerald smiled helplessly.

Even though these girls were pretty, they were not friendly at all, and who would not stare at a bunch of pretty girls in bikinis if they were just right in front of you!

It was getting awkward, and Gerald wanted to get away.

"Where do you think you're going? Get him, sisters!"

The pretty girls surrounded Gerald to stop him from fleeing, pinning him to the ground while a few sat on top of him.

Chapter 160

The girls pinned him against the sandy beach.

"Don't you dare offend me, you perverted peasant! You're finished when Yoel gets here!" Crystal scoffed.

A girl handed Crystal a bathrobe to cover up.

“Guys! There's some big news. A group of girls is ganging up on a guy over there!”

“Huh? What happened?”

“A pervert guy apparently staring at the bikini girls playing volleyball. They were unhappy that he was staring, and they fought!”

“Let's go check it out!”

People were coming over to the other side of the beach after hearing what happened.

Dickson, Amber, and Elena heard about it amid the barbeque and immediately went over.

“Elena and Amber, let's go and have a look. I would really like to see which brother has fallen.”

Elena did not want to follow them at first, but she wanted to leave anyway, to check if Gerald had gone back to the hotel. She nodded and followed them.

When they reached the other end of the beach, a few girls were sitting on a guy, pinning him down as he struggled.

Dickson, Amber, and Elena were stunned.

“Gerald?”

Elena could not believe what she just saw. She almost thought she was dreaming. How could a fine young man like Gerald get beaten up by a bunch of girls?

Amber gulped.

“Hey, Dickson, Amber... isn't he the guy you people brought over?”

One of Dickson's friends scowled.

“No, no, we don't know him. Oh my goodness, he's so disgusting!” shouted Amber. She wanted to cover her face in embarrassment.

Being poor and ugly was not even a big problem, and now, he had become dirty and perverted while his girlfriend was still around. Amber could not take it anymore.

“Amber, it's probably his first time seeing girls in bikinis, and he went out of his mind! Hahaha!” Dickson started laughing loudly after seeing that Elena's face had bunched up. He thought she was embarrassed and disappointed, and that made him feel even better.

“I don't even know how you got in here, pervert. Now speak! Did you take pictures?” Crystal hugged herself while she stepped on Gerald's head.

Fuck!

What a disgrace!

Gerald was so pissed off the last time he promised himself that a situation like this wouldn't happen the second time. That said, the last time he was ganged by a bunch of girls, it was because of Elena and the others.

He promised himself there would be no third time!

Just when Gerald was going to beat up someone.

“Look! The Luxurious Cruise is here. Yoel is here!” someone shouted.

Everyone turned and looked toward the sea.

A luxury yacht pulled up by the Mayberry Beach harbor. A fat young man in a bathrobe and sunglasses stood standing on the deck. By his side were all manner of girls in bikinis. They were all around him, feeding him with wine.

On the corner of the deck were also many rich young men. It was Aiden and the rest. Since they were all subordinates of Jessica, they shared a close relationship.

“Yoel!”

“Yoel!”

“Yoel!”

Everyone was shouting the name of the wealthy young man.

Chapter 161

Yoel Holden was the son of County’s State wealthiest man. He was also the leader of the rich youths around the whole Gangnam district.

Not only that, many young women were fond of him, all hoping they would have a perfect encounter with him one day. Yoel might just fall for their beauty one day, they thought.

But these were all pipe dreams as Yoel Holden wasn’t someone they could so easily snuggle up to.

The cruise ship blared its horn as it docked by the port.

The cabin doors were opened, and down came Yoel with women on his left and right. He wasn’t exactly good looking, nor was he tall, even slightly fat, but the pretty girls kept on shouting, “He’s hot!”

Amber was the loudest on their side, hoping to capture Yoel's attention.

Dickson, on the other hand, stared at him in jealousy. He was dying to be him and wished he could become like that someday.

Even if he could not turn out like him, turning out as Aiden wasn't so bad. Being Yoel's best friend, most men would undoubtedly share Dickson's desires as well.

Yoel took off his Armani sunglasses that were worth a couple of grand and threw it on the beach as if it was a piece of trash.

He then walked toward Crystal, noticing how extraordinarily sexy and pretty she was today. "Crystal, you look wonderful today!" Yoel smiled gently.

Even though his eyes were two tiny slits, many girls were still very fond of him! "Yoel, you're hot today as well!" they cooed.

Crystal brushed her hair and went back to being a dainty princess. She only wanted Yoel to notice her, hence the super exposed outfit.

Since the internship was approaching and Yoel had been after her for three years, it was hard to say if he would still do so after it was over. Thus, she had to confirm her relationship with Yoel as soon as possible.

An intelligent woman should always know the right timing.

"Come here, Crystal. I would like you to meet a significant guest of the day!"

"Huh? Important guest?" Crystal was shocked. All these years being around with Yoel, she had never heard him mentioning important guests. She had never thought anyone would be important enough to be too important in his eyes.

Yoel nodded, looking around the audience of wealthy young men and women. "Everyone... what a happy and joyous occasion. It's nice to meet all of you! I would like to introduce someone very important to all of you!"

"You all probably know how my family got a part in County's State? It was all because of my dearest godsister's help and now, my godsister's blood-related brother. Gerald is here today!"

Yoel attempted to make a big entrance for his godbrother, Gerald, as a surprise!

Of course, all these were just for impressing Gerald and a more promising future for their family.

"What? Who is Gerald? What does he do? My dad has mentioned him multiple times!"

"How could you not know who Gerald is? You must have heard of Mayberry Commercial Street right? It's one of Gerald's properties. It's not his family business, but it's listed under his own property, get it?"

"What the fuck? The whole Commercial Street belongs to him?"

Everyone turned completely speechless.

Because it would also mean that Yoel's father's entire net worth was worth no more than a piece of Gerald's property.

Chapter 162

"Dickson, could Gerald really be that great?" Amber was shocked.

"I've only heard about this guy recently, that he has lots of potential. Come to think about it, Holden's family could only become this successful thanks to Gerald's sister!" Dickson crossed his arms as he explained it to everyone.

"Damn! Does it mean we get to see who this Gerald person is?" Amber was super excited.

At the same time, Yoel looked at Aiden. "Aiden, where is Gerald?" he asked.

Yoel used to call Aiden by his full name, but ever since he found out that he and Gerald were best friends, he now addressed him on a first-name basis. That said, no matter how he mentioned his name, there was still a big gap between them.

"He arrived a long time ago, but he probably just went out!" Aiden was looking all around for Gerald.

"Yoel, should we look for him at the hotel? We shouldn't let him wait since he's such an important guest," replied Crystal as she nudged Yoel's arm.

Crystal was all blushing. At first, she thought Yoel was everything, but now, there was apparently someone else even greater! And since this Gerald was already here, she would really love to meet him.

Crystal believed that since her relationship with Yoel wasn't confirmed, she might just get Gerald's interest. Everything in a relationship had to be as tough as hell!

"I agree, Yoel. We should look for him personally!" A few guests suggested the same idea too.

"How could I have missed this point!" Yoel's face had changed. He thought Gerald would be at the beach when he arrived. He would then invite him to join them respectfully. It was all supposed to end well, but what he didn't expect was the fact that Gerald wasn't even at the beach at all.

If that were to be the case, it meant he was waiting for his godbrother to see him, and that would be a terrible idea!

"You're right. Let's find my godbrother, but we don't need too many people!" said Yoel.

"Please bring us, Yoel?!" shouted the girls who were sitting on Gerald.

"We were hitting a pervert just now. Could you bring us to see Gerald?" the girls asked as their eyes watered.

“Alright! I’ll bring you girls along. Aiden and Crystal, let’s go find my godbrother!” Yoel replied.

“There’s no need for that!” Gerald raised his head, spitting out a mouthful of sand.

The girls moved their butts away, and Gerald could finally breathe properly.

“I was here all the time!” groaned Gerald as he rolled over the sand.

“What?” Everyone was shocked when they heard that.

Aiden immediately took a good look at the guy who got beaten up by the girls.

“Gerald! You’re here!” he screamed.

Chapter 163

“What? He is Mr. Crawford?!”

Upon hearing Aiden’s words, the crowd looked toward their direction in shock.

Dickson’s eyes widened in disbelief while Amber’s jaw dropped.

“Hey man, are you my godbrother Gerald Crawford?” Yoel asked anxiously. He never thought that Gerald would appear just like this.

“Yes, indeed!” Gerald answered while struggling to get up. He hissed and took a breath. His body felt numb from bearing the weight of the few pretty ladies who sat on top of him.

“Someone, help me up!”

“Oh my! Mr. Crawford, Mr. Crawford!”

The pretty ladies who were standing nearest to Gerald were stunned. Their screams drowned out Gerald's voice.

Elena felt afraid and was almost shocked at what she saw. Nevertheless, she still rushed over to help Gerald get on his feet.

Last time, Elena had offended Mr. Crawford before, but Mr. Crawford was not too harsh on her because of her father.

However, this incident seemed very serious. Elena was uncertain as to how Mr. Crawford would be angry about this. She stood aside in silence without daring to say a word. Her brain could not process any response at the moment.

"Mr. Crawford! Who beat you up like this?" Yoel asked as he immediately lunged forward to help Gerald up with his hand.

This scene left Crystal and the few pretty ladies in bikinis dumbfounded. They realized that the VIP of the day was actually Gerald, also known as tycoon Mr. Crawford! Oh my goodness, they thought to themselves, what have we done?!

Since Mr. Crawford found favor in those pretty ladies' eyes, Gerald went over to visit them. However, they ended up putting Mr. Crawford to shame, wasting the opportunity of getting to know who Mr. Crawford was.

Argh! Crystal started to regret this, but Dickson and Amber had the worst feelings of regret.

Dickson had spent the whole day beating Gerald up and showing off his connections and how great his family was. Gerald, however, simply smiled in silence while Dickson was flaunting what he had.

Dickson believed that his ridicule on Gerald had succeeded, causing him to lose his face to the point he couldn't reply a word. Fuck, he thought. Gerald was actually laughing at how stupid he was!

Amber couldn't process what was going on. She looked at Gerald with terror, dying to speak, but the noise of the crowd would just drown her voice out.

"Mr. Crawford! Mr. Crawford!" screamed the pretty ladies started screaming.

"Anyone noticed how Mr. Crawford looks so elegant and handsome?!"

"Yes, indeed! Look at Mr. Crawford. He rocks in such a plain outfit! Ordinary people ain't his match!"

"I wonder if Mr. Crawford is still single? Goodness me! Mr. Crawford is so reserved. He's such a gem! I want to be his girlfriend!"

Numerous ladies loudly discussed Mr. Crawford, expressing their utmost adoration toward Gerald. With that many girls finding favor in 'Mr. Crawford,' Gerald was elated. It was his first time after all.

"Mr. Crawford, I'm sorry!" Crystal apologized and bowed in embarrassment. A group of ladies followed suit and bowed as well. Crystal even squeezed her chest a little, hoping to attract Gerald's attention.

"These ladies were really disrespectful a while ago, Mr. Crawford. How should we punish them?" Yoel asked, but he already had an answer in mind. He even caught Crystal's flirtatious antics.

Since he was young, girls would automatically flock to Yoel. With the emergence of Crystal Lester, a clingy yet playing-hard-to-get girl, Yoel Holden did not want to lose this opportunity. He simply wanted to experience what it was like pursuing a lady.

Deep down inside, Yoel actually felt like beating silly Crystal to death for rudely roughing up Mr. Crawford and screwing his perfectly prepared plan of a cool Mr. Crawford introduction.

Gerald glared at Crystal and the other girls.

Chapter 164

Gerald was honestly so done with the ladies. They mustn't be led off the hook!

“It was simple. As punishment, get the ladies to have a volleyball match with us, but in bikinis!” said Gerald bluntly.

“What? It is that simple?” Crystal responded with joy.

Crystal started overthinking, “Perhaps Mr. Crawford pitied me and took the initiative to make peace? I am, after all, stunning. Which guy wouldn’t be enchanted by me?”

“Of course y’all wouldn’t be doing it here! It’ll be at Rivington City’s most popular street!” replied Gerald.

Crystal’s mind went blank. Shocked, she let out a loud scream. How embarrassing was that!

“Hmph, y’all should thank Mr. Crawford for the punishment! Alright, it’s getting dark now, and many have left. See you at noon tomorrow noon on Rivington City’s most crowded street. I’ll be organizing a volleyball match!” Yoel announced before giving Gerald a nudge, a gesture inviting him to board the cruise ship as well.

“Mr. Crawford, I love you! Oh my!” a few girls screamed, grabbing locks of Gerald’s hair as he passed them and entered the cruise ship.

Gerald even had a few pretty ladies in bikini’s holding on to his arm intimately. Tonight’s VIP was indeed, Gerald, Mr. Crawford!

“Sister Elena, sister Elena!” shouted Amber while stomping her feet anxiously.

The moment Elena Larson heard her younger cousin’s voice, she backed off from following Gerald into the cruise ship.

“Gerald is really Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street! Why didn’t you tell me this earlier? He’s very handsome, truly handsome indeed! I was wrong, it’s all my fault. Elena, you must explain this to Mr. Crawford!”

“Hey Amber, haven’t I reminded you many times that you gotta be more reserved when speaking? Anyway, don’t worry, it doesn’t seem that Mr. Crawford will blame you. I’ll tell you the details after this. Oh yes, never tell others that Gerald is actually Mr. Crawford. Keep it to yourself. Mr. Crawford isn’t willing to reveal his identity, and as long as he wants it to remain hidden, you must never spill the beans!”

“What? But sister Elena, so many people have seen Mr. Crawford today!”

Elena shook her head while pointing to the side. “See those bodyguards in black walking back and forth?”

Amber saw more than ten expressionless bodyguards in black outfits. They were dealing with all the rich heirs who were present. The youngsters nodded were nodding in compliance with everything the bodyguards had to tell them. Clearly, no one dared to defy their orders.

“Is this the true boss?” Amber was stunned.

Afterward, the Cruise Ship Festival then began on the sea.

This was Gerald’s first time boarding a cruise ship. He found it really cool, seeing the sea at night while listening to the whistling sea breeze.

The issue of Gerald’s own identity turned out better than what he had imagined, so his mind was at ease. Gerald would still live his simple life as usual. At least for now, he didn’t fancy Yoel’s extravagant lifestyle. These were the reasons why Gerald called for Aiden to settle this matter before this.

Otherwise, it would be like insisting a freely-swimming water-only fish to come ashore and climb a tree. It would be absolutely impossible given such a short period!

During the gala, Gerald, Yoel, and Aiden almost spent the entire night having fun before finally going to sleep at dawn. It was also the same for the other youngsters from wealthy families on the cruise ship, in extremely high spirits.

The next day, Gerald followed Yoel and the rest to the sea again. The Cruise Ship Festival went on and only ended in the afternoon.

“Brother... I’ll be going on a trip to Mayberry in three days. Since I’ll be there, I’ll look for you again!” laughed Yoel jovially on their way back from the sea.

“Business in Mayberry?”

“Are you going to join Mountain Top Villa’s exhibition?” asked Aiden with a smile.

Yoel nodded, “My dad absolutely insisted that I experience it myself!”

Gerald was already lost in thought. Mountain Top Villa sounded like a nice place, considering he really wanted to buy a condominium right now. “I have not heard of Mountain Top Villa before. Is it very luxurious?” he asked.

Shocked, Yoel cleared his throat before saying, “Brother. Mountain Top Villa is so much more than just a luxurious place!”

Chapter 165

Gerald caught interest in Mountain Top Villa, so he wanted Yoel to elaborate on it.

“Hehe, brother, how should I say this...” Yoel chuckled before he continued, “Mountain Top Villa is no longer just a simple residential area. It actually represents an honorable identity of sorts. As its name suggests, the villa is located on the highest peak of Mayberry’s cloudy mountain top. The surrounding area has already been made into an estate; as if sitting above the clouds themselves, you can enjoy a birds-eye view of Mayberry City’s mountains and rivers!”

Yoel’s heart yearned for this villa.

Could it really be as perfect as what Yoel described?

Gerald asked, "By the way it sounds, this property must be quite expensive, aye?"

Gerald was very determined to buy a house this time. He decided to spend a couple of hundred grand to buy a villa, making it a lot more convenient to store his car and other things. His search for a new home led him to ask about Mountain Top Villa's price.

"What?!" Yoel was so shocked he spat out some wine. "F*ck! This is not just quite expensive, brother! Wanna know how much it costs? Exactly 1.0465 billion dollars!" he exclaimed, eyes as wide as golfballs.

Yoel's father would have surely spent 1.0465 billion if it was used to invest in a business. On the other hand, spending 1.0465 billion for a villa of no business value would be equivalent to a total waste of cash. Unless they had an endless supply of cash, even the very rich wouldn't have spent such money on something like that.

Yoel was still quite afraid of this property purchase price. Although he had invited many wealthy families youngsters to join him today, he only spent a sheer 90,000 to 105,000 dollars.

"This amount of money is definitely nothing to you, brother. I remember your elder sister spending something like 149.5 million to 299 million dollars just to buy a customized car!"

Yoel gave Gerald the feeling of wanting to try out new things. He knew such small amounts of money meant nothing to Gerald anyway.

In reality, however, Gerald could imagine the pain in his flesh. Spending 1.0465 billion just to buy a residential home would be way too extravagant! Gerald shook his head, deciding to be more realistic instead. Perhaps he would buy villas worth between 149.5 thousand to 299 thousand instead.

"But that's alright, bro. We'll just go and have a look in three days. That wouldn't hurt, right?" said Yoel unwillingly.

If Gerald ended up buying it, Yoel would get to stay there too. Now that would be a true luxury!

“Alright, we’ll take a look at Mountain Top Villa when I’ve got the time!” Gerald thought it won’t be nice to reject Yoel, so he agreed despite knowing Yoel’s motives. Behind his meticulous preparation of the pomp and splendor, all Yoel wanted was to get closer to Gerald. Besides, being thought highly by others wasn’t something he hated.

A bunch of youngsters from wealthy families surfing happily could be seen. They were enjoying themselves and looked to be having a great time.

Of course, Gerald took the number one spot for most girls. Wherever he went, girls would follow, each doing their very best to convey their amorous intent. They repeatedly stole glances at him, hoping to get his attention.

However, Gerald was already exhausted, too tired to continue messing around with the bunch of pretty ladies. It would be the afternoon in no time, and the festival on the cruise ship had ended as well. He even declined Yoel’s invitation to explore another place.

Gerald was, after all, different from Yoel. It didn’t even matter if Yoel earned no college credits. It would be Monday tomorrow, and Gerald needed to attend college!

Aiden, in charge of driving, sent Gerald back to college.

Upon returning to his dorm, Gerald found nobody at his unit. It seemed Harper Sullivan and the others must have gone surfing the net again.

Gerald had been tired for two days straight. He planted his head on his pillow, instantly sleeping like a baby until he was awoken by the sound of the door opening.

“Harper, isn’t Gerry back?”

“What? He’s back? Why is his phone switched off then?”

Harper, Benjamin, and the rest had returned. They looked at Gerald excitedly, joking and laughing as they went along.

“Oh, it’s been some time since I switched my phone off. I was too tired, and I didn’t charge it. Hey, I’ve slept till six p.m. You guys were surfing the net for that long?” asked Gerald as he glanced at his watch. He’s been sleeping for more than three hours.

Chapter 166

”D*mn it! Still surfing the internet? Gerald, I really suspect that you must have gone on a vacation for the past two days, or did you go to pleasure town? Don’t you read the news in our class group chat?”

Benjamin asked excitedly.

Before this, Gerald simply told them that he was going out with a friend but he did not tell them exactly what he was going to do.

Therefore, Benjamin and Harper did not know what Gerald had been up to over the past two days.

As for the pleasure town that Benjamin had just mentioned, Gerald had really been there.

They were all the same, they were all big beauties!

At this time, Gerald smiled before he said, “What pleasure town are you talking about? So, tell me, what is happening in our class?”

“Before you left, didn’t Felicity enter the popularity competition for the star anchor? In the end, Felicity won the competition directly and she became the absolute top anchor, the star anchor in the same city live broadcast platform. That day, Felicity earned more than thirty thousand dollars of rewards! D*mn it!”

Benjamin was really envious and hateful. He really envied the fact that other people could earn so much money in one day. He hated it that he wasn’t a woman too!

“Well, yesterday, many newspapers and media came to interview Felicity and the headlines were even more domineering: A girl from Mayberry University, who does live broadcasts for a few hours a day, earns more than thirty thousand dollars!”

“Oh, in short, all kinds of related reports have already been launched. This is all because of the propaganda from the newspaper. Ever since this afternoon, some people from the Mayberry Television Station also came to do a special interview with Felicity. Just now, we also recorded a video as Felicity’s classmates. I even showed my face!”

Harper explained everything.

Gerald understood this.

Felicity was famous now. After interviewing her, they naturally had to conduct some other peripheral interviews too. This was similar to the interview column of the television stations. After the interview, they would then interview the person’s classmates, family, and friends.

This was all usually planned in advance.

Hahaha. Gerald really did not expect that using his identity as Ordinary Man to give Felicity some gifts and then investing some funds in the same city live broadcast would have such an effect.

He actually indirectly provided some free publicity for Felicity.

This made Gerald feel a little dumbfounded.

“Gerald, hurry up and change! Felicity is treating all of us to dinner tonight. She will be buying us dinner at the Homeland Kitchen where you bought us dinner the last time. She has already booked the place! All of our classmates will be coming too!”

Harper patted Gerald’s bed before he went to change his clothes.

“Okay!”

This time, Gerald quickly agreed.

After all, he was almost done resting and he was already hungry.

Secondly, Felicity became famous all because of him. So, what was the big deal if he went to eat at the celebration banquet hosted by her?

This was reasonable and justified!

Gerald hurriedly changed his clothes before he ran downstairs with Harper and the others.

At the school gate.

A large group of Gerald’s classmates was already waiting here.

Felicity was no longer the same person that she used to be. She used to be just a small-time anchor who was earning just a little money. Now, she was a real internet celebrity who was making a lot of money.

Therefore, she was naturally everyone’s focus of attention.

“Sister Felicity, are we going to call for cabs?”

Blondie was following closely behind Felicity. Ever since Danny had beaten up the son of a wealthy and powerful man in Mayberry City with his cousin brother, Chad, he had been in a very miserable state. He did not even dare to come to school at all. Now, only Blondie was left in class.

“Why should we call for cabs? I have already contacted the service company and asked them to send ten Audis over here. We will go by car. By the way, Blondie, can you count the number of people who have already arrived and check to see who else is not here yet?”

“I’ll do it now!” Blondie happily replied before he got to work immediately, as though he was managing his own affairs. After that, he shouted, “Don’t talk anymore! I will call out everyone’s name!”

He was done very quickly.

Blondie ran over before he said, “Sister Felicity, only Harper and the boys from his dormitory are not here yet. Layla said that she is feeling unwell and she is resting alone in the dormitory!”

“Okay, I got it. Why are Harper and the boys taking so long just to change their clothes?” Felicity asked coldly as she put on a branded wine-red sunglasses while crossing her hands in front of her chest. After all, she was an internet celebrity now so she would have to be more stylish.

“They are here! They are here! Harper and the boys are here!”

At this time, a girl shouted.

Harper and the other boys, a total of six of them were running over to them.

“Eh? Didn’t Gerald go out to play? Why is he back already?”

“Yes! Oh my. Perhaps he hurried back as soon as he heard that we would be going out to eat. Who knows if he had already spent all of his lottery money? Maybe he is just saying that he went on a vacation, but he was probably out working!”

Gerald had not even arrived yet but the ridicule had already sounded..

Chapter 167

“Gerald, you’re here too? You know how to come when we are going out for dinner but why weren’t you there when all of us from the class were recording the interview for Felicity then? Hahaha! The attributes of a pathetic person would never change!”

A girl who was very close to Felicity could not help but scolded him.

Many girls had already gradually changed their views on Gerald. They would even smile faintly at Gerald when they saw him now.

How should this be explained?

Some time ago, Gerald suddenly got rich. He got very rich.

He really attracted many girls' favor at that time.

They felt that it would be great if they could get together with Gerald. They would be able to buy some really pretty bags, especially since this Gerald was quite handsome.

However, Felicity had already hit the jackpot.

She became an online celebrity who could make a lot of money.

This gave all the girls in her class a very huge booster. So, what if they were girls? They felt that as long as a girl was willing to work hard and head in the right direction, she could also become rich, famous, and successful.

Therefore, many girls in their class also came up with an idea. They wanted to try and do live broadcasts too. It would be even better if they could sign a contract too!

“Forget it. Just bring him along with us. Another person would not make a big difference anyway.”

Felicity replied as she fixed her sunglasses. When she used to say anything contemptuously in the past, Felicity would glare at Gerald. However, now, she could not even be bothered to even look at him at all.

Just then, Cassandra and everyone else had already arrived. All ten of the Audis had already arrived.

The lineup of the ten Audis was really spectacular.

Many students also looked in this direction enviously.

Even the owners of the Audis also took out their cell phones to take pictures of Felicity.

“Instructor! You can take the same car as me! All my classmates can just get in the other cars!”

Felicity said as she placed great emphasis on her image.

Her classmates quickly got into the cars, one after the other.

Harper and the boys from his dormitory also got into the car.

At this time, Gerald saw that there was no one sitting in the Audi at the end. Therefore, he was about to open the door of the co-pilot seat so that he could sit in it.

“Stop! What do you think you are doing, Gerald?”

Felicity’s cold voice sounded from a far distance.

“I am getting into the car!”

Gerald replied.

“Hehehe. That car is not for picking up students. That car is to pick up some of my good friends from the live broadcast guild. You can sit in another car!” Felicity was really annoyed. Why was this pathetic person causing trouble for her every time?

“There are no other cars but I can see that no one is sitting in the co-pilot seat in the car that you are sitting in. I will go there then!”

Gerald replied. After all, she would not be expecting him to go on his own, right?

“Pfft! Gerald, what are you thinking? You are actually thinking of sitting in the same car as me?”

Felicity honestly felt like giving Gerald a few slaps. What was her status now? Could she really be seen with someone like him?

“Felicity, what is the matter? Aren’t we leaving yet?”

At this time, Cassandra also got out of the car.

“Ahh! It’s all Gerald’s fault. When I was calling for the cars, I did not count him in at all so I only called for ten cars. Everything is fine now! I have to send a car over to pick up my good friends! Gerald is not sitting in it anymore!”

Felicity replied coldly.

Cassandra glanced at Gerald in disgust. This person was really superfluous!

After that, she said impatiently, “Gerald, why don’t you take a cab there by yourself? I will reimburse you for the cab fare later! Okay, okay, Felicity, let’s go now!”

Cassandra yelled at Felicity before they left in a hurry.

Why was she rushing to leave with Felicity in a hurry?

This was because Cassandra just thought of a topic to talk with someone. Therefore, she was planning to chat with him now.

Gerald did not ask Harper or the other boys to accompany him. He simply said that he could take a cab on his own, after borrowing Harper's power bank.

After the convoy left.

Gerald turned on his cell phone.

He clicked on his WeChat and it was his new WeChat account.

Felicity had sent him so many messages that his inbox was almost full.

There were also some pictures of Felicity.

"Brother Ordinary Man, Felicity will send you some of my most beautiful pictures so that you can have a look at it, okay?"

"Brother Ordinary Man, are you there? Do you think that Felicity is not beautiful? Grievous!"

"..."

Chapter 168

There were too many. It was filled with pictures of Felicity.

There were even a few shots of her beautiful legs. To be honest, the scale was quite big.

Gerald could feel his heart pounding as he looked at the pictures.

"Am I beautiful, Brother Ordinary Man?"

“It’s okay. The photos are average and not too exciting! Hehe!”

Gerald sent a suggestive message to Felicity, perhaps because he was a little angry at her.

Unexpectedly, Felicity replied to his text message in a few seconds, “Oh, you are so hateful, Brother Ordinary Man! I will definitely make you feel satisfied when I have the time!”

Felicity’s reply made Gerald’s heart feel a little excited.

At this time, Cassandra suddenly sent a new text message to him.

“Brother Ordinary Man, what are you doing? Everyone in our class is going out to attend your dear Felicity’s celebration banquet today. Hmph! You should have been the protagonist today since you were the one who turned Felicity into a celebrity! By the way, are you interested in Felicity? Why aren’t you pursuing her?”

Cassandra secretly sent this text message to Gerald.

To be honest, she had a very strong sense of jealousy inside. She did not know why but the image of the boyfriend that Cassandra had sketched in her heart, was similar to Ordinary Man even though she had never seen Ordinary Man before.

“Can’t catch up. My car is not here yet!”

He was annoyed and immune to it. Why was he always the one being targeted?

Gerald replied angrily. The cab that he called for had not arrived yet.

“Hahaha, isn’t it easy for Brother Ordinary Man to just buy a car with your financial resources?”

Cassandra replied once again.

She obviously got the wrong idea. When Gerald said that his car was not here yet, she actually thought that she was saying that he had not received the car that he had bought!

At this time, the cab that Gerald called for finally arrived. Gerald continued chatting with them a little before he ended the conversation. The only thing that really aroused his interest was the photos that Felicity said that she was going to take for him.

He would really have to take a good look at those pictures when the time came.

As he was speaking, Gerald had already arrived at Homeland Kitchen.

At this time, the ten Audis had already stopped at the entrance of Homeland Kitchen. This simply proved how arrogant and mighty Felicity was at this time.

“You! Why are you clumsy? If you can work, then work properly. If you cannot work, then you should just get lost! Just look at you. I have seen so many part-timers but I have never seen anyone like you! I want you to get lost now! Besides that, I also want you to pay for the loss of this ‘Buddha Jumps over the Wall Soup’. Leave one hundred and fifty dollars behind!”

Gerald was about to go upstairs when he saw a woman grabbing a girl dressed as a waitress as she dragged her out.

“Sorry, manager! I am really sorry! I have a wound on my arm so I couldn’t hold the dish properly!”

“What? I don’t care if you are injured or hurt! Do you know who the Miss Felicity who went in just now is? She is the most honored guest in our Homeland Kitchen. Fortunately, you did not drop the dish and scald Miss Felicity just now. Otherwise, you would never be able to pay for the consequences of your action!”

The female manager yelled as she poked the girl’s forehead hard.

The girl simply lowered her head as she listened but she did not dare to hide.

Perhaps, there was something wrong with Gerald's perspective. From his perspective, the girl's skin was bright and fair and her hair was hanging down. At first glance, she made people feel a lot of pity for her.

As for the female manager, she was obviously a new manager.

Moreover, Gerald knew this new manager.

"Jane, why are you yelling?"

Gerald did not expect that Jane would have already become the new manager of Homeland Kitchen.

"Ahh?"

Jane shook her whole body suddenly when she heard the sound behind him.

It was like a fish who had been stranded for a long time, suddenly seeing a torrent rolling in front of it.

Or more like a farmland that had been dried up for a long time, welcoming the joy before the dark clouds!

"Mr. Crawford?"

Jane was so excited that she was about to cry.

"Are you shouting so loudly because you are afraid that other people will not be able to hear you?" Gerald asked lightly.

"Ahh! I do not dare to anymore, Mr. Crawford. I was just very excited to see you!" The matter when Jane made Chad and the others misunderstand that Gerald was her boyfriend or something had already

reached Zack's ears the last time. Therefore, he had already given Jane a warning. If Mr. Crawford did not agree, she would not be allowed to contact him or interfere in his peaceful life!

Of course, Jane obeyed all of his instructions.

In fact, Gerald did not have any resentment or resistance toward this senior sister, Jane. On the contrary, she had already shown her favor to Gerald countless times and Gerald had already regarded her as half a friend.

He smiled bitterly at this time before he asked, "By the way, Jane, when did you become the manager of Homeland Kitchen? Aren't you working at the Mountain Wayfair Entertainment anymore?"

"Ahh? Mr. Crawford, don't you know about it? Mayberry Commercial Street is undergoing some huge changes now. It seems as though something big had happened. Mr. Lyle has also been replaced. The Mayberry Commercial Street will also be facing a reshuffling!"

Jane was very surprised.

"Facing a reshuffling?"

Gerald was also taken aback. He did not even need to think about it to know that this should all be his sister's idea.

What was she trying to do?

Chapter 169

It turned out that the change Jane was referring to was that Gerald's sister, Jessica, had already handed the management of the Mayberry Commercial Street over to someone else after Zack resigned and left his post.

As for the person who had been sent over here, Gerald did not ask about it, nor did his sister, Jessica tell him anything about it at all.

He could just ask her about it later then.

It was also precisely because of this reason that Jane, who was working well in the Mountain Wayfair Entertainment was eventually transferred to become a manager at the Homeland Kitchen instead.

Although it seemed like she was getting a promotion, in actual fact, she was being demoted.

Speaking of it, this had something to do with Gerald too.

At this time, Gerald turned his gaze on the girl who was standing aside again. To be honest, Gerald was not simply just feeling pity or sympathy for Gerald. Instead, Gerald suddenly thought of his previous self when he saw this girl.

At that time, he had been so poor that he could not even afford to eat or feed himself. He would have to take on several jobs on the weekends and it was already a common thing for him to get beaten and scolded.

“Jane, you can go and get busy with something else now. Didn’t she just smash a bowl of ‘Buddha Jumped over the Wall Soup’? She did not hurt anyone anyway. Just ask the kitchen to prepare another bowl then!”

Gerald ordered.

Jane did not dare to go against his words. After glancing at the girl, Jane headed to the kitchen.

Jane naturally knew that Felicity was Gerald’s favorite anchor. That was the reason why she regarded Felicity as the most distinguished guest amongst all the other distinguished guests. Otherwise, why else would Mr. Crawford use fifteen million dollars to invest in the live broadcast platform just to please Felicity? This was also the reason why Jane felt very suffocated and jealous deep in her heart.

“Thank you... thank you!”

The girl lowered her head before she bowed slightly in front of Gerald.

“You are welcome!”

Gerald smiled faintly.

He really wanted to see this girl raise her head. Gerald wanted to take a good look at her whole appearance. This was because this girl’s side profile was really very beautiful. She had the kind of beauty that was seriously overlooked.

However, when he saw her being so cautious and afraid, Gerald did not want to continue teasing her anymore.

After he was done speaking, he headed upstairs.

Upstairs, the dishes had already been served to Felicity and the others.

There was no doubt that Gerald was placed on the most inconspicuous table and he was sitting amongst the most inconspicuous classmates in their class.

The people sitting on the main table were people such as Cassandra and some of Felicity’s close sisters from the guild.

He had already met them the last time.

The four banquet tables were all placed in one very large room and it was naturally very lively inside.

“Hello, hello, classmate! Can you help me to charge my cell phone?”

Gerald was not speaking at the banquet table and he was eating the chicken, braised pork ribs, and so forth because he was already starving to death.

At this time, a girl came over to ask for Gerald's help because his seat was blocking the socket.

"Hehehe. It's you!"

The girl suddenly sneered when Gerald raised his head.

She was none other than the live broadcast anchor, Sara. He had met her in the park before. The girl was actually rather beautiful and gentle. However, she was really a very judgmental person.

She had been very demure when she attended Felicity's celebration banquet and she had been very gentle and demure when she was speaking to Felicity's classmates.

This was because she had already found out that the local tycoon, Ordinary Man was actually a student from Felicity's department at school. When she asked Felicity about this in the past, Felicity did not want to tell her the truth. However, the truth had already been exposed now.

So, Sara thought that it would be great if she could get to know more handsome guys in the Department of Language and Literature. That way, she would have a justified reason to go to the Department of Language and Literature to visit and play frequently in the future. What if she accidentally had an encounter with Ordinary Man and gains his favor then?

After all, Sara felt that her appearance and beauty was not any worse compared to Felicity.

Unexpectedly, when the person looked up at her, she realized that it was Gerald who had an oily and grease all over his mouth because he was eating.

This made Sara feel a little disgusted and disappointed.

After all, she had already personally witnessed how stupid and pathetic this person was the last time.

"Oh, it's you! Come, I will help you to charge your phone!"

Gerald had already seen her earlier but he did not go over there to greet her. He immediately wiped his hands with a piece of tissue paper as he got ready to take her cell phone in his hands.

“Hehe. Forget it. Classmate, can you help me to charge my cell phone!”

Chapter 170

Sara spoke to the student sitting next to Gerald.

After charging her cell phone, Sara glanced at Gerald before she returned to her seat at the main table.

She obviously already despised Gerald very much, but at this point, she despised Gerald even more.

As for this fact, Gerald could only smile indifferently. After all, he was already used to it. He seemed to be born with attributes that made all the beautiful women naturally despise him. Alas...

“Classmates, today is a very important day for me. Here, in addition to thanking all my classmates for taking such good care and looking out for me, I also want to thank my Brother Ordinary Man who has made me who I am today. Even though he did not come here today because he does not want to expose his own identity, I can clearly say that there will be no Felicity without him!”

“I am going to drink three glasses in a row!”

After that, Felicity drank all the red wine in one go.

There was warm applause inside the room.

“I suspect that Brother Ordinary Man is interested in Felicity and he probably likes her very much!”

Felicity’s roommate suddenly said at this time.

This sentence was very appealing and it immediately attracted everyone's attention at this time.

"No, no, no. Mary, don't talk nonsense! If Brother Ordinary Man really likes me, then he would have already come forth to meet me!" Felicity replied with a certain coldness in her heart.

She had already asked herself this question countless times.

Why was Brother Ordinary Man so good to her?

Did he like her?

If he really liked her, then he would have already revealed his identity a long time ago. Although Felicity had a very high standard for guys, and any tall, rich and handsome guys could rarely ever catch her attention at all, in Felicity's heart, the usual tall, rich and handsome could not be compared to her Ordinary Man at all!"

If he even had the slightest interest in Felicity, even if Felicity had to pursue him and wait for him, Felicity would be more than willing to do so.

Although both of them had not met before, Felicity's cold heart had already melted a long time ago when she chatted with her Brother Ordinary Man and because she would always rescue her whenever she was facing any crisis.

Therefore, this question really made Felicity feel very unpredictable and confused, and her heart was beating frantically.

"I am simply saying the truth. If he did not like Felicity, then why would he spend so much money just because of Felicity? Therefore, I think that this is almost certain. However, everyone knows that Brother Ordinary Man is a very low-key person. He does not like to be disturbed. Therefore, I am guessing that he is simply expressing his feelings to Felicity and giving her a hint that someone had always been interested in her. Then, when the time is right, he will finally reveal his true identity to Felicity!"

“It is really a pity that you are not writing a mystery novel, Mary. However, your analysis is actually really reasonable. Maybe, Ordinary Man will officially confess his love for you during our graduation day, Felicity. Therefore, during this period of time, even if you have already started your own career, you should not get too close to other boys, Felicity!”

Another girl also chimed in.

“I know!” Felicity replied as she nodded. In fact, she did not have any other boys in her mind right now aside from her Brother Ordinary Man, even if she found out that any of these boys were richer than him!

“I am going to get my cell phone!”

Sara put her wine glass down with a bang. When everyone was saying that Ordinary Man liked Felicity and was interested in her, this made her feel very jealous and uncomfortable.

No one would be able to imagine the extent of Sara’s jealousy and envy when Ordinary Man invested fifteen million dollars in the live broadcast platform because of Felicity that day.

She felt so much jealousy, as though Felicity had just snatched her boyfriend from her.

At this time, she came to Gerald’s side.

“Get out of my way!” Sara said rudely as she grabbed Gerald’s clothes and pushed him aside.

Gerald was wondering whether this woman was insane.

He wanted to hand her cell phone over to her quickly just so that she could leave immediately.

However, as soon as Gerald’s hand touched her cell phone, it felt as though he had lit the gunpowder.

“Who are you? Why did you touch my cell phone? Just take a look at yourself! Do you think that you have the right to touch my cell phone?”

Sara slapped and brushed Gerald’s hand away in anger.

“What is so great about you? Aren’t you just a pathetic jerk? Why did you touch my belongings? I don’t want this cell phone anymore!”

Slam!

Sara was acting hysterically as though she had gone insane. She picked up her cell phone before she slammed it on the ground directly.

She also picked up the glass of red wine in front of Gerald before she splashed it directly on Gerald’s face.

The atmosphere was very quiet in the room.

Everyone was dumbfounded.

Gerald, whose face was dripping with red wine, was also dumbfounded...

Chapter 171

Gerald was truly shocked when Sara splashed the entire glass of red wine directly on Gerald.

Insane! This woman was absolutely insane!

“Sara, what is wrong with you?”

Felicity asked nervously because she did not know that Sara was seriously jealous because of her.

“I am fine, Felicity. I really feel very unwell today. So, I will go back first!”

Sara did not even want her cell phone anymore and simply left the room after grabbing her bag.

She also could not understand what was wrong with herself?

Brother Ordinary Man was indeed very powerful but he did not even know about her existence anyway. So, why was she so jealous because of Brother Ordinary Man?

Everyone did not know this.

They did not know how uncomfortable Sara felt when everyone was talking about how Ordinary Man had a crush on Felicity.

Women were born to be extremely jealous creatures.

This was even more apparent when a beautiful woman was facing another beautiful woman.

Therefore, even though she was angry, she could not get angry at Felicity. That was the reason why she chose to vent her anger and frustrations on this pathetic jerk, Gerald instead.

Anyway, she had never respected or looked up to Gerald before. Therefore, she simply ignored Gerald and left.

“Hmph! Gerald, this is all your fault! You must have made Sara angry and that is why she is leaving earlier! I really regret it. Why did I allow you to come along with us today?”

Felicity said as she glared coldly at Gerald.

Gerald did not have time to be bothered about Felicity. He wanted to take revenge against Sara.

Therefore, he also followed suit and walked out of the room directly.

Oh! She was thinking of leaving after she poured red wine all over his face and scolded himself like this?

Gerald was no longer the same Gerald that he was before.

She really wanted to give Sara a slap across her face.

However, after running out of the room to chase after her, Sara's figure was nowhere to be seen at all. This made Gerald feel very angry and furious.

At this time, Gerald suddenly received a text message on his cell phone.

At first glance, it was a text message sent by his classmate, Layla.

It seemed as though Layla seemed a little unwell today. So, that was the reason why she did not come to attend Felicity's celebration banquet today.

Gerald's eyelids started twitching when he saw the content of the message.

"Gerald, can you tell me why people often suffer and feel a lot of pain? I will only drag my family down with me. I cannot do anything to help my family at all. I have worked hard and struggled my whole entire life but I cannot be compared to others at all. I am completely useless. My father cannot even lift his head high and my family cannot even afford to buy my sister any new clothes. Now that my sister is ill, as her elder sister, I am so powerless and helpless and I can only watch her suffer because we cannot afford to send her to the hospital. My family has already spent all their money to pay for my education but I can't even do anything for them in return!"

"Gerald, why don't you tell me how I can set myself free from all this pain and sufferings?"

Layla sent a very long text message to him.

Gerald suddenly understood that something had happened to Layla's family. She could not do anything to help her family and she is blaming herself for it. Gerald could hear that something was not right, based on Layla's last sentence.

This made Gerald panic a little.

Layla was a member of the poverty group. She usually did not speak much but Gerald had been observing her in secret. Although she was very inferior on the surface, she had a very competitive heart and spirit.

She wanted to be better than everyone else.

Moreover, he could see that she had greater pursuits and she really wanted to live a carefree life.

She had even stronger ambitions compared to him.

However, the reality was often very cruel. The more a person hoped for something, the more it would happen to go in the opposite direction.

Therefore, this depressing problem in Layla's heart had already existed for more than just a day or two. Now that her sister had fallen ill, her family must not have any money and she did not have any money too.

Therefore, this must have seriously hurt her self-esteem.

Gerald understood this feeling very well.

He was worried that she would do something stupid. Therefore, Gerald hurriedly said:

"Layla, where are you? Are you in the dormitory?"

“Yes, I am here!”

Layla responded very quickly. There were very few people that she could chat with in class. Gerald was the one that she could talk to the most.

Since Gerald did not know where the live broadcast anchor Sara had gone, Gerald knew that he would definitely face the ridicule of Felicity and the others if he went back now.

However, Gerald did not want to expose his own identity.

Although he did not have a very close relationship with Layla, both of them had worked together for the past three years because they were all members of the poverty group. Therefore, Gerald could not bear to see Layla continue suffering like this.

He did not return to the room and he called for a cab before he headed directly to the girls’ dormitory and registered his name with the aunty downstairs.

Chapter 172

He arrived at Layla’s dormitory door.

“Gerald?”

Layla, who had cried until her eyes were red and swollen, opened the door. She was obviously very surprised when she saw Gerald.

“Layla, are you okay? I came to see you!”

Gerald quickly replied.

“I am fine. I do not want to trouble you. Anyway, I feel that my existence in this world is superfluous and I will only drag many people down with me if I continue living in this world!”

Layla sat on the edge of her bed as she covered her eyes and started crying again.

“What nonsense are you talking about, Layla? In fact, I used to be just like you. Ever since I was young, my father told me that my family was very poor and we owed people a lot of money. My sister did not even finish high school and she went out to work at a young age because of me. My sister was actually very smart and she did very well in her studies but she gave up on her high school exams because of me!”

Gerald wanted to persuade Layla. Perhaps it was because both of them were very poor, Gerald could not help but think of his past self.

It proved to be very effective. Layla stopped crying as she looked at Gerald.

Gerald continued speaking:

“Do you know how much psychological pressure I was facing at that time? Do you know how much responsibility I was carrying on my shoulders at that time because my family had placed all of their hopes on me? That was the reason why I tried hard to study desperately. I desperately wanted to stand out so that I would not be looked down on.”

“But what could I do? I was still being bullied and insulted often. I feel inferior when I compare myself to others. Because of my own inferiority, I did not even dare to speak to girls when I saw them because I was afraid that they would look down on me!”

“In fact, they really looked down on me and they would often talk and gossip about me. However, I would often tell myself that I have to continue living a good life because all of these humiliations would pass eventually. Moreover, I also begin to understand one truth!”

Gerald was filled with emotions as he spoke.

Layla hurriedly asked, “What is that truth?”

“A person should think and do things according to the stage that they are at. This is the only way not to be in too much pain and suffering. You are still studying and gaining more knowledge at this time, but you are constantly thinking about how you are going to earn money and make more money. Is that realistic?”

“Yes, I really want to make a lot of money but I cannot do it. However, it is only natural for you to say all this now. After all, you won the lottery and you have better luck compared to everyone else!”

Layla replied depressingly.

“I am indeed luckier than others. However, you have to believe that something like that will happen to you one day too! In short, all things will pass sooner or later. You do not have to feel so stressed and depressed all the time because of this. Instead, what you should be thinking of now is a solution to this matter!”

Gerald advised.

Layla lowered her head before she said, “Okay, okay. I understand now. Thank you, Gerald. Let me think about it!”

Gerald had never persuaded anyone before this, nor did he know how to persuade anyone at all.

However, since he knew about Layla’s problem now, and since she was actually a pretty good classmate, he definitely had to help her since he encountered this incident himself.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

At this time, there was a loud slamming noise outside the dormitory door.

It felt as though someone was going to break down the door from the outside.

After that, Layla walked over and opened the door immediately.

At this time, a chubby middle-aged woman rushed into the room. She had a very broad face and her eyebrows were tattooed and it looked as though she had two caterpillars crawling on her face.

“I was wondering why you didn’t open the door! You little b*tch! It is simply because you have a man in your room! Your dad was even saying that you were studying hard at school! Pfft! You little b*tch!”

“Mom! Don’t say that! Gerald is my classmate and he came here to see me!”

Layla cried out.

“Don’t call me mom! I am not your mother! You! What are you looking at? Are you trying to force yourself on my daughter? Do you believe that I will call the police now?”

The middle-aged woman took out her cell phone immediately.

Layla started panicking and she immediately said, “Gerald, you should leave first. Thank you for everything today!”

“Okay!”

Gerald really wanted to scold this crazy woman but he knew that he should not say anything because no matter what it was, she was still Layla’s mother.

“How can a mother be acting like this?”

Gerald simply muttered a sentence before he left.

He really could not help but wonder if Layla’s mother was really her biological mother since she was scolding Layla and calling her a little b*tch as soon as she saw her.

After encountering and getting scolded by crazy women, one after the other today, Gerald was in a bad mood.

He wanted to go and take a walk in the park to relax a little.

At this time, his cell phone suddenly rang. It was a phone call from his sister, Jessica.

Gerald answered the phone immediately and he was about to ask his sister about Mayberry Commercial Street.

Unexpectedly, his sister's nervous voice sounded over the other end of the line as soon as the call was connected:

"Brother! Something bad has happened. Your sister has gotten into big trouble!"

Chapter 173

"Ah? Sister, what big trouble could you possibly get in?"

Gerald felt very nervous.

He had a very close and deep relationship with his sister. Gerald was not lying to Layla when he mentioned that his sister did not take the high school examination in order to support his own education.

Both the siblings were very poor at that time.

Therefore, his sister dropped out of his high school examination directly.

There were also countless unforgettable things that his sister had done for him.

“Don’t mention it, brother. You should already know some of the strict and perverted rules that our family has! One of these rules is that no matter how much money you spend, you have to keep a record of it!”

“Even if you spend a small amount such as a few millions of dollars, all of it has to be reflected in the family’s records. You should not hide anything from the family at all! This is also the same for you! All of your spending on your bank card now are all recorded in our family’s records!”

“Oh, oh, yes. I know this!”

This was a rule of the Crawford family. You could spend as much money as you had and you could use the family’s money at will as you pleased. However, you would not be allowed to hide the money from the person who is at the helm of your family. That would be their father.

They were also not allowed to hide any money under any other names.

“Sister, do you have any unrecorded money?”

Gerald asked.

“Yes! D*mn it! I just found out about it today! When I had just gotten out of my poverty, I used the fifteen million dollars that mom gave to me for various consumption. One day, I drank a little too much and I wanted to eat something from a franchise so I asked my assistant to buy one for me!”

“D*mn it! Do you know what the idiot did? He bought this franchise over for nine million dollars! That franchise was not popular at that time but after so many years, that shop suddenly became very popular and it has already made a profit of more than three hundred million dollars now! I did not pay any attention to this matter at all because who would have expected that fool to buy the franchise over directly?”

“Then, I thought of spending the three hundred million dollars in secret! However, after spending only half of it, dad suddenly became aware of the situation! He was wondering why there seemed to be no movement in the family’s money even though I have already bought so many things! I am really scared! I

broke the family's rule so I will have to live a life of poverty for one month! Our dad is very old-fashioned and he really abides by the rules. It would be useless even if mom tries to intercede on my behalf!"

"I was wondering what the big deal was. Don't you just have to live in poverty for one month? It will pass by very soon!"

Gerald could not help but wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. His sister really loved to make a fuss.

"No! Brother, I cannot even stand living in poverty for one day, let alone one whole month! I don't care! No matter what it is, you have to help your sister!"

His sister was about to cry over the phone.

"Okay. Okay. How am I supposed to help you?"

"Well, you can help me to spend the remaining one hundred and fifty million dollars for me within the next seven days! Don't leave even a single cent behind! Dad cannot supervise you in detail since you are not living with the family now!"

"Huff!"

Gerald nearly spurted out some blood.

"Spend one hundred and fifty million dollars in seven days?"

To be honest, it was not that Gerald had not seen this much money. After all, his sister had formerly invested in the Mayberry Commercial Street under his own name. He had hundreds of millions of dollars coming into his account every month.

Therefore, Gerald was really not short of money at all.

He was already prepared to do some investment or something with his money.

However, it would simply be too extravagant to spend one hundred and fifty million dollars in consumption!

It would be fine if he were to invest the money but wouldn't it be a waste for him to spend the money for fun? After all, he was not like his sister who seemed to have a feud with money and spent several hundreds of millions in consumption every month.

"It is just one hundred and fifty million dollars anyway. Can't you spend that amount of money? How about this, brother? Why don't you buy a transportation tool then? I will recommend a German company to you and you can order an airplane for yourself!"

Gerald: "..."

"I don't care! I don't want to have to live in poverty for a month! In short, you have to use up all of that money for me in seven days! I will get someone to transfer the money over to you immediately!"

After she was done speaking, Jessica hurriedly hung up the phone.

She should just accept it if she had to live in poverty for a month. It would be better than forcing him to spend one hundred and fifty million dollars just like that. It was really difficult for him!

Gerald could not help but pull his own hair.

He would be able to spend the money really fast if he bought an airplane. However, he did not have any use for it now!

Moreover, Gerald was still spending as though one dollar was worth a hundred dollars, really cherished money.

Dang!

Chapter 174

Very soon, Gerald received a text message from his bank, indicating that the money had already arrived.

His sister was really efficient.

But how was he going to spend this money?

Ugh!

If he invested the money, then his family would definitely find out about it. Perhaps his father would not notice it if he bought something.

One hundred and fifty million dollars! How many items would he have to buy then?

This was really stressful!

Gerald smacked his own forehead and he had no intention of taking a stroll anymore. Therefore, he decided to return to his dormitory to lie down instead.

Three days passed by and Gerald had not thought of a good way to spend the money yet.

In those three days, three things worth mentioning had happened.

The first thing was that Layla had asked for leave from school because her mother had forcefully dragged her away from school.

Gerald was very angry about this and he really wanted to help Layla. However, Layla's cell phone was not connected and he could not contact her at all.

He had been planning to ask her about the situation in the past two days so that he could give her a sum of money.

Another thing was that Felicity had really become an important figure in school. She participated in some activities organized by the same city live broadcast platform and she even became the ambassador for the front cover of the live broadcast platform. She really gained some fame.

The third thing was that Zack intended to upgrade the same city live broadcast platform to become a software for all the netizens across the country. He also planned to invest an additional thirty million dollars to prepare for a pre-platform diversion battle!

Gerald gave his approval and he invested the money immediately. After all, this was his first investment in the industry and Gerald really wanted to build it up and make it famous as soon as possible!

At this time, Gerald was eating breakfast alone in the cafeteria!

He could hear the people next to him, chattering non-stop.

“Hey! Do you know that the Mountain Top Villa is going on sale today? The original price of the villa was one hundred million dollars but the price of the villa has already risen to one hundred and nineteen million dollars today!”

“It is the day of the exhibition but who would buy a house that is worth one hundred and nineteen million dollars? That is not an investment!”

“But I think that the Mountain Top Villa is really worth one hundred and nineteen million dollars. I saw some of the pictures that were exposed on the internet. D*mn it. The villa is simply too gorgeous! If you live in the villa, you will feel like you are living in a heavenly palace!”

“Well, people say that it is a villa but actually, I feel that it is just a tourist attraction. This is because the price of the tickets just to participate in the exhibition already costs tens of thousands of dollars. Moreover, they are even limiting the number of people!”

“D*mn it! That is too ruthless!”

Gerald listened as the people who were eating at the next table continued chatting and discussing amongst themselves.

At this time, Gerald suddenly remembered that he had already made a promise to go and play with Yoel at the exhibition for the Mountain Top Villa today.

At this time.

Gerald's cell phone suddenly rang.

It was naturally a phone call from Yoel.

"Brother, I am coming to pick you up now so that we can go and participate in the exhibition for the Mountain Top Villa together! I already have your admission ticket with me!"

Yoel said as he laughed.

"Umm...you don't need to pick me up. I know the address for the Mountain Top Villa. I will go there on my own. You can just give me my admission ticket when I arrive later."

"Oh, oh. Okay, if it is the VIP passage, then let it be the VIP passage then. I don't mind. I have to trouble you then."

"Okay. I will have to decide if I want to buy it after looking at it. If it is really good, then I am planning to buy a villa at the Mountain Top Villa. Hehe. Okay then. I will go over there after I am done eating!"

Gerald ended the phone call with Yoel helplessly.

This kid was still encouraging him to buy the villa.

It would not be good to keep him waiting.

Therefore, Gerald quickly gave Harper a phone call to ask for leave. After that, he hurriedly gobbled up the egg fried rice on his plate before he stood up.

It was only then that he suddenly realized that there was no movement in the cafeteria at all and everyone was staring at him in astonishment!

Chapter 175

As soon as Gerald stood up, he realized that many people in the cafeteria were all looking at him in astonishment.

This was especially so for the men and women who were all discussing and talking about the Mountain Top Villa just now.

It was probably because Gerald had been too engrossed in his phone call earlier and he had forgotten where he was when he was chatting with Yoel.

Therefore, his words must have amazed and shocked the people around him.

“Pfft!”

Someone broke the silence as he burst into laughter.

“D*mn it! This guy is so ridiculous. He wants to go and take a look at the Mountain Top Villa?”

“Hahaha! Is it possible that the pressure of getting employed is so great that it is turning people into a lunatic?”

“What? He even stated that he was going to be a VIP guest. Hahaha. Let’s kneel down to welcome him. Hahaha!”

“Dumbass...”

Everyone started laughing.

Some people started to ridicule Gerald without giving him any face at all.

Gerald simply wiped his mouth before he shook his head with a wry smile on his face. After all, he had no way to explain himself in this situation!

After leaving the school gate, Gerald called for a cab before he came to the foot of the Mountain Top Villa, where the exhibition hall was.

The entrance.

It was surrounded by luxury cars.

There were constantly very powerful and important figures walking in and out.

Gerald could clearly see two passages leading inside as he stood at the entrance.

One was the VIP passage and the other was an ordinary customer passage.

Of course, relatively speaking, the ordinary customers here were also all extraordinarily.

“Hmm? Where is Yoel? Didn’t he say that he would be waiting for me in front of the entrance of the VIP passage?”

Gerald could not see Yoel at all.

Was there another entrance to the VIP passage?

Gerald thought to himself for a while before he raised his foot to walk into the exhibition hall.

“Gerald?”

Suddenly at this moment, a surprised female voice sounded from behind him.

Gerald turned around and he saw a female dressed in a black uniform. She had a very good figure and a very stunning appearance.

Gerald could not help but freeze in place.

“Cousin Rita?”

Wasn't this Mila's second cousin, Rita? She was the one who was trying to make things difficult for him at Mila's grandmother's birthday banquet!

Later on, Gerald could remember that Rita had a very complicated expression on her face when she finally found out that the Lamborghini belonged to him.

Originally after this incident, Gerald thought that he would not meet Rita again so soon.

Moreover, what happened with Mila in the end was still inconclusive. Both of them had only met up occasionally to eat together in the past two days.

However, Gerald really did not expect to see Rita here again, only a few days later.

Moreover, there was also a badge in front of Rita's chest: Design Director, Rita!

D*mn it! Rita designed the Mountain Top Villa?

He knew that Rita was very amazing, very smart academically, and also very cold and arrogant. However, he really did not expect her to be so capable.

How old was she?

She was only twenty-five years old!

Seemingly satisfied with Gerald's expression, Rita smiled faintly before she said, "Hehehe. Today is the day of the exhibition for the Mountain Top Villa. What are you doing here?"

"I am here to..."

"Don't tell me that you are here to participate in the exhibition! You can just have a look at it. I can honestly tell you that you will never be able to afford this villa! I know that you won tens of millions of dollars in the lottery and you bought a luxury sports car for yourself. However, you should not even be thinking about buying this villa. I don't know how much money you have left but if you are interested in buying a house, I can recommend a few which are sold at regular prices to you!"

Rita had already adjusted her glasses frame and spoke coldly before Gerald could even finish speaking.

Yes. Rita had been really shocked when she saw the luxury sports car that was worth three million dollars last time.

She had always wondered whether Gerald could be it.

As a result, no. Gerald was only a pathetic person who won the lottery.

To think that she felt so sorry and apologetic that day, just because of him.

Now that she thought about it, she felt that she had been really ridiculous. That day, she even thought about competing with her cousin sister to gain Gerald's favor!

Vomit! Vomit! Vomit!

Chapter 176

She felt like throwing up!

“I just want to take a look!”

Gerald could feel the contempt in Rita’s words and he really did not want to get into any entanglement with Rita. Therefore, he simply replied to her like that.

“Hehe. It’s good that you have this kind of thinking. Besides that, Gerald, since you are my sister’s boyfriend, I have to remind you that you should not compare yourself to those rich heirs. Those rich heirs’ families have so much more money and assets compared to you! What about you? You are just being idle and wasting your fortune away. You will definitely spend all of your money sooner or later! To be honest, based on your ability, I can hardly believe that you will be able to support my sister!”

Rita was as proud as a peacock.

Yes. Gerald, you are really amazing. You won tens of millions of dollars and you are driving a three million dollars Lamborghini. After finding out some information, Rita could only think that Gerald must really be stupid or have some brain damage!

She had no other feelings or emotions for him anymore!

Therefore, she reprimanded and scolded Gerald unceremoniously as soon as they met.

She wanted to take revenge for the last time.

“Rita, is this the brother-in-law you were talking about? The one who bought a Lamborghini after winning the lottery? He looks pretty handsome but why is he acting like this?”

“But I can tell that he is rather reserved. I am afraid that he must not have been to this kind of big event and seen so many people before, right? Alas, we cannot blame him. This kind of country bumpkin who

has already been poor for a long time has very little knowledge but suddenly came into so much money. Therefore, it is inevitable for him to have the nouveau riche mentality!”

“Exactly! He will only regret it when he has already spent all of his money. However, it will already be too late at that time. Sigh. Instead of thinking of ways to improve himself, he is actually spending tens of thousands of dollars just to buy a ticket to participate in such a high-end event?”

There were two women and one man standing behind Rita at this time.

The two women were really beautiful and they were really on par with Rita. Besides, the man was also very handsome and he looked like a rich heir.

The few of them were all about the same age and they looked like they were twenty-five to twenty-six years old.

When the few people saw Rita being so contemptuous towards Gerald, they also started habitually speaking contemptuously towards Gerald without any hesitation at all.

This made Rita feel rather embarrassed.

“Gerald, did you spend tens of thousands of dollars to buy a ticket again? Where is Mila? Does she know about this?”

Rita asked coldly.

“She knows about it. We even had dinner together last night. However, it is not convenient for her to come today! As for the admission ticket, I have not bought it yet!”

He was telling the truth. Gerald often ate with Mila in the past two days, and he really wanted Mila to come and have some fun with him. However, she could not come with him because she was feeling a little uncomfortable as she was having her period!

“Oh my god! People like you really make me feel very anxious!”

To be honest, Rita really wanted to scold Gerald.

However, no matter how pathetic Gerald was, he was still Mila’s boyfriend. She would still have to give Mila some face, right?

Therefore, Rita forcefully endured and held back her anger. At this time, she saw that Gerald was still persistent about going into the exhibition hall.

Therefore, she could only say:

“You are lucky that you ran into me today. I have a few admission tickets assigned to me. In addition to my friends, I can give you one. You can go to the exhibition hall with my friends. Remember not to speak any nonsense after you go in!”

Rita exhorted before she threw one of the admission tickets at Gerald impatiently. As the design director, she naturally had a few admission tickets assigned to her.

“Dawn, Nyla, and Samuel, I will be responsible for giving an introduction of the Mountain Top Villa when we enter later. So, please take him along with you! He does not know anything at all!” Rita said.

“But I have to meet with a few of my friends from the business community later. If I bring him with me...well, okay then. I will just ask him to look for a place to sit down later!”

Samuel felt that he was in a very difficult position.

If he knew that this would happen, he would have bought a ticket himself.

After all, tens of thousands of dollars for an admission ticket was just a trivial matter to him. However, why would he bother to spend any more money since he could depend on his relationship with Rita?

Now, it was really degrading for him to bring a lowly person like this, along with him!

However, he still agreed to it.

“Samuel, who are you going to meet later? Can you bring us along with you too? Can you introduce us to them too?”

Dawn and Nyla were really very beautiful women. Both of them were willingly staying by Samuel’s side as they took the initiative to get closer to him.

“Okay! Okay! Let’s bring him in with us first. Sigh!”

After sighing, everyone prepared to go in.

Gerald did not expect that there would be so much trouble when he was just here to take a look.

However, since Rita had already asked him to enter with Dawn and the others, Gerald felt that it would not be good for him to reject her offer directly.

Therefore, he took the admission ticket before he walked towards the VIP entrance.

“D*mn it! Are you insane? Come back here!”

When Rita saw Gerald walking towards the VIP entrance, she could not help but yell at him.

“That is the VIP entrance, which is specially prepared for the richest men from all the various cities in the Sunnydale Province. Are you mentally insane?”

Dawn was also very anxious and she cursed directly at Gerald.

“Oh. So, you guys are not going through here?”

Gerald asked as he shook his head helplessly...

Chapter 177

“Gerald, aren’t you foolish? It feels like you have been studying in college for three years for nothing. Don’t be in a daze anymore. Hurry up and follow Samuel, Dawn, and the others into the exhibition hall. Seriously! I really do now know how my sister can actually be interested in someone as lowly as you!”

Rita replied coldly.

No one wanted to continue talking about this matter anymore.

After all, Gerald was also very embarrassed at this time. Therefore, he had no choice but to ignore Yoel and followed Samuel and the rest into the exhibition hall.

The VIP passage and the ordinary passage have very different seating positions.

Those who entered from the VIP passage were all seated at the front row of the exhibition hall.

And those who entered from the ordinary passage like Gerald could only be seated at the back of the hall.

“Eh? Samuel, is it you? How are you? How is your father?”

“Uncle Light, you are here too? We are good! We are all good! My father is often thinking of you!”

As soon as Samuel entered the hall, he met with quite a few of his acquaintances. A middle-aged man also came in to greet him.

“By the way, Samuel, are these two beauties with you? Which one of them is your girlfriend?”

“They are both my classmates. I do not have a girlfriend yet, Uncle Light!”

Samuel replied as he smiled.

On the other hand, he was also waving his hand to greet some other people that were familiar with him.

To be honest, he was feeling a little proud because he knew so many people as he felt that he was reputable at any scene!

“Hello, Mr. Wyatt Light. I have read your introduction in the Mayberry Economic Times!”

Dawn said something very dignified as she adjusted her hair in a ladylike manner.

“Those are all trivial things. By the way, Samuel, as an uncle, I have to tell you that marriage is the most important thing and top priority in life. Therefore, you should not miss out on some very precious people. Otherwise, you will definitely regret it!”

After that, Wyatt shook hands with Dawn and Nyla.

Wyatt specialized in the chain supply of kitchen and bathroom equipment. He should not be underestimated because his business was actually quite big.

“Uncle Light, I will remember everything that you just said! By the way, didn’t Melanie come with you today?”

“That girl of mine! She saw a few of her classmates from Sunnydale University and she went over to greet them. She is also in her third year of university but she is still so reckless. She really makes me very worried. I really want to find a good boyfriend for her. Hey! That girl is back!”

Wyatt replied as he smiled.

“Melanie, say hello to your handsome brother, Samuel, and his two beautiful friends!”

“Hello, Brother Samuel! Hello, two beautiful sisters!”

Melanie greeted them with a smile on her face.

She was very tall, and her hair was tied into a ponytail. She was wearing a very expensive set of sports attire. She looked extremely beautiful and sexy.

At this time, Melanie fixed her gaze on Gerald who was following behind Samuel. She saw that Gerald did not have very good taste in clothing and he was not dressed very well.

Melanie frowned but she still said, “Hello!”

“Oh! I did not notice him. This is?”

Wyatt also reacted and asked immediately.

“Umm. Uncle Light, his name is Gerald. Director Rita asked me to bring him in so that he could take a look around and gain some insights. He came from a small place and has never seen this kind of big scene before!”

Samuel could not help but scratch his head.

This was so embarrassing!

Why did he have to bring this kind of person in with him?

As for Gerald, he was ridiculed by Samuel.

However, when he saw Wyatt looking at him as he raised his hand, Gerald thought that he wanted to greet him and shake his hand. Therefore, Gerald thought that it would be rude of him not to return the greeting.

Gerald nodded as he smiled at him before he also raised his hand.

Little would he have expected...

“Well, Samuel, you can accompany Uncle Light today! Come and sit next to me!”

Unexpectedly, Wyatt directly removed his gaze from Gerald before he raised his hand to pull Samuel’s arm as he asked Samuel to come and sit next to him.

He ignored Gerald completely.

He left Gerald’s hand dangling in the air. It was really embarrassing!

Melanie had also obviously lost her interest in Gerald and she simply sat on the other side of Wyatt!

“Pfft! You are so embarrassing! Why don’t you put your hand down already? Why don’t you think of who Mr. Light is? Why would he possibly shake hands with someone with no name or status like you? Do you really think that you are like Samuel and that people would give you face too?”

Chapter 178

Dawn was speechless.

“That’s right. But Dawn, there is a really true saying. A person with no temperament or class will never be able to have any temperament or class. No matter how rich they are, they will never have any class at all! Just look at Samuel. He is not only very wealthy at home, but he also has a very good temperament and class. Ahh! Take a look at Gerald again. He won the lottery but he turned out to be nothing at all.”

Nyla looked at Gerald and she was completely speechless as she shook her head.

If a person did not have any self-knowledge, then what difference would he have from a corpse?

Both of them were thinking this to themselves.

To be honest, Gerald was feeling a tightness in his chest now. It felt really uncomfortable to be snubbed despite showing good intentions.

However, he decided to sit down first. They could just say whatever they wanted to!

Gerald sat down.

Of course, he was seated at the back.

At this time, Melanie turned around. When she saw that Gerald was sitting behind her, she knitted her brows tightly together.

After that, she stood up before she walked toward Samuel and smiled before she said, "Brother Samuel, can we change our seats?"

"Ahh? Why do you want to change seats? Isn't it good for Gerald to be sitting behind you?"

"Oh! I don't want that! Please change seats with me!"

"Okay, okay. Although Gerald comes from a small place, he is actually a pretty clean and decent person. It is really okay!"

"No! You know that I am a clean freak so I really do not like this kind of person the most! Please! Please!"

Melanie continued pleading and it seemed as though she was about to cry.

“Okay, Samuel, why don’t you just change places with Melanie then? I also have to say something about you. People are easily influenced by their surroundings and the companions that they hang around with. You should not hang out with these dubious and shady people. Have you forgotten what I told you before? You can only stand higher and get farther in life by mixing with powerful and influential people.”

Wyatt replied coldly at this time.

The two families were family friends. Moreover, Wyatt had always had a very straightforward attitude. He was also very strict when it came to educating the younger generation.

Samuel only nodded silently in response.

When Gerald heard these words, he was so angry that his face turned pale immediately.

Even if he was impolite, he should still have to have the minimum amount of respect for someone that he had just met.

What did he mean by dubious and shady?

Was he a dubious and shady person, just because he did not look as rich as Samuel?

Dawn and Nyla simply laughed. They listened quietly as Wyatt educated and gave Samuel some advice.

They felt that the words of this successful businessman would definitely be of great help to them in life.

At this time, more and more people were entering the exhibition hall.

A beautiful hostess stood on the high platform of the exhibition as she took control of the venue and tried to calm everyone down.

“Dear sirs and madams, welcome to the exhibition ceremony of the first launch of the Mountain Top Villa! Before the official opening ceremony begins, let us give a warm round of applause to welcome the distinguished guests from the Sunnydale Province!”

“Let us welcome the founder of the Holden Group, the richest man in the County State, Howard Holden, and the young master, Yoel Holden!”

“Great!!”

“The father and son from the Holden family are both here. Based on the young master’s spending habit, do you think that the Holden Group will buy the one hundred and twenty million dollars villa?”

“That is impossible. Even if they have the money, the company will have huge competitors. If they are to compete with one another, then they will have to consume a lot of money. Who would have as much as one hundred and twenty million dollars just to buy a house? Do you know that once the competition begins, even one hundred and fifty dollars will determine the outcome of the two big groups, right?”

“That is right. It is impossible for the Holden family to buy the villa. They are currently the richest family in the County State but there are also many other powerful companies in the County State. They could easily use this one hundred and twenty million dollars to fight a good defense war!”

The crowd continued discussing this matter amongst themselves.

Yoel and his father walked into the exhibition hall, following these sounds.

However, there was an obvious palm mark on Yoel’s face. It seemed as though someone had slapped him.

Gerald naturally knew that it was his father who slapped him.

As for the reason why? It could be because Gerald sent a text message to Yoel earlier, stating that he did not see him anywhere and that was why he had already entered the exhibition hall with someone else without waiting for him.

To put it bluntly, Yoel got slapped because of him.

At the same time, Yoel also raised his head to look for Gerald in the exhibition hall. However, at this time, there were two to three hundred people in the hall and it was not so easy to find Gerald so easily. After all, Gerald was being blocked by Samuel at this time.

“Next, I would like to extend a grand welcome to a VIP of the exhibition event, and also a representative of the Mayberry Commercial Street, Zack Lyle! Mr. Lyle!”

“D*mn it! Mr. Lyle is here too? Is Mr. Lyle thinking of buying the villa? I think that would be more likely. After all, Mr. Lyle has no competitors at all in Mayberry City!”

The crowd of people continued discussing amongst themselves.

“It is impossible for Mr. Lyle to buy the villa. Do you know the reason why, Samuel?”

Chapter 179

“Ah? That is impossible, Uncle Light! Mr. Lyle is the richest man in Mayberry City! Therefore, I am certain that he definitely has the ability to buy it!”

Samuel was very surprised.

“Hehehe. You are wrong. In the past, Mr. Lyle was indeed very capable. However, I received news that Mr. Lyle has been transferred from Mayberry Commercial Street. Mayberry Commercial Street will be managed and run by someone else in the future!”

“Even though Mr. Lyle has already been transferred, Mr. Crawford had taken him in. So, at this time, even if he has the strength and capability to buy the villa, he will not buy it!”

“Ahh? So, it turns out that Mr. Lyle has been transferred away?”

“Yes. Mr. Crawford is still keeping him by his side. Therefore, he will definitely restrain himself a little!”

Samuel nodded repeatedly, indicating that he understood what Wyatt was saying.

“Brother Samuel, dad, what are the both of you talking about? Who is this Mr. Crawford? Why haven’t you mentioned him to me before?”

Melanie asked as she was very curious at this time.

She could tell that this Mr. Crawford was very amazing and powerful just by listening in to their conversation.

It seemed as though the entire Mayberry Commercial Street belonged to him.

Both Dawn and Nyla were stunned.

They have never been exposed to this kind of information and they naturally became very interested in this matter.

“Of course, I have never told you about this. This was because your father only found out about this fact yesterday. Some of my friends told me about the story of Mr. Crawford. Of course, Zack is also a very amazing and capable man but he is just working for Mr. Crawford. The whole Mayberry Commercial Street belongs to Mr. Crawford!”

“Oh my God! Oh my God!”

“D*mn it!”

Melanie, Dawn, and Nyla were all stunned.

“Besides that, have you heard of Yoel before?”

Wyatt asked as he smiled bitterly.

“Of course, I know Yoel! He is a top rich heir. He has a garage for all of his sports cars alone! He even held a party for all the rich heir some time ago!”

Melanie said.

How did she know all these so clearly?

This was because Melanie had also been invited to the party.

However, she happened to have her period that day and she could not go because she was in so much pain.

This was a very great regret for her because there were not many girls who did not worship Yoel.

“Hehehe. Yoel is actually Mr. Crawford’s godbrother. The Holden family is also closely related to the Crawford family. That is the reason why they could rise so much and become the richest family in the County State within a few years!”

Samuel and the others opened their mouths wide in shock. Unexpectedly, there were so many background stories behind this.

At this time, everyone has finally arrived.

The host also introduced Rita to the crowd again. After that, she asked Rita to introduce the Mountain Top Villa to everyone.

Although Gerald had been holding his anger in for a long time, he did not lose his temper.

When he saw Rita introducing the villa, he looked up and glanced at the background that had appeared on the screen.

Just a single glance.

And Gerald was also fascinated. The Mountain Top Villa was built on the mountain, straight into the clouds and it really looked like a heavenly palace.

It was extremely luxurious.

To be honest, Gerald was really moved.

One hundred and twenty million dollars was really a whooping high price!

If it was some time ago, even if he owned a lot of assets, Gerald would not spend one hundred and twenty million dollars just to buy a house no matter how moved he was.

However, it was different now.

His sister gave him one hundred and fifty million dollars and she wanted him to spend it within seven days.

He had been worried because he did not know how he should spend the money.

Wasn't this a god-sent opportunity? He would be able to kill two birds with one stone!

The more he looked at it, the more excited Gerald was.

It took her two full hours to fully introduce the villa.

Everyone yearned for it.

But no one dared to buy it.

Rita was very satisfied with everyone's expressions and she smiled as she said immediately:

"The Mountain Top Villa is priced at one hundred and twenty million dollars. Is anyone in this room interested to buy it?"

Rita asked as she smiled cordially.

"I...do not want to!"

At this time, an old boss stood up and shouted before he sat down quickly.

Everyone present started laughing out loud!

Zack also started laughing at the scene.

There were always some bosses who loved to joke like this!

Rita went on to say, "Gentlemen, this villa will not be auctioned. It will be sold on a first come first served basis. Whoever can pay the price of one hundred and twenty million dollars first will own this villa!"

Chapter 180

"Hahaha! No one is buying it indeed!"

Samuel replied as he smiled.

Wyatt smiled bitterly. "I already told you that as long as the person was a smart businessman, he would not waste one hundred and twenty million dollars on the villa unless..."

"I want it!"

Before Wyatt could even finish speaking, he heard a voice that was not very loud but was still loud enough that everyone in the whole hall could hear his words.

"Huh?!"

Doubts were flying in the air at this time.

Everyone was staring at this side.

Wyatt and Samuel were also dumbfounded as they turned their heads back to look at the person.

This was because the person who shouted this sentence was none other than this hillbilly that Samuel had brought in with him. It was Gerald!

"D*mn it! Gerald, are you crazy? How dare you shout so arrogantly? Do you know what is going to happen if you said that you are going to buy the villa but do now have enough money to pay for the villa?"

"It's over! He is not here to gain insight! This person simply came here to die!"

Nyla and Dawn were also shocked and they really felt like killing Gerald.

"Ah! A person who does not know his own place!"

Wyatt fixed his gaze on Gerald. Was this really an occasion that should be used for grandstanding? He really did not know how to behave at all!

Gerald did not care what they were saying about him.

He simply stood up before he started walking towards the stage directly.

“Crazy! He must be crazy! That pathetic guy is really insane!”

Rita was also staring at Gerald in shock at this moment!

In short, aside from a few people, everyone was all a little dumbfounded.

“Gerald, what are you doing here? Hurry up and leave now!”

Rita said angrily.

She also pushed Gerald a few times.

“Why should I leave when I want to buy this villa?”

Gerald asked as he smiled bitterly.

“Nonsense! How could you possibly afford this villa?”

Rita was seriously annoyed.

“Did you think that I will not be able to afford it just because you say that I will not be able to afford it?” Gerald asked as he sneered coldly. After that, he looked at the bank’s dedicated financial staff who was standing at the side before he said, “You guys, come over here. I will swipe my card!”

The several bank commissioners were all a little confused. After all, the person standing in front of them did not look like someone who would be able to take out even a few thousand dollars. He was even saying that he would swipe his card!

However, they would have to do it since the customer was asking for it.

Therefore, they walked over as they brought a payment machine with them.

Gerald swiped his card on the payment machine before he entered his password and used the biometrics recognition function.

“Ding! The transaction is successful. The transaction amount is one hundred and twenty million dollars...”

The cold system voice sounded.

What followed was complete silence from the audience.

One hundred and twenty million dollars. This person actually had one hundred and twenty million dollars?

Oh my God!

Rita heard everything the most clearly. She covered her mouth directly as she dropped the microphone to the ground.

Her mind was a complete blank at this moment!

Gulp!

Samuel, who was sitting in the audience, could only swallow his saliva.

He was extremely confused. Dawn and Nyla also had a very shocked expression on their faces.

After all, from their very first meeting, Nyla, Dawn, and Samuel did not only despise and look down on Gerald, but they did not treat him as a person at all.

They simply thought that he was a country bumpkin.

They felt that it was really degrading for them to have him by their side.

But now, they felt as though they were getting countless slaps in their faces now.

They were looking down on him? They might not even be able to earn as much money as he had even if they worked for an entire lifetime!

He was a super-wealthy man!

“Brother Samuel, he...who is he?”

The expression on Melanie’s face also changed.

“I don’t know...I only know that his name is Gerald Crawford! Hey! Look! Why are Mr. Lyle, the father and son from the Holden family, and the other wealthy businessmen walking toward the stage?”

Samuel replied intermittently at this time.

Chapter 181

Zack, Howard, and his son went up the platform together.

They stood in the same row subconsciously.

To everyone's surprise, they gave Gerald a 90-degree bow.

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Crawford. Congratulations on purchasing the Mountain Top Villa successfully."

They said in unison, just like they had discussed it, and reached an agreement beforehand.

A loud bang was heard.

As soon as they said that, it appeared like a great blow was thrown into the crowd, and they were shocked immensely.

"Mr. Crawford! So it turns out that he's Mr. Crawford!"

"Oh my God! Is he the Mr. Crawford from Mayberry? Is he the absolute national millionaire, Mr. Crawford?"

They gaped in surprise and excitement.

"What? Mr. Crawford? So Gerald is that Mr. Crawford!"

Rita staggered and retreated weakly.

During their family reunion before, somebody made a guess that Gerald was the absolute national millionaire, Mr. Crawford.

However, Rita had denied it there and then.

It was because Gerald did not seem like it at all.

But the scene before her soon shocked her deeply, so much so that she was about to faint.

'Mr. Crawford! Gerald is that Mr. Crawford!'

No wonder one hundred million dollars meant nothing to him.

He did not even seem surprised when he touched the luxurious car which cost around two thousand dollars.

It was because he was a prestigious and wealthy young youth—Mr. Crawford.

He was the heir of the most wealthy and influential family.

Rita's facial expression became complicated. She was filled with deep regret.

At the same time, Wyatt's facial expression worsened. He was regretful too.

A while back, Mr. Crawford wanted to shake hands with him. He even smiled at him.

That was such a good chance for him to get close to the wealthy people and gain some benefits from it.

But what did he do? He did not even glance at Mr. Crawford.

Besides, what else did he say? He even condemned Mr. Crawford, claiming that he was a mere nobody.

He even started to give him a hard lesson, but Mr. Crawford only smiled without saying anything.

At the same time, Dawn, Nyla, Samuel, and Melanie gaped in shock.

In short, they were filled with deep regret.

Gerald stood on the platform. He looked at them who appeared quite shocked before him. He did the same thing, he smiled casually.

He did not have to be infuriated by them.

It was better that way. It was so much better than beating them up vigorously.

Gerald looked at Rita beside him. “Rita, I’ve purchased the villa now. Shouldn’t you give me the key and then bring me there to take a look at the Mountain Top Villa?”

“I... Yes, Mr. Crawford!”

Rita said that with much difficulty.

She did not even know how she should address Gerald.

She then turned around and brought them along. Soon, they reached the foot of the mountain where Mountain Top Villa was.

“Rita, we would like to go too. Could you please plead with Mr. Crawford and ask him to bring us along?”

Two beautiful women—Dawn and Nyla rushed toward them now.

When they reached Rita, they purposely spoke louder, just to let Gerald hear them and realize that they indeed regretted what they had done.

They did not even care about the deep humiliation which engulfed them when they did so. They couldn't care less about it.

The most important thing was they needed to please Mr. Crawford so that he would forgive them. They believed that they would be able to gain something from there. Even though Mr. Crawford might not admire them, they would be able to stay by his side and be his servants given how beautiful they were.

“I... I can’t do that!” Rita was still in shock. How could she help to plead with him?

“Mr. Crawford, could you please let us go up there and take a look? We were wrong just now. We’re deeply sorry! May we know how we can seek your forgiveness?”

Both Dawn and Nyla became teary.

In fact, Gerald felt that he was slightly sorry toward them when he saw them like that.

They changed their attitude too drastically in so short a time.

Gerald directly retorted given what they said just now. “Fine, if you want me to forgive you, act like a dog and bark in front of me!”

He said those words in anger, asking them to get lost immediately.

A few barks were heard.

Unexpectedly, they started barking like a dog in front of everybody.

At the same time, they twisted around and said, “Mr. Crawford, do I look like a dog now? What kind of female little puppy do you want to see? Why don’t you ask me to act for you?”

They stuck out their tongues at Gerald.

Chapter 182

“D*mn it!”

Gerald felt like he was about to have a headache.

Those two women were indeed the most shameless women Gerald had ever met in his whole lifetime, even more so than Xavia.

He asked them to bark like a dog, and they did so without any hesitation.

Actually, both Dawn and Nyla had risked everything they had. They would certainly cling onto Mr. Crawford vigorously no matter what he asked them to do.

It was indeed such an effective tactic.

Gerald was speechless now. He waved his hand. “Just come along if you want!”

“Mr. Crawford!”

At that moment, Wyatt shouted. He raised both of his hands and bent his body slightly. He then squeezed out of the crowd and ran toward Gerald.

“Mr. Crawford. I didn’t know who you are just now. I was wrong. Please forgive my bad manners. I’m Wyatt Light. We were introduced to each other just now.”

Wyatt held both of his hands in midair, wanting to have a closer contact with him, shaking his hands.

Mr. Crawford was indeed not someone who Wyatt could afford to offend. He would definitely be able to ruin Wyatt any minute.

“But I don’t know you!”

Gerald said softly, then he put his hands in his pockets.

“This... Mr. Crawford... My daughter and I offended you just now. Please forgive us. We’re deeply sorry.”

Wyatt appeared quite upset. He waved his hand immediately, and Melanie stepped forward pitifully.

‘It turns out that this pathetic man is Mr. Crawford. It’s so unexpected!’

“Mr. Crawford, I was wrong just now.”

“Oh? Don’t you have mysophobia? I sat behind you just now. You were so anxious that you changed your seat. Now, it seems like you don’t have that now. Why are you standing so close to me? Aren’t you scared?”

Mr. Crawford smiled, and that was all he did at the moment.

“1...”

Melanie blushed deeply. ‘Am I not attractive enough for him?’

Gerald smiled bitterly and shook his head. He did not bother about them anymore. He then turned around and went up the mountain with Zack and the others.

That was the first time Gerald condemned the others. In fact, he was quite infuriated just now. After venting his anger out like that, he felt much better.

Besides, his extremely pompous and arrogant second cousin——Rita followed closely behind him, holding the key in her hand. It made Gerald feel that it was indeed wonderful being a rich person.

In fact, Rita was in a dilemma too. It was because she started to hold different feelings and emotions toward Gerald at that moment.

She felt that Gerald appeared quite handsome, outrageously so.

Rita was humiliated deeply, but she knew that it was a good thing. It was because it seemed like there was a new chance for her after all, being married into a rich family.

From what she could see, Gerald did not appear to hate her.

Besides, she would now be the butler for the Mountain Top Villa from now on. She would surely have much contact with Gerald.

'Sister, does it mean that I'll do something bad to you?'

That afternoon was indeed quite interesting.

Gerald strolled around the villa for around one to two hours. He then brought them and went down the mountain at around four o'clock in the afternoon.

When he reached the foot of the mountain, there were a few messages in his class group chat all of a sudden.

It was the class representative, Cassandra who posted a few photos and words in the group.

"Please help to share it on your social media!"

"Help our classmate. Her younger sister is seriously ill, and she isn't able to earn money too. Please donate some money and help them to resolve this issue. Your kindness is greatly appreciated!"

At first glance, one realized that Cassandra was the one who was in charge of the shooting of the photographs and the writing of the content.

It was Layla Hack.

Cassandra asked her to hold up a sign with the words "Please help me!" scrawled on it and stood on the platform in the class. She seemed to be asking for everybody's help.

At that moment, Layla seemed extremely paled, and she closed her eyes tightly. She was grasping the sign tightly in her hands. Clearly, her fingernails were stabbed deeply into the paper sign.

"Friends, this is the photograph and details I designed for Layla for the fundraising campaign. Is there anything you think that I should improve on? If no, I'll report it to the department. If you think that there's not a problem with it, please reply with the number 'one' here."

Both Blondie and Felicity wrote their reply. "1!"

"....."

It was indeed that woman!

How could she crush one's dignity like that?

Gerald did not know when Layla had returned to the college. He was also unaware when the fundraising campaign started.

But Gerald knew instantly that it was Cassandra's idea, using such a tactic for fundraising and publicity purposes.

It was because Gerald was forced to do exactly the same thing by Cassandra before. She claimed that it was a way to show their compassion and improve the class's honor and reputation.

"D*mn it!"

Gerald knew exactly how Layla felt at that moment since he experienced it before.

He could not even bear that kind of humiliation. How about Layla who had much more self-esteem than he?

“Yoel, get a car. I need to return to college this instant!”

Gerald said immediately.

Chapter 183

Soon, Gerald reached the college.

He went straight to his own department classroom.

When he reached the west entrance, he saw that it was crowded.

There were a lot of students from different departments, and they almost blocked the road.

Gerald saw Harper and the others who stood in the crowd. So he squeezed his way into the crowd.

Then only he saw what was happening.

A girl was standing at the west entrance, holding up a sign pitifully.

She lowered her head greatly.

But Gerald recognized her at first sight. It was none other than Layla.

Beside her, there were Cassandra, Victor, and the president of the student union—Whitney.

At that moment, Layla acted like a background image, giving the others the chance to snap their photographs with her.

“Gerald, here you are. It’s so frustrating!”

Harper patted Gerald’s shoulders slightly.

He then said angrily, “Layla is indeed in some crisis now. But the class representative is over the line. It’s fine if they want to hold a fundraising campaign. But why do they have to force Layla to hold up a sign like this and stand here in front of everybody?”

Benjamin said, “If they don’t create such a commotion, how would our department gain our popularity? Just take a look at it now. The class representatives, Victor and Whitney, have worked busily for the entire afternoon for Layla’s fundraising event. They then asked Layla to stand there like that just so they could show off about it.”

“Besides, this event has attracted the attention of the college. They claim that they have to put significance on it, and they must help that particular student to resolve her crisis!”

Actually, there were quite a lot of students who knew the inside story of that event. They were quite angry about it.

The others who knew not what happened would have another kind of mindset. “Just look at her! How pitiful she is! Her family has run out of money. So she’s more than willing to stand in front of everybody, trying her best to raise funds for her younger sister so that her illness could be cured.”

“She’s so pitiful!”

So a lot of them were willing to donate some money for her.

But for those who knew the inside story were perfectly aware of the fact that it was all planned and arranged by Cassandra. Something happened in the morning. Layla returned to the college and asked for help from Cassandra.

In the end, Cassandra thought of such a plan for her. If Layla refused to do so, she would not help her with that other request.

“Mr. Zach, here you are!”

Cassandra shook hands with a middle-aged baldheaded director. After that, that middle-aged director took out his donation—two hundred dollars and put it into the donation box.

“Mr. Zach, let’s take a group photo!”

“Sure!”

The sound of the shutters was heard.

They took a group photo.

“Hey! Tyler! Max! Here you are!”

At that moment, Victor’s friends came too. He greeted them smugly. Those friends came from another department, and they were friends in the student union.

“Yes!”

Then, they donated a few hundred bucks too.

Soon after that, they snapped some group photos there.

Gerald watched the whole scene there. He realized that the entire donation process had almost the same procedures.

'How could it be called a donation? It's just some kind of show, showing off one's honor!'

Gerald was so angry that his face turned pale.

He pitied Layla who now appeared hopeless and desperate. At the same time, she felt slightly guilty too.

He was the first one who knew that something was wrong with Layla's family. She trusted him and told him about it.

Moreover, he advised her and gave her hope.

But for the next few days, he did not manage to help her to resolve that crisis in time.

That was why she was put in such a difficult position.

Gerald was not such a kind and generous person. But whenever he saw a scene like that, he could not help but think about himself. It was because he had experienced the same kind of thing before.

'No! I can't let this go on anymore! Layla might even lose the desire to live then!'

Thinking about that, Gerald rushed into the crowd and pushed Victor away, who was still taking a group photo. He snatched Layla's sign away and threw it down.

"Gerald, you-!"

Layla sounded hoarse. Clearly, she had cried multiple times now.

"Layla, you don't have to be the background for them. If they do want to help you sincerely, they would never do such a thing to you. I'll help you with the money. Just go back to the classroom first!"

Gerald said angrily.

“There are a lot of kind people in this world. If someone is in great trouble, the others would surely lend a hand if they noticed it.

But how could Cassandra and Victor do such a thing? You manipulated this incident and made yourselves look quite good about it. You really shouldn't do a thing like this!”

“Gerald! Have you gone mad?”

Whitney stared angrily at Gerald. ‘When did he become so bold?’

Chapter 184

Gerald, are you even aware of what you are talking about right now? I must warn you now. Get lost this instant. Otherwise, you'll be expelled!”

Cassandra valued her dignity and fame so much.

She was outraged when she heard Gerald condemning them like that.

Victor was even more so.

“You're just a poor pathetic person. Don't feel so smug about yourself just because you won a lottery. How dare you shove me away!”

Then, Victor grabbed Gerald's hair and dragged him along. He then slapped Gerald's face directly.

Victor was certainly a bad-tempered man. He came from a rich family. When was he being treated like that?

Besides, Gerald was not as strong as he was.

Gerald felt quite painful, being slapped by him.

“Please don’t beat him up anymore. Victor, I’m begging you. Don’t beat him up! I don’t want this donation anymore. Just don’t beat him up!”

Layla was deeply frightened. She then rushed toward Victor and grabbed him since that incident happened because of her.

“Get lost! Two pathetic poor people! How dare you touch me!”

Victor shouted loudly.

He even wanted to throw himself at Gerald, beating him up.

A loud bang was heard.

Suddenly, Victor felt that his vision was blurred and blocked by something black. A red thing materialized in front of her, being enlarged slowly.

It was Gerald. He took up a brick from beside him and smashed it hard on Victor’s head.

Gerald used quite a great force.

The brick was broken.

A loud cry was heard.

Victor held his head, fell on the ground, and howled in agony.

“He beat him up!”

The others were in deep fright.

Both Whitney and Cassandra were scared out of their wits.

How harsh and savage Gerald was!

“Oh gosh! That poor man beat Victor up!”

“He doesn’t want to live anymore. Didn’t he know what kind of an influential person Victor’s father is?”

“It’s all over now! He won’t be able to stay in this college anymore!”

“How could he stay still? Even if the college expels him, how could he be able to stay alive and leave the train station of Mayberry!”

The others were deeply shocked. It was because there were just some kinds of people in this world where one could not afford to offend or annoy. Otherwise, their whole lives would be ruined.

“Victor, are you alright?”

“D*mn it! How bold he is to beat you up! He’s such a b*stard! Go and call your father up quickly! Slaughter his entire family!”

“That’s true, Victor. We cannot let this b*stard get away with it!”

“Victor, you’ve lost so much blood!”

Soon, he was surrounded by a group of women. They supported him and helped him up. They appeared to be filled with much pain.

Besides, they stared at Gerald angrily.

Indeed, they adored Victor deeply. He was both handsome and rich. But Gerald was nobody but a poor pitiful person. He would certainly be punished for beating Victor up.

“D*mn it! I definitely will not let him get away with it! Just send me to the hospital first. I’ll call my dad right away!”

Victor was seriously injured, and he might suffer from a concussion. At that moment, he was sent to the hospital by an ambulance with the others’ help after he said that fiercely to Gerald.

“Gerald, just you wait!”

But what about Gerald?

He sneered. ‘Wait? I won’t!’

Actually, Gerald had always wanted to beat Victor up.

In the past, Gerald was ordered by Victor to go and do some work for the student union. When he was slow with his work, Victor would kick him several times. He even beat Gerald up several times too.

Besides, when he met Mila in the lecture hall at first, he was almost beaten up by Victor for dirtying Mila’s shoes. But Victor was stopped by Mila.

Usually, he did not mention those things, but he remembered them distinctly.

He heard Victor condemning them as two pathetic poor people just now. Soon, he was filled with immense anger. ‘Victor, you busied yourself for Layla just now! But now you condemned her like that! Do you even respect her?’

So, Gerald picked up a brick and smashed Victor's head. He managed to vent his anger out on Victor. He felt quite good about it.

Someone sneered. "Gerald, how bold you are! But I just want to see how you continue to stay here, studying for the course! Whitney, come along with me. We're going to meet the department director. Before Victor's father comes, we need to get rid of Gerald and resolve this issue. Otherwise, something disastrous might happen given how his father is."

"Fine, Cassandra!"

Whitney became speechless. She then looked at Gerald and shook her head.

It seemed to have an underlying meaning.

'Just wait for your severe punishment...'

Chapter 185

Gerald did not bother about their sneers and sarcastic remarks.

He only took out his phone and sent Zack a message, telling him what happened with Victor and his family affairs.

Then, he dragged Layla back to the classroom.

Harper knew that Gerald was now facing great trouble.

The Wrights were indeed a wealthy family.

Victor's father was involved in international business, and they were indeed rich.

Besides, his father was a local in Mayberry, so he could be considered a powerful and influential person there.

But Harper and the others still stayed with Gerald, disregarding those things.

“Gerald, are you hiding in the classroom? The department director wants to meet you!”

At that moment, Whitney opened the door of the classroom where Gerald was. She then crossed her arms in front of her and said lightly.

“By the way, you’re Harper, aren’t you? Go and help to pack up his things. If not, he has to do it himself after he returns to the classroom later.”

She did that just because of the sake that Gerald had bought branded clothes for her before.

So Whitney reminded him.

Then, she left directly.

Gerald then followed behind Whitney and reached the door of the department director’s office.

Cassandra and a few women who were close to Victor were also waiting at the door.

They sneered. “How dare you do such a thing! Go into the office now! The department director wants to meet you alone!”

Cassandra smiled coldly.

“Don’t think that you’ll get away with punishment as light as being expelled from the college. Let me tell you. Your whole life is ruined now that you have beaten Victor up!”

The other women said angrily.

Gerald smiled casually. He opened the door and entered the office directly.

Mr. Reeds was the department director.

He was called Jacob Reeds.

He was a middle-aged man who wore glasses.

At that moment, he was drinking tea and reading the newspapers.

The moment Gerald entered the office, he put the teacup down harshly on the table.

“Gerald, it surprised me to see you beating people up. Your results are exceptional, and you have such good manners. Besides, you’re an honest man too. It never occurs to me that you would be so impulsive. You’re indeed a fool!”

Jacob scolded him sternly.

“Mr. Reeds, he started it!”

Gerald said calmly.

Jacob sneered. “I don’t care who started it. The fact is you beat Victor up. You’re wrong for doing such a thing! Let me tell you, you’ve created such trouble this time around. Besides, how could your family background be compared to Victor’s? How about this? I have an application form here, applying to leave the college. Just sign it and leave this instant!”

Jacob stared at Gerald in contempt.

So what Jacob said just now in his favor was nothing but just mere civilities.

But Gerald never thought that it would be as serious as that until he was expelled from college.

Now he realized that Jacob had made up his mind to expel him from the college.

It was because Victor came from a wealthy family, and Gerald was poor.

If Victor beat him up that day, all Victor needed to do was just to apologize to him and pay for the medical fees.

But if it was the other way around, he would then be expelled from college.

He could not help it.

Since he was forced into such a state, he had no choice but to sign the form.

Gerald put his phone on the table, took the pen, and got ready to fill in the form, including the reason to leave the college.

Jacob smiled disdainfully.

Surprisingly, Gerald's phone rang all of a sudden.

The caller ID showed that it was a call from Mr. Raine.

It was a call from the minister of the Ministry of Education—Mr. Raine.

During the previous week, his sister—Jessica asked Gerald to contact Mr. Raine a few times because of the affair of investing in Scothow Elementary School.

But Gerald did not get to answer the phone. He was filling up the form quickly.

However, that call attracted Jacob's attention beside him.

"Is this... Mr. Raine? Why do you have his phone number?"

Certainly, Jacob was not in a position to be acquainted with Mr. Raine. But he remembered Mr. Raine's contact number distinctly.

'Why did Mr. Raine call Gerald up? Why did he contact Gerald?'

"You... Why are you still in a daze? Faster pick up the phone!"

Jacob's facial expression worsened. He stood up directly and asked Gerald to answer the call.

'Oh gosh! Even the chancellor dares not neglect an important person like Mr. Raine!'

Chapter 186

"Why are you in such a rush? I haven't even finished filling in the form yet. I'll answer it when I'm done!"

There were a lot of people who would call him up. Normally, Gerald would answer the call right away.

But he did not want to do so, seeing how anxious Jacob became.

By the way, Gerald had eaten twice with Mr. Raine before. They knew about each other well.

They did not have to be so civil toward each other.

"Why are you still filling in the form? Go and pick it up! Why is Mr. Raine calling you up? Faster pick it up!"

The call went dead.

Nobody answered the call for a long time, so it was hung up directly.

Jacob sneered. "Gerald, you're indeed a dumb person! You deserve it for being..."

The phone rang again.

"Come! Faster pick up the phone!"

This time around, Jacob quickly snatched the pen in Gerald's hand away directly.

He then helped Gerald to answer the phone and put it near his ear.

However, Gerald did not even stretch his hand out to take the phone from Jacob. He sat there just like that. On the other hand, Jacob leaned toward Gerald and held the phone in his hand, holding it near Gerald's ear. That scene appeared rather hilarious.

But Jacob could not care less about other stuff for the sake of his future.

He did not care what business Mr. Raine had on his mind, calling Gerald up. He decided to greet Mr. Raine at the end of the call.

"Mr. Raine, hello!"

Gerald smiled slightly.

"Gerald, I called you just now. Why didn't you pick it up? Are you busy?"

Bernard smiled and said.

Bernard had met Gerald a few times, and he had quite a good impression of Gerald.

The moment Gerald heard about the project of doing charity by establishing Scothow Elementary School, he promised to take the whole project over without any hesitation. He even provided the funds immediately.

Besides, a rich youth like him was such a friendly and humble person. Bernard soon got quite close to him.

“Hmm, I was busy filling in the drop out application from just now. The department director has prohibited me from studying here from now on! By the way, Mr. Raine, what’s the matter?”

Gerald smiled. He thought that it was a call from Zack, but he never thought that it was Mr. Raine after all.

“You...”

Jacob wanted so badly to cover Gerald’s mouth.

From the way Gerald addressed Mr. Raine, Jacob started to feel quite nervous.

‘Oh my God! They have quite a close relationship.’

Hearing what Gerald said, Jacob became much nervous.

“It’s like this. Our project regarding the Scowthow Elementary School has been delayed before because of insufficient funding. Now it’s almost fully built. We’ll be able to use it after two more months. I called you up just to see if you’re free tomorrow. Please come over because we’ll have a small function here!”

“Fine, no problem!” Gerald nodded.

“No, it seems that something is wrong. Gerald, what did you say just now? A drop out application form?”

Only now did Bernard recover his senses and realize what Gerald had said just a while ago.

“Hmm? That’s right! My department director expelled me from college. I’m now filling in the form before him.”

At first, Gerald planned to fill in the form and tackled Victor after that. Only then he would go and meet Jacob again to see if he could take some senses into him. He just wanted to see if things were still the same.

But now he wondered if he could ask Mr. Raine to say something in his favor.

“Gerald, give him the phone!”

Gerald smiled and nodded. “Here you are! He wants to talk to you!”

“Sure!”

Jacob soon straightened his body up and smoothed his collar slightly. “Mr. Raine, hello. You... Yes! It’s nothing but an absolute misunderstanding! Sure! What? Is he that Mr. Crawford? Oh my God! Of course! I’ll definitely keep it a secret! Sure! No problem! Don’t worry about it!”

Jacob swallowed slightly.

What Bernard said at last shocked Jacob tremendously.

Certainly, everyone knew or had heard about Mr. Crawford of Mayberry.

Besides, Gerald was that Mr. Crawford.

“Are you done?” Gerald smiled and said.

“Mr. Crawford... Yes!”

Jacob’s facial expression became so interesting all of a sudden. He was filled with contempt at first. Now, he was trying his best to fawn on Gerald.

“Oh, then I’ll continue with signing my name here. I’ve done filling in the form now, except signing my name.”

Gerald took up the pen again.

“No!”

Jacob shouted loudly. He then grabbed Gerald’s hand tightly.

Chapter 187

“Mr. Crawford, it’s a misunderstanding! It’s nothing but a misunderstanding!”

Jacob was deeply anxious.

“What is the misunderstanding? I couldn’t even survive now in Mayberry. Faster let me leave college!”

Gerald wanted to sign the form.

“Mr. Crawford, I was wrong. I was indeed wrong. Actually, I could just give you a light punishment for it. But I listened to the others and wanted to expel you from the college.”

If the chancellor knew that he wanted to expel that Mr. Crawford of Mayberry from the college, he would certainly be ruined.

Even if the chancellor knew nothing about that, he would certainly be ruined and punished severely given that he wanted to expel Mr. Crawford.

“Fine. Then what to do next regarding this incident? Cassandra asked a student to do such a thing in public. It certainly hurt that student’s self-esteem greatly!”

Gerald did not even know when he started to have some slight changes.

When he was dealing with things now, he was not the shy and cowardly man he was before.

Now, he would say what he wanted to say directly.

“Don’t worry, Mr. Crawford. I’ll deal with it justly.”

“Besides, donate seventy thousand dollars to Layla under the name of ‘Ordinary Man’. I’ll give you the money later. Thank you!”

“You’re being too courteous!”

Jacob smiled happily.

Gerald then nodded slightly.

He then got up and left.

Outside of the office.

Somebody sighed. "Gerald will certainly be expelled from school. He's been having a pathetic life here for three years since. Now, he's unable to graduate too."

Cassandra crossed her arms in front of her in resignation and smiled bitterly.

"It's good that he's been expelled. It would be much better if he couldn't leave Mayberry intact. How bold of him to beat Victor up!"

They were still angry at Gerald.

At that moment, the door was opened.

All of them wanted to rush toward Gerald and sneered at him vigorously again, including Cassandra.

"Gerald, please be careful. There's a small staircase here after the refurbishment."

That scene before them shocked them greatly. They widened their eyes.

They soon saw Jacob helping Gerald down the staircase, supporting him gently.

That staircase was just one or two centimeters high. It was not even a staircase. Why did Jacob appear like he was afraid that it might hurt Gerald?

'Oh, God! What is happening?'

Cassandra gaped.

"Mr. Reeds, Gerald, he..."

“What about him? I know what happened now. I’ve been meaning to ask you, Cassandra. If Gerald didn’t tell me about it, I wouldn’t even know that you asked a female student to stand in public, holding up a sign. You even took group photographs there, didn’t you?”

“Ah? I clearly told you about it just now...”

“I don’t know about it. By the way, the thing you did was outrageous, humiliating a student like that. At first, our department wanted to award you since you’re the best teacher. But let’s forget about it now!”

“What? Mr. Reeds, I’ve worked so hard for that award for these past three years, earning all the honors for the department.”

Cassandra was completely stunned.

“It’s still a problem we need to discuss with the college whether we want to keep you as a teacher here with us given the kind of teacher you are. How dare you talk about that award still?” Jacob sneered.

After that, he turned and looked at Whitney who appeared shocked as well.

“About you, you’ve been the president of the student union for three years now, but you didn’t manage to do anything. If anything bad happened, you would always look for help from the department. What else could you do other than this? Just retain the post as the president of the student union first. If there’s a better candidate, we’ll ask you to resign!”

“Ah?”

“What’s wrong?”

Jacob shouted at Whitney before he returned to his office with his hands behind his back.

Whitney thought, ‘D*mn it! I didn't even say a single word!

‘Why?!’

'Why is that so?'

As Whitney and Cassandra were thinking about that, they turned to look at Gerald coldly.

Gerald only smiled bitterly. Then, he turned and left. Soon, he would hear some news regarding Victor.

They always condemned him and looked down on him. Now it was time for him to take his revenge on them.

Gerald returned to the classroom, and he realized that Harper and the others had left.

He also returned to his dorm and lied down in bed. He told Harper and the others that it was fine now. He looked at the time and realized that it was six o'clock in the evening. He decided to play with his phone for a while before he turned in.

Chapter 188

At that moment, Cassandra sent a message to his other social media account.

"I'm outraged! Ordinary Man! I want to go and kill myself! What should I do?"

Cassandra said so.

Actually, Gerald became angry when he saw Cassandra's name.

"If you don't want to live on, just go and die! What more can you do?"

Gerald made a swift reply.

"Oh! You're so annoying! I just want to tell you some of the things which upset me."

Gerald was tongue-tied.

He did use quite a vicious tone.

But how could Cassandra use such a sweet tone on him, behaving like a spoilt child.

Gerald did not know how to reply to his message.

“Humph! I always care about you, but you never care about me. I’m so sad!

“But I still want to tell you about it. You know what, Ordinary Man. I could only pour out my feelings and speak freely with you.

“Something happened today. Do you know about the fundraising campaign for my department? Just because of one pathetic poor b*stard from my class, the campaign was ruined. Layla now has no money to pay for her younger sister’s medical fee. What’s more important is that I was robbed of the chance to gain the award of the best teacher just because of him!”

“I’ve donated money for Layla. I donated seventy thousand dollars to her! And regarding that teacher award, it serves you right!”

Gerald scolded her directly, disregarding her feelings.

“How annoying! Why did I feel that you like to tease me? Humph!

“Oh gosh!”

Gerald became utterly speechless now.

He wondered if others felt quite happy even though they were scolded by him just because he had become rich now.

It might be so.

At that time, Felicity sent a message to Gerald too. "Are you there? Ordinary Man?"

Gerald had had enough of those women.

"Get lost! I'm unavailable!" Gerald scolded.

"Oh! Ordinary Man has turned quite wild now. You've scolded me!"

Gerald was again tongue-tied.

It seemed to be true indeed. After he became rich, the others felt quite happy with it even though he scolded them.

Then he ignored their messages directly.

Gerald logged into his own main account and chatted a short while with Mila.

Then, he turned in.

The next morning, Gerald woke up early in the morning because of the function which Mr. Raine mentioned to him before. It was because no one would notice it if he woke up early and went to get his car.

After all, he needed to stay low-key.

Gerald reached the park.

“Humph! Isn’t that the poor man? Don’t you know how frustrating it was yesterday? He was not even expelled!”

“That’s true! He beat Victor up, and he could still stay alive up until now. It’s such a miracle!”

“Something’s wrong. Look at him! It’s only six o’clock in the morning. Where is he going early in the morning? Does he want to run away?”

“Yes! He clearly wants to run away! Sisters, that b*stard beat our Victor up. We must not allow him to get away with it! Go and stop him!”

The minute Gerald entered the park, he soon found himself face-to-face with four women.

They were none other than the four women who condemned him viciously for Victor the previous day.

It seemed like they came to the park for a morning run.

Unfortunately, they bumped into Gerald.

“Humph! B*stard! Where do you plan to run away to?”

The woman who seemed to be their leader said coldly.

Gerald took out his Lamborghini car key, looked up, and signaled to the Lamborghini car behind them.

“I’m not running anywhere. I just want to drive my car around!”

Gerald said coldly.

After that, he pressed his car key.

A chirping sound was heard.

The lights of the car flashed and the door opened automatically...

Chapter 189

The door of the car was opened.

The four women were stunned.

'What?

'Does this luxurious car belong to Gerald?

'Isn't he a poor man from our department? How could he afford to drive such a beautiful and luxurious car?'

They turned to look at Gerald, and their facial expressions changed drastically.

That car alone was much more expensive than Victor's Audi car. They sneered. 'So what about Victor? It's so much better than Victor's!

'How cool this Lamborghini car is!'

The leader from among the girls became pale. She then rushed toward Gerald and said nervously, "Gerald, is this car really yours? Is this yours?"

"If not, is it yours?"

Gerald seemed to be used to that kind of woman and their tones. He soon said coldly.

“Ah! This car is so cool! Is it around one to two million dollars?”

That woman soon got near the car. She completely lost herself by then. ‘Look at this luxurious car! If I’m able to even sit in this car for even once, I’ll be so happy that I might die!’

The other three women rushed toward the car too. They looked at Gerald in admiration.

“Around a million and eight hundred thousand dollars!”

Gerald started the engine of the car, and a charming growling sound was heard.

“Wow! It’s so cool! Gerald, where are you going? Can you let us have a ride too?”

The woman smiled seductively and asked Gerald.

“Get lost!”

Gerald scolded them coldly.

In fact, they were quite beautiful. But it was a totally different thing. They condemned Gerald for Victor’s sake just now, but now they wanted him to give them a ride. A good thing like that would never happen.

After that, he drove the car and left directly.

“Gerald! You...”

They were being ignored by Gerald. They became so angry that they stamped their feet.

Unexpectedly, Gerald was an extremely wealthy person.

They felt as if they had suffered a great loss. They had offended a truly wealthy man just because of a stupid Victor. It was just not worth it.

How about Gerald?

After he scolded them, he drove his car directly to the outer area of the conference hall.

Although it was still quite early, Bernard and the other leaders were there now.

There were two parts in the function. The first entailed a meeting on the establishment of the school which would be held an hour later. Gerald needed to attend the meeting with a few other leaders in an isolated meeting room.

Gerald funded the establishment of Scothow Elementary School, and he had helped to establish around twenty to thirty such schools. The schools were built specially for the children of the workers who worked outstation, providing an educational platform for them.

It was quite a big contribution.

Certainly, he was rather highly valued and esteemed.

The second part of the function entailed a meeting with the teaching faculty and staff in the main conference hall.

Only two months were left before they started recruiting the students. They needed to arrange for the selection of the teaching staff in advance and provide training for them.

Gerald had to join the first part of the function and was forced to listen to Bernard talking ceaselessly about various things for around two hours.

However, Gerald did not plan to join the second part of the function, holding a meeting with the teaching faculty and staff.

It was because he did not have to raise any opinion there.

Besides, he felt pressurized, being with a bunch of teachers. Their academic levels were certainly not on par with each other. They were quite knowledgeable and it would pressurize Gerald.

Since he was free, he decided to take a look at one of the schools near the venue of the function.

After all, it could be considered a particularly meaningful thing which he had done.

Gerald did not drive his car. He walked to the school instead.

Since that school was almost completely built when they resumed the project, it had now come to the furnishing stage after only two months. The entire school was now planted with trees and plants.

Undeniably, the surrounding of the school was quite good given the large funding he provided.

He snapped two photographs of the school, planning to send and share them with his sister later.

“Stop! Don’t you know that you’re prohibited to snap photographs in school? Didn’t you see the warning on the sign?”

At that moment, he heard a cold and stern female voice.

Gerald was frightened.

He turned around and saw the sign. It claimed that snapping photographs were prohibited there.

“I’m sorry. I didn’t notice that. I’ll delete it right away!”

Although he helped fund the establishment of that school, Gerald did not find anything special in what he had done.

So he complied and deleted the photographs.

“Eh? Are you... Gerald?”

Surprisingly, he found himself being recognized by that woman. He turned around and saw a woman in a black uniform. Did she know him?

“Lilian, do you know him?”

There are two other women and a man beside Lilian. They now asked Lilian curiously.

Chapter 190

“I know him! He’s my classmate from high school. What’s wrong, Gerald? We haven’t seen each other for around three years now. Have you forgotten about me?”

Lilian said in surprise. But other than surprise, she seemed to be filled with a kind of sarcasm at that moment, mocking Gerald.

It was the kind of feeling one had when she finally realized that the person whom she thought had long disappeared appeared in front of her again. After so many years, the b*stard whom she thought had long been dead appeared out of nowhere. She was filled with that kind of surprise.

In fact, looking at Lilian like that, Gerald was stunned too. He was tongue-tied...

Certainly, he knew who Lilian was. They were in the same class since sophomore year. When they were about to go into different courses in junior high, they were put in the same class again.

At that moment, Lilian seemed to be the art committee member. She was good at singing and dancing.

However, there was nothing special in their relationship back then.

A girl like Lilian would certainly like those boys whose families were rich and were esteemed in high school. Gerald did not have those qualities.

Further, their school was located in town, and Lilian was a resident there. So her taste and family background did not allow her to befriend a person like Gerald.

For three years in high school, the things they said to each other were less than what they said to each other when they met each coincidentally there at the school just now.

So they certainly did not keep in touch with each other after they graduated from high school.

Although Gerald noticed Lilian's disdainful gaze just now, he still cherished things of old.

"Yes, we haven't met each other for three years now. I almost couldn't recognize you. You're so much prettier now!"

Gerald smiled slightly.

"Hey! It's indeed been a long time. Even you can learn how to praise others. But why did I feel quite awkward about it, listening to your praises?"

Lilian crossed her arms around her chest and smiled coldly.

"Lilian, let's introduce him to us since he's your old classmate..."

That woman noticed that Gerald appeared pleasing to the eye, so she smiled and said directly.

"What the hell! Fiona, could you please stop fawning on every man you met all the time? Do you know what kind of a person Gerald was during my high school?"

'Oh my god!' Lilian was tongue-tied.

Her best friend always acted like that. She was obsessed with finding herself a boyfriend every time she met a slightly handsome man.

But she thought that Fiona really needed to keep her eyes open.

Lilian could not help but admit that Gerald was indeed quite handsome, but he was just a...

“What’s wrong?”

“Gerald was an infamous poor person back in high school. Do you know what he usually ate during lunch hour at that time? He ate only plain bread with a few pickled vegetables. Besides, his uniform was so shabby that the pants around his knees were all torn. He even put patches on them. But he did not even want to buy a new uniform!”

“What? How is it possible that there’s such a poor person?”

The beautiful woman—Fiona stuck out her tongue, claiming that she was indeed frightened and shocked.

“I don’t believe you! Lilian, are you exaggerating the facts?”

That man smiled bitterly. “If I was as poor as that, I think it’s better if I kill myself!”

“What? Was I exaggerating the facts? Gerald, tell them whether what I said is true.”

Lilian became anxious.

She just wanted to prove to the others that she was right. Regarding how he condemned Gerald and upset him, Lilian did not even think about it. For her, Gerald was just a gossip topic.

Gerald sneered. “Yes, it’s true!”

Gerald smiled faintly, realizing that Lilian’s temper and characteristics had not changed at all.

Although she annoyed him, he did not appear angry at all.

After all, what Lilian said just now was true. He did not care even if they looked down on him given that it was meaningless if he exposed his real identity and showed off his wealth before them.

“By the way, Lilian, why did you come to this school? From what I see, are you the teacher here? Did you find your job so soon?”

Gerald asked her. When he left the conference hall, he found that all of the teachers there were in that uniform.

“Yes, we completed our internship fast. Besides, I have a teacher qualification certificate. Certainly, I get it all done and settled. From now on, I’ll be leading a life here in this big city—Mayberry. How about you? I heard that you’re studying at Mayberry University. Have you found a job yet?”

After all, Lilian was quite mature now after all those years. Although she looked down on Gerald, she still inquired after him politely.

“Me? Not yet. I’m still wondering what I should do from now on!”

Lilian smiled.

“To be frank, Gerald, I thought that you’ll be much improved after you went to college. Surprisingly... If you couldn’t do it, just return to your hometown. See if you could find a job in the town. If not, you could always return to your village and buy some land. You can start with farming or something else. That’s how university students nowadays start their business!”

Lilian crossed her arms around her chest. Right from the start, she felt that Gerald was a good-for-nothing. After having a casual conversation with him, her opinion of him worsened.

He was about to go for an internship, but he still did not know what kind of thing he wanted to do in the future.

Looking at how Lilian advised him, he only smiled bitterly and nodded repeatedly.

Beside them, that man nodded too. He then said, "What you said is right. It's difficult for university students to find a job nowadays. Some small companies do not have a promising future. The large companies want only the talented ones. Just look at Mayberry university, only the most exceptional ones will be able to find good jobs. How about the others? They either rely on some connections or their families in order to have a promising future."

Another girl beside them added, "That's true. The people who suffer the most are the ones like Gerald. He doesn't even have the capabilities and eloquence. Besides, he's quite poor both economically and in the cultural aspect too."

They were immersed in a heated discussion, and Gerald stood there having nothing to do.

At last, Gerald managed to say something after they were done. "Are the four of you the newly recruited teachers here? It's not bad indeed. The salary given is quite good too since the investor has provided a huge amount of funds. The living arrangement which they prepared is quite good too!"

Gerald just wanted to chat with her as an old school mate.

"What the hell? Gerald, don't pretend that you know a lot here. You said those things just because you want to show off in front of us. I'm well aware of that. What do you have to be so smug about? I know about your situation clearly. Do you want me to spill everything?"

Lilian said rather helplessly.

Gerald only touched his nose slightly and smiled bitterly.

“By the way, let me tell you something since we bumped into each other here today...”

At that moment, Lilian looked up, as if she had thought about something.

Chapter 191

Gerald looked up. “What’s up?”

“We’ve got a gathering between old friends tonight. It happens every couple of months. I’ve never mentioned it before—but since we’ve bumped into each other, this is me letting you know!

“Also, Sharon will be there.” Lilian stifled a little laugh. “Come to think of it: Back in high school, you’d come first place in grades, and she’d come second. The two of you were close—in fact, you were after her, weren’t you?”

Gerald didn’t reply.

Sharon Leslie, an old friend from high school. It was true that they got along well back then.

It was also true that Gerald had harbored feelings for her, but that had been before... all of this.

Had he pursued her? He hadn’t dared.

Early on, during their first year of high school, they’d chat together often. Later, even on those few occasions when he’d tried to strike up a conversation, she hadn’t replied. And so, they’d drifted apart.

Three years had passed in a flash.

“Tee-hee! Come on... you know, last month, Sharon’s boyfriend was treating us to some eats, and then the topic of you came up! Sharon wanted to know what Gerald was up to—no one could answer her at the time, but now... you free tonight?”

As she spoke, Lilian stole a peek at Gerald, searching for a hint of despair.

But no such expression was to be found in his features.

“Tonight? Yeah, I can make it!”

“Great, great. You have to come, then—let everyone have a look at you!” Surreptitiously, Lilian snuck out her handphone and stole a snapshot of Gerald, which she sent to the chat group for the gathering:

“Guess who this bozo is?”

“Who? Looks familiar... I’ve definitely seen him somewhere before!”

“Same here, but... he just doesn’t look like anyone worth remembering! Ring a bell with any of you?”

Sharon Leslie: “Is that Gerald?”

“Oh, yeah!” Lilian gushed. “You two were buddies back in high school, huh? Only took you one look—it’s Gerald!”

It’s exciting to be the one who brings up something that gets everyone excited. That was the main reason why Lilian had suddenly decided to invite Gerald to the gathering.

They had a lot of former schoolmates in Mayberry—there was a handful in her class alone. Perhaps they wouldn’t recognize Gerald, but they were guaranteed to have heard his name before.

If he showed up at the gathering, she was certain he’d be the hot topic of the night.

Just look at the uproar in the chat group right now...

Sharon Leslie: "Were we buddies in high school? I don't recall anything like that! Hehehe..."

Lilian's fingers flew over the keypad. "Alas! Found yourself a hunk in Sunnydale now, so your ex doesn't matter anymore?"

Sharon Leslie: "Get out of here! What do you mean 'ex'... How about you ask him along to our gathering? We should catch up—we're all old friends, after all!"

"Alright!"

Lilian turned to Gerald. "Everyone's eager to see you again—especially Sharon. She even said it herself. Since you've got time tonight, just come for the gathering! If you're worried about whether you can afford it, I'll cover you for the time being!"

Gerald had just been about to turn her down. Truth be told, he hadn't made a lot of friends back during those years. He'd have nothing to talk about with everyone there.

But now that Lilian had said all that, he couldn't very well say no anymore.

"Alright, tonight then!" Gerald nodded his agreement.

Lilian gave him the venue, then went on her way.

Gerald shook his head in exasperation. "Lilian's teaching at my new school. It's a small world after all!"

He'd been planning to take a stroll through town, but talking to Lilian had ruined his mood for that.

Well, it was noon, and he was hungry, so Gerald headed out anyway.

At the school gates, there were three children in tattered clothes, perhaps four or five-year-olds. They were peering inside.

“Is this a school, brother? It doesn’t look like what Ms. Queta was talking about...”

Chapter 192

Her face smeared with dirt, the little girl was talking to the boy beside her.

“Maybe they haven’t started classes yet—that’s what’s missing!” The boy wiped away some snot. “I wanna go too!”

Another somewhat chubby boy piped up, “You need money to go to school. We don’t have any money. Ms. Queta is already working several jobs to feed us. We can’t ask her for any more!”

“I’m hungry!” the little girl whined.

“I’ll find you some bread in a bit!”

“Why are you urchins crowding the gates? Get lost!” A security guard came out, hollering in fury.

The three children leaped up in fright.

The guard was in his fifties, the sort you might find at a construction site.

The children were visibly terrified by him, and on the verge of fleeing—but they kept on gazing at the school, just a little longer...

Gerald spoke up: “They’re only looking. That’s fine, isn’t it? It’s not like you paid for this school.”

“Kid, I didn’t say anything about you going inside earlier, but don’t be putting on any airs with me! You don’t own this school any more than I do... now, get lost!”

The man was red and blustering. He had clearly had a few pints to go with his lunch—his breath reeked of alcohol.

“Here, buy yourself a real drink.” With a little smile, Gerald reached into his wallet and tossed him a hundred bucks.

This money obviously wasn’t being offered as a compliment. Gerald made a note to recommend the man to be fired later. A lousy old drunkard in charge of security, probably hustled in by a friend in the company.

“Yo! Alright, alright! Thanks a lot, man!” Then the guard left.

Gerald knelt down and smiled at the children. “You kids wanna go to school, too?”

The girl in the middle nodded vigorously. “I do!”

The other two were more cautious and watched him wordlessly.

Truth be told, seeing these three young children, yearning to go to school like this... it tore at his heart.

No one understood that feeling better than him.

That was why he couldn’t resist the urge to do something for them.

“Anyone hungry? How about I take you guys out for lunch?”

“Ms. Queta says we shouldn’t talk to strangers—and we absolutely mustn’t follow them anywhere!” The two boys stepped out in front of the girl.

Gerald laughed and nodded. “Alright... then I’ll buy some stuff and bring it to you here!”

With that, he ran off to the KFC opposite and procured a pile of burgers, fried chicken, and drinks.

“You don’t have to follow me anywhere. Just take it and eat it. Besides, I’ll help you go to school, too!” Gerald patted the girl on the head and handed the food to them.

“Thank you!” The children’s eyes came alight.

The moment they received the food, they began gobbling it down.

“Why are you just eating something that he gave you?”

It was the dulcet sound of a woman’s voice—pleasant, yet anxious.

“I can’t apologize enough, sir. How much was all that food? I’ll pay for it!” the woman babbled nervously.

However, when Gerald saw who she was, his eyes shone.

“It’s you!”

Chapter 193

Gerald recognized her straight away.

He had met her in Homeland Kitchen just a few days ago. Jane had been scolding her—back when she still worked for them.

She’d left an impression on him. Even just seeing her from the side, he had known that she was an extraordinary beauty. Seeing her again now, she’d immediately seemed familiar to him, and then he’d placed her.

“You know me?” she whispered, gathering up the three children protectively.

She was evidently frightened of him. What if he was involved in human trafficking?

“Yes, we bumped into each other in Homeland Kitchen. Have you forgotten me?” Gerald smiled at her.

The woman spent a moment in recollection, then brightened up. “Oh, it’s you, sir! Thank you for helping me out, that time!”

That time, she was being scolded so hard she didn’t dare look up from the floor. It was only when she was leaving that she had stolen a brief glance at Gerald.

Meeting him again now, what she recognized was his voice.

He had saved her that time.

Also, he was rich!

“Don’t mention it. At least you won’t have to keep your guard up around me. Have you been looking after these three children?” Gerald inquired curiously.

“Yup, yup!” Queta Smith nodded, bringing over the three kids.

As they walked along together, she told him the story: It turned out that these three children had been wandering urchins who had managed to escape after being kidnapped by slavers.

With such muddled circumstances, no orphanage had been willing to take them in, and so they’d been wandering the city on their own, begging for scraps... until Queta found them, and took them all under her care.

She mainly worked as a kindergarten teacher and also did some other work on the side, thereby earning enough to keep them all fed. She had even been saving up money to send them to school.

Good thing Queta often worked with kids. She'd taught these three well.

What a mess. And the three children were all siblings.

His heart wrenching terribly, Gerald asked, "What about your family?"

"I don't have one—I grew up in an orphanage." As she told him this, Queta hung her head and picked at her clothes.

What a phenomenally beautiful woman she was, though her radiance was being obscured by long hardship.

And she was being very reserved in Gerald's presence. He knew it was because she was afraid he would tire of her.

Queta wouldn't know that Gerald used to be the sort of person who never felt he was good enough, either.

The two of them were about the same age. Gerald used to think he'd gotten the short straw in life, but Queta here had it so much worse: A young woman with no parents, caring for three kids on her own.

How often did you come across a woman like this, these days?

Gerald was deeply moved with admiration for her.

"Where do you stay?" he asked.

"Over there!" All three children pointed towards an ordinary residential area, not far from the school.

“Would you mind if I swing by for a bit?” he asked with a chuckle.

After a moment’s consternation, Queta nodded.

The whole area was basically a collection of old squatter shacks.

When they reached her place, Queta brushed off a stool and offered it to him. Then she shooed the three kids away to go get a bath. The children had been trying to do their part, collecting some refuse to sell every day. That was why they were covered in grime.

“Queta Smith, my name is Gerald Crawford. Shall we be friends?”

“Friends?” She was taken aback. Queta knew that Gerald was a powerful man since he had been able to order around that manager person.

Chapter 194

Why would such a powerful man be interested in her friendship?

Gerald wouldn’t just come out and say why, either. Today was just a chance meeting.

He was a soft-hearted man and held particular sympathy for people who were suffering.

Of course he could just solve their problems straight away: Find them a nicer place to stay in, put all the kids in school... all it would take was a few words from him.

However, from the moment Gerald saw Queta again, his heart had been racing wildly out of control. Some subtle emotion was compelling him to get closer to her, to get to know her better.

He didn’t understand this feeling.

Yet, thinking back now, he'd known from the first time he laid eyes on her... Just one look from the side and her face had been burned into his memory.

A girl he'd met purely by chance. How could he be feeling this way about her?

He didn't have the slightest clue. All he knew was that, from the moment he met her, he'd felt like he'd known her forever.

The two of them began to talk, warming towards each other with each passing moment.

Without noticing, an entire afternoon had gone by.

"Queta, Yasmin, I'm going now. I'll visit again in a few days!" Gerald waved goodbye to the girls and took his leave.

After spending the day with them, his heart felt light, his soul at peace for the first time in an eternity.

Then his phone rang. It was Lilian.

When they'd last parted ways, Gerald had asked to exchange numbers with her. Reluctantly, she'd agreed.

"I say, Gerald... I invite you to be a part of this gathering, and you're going to be late for your first time?" Lilian's voice was sharp with reprimand. "I said to meet at five. Where are you?"

"Oh, something came up, so I was held back. On my way now, maybe ten minutes!"

Doot... doot... Without another word, she'd hung up on him.

Gerald smiled wryly.

He should have just stayed out of this 'old schoolmates' trouble. What a d*mned headache!

But he had already given his word, so he had to keep it now. He returned to the car park, started up his car, and made for the hotel where the reservation had been made.

He arrived, parked the car, and found the table.

"Took you long enough, Gerald! You've really kept everyone waiting for you, you know?" Lilian's face contorted hideously at the sight of him.

"My God, it's really Gerald! After all these years! No patches on your clothes... have you started dressing like normal people?"

"Hahaha! Oh, Gerald, I hear you're in Mayberry University? That's a swanky place! How have you been doing lately? The internship is coming up soon—found yourself a spot somewhere, yet?"

"Have a seat first. Gerald, tell us all about what you've been through, these past few years."

They were in a private dining room, with a massive table that could easily seat two dozen. That was the number of 'old friends' who were in attendance this evening, including a handful of former high school classmates of his. It was a crowded and cozy affair.

Gerald smiled at everyone, then spotted a girl at the head of the table: Sharon Leslie!

The prettiest girl in class, and his best friend in high school. They used to study together all the time.

As a matter of fact, each had been harboring some measure of affection for the other.

However, Sharon hadn't wanted to get involved with someone from his sort of background.

Likewise, Gerald hadn't dared to get involved with someone from her sort of background.

There had been too great a fault in their stars.

And so, they'd never been much more to each other than just friends.

"It's been a while, Sharon. Have you been well?" Gerald smiled at her. Sharon had changed tremendously. She'd learned how to use make-up, and her appeal was now far beyond what he remembered.

A first-class beauty without question.

"I'm doing great. Why don't you find a place to sit down!" Sharon replied with a smile and in a tone that was neither malicious nor dismissive.

After three years without contact, anything they had had between them had long vanished.

They were just strangers, now.

"Alright!" Gerald spotted an empty seat, and he moved to take it.

"Who said you could sit there?" Before he could actually do so, however, another girl—another ex-classmate—snapped harshly at him, giving him a fright.

Chapter 195

"Did anyone say you could sit here? This spot is reserved for my boyfriend! Goodness gracious... it's one thing to have been a loser back then, but after three years of university, you still haven't improved one bit! Go, scram, get lost!"

Gerald couldn't even remember her name anymore, and he couldn't be bothered to pick a fight with her at the moment.

That left the seat by the door, where all the food would be brought in.

Realizing that this had been everyone's intention all along, Gerald simply resigned himself to it.

Actually, there was an empty spot beside Sharon, too. However, she'd left her handbag on there, indicating that she was saving the seat for somebody. Certainly, she'd made no move to offer it to him.

Lilian grinned at Gerald, then turned and asked, "Sharon, when's Murphy gonna get here?"

"That guy... Hmph! Always wishy-washy about everything. Every time, he'll say he's almost there—but you're still gonna have to wait a while!"

Although she sounded upset, in truth her heart sang with pride.

"Yo, yo, yo! Is Sharon talking about Murphy, as in the Murphy who graduated and immediately became sales manager of an upmarket business along Mayberry Commercial Street? Are the two of you not getting along, then?"

"Right? Back when he was still a student, Sharon clung to him everywhere. Now that he's a Mayberry big shot, you're full of complaints? Actually, you just want us to be jealous of you, right?"

"Honestly speaking though, could you tell us how he landed that job? Gosh, sales manager at Mayberry Street... I wouldn't trade it for a dozen state appointments!"

No sooner had Sharon mentioned her boyfriend than the whole table was abuzz about him. The air was thick with the smell of envy.

"Hah, I wouldn't know about that!" Sharon laughed. "When he gets here, he can tell you himself!"

Right on cue, the doors opened, and two men walked in.

“Murphy, you’re here!” Everyone greeted the tall, thin man with warm smiles.

So this was Murphy—Sharon’s current boyfriend.

The other guy was that other girl’s boyfriend, and he casually took the seat that Gerald had almost stolen.

“Speak of the devil... Murphy, we were just talking about you! Anyway, check out who’s joining us today! Let me introduce you... That guy over there? Meet Gerald!” Giggling, Lilian pointed out Gerald, who was sipping at his drink.

“Oh? So this is that penniless tramp, Gerald? Pleased to meet you!” Wearing a look of awe, Murphy came over to shake hands.

Frowning, Gerald remained in his seat and ignored him.

It was only at this point that he was really starting to get annoyed by all this.

He had been too naïve, expecting this to be a simple reunion between old friends he hadn’t seen in years.

He craved the odd bit of socializing, too.

However, it was only after he’d arrived that he began to suspect that Lilian might have had other motives behind inviting him here. Gerald had been brought here to be the party clown, the evening’s amusement.

No one here really cared about him, not even Sharon—Gerald didn’t even know who she was anymore.

This whole thing had turned out to be a huge disappointment.

Gerald had no interest in this Murphy guy.

Murphy, on the other hand, was beaming at him. “Ahaha, what a character you are, Gerald! Sorry, I was only joking around. I heard from Sharon that the two of you used to be good friends.”

“Hmph! Gerald, Murphy was offering to shake hands with you, just now! Where are your manners?”

“That’s right! Murphy, you don’t have to apologize to this guy at all! Just ask Sharon—he’s a total deadbeat!”

Chapter 196

“Ahaha, don’t say that! He goes to Mayberry University, you know—after he graduates, he might very well find himself a job along Mayberry Commercial Street, too!”

Everyone wanted to get in on the merriment.

“Oho? Then we’d basically be colleagues! Let’s get along, Gerald!” Murphy chortled.

He wanted to keep this conversation going. He would often have to hear about everyone bringing up this old friend of Sharon’s.

It had made him curious about what she’d seen in a penniless guy like Gerald.

Sometimes it even made things awkward for him.

That was why, the moment this guy was introduced to him as Gerald, Murphy couldn’t resist having a bit of fun at his expense, just to see how he’d respond.

So far, it appeared that this Gerald had no social skills to speak of whatsoever. Once he started working life, it would be a carnival with him!

“Haha... Leave him alone, Murphy! For a guy like him to get a job in Mayberry Street, the boss would have to be deaf and blind!”

“Oh, yeah—Murphy, you never told us how you scored that Sales Manager job over there!”

The focus had been returned to Murphy, anyway.

“Oh, that’s a long story—but I suppose it could be because this is my field of specialty. But my boss thinks I’m still kinda green, so my salary’s only 45k per year for now. Ahh, I still have such a long way to go!”

“Whoa! That’s amazing, man!”

A fresh graduate commanding that level of pay was a rare thing. What’s more, he could still climb further up the coveted Mayberry corporate ladder.

Lilian was green with envy toward Sharon now. She was her equal in terms of looks—but Lilian was more carefree, while Sharon was more reserved. The latter approach apparently made a woman more desirable.

At the moment, Sharon was beaming with pride.

Unbidden, her gaze sought out Gerald, further down the table.

A quiet pang of sorrow arose in her heart, followed immediately by horror—imagine if, during those years, she’d succumbed to a moment’s sentimentality and had become an item with that guy... what would her fate have been?

“Ahah, I just got lucky. Lilian, you and the others have done pretty well for yourselves too—I hear you’re an elementary school teacher now? Is that for real?”

Lilian nodded. “Yup, yup!”

“That’s wonderful to hear. From now on, we can all continue to grow with the Mayberry family. I’m planning to get my own place in the district in a couple of years... and then, I shall marry Sharon!”

Chuckling merrily, Murphy added, “Oh, yes—Gerald, bro, what are your plans for after you graduate? Gonna apply for a government position? Have you got a job lined up for yourself? Interested in sales? Design? Perhaps admin work?”

“I’d recommend that last one for you. A government office would be a tough fit for you. Speaking as someone working in sales, honestly, you’d be terrible at this sort of thing, Gerald. As for design, it sounds great on paper, but the reality is a nightmare! It takes a sharp, logical mind... another talent you don’t seem to be blessed with. No, it’s gotta be something less cerebral, a basic desk job where all you need to know is how to work a simple calculator—that’s perfect for you!”

After Murphy said all this, everyone watched Gerald contemptuously.

The food was already on the table. Gerald ate, keeping his own counsel. The only thing he said in reply was, “We’ll see how it goes. Whatever works. No need for your concern.”

“Yo, yo, yo! There’s that attitude, again... Can’t handle the truth?”

“That’s it! It’s bad enough how hopeless you are, but you won’t even listen to good advice? Alas, your future looks bleak!” Lilian moaned.

As they went on heckling Gerald in this way, unbeknownst to any of them, trouble was brewing outside their private room.

A group of youths were having a disagreement with one of the staff:

“I said we’ll pay extra, understand? We’re a big group—it has to be this room!” snapped a crude sort of fellow. “Name your price, d*mn it, and then kick everyone out of there!”

Chapter 197

“Sir, there’s just no way! Their food has already been served!”

“You still don’t get it? Don’t you know who you’re talking to? Three minutes, that’s all I’ll give you—and if you can’t get it done for me, your manager will do it in your place. Try me!” the man blustered arrogantly.

“Alright... I’ll give it a shot.” The waitress hurried inside and explained the situation.

Lilian and the others would have none of it.

What was the meaning of this? They had gotten here first—they had even begun eating already! Now, you come in here and say, what, switch tables? Just like that?

Who do you think you are!

“No way. Tell them we’re not moving!” Lilian was glaring, her temper suddenly flaring.

“Oho? I’d like to see just who that is hollering in there, thinking she’s hot stuff!”

The doors to the private room opened, and the other group strode right in.

It was building up toward a brawl.

Murphy was their champion on this side. He had nothing to fear from your run-of-the-mill rich brats—especially not now that he was working for the Mayberry group. Everyone looked toward him in anticipation.

Murphy cleared his throat and stood. “My friends, we did reserve this room first. Changing places now is simply not an option—that’s just unreasonable. How about this, next time, I make it my treat? We can have a meal together at Homeland Kitchen along Mayberry Commercial Street!”

He was cool and collected, smiling amicably.

It was a statement bearing multiple payloads: They were standing their ground, and he had connections to Mayberry.

“Gods! Everyone and their mother claims to be from Mayberry these days! You think just because I don’t work there myself, that means I don’t have any big friends in Mayberry?”

Saying this, someone appeared at the doorway, strolling through with both hands in his pockets.

“Mr. Ziegler! So it was you, sir?” Seeing this man, Murphy’s stern countenance instantly gave way to effusive fawning. Even Sharon had to avert her eyes from the sight of this.

Yancy Ziegler was a big kahuna attending Sunnydale University and had been painting the town red regularly with the Bakers!

He also used to be a recurring fixture at cruise parties, where he was said to have made friends with someone of note!

This was big. Yancy was not your typical rich brat at all!

“Oh, you know who I am?” Yancy said pleasantly.

“How could I not? I’m friends with Ken, and he’s always going on about you!” Murphy was in total doormat mode now. Gone was the cool champion from a moment earlier.

“I see... one of Ken’s boys, huh?” Yancy smirked. “I came here to have dinner... is switching tables for my sake really too much to ask?”

“Meaning no offense, I swear, but... Mr. Ziegler, we’ve already started here, you see... Couldn’t you just see this as doing me a favor?”

“Pah! Like I owe you any favors.” Yancy was done playing nice. “Enough horse crap—will you move or not?”

Murphy swallowed hard. So did everybody else at the table.

Mr. Yancy Ziegler was not someone to be taken lightly.

Murphy’s usual routines were worthless here. One word to Aiden and he could kiss his precious job in Mayberry Street goodbye.

Though his cheeks were burning now, there was nothing for it but to grit his teeth and say, “Understood! We’ll move!”

“Gosh, but there are so many dishes on the table... How shall we do this?” Lilian suddenly chirped sweetly. Just a moment ago, she had been a raging tigress.

Though she was still discussing the same matter as before, this time, she had become a mewling kitten.

“Gerard can move everything over to our new table. Clear the room for Mr. Ziegler!” one of the other girls suggested.

“Right! That’s the way we’ll do it, then!” Everyone else nodded in agreement.

Yancy, meanwhile, froze in place.

Gerard?

He peered down at the young man, sitting with his back toward him, just quietly eating away without another care in the world.

Truth be told, when Yancy had first walked in here, he had glanced at that same guy and thought that he looked familiar.

Now that his name had been spoken, Yancy burst into action, hurrying over to Gerard for a better look.

He very nearly shrieked aloud. It was Gerard Crawford!

“Gerald! S-s-so you were here!” Yancy stammered, remembering what Aiden had said last time.

Behind him, those henchmen who had also met Gerard before were too stunned to move.

Chapter 198

Who would have thought that Mr. Crawford would be here, hanging with this sort of crowd?

“Oh? Mr. Ziegler, you know this hobo, Gerard?” Murphy asked in surprise.

For some reason, when Yancy Ziegler greeted Gerard Crawford by name, Murphy and many of the other guys present at the scene were overcome with jealousy. How was it that Yancy knew that guy but not them?

What was this?

“How the hell is it any of your business whom I happen to know? Get the hell out of my sight!” Hearing what Murphy had called Gerard, Yancy was roaring with rage.

The blood drained out of Murphy’s face.

Gerard set down his chopsticks before calmly replying, “Ah, it’s you, Yancy. I remember you from my last visit to Sunnydale. Oh, yes—did you find yourself a ticket after all?” He had deliberately modified past events slightly.

“Oh, yes! I did indeed! Thank you so much, Gerard! Really, thank you!”

Yancy bent over in a deep bow. Considering how he was always bowing and scraping in Aiden Baker's presence, what more Gerard Crawford?

"Thank you, Gerard!" All the men behind Yancy followed suit.

And that was hello.

"No problem. If I could ask something in return, Yancy... Let me keep this room?"

"Of course, of course!" Yancy didn't know what business Gerard had here, but if he said jump, Yancy would only need to know how high. After exchanging a few more quick pleasantries, he grabbed his people and withdrew without delay.

Peace returned to the private dining room.

Silence reigned as everyone stared at Gerard with mouths agape. This guy wielded that sort of clout?

How could this be possible?

"Gerard, how... How do you know Mr. Ziegler? What was he thanking you so much for?" Her stomach churning horribly, Lilian anxiously spoke first.

"Oh, he misplaced a bus ticket one time—but I found it for him!"

What?

Everyone stared with eyes as wide as the dinner plates on the table.

Who was he trying to kid? All that just now, for a bus ticket?

Gerard himself had only just realized that this off-handed lie might have come off as a bit of a stretch.

“Hmm... Maybe it was a plane ticket. Can’t remember anymore.”

“Huh?” Both Lilian and Sharon were still flabbergasted. Not even a plane ticket would account for this!

Scratching his head, Gerard tried to figure a way out of this. “I honestly don’t remember what sort of ticket it was, but he was really grateful for it. Hahaha!”

That should do it—and Gerard felt that he had just about had his fill now. He didn’t see any point in hanging around for much longer. Making up some excuse about having things to do, he made his escape.

Following his departure, everyone in the room stared at one another. Obviously, Gerard had been hiding something... but how could he possibly have anything to do with Yancy Ziegler?

Why couldn’t it have been them, instead? Why, if it had been them, then...!

Some were seething with envy. Others, like Sharon and Lilian, were wrestling with complicated emotions.

It occurred to them that Gerard could quite possibly experience a complete reversal of fortunes through his acquaintance with Yancy. It seemed completely plausible.

In that event, both girls felt as if they now understood the true meaning of regret.

The thought of seeing that day arrive filled them with abject horror.

Argh, what was there to be done!

“Haha, I don’t think Yancy will have that much to do with Gerard. Gratitude is only worth a couple of favors, after all. How much could a tramp like Gerard ask for from someone like Yancy? Basically nothing!” Sensing the agitation in the room, Murphy declared this with a smile.

At this, everyone was able to relax a little.

Gerard had simply walked away although he could very well have wrung them all out on the spot. For the sake of the affection he once held for Sharon, he had stayed his hand. No matter what she was like now, he wouldn’t forget that she had helped him out before in the past.

This made them even.

Rubbing his belly in satisfaction, he began to wonder if Queta and the kids had eaten yet. Perhaps he would bring them something.

And so, he ended up at Queta’s place once again... and again, for the next seven days in a row. He headed there whenever he had any free time, chatting with her and playing with the kids... it was a blissful haven for him, and he was always in a good mood there.

Even better than hanging around in school.

Moreover, he was growing closer to Queta every day.

Having secured her contact information, they messaged each other often as well.

Had he fallen in love? Not even he could say... but he certainly liked her enough.

This whole week spent chatting with Queta, he was occasionally slow in responding to Mila’s own messages. One night, Mila abruptly sent him the following:

‘Gerard... have you been chatting with other girls besides me?’

Chapter 199

At present, Mila and Gerard were in a relationship one level beyond friendship. However, Gerard had yet to pursue her in earnest—all they really did, for the most part, was chat.

Mila kept joking about how Gerard was her pretend-boyfriend, giving him the impression that she had never thought about going any further with him.

And yet, she was always throwing these little tantrums.

Basically, their relationship status was unclear.

Mila's latest message to him: "I'm asking you a question. Why aren't you replying? Have you been chatting with another girl these days?"

Girls are sensitive creatures, able to detect the slightest change in the wind.

Recently, Gerard's behavior had become highly suspicious. Back then, he would always reply to her instantly. Nowadays, a full minute could pass without any answer.

It was a disconcerting situation for Mila.

Gerard didn't want to lie to her. Anyway, there was no point.

"Yup. Just chatting." That was his reply.

"Heh. You didn't have to add that last bit. Even if you weren't just chatting, it's not like I'd know. You're an amazing guy. I already expected lots of pretty girls to be after you. The one you're talking to must be quite the looker. What's her name? Do I know her?" A whole barrage of text tumbled out from Mila.

"I doubt it. Myself, I've only known her for a week. As for her looks... perhaps it's her heart that's beautiful."

All this while, Mila had been playing all sorts of games with Gerard.

It made him feel like she didn't see him romantically in the slightest.

She only saw him as a friend, even knowing that he was positively loaded!

Gerard, in turn, had no ulterior designs for Queta. She was just a friend he got along with easily. More than that... he hadn't given the matter much thought.

"Oho! An angel with a beautiful heart? That's really something! So the great Mr. Crawford has been ignoring his girlfriend because he's already found another one!"

"I haven't been ignoring you! Anyway, aren't you always calling me your fake boyfriend? And she's not my girlfriend!" That should clear things up.

Mila sent him an emoji.

"Tell me who exactly she is to you, then: Your best friend? Your lil sis? Help me understand!"

Seeing this message from Mila—especially that 'lil sis' part—Gerard's heart clouded over.

He had thought that they were growing closer. He'd imagined that they were one step away from falling in love.

So... the truth was that Mila had only seen him as a brother. It made sense, of course—although he had wealth, in terms of charisma, he was probably nowhere near Mila's boyfriend standards!

"Nothing like that. We're just friends. I like her gentle nature and I admire her bravery! I truly respect the way she goes through life!"

“Wow! She sounds amazing! One day, I shall simply have to meet her. You must introduce her to me!”

“Sounds great. Once you’ve met her, I’m sure you’ll like her too. She’s just swell,” Gerard told her. “One more thing, Mila!”

Eh?

He’d just been about to ask if she was free tomorrow, but before he could finish typing, a bright red exclamation mark suddenly popped up next to the chat bar.

‘You are not Friends with this person!’

What was going on, here?

Hadn’t they been chatting away merrily? Why had she deleted him?

Panicking, Gerard called Mila directly.

An automated recording informed him that her phone had been turned off.

What in the world was going on? Gerard scratched his head.

He wouldn’t know that up until just now, Mila had just been lying in bed, chatting with him.

Chapter 200

With the speed of Gerard’s responses slowing down recently, Mila had spent the past few days in anxious speculation.

Then, she had ventured a casual inquiry—since it wouldn’t do for her to press too hard on such details.

Sure enough, Gerard had been chatting up another woman!

Mila's heart was wracked with sorrow, as though something had been stolen right out of her own heart. In this short time, she'd gotten used to having Gerard around, always being there for her.

Now, she had to share his attention with another girl.

She wasn't happy about this, but she didn't say so outright. Instead, she'd made inquiries as to who she was, how pretty she must be... hints to let Gerard know that she was absolutely furious now!

What happened next? Gerard began talking about what a wonderful, gentle soul she was!

Grrr... Was she to stand there and take this?

Every message she had sent after that had been dripping with acid. Hinting that he was just a bro to her... she had only said that to get back at him a little. Then she went on asking about the other woman, saying that she'd really like to meet her.

Then she had deleted him and vehemently slammed her handphone against the wall, so hard that it shut off!

"What's wrong, Mila? Are you okay?" her roommate asked in worry.

"I'm fine! Good night!" Mila buried her head under the blanket.

"We're sorry, but the device you're trying to reach is currently offline..." Despite numerous attempts, Gerard still couldn't get through.

What on earth was going on with Mila?

He was just a little crestfallen. After all that hard work, he had almost been ready to believe that he really had a chance with Mila, but then... sigh!

Time for bed. Forget about all this nonsense.

The next morning, Gerard went to the cafeteria to have breakfast with Harper and Benjamin.

The moment he stepped into the hall, Harper nudged him and pointed. “Gerard, dude... look who it is!”

Following his gaze, Gerard spied Mila having breakfast with two of her roommates!

Last night’s affair still weighed heavily on his mind. Why had Mila blocked him, all of a sudden?

Straight away, he walked over there and sat down across from her.

“Mila, why did you block me last night?” he asked.

“Huh? Did I? I don’t recall doing anything like that. Maybe I accidentally clicked something? No way, why would I block you?” Mila dithered back and forth in a sing-song voice, but her eyes were smoldering with rage.

Gerard pulled out his handphone. “It’s true! Look... you’ve really blocked my number!”

Bam! Mila slapped her chopsticks down onto the table, and hissed, “Is everyone finished? Let’s get out of here!”

With one last baleful look at Gerard, Mila turned on her heels and marched off.

“What the hell happened last night, Gerard?” Harper exclaimed. “Mila always used to be so sweet to you—how did the two of you become like this, now?”

“I don’t know... One moment we were just chatting as usual, next thing you know... Maybe she’s gotten tired of me...” Gerard gave a short, disparaging little laugh.

“Impossible. Something like this doesn’t just happen for no reason. Girls crave attention. Go after her! Do you like her or not?”

Perhaps this was the problem with Gerard. Because he cared about Mila, he kept tip-toeing around her feelings. If anything started to go wrong, he gave up straight away.

It also had something to do with his past experiences.

He had only just recently become able to talk to girls without blushing and stuttering too much. As for the subject of understanding a woman’s heart... That was probably something he might still need to work on a little.

‘She clearly stated that she was only a little sister to me. If I try to pursue her, I might ruin our friendship too!’ Gerard wrestled with his inner thoughts.

But Harper was right. Girls craved attention. Perhaps he ought to give her some?

Chapter 201

After Gerald arrived in the classroom.

He re-added Mila Smith on WeChat.

“I’ve got something important to tell you!” He messaged her.

Of course, it was Harper who taught him that.

Mila was angry, and Gerald knew it was probably because of himself, so he wanted to make it clear to Mila.

And the words really worked well, though.

Soon, Mila replied to his message.

“What is it? Hurry up and say it!”

“Are you free this afternoon? There’s a movie that just went online with pretty great reviews! I’m looking for some company to watch with me!”

This was taught by Naomi.

Gerald’s good friends were all sitting next to Gerald, giving him some useful advice.

“Oh, then you should go look for that pretty girl, why are you looking for me?”

Mila replied coldly.

“I’m looking for the most beautiful and generous person. Oh, and someone who gets easily angry at me to be my company. I’ve been thinking about it, and it seems like you’re the only one who fits all the criteria. Otherwise, how would you recommend a girl like her?”

“F*ck off, I don’t know such a person!”

“Then that leaves you to be the only one!”

“Why are you like this? This doesn’t sound like you at all!”

Mila replied with a shocked emoji.

Honestly, chatting with Gerald made her feel so much better and happier.

“So, are you coming? I’ve already bought your ticket. It’s okay if you refuse to come, on the condition that you find me a lady like you, and only then will I accept your refusal!”

“Haha, okay, I’ll go for the sake of you being so sincere, but I have one condition: You have to buy me dinner! I’m not going for nothing!”

“No problem!”

The deal had been sealed!

Harper and Naomi made a victory cheer.

However, Gerald smiled bitterly and scratched his head.

So, there were so many things to consider when talking to girls.

In the past, Gerald did not know about this. When he talked to girls, it was just people asking questions and him answering them.

Mila had once said that she was attracted to Gerald’s calm composure and honesty.

And with that, Gerald and Mila got along pretty well.

But looking at it now...

Adding some other words in the same sentence with the same meaning created a whole different effect!

‘Flirting requires skills and knowledge,’ Gerald thought to himself.

The movie started at eleven o'clock.

Gerald planned to meet up with Mila at ten o'clock.

When the bell rang, Gerald walked out of the classroom.

His phone suddenly rang, and seeing the number on the screen, it made his heart flutter.

It was a call from Queta Smith.

The two had already given each other their numbers, and Gerald told Queta that no matter what happened, she can always call him first.

The connection went through.

"Gerald, where are you?"

"I'm at college! What's going on?"

"It's Yasmin, she...she suddenly fainted on the ground! I carried her to the hospital, but... but I don't have money and the hospital won't treat her!"

"What! You're at the hospital entrance now? Okay, okay, I'll be right there!"

Once he heard that Yasmin was unconscious and her condition was quite serious...

Gerald panicked.

The previous week had all been very peaceful.

He was very concerned about Yasmin's health. He immediately ran downstairs and drove to the hospital.

When he arrived at the hospital's entrance, Gerald saw Queta and three other people waiting anxiously at the entrance.

He stopped his car at the side of the road and dashed toward their direction.

"What happened?"

Gerald saw Yasmin, who looked pale and was trembling all over.

"Yasmin experienced this symptom before, but this time it's even more severe!"

Queta was crying nervously.

Both children were also shaking Gerald's arm, "Big brother, please save our sister!"

"I understand now, I'll go in and ask the doctor to take a look!"

After he took Yasmin from Queta's arms, he ran toward the hospital's emergency lobby.

"Stop right there! I've told you guys over and over again, you can't see the doctor without paying! Go look for other ways and stop stirring trouble here!"

Two guards stopped Gerald in his tracks, blocking his way.

“I have money, please let me help the child to get treated!”

Gerald said hastily.

Chapter 202

“Young man, it’s not that we won’t help you. If we let you in like this and you can’t pay up for the bills, we might have to use brute force on you. So, how about you go somewhere else and get the money, then we’ll talk!”

The two security guards were quite old. Maybe because they saw Queta and the others were in a tough situation, their tone was not as rough as earlier.

Well, obviously Queta had been kicked out once.

“Mr. Linton and Mr. Lawrence, what’s going on here? Why are these bums standing in front of our hospital? Huh? Isn’t that the ones I kicked out because they couldn’t afford the treatment? Why are they still here?”

“Oh, Dr. Quintero! I’m sorry, I’ll make them leave this instant!”

“Hurry up, they’re ruining our hospital’s image. Let’s go, Minnie and Lindy, I’ll take you to eat something delicious today, hehe!”

Dr. Quintero spoke as he led the two little beauties along the way.

The two little girls looked at Gerald and the others with contempt.

“Hehe, why are you still standing there, go beg for money!”

“Look at what they’re wearing, can they even afford to see a doctor? Ugh!”

The two little girls took turns to throw jabs at them.

Apparently, they looked down on Gerald and Quenta because of their clothing.

“Dr. Quintero, please, please, have a look at Yasmin, please!”

On the other hand, Quenta was so desperate that she was all about to kneel down to beg the doctor.

“I have money, so please treat her. I’ll pay for the bills once she gets treated!” Gerald’s tone was cold.

“Hahahaha, what a joke!”

“You must be teasing me, aren’t you, brat? You don’t look like someone that has money, haha, don’t even try to fool me! The door is right there, so please get the hell out of here!”

Gerald looked at Queta. “Wait here for a moment, I promise you we’ll get in,” he reassured.

Then, Gerald glared at Dr. Quintero and the two little girls. He trotted to the side of the road, got into the car, and stepped hard on the gas pedal.

“F*ck!”

“Oh my God!”

“What?”

The three of them were all in shock.

Especially Dr. Quintero, whose face was almost green.

Gerald was driving a Lamborghini Reventon, a 2.7 million dollar luxury car!

He did not expect Gerald to be this wealthy!

The two little girls covered their mouths in awe.

The visual impact that the luxury car had brought them was too great!

“Can we go in now?”

Gerald asked after rolling down the car window.

“Yes, yes, of course! I’ll arrange a diagnostic team this instant! I’m not eating anymore and I’ll get things settled as soon as possible!”

Dr. Quintero panicked.

Gerald snickered at him.

It was hard dealing with people like Dr. Quintero. They would never listen no matter how much they begged nicely, instead, they would only listen once they were proved wrong.

Yasmin was immediately sent into the emergency room.

The diagnosis came out quickly. It showed that Yasmin was anemic, and her condition was more serious.

However, the hospital was confident and they reassured that their treatment will cure Yasmin’s disease within a year.

Gerald and Queta were relieved when they heard the news. A boulder was lifted from their shoulders.

“Mr. Crawford, next time, you must pay more attention to Yasmin. Look after her more and make sure she eats more fruits!”

This time, the doctor’s two little girls gathered around Gerald.

Gerald just nodded his head with a bitter smile.

It was only after Yasmin was moved into the hospital room that Gerald was completely relieved.

“Queta, you should get back to work, or else you might get another lecture from your boss!”

The two children shook their heads.

“Ah, I’m fine, I have to take care of Yasmin!”

“Leave that to us. Besides, Gerald is here too!”

“How can I entrust this job to you boys. Besides, what if Yasmin has to go to the bathroom?”

Queta was also in a dilemma. Not only did she have to work, but she also had to support the three children.

However, Yasmin had become her first priority.

“If you’re busy, just go to work. I’ll just have a friend to come over to take care of Yasmin!”

The two nurses?

To be honest, Gerald was not worried either.

It was really inconvenient if he was to stay behind and take care of her.

So, Gerald just happened to think of a woman who would be perfect for the job.

He was going to call Jane Zara.

F*ck!

On his phone screen, he had received thirty missed calls from Mila, and he was bombarded by messages on WeChat.

Gerald was used to putting his phone on silent during morning classes. When he left the classroom, he was in such a hurry that he forgot to unmute his phone until now.

Looking at the time now, it was almost one o'clock.

In other words, Mila had been standing and waiting for him for more than two hours...

Chapter 203

The first thing Gerald did was contact Jane Zara.

Although Jane wanted money, she still got along with it. As long as Gerald asked for her help, she was willing to lend a hand.

As expected, she came immediately after the phone call.

Only then did Gerald wipe the cold sweat from his forehead and dialed Mila's number.

"Sorry, the number you dialed is off..."

Her phone was turned off again!

Gerald sent her a message on WeChat.

As expected, he was blocked and his number was deleted.

Ugh!

Gerald blamed himself even more now.

He blamed himself more than yesterday for saying the wrong thing. He had no idea how to explain things to Mila regarding his lateness.

After Gerald returned to college, he even went to look for Mila a few times, but he ended up getting the door shut right in his face.

She did not even look at him at all.

He was afraid that this cold war would last for an eternity.

Gerald walked around the campus by himself, stopping at a small park and resting there for a while.

Dealing with relationship issues really left him a little overwhelmed.

One thing he had learned today was that girls actually did not mean it if they said 'No'.

He immediately thought of Xavia Yorke.

They used to come to this small park too.

They would both take a stroll here, hand in hand.

Then, Gerald had mustered up the courage to ask Xavia if they could have sex.

Smack!

“Scram! Gerald, what kind of girl do you take me for?”

Gerald remembered that he had gotten slapped and scolded by Xavia.

It was obvious that she did not want to.

From her attitude, she really meant to say no!

It made him quite self-conscious at that time. Xavia was indeed a good girl, but why did things turn out that way? On the contrary, Gerald treated her even better after that incident.

Now that he thought about it...

Heh, girls...

He was wondering where Xavia is and what she is doing at the moment.

The scenery made him emotional. He could not help himself but think of Xavia again.

But the memories were slowly fleeting.

Just like that, he sat in the park until it was five o'clock in the afternoon.

Then, Gerald's phone rang. It was from Jane Zara.

"Gerald, wher...where are you?"

Based on Jane's tone, she sounded both anxious and weeping.

Gerald felt his nerves tighten. Could something bad have happened to Yasmin?

"I'm at college, I'll be on my way to the hospital now. I'll get you some food along the way. Jane, is anything wrong?"

Gerald asked.

"Gerald, something happened to me this afternoon. It's my mother. Geez, at first, I thought she was messing with me and I clearly told her no, but look what happened now. My mother actually booked a banquet in Mayberry for me to meet my blind date!"

"Gerald, I really don't want to go, I'm still so young, don't you think so too?"

Jane cried out.

Gerald was relieved after hearing this.

Turns out, it was just a forced blind date kind of situation.

To be honest, it was not the first time it had happened to Gerald.

It was rather not that surprising to him at all.

It was almost time for his graduation after all. Jane had graduated some time ago, and somewhere in life, they would have to experience the same thing which other people would also have to face.

Blind dates were one of those things.

“You really don’t want to go, do you?”

“Umm, I really don’t want to, but what do you think I should do? Now that my mom has set up a banquet, my blind date is already there! This isn’t exactly a blind date since families and friends from both sides are expected to be there for a meal together!”

“Okay, I’ll go with you later. I’ll return the favor this time!”

Gerald said blandly.

“Ah? For real? Mr. Crawford, you’re the best! Then, will you go as my boss or my friend? Or...”

“Let’s just say I’m your friend!”

Gerald smiled bitterly.

Since Jane had helped him today, it was only right that he should return the small favor.

Chapter 204

No matter what, Jane was still his employee, and since she had begged him, there was no way he could turn her down.

So this time, Gerald was willing to help her out.

After the arrangements were settled, Gerald went to the hospital and brought Yasmin some food. Then, he waited for Queta to arrive before leaving with Jane.

The dinner was held in a private lounge at a restaurant in Mayberry.

This was not the first time Gerald had done this, so he was quite familiar with it.

Even the opening of the scene was almost the same.

They pushed open the door to the lounge.

“Jane, you’re finally here! Huh? Who is this guy?”

Inside the private lounge, a middle-aged woman dressed in a rather fashionable manner, whom Gerald assumed was Jane’s mother, was now staring coldly at him.

Looking at Gerald’s rather ordinary outfit, the woman was already somewhat looking down on him.

She was a city dweller, and she seemed to look down on country folks and the way they dressed.

“Uhhh... This is Gerald Crawford, and he’s my boy... friend!”

On the other hand, Jane did not know what was going on in her head, and the words just slipped right out of her mouth.

Did they not agree to just being friends?

Now, Gerald was being used as a boyfriend again, f*ck!

He was embarrassed, but since the word had been said, he could not argue much.

However, Jane stuck out her tongue at Gerald. She was clearly excited.

What was she thinking?

Clearly, she thought that it would be nice if Gerald was her boyfriend.

She had dreamt about this for the past few days.

In the past, Jane had only liked Gerald when she knew that he was so wealthy.

But after spending some time together, she could see the other side of Gerald. He was lowkey, introverted, and generous to other people. More importantly, Gerald trusted her very much.

This just added to her list of reasons why she liked and respected him very much.

She was very fascinated by him.

“What? What did you just say, Jane? He’s your boyfriend?”

Jane’s mother and dad were clearly shocked. Their mouths were wide open.

Both of them were public officials, so they would very much prefer their daughter to date someone of equal social status.

Now that their daughter had brought a nobody to the blind date...

“Mom, Dad, yes, he’s my boyfriend! We’ve been hanging out for a while now!”

“Gerald... Crawford, say hello to my parents!”

Seeing that Gerald did not object to his new identity as her boyfriend, Jane decided to become a little more daring.

She reminded Gerald.

“Hi, Mrs. Zara...”

“Where did you come from, young brat? My daughter is not someone a dirty b*stard like you could get! Get out of here!”

Jane’s mother snarled at him coldly.

She was having none of it. It took her a whole lot of effort to finally make an appointment with the leader’s wife. Today, they had agreed to let the two families’ children meet and get to know each other.

In the future, the two families would become in-laws.

Everything seemed so perfect.

It did not occur to her that her daughter would not play by the rules. After much pressuring and persuasion, her daughter was finally here, which was good news. But she did not expect her daughter would bring along a boyfriend.

The other family was about to arrive. If they were to see this, they might have a bad impression of the Zaras, and the relationship between both families may be severed.

Her blood was boiling, and when she looked at Gerald, she felt a hundred times more resentful toward him.

While talking, the lounge's door suddenly opened. Outside, a line of people walked in with items in their hands.

"Mr. Zara, my sincere apologies. I'm sorry that we're late, hahaha!"

In came a party of four people, among them were two youngsters, a woman, and a man.

The girl, in particular, was dressed up beautifully.

Looking at them, the Zaras were unable to remain their composure.

What was going on? The boy should be Mr. and Mrs. Jenkin's son.

And what about the girl?

Could it be that the son had brought his girlfriend along?

"Oh, Mr. Zara, let me introduce you, this is my niece, she's my third brother's daughter. She's a fourth-year student from Johnhurst University, and she's here to join her cousin!"

"Niece, say hi to Uncle Zara!"

However, the girl did not hear what they were talking about as her gaze was fixed on Gerald.

The corner of her lips curled into a mocking smile.

"Huh, Gerald! I never thought I would run into you here?"

Chapter 205

The girl knew Gerald.

On the other hand, Gerald was shocked to see this pretty girl.

“Whitney Jenkins?”

Ever since that time he had beaten up Victor Wright, he had completely broken up with Whitney.

She had always been secretly in love with Victor. Even after Gerald had bought her a dress, in her eyes, Gerald was incomparable to Victor.

And because of Gerald, Whitney had almost lost her position in the student council, so when he ran into her these few days, she was always cold toward him.

Who knew they would actually run into each other here today!

“Gerald, what are you doing here?”

Whitney’s eyes were deadly.

“Gerald, do you know each other?”

Jane was now standing next to Gerald. Her tone was somewhat dubious as she asked.

“Of course I know her, we’re from the same department!”

Gerald smiled bitterly.

Then, he looked at Whitney. “I’m here to meet Jane’s parents!”

“Meet her parents? What for?”

Whitney’s eyes were even colder.

The three members of the Jackson family looked toward Gerald at the same time.

“Gerald is my boyfriend, so why can’t he meet my parents?”

Jane directly replied without hesitation.

She really had no interest in whoever Christian Jenkins was.

In fact, after knowing Gerald, Jane’s taste in man had also improved.

She had met someone powerful, so no matter how excellent the other guys were, they were still no match to Gerald.

Hence, now Jane had this kind of mindset when it came to choosing boyfriends.

Her words were like an atomic bomb.

Everyone present was shocked by what she said.

It had the most impact on the Jenkins.

They had come here in a great rush, just to hear that Jane was very connected to Mayberry International Inc. Moreover, she was a very pretty lady, and they considered her family as equal.

To sum things up, she was the perfect candidate to become the daughter-in-law of the Jenkins Family.

However, they did not expect to find out that Jane was taken after they had brought their son to this blind date.

“Mr. Zara, what’s this all about?”

Whitney’s uncle asked coldly.

Christian Jenkin was also looking at Gerald with hostility,

He was in love with Jane.

Right now, he was sizing up on Gerald. He scanned Gerald’s body for something he could use to compare with himself.

Jane’s parents hurriedly apologized to the Jenkins, explaining that it was all a misunderstanding and such.

But deep inside, they were cursing his ancestors. ‘Stinky b*stard! Look what trouble you’ve brought upon us today!’

“Dad, calm down. As Uncle Zara said, there might be some misunderstanding. Besides, this guy right here is Whitney’s classmate!”

Christian flashed the watch on his wrist.

At this moment, his lips curled into a smile.

“Oh, classmate? Gerald, I finally know why you’ve been so glamorous lately, it turns out that you’re taken! Honestly, Gerald, before this you’ve won the lottery and became rich, it made me really uncomfortable. But seeing that you bought me a dress, though I still hate you, I’m not as disgusted by you as before!”

“Now, though, it looks like you’re even more disgusting than I thought?”

“I mean, how did you get so rich? You’ve won the lottery, but it seems like your money is never-ending. It turns out that you have a sugar-mummy, and I’m sure both of you are up to something!”

Whitney did not talk much when she entered the lounge.

She slowly recognized Jane

Was she not the woman Chad Xanders had pursued, who was then caught on the spot by Jacelyn Leigh and Danny Xanders, as well as Gerald who was being kept in the car by this very woman?

She had seen the entire scene with her own eyes.

But what happened next made Whitney think that it was very unlikely.

Chapter 206

Even if she were to be a sugar mummy, she would not have a sugar baby like Gerald, but this woman had admitted that Gerald was her boyfriend!

Whitney then did not respect him any further. She stared at him very proudly as if she was mocking him for being a sugar baby!

After hearing what they had said, Jane’s parents’ face turned awful. They really believed that Gerald was a sugar baby.

Jane’s mother pointed at Gerald and said, “Jane, give me an explanation now. What is going in with this Gerald? Is he really a sugar baby?”

“No, mom! I can explain!” Jane was getting frustrated.

It was just a simple matter of rejecting a marriage, but things had turned the wrong way.

“I’m not listening to your explanation. Just tell me if he is or is he not?” Jane’s mother asked angrily.

Whitney crossed her arms and walked beside Christian. She smiled and said, “Don’t worry, Christian. Do you remember the poor dude I told you about who was in the same course as me? The guy that was dumped by his ex-girlfriend who then moved on to a rich guy!”

“After that, he won a lottery and then became really proud. Do you still remember that poor peasant? That’s him!”

Whitney thought to herself that since she had turned to her dark side, she might as well just go on ahead and crush Gerald. She only wanted to be friends with Gerald because she thought he was quite rich. Especially when Gerald bought her a shirt that was worth a few thousand dollars because she had helped him. She was actually quite touched by him, but now, she realized he was just a playboy with no money!

Whitney publicly humiliated him just to prove to Jane that he used to be a poor and lowly peasant!

When Christian realized that he was just a poor guy, he did not have any pressure at all.

“Answer me, Jane! Is he the kind of person like what Whitney said? Is he really a poor peasant?” Jane’s mother was trying to force an answer out of Jane. The whole situation was so embarrassing!

“I...” Jane did not know what to say anymore.

“Yes, I am from a poor family, but that doesn’t mean I don’t have any dignity left in me. All I wanted was just to earn some pocket money and study so that I could be a better person. Is that wrong?” Gerald was hurt by what Whitney had said.

He started talking about his previous lifestyle. “Why do all of you have to be so judgmental? So what if I’m broke? I didn’t do anything bad to all of you, so why should I be bullied?” Gerald stared at Whitney and yelled at her.

All these years, Whitney had been harassing him, and it was no less than Yuri.

Once, when he and Xavia were walking outside the classroom, she saw them and started criticizing him publicly. "Wow, even a poor b*stard like Gerald has a girlfriend! What big news!"

"Anyways, please go and clean up the study hall. You don't have to eat with your girlfriend since you won't have enough money to eat if you don't work either way!"

"What do you mean you're not going? I'll stop your bursary and let you f*ck off!" Whitney said as she slapped him.

All of these were things that happened in the first and second year of university. Whitney had always insulted him in front of Xavia, and because of that, Xavia had even argued with her.

All of these were stuck with Gerald for years, and he had been keeping them in his heart.

Things had gotten better when they went to year three only because Whitney was sick of insulting him already.

"So you really are a poor b*stard. Leave now and don't ever bother my daughter again!" Jane's mother was furious. She picked up a glass of hot tea and splashed it toward Gerald's face.

Chapter 207

"Mom! Stop!" Jane almost fainted when she saw the glass splashing over. Unfortunately, she could not stop her.

Gerald could not dodge in time, but luckily, it only hit his body. Gerald was immediately covered with tea leaves and tea.

"You don't deserve my daughter! Now f*ck off as far as possible!" Jane's mother threw the glass on the ground.

She was also trying to tell Jenkins that the Zara family was absolutely sincere and she did not care about the life and death of that poor b*stard, Gerald.

“Look here, Gerald! Let me take a video of you so that the entire department would know how disgusting you are!” Whitney was laughing really loudly while the Jenkins were all smiling.

Gerald would have never thought that Jane’s mother would treat him like that. How ignorant could she be to treat someone like that publicly?

Gerald picked out the tea leaves on his shirt and glanced at the entire room of people. Especially Whitney.

“Whitney, what if one day you realized that I’m not the poor b*stard you think I was and realized that I’m f*cking rich? What would you do?”

“And all of you that hate on the poor. You guys are really ignorant, do you know that? What is it that all of you are so proud of? If only you all knew that you guys are the poor b*stards in my eyes, what would all of you do?”

Jane thought that Gerald must be furious, but his voice was surprisingly calm.

“Hahaha!”

“Gerald, are you nuts? You must be crazy about being rich, huh? Stop fooling around, sucker! I’m going to record all of this and show everyone how embarrassing you are!” Whitney mocked him.

“Jane, so this is the kind of boyfriend you have eh? Why should we even treat him like a person? Look at him, does he look like a person? This kind of poor b*stard would only end up dying on the street!”

“That’s right! Look at what he’s wearing. Jane, it’s okay if you’re still young and you don’t understand much. How about you let Christian and Whitney bring you to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment and relax? I heard they were doing some events, and Uncle Jenkins over here has three tickets. Since you

used to work at the villa, you could bring Christian for a walk!” Christian’s mother immediately came out and spoke as if she was very used to situations like these.

“I...”

“Go ahead. Don’t worry about me!” Gerald said calmly.

Jane wanted to shake her head, but after listening to Gerald’s tone, she did not dare to refuse the offer.

Gerald finally understood that it was impossible for him to lead an ordinary life. There would always be people trying to find fault or make fun of him! Gerald was not going to tolerate them anymore this time.

While he was trying to get a tissue out of his pocket, his Lamborghini car key fell out. He did not do it on purpose!

When he wanted to pick up the car key, Whitney bent down and picked it up first.

“You have a car? That’s weird!” She looked at the car key carefully and laughed.

“Wow! It’s a Lamborghini car key! Gerald, you drive a Lamborghini?”

“It must be fake! Lamborghini doesn’t have a car key that looks like that.” Christian was shocked at first, but after he looked closely he smiled.

That car key was different from the others just like it’s controls were different. The only thing that was similar was the Lamborghini logo, and not many people had seen that car key before.

Chapter 208

He did not blame their reaction.

“Hahaha! Gerald, I didn’t know you were this kind of person. Why can’t you get a toy that looks more legit than this one?”

"I really don't want to talk about this person anymore. Christian, let's go. We'll go to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment in your Maserati! Let's go, Jane!"

"From today onward, you will be the most disgusting person in our department, Gerald! Could you please do me a favor and get lost now!" Whitney threw the Lamborghini car key on the ground.

Jane did not dare to go against Gerald's will, and she went with them.

"Mr. Zara, would you like to take a look at Christian's new car?" Christian's father asked.

"Sure! Let's go and have a look! While you, please get out of here!" Jane's mother walked beside Gerald and pushed him.

Gerald took a deep breath and picked up his car key. He followed them out.

They were surrounding a Lamborghini Aventon and discussing the car.

"This is the car I was talking about, Christian. There's a super-rich guy in our school, and he must be eating at this restaurant!" Whitney was excited when she saw the car.

She had always wanted to make friends with this extremely rich guy.

"Christian, do you recognize this car?"

Christian's father and Jane's parents just arrived and they were all shocked.

They did not notice the car when they arrived! They knew that it was truly a luxurious car.

"It's a Lamborghini, but I'm not sure which model it is. Quite sure that it's more expensive than the Lamborghini Poison! Super luxurious!"

"Oh my goodness!"

The Jenkins and Zaras were all amused.

"This is a Reventon. It belongs to one of the richest guys in our school!" Whitney said.

Gerald walked past them as they were talking.

"What are you doing, Gerald?"

"This poor b*stard hasn't left yet?" Christian scoffed.

"What is he even doing here?" Jane's mother said.

"This poor b*stard is just here to pick up his car. See you guys next time!" Gerald smiled as he pressed his car key and opened the car door.

The headlights blinked and the car roof opened.

Gerald got into the car and everyone was dumbstruck.

"Wait, what?" Whitney shouted.

Gerald was the owner of this car?! The car key was not fake and this car belonged to him?! The extremely rich guy from her department was Gerald even though he was the most ordinary person?!

“What’s going on, Gerald? This car is yours? It’s truly yours?” Whitney was in disbelief. Her heart felt like it had just exploded. She could not believe that he was the same poor b*stard in her eyes! What was happening?!

Chapter 209

Even Jane’s parents were shocked.

They were even asking him to leave their own daughter alone. No wonder he had said that they were the poor b*stards in his eyes!

How was that even possible!

Gerald pressed the horn as he drove out of the basement carpark.

When he passed by Whitney, she really did wish that Gerald would notice her. Even if it meant scolding her or giving her a slap. However, Gerald did not. He merely ignored her and left.

As for Jane, he had helped her enough.

He stepped on the accelerator and drove out of the basement carpark.

Gerald knew that this would hurt even harder than simply just showing off. He did not even bother about their expressions.

“Who is he?” Christian swallowed.

Whitney was confused and helpless. She didn’t even know the answer to that question. Whitney really did think of apologizing to him after what she had done to him after finding out that he was really rich. He had looked so attractive when he got into the car!

She even thought of taking pictures of Gerald and his car to let the entire school know. Just like how she would usually show off.

Whitney calmed herself down. If the whole school knew about Gerald's true identity, she would never stand a chance anymore, and everyone would start teasing her if the school learned about his identity.

There was a voice telling Whitney to try her best at winning Gerald's heart. 'Most love stories always start with the main characters hating each other!' She told herself

Meanwhile, after everyone had found out Gerald's identity, they all looked toward Jane.

Jane shook her head and said, "Don't even think about asking me! I don't know anything!"

Going back to Gerald.

It was already seven o'clock in the evening. After Gerald texted Queta to make sure that Yasmin was okay, he then went back to the hostel.

His phone rang again. It was Zack.

"Mr. Crawford, where are you? I must be troubling you by calling you at this time!"

"I was just about to go back to school. What's the matter, Zack?"

"As you know, I've resigned from the position of Mayberry Commercial Street's CEO and Ms. Crawford has brought in a new CEO, Michael Zeke. He's an old friend of mine and he's flying in tonight."

"Yes, my sister has mentioned it before."

"What I'm saying is, he would like to pay you a visit!"

What a determined person. The first thing for him to do after arriving was to visit Gerald. Indeed, everyone who worked for Jessica was all very serious about their work.

“Where would he like to visit me? How about you make some arrangements for that and I’ll be going back to the villa tonight. We can meet at the villa!”

“Alright, Mr. Crawford!”

Gerald immediately drove back to the villa after he had hung up.

He did not know much about this person named Michael, but since he was going to pay a visit, Gerald had to be there. His sister, Jessica, could manage everything. He just had to be there.

Soon enough, when Gerald had reached the villa, the event that was going on at the Wayfair Mountain was to welcome the new CEO, Michael.

It was late at night, but the night at Wayfair Mountain was still young.

Chapter 210

There were many rich people walking around. Gerald reached the main entrance and watched from the outside.

He went to the backdoor and went in from there. When he reached his own meeting room, Zack was standing there with another middle-aged man.

There were only two of them, so the other one must be Michael Zeke. He looked really mature and reliable, but through his eyes, Gerald could tell that he would be an aggressive person.

“Mr. Crawford!” Zack shouted.

“Michael Zeke. Nice to meet you, Mr. Crawford!” Michael bowed.

“Nice to meet you, Director Zeke. Please be at ease. We’ll talk more inside!” Gerald smiled politely.

Michael simply introduced himself and then talked about the future plans he had for Mayberry International Inc.

His ideas were very creative and strong. It was very different from how Zack would do things. Michael was a very straightforward and aggressive person when it came to work.

“Anyway, I’ve heard from Zack that you have recently bought a bungalow at the hilltop. Have you done any renovations yet?”

Gerald nodded his head.

“Um, before I came out to work, I used to study interior design overseas. You can have a look at this blueprint, and maybe if you’re interested, I could be in charge of the project!” Michael smiled.

Bang!

Zack had had enough. He hit the table to express his anger.

“Director Zeke, I think you’re not very familiar with the situation here. You should get to know things around here first. In fact, I’m already in charge of the renovation of Mr. Crawford’s new bungalow, and the project can be finished within ten days. You don’t have to be worried about it!”

‘D*mn it! I was good enough to bring him to visit Mr. Crawford, yet now, he’s trying to steal my job! This is too outrageous!’ Zack thought to himself.

“Ten days? I could do it within five days with top-notch renovations. I would definitely not delay Mr. Crawford from moving in!” Michael talked back.

“Five days is impossible, Director Zeke.” Gerald smiled.

“I’ll give the orders myself. If I can’t finish the project within five days, I’ll gladly resign my position with the headquarters!”

Gerald felt embarrassed. It was just renovations, it would be fine no matter who did the project.

After what Michael had said, Zack was dumbfounded. He would not dare to give orders like that.

Zack did not know why he was so unhappy when in truth, he was way closer to Gerald than Michael.

The renovations of the bungalow were then passed to Michael to handle.

After the meeting was over, Michael went out to meet the guests while Gerald went back to his own bedroom to rest.

“You’re still the same old you, Michael. Very aggressive and I like that, but I must remind you, you must be careful working at Mayberry. Especially when working with Mr. Crawford, as you know his identity is still not known to the public!”

“I understand. Most of my men don't know about his identity. Even my wife doesn't know about it. I almost got you fired the last time I accidentally exposed his identity. I will not repeat the same mistake!” Michael smiled.

Zack took a deep breath. That was probably his biggest mistake of all time when he had almost gotten Gerald into trouble because of Nigel Fisher.

Gerald went back to his bedroom, but he did not go to sleep immediately. Just as he was thinking about something, his sister called.

“Dude, there are two days left, what the hell are you doing? Have you finished what I asked you to do? There are two more millions left. Are you trying to get me killed?” His sister yelled at him.

He then realized that he only spent eight million on the bungalow.

“Oh no, what can I do? How do I spend those two million?”

Gerald was up the entire night thinking of how to spend the money, and finally, he had an idea...

Chapter 211

Gerald had an idea on how to spend those two million dollars. A few days ago when he was talking to Queta, he realized that she only had one picture on her social media profile.

The background was a mountain, and the mountain was covered with trees. It was a very pretty scenery picture.

At that time, Queta had told Gerald a story about that place. After she was adopted away from the orphanage, she had followed her foster parents to live down the hills. After her parents were killed in a car accident, she had left that place.

When Gerald remembered this story, he thought of investing in that mountain and building another entertainment facility over there.

Gerald immediately called Queta. She was shocked at first when she heard about the news, but she confirmed that the scenery up there was truly astounding, especially at the top of the hill. Gerald was really excited to have a look and requested for Queta to bring the both of them there tomorrow to have a look.

After that, Gerald called Zack to prepare a proposal and contract for that investment as soon as possible.

This was the first-ever meaningful project that Gerald was really concerned about ever since he had found out that he was a billionaire.

Gerald was really determined after everything was settled. He could not fall asleep that night, and he went to the hot spring.

After the event had ended, the whole Wayfair Mountain was quiet again. Even the hot spring was empty. He changed into his swimwear and jumped into the hot spring.

The moment he jumped into the hot spring, there was a pretty girl in a bikini standing up from the water. She brushed her hair and there were a few other people walking toward the entrance.

There was a lady bringing three or four other bodyguards.

“What the hell are you guys doing? The company paid you guys to protect Ms. Elizabeth and now you guys are leaving her alone at the hot spring?”

“Don’t you know those reporters might sneak pictures of Ms. Elizabeth and create rumors?”

“Yes, Madam Red. It is indeed our fault, but the reporters won’t be brave enough to come here and sneak pictures right?”

“Don’t be stupid! We have to do our best to take care of Elizabeth’s image. She has another movie coming up, and if there are any problems with it, I’ll kill all of you!” Madam Red scolded the bodyguards.

Elizabeth had just finished her bath. After the performances at Mayberry had ended, she had been really bored staying in her own room.

She knew about the hot spring for a long time now and had decided to reject the other boss’s offer and went to the hot spring by herself.

“Madam Red, I asked them to leave me here alone since I’m just here for the hot spring. You guys should go outside and wait now. I need to change!” Elizabeth said.

The bodyguards swallowed when they saw her perfect figure but they all went out and waited for her.

Her manager brought her a bathrobe.

“I don’t understand what the company is even thinking! It’s so weird to be followed by a bunch of men every day!”

“Haha. Do you need Mayberry’s owner, Gerald, to follow you around so you won’t feel weird?” Madam Red smiled.

“I honestly thought that I could see Gerald here today! But he didn’t even come! What a waste of my time!”

“Is that why you wore a bikini to the hot spring? Aren’t you afraid of those nasty reporters! You have an image to take care of!” Madam Red said.

“The security here is top-notch. I didn’t just wanna be in a bikini to come here. I almost wanted to come here naked!”

Chapter 212

Elizabeth almost went ahead and untied her bikini.

“Woah! I can’t hold it much longer anymore!”

A voice came out from the waters as Gerald stood up from the water and took a deep breath.

“Ah!” The two women screamed, shocked.

Gerald saw Elizabeth in the water when he dived in it too, but her bikini was so tiny that Gerald thought she was not wearing anything and had not dared to lift his head. Only half of his head was out of the water, and he had been listening to their conversation.

He then found out that she was the actress that was very famous at that time, Elizabeth! She was here for a showcase.

Gerald wanted to wait until they left before coming out of the water, but she was almost going to strip naked and dive into the hot spring. He was afraid that there would be a misunderstanding and so, he stood up.

“What the f*ck! Since when were you in here?!” Elizabeth immediately covered her lower parts since she had almost taken them off, and now, she felt really awkward.

“Oh my goodness! I told you to be careful, Elizabeth. Now look, he must be a pervert who came here to take pictures of you!” Madam Red was anxious.

She used the bathrobe to cover up Elizabeth.

“You! Get out of the water now!” Elizabeth was furious. She even picked up a stone.

“Okay! Okay! I’m coming up!”

Gerald had seen her in movies, but she was really different from the roles she had acted in. What a coincidence it was to have met her at the hot spring. If only he knew she was there, he would not have jumped in like that.

“Ms. Elizabeth, I’m a big fan of yours... ouch!” Before Gerald could explain, he felt blood rushing through his nose!

“You dare to tell me you were not peeking?” Madam Red was furious.

“Ah! Madam Red, look at his pants!” Elizabeth pointed at Gerald’s lower part of his body, and both women blushed.

“What the f*ck! I’ve never seen such a pervert in my life! I’m going crazy now! Guards! Guards!” Elizabeth was really furious.

Gerald was dumbfounded and embarrassed!

If only he could control it, he would not want that to happen. However, Elizabeth really did have a great figure, and the bikini was about to fall off. How could he withstand that!

The bodyguards rushed in at this time...

Chapter 213

They knew what had happened just by looking at the actress's expression. The bodyguards were furious.

"How dare you peek at me! I'll make you regret what you have seen today! Where is Mr. Zeke? Call Mr. Zeke and dig out the eyes of this pervert!" Elizabeth yelled.

This man did not only react, his nose was even bleeding. How perverted could a person be?!

Elizabeth was not going to let this off easily. However, Madam Red was slightly calmer.

She looked at Gerald—he did not look like a reporter, and he was wearing swimwear. It might really be a coincidence.

She tried to calm Elizabeth down. "Ms. Elizabeth, we shouldn't make this a big deal yet. Especially when your new movie contract is on the line. If this gets out, it would not be good for you in the industry!"

"What do you think I should do then? This person just sneaked in on me! I can't just let him off like that!" Elizabeth held on tightly to her bathrobe.

Meanwhile, the guards were outside of the hot spring.

"I think I hear some noise coming from the hot spring. Let's go and have a look!"

"There shouldn't be any customers here at this time. Let's go!"

Madam Red and Elizabeth got anxious. If there were to be found out, this was going to make it to the headlines.

"Forget it, Elizabeth. We'll let him off this time!"

“Fine. But...” Elizabeth looked at his crotch area and kicked it real hard, but Gerald dodged it. However, Elizabeth kicked too hard and accidentally flashed herself.

“Ah!” Elizabeth was going to go crazy, but Madam Red dragged her out.

The bodyguards warned Gerald, and they all left.

That was an interesting plot.

After Gerald went back to his own room, he could not fall asleep.

He almost wanted to order Zack to bring Elizabeth to him, but he did not want to trouble Zack with this kind of thing.

Gerald held back his urges. He went on his social media and decided to look at Felicity’s pictures to satisfy his urges.

When he logged in to his social media, he saw Cassandra’s messages.

“Hey, Ordinary Boy! I’m super tired today!”

“Are you asleep, Ordinary Boy?”

“Are you asleep? That’s early!”

Gerald really hates Cassandra right now. He even wanted to prank her.

“No, I’m not asleep yet...” Gerald replied.

“Oh, so you are awake! What are you doing at this hour? Are you thinking of girls? Or are there a lot of girls surrounding you?” Cassandra replied with a shy emoji.

“I am thinking of girls. Thinking about you, in fact. Why don’t you send me a picture of yourself!” Gerald had been seduced by Elizabeth, and at the same time, he really wanted to get revenge on Cassandra.

He would really like to see how the usual Cassandra would react!

Chapter 214

Ding!

Sure enough, Cassandra McGregor's photo was taken and sent over at the very next moment.

Gerald looked at her photo and he almost went wild. It was too revealing! The picture loomed, and almost all parts of her body were exposed.

“Wanna see more? Ordinary Man, just have a video call with me and I’ll show you everything you wanna see!”

Cassandra sent a mischievous emoji.

D*mn it! What was going on today?

Being a normal straight guy, Gerald wanted to agree to Cassandra’s “offer”.

Right then, there was a knock on his door. It was Zack Lyle who had come to check whether Gerald was asleep.

Gerald heaved a sigh of relief.

“Dear Gerald Crawford, how did you turn out this way? You’re now a player, a pervert, and a d*ck!” Gerald’s heart was filled with self-blame. He felt that he was turning from bad to worse.

Gerald hurriedly dismissed his thoughts and opened the door.

Zack wanted to have a discussion with Gerald regarding Gerald's development of Demonreach because research showed that this matter could definitely be tried!

Their discussion went on until late at night. After Zack had left, Gerald simply switched off his cell phone and slept without bothering to reply to Cassandra's message.

Early the next morning, Gerald left Wayfair Mountain Entertainment and returned to college.

He saw a young lady selling flowers outside his college. The roses were really beautiful.

He thought of his girlfriend, Mila Smith, who had recently broken up with him after a fight. It had already been one day since he last looked for her.

Gerald really wanted to look for an opportunity to talk to her and make things clear between them. There was also no class during the first two periods. Rather than waiting at college, Gerald thought of buying a bouquet of flowers for Mila so that he could ask her out to talk things through.

Gerald went ahead with his thought.

After buying a bouquet of flowers, he hurried straight to the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting.

"What the heck! Who's this guy? Why is he here so early in the morning to confess his love?"

"Look at him! He doesn't dress well at all but still has the guts to come over to our Department of Broadcasting and Hosting to confess his love, hahaha!"

"I know him! I think he's that penniless d*ckhead from the Department of Literature, his name is Gerald Crawford. In the past, people on Reddit used to take pictures of his penniless-looking face, I've seen it before!"

"Oh my goodness, I know that penniless guy Gerald Crawford! Didn't he say that he gave his ex-girlfriend that something? At that time, it was very popular in our college's Sub-Reddit!"

"Yes, it's him, he's disgusting!"

The Department of Broadcasting and Hosting was a different world. As soon as Gerald entered, other than a few handsome guys, the rest of them were beautiful girls with various styles and real classiness.

After Gerald went in with the flowers, many girls came out to take a curious look to find out which handsome guy was visiting their department today to confess his love. It was not uncommon for pretty girls from the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting to receive love confessions.

However, all the girls were disappointed when they saw Gerald.

"Lol. Brother, can you first update your status before confessing your love here?"

"I agree! He should not confess in this virtue. If his love confession is successful, I will jump off the building and die!"

Two handsome guys dressed in small suits and with flowers in their hands were mocking Gerald despicably.

Gerald smiled bitterly. He did not expect the environment of the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting to be like this. If he had known this earlier, he would not have bought those flowers.

Perhaps he should not have followed Naomi Milton's advice on using tactics when being in a relationship with a girl such as buying her flowers and bags or bringing her out for food instead of being a straightforward guy. However, Gerald thought that heeding her advice would be kickass!

In the end, Gerald bought a bouquet of flowers and got himself into the spotlight of many, ugh...

Just as Gerald was in dilemma of whether to leave, suddenly...

"Gerald Crawford? What are you doing here?" A few girls' voices came from behind.

These voices sounded quite familiar to Gerald. He turned back and got a shock.

The girls were Alice Bradford, Hayley Ians, and Jacelyn Leigh from the same dorm unit. It was obvious that they had come for classes.

"Gerald, we're talking to you!" Hayley said with a frown when she received no reply from Gerald.

Chapter 215

"Say something!"

Thanks to Harper, Hayley now treated Gerald as a family, and their relationship was good.

Gerald was a little surprised at Alice's question.

"Erm... I just wanted to give something to somebody!" Gerald stammered.

When he raised his head, his gaze met Alice's. She was the goddess of the crowd.

At this moment, Alice was already blushing while casting glances at Gerald and the flowers held by him. The tips of two of her fingers were touching each other non-stop.

Many girls from the girls' dormitory went to their department. Gerald's emergence had made Alice, Jacelyn, and the rest of the girls in their gang particularly surprised.

Their impression of Gerald was that he was honest regardless of his financial status. They never thought that Gerald would come over to their department today.

Moreover, the current Gerald was no longer who he used to be. In the past, in order to defend Jacelyn and Alice, a rich young man from Mayberry had been beaten up by Jacelyn's ex-boyfriend Danny Xanders and his cousin Luke Evans.

From then on, there was an act of wild revenge that had also affected Alice Bradford's family.

Gerald had brought Mr. Harrison forward to settle this matter at a hotel.

Since then, Alice and Jacelyn speculated that Gerald Crawford must be an extraordinary person or even that rich young man from Mayberry himself. However, they also doubted the latter as they felt that Gerald did not have that vibe. They were only confident that Gerald was not just any other ordinary guy, he was quite rich.

These thoughts gave Jacelyn feelings of regret, and Alice, feelings of intense regret and thankfulness. They had always longed for an opportunity to make peace with Gerald, leave the past behind, and start over.

Alice was really surprised at her encounter with Gerald early in the morning at the department she was studying in. He was the person she wanted to look for but was unable to get hold of ever since that incident.

"Gerald, to whom are you giving something?" Alice lowered her head and asked him softly after tidying up her hair. She was as meek as a little sheep.

Could it be that... Gerald had changed his mind? After all, Naomi, Hayley, and Harper wanted to ship Gerald and Alice together, so it was obvious that Alice and Gerald did have feelings for each other.

Furthermore, Alice was confident that Gerald definitely liked her from the start. She also had never heard of Gerald being in close contact with anybody else from the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting.

Alice's heart was pounding.

"Haha, who else? Alice, how would Gerald be able to answer your question?" Hayley interrupted as she clapped her hands happily.

Hayley also looked at Gerald with admiration while saying, "Gerald, I really can't tell that you would do this. After you became wealthier, your emotional intelligence also became so much higher to the extent where you know how to create surprises, and this is a very big surprise indeed, haha!"

Gerald agreed that today was indeed quite surprising. He also found it quite difficult to answer this question.

'D*mn it!' Gerald thought in his head. He had simply bought a bouquet of roses for Mila to ask her out for a walk. It was just as simple as that. Who would have known that the girls in her department would flock and gather together just to see a student visiting from another department?! And now, he had even bumped into Alice!

Also, he was obviously being misunderstood by Hayley and Alice. Gerald was about to explode. Worst still, there were many boys and girls, all of which had gathered around the stairs, surrounding Gerald and Alice and putting both of them in the spotlight. Some of the students were even using their cell phones to record them.

"Oh my, oh my, oh my! This is breaking news! Look, a penniless d*ckhead from the Department of Literature is actually confessing his love to goddess Alice Bradford from the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting!" Some of the girls uttered in disbelief.

Oh my goodness, who would fall for this kind of person? He was quite shameless!

"D*mn, he actually confessed to goddess Alice Bradford? That's aggressive!" Two boys mocked Gerald in disbelief.

At the same time, there was a voice from the other side. "Mila, hurry, come over here! Another person is here to confess their love!"

Chapter 216

Mila had been reading the same page of the same book for a while now.

Suddenly one of her classmates shouted at her excitedly. "Mila! Let's go and have a look!"

"I'm not interested!" Mila frowned.

"How could you not be interested to watch a freak from the Literature Department trying to confess to his goddess!"

"What?" Mila was shocked as her body trembled.

Gerald belongs to the Department of Literature and the freak...

Even though Mila knew about Gerald's true identity but she always felt that Gerald can be quite a freak sometimes. Mila liked the way Gerald acted in front of her. She always thought he was kind of silly and cute but unforgettable.

Gerald was the first person Mila could think of when she heard the word freak. Does that mean he finally realized her? Was he going to confess to herself?

Mila immediately got up and her chair dropped on the floor as ran out of her classroom. She saw a bunch of people standing in the corridor and Gerald was in the middle holding a bouquet of flowers.

It was really him! Mila was already excited but she kept her distance and her heart was pounding loudly.

"Do you guys really think that a girl so cool like Alice would accept his confession?"

"No way! Alice is a bitch that only dates rich guys!"

"What are you guys talking about? He's after Alice?" The smile on Mila's face disappeared when she heard the students talking and she was stunned.

She felt her heart throbbing and tears in her eyes.

“Ah! Mila, you’re here. This freak has been with Alice for a while now. Look, she’s just right beside him!”

Mila was looking for Gerald earlier on and she did not notice that Alice was just standing beside her.

Mila gulped and her face turned pale. All these while she felt stupid for thinking that Gerald was after her but he was actually in love with Alice.

Mila always thought that Gerald would never abandon her and would only be nice to her. She believed that Gerald was in love with her after he got nervous that she was jealous for complimenting another girl. Mila had been thinking a lot and even thought about confessing her love to him.

It seemed like Mila was too naive. Gerald was a wealthy heir and as long as he has money he could have all the girls in the world! He could play with her feelings for all he cared!

Gerald came all the way to her department just to confess to another girl. Was it still not clear that he was just fooling around with her?

Mila was really upset to find out that everything Gerald had done was just an act!

Meanwhile everyone was watching Gerald and Alice. Even Hayley and the others were standing aside and Gerald was confused but he did not know what to do.

Gerald was confused. He did not know what to do and Alice actually had feelings for him ever since she found out that he became rich and had connections.

Alice did not mind being his girlfriend even though she used to look down on him for being poor and she still did because she thought he just got lucky.

But considering that he has some money and had helped her before she would not mind giving him a chance.

Chapter 217

“Alright! I’ll accept you!” Alice said as she combed her hair.

“Woah! The goddess has accepted the love of a freak?”

“I didn’t just hear this wrongly did I? The Alice that has rejected many rich guys but accepts this freak to be his girlfriend? She usually won’t even look at those rich guys!”

“Does that mean that our Goddess actually likes freaks? Damn! I should have become a freak! Isn’t this Alice’s first love?”

A bunch of guys were heartbroken while a bunch of girls were in disbelief.

They all thought Alice must have gone crazy. Gerald was not very good looking but they never thought that Alice with such high standards would fall for him.

However, no matter what they think, Alice has indeed accepted Gerald. She even took the flowers from Gerald.

Alice walked back to her class blushing.

“Tonight has to be yours, Gerald!” Hayley and the others were jumping up and down excitedly.

Meanwhile, Jacelyn was pissed off. She glared at Gerald and walked off. What was he even thinking? Gerald should know that Jacelyn liked her since the day she had dated Danny. How could he confess to another girl! Jacelyn was hurt.

The only person who was confused was Gerald. He was supposed to meet Mila but how did he become Alice’s boyfriend?

What the fuck? He had not spoken a single word!

Gerald wanted to explain himself on the spot but he did not know what to say when there were so many people watching them.

He just went out of focus for a while and everything went out of hand. It would be very embarrassing for Alice if he explained on the spot that he was not here to confess to her. Especially when Hayley and the others were very excited around them, it made him want to explain for himself even more but he just could not do it on the spot.

"I have to talk to Alice later on! I cannot stay here any longer. If Mila sees it, I'm going to be so dead!" Gerald scratched his head as he left.

"Gerald!" Someone shouted.

Gerald was shocked when he heard her voice. It was Mila.

Gerald realized that Mila was watching through the crowds. This was going to be bad!

"Mila, I can explain!" Gerald was nervous.

Gerald had to admit that he really did like Alice at first because she was really pretty but after a while he did not have any feelings for her anymore and Gerald had always wanted to confess to Mila. She was not someone that could be easily replaced.

However, it was too late for him to explain himself.

"It's okay, Gerald. I understand. You have my blessings!" Mila said as she stuttered.

"You're so fucking disgusting! After all those things you said to Mila everyday and now you went after another girl? What are you so proud of, jerk? Mila was so blinded by you, disgusting cocksucker!"

"Fucking disgusting asshole!"

Mila's roommates knew Gerald and they all started scolding them viciously that they nearly spat on him.

“Get out of our Broadcasting Department now!” some of the girls shouted at him.

“It was a mistake! Mila, listen to me...”

Before Gerald could explain himself, Mila gave him a tight slap and gave him a look as if she was telling him to do what he pleased. She then walked off and Gerald was left dumbfounded.

Chapter 218

Gerald never thought that this would be such a big news.

Everyone was discriminating against him after that and he did not even know how he left the Broadcasting Department.

Why did he care so much about what Alice was thinking?

Why did he care so much about what the others were thinking?

Why didn't he just explain himself?

If only he had explained for himself, there would not be so much trouble!

Gerald was extremely frustrated.

Meanwhile, Alice texted Gerald. “Hey Gerald! Hayley and the others would like to have dinner together. Would you like to join?”

Gerald sighed. He wanted to tell Alice that he does not like her and he did not want to confess to her and it was all a misunderstanding so badly. However, Alice was so happy and Hayley and the others were excited too.

Gerald did not know what to say. Maybe it's the problem with all Libras. They were always so conflicted with themselves!

“You guys go ahead! I still have things to do. Send me the bill after!” Gerald replied.

Gerald decided to explain to Alice when all of this was over.

Alice could also feel that something was wrong with Gerald’s reply. “What do you mean we go ahead? Are you bored of me already?” Alice replied.

Gerald turned off his phone and started walking around the school aimlessly.

“Vroom! Vroom!”

Suddenly, there were sounds of some cars' motors surrounding him.

Five Ferraris drove into the school campus loudly and the entire school was lit. One of the cars passed by Gerald and it almost hit him. He stumbled backwards and fell on the ground because he was not paying attention.

“Wow! There’s so many Ferraris!”

“Oh my goodness! Which master is here? Damn! If only I could be in one of these cars, I don’t mind my hair being messy!”

“It must be Uriah! But who are they here for?”

Most of the girls were attracted by the cars even the guys came over and looked. Everyone was impressed while discussing the cars.

A male student came down from the car and started scolding Gerald. “Are you fucking blind? Why didn’t you dodged? Silas would have ran over you!”

The student had a head of red hair and was really good looking.

Gerald usually wore really casual clothes to school; hence he always passed off as a normal student. As a result, the redhead looked down on him.

“Look at him, Jayden! He’s just like one of those nerds around. Why bother being mad at him?”

“Hahaha! That’s right, Jayden! You might scare him to death by shouting at him like that!” There were two other girls in the car. They felt super proud to be around people like Jayden.

“I’ll deal with him later! Let’s go see Silas!” Jayden walked toward the car in the middle and opened the car door.

“Silas?”

“Damn! Jayden is already so handsome and cool! Who could this Silas be?”

“I know! Don’t you know the Mayberry Commercial Street’s CEO has been replaced by a new man called Mr. Zeke? This Silas’ last name is also Zeke, so...” Some of the girls were going crazy!

“Oh yes! I’ve heard that Mr. Zeke’s son will be attending our school!” Some of the girls were gossiping about Jayden Zeke really loudly.

Everyone knew the existence of Mayberry Commercial Street’s boss, Crawford but no one has actually seen him. How could they compare it with the Jayden Zeke that they could see?

The girls told themselves that even if they can’t get in touch with Crawford, there was a Jayden Zeke. As long as they try hard enough, they might actually succeed!

Love is unpredictable!

Meanwhile, Jayden was holding the door for Silas Zeke. He stepped out of the driver seat slowly and the atmosphere of the school was frozen still.

Chapter 219

Until the guy completely stood out of the car, everyone around was excited!

“Wow! He’s so handsome!” Some girls were jumping up and down excitedly.

The guy was wearing a pair of sunglasses and he was quite good looking and cool. Even his aura was very attractive!

He smirked and introduced himself. “ Good afternoon everyone! I actually wanted to introduce myself at the welcoming party later on but since most of you are here, I shall introduce myself first. I came from Northbay, used to study in Northbay University and now as all of you may know that my father, Michael Zeke, will be the new CEO of Mayberry Commercial Street. Hence, I’ll be finishing my studies at Mayberry University!”

“Of course, I may be rich but I’m not that kind of arrogant rich dude so, if any of you would like to visit Mayberry Commercial Street, feel free to mention my name! I’m Silas Zeke!” Silas then threw his sunglasses to the ground looking very cool.

“Oh my goodness! He’s so handsome and the Mayberry Commercial Street belonged to them from now on!”

“I love you, Silas! Marry me!”

“I want you child, Silas!”

Some of the girls shouted boldly.

Silas’ subordinates shook their heads. They were so used to all these creepy comments everywhere they went!

“Let’s go to the Department of Economics and Management to have a look at our classroom!”

Silas went back into his car and Jayden turned his head to Gerald and gave him a middle finger. “I’ll make sure to run my car over you the next time, fucker!”

The cars drove off while the girls were still cheering.

He was Michael’s son. He was kind of crazy!

Gerald was slightly pissed off by the fact that he almost ran over him but he can’t do anything about it because then his identity will be exposed.

He cannot risk his identity being exposed. In fact, it was Michael’s son. He had to save him some dignity as well.

Meanwhile, Gerald got up and he was ready to leave. It had been a long day for him today. He felt really wronged after everything that had happened.

“Haha! That freak almost got run over just now!”

“Yeah! He wouldn’t be able to pay for it if he really got run over by the car!”

“Look at Silas and that freak. They are both men but they are so different!”

“Forget about it! Let’s go to the Economics and Management Department to look for Silas!”

Many girls started walking toward the Department of Economics and Management and when they walked past Gerald, they all gave him a disgusted look.

Gerald finally reached the small park sadly for a moment of silence. He had to come up with something for Mila.

At the same time, Queta called. "Gerald, I took leave today! Let's visit Yorknorth Mountain!"

That big mountain was called the Yorknorth Mountain and Gerald promised Queta to bring her there after she took leave for the day.

"Alright. I'll give Zack a call and get him to prepare all the information then we can go together!" Gerald took a deep breath after he finished the call.

Chapter 220

Since they were going to the Yorknorth Mountain, Gerald should cut himself some slacks!

After meeting up with Zack, Gerald went to pick up Queta and they all went to the Yorknorth Mountain. Zack had made all kinds of arrangements, hence the Head of the village were waiting for their arrival.

The development of Yorknorth Village had never been good because of the location and the roads were bumpy. Now that they know someone might invest in the area, the head of the village was very concerned.

It was Gerald's first time managing such a big project and he was slightly nervous. After reading the information that Zack had given him and experiencing the breeze by the mountain, he felt very relaxed.

There was a spring by the mountain and a waterfall falling from the top of the mountain. The air was really fresh up there.

When Gerald saw all these, he knew that he must develop this place.

Zack was in charge of the contracts while Gerald was going to be the first person to invest in the Yorknorth Mountain Village. The cost of the entire village was five million!

Gerald had to pay extra three million on top of the other two million from his sister. But it was totally worth it.

After signing the papers, the head of the village mentioned that there were some details that they had to discuss. Gerald let Zack handle it by himself and then he left with Queta to take a look around the mountain.

Since Queta was familiar with that village, she brought him around and they went to the old lake, the Rodefot Lake.

Gerald felt much better sitting by the lakeside.

Suddenly there was noise from behind.

“Wow, Hayward! Didn’t know your hometown is so beautiful! Let’s host a barbeque party here tonight!”

“Wow! This place is so beautiful! It’s such a shame that we will be working at Mayberry in the future or I might marry you! Hahaha!”

A few young people were talking as they were walking toward the lake.

They sounded like they love nature but at the same time they love money.

“Something big happened yesterday and barbeque parties have been banned since yesterday though. But all of you looked like you guys really want it, so we can try but we’ll have to clean up real nicely! Especially the ashes!” The guy named Hayward said.

“Oh yes! Barbeque party and beers! No one is leaving sober tonight!” Everyone else cheered.

“What was the big ‘thing’ that you mentioned just now, Hayward? You’ve been so secretive since this morning!” Someone was getting curious.

“I can’t say much because my dad told me not to tell anyone. But I’ll tell you guys a little. Someone will be here to sign contracts today to sponsor the development of Yorknorth!”

“Damn!” Everyone was shocked and excited.

If it was true, Hayward would be rich too!

They were walking toward the lake as they were talking and Gerald realized one of their voices sounded very familiar. He turned around and he saw Lilian, Sharon, and some other people.

Chapter 221

“Gerald?”

Lilian and Sharon walked over and they glanced at Gerald and Queta.

Lilian and Sharon had always wanted to go on a trip before they graduate and previously they heard about how beautiful Yorknorth was from Hayward and he had invited them to pay a visit. Since they were free, they decided to visit the Yorknorth Mountain. They never thought that they would see Gerald there.

“You know him, Lilian?” one of the girls frowned.

They were judging Gerald by the way he looked and then they glanced at Queta and thought she was as poor as Gerald. They were all not very friendly.

“Of course! He’s the high school classmate that I’ve mentioned yesterday. What a coincidence!” Lilian sneered.

Lilian was surprised the last time she found out that Gerald knew Yancy at the class gathering. Everyone thought Gerald was finally being advanced but then she soon realized Yancy did not even remember him after the gathering.

When people asked Yancy if he knew who Gerald was, he immediately answered no. Rumour has it that Yancy always acted as if he knew somebody. The last time at the gathering, he must be fooling around with Gerald too.

After Lilian knew that, she felt good for insulting Gerald.

“Is that your girlfriend, Gerald?” Sharon asked.

Gerald then shook his head.

Poor people should find a girlfriend that was equally poor. Looking at the both of them made Sharon feel that they were really cheap.

Sharon felt so ridiculous reminiscing the days that she flirted with Gerald.

“No, this is my best friend!” Gerald said.

“I’d say, even though Queta is poor, she’s pretty enough to not be Gerald’s girlfriend!” Hayward said. He knew Queta since young and knew that her foster parents were living at Yorknorth Village.

“Hayward, you know her?”

“Of course! Let me tell you about her...” Hayward whispered to the girls.

The girls looked at Queta even more scornfully.

Queta knew that Hayward was telling them that she was an orphan, a child that nobody wanted. She was holding onto the corner of her shirt tightly because she felt embarrassed.

Gerald grabbed her hand letting her know that he was by her side and said, “Let’s get out of here, Queta!”

Gerald did not want to have anything to do with his high school classmates.

“Aw, someone is angry! Since you guys are here, why not have some skewered lamb? I believe you guys have not tasted it before. We need someone to help us with the skewers too. You two should stay!” Lilian sneered as she said.

Lilian just got the idea of having two free laborers that could work for them and it was a waste to not use them.

Gerald ignored them.

“Queta, do you think you should be leaving? Don’t you remember who saved your foster parents’ gravestone? We are treating you to a meal and all we need is some help with the skewers!” Hayward taunted her playfully.

Hayward didn't talk much last time because he didn't have any status. Things have changed now. People were channeling around him ever since the village was going to be developed.

Chapter 222

His insults were very useful toward Queta though. Queta stopped and said, “You could leave first, Gerald. I’ll help them!”

Queta knew everything about Gerald and promised to cover up for him. She knew Gerald would not do these kinds of things and these people did not deserve to let Gerald serve them.

Queta decided to stay.

Gerald did not want to leave Queta alone. It was just skewers! He then decided to accompany Queta.

After they decided to stay, he called Zack and told him about his situation and asked him to go back by himself first.

Meanwhile, Hayward and the others immediately ordered some lamb, barbeque stove and a few boxes of beer.

The barbeque party had then started.

It took Gerald and Queta hours to finish putting those meat together.

“Here’s 50 skewered for you two. Take a small stove and move aside!” Lilian arrogantly passed Gerald some skewered and went back to their stove.

That was all Gerald wanted.

Suddenly he heard them shouting.

“Sharon, are you serious? Are you really going to break up with Murphy?”

“Yeah. We had been arguing for the past two days and I really think we aren’t that match. I’m going to let him know tonight! In fact, I think Murphy has been flirting with another girl too!” Sharon said.

“What a jerk! How could he do that to you behind your back? He seemed to love you a lot! That’s so disgusting! You deserve someone better!” a girl shouted.

“I agree! If Murphy is such a jerk, you should really just break up with him! There are better looking and richer guys out there!” Lilian said.

Sharon nodded as she caressed her hair.

Truth to be told, Sharon had already decided to break up with Murphy ever since the class gathering when she saw Murphy acting like a slave in front of Yancy.

She used to think that as long as the guy was good to her and was hardworking, she would not mind but she was too naive.

Especially in front of rich people, you would be nothing if you’re just working for them.

Gerald was a very good example. No matter how hardworking he was, he would still be working for other people.

Sharon's mindset was slowly changing.

"Sharon, as a friend and it's not the first time we are seeing each other so, I have to tell you that you deserve a better one!" Hayward said.

Sharon looked at Hayward as she combed her hair and smiled. The gesture was as if she was telling Hayward she would give her best.

Everyone there felt something about that gesture. They all felt that Sharon was interested in Hayward and Hayward felt the same too.

They were flirting with each other.

Sharon knew that after Hayward had become rich, it would be better to be with him as compared to be with Murphy.

Lilian frowned at their gestures. Jealousy got in her head.

Hayward was her classmate and she would only introduce so many male friends to Sharon because she has a boyfriend, Murphy. After knowing that Hayward was going to be rich, Lilian wanted to make her move on him but she realized she might have just brought Hayward and Sharon together.

Lilian would have never thought that her best friend would be her enemy and she was annoyed.

Meanwhile Gerald came over to take some skewers and Lilian threw her temper at him.

"You disgusting imbecile! All you do is fucking eat! Asshole!!"

Chapter 223

Lilian was jealous.

She was in no way in a good mood and felt Gerald more of an eyesore when she saw him coming over.

She could still maintain some basic form of courtesy in the past, but as soon as Lillian saw him, she started scolding him.

In short, she had said lots of bad stuff in public.

Everyone came, and after some persuading, Lilian finally cooled down a little.

Gerald really wanted to do one thing right now. He was dying to give Lilian a tight slap across her face.

It was already bad enough that she was continually ridiculing him.

Now, she was directly provoking and looking down on him.

"Okay. That's enough, Lilian. Why nitpick? If he is willing to eat, then just let him eat. You have your own reputation to take care of. After all, you will become a teacher, and you'll have a stable job with a permanent income!" Hayward said with a smile.

When she saw that Hayward had personally come over to persuade her, Lilian finally calmed down.

"Sigh. This person just makes me so annoyed and frustrated. Although you were poor before, Brother Hayward, at least you are rich now after receiving compensation. You won't forget and disregard me just because of that, right?" Lilian asked as she leaned onto Hayward.

"Why would I even do that? No matter what happens, you, Lilian, will always be my good friend," Hayward replied with a laugh.

Those words made Sharon feel a little uncomfortable.

In fact, everyone present could sense something wrong in the atmosphere tonight, and obviously, a tug of war was brooding between Lilian and Sharon.

Both rivals kept fighting secretly as they stuck around Hayward.

Hayward's hometown was about to be redeveloped. No matter how things would shape up, he was sure to receive a few properties in return. And just like that, he would bag a few million dollars, and his financial security ensured.

It was no wonder the two beauties were fighting so fiercely over him.

"Gerald, come here! This one's already roasted!"

Queta looked at Gerald, now clenching his fists, and looked like he was about to explode. Hurriedly, she pulled Gerald aside.

Queta continued advising and persuading Gerald.

And Gerald did not lose his temper because of her persuasion.

Hahaha. They could patronize him all they wanted now. One thing, though. He couldn't help but wonder what Lilian and Sharon's faces would look like when he could finally announce his identity.

Would they regret their actions today?

Gerald smiled bitterly.

Ignoring them, he simply enjoyed the view of the lake with Queta.

That night, Hayward put everyone up at the village guest house.

Gerald saw that it was late at night, and it seemed as though Queta really wanted to spend the night here. It was probably because she missed the times she had with her adopted parents.

After Lilian and the others retreated to their rooms, Gerald got Queta and himself a room each.

In short, apart from the incident with Lilian, Gerald's day was reasonably relaxing.

He really couldn't wait for the mountain to be developed. When that happened, he could live all by himself in peace and quiet.

It was a quiet night.

Early the next morning, he drove Queta down the hill. He hoped he wouldn't run into Lillian and the others. He might just beat them up for real this time.

Gerald suddenly hit the brakes, and the car came to an abrupt halt.

"There is still some time before you start work, and I have some spare time before my class starts. Let's go to that Michelin Restaurant for some food." Gerald pointed at the Michelin Starred Restaurant beside the road.

"Wow? I've heard my colleagues saying Michelin Restaurants are really pricey. Only the rich like you can afford those places! I'm not going in!"

Queta shook her head and looked to the floor.

Gerald smiled. "Don't worry! I'm cool if you feel like dining here every day."

Ever since he became posh, Gerald's confidence had puffed up significantly, especially in the way he spoke.

Chapter 224

So what if the Michelin was costly? Couldn't he afford eating here every day?

Queta could not stop Gerald from quickly booking a nice table directly from the internet.

In the end, Gerald decided to bring Queta into the Michelin Restaurant.

"Hello, Sir. The number of guests?"

After they entered the restaurant, the waitress walked over and greeted them with a smile.

"Two of us! I have already booked a table!"

Gerald replied calmly.

The waitress frowned a little. After all, no matter how she looked at the two, neither looked like they could afford to eat at the Michelin Restaurant.

However, she simply nodded politely because of her professionalism.

She was about to ask Gerald which table he had booked.

At this time, a couple of men and women walked over to them.

When the girl saw Gerald, she was utterly stunned. "Gerald, why are you here? You actually came to the Michelin Restaurant?"

"Ehh? Sara?"

Gerald was a little surprised to see Sara, who was exceptionally beautiful today. She was dressed in a black and tight short dress.

Gerald could clearly remember everything that happened at Felicity's birthday banquet. The crazy woman had thrown her cell phone away, even splashing a glass of water on him just because he touched it.

He was furious at that time, seriously considering looking for Sara to avenge himself. As a result, the madwoman had taken off, and he found nobody when he tried to look for her.

Gerald was filled with hatred and resentment for the past few days because of this matter. Unexpectedly, he would run into her at the Michelin Restaurant, early in the morning.

"Hmph! Why are you saying my name out loud? Who said that you can say my name as and when you want to? Gerald, unexpectedly a pathetic person like you actually dare to come to this kind of place? Oh my. You even have a girlfriend?"

Sara uttered in contempt when she saw the woman standing next to Gerald.

"Sara, do you know these two?"

A lanky and attractive boy standing next to Sara stared coldly at Gerald and Queta.

“Of course I know him. He’s just a pauper in Felicity’s class. Didn’t you say that the Michelin is Mayberry City’s most exclusive restaurant? How can the likes of these two enter a restaurant like this? Just look at what they wear!”

Sara clutched Finn’s arm as she complained impatiently.

She was initially thrilled that she had the chance to dine in at the posh and classy Michelin Restaurant.

Women were inherently vain.

Sara and Finn sat by the large glass window, and everyone who passed had a clear view of what was going on inside.

Their envious glances elated Sara greatly.

A brief introduction of Finn, by the way.

Finn was also a student from Sunnydale University. Being one of the rich heirs, he instantly fell in love with Sara after watching her live broadcast. He even went as far as to reward her with three thousand dollars. Unbeknownst to him, he had gradually become Sara’s biggest fan and also her ambiguous lover.

So, there they were, enjoying their meal together in a place they could rave about. However, Sara completely didn’t expect she would run into, of all persons, Gerald, when she returned from the washroom.

It was all too humiliating.

“Hahaha! Don’t worry about it, Sara. You probably said it right. These two are probably here to work. How could they possibly afford to eat here?” Finn hurriedly coaxed Sara.

“Hmph! Like I care! Anyway, the last person I want to see in the morning is this.. thing. It really dampens my spirits. This is really dampening my spirit! I’d like to give the word to your manager: stop hiring such low-class waiters. You people should have gotten staff that that fit your class. Otherwise, what other rich fools apart from us would dine here?”

Sara continued acting like a spoiled brat, mocking the waitress as she went on a patronizing rampage.

“Ahh? Dear lady... these are not our waiters! Perhaps they are guests who are here to dine in?” she quickly told Sara.

Staring at Gerald from top to bottom, she perhaps sounded a little condescending since she’d been looking down on Gerald since the beginning.

“Damn it? Not a waiter?”

Sara was taken aback.

At this point, Gerald had enough.

He stared coldly at the waitress. "Have you said enough? Where's the table I booked? Hurry up and bring me to my table right now. I came here today to try your food!"

Chapter 225

"Sir, I am really sorry, but our shop generally serves non-budget meals...why won't you take a look at this..."

The waitress said apologetically.

Of course, she would not be so stupid to offend guests such as Sara because of these kinds of people.

"Is that so?" replied Gerald, smiling bitterly.

After that, he took out his cell phone before showing the order form for the VIP table he had just reserved online.

When the server realized what she had gotten her hands into, she instantly tensed up.

This man had actually reserved a VIP table!

Serving a VIP table would bag her 300 dollars in commission, not to mention the violinist who was specially hired to play for those reservations.

The look on the waitress's face almost instantly changed from contempt to enthusiasm.

"Please, Sir! Please come inside!"

With a slight bow, she brought Gerald to a place clearly separated from the common dining area.

After that, a violinist in suit and leather shoes put his fiddle on his shoulder and played for Gerald's table.

The experience shocked Sara quite a bit.

She would have been greatly honored to sit by the window, what more, this.

Instead of the pathetic jerk, he was supposed to be, Gerald had actually become the house's distinguished guest, not to mention the special treatment he was given.

'Where did Gerald find so much money?' Sara was indefinitely puzzled.

"How much money do you have, anyway? I must say, Gerald, you actually dare to spend your money like this? Hahaha! Trying to pretend you're really rich and cool to impress your little girlfriend now?"

Unconvinced, Sara continued to mock Gerald.

Gerald simply turned a deaf ear to her words.

He really couldn't be bothered about this woman anymore.

Now that she had a slap across her face, how could she still have something to say?

“Would you like to buy some flowers, Sir? These are beautiful Damascus roses from Bulgaria. A little expensive, they may be, but they are all but worthy of your stature. You should buy a bouquet for your lovely lover over here.”

A beautiful waitress from a foreign land pushed a cart carefully from table to table.

As she moved along, the fragrance of the flowers followed her. Diners around the restaurant were instantly attracted by the roses’ color and fragrance.

“It’s a Damascus rose, one of the world’s most famous roses!. I’ve always wanted to receive a bouquet of those. Finn... can you buy me one?”

When the incredibly romantic rose caught her eye, Sara instantly turned her gaze away from Gerald.

She seemed to be bewitched by the flower, unable to stop staring at the cart.

“Alright, alright! I’ll buy you anything as long as you like it!”

Finn shook the gold watch on his wrist before picking a bouquet of the roses from the cart. With around 30 stalks of flowers in each bouquet, they emanated an exceedingly fragrant scent.

“How much is this?” Finn asked.

“Thank you, Sir. You are very discerning. These will be perfect for your beautiful girlfriend,” replied the beautiful waitress with a grin as sweet as the blossoms she sold.

“Alright, okay then. How much would it be th...” he asked, confidently pulling out his wallet.

Finn felt elated and was filled with pride when he saw that almost everyone in the Michelin stared at him with envy and respect.

“There are thirty-six stalks of roses in this bouquet, so that makes it.. only one thousand and eighty dollars!”

“What?”

Finn’s hands shook a little, and with eyes open as wide as golf balls, his wallet dropped to the ground.

He has already heard of roses costing around three to four hundred dollars.

Although he had heard about rose bouquets going up to four hundred dollars, it was his first hearing of one that cost more than a cool one grand!

Finn was utterly stunned.

“What’s the matter with you, Finn? They reserve these especially for the wives of several countries leaders. The petals of these roses are tremendously tender and silky, professionally cultivated before they were planted. When done properly, these roses can live for more than three months without withering. I believe they should be worth at least ten to twelve thousand dollars!”

When Sara saw Finn’s dumbfounded expression, she attempted to beg him. She desperately wanted those roses!

The beautiful waitress nodded as well. "Sir, I could tell from a first glance that your girlfriend must be a flower connoisseur. She could immediately tell that these are very, very, valuable! Would you like to pay by credit card or cash?"

"Cough. What? Oh, I don't want it anymore. I suddenly remembered; I've already ordered another bouquet for Sara!"

The corners of Finn's mouth twitched slightly.

After that, he hurriedly put the bouquet of roses back on the cart.

Sara was devastated, especially since many were now gawking awkwardly and laughing at them.

She became humiliated and embarrassed.

It was all thanks to her vanity.

She thought she found a very wealthy and capable man for herself, and although he couldn't be compared to Brother Ordinary Man, he was still an extremely competent individual.

Sara thought she could finally experience what it was like to be spoiled stupid by money.

However, as she looked toward Finn, it was apparent she'd been overthinking a little.

Chapter 226

Finn didn't mind spending a thousand five to three thousand dollars. He couldn't spend more even if he wanted to anyway, let alone spend twelve thousand dollars for a bouquet.

She turned to look around, desperately wanting to avoid the mocking glances of the restaurant's guests. Instead, all she saw was Gerald looking toward her. He seemed to be happily chatting away to that unsightly girlfriend of his.

Without warning, Sara burst out in a fit of rage. She stood up and pointed directly at Gerald, who was at the VIP table, before screaming at him at the top of her lungs.

"Damn it, Gerald! What are you laughing at?!"

That pathetic loser! What was so funny? Didn't he reserve a VIP table just to act rad? How dare he laugh at her?

"Huh? Who said I'm laughing at you? I am just looking at the flowers. Why?? Does that bother you too?" replied Gerald in anger.

Since he saw that Queta seemed to fancy those roses a lot, he asked her which ones she wanted. For that, he got one hell of a reprimand from Sara.

"Oh, god! Are you actually interested in the roses? What makes you think you're worthy of them?" Sara sneered.

Gerald shook his head helplessly and said nothing after that.

Instead, he snapped his fingers and motioned the waitress selling the flowers over to him.

When she saw that her services were being required, the waitress smiled and eagerly pushed the cart over to Gerald.

“How many roses are there?”

“Sir? Are you asking about the number of roses in this cart?” the beautiful waitress asked in astonishment. “A total of one thousand and one roses, sir!” she went on enthusiastically.

“One thousand and one roses. So, that should be about thirty thousand dollars then?”

“That would be about right, Sir. May I ask, Sir, what do you intend to do?” the waitress asked as she stared at Gerald with her eyes wide open.

Queta, meanwhile, realized what Gerald was about to do. Indeed, she’d been staring at those Damascus roses for a while now.

She remembered seeing them in her textbooks when she was young.

A sudden and surprising turn of events today helped her finally see the magic of the Damascus rose.

Having only seen the roses in pictures, she couldn’t help but stare at them in a daze.

Gerald must be planning to buy all the roses since he could tell that she really wanted them.

She was just about to dissuade him when it was already too late.

Gerald had already taken out his bank card, and nonchalantly, he said,

“I’ll take all of them, and I’ll pay by card.”

“Excuse me?”

The waitress was stunned.

Sara gulped in shock, feeling as though she had just been served a tight slap on her face.

This couldn’t be happening. Was that pathetic loser still playing rich?

He had to be putting on an act. How could he possibly have that much money?

However, the card’s successful transaction’s unmistakable sound felt like countless slaps pattering Sara’s face, one after the other.

That was thirty thousand dollars!

Oh god. Gerald actually had more than thirty thousand dollars, and he spent all of it as if it didn’t matter the slightest?

“I will be sending these to your residence, and I’m sure they’ll find a place in your beautiful home!”

Gerald wasn’t even bothered to look at Sara’s shocked expression.

Instead, he continued chatting with Queta as they enjoyed their meal together.

Once they were done eating, they left the restaurant.

Not even once did Gerald bother to look at Sara.

Sara felt an awful pain in her after seeing Gerald ignoring her completely.

Good god... a man she'd despised and looked down on all the while turned out to be filthy rich?

What?!

No. She had to figure it out!

Snapping out of her stupor, Sara immediately chased after Gerald.

However, all she saw was the rear end of the Lamborghini pulling away from the front of the restaurant. Where were Gerald and that girl he was with?

"Isn't that a luxury sports car? Oh, god, finally! I see somebody driving that thing. It seems as though the mysterious rich young man has already made an appearance. Why didn't I approach him earlier? If only I was a step quicker, I would have seen who that rich and young man was. What a waste!"

Sara stomped her feet anxiously. Once again, the boat had left the dock, and she missed the opportunity to meet the rich and young man.

But then...

Something seemed to cross Sara's mind. She gasped in horror.

No!

Where was Gerald???

Chapter 227

She saw the Lamborghini leaving as soon as she came out.

Gerald was gone too.

But where could Gerald be then?

Could that mean that...

Damn!

She did not even dare think about it. She really didn't dare think about it anymore!

Sara took a deep breath. Wasn't that confirmation that Gerald was the Lamborghini's owner?

Sara suddenly thought of the first time she met Gerald. At that time, unceremoniously sliced watermelon on the Lamborghini's hood.

Now, Gerald was here, and that car was also here!

Not to mention how Sara personally witnessed Gerald blowing off thirty thousand dollars without hesitation whatsoever!

Argh!

Gerald was the owner of that car? How wealthy was Gerald really?

Sara was petrified, unable to accept her own unbelievable deduction. It wasn't right! It couldn't possibly be true!

Gerald, on the other hand, had driven back to school after sending Queta home. He headed to the small remote parking lot, where he usually parked his car.

He then got out, locking the car behind him.

"Hello, Gerald!"

A girl suddenly jumped out from the bushes, leaving Gerald started.

"God-damn it! What are you doing?"

He took a step backward in shock.

He didn't know if he should cry or laugh when he saw the face of the unintended visitor.

The girl standing in front of him turned out to be Whitney.

"Hehehe.! I have been waiting for you for a long time, Mr. Crawford. I know you've been parking your car here."

"Wow! You are really amazing, Gerald. I really didn't expect this car to be yours. You're one bad guy. Why didn't you tell me earlier that this car belongs to you? You made me misunderstand you!"

Gerald ran into Whitney and her family when he masqueraded as Jane's boyfriend to meet her parents. Thanks to that meeting, Whitney discovered that Gerald was the owner of the beautiful coupe.

Nobody should have known about this.

After returning home, Whitney had a sleepless night, where all she could think of when she closed her eyes was Gerald.

Memories of everything that had happened between them unceremoniously invaded her mind.

The Gerald of the past used to be a pauper who had constantly gotten bullied by her.

He would always do whatever she asked him to do.

In her eyes, even a dog was worthier than Gerald could ever be.

However, Whitney had no idea what had gone wrong with her, not knowing when her attitude toward Gerald had changed.

She even wondered if she was in love with Gerald.

It did not make sense that she kept dreaming of him.

And now, no matter how she looked at him, she couldn't help feeling Gerald was absolutely stunning and charming. He was so attractive, she really wanted to bite him.

Whitney had been thinking about him and dying to see her handsome Gerald as soon as she could; she had come early to wait for him.

“Gerald... why don't you say something?” Whitney gently asked.

Gerald could feel goosebumps sprouting when he saw the look on Whitney's face.

“Erm... Whitney, you don't have to be like this. To be honest, I used to hate you for that constant bullying and mocking.... Now that I think about it, I prefer how you used to treat me. So, stop being like this, okay?” Gerald replied with a gulp.

“Hmph! I realized you have masochistic tendencies, Gerald. Well... so... do I have to scold and beat you up like I used to so you can be happy?”

Whitney winked.

Obviously, Gerald knew what the wink was all about.

He could feel pins and needles pricking his scalp.

If he knew that Whitney was this kind of girl, he would have never made known his identity.

‘How could you possibly be interested in me, sis? You are only interested in my money!’

Gerald didn't dare say it out loud, though.

Whitney tapped her feet anxiously. “Oh! You, you, you have always been so quiet since we first met. Can you be more gentlemanly? Hmph! I mistreated you in the past, and I'll now give you a chance to punish me. You can punish me in whatever way you, okay?”

Whitney approached Gerald, grabbing his arms tightly.

She'd been thinking so much about him that she was about to go insane.

Chapter 228

Of course, she was more than determined to devour Gerald whole.

Her current behavior indicated that she very strongly intended to meet her goals.

Back then, Gerald would have felt a certain sense of accomplishment if he met someone as stunning as Whitney. Now, after all that awful bullying, she was reduced to pestering him like a dog.

Now, Gerald couldn't help but panic. He felt his scalp tingling and goosebumps sprouting all over him.

Not knowing how to react, he instinctively ran away.

“Gerald, come back here!” Whitney yelled as she jumped anxiously.

She smiled to herself as Gerald ran for dear life.

Hehe! She initially thought that Gerald would hate her to the point of loathing when he saw her. Now, it rather seemed that Gerald was actually more afraid of her.

It could only mean that she still had a chance!

Thoughts coursed through her mind. Whitney crossed her arms, looking out at the Lamborghini's passenger seat.

"One day, I, Whitney, will definitely sit beside Gerald as he drives me around the school!"

Meanwhile, Gerald had already run all the way back to his classroom.

This was the very reason he never wanted to so carelessly disclose his identity.

It was definitely not narcissistic. Gerald knew all too well that materialistic gold-diggers the likes of Whitney or Xavia would pounce on him like no tomorrow.

They would simply cause a disruption in his life.

Regardless of how he was going to live after this, Gerald wholeheartedly yearned to complete his studies first.

After returning to his classroom, Gerald spotted his classmates having an eager discussion among themselves.

He could roughly make out what they were so enthusiastic about.

They must be all talking about Silas, a guy who had recently transferred to their university.

The topic was about his greatness, and the large number of girls who had confessed their love for him although he had just transferred over.

In short, everything seemed to be very glamorous.

"Gerald! You're here! Come, you've got to listen to this thing about Silas! After this, you better give us a good explanation of why you didn't tell us, your brothers, that you were getting together with Alice?"

Harper flashed a fist at Gerald.

"Gerald, too bad you were on leave yesterday. You should have been at the event the university held to welcome Silas!" said Harper.

"Why? Did they host a welcome party just for him? How could the university do something like that?"

Benjamin chipped in: "Well, they didn't exactly call it a welcome party. Silas is one pretty incredible dude. His dad invested seven and a half million just to hold a special celebration party at our university. To put it straight, wasn't it a hint that the university should hold a welcome party for Silas? Hah!"

Benjamin's tone had a hint of jealousy in it.

"Oh, you know what's even funnier? Since Cassandra, our lecturer, is one of the prettiest lecturers on campus, she was sent to welcome the guest. Guess what? She was flirting with Silas all the way! Was she drunk or what?" Harper replied as he smiled.

"Well..." Gerald chuckled, simply smiling wryly and shaking his head.

Surprised to find out what Cassandra was really like? In reality, Gerald had long known of the lecturer's true nature.

Just look at the photo she recently sent him.

As he thought about it, Gerald secretly logged into his WeChat. He was angry the other day and didn't take a good look at the picture. After hearing his classmates mentioning her, he felt a sudden urge to look at the photo again.

He then took a proper look at the pictures Cassandra sent him almost every night ever since that day. All of them had her face in it, and to say that they were inviting and seductive was a gross understatement.

Gerald was filled with enthusiasm.

He said all but one word: Promiscuous!

Out of the blue, Cassandra replied to his text in seconds.

"Who's promiscuous? Even if I am what you say I am, I only behave this way with you. It's not like I'm like that with anyone else. Hmph! Did you get jealous when you saw Silas and me getting cozy at the meeting last night? You can tell me if you are. I'll just stop looking at him then."

"I'm not jealous."

"Pfft! I don't believe you. Brother Ordinary Man, if you promise to meet up, I will show you my ***, okay?"

"We will cross the bridge when we come to it."

"You are so hateful! Okay... anyway, I'm heading to class."

Gerald felt a sense of hostility as he continued chatting with her. The more Cassandra acted like that, the stronger his yearning for revenge got.

Suddenly, the door to the lecture room flung, and a woman's shouting was heard.

"Time for class, people! Now, what's with all that noise?!"

Cassandra stormed into the classroom, phone in hand, with her face darkened and expression somber.

There was a tinge of coldness in her eyes.

She eyeballed the room with the stare of a woman scorned.

Finally, her gaze fell on Gerald.

"Gerald! come here!"

Chapter 229

"Gerald, come out!"

Cassandra scanned the classroom with a cold stare before calling Gerald out

“Gerald, there is something that I want to tell you. The husband of a college mate is opening a bar tomorrow. They are short of manpower, and there’s a part-time job over there. They pay a lot more compared to the other bars,” she harrumphed loudly as she crossed her arms.

“Part-time? I...”

Gerald was dumbfounded.

“You what? Don’t you understand what I just said? They’ll be too busy tomorrow because it’s opening day and he can’t find enough people to help him out. Did you think you could keep working there? Know where he’s going to open it? On Mayberry Commercial Street. Yes, that Mayberry Commercial Street! He’ll only be recruiting tall and handsome guys.”

“I...”

“You what? It’s settled then. I will be attending their opening ceremony tomorrow night, and you’re coming with me!”

Cassandra then looked at Gerald blankly.

“I... damn you!”

Gerald could not help but curse in his heart.

He wanted to tell her that he wasn’t feeling like it, and there was no need for him to be there at all. Cassandra, however, was an adamant woman, and there was nothing Gerald could do.

For the past three years, he had done everything Cassandra asked.

He couldn't help thinking about how Cassandra misbehaved that night and the cold demeanor she was currently displaying.

Seriously? Haha!

But the situation had gotten a little awkward now. Gerald felt that it was an inappropriate time for him to be present.

He would only be helping out for one day anyway. He scratched his head before returning to his seat.

The class that morning was dull.

Most classes at the university ended at noon.

Gerald received a text message from Alice.

'Will you be free at noon, Gerald? Come out and have lunch...'

A few short and dry words.

It suddenly struck him that he had yet to clear things up with Alice.

Alice suddenly became his girlfriend yesterday, thanks to some misunderstanding.

Gerald was a little frustrated.

Alice obviously intended to cozy up to him this time.

Frankly, if only Alice didn't disparage him in the past, he would have been more than delighted to have her as his girlfriend.

He would have treated her well, regardless.

Alice was, after all, a stunning beauty.

Despite that, all that Gerald could think of right now was Mila.

If his relationship with Alice continued to be this vague and ambiguous, he must be a real scumbag then.

If he didn't like her, why maintain the boyfriend-girlfriend association?

He should have just explained it plainly to her, or the misunderstanding would only worsen if the relationship dragged on.

Gerald thought to himself for a bit before replying in one sentence:

'Alice, let's meet up at the park after class. Come alone. I need to clarify something with you.'

Alice responded very quickly with an, 'Okay.'

After class, Gerald headed to the small park where Alice was already waiting for him.

He could tell that she had dressed up today.

When she saw him, she seemed stunned.

"Gerald! You're here?"

Alice greeted Gerald with a sweet and enchanting smile. Complicated feelings ran through her heart when she saw him.

In the past, she had always despised Gerald, looking down on him. Now, she suddenly felt that Gerald was, in fact, very handsome and his temperament particularly attractive.

She didn't know why she felt this way.

"I wanted you to buy me dinner last night, but you carried an attitude. What was that supposed to mean?" Alice asked as she walked toward Gerald.

Alice's fragrance wafted into Gerald's nose.

At the scent, he felt dreamy. The goddess he could only dream of back then was standing right here in front of him.

Hehe! It really felt like some sort of soap opera.

However, whether it was a drama or not, Gerald intended to tell her the truth.

Chapter 230

"Because I do not want to be in this relationship anymore!" blurted Gerald without holding back.

"What did you say?!"

"Erm, Alice, there's been a big misunderstanding. I... I didn't go there to pursue you. Ahem, ahem. There, I said it out already. I went there that day that I wanted to ask Mila, one of your classmates in your department, out for dinner. However, as soon as I entered, the girls from your department started surrounding me. They thought I was there to confess my love to you! After that..."

Gerald had blurted out everything he'd been holding back in his heart.

Alice started breathing hard. Every word that Gerald said felt like a sharp thorn violently piercing its way into her heart. She felt her tender body tremble.

"Then, I happened to show up, and I was mistaken that you were there to confess to me? Moreover, I even promised to become your girlfriend, right?" Alice answered with a deep frown across her brow.

“Yes! I couldn’t explain the situation there and then, considering the situation. The consequences would have been too embarrassing for you to bear!”

“Hah! I understand everything now. It turns out that I, Alice, am nothing but a fool! I’ve been played like a fiddle!” Alice replied coldly.

She had been desperately trying to get closer to him, but she got slapped before she could even do so at the end of the day.

Alice felt like a joke.

When she fell in love and got into her first relationship, she thought Quinton was the one who helped her, the reason why she got together with him in the first place. In the end, she ended up embarrassing herself.

Then, when she got into her second relationship, it was with Gerald. He was the one who always helped her out. However, he turned her down and made her feel extremely embarrassed.

Enough! She really had enough!

Wasn’t finding a wealthy and well-behaved boyfriend all she wanted?

It was all but a simple matter, so why was it so difficult for her to achieve?

Slap!!!

Alice slapped Gerald hard in frustration and anger.

“You’re an asshole, Gerald! All you have is just a tiny bit of money! You think I am one to be mocked just like that? Just you wait! One day, I, Alice, will definitely find myself a filthy rich boyfriend. I will make you regret your actions today!”

The more she thought about it, the angrier she became. After slapping Gerald, Alice glared at him with hatred and resentment in her eyes before turning around and leaving.

Gerald subconsciously touched his face.

It was then that the corners of his mouth turned upwards as he smiled bitterly.

“Well, I shouldn’t be saying this, but how could anybody possibly be richer than me in the entire world? Ahem!”

Nonetheless, the matter was resolved, and he had made everything as clear as day.

Gerald, too was glad and relieved that he didn’t cut too deep a wound on Alice as well.

So be it then.

Gerald sat down at the small park, feeling a rare sensation of deep serenity as he admired the lake's beautiful view.

His phone rang suddenly. Gerald was a little surprised when he saw the number on the caller ID. It turned out to be Mila.

Mila had broken all ties with Gerald yesterday, and she had not contacted him again since then. He answered the call in a hurry, to a peculiar sounding Mila.

“Gerald, sorry to bother you. Is it a good time to talk? There’s something I need to tell you!”

Gerald smiled bitterly.

“Of course, it’s a good time. I have no girlfriend, after all!”

“Hahaha. You made a sensational confession yesterday, Gerald. You really thought I wouldn’t see it?”

Gerald quickly understood the meaning behind Mila’s words.

He began to thoroughly explain everything that took place between him and Alice to Mila.

“Oh?”

After hearing Gerald’s explanation, Mila simply replied with one word. She didn’t even say if she believed him or not.

“Why did you want to meet?” Gerald asked.

“Do I have to have a reason to look for you?” retorted Mila, annoyed.

“No, but I am just asking because you told me that you have something to say. What is it?”

“Forget it! There’s nothing anymore!”

Beep...beep...beep...

Mila had abruptly hung up.

Gerald felt as though he was about to go crazy, feeling extremely anxious and unsettled.

Girls were tough to handle, to say the least. Smart girls were even worse!

He could never understand or figure out what went on in a girl’s mind.

Argh! Forget it!

He better look for Mila again...

Chapter 231

“Oh my god! Mila, look! That scumbag is here!”

“Isn’t he together with Alice? What is he doing outside our class?”

“Pfft! Do you think that this pathetic jerk is interested in our Mila again? Oh my god. I really can’t understand what’s going on in Alice’s mind. Why would she agree to go out with such a pathetic jerk?”

Gerald was waiting outside of Mila's classroom.

A group of her classmates immediately mocked him.

However, Gerald was already immune to all this, merely asking Mila to go out for a walk with him.

Mila was a little surprised that Gerald would come all the way here to look for her.

She had been waiting for Gerald to call her, but she became extremely disappointed after he did not. Hence, she came to class directly.

Mila agreed to his request immediately.

It was because she trusted Gerald now. In fact, Mila regretted it the moment she slapped Gerald the other day. Deep down inside, she knew he wasn't that sort of person. As soon as he explained things yesterday, she believed what he said.

Everyone was surprised when the two walked out of the classroom and stepped out of campus.

"Gerald, didn't I tell you that my eldest cousin has just come back from M country? She has been busy dealing with her business, but her schedule has freed up recently. She had always wanted to meet you!"

"I want you to treat my eldest cousin sister to dinner," replied Mila.

"Oh, oh, okay then. When?"

Gerald was relieved when he felt that Mila's anger had subsided. He agreed immediately.

"You don't have classes in the afternoon, right? Why don't we have lunch together? My eldest cousin will be busy again in a few days. She will return to M Country after she has completed her work!"

“Alright then!”

And so it was settled.

Gerald started looking for a place to eat.

He didn't want to head to Mayberry Commercial Street since too many familiar faces would be there.

Besides, it was a little too posh.

After discussing the matter, Gerald decided on a place called the Little Bamboo House.

It was a slightly quiet establishment, and although it wasn't part of Mayberry Commercial Street, it was still a restaurant developed by the Mayberry Commercial Group.

When it came to earnings, not even three restaurants on Mayberry Commercial Street could compare to the money it raked in.

As soon as he heard this, Gerald quickly booked a room at the restaurant before heading directly there with Mila.

Upon arrival, Gerald realized that the Little Bamboo House wasn't as grand or as luxurious as he thought it to be.

Instead, it all felt as though they had just entered a small mountain village after a departure from the city. All the rooms in the small building were made out of stone.

Elegant with a touch of simplicity, it looked like a cottage that came out straight from the olden days.

“Here, Sister Cara! This way!”

After a wait that lasted less than half an hour, a beautiful and fashionably dressed girl walked into the restaurant.

Gerald and Mila had been waiting outside, where Mila greeted her in excitement.

“Oh, Mila... who chose this place? Why this restaurant? It looks really outdated!”

The beautiful woman named Cara walked over to them.

She wore a disgusted look on her face as she took off her sunglasses.

“Hello, Cousin Cara. I’m Gerald. I was the one who decided on this restaurant,” Gerald replied with a slight smile.

Cara was very similar to Rita. The two were exceptionally gorgeous, and along with their extraordinary beauty came extraordinary expectations.

Gerald expected her to complain about the restaurant as soon as she arrived.

Haha! Rita, her sister, was just like this too!

Cara wasn’t the least polite, and she started speaking the moment she walked into the room.

“Oh, oh, so you are Gerald. I have always wanted to meet you. I heard my two younger sisters saying how loaded you are, and you even bought a Lamborghini after hitting the jackpot. So why did you bring me to this kind of place then?”

She even raised her hand and covered her nose slightly.

It was so clean here, so how could there possibly be any stench?

Cara got straight to the point.

“Why don’t you tell me how much money you have left from the lottery winnings?” she asked.

Gerald smirked a little.

“Not much. I’ve already spent most of it.”

“Hah! So I guessed it right! You have the typical nouveau riche mentality. It should be alright for those who can keep their wealth, but I believe you may be overdoing it considering the car you just bought!” replied Cara as she shook her head slowly.

Gerald could only nod in reply.

It seemed neither Mila nor Rita had mentioned anything about his identity to their sister.

The two had apparently kept his secret safe.

“So, Gerald, what are your plans for the future?” Cara asked once again.

Gerald could only manage a sloppy reply when posed with such a question.

“I haven’t figured it out yet!”

Chapter 232

Cara shook her head in disappointment.

Mila promptly changed topics.

“Sister Cara, didn’t you say a few friends studying and working abroad will be coming to Mayberry City today? Where are they?”

“Oh, yes, they will be here too. I initially planned for us to have lunch together so you both can get to know them too. They are all elites who have been studying abroad... but just look at this lowly place. How could I possibly ask them over?”

“Huh? I believe the restaurant Gerald booked is actually quite good, Sister Cara. Moreover, this place offers board and lodging and we can easily arrange for their accommodation,” replied Mila.

Cara could only whine helplessly. “Hahaha! What? Arrange for them to stay here? Sister, are you trying to embarrass me in front of my friends?”

Just then, her cell phone suddenly rang.

Cara answered her phone in a hurry.

“What? You have already arrived? Ahh? Your brother has already picked you up? Oh, oh, no I have not eaten yet. I am preparing to have lunch with my sister now! This place is called the Little Bamboo House. I think that it will be better for you not to come here. This place looks pretty inferior, so you should go somewhere else to eat instead!”

As she spoke, Cara glanced at Gerald with a look of disgust.

She felt that Gerald was a particularly low person.

“Oh my god! Are you really going to come here?”

Gerald and Mila did not know what they were saying over the phone but it seemed as though Cara’s friend wanted to come over to have a look at this place. Cara was horrified.

She started complaining after hanging up the phone.

“Oh, sister! Look at how you are going to embarrass me today! I pushed a gathering with some of my classmates at noon today just so that I can come and meet you. As a result, just look at what kind of place your boyfriend arranged for us to have lunch at? I was originally planning for Gerald to arrange some accommodation for my friends but just forget it!”

Cara complained silently.

Gerald was a little speechless.

Although the Little Bamboo House looked like a very humble and low-key place, aside from the exceptionally expensive meals at the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, the meals here were also exceptionally expensive.

The main focus of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was their scenery, entertainment and dining experience.

As for the Little Bamboo House, it was as the name suggested.

The main focus was an exquisite dining experience in an elegant and vintage environment.

The large bamboo house and the stone walls were used to illustrate this point.

Moreover, the chefs working at this restaurant were all top chefs who specialized in various local cuisines in the country.

However, it seemed as though Cara was rather dissatisfied. If he knew that this would be the case, he would have just arranged for them to go to the Wayfair Mountain Entertainment instead!

At the same time.

A luxury car suddenly arrived.

Cara's phone also started ringing.

Cara stood up in embarrassment as she said: "They really came here! Well, let's go out and take a look!"

Cara waved her arm and walked out of the restaurant as she answered the call.

"Lisa! Yara! You are here!"

"Yes, Cara! Oh my, what kind of place is this? It does not look impressive at all!"

Two beautiful women stepped out of the car and greeted Cara at this time.

The woman named Lisa dragged the driver out of the driver's seat as she tried to introduce a handsome young boy to Cara.

"Cara, this is my brother, Quron! He came all the way to Mayberry City from Willmill, just to pick me up today. He said that he wanted to bring me around Mayberry City!"

"Wow! That's great. Quron is really handsome too!"

Cara replied as she smiled.

"Hello, Sister Cara. I used to hear my sister gush how beautiful you are, but I really did not believe her at all at that time. However, after seeing you today, I can only say that Sister Cara, you are even more beautiful in person than my sister described you to be!"

Quron said as he smiled and adjusted his suit.

He kept praising Cara for being extremely beautiful.

“By the way, Cara, is this beautiful girl the cousin sister, Mila that you always talked about? She looks about the same age as my younger brother!”

Lisa replied with a smile on her face.

Quron also glanced at Mila at this time. Quron could not take his eyes off Mila as soon as he looked at her. She was simply too beautiful.

“Oh yes! I was also going to introduce my sister to Quron so that the both of them could get to know each other and become friends!”

Cara smiled as she turned around and gestured for Mila to come over and say hello.

At the same time, she suddenly remembered that Mila already had a boyfriend and her ugly boyfriend was standing right next to her now.

Damn it! How could she possibly have forgotten about Gerald?

“Hello, Sister Lisa. This is my boyfriend, Gerald. Gerald wants to treat everyone to a meal today!”

Mila held Gerald’s arms as she introduced him to the people there.

This introduction made Lisa and her brother lose their interest immediately.

So, she already has a boyfriend?

“Hehehe. What can possibly be delicious here? I heard some of my classmates saying that the best place to eat is at Mayberry Commercial Street. There is a nice restaurant named Homeland Kitchen which serves really good food there. Why don’t we go there instead? I will treat everyone to a meal!”

“Homeland Kitchen? I have also heard of that place before! That’s great. Let’s go there then!”

Cara obviously had no objections about the change of location.

The Homeland Kitchen was so much better compared to this place.

However, Gerald could not do anything at all since they were all not interested in this restaurant.

Since they were all willing to go there, all he could do was to follow...

Chapter 233

Gerald and the group of people drove towards the Homeland Kitchen.

Gerald’s Lamborghini did indeed shock everyone at first. However, Cara immediately explained the situation to them.

She spoke about how Gerald spent money without having any planning at all.

This way, the Wade siblings who were initially full of admiration for Gerald also begin to show contempt for him.

They felt that it was really a waste for someone like Gerald to drive such a good car.

Gerald simply smiled indifferently throughout.

Next, it was Quron’s time to show-off.

He called his so-called friends in Mayberry City before he booked a rather decent room in Homeland Kitchen.

Everyone was pleasantly surprised.

Especially Cara.

“Wow! Quron, I really did not expect you to have such a good network and connection in Mayberry City. Hahaha. Yes, the Homeland Kitchen is indeed a very luxurious and high-end restaurant at first glance. We wouldn’t have the face to dine at a place like this!”

“You are unlike some people, who would only choose a restaurant at some rural area for us to dine in!”

Cara glanced around the ambience and interior of the room, and she was instantly in love with it.

“Okay, I am really pleased that Sister Cara likes it. One of my good friends is a regular customer at Homeland Kitchen. We can come here again next time. Mila, what do you think of this place?”

Quron cast his eyes on Mila as he smiled and asked her.

As for Gerald, Quron was obviously ignoring him.

After all, in comparison, Quron was a rich heir who had the support of his father. On the other hand, Gerald was nothing more than a pathetic jerk who had no background at all but was simply lucky enough to win some money from the lottery.

“Not bad!”

What else could Mila say? She simply nodded in a perfunctory manner.

“Quron, you are already in your third year of university. You’ll next transition to your internship immediately after your senior year. What are your plans? Are you going to continue studying abroad, or...?”

Cara asked cheerfully.

“Maybe I’ll plan to start a business, but I will not go abroad to study anymore. In fact, my plan has always been to start a company of my own! Hahaha...”

“It’s a very good plan. The domestic economy in our country is very good and stable now. You will definitely have a great future ahead of you if you become your own boss!”

Cara replied as she nodded in approval.

At the same time, she glanced at her sister’s boyfriend who was simply sitting down there without saying a word at all.

She could not help but feel extremely disappointed.

She could tell at a single glance whether a person would turn out to be a promising person or not and Cara obviously felt that Gerald was completely hopeless. She felt that he would never be a promising person with any potential at all in this lifetime!

“Brother Gerald, what plans do you have for your internship? Are you going to go to the newspaper or the editorial department?”

Quron asked as he sneered at Gerald.

“I don’t really have any plans yet. Perhaps I will be taking a relevant course in the Department of Economics and Management!”

Gerald replied casually.

“Hehe. You only won a little money from the lottery so do you even need to attend special elective courses just to manage that money? Gerald, I advise you to contact a good company as soon as possible. For people like you, it is obviously better for you to have more insurance and housing funds. Otherwise, I’m really worried that you might not be able to find a wife in future!”

Cara replied as she laughed.

This was because she was also studying economics and management abroad.

She felt that it was really a joke that Gerald was actually interested to study economics and management.

Moreover, Gerald could also tell the obvious meaning behind Cara’s words. She was obviously hinting to him that she did not approve of his relationship with Mila at all!

Mila kept trying to change the topic away from Cara’s topic.

Fortunately right the instance, the food had already been served.

“Hello, ladies and gentlemen. This is the Romanee-Conti red wine that is on the house. Please enjoy!”

A waitress came in as she respectfully presented them with a bottle of red wine.

“Romanee-Conti? Seriously? This is the number one red wine brand in the world! It ranked first amongst the top ten most luxurious wine brands in the world!”

After listening to the waitress’ introduction, Cara, Lisa and everyone else were all dumbfounded.

They worked and lived abroad, so they obviously knew a lot about red wine.

Chapter 234

"Bring it over here and let me see whether it is real or not!"

Cara's face was flushed red with surprise as she carefully took the bottle of red wine and examined it repeatedly. Towards the end, she felt even more excited after looking at it:

"This is actually genuine!"

"Ahh? Let me take a look at it too!"

Lisa was also excited by this time.

Everyone looked at Quron with a very shocked expression on their faces. It was as though they initially thought that he was just someone great, but right now, they suddenly realized that he was indeed just simply amazing!

"Quron, can you tell me what kind of background your friend has? When did you have such a strong network? Do you know that this kind of red wine is only usually enjoyed by big bosses from abroad?"

The more Cara looked at Quron, the more she liked him.

"Yes, brother. How come I don't know that you have such powerful connections? Come on, how many things are you still hiding from me?"

"I don't know too much either. Anyway, my friend is really giving me too much face today! Hahaha."

Quron was a little dazed because he felt that the whole sentiment everyone gave him was a little too overwhelming.

Quron also did not dwell too much about it. He just felt elated as Cara and the others were all gushing over him in admiration.

Gerald was simply indifferent at the side.

He believed that this bottle of red wine must have been given by Jane.

This girl was really giving him too much face.

However, even though Quron was taking away the fruits of his victory, Gerald did not plan to say anything at all. After all, he knew that Cara would not believe him anyway.

The second reason was simply because Gerald did not want to destroy everyone's happy expectations.

Just to prove that he was awesome?

Boring!

Gerald thought that it was enough that everyone was happy.

The meal went by just like that.

Throughout the entire meal, Cara began to feel that Gerald was getting more and more of an eyesore to her. And with that, she simply could not stop comparing Gerald to Quron.

After they were done with the meal, everyone went downstairs excitedly. At the same time, Quron went to the front desk to pay the bill.

"Sir, you have a thirty percent discount for this meal!"

"What?"

Everyone was shocked again when the cashier at the front desk said this.

“Damn it! Quron, you are really amazing! You can even get a thirty percent discount? This is simply incredible!”

Cara exclaimed in surprise again.

“Hehehe! This is just a small matter. Sister Cara, Mila, why don’t we go out and have some more fun together? After that, we can arrange for a place for my sister to rest later!”

“Okay! Okay! To be honest, I used to play and go around Mayberry City a lot when I was younger. However, after going abroad, I haven’t been back much. But I can ask my sister to ask for leave from school later in the afternoon. After that, we can all go out together and have fun! I also have a couple of high school and university friends who’d like to meet up with me too. All of us can just hang out together then!”

Cara replied as she smiled.

“That’s great! If that is the case, then I will just book another table at the Homeland Kitchen for dinner tonight!”

Quron replied as he patted his chest gently.

“Well, sister, Sister Lisa, we still have something going on at school later in the afternoon so we will not be joining you guys anymore! Have fun! I’ll head back to the university with Gerald first!”

Mila could tell that Gerald was a little uncomfortable.

In fact, she wanted to invite Gerald out for a meal with her sister today so that he could impress her. However, Quron was taking all the limelight away from him.

Mila also understood that Gerald could not simply reveal his own identity.

As she was afraid that Gerald would be angry, Mila felt that the best thing to do was to go back with Gerald first.

“Ahh? But it would not be fun at all if you don’t come with us, Mila! We need you to be our tour guide after all!”

Quron pleaded.

When he saw Mila’s persistence, he had to look pleadingly at Cara instead.

Cara immediately understood his intentions and she glanced at Gerald coldly before she said to Mila:

“Mila, come with me for a while. I have to talk to you about something!”

Chapter 235

Cara pulled Mila over to the side.

No one could make out what she said in a low voice. Cara eyed Gerald from time to time before she looked at Quron instead.

She was probably trying to persuade Mila to break up with Gerald as soon as possible and get into a relationship with Quron instead.

Mila refused to do as Cara suggested in the end.

“Sister, you can just go and have fun! Gerald and I will just go back to the university first!”

Mila and Gerald left after saying goodbye to everyone.

Cara could not help but feel very anxious.

It seemed as though she would not be able to matchmake the both of them.

“Sister Cara, it is okay. Mila is your sister so she is naturally my good friend too! I will definitely look for her more often in future!”

Quron could not help but feel a little more disappointed. However, he could only force a smile on his face.

“Okay, Quron. I am glad that you are not discouraged. Don’t worry, Quron. I will definitely get my sister to break up with him sooner or later. How can he possibly be compared to you, Quron?”

Cara replied as he smiled.

After that, the group went around several places in Mayberry City.

Soon after, it was night.

Cara initially planned to invite some of her friends from her high school and university to come and join her for dinner later that evening.

However, Quron and his sister did not plan to leave yet.

Therefore, they simply made an appointment to eat together so that they could get to know each other better too.

Quron continued to show his generous side.

He booked another room for dinner at the Homeland Kitchen.

After all, the waitress at the Homeland Kitchen had been extremely generous to him early that day.. There were so many strangers here now so he could show off once again.

Cara invited another five to six friends to come and join them for dinner.

Hence, they booked an even larger room for dinner tonight.

“Go ahead! Bring me all your best dishes in your restaurant!”

Quron chucked his car keys aside before crossing his legs.

“Wow! Cara, is this the amazing young brother that you were talking about earlier? He has a very good personality and he looks very charismatic too!”

“Hahaha. By the way, Cara, does he have a girlfriend? I have a younger cousin sister who is single too!”

“Oh! If only I can have such a boyfriend like him too!”

All of Cara’s friends who came were all girls. During the entire time, they were all filled with admiration and appreciation as they looked at Quron.

Rich boys were already particularly attractive in the first place. This was even more so for rich boys who could take the lead.

Cara could not bring herself to say that Quron did not have a girlfriend. If he was robbed away by another girl, then her dearest cousin sister would not stand a chance anymore!

“Haha, you girls should stop being idiots, okay? The food will be served soon. There will be more surprises coming up after the food is served! You should take advantage of this opportunity to appreciate the surprise, okay?”

Cara replied with a smile on her face.

“Ahh? What kind of surprise is it? Cara, you have been giving us very high expectations ever since we came here just now!”

“Yes! Just tell us what it is!”

Cara smiled before she said, “You will find out after the waitress is done serving us the dishes!”

At the same time, Cara had very high expectations at heart. This was also the reason why Cara wanted Quron to come forward.

This way, she would also gain a lot of face and respect!

She finally waited for the waitress to finish serving them all of their dishes.

“Ladies and gentlemen, all of your dishes are already served. Please enjoy your dinner!”

The waitress smiled before she turned around and left.

“Hmph! Wait a moment!”

Cara asked suspiciously, “Are you sure that you have already served us everything? Aren’t you forgetting anything at all?”

The waitress shook her head repeatedly as she said, “No. I have already brought and served you everything that you ordered!”

Slam!

Immediately, Cara slammed her hands heavily down on the table. “Are you blind? Don’t you know who is buying this dinner today? It is Mr. Wade! Can’t you see that we do not have any drinks on our table yet?”

Cara angrily reminded the waitress.

To be honest, this was making her lose face.

After all, Cara was returning to the country after studying and working abroad. She lived in M Country now and she had extremely high standards.

Chapter 236

These sorts of people were born narcissistic.

They were capable of loving little, except for their own face and reputation.

“Excuse me, miss, but you haven’t made your order yet. Here is the list of drinks we serve. Please, take a look!”

The waitress handed the menu over to Cara.

This time, Cara was stunned.

One of her classmates sneered, “Cara, what is going on? Didn’t you say that there will be a surprise after the meal? Where is the surprise?”

“Hmph! I’m not going to look at the menu! Let me remind you once again. This is Mr. Wade! Mr. Wade is here; I think you should know better than not to give face.”

Cara once again summoned Quron’s name.

"I am sorry, miss. All the guests at our restaurant are young executives and big bosses. We do not give out gifts to everyone every day."

"Are you serious now? Aren't you going to give me any face at all? Do you know who Mr. Kennedy is? He's a good friend of mine!" Quron asked in dispute.

"I know that there is a young man named Mr. Kennedy, who comes here to eat often. We do not give him any free gifts either," the waitress replied with a confused look on her face.

"Damn it! You're really not giving me any face at all, huh!"

Both Quron and Cara had unsightly expressions on their faces at the moment.

This was especially true considering how Cara's classmates were all looking at her, laughing among themselves.

Women liked to compare everything, after all.

Even if they were all close friends, their competition instinct with one another was often powerful.

Since Cara had studied abroad and was currently working there, her group of girlfriends were already jealous of her in the first place. If she did invoke such a strong presence on her, they would have definitely been even more jealous and envious of her.

However, the funny thing was that it seemed as though Cara and this young man, Quron, were making fools out of themselves.

"Forget it! You know nothing! I'm not talking to her ever again, and I don't feel like eating here today. I want her to know who she offended!"

Quron was also furious, slamming his hands hard on the table.

After that, he led Cara and the others out right away.

This particular might not know who he was, but the cashier girl downstairs certainly did..

He would have to gain back his face and reputation there.

After he was done speaking, he headed straight to the front desk. "I won't be eating here after this. Hand me the bill!"

Quron spoke way louder than he should have.

The cashier girl had no idea what was going on, but she simply printed the bill anyway.

"Hello sir, your expenditure for the night is twelve thousand dollars. Will you be paying by credit card or cash?"

"What? Twelve thousand dollars?! What about the thirty percent discount?" Cara asked in shock.

"Discount? Sorry miss, but we do not have such offers in our restaurant for the time being."

The cashier girl naturally recognized them and simply looked at them with contempt.

After all, he spoke so loudly yet, pretended to be so generous.

Instead, he seemed so shocked and terrified when he saw the 12,000 dollar bill.

"Have you forgotten that we ate here during lunch too? You gave me a thirty percent discount at that time, and you even handed us a bottle of precious red wine for free."

Cara felt as though her face had turned green.

“Of course, I remember that. However, we gave you the thirty percent discount and the bottle simply to show our respect to our most distinguished and valuable guest. In fact, if that guest happened to be the one settling the bill, we wouldn’t charge him for the meal at all. Oh, not to mention, it seems as though our most distinguished guest isn’t here tonight,” explained the cashier girl with an icy tone.

“What? You’re not giving face to Quron?”

Cara was a little surprised.

But who could this distinguished and valuable guest who had come here for lunch have been?

It was Mila and Gerald.

Mila had always been a sincere and low key person. She would definitely not dine in places of such posh. So, how could she possibly be Homeland Kitchen’s most distinguished and valuable guest?

Wait!

Could it be... Gerald?

Chapter 237

Cara hurriedly asked, “Is Gerald the distinguished guest that you are referring to?”

“We don’t know. We only know that one of you is our most distinguished guest at noon!”

The cashier girl replied as she smiled slightly.

Damn it!

What was going on?

At noon, only Gerald and Mila were here.

Although the other party refused to say anything, Cara already knew the answer in her heart.

It was all possibly because of Gerald.

But how could that be possible?

One of Cara's high school classmates, Donna suddenly spoke up.

"Hehe! Cara, weren't you supposed to give us a surprise? Is this the surprise you are giving us?"

Donna and Cara were good friends ever since high school and they were even classmates in university.

Although they were best friends, they were the kind of best friends who loved to compete and compare everything the other had from the beginning to the end.

First, Donna would envy Cara, and later, Cara would be jealous of Donna.

Later, Cara got to study and work in M Country thanks to her excellent results.

When it came to competition, it showed that Cara was ultimately victorious over Donna.

In fact, she was just about to gloat in front of Donna, but who would have expected to encounter this situation instead?

Cara became even more embarrassed and resentful, especially when Donna was intentionally making things difficult.

They would definitely not be getting a discount today.

However, it would also be very embarrassing for them if they decided to return to their seats.

Quron could only bite the bullet and settle the bill with a darkened face.

He had to pay 12,000 dollars for the meal without even taking a single bite. What was even worse was the fact that he didn't get to gloat at all.

Now that he was done paying the hefty sum, Quron couldn't afford their accommodation anymore.

"By the way, Cara, your friends from abroad don't have a place to stay yet, right? Why don't we do this? I can make the arrangements for some food and accommodation for them. We can enjoy a meal together before finally getting a good night's rest. I'm sure we'll all be uncomfortable sleeping with an empty stomach."

Donna crossed her arms and smiled bitterly as she left Homeland Kitchen in embarrassment.

Cara did not want to be defeated.

"No, it's okay. I have the money. I can afford to arrange for their accommodation. Why don't I get guys to stay in a five-star hotel at Mayberry City? Donna, if you are fine, you don't need to go back tonight. I can also arrange a room for you tonight. It so happens that we have not seen each other for so many years anyway. We can have a good chat together then!"

"Ahh, Cara, I thought that since you just returned to the country and you have a family business, I thought you could have been extraordinarily generous. Why only a five-star hotel? Don't you think you're not attentive enough?" asked Donna as she smiled.

Cara asked, "Then, why don't you tell me where I could find an exceptionally special or expensive place in Mayberry City apart from a five-star hotel?"

"Hehe! Of course, there is. Have you heard of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment?" Donna asked proudly.

Quron hurriedly said something so nobody would forget his presence.

“Wayfair Mountain Entertainment? I’ve heard of that before. I also heard that they are possibly the top hot spring villa in the entire country! Their consumption value is sky high and those who enter and leave the place are some of the most powerful and influential individuals!”

“I’ve also heard of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment before. However, I cannot afford that place. If you can name me another place, I will make all the necessary arrangements for our stay over there,” replied Cara.

She realized Donna was intentionally making things difficult for her.

“Alright, then. I will name you another place now. We can go to the second-best manor Mayberry City then! The place offers food and accommodation too. It is none other than the Little Bamboo House. As far as I know, the consumption value there is slightly lower compared to Wayfair. You have been doing really good for yourself these few years. If you can really arrange for us to stay there tonight, then I would really have no choice but to look up to you and show you tons of respect. When I see you in the future, I wouldn’t be calling you Cara, but Sister Cara!” Donna replied jokingly.

She hadn’t said all those to provoke Cara, though.

Donna was simply saying it for fun. After all, any ordinary person knew that even if they had the money, there were two places they still couldn’t just step in like that. They were none other than Wayfair Mountain Entertainment and Little Bamboo House!

In a way, Donna was simply telling Cara that she shouldn’t be so haughty and arrogant just because she studied abroad and currently worked there.

There had to be merits that she wouldn’t be able to get, one way or another.

However...

“Pfft!”

Cara could not help but laugh.

“Little Bamboo House? Are you referring to that farmhouse? If I can arrange for all of us to stay there tonight, you have to honor your promise and call me Sister Cara...”

Cara replied with a serious expression on her face.

When Donna saw that Cara was serious, she instantly said, “Okay! If you can really afford to us a night’s stay over there, I will definitely call you Sister Cara!”

“Hahaha! Okay, it’s settled then! Lisa, Quron, we can start driving. Let’s go to the Little Bamboo House!”

Was that a joke?

They were initially supposed to have lunch at Little Bamboo House, arranged by that pathetic jerk, Gerald.

After only seeing the place once, Cara already had enough.

Only a country bumpkin would visit a place like that.

Though it did not matter to her anymore. Since they have already made a bet, she would be contented if all Donna did was address her as Sister Cara.

They arrived at the place a short while later.

“Waitress, get us a table with the most expensive dishes! And also, one, two, three, four, five... arrange five rooms for me tonight!”

Chapter 238

, Cara shouted.

Right now, she felt that she was really cool.

“Okay, miss. I will make all the arrangements now! The total price for the rooms is 75,000 dollars. Please swipe your card here.”

The waitress bowed respectfully at Cara.

This lady was so wealthy!

“Ahh? What? 75,000 dollars? We are only booking five rooms, and it will cost me 75,000 for one night? Did I hear you right?” asked Cara without beating around the bush.

“Yes, miss. These are just the rates for the standard rooms. However, all the rooms you booked come with a complimentary dinner. We have also gathered famous chefs from all over the world to customize your meals according to your personal preference.”

The waitress smiled and pushed the POS machine forward.

“This... wait a minute. How much would it cost only to have dinner here?”

Cara gulped.

“If it’s just dinner for all of you, we do not usually provide rooms. However, if you really want a room, you can book one for 22,000 dollars. After that, you will be able to enjoy food from the entire southern part of the country. As long as you can name the dish, the chefs will definitely be able to prepare it for you!”

“Gulp!”

Cara was utterly dumbfounded.

It turned out that this wasn't a place country bumpkins would visit whenever they wanted to.

Even a noble like her could barely afford this place.

Cara suddenly thought of Gerald.

He had initially arranged a lunch banquet for them, even planning to throw in the accommodation as well.

Based on her calculations, that would have probably cost him around 75 to 90,000

In other words, Gerald was actually filthy rich.

He hadn't spent all of his money, as it turned out.

Cara was also certain that the person at Homeland Kitchen who had the authority to present them with the expensive red wine was none other than Gerald.

Oh, god!

It turned out that Gerald was really the one who really had the most face!

"Hehe! Stop embarrassing yourself, Cara. If you can't afford it, then just admit that you can't. Let me make all the necessary arrangements then. We'll go and eat as soon as possible. I'm really starving right now."

Donna replied, shook her head, and smiled bitterly.

“Nonsense. I was here just this afternoon. By the way, Lisa, you guys came here too, right? We almost ate and stayed here!” retorted Cara.

“Cara, can you stop acting like you are oh-so-awesome?”

Donna had already started patronizing Cara a little.

“Who said I’m pretending? Why don’t you ask the waitress if we were here earlier this afternoon? Didn’t someone by the name of Gerald Crawford book a lunch banquet and accommodation?” implored Cara.

“Yes, miss. There was indeed a Mr. Crawford who booked a lunch banquet and accommodation at noon today. He even got the most luxurious suite. That’s 90,000 dollars for you.

The waitress had been very impressed because their arrogant manager didn’t even dare to straighten his back in front of this person named Gerald. This came as a real shock to everyone working at the restaurant.

“Gosh! His standard was 90,000 dollars?”

Cara was really in shock!

She could not help thinking about how great it would be if only Gerald were here. Everything would be fine then. What face wouldn’t he be able to give then?

But what... Ah! Argh! She was really going insane!

Cara was filled with regret and quickly called her cousin, Mila. She wanted to ask if she could get Gerald to help them with the food and accommodation again.

Mila told her cousin that she could not get through to Gerald.

It was because, right now, Gerald had a different task to complete...

“Hurry up! You are so slow! why didn’t you answer? I thought you were going to slip away!”

Cassandra was driving her car, and she yelled coldly at Gerald, who was coming towards her.

“Sorry, instructor. My phone died. Can you lend me your power bank?”

Gerald pointed at the power bank in Cassandra’s car.

“Take it! Take it! You are really such a shameless person!” Cassandra replied in contempt.

Gerald plugged his phone into the power bank. According to their agreement, Cassandra would be bringing Gerald to the bar tonight.

Alas, after calming down and thinking it over, Gerald felt that this was all rather dramatic.

He was the owner of the Mayberry Commercial Street. Now, he was about to go and work at a new bar of a subordinate?

Gerald could not help but laugh when he thought about it.

“By the way, I have to tell you something,” asked Cassandra when she seemed to recall something.

Chapter 239

“Gerald, everyone who will be present are all reputable and influential people. My friend knows that you are my student. So, you better perform well tonight. If you dare embarrass me, you can wait for me to deal with you!” said Cassandra rudely.

Gerald did not answer and kept staring out the window.

“Watch your behavior!” Cassandra snorted before she finally stopped talking and focused on driving.

Cassandra was dressed attractively and provocatively today. In fact, this was Gerald’s first time being in such close proximity to her. He could smell her fragrance, and he would be lying if he said that this woman wasn’t attractive.

As Gerald was deep in his own thoughts, they had already arrived at the Mayberry commercial street’s new bar entrance.

Luxury cars large and small were parked in front of its entrance, and many people were walking in and out.

Gerald could also see that Flynn had sent the flower stand by the bar’s entrance. Whether he wanted it or not, he had to show some respect anyhow, since they were about to be working on the same street.

Even Michael, their new boss, had also sent them a flower stand as a blessing.

It was apparent the new bar’s owner must have very good and powerful connections too.

“Cassandra, why have you just gotten here? I have been waiting for you!”

A pair that held hands emerged from the crowd of people as they came over to greet Cassandra.

“I’m sorry! I’m a little late, thanks to those jams. Congratulations, Qassie! I hope that your business will keep prospering!” said Cassandra to the woman who was obviously the wife of the bar owner.

“Hahaha. I am just happy that you can make it here today. By the way, did you bring someone to help me out?”

“Yes, I did. He’s right here!”

The two continued their chat.

Gerald was bored, looking at the flower stands to see if there were any names he recognized.

Cassandra suddenly dragged Gerald over to Qassie.

“The lady boss is calling you.”

“Oh! Oh! Hello! I’m Gerald.”

Gerald reacted quickly, subconsciously extending his hand for a handshake.

Things had started to become awkward.

Qassie and her lover stared at Gerald’s hand with stiff expressions on their faces.

Who did he think he was?

Wasn’t he just a part-time employee? Did he really think he was worthy to shake their hand?

Many people these days placed a lot of emphasis on their face and reputation. Therefore, etiquette was an absolute necessity. However, if both parties’ status gaps were too large, shaking hands would be somewhat disrespectful.

Such was Qassie’s mentality.

She could only smile contemptuously.

“What are you doing? Pull your damn hand back right now!” Cassandra yelled.

“Please, have a little self-realization, will you? Qassie, why don’t you just give him something to do now?”

“Okay. He can go to the bar and help serve drinks or something...”

Qassie also looked at Gerald before she shook her head with a wry smile on her face.

And just like that, Gerald became a server at the bar.

Cassandra naturally followed Qassie, the lady boss, into the most luxurious room of the bar.

The establishment was very lively and packed to the brim, especially true for tonight since many rich heirs were here.

“Guests at Table 6 would like three dozen beers!”

“What? But I am too busy to go over! There are just too many guests tonight! We totally didn’t expect this. God-damn it! Are you standing idle, or what? Why didn’t you send the beers to Table 6?”

The waiter at the bar pointed at Gerald, who had just sat down to rest after moving crates of wine.

“Hurry up!”

The waiter raised his voice again.

Gerald wasn’t sure if he should just do it or ignore the calls.

After thinking for a bit, he decided to do it since he’d taken up the job anyway.

So, he grabbed the beers and headed toward Table 6.

.....

At Table 6.

“Come on, sisters! Are you happy? I, Sister Xabi, will give everyone a treat tonight! Everyone just enjoy yourself! We are not going home until we are completely wasted!”

Chapter 240

There were six female guests at Table 6.

Obviously young university students, the ladies all appeared sexy, mature, and carried a beautiful charm to them.

The one called Sister Xabi downed an entire bottle of beer in one go before embracing her best friend, who was sitting next to her.

“Sara, what is wrong with you? You haven’t broadcasted live for the past two days, and you have been so sullen and depressed. You are usually the happiest when we are at a bar! You could always tell me if something is wrong.”

“Sister Xabi, do you think that hidden rich heirs exist? He obviously looks like a pauper who has no money at all. He might actually be really wealthy in secret, though. And I mean really, extremely, wealthy!”

The person sitting there was none other than Sara, who had just gotten a slap in the face.

She could not help but sound very depressed.

“Haha! Of course, there could always be people like that out there. It is, but however, very rare. Another situation that could rule out that possibility is if that person is narcissistic. Such people go as far as to take out massive loans just so they can appear wealthy and powerful. The fact is, these are usually the paupers!” replied Sister Xabi.

Sister Xabi seemed to have hailed from a relatively well-to-do background.

Sara nodded fiercely.

“Yes, Sister Xabi. According to my observations, this guy has to be a serious narcissist! I asked around and looked into his background, and I found out that he once won the lottery. Perhaps he is only rich because of that, yet, he’s so fond of showing-off!”

“Hehehe. Don’t take someone like that so seriously! Come, let’s drink! He will definitely become poor again sooner or later!”

Those words couldn’t help but make Sara feel a little relieved.

Frankly, it had been a full day but she was just as anxious as she was.

She had utterly no appetite to eat or drink and even felt that the wine was tasteless.

It was all because of that Gerald!

She had gotten a real hard slap in the face that morning, not to mention finding out about how Gerald could actually be Mr. Crawford.

The Lamborghini might just belong to him!

Sara couldn’t really understand how he could possibly be the owner of that car. If Gerald was really that rich, why was he bullied continuously?

It made no sense whatsoever.

Perhaps it was just a coincidence. The owner of the Lamborghini might have been someone else and Gerald could have just gone elsewhere.

Sara's mood had improved considerably after the whole barrage of coaxing and persuading by Sister Xabi.

"Lassies, your beer is here!"

Gerald was already there with the beer.

He put it down before turning to leave.

"Damn it! You stop right there! Who you calling a lassie?" inquired Sister Xabi in a rage.

The group of girls was usually open-minded and outgoing. However, they were all very sensitive when it came to this term.

A server had actually called them 'lassies?'

What did he mean when he called them that? It was self-evident.

Gerald was also taken aback by the unnecessary riposte.

He did not overthink about the term, simply addressing the group of beautiful girls in miniskirts with a friendly-sounding gesture.

Seeing the way they were dressed and judging their ages, it was all in good spirits that he referred to them that way.

He really didn't expect something like that could cause any trouble.

"That... beauty. I am really sorry. Sorry! I made a mistake! Here's your beer. Please enjoy it," Gerald apologized heartfully with a slight bow.

When he raised his head, he was stunned when he saw her.

As for that girl, she too was stunned when she saw Gerald.

"Gerald!"

"Sara?"

It was really inevitable for enemies to cross paths!

Sara was just talking about Gerald, but she didn't really expect him to appear here.

Worse, why was Gerald a server at Zero Point Bar? Haha! Wasn't he supposed to be extremely rich?

Sara didn't know why she felt a whole different kind of pleasure when she saw him in this state.

She then saw that Gerald was preparing to leave again.

"Gerald, don't leave just yet. Anyway, I'm considered an acquaintance now, right? Hahaha! Don't you think that we should be discussing something?"

Chapter 241

"What do you want?" Gerald never thought he would bump into Sara coincidentally, therefore, he simply replied coldly,

“Hehe. I would like to ask you something. After giving me a slap in the face earlier this morning, what are you feeling and what is your mood right now that you are standing in front of me in this capacity as a waiter?” Sara asked bitterly.

Sara felt a lot of regrets and resentments in her heart after getting a slap in the face. She was also very embarrassed because of how Gerald had outdone her.

These emotions had been troubling Sara for the whole day! She just could not wait to take revenge on him.

Gerald replied as he smiled bitterly, “I do not feel anything at all. Just speak up now if you have anything you want to say. I am busy!”

“Hahaha! Busy my ass! Gerald, go! Bring me a napkin!” Sara replied as she pointed at a napkin box at the side.

“You are a waiter now, so you should serve your customers well. Otherwise, I am going to complain about your attitude to your manager!” Sara continued her endless chattering.

Gerald was also starting to feel a little frustrated. However, he felt that what she said made sense. After all, he was indeed a waiter now.

Thus, he picked a napkin before he handed it over to her.

“I don’t want it. My shoes are dirty! I want you to polish it for me!” Sara replied, as proud as a peacock.

“Did you hear that? Sara wants you to polish her shoes for her! Hmph! I initially thought that the Gerald Sara was talking about was a tall and handsome man. I am really very disappointed after meeting you now!”

“Yes! Aren’t you supposed to be rich? Why are you working as a waiter in a bar then? Ahh! It is totally disgusting when a pauper like you who has no money at all pretends to be a big shot who has a lot of money!”

“Hehe. Sister Xabi was right! Some people are willing to do anything just to save their own face!”

All the girls sneered as they stared at Gerald. Meanwhile, Sara still had her foot raised as she waited.

However, Gerald did not polish her shoes for her. Instead, he simply placed the napkin aside and said, “If you really want someone to wipe your feet for you, you should leave the Mayberry Commercial Street. You can go to the bar at the Red Mansion instead. There would also be people who would be willing to lick your feet there!”

After he was done speaking, Gerald turned around and left immediately.

“You, you, you!” Sara was furious.

He was actually asking her to look for a gigolo!

However, after thinking about it, Sara did not feel that angry or frustrated anymore. Instead, she was actually rather happy.

After all, all of her worries that had been bothering her for the entire day had finally been completely eliminated. It felt as though a huge load had been removed from her chest.

She truly thought that Gerald was very wealthy and that it was very likely that he was the owner of the Lamborghini.

If that was indeed the case, Sara would rather be dead. She would have offended a very rich heir!

Sara had even been thinking about how great it would have been if her first encounter with Gerald had been much better.

In short, Sara had been filled with regrets and had been feeling very depressed throughout the whole day.

In the end, when she came out at night to relieve her boredom, she realized that Gerald's status was completely different compared to what she had imagined him to be. He was simply a pathetic jerk who would do anything just to save his own face.

She felt much more comfortable now!

"Just let this pathetic jerk leave now! Sisters, come! Let's continue drinking!"

After returning to the bar, Gerald continued working, and soon, he was finally done moving all the liquors. The entire process was pretty depressing.

Gerald figured that there was nothing else for him to do here, so he decided to inform Cassandra that he would be leaving first.

Gerald went to the room that Cassandra was in. At this time, there was a group of men and women drinking together in the room.

"Come, come, Teacher McGregor! You lost again. You can choose to either drink up this bottle of red wine in one gulp or take off a piece of your clothing!" A pudgy middle-aged man who was sitting very closely next to Cassandra at this time was speaking very pervertedly.

"I did not lose! It's obvious that you were just trying to trick me!" It could be seen that Cassandra really hated this short and fat middle-aged man. She also hated the current situation very much, and she was struggling to deal with the situation.

"Hahaha, do you mean to say that if you lose because I tricked you, that means that you did not lose at all? If you refuse to drink the red wine, you should take off your clothes! Hehe!" After he was done speaking, the pudgy middle-aged man grabbed Cassandra's skirt as he tried to lift it up.

"Are you f*cking sick?"

Chapter 242

Slap!

Although Cassandra was also a rather promiscuous person, she still had very high standards for the person she would take an interest in.

Therefore, she subconsciously raised her hand and slapped the short and pudgy man right in his face.

She then stood up before she picked up the wine glass and poured the entire glass of wine over the man's face.

"Ahh! Mr. Zabka, are you okay?" The lady boss, Qassie, asked immediately when she saw the conflict.

At this time, the atmosphere in the entire room was extremely quiet.

To be honest, Qassie already knew that Mr. Zabka was very interested in Cassandra. That was the reason why she had incited the both of them to play a game together.

Qassie had already met him before. Mr. Zabka came from San Creek and he was actually pretty wealthy as he owned a coal mine. Moreover, Qassie's husband had only won the right to run this bar after Mr. Zabka had invested some money in it.

Qassie knew that Cassandra did not have a boyfriend, and she also knew that the latter was a very materialistic person who loved money.

One was affectionate, whereas the other had intentions. Wasn't it a perfect match then?

How many people would dislike it when they saw a rich man in front of them?

However, her assumption was wrong.

Unexpectedly, Cassandra was so fierce and did not even give Mr. Zabka any face whatsoever. On the contrary, she even hit Mr. Zabka?!

“You... you dared to hit me?!” Mr. Zabka had obviously never gotten hit before. Moreover, he even endured a slap and had gotten a glass of wine poured over his face.

“Was I wrong to hit you? You should not touch me anyhow you like!” Cassandra replied coldly, disgust written all over her face.

So what if you are rich? Even if you are rich, can you be as rich as Brother Ordinary Man?

“Hmph! You b*tch! You are the first person who actually dared to hit me, Desmond Zabka! You will not be able to step out of this bar tonight if I am not satisfied!” Desmond roared as he threw the wine glass angrily.

At this time, four to five bodyguards jumped out, surrounding Cassandra immediately.

Cassandra was also a little terrified.

In fact, she had regretted it as soon as she slapped him across the face.

Although she knew Brother Ordinary Man, he was someone she would never be able to reach out to after all.

The person in front of her was definitely a tycoon and a very powerful figure.

She could not help but feel a little afraid after calming herself down.

“Then, you... what do you want then? Anyway, I will not be taking off my clothes no matter what it is!”

“Hmph! That is fine with me. You don’t have to take off your clothes, but you will have to finish this bottle of red wine in one breath! Otherwise, this matter will never be resolved!” Desmond grinned and opened a bottle of red wine before placing it next to Cassandra.

“Okay! Remember what you said!” Cassandra replied as she took a deep breath. She did not want to prolong this matter any longer. Therefore, she decided to finish this bottle of red wine just so she could leave immediately after that.

She picked up the bottle of red wine.

“Sister Cassandra, it’s already getting late. Don’t you want to leave yet?” At this time, Gerald opened the door and entered the room.

Gerald had been listening in on the conversation as he stood outside the door. So, he knew the entire situation that was going on inside. This d*mned fat man was trying to get Cassandra drunk.

As for the way he was addressing her, Cassandra had already instructed him not to refer to her as his teacher when they were both making their way to the bar earlier.

“D*mn it! Who is that brat? Get lost!” When Desmond saw Gerald suddenly interrupting the situation, he yelled at him with a vicious expression on his face.

Gerald replied casually, “Well, I came here with Sister Cassandra today, so I was thinking of going back with her!”

Gerald was not pretending to be benevolent. However, he felt that he would also be very dissatisfied if someone took advantage of Cassandra just like that.

It would simply be too advantageous for the other party. Even if someone was to take advantage of Cassandra, it should be him instead!

In short, Gerald did not want to leave Cassandra here any longer.

“D*mn it! I think that you must be really tired of living! Men, come and drag him out of this place now!” Desmond tore his shirt open, exposing the tattoos on his chest.

At this time, two or three bodyguards came forward to grab Gerald.

“Wait a minute! Gerald, you can go out first and wait for me. This is my car key. I will leave after I finish this bottle of red wine. You can start the car and wait for me outside the entrance of the bar!”
Cassandra said as she looked at Gerald.

After all, Gerald already had a driver’s license now. She could just let him drive her later.

Gerald nodded and agreed immediately. After all, the lady boss was still here, and it seemed as though she had a very good relationship with Cassandra. Therefore, he felt that she would not allow Cassandra to suffer any losses just like that.

Gerald left after taking the car key.

Shortly after Gerald stepped out of the bar, two bodyguards had already followed Gerald into the parking lot under Desmond’s command...

Chapter 243

As Gerald was heading down to the parking lot, he had already noticed that he was being followed.

It was two bodyguards who were dressed in black and had sunglasses on.

Gerald knew what they were here for.

Desmond must have instructed them to follow him.

Gerald knew that he would not have the strength and ability to fight these two men. After all, it seemed as though these two men were very skilled at fighting.

At this moment, Gerald secretly sent a text message to Flynn asking him to come over immediately.

“Young man, stop right there!” The two men suddenly yelled out loud, just as Gerald was about to get into the car.

“What is the matter? How can I help you?” Gerald asked knowingly.

“Hahaha. ‘What is the matter?’? You are truly a very ignorant young man. Let me tell you, if you are smart enough, you will just follow us somewhere obediently. We will naturally let you go after our boss is done with whatever he wants to do. You will suffer less that way! If you don’t, we’ll break your legs today!” The two bodyguards stared at Gerald as though he was just a fool.

This young kid looked very reckless and impetuous. They could already judge that he would not have any skills at all.

Both of them originally thought that they would have to teach Gerald a lesson.

However, looking at him now, they felt as though they could easily subdue him with their words alone.

Alas, the two bodyguards could not help but feel a little depressed.

They had been ordered to come down and keep an eye on this kid, whereas their other brothers could follow their boss around.

Judging by their boss’s perverted character, after he was done fooling around with that woman, he might even ask his brothers to enjoy the woman too!

They were really missing out!

After all, both of them had already seen Cassandra themselves. She was truly very beautiful!

At this time, Gerald simply smiled bitterly as he said, “Break my legs? You probably have to think twice first!”

“D*mn it! Stop talking so much nonsense! Get into the car and follow us to the suburbs now!” One of the bodyguards pushed Gerald, and all of them got into Cassandra’s car.

As this was an underground parking lot, there was a dedicated car elevator at this place.

Gerald did not say anything because he knew that about five to six minutes had already passed by. This bar was located not too far away from the Emperor Karaoke Bar. This meant that Flynn and his men should be arriving soon.

Slam!

The car elevator sounded at this time, and the car elevator door opened.

“Hurry up. Drive in and then...” One of the bodyguards spoke coldly before he suddenly stopped mid-sentence.

After that, he opened his eyes wide as he looked right into the car elevator.

At this time, there were countless people dressed in black standing in the car elevator with knives and poles in their hands.

The bodyguard could only stare at the situation in front of him in a daze.

“F*ck! What is happening?!” The two bodyguards were both dumbfounded.

Toot! Toot!

At this time, footsteps started sounding at the entrance of the underground parking lot.

In no time, a large group of people had started surrounding them.

There were definitely no less than a hundred people in this battle!

Flynn's eyes swept across the three men in the car coldly.

"Leader, what does this mean? Should we tell the boss about this matter? This is Mayberry Commercial Street! It seems as though these men are coming for us!" The two bodyguards were terrified.

"Yes, yes! We should get out of the car and ask them what is happening first! I doubt they would dare to break the unspoken rules anyway!" Both of them hurriedly got out of the car.

Gerald also stepped out of the car with a wry smile on his face.

"Greetings, Mr. Crawford!" Flynn immediately bowed and greeted Gerald as soon as he saw him.

At the same time, more than a hundred people also spoke up, the loud and clear voices in the underground parking lot were almost deafening.

Both of the bodyguards were almost paralyzed in fright.

"Crawford... Mr. Crawford?"

The bodyguards looked at Gerald at this moment, with a horrified look on their faces.

Wasn't he just a waiter?!

Chapter 244

He was the Mr. Crawford?!

D*mn it! Both of them had nearly kidnapped Mr. Crawford?!

“Brother Flynn, do you know someone by the name of Desmond Zabka? He is with my teacher... uhh... I mean friend, and he is probably having some nasty thoughts in mind at this time. Can you help me bring her out?”

Gerald had simply sent Flynn a text message saying that he had encountered some trouble in the underground parking lot and he had asked him to bring a few people here with him to help him deal with this matter.

However, Gerald never expected Flynn to call over one to two hundred people here at one go.

Gerald would have been utterly shocked if it was not because he was familiar with some of the bodyguards' faces.

He would have even thought that Desmond was actually starting such a big battle just to deal with him.

At this time, Gerald hurriedly told Flynn about everything that had happened.

“Okay, Mr. Crawford. I will make some phone calls right now!” Flynn replied as he nodded.

Then, he started making a call. After humming twice, he simply hung up the phone.

He had a very nervous expression on his face. “Mr. Crawford, it seems as though Miss Cassandra has already been taken away by Desmond!”

“D*mn it! Where did he take her?” Gerald asked as his eyes widened.

As mentioned earlier, although Gerald really hated Cassandra, he would rather punish her on his own. Moreover, both of them had come to this bar together tonight.

Gerald felt that it was a little unfair to let Cassandra get taken advantage of by someone else just like that!

“Give me five minutes, Mr. Crawford. I will look into it now!” Gerald’s affairs were nothing trivial to Flynn.

What’s more, this incident had happened on Mayberry Commercial Street. If he really could not handle this matter well, then he, Flynn, would really deserve to die.

After promising Gerald, he pointed at the two bodyguards who were still dumbfounded by all this. “Do you know which hotel Desmond is staying at?”

“Brother Flynn, we don’t know... we really do not know! There are several hotels that Mr. Zabka could possibly be staying at! Brother Flynn, as long as you let us off and do not deal with us, we will definitely be able to help you to find Mr. Zabka!” The two bodyguards replied lightly, a hint of threat in their tone. After all, both of them were also ruthless people in the underground scene, and they had already encountered and experienced similar situations such as this.

“Hahaha! I do not need you to think of a solution for me! Men, come! I want you to get rid of these two men for me!” As soon as Flynn waved his hand, several of his subordinates immediately stepped forward and surrounded them as they started chopping them up!

After that, Flynn led his group of men directly into the bar. A group of about two to three hundred men rushed into the bar. It was a very sensational scene.

Everyone in the bar was completely dumbfounded.

“D*mn it! Isn’t that Brother Flynn?”

“What has this bar done to provoke Brother Flynn? Is he here to do some business?”

“No, no, no. Brother Flynn already brought some men over here just now. I heard that he is here to look for someone. Shhh! We’d better stop talking too much! Otherwise, we might get ourselves into trouble instead!”

At this time, even the dynamic music in the bar was turned off.

All of the employees as well as the customers in the bar hurriedly surrounded the lobby as they were all curious to find out what had happened.

Some of them were even daring enough to try and take some pictures and videos of the situation. However, when the bodyguards glared at them coldly, their fear got the better of them and they immediately retreated, putting their cell phones aside.

In short, the atmosphere was very terrifying and deadly.

“You guys! Come over and squat down here!”

After that, over a dozen bodyguards stepped forward as they grabbed several of Desmond’s bodyguards before bringing them to Flynn.

The lady boss, Qassie, and her husband were also brought before Flynn.

Both of them were so frightened that they were completely at a loss for words.

They continued explaining themselves as they were faced with Flynn’s domineering questioning. In the end, the one named Qassie also started crying out of fear.

“Sister Xabi, what is going on? Who is that young man? He looks so domineering!” Sara and the other five girls also gathered around to watch the scene happening before them.

This domineering scene had already completely blown away the hearts and minds of these few girls.

After all, weren’t all girls interested in heroes?

“It’s Brother Flynn from Mayberry Commercial Street! He is the most domineering man on the whole Mayberry Commercial Street! He is Zack Lyle’s subordinate and right-hand man, and he is one of Mr. Crawford’s men!”

This Sister Xabi obviously knew a lot about Flynn. She explained everything to all of her friends with a little arrogance in her voice.

Several girls replied in reverence, “Oh my God! It turns out to be Flynn who is also Mr. Crawford’s man? No wonder!”

Sara was also very respectful at this time. After all, wasn’t this what she had always been hoping for—to meet such a domineering and powerful person?”

At this time, Sara stood on the table directly as she watched the scene unfolding before her.

Suddenly, a figure walked past her and started squeezing through the crowd of people.

Sara happened to see this figure.

“D*mn it! Gerald, why the hell are you trying to squeeze inside?!”

Chapter 245

Sara saw Gerald making his way past the crowd of people and squeezing in as though he was trying to show that he was a part of a very serious matter.

Therefore, she started scolding him contemptuously.

She had seen many such people before.

No matter what was going on or where things were happening, as long as there was a big scene, there would always be some people who liked to be extremely pretentious. They would always go up to ask about the situation as though they were trying to prove to others that they were very capable.

“Yes! Why are you being so pretentious? Be careful not to implicate yourself in this matter!”

“I’ve really had enough of this pathetic guy! Sara, look! He actually squeezed all the way inside!”

One of Sara’s good friends pointed at Gerald at this time.

Gerald could not even be bothered with them.

Gerald walked up slowly. When he saw that Flynn had already begun asking and questioning them about the situation, he naturally had to come forward and follow him just so he could save Cassandra too.

“Mr. Crawford, we’ve already found out Desmond’s location. My men have already gone to get the car. We can set off right away!”

Since there was a crowd of people around them at this time, Flynn simply whispered softly to Gerald.

However, the lady boss, Qassie, heard him referring to Gerald as ‘Mr. Crawford’.

Her eyes widened in shock at this moment.

Crawford... Mr. Crawford?

Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street?!

D*mn it!

It was already common news in their circle that Mr. Crawford was a very humble and low-key person who was currently studying at Mayberry University. No one knew about his identity.

However, he had a very powerful and big reputation throughout Mayberry City.

How could Qassie not know about Mr. Crawford’s identity as their big boss?!

Oh my God! Unexpectedly, Mr. Crawford was actually Cassandra's student. Moreover, she had even ordered Gerald to work for her!

"Mr. Crawford, this is a huge misunderstanding! This is all just a huge misunderstanding!" Qassie hurriedly tried to explain herself with an awkward expression on her face.

Gerald ignored her as he walked away from the center of the crowd.

Flynn snorted coldly as he said, "Watch your mouth! I will settle the score with you regarding this matter when I come back later!"

A large number of people left in a hurry.

Qassie was left behind, and her face had already turned pale in fright.

"Oh my God! Gerald is actually leaving with that group of men! What were they saying just now? Brother Flynn seemed to be really polite and respectful toward Gerald!"

The crowd of people could not hear what Flynn had said to Gerald, however, everyone could tell that Flynn really respected Gerald.

Sara and the others could not help but feel a little confused.

"I do not know either!" Sara could not help mumbling to herself.

She did not know why but she suddenly felt that Gerald actually looked particularly handsome and domineering when he was surrounded by that group of people as he left.

At this time, Sara suddenly had a very bold guess in her heart.

This assumption made her entire body tremble a little.

‘Could it be that Gerald is, in fact, Mr. Crawford?’

What?

How could that be possible?!

It was impossible!

There were about a dozen black extended Rolls-Royce Phantom cars parked outside the entrance of the bar at this time.

Gerald got into the car which was right in the center.

The group of men immediately drove toward a place called the Amethyst Dynasty Hotel.

At this time, in a room at the Amethyst Dynasty Hotel.

“No... no... help! Help!”

Cassandra was violently thrown on the bed. She was extremely drunk and felt very dizzy at this time. She did not even have the strength to resist anymore.

She only had a slight bit of awareness left.

All she could do was shout weakly.

“Hahaha! Little beauty, you can yell! Yell as loud as you can. Even if you scream until your throat is hoarse, no one will come and save you!”

Desmond took off his shirt with a perverted smile on his face.

He could not help but drool as he looked at the stunner that was lying on the bed.

Ever since he made something out of himself, Desmond had had countless strategies and plans for himself. As long as he saw a woman that he liked, she would never be able to escape him.

What's more, this gorgeous beauty named Cassandra had actually dared to hit him in public.

This was the first time he had ever experienced something like this.

As this time, aside from being filled with desires, Desmond was seeking pleasure in taking revenge.

As for Cassandra's best friend, Qassie... Hehe. All he had to do was ask her if money or friendship was more important to her.

Chapter 246

Qassie already understood what he meant when Desmond had given her that look back in the bar!

After all, he was the biggest investor in her husband's bar.

"Beauty, I am coming for you!" Desmond was already drooling, and he immediately rushed forward impatiently.

At this moment, a loud bang sounded! Someone had broken down the hotel door.

Immediately after, a group of men dressed in black rushed in directly.

"D*mn it! What are you doing?!" Desmond was shocked and terrified, and he hurriedly shrank to the side.

However, he suddenly had a very flattering expression on his face when he saw Flynn walking into the hotel room.

“Oh! Brother Flynn, you are here! I was just wondering who it could be. Haha. Are you trying to start a dispute because you failed to recognize who I am?”

Flynn had a very big reputation and name on Mayberry Commercial Street. Aside from being Zack’s subordinate, Flynn was only beneath one person and above everyone else.

Desmond often came to Mayberry City. So, how could he possibly not know that Flynn was an extremely ruthless and domineering person in Mayberry City?

“F*ck you! You can just wait to die!” Flynn kicked Desmond aside with his leg.

After that, he looked at Cassandra who was drunk and in a daze on the bed. At this time, he came forward and said respectfully, “Miss Cassandra, you must have been frightened. Someone sent us here to save you!”

After he was done speaking, Flynn waved his hand.

Immediately afterward, a female doctor came forward. She gave Cassandra some medication before she started wiping Cassandra’s face with a wet towel.

In less than an hour, Cassandra had already sobered up.

“Thank you, Mr. Lexington!” Cassandra said in surprise as she tidied herself up and straightened out her clothes.

“Mr. Lexington, can I ask who sent you here to save me?” Cassandra stood up as she asked nervously and excitedly.

Of course she would be excited! The famous Flynn Lexington from Mayberry Commercial Street had actually rushed in with his group of men to save her at this critical moment.

Moreover, Flynn was so respectful toward her.

Someone had instigated him to come here, so this could only mean that the person who instructed him to come and save her had an even more important and powerful identity as compared to him.

As for her friend, Qassie, Cassandra could rule her off the list almost immediately.

Qassie was also to be blamed for this dangerous situation that she had gotten entangled in.

Besides, even if Qassie found her own conscience and tried to save her, she would not have been able to get Brother Flynn to treat her so respectfully.

Therefore, this was the first thing that Cassandra asked as soon as she sobered up.

Flynn replied, "Regarding his identity, I am in no right to say or give any comments at all. However, he has already told me what I should say if you were to ask me this question. He told me that he is just a person who likes to be ordinary!"

"Ahh? Could it be Brother Ordinary Man?" Cassandra could not stop herself from jumping up in excitement when she came to this sudden realization.

Wouldn't a person who liked to be ordinary be none other than Brother Ordinary Man?

Moreover, she did not know any other powerful or influential people aside from Brother Ordinary Man!

This way, everything seemed to make perfect sense.

After all, wasn't someone already guessing that Brother Ordinary Man was none other than Mr. Crawford?

Many people did not believe it.

However, judging from the situation at this moment, the only way Brother Ordinary Man could make Brother Flynn act like this was if he was the so-called Mr. Crawford.

This had to be the case. Brother Ordinary Man must have also come to the bar during its opening today, and he must have seen her getting bullied.

Thus, he had immediately made a call to send someone here to rescue her.

This had to be the case!

Cassandra's desperation and panic seemed to have completely disappeared at this time.

"Miss Cassandra, I have been given instructions to send you back to school safely. You should go back first. As for the rest, you can just leave things to my subordinates to handle!"

Although he did not know what Cassandra's relationship was to Mr. Crawford, since Mr. Crawford was willing to come forth and save her, it would not be wrong for him to be respectful and polite toward this woman. Flynn could not help but think this to himself.

"Okay, Mr. Lexington. Can you do me a favor before I leave?"

Flynn nodded as he said, "Just say it!"

"Can you ask your subordinate to lend me the electric baton in his hand?"

As she spoke, Cassandra glanced coldly at Desmond's lower body. This made Desmond's heart sink to the bottom of his stomach...

"You, you, you... what are you going to do?!"

Chapter 247

"Ahhh!"

A terrible scream resounded throughout the entire hotel. This was definitely the last time a man could actually scream in such a loud and powerful manner.

Yes, it would definitely be the last time for this man!

Right after that...

Cassandra grabbed her bag before she walked out of the hotel room.

There were two neat rows of bodyguards standing on both sides of the hotel corridor at this time.

Cassandra was already dazzled with excitement at this time.

She could even act recklessly after getting rescued. This felt really great!

When she retaliated against Desmond just now, he did not even dare to resist at all. He simply allowed her to electrocute him directly.

Moreover, after coming out of the hotel room, there were two rows of bodyguards standing there respectfully just to wait for her.

This was simply too great!

Was this what it felt like to have someone supporting her and backing her up? Was this what it felt like to be with Brother Ordinary Man?

Glory. Safety.

Any other ordinary person could not compare to him at all!

“Miss Cassandra, please get into the car!” As soon as they got to the door, Flynn personally opened the car door for Cassandra before inviting her to get into the car.

After that, the group of people left in a mighty force.

Where was Gerald?

In fact, Gerald had been following them just now. After Flynn had confirmed the room number and brought his men up with him, Gerald had almost followed the group of people up there.

However, Gerald had hesitated right then. If he really went up to the hotel room, he would definitely have to meet Cassandra face to face.

What would he possibly say if that happened?

Wouldn't his identity as Mr. Crawford be exposed directly?

What was the point of him hiding his identity for so long then?

Besides, Flynn could handle all these things on his own.

It would not make sense for him to go up to the hotel room by himself. Therefore, Gerald simply explained it shortly to Flynn before he left in a cab right away.

This was the reason why Gerald asked Flynn to tell Cassandra all that.

“Mr. Lexington, thank you for everything you have done today. I will make sure to inform Brother Ordinary Man about your hard work!” At this time, Cassandra sat in the back seat with her legs crossed as she spoke to Flynn who was sitting in the co-driver seat.

Her tone was no longer as polite or respectful as it was before.

Hehe. Flynn might be really awesome, but he was nothing more than Brother Ordinary Man’s subordinate. Wouldn’t she be lowering her own status if she continued being so respectful toward Flynn?

“Thank you, Miss Cassandra! Also, please inform Ger... Mr. Ordinary Man that we have already completed our task!” Flynn could only respond to Cassandra’s words.

After that, Cassandra hummed in reply. She had already forgotten to contact Ordinary Man because she had been too excited.

After opening her WeChat, she looked for Ordinary Man’s chat box so that she could chat with him.

[Brother Ordinary Man, were you the one who saved me? I love you! I love you to death!]

Gerald had not driven Cassandra’s car back, and he simply left her car at the bar. Gerald had already returned to his dormitory to rest, and he knew that Cassandra was fine after receiving her WeChat message. Therefore, he simply replied ‘yes’.

Cassandra typed this sentence excitedly before sending it immediately: [I am truly very touched and completely speechless because of everything that you have done for me today. Well, I will not say anything to thank you anymore, Brother Ordinary Man. Just remember that my goal in the future is to do everything that I can to become your woman!]

“F*ck!” Gerald, who was inside the dormitory, could not help but yell in shock.

“Ahh?! What is wrong, Gerald? Are you in a daze from your sleep?”

“No, it’s okay. I simply had a shock. Let’s go back to sleep! I am so tired!” Gerald fell asleep immediately after that.

“Miss Cassandra, we have already arrived at the university!” Flynn got out of the car to open the car door for Cassandra.

Cassandra snorted before getting out of the car.

She seemed to have completely forgotten about Gerald who had gone to the bar with her.

In fact, Cassandra had thought of Gerald when she was leaving the hotel.

Her car key was still with him too.

She initially planned to ask Flynn to send someone to the bar to pick him up.

However, after thinking about it, she felt that it would be extremely embarrassing for her to let other people find out that a lowly person like Gerald was her student.

Therefore, Cassandra did not say anything to notify Gerald and simply planned to send Gerald a text message to ask him to take a cab back after she had returned home.

Chapter 248

She decided not to drive her own car!

She was disgusted by it!

“Ouch!” Cassandra was hurt by something when she was trying to get down the car.

“What is this in your car? It hurts!” Cassandra complaint.

She picked up something from the seat under her and it was a powerbank!

“Why is there a dirty power bank in such a luxurious car? Throw it away already!” Cassandra was so furious at it that she almost forgot about her image as a pretty girl. She picked up the power bank and she was going to throw it into the rubbish bin but she stopped.

“Isn’t this mine?” Cassandra looked closely at it and realized it was the hundred dollar powerbank that she bought recently! She was very certain that it was her power bank because there was a picture of her stuck onto it.

Cassandra did not even think about anything else when she saw her picture. She usually put her power bank in her car but Gerald needed to use the power bank and she lent it to him.

How did the powerbank get into this Roll-Royce? Did she leave it here by accident? But it was not possible! She did not even get anywhere near to Gerald today how could it be possible? Even if he were to return it to her, why did he have to leave it in the car sneakily? He could have just returned it to her. That only meant that she did not leave it in the car but somehow Gerald did...

Cassandra’s face turned white as she thought about it.

How did he get in this car?

What was his identity?

What’s going on...?

Cassandra was confused and her mind was ringing. “Hey, Mr. Lexington! Do you know who Gerald is?” Cassandra asked as she had some thoughts in her mind.

“Nope. Why?” Flynn answered immediately. When Cassandra shouted Gerald’s name, Flynn was nervous.

“Gerald is my student and he borrowed a power bank from me but I wasn’t sure why it was in your car.”

“You’re right. How could it be in my car when you already lend it to him?” Flynn gulped nervously.

Why was it here?

Gerald must have left it in the car by accident before he left!

“I’m asking you, Mr. Lexington!” Cassandra really wanted to find out.

“I remember now! We heard that you were in trouble at the bar just now but I’ve not seen you before and someone said he knew what you look like so he gave me the power bank with your face on it...”

Flynn was a very honest man. It was tough for him to lie with a straight face.

“Okay! I understand!”

Cassandra looked at her power bank and thought for a while. Maybe it was Gerald that gave him.

After Flynn went off, Cassandra went upstairs.

But the more she thought about it, the more something was not right. Flynn sounded like he was lying, especially in the last part of his speech was very suspicious.

It was not right!

Chapter 249

It was not right!

Cassandra realized what Flynn said was impossible. He said he needed to find out how she looked but he could have had many other ways. In fact was it really necessary for him to find out how she looked?

Cassandra knew the entire process of how Flynn saved her. She knew that Flynn found out where she was through those subordinates and he came straight to the room to rescue her so why did he have to find out how she looked?

Furthermore, how did the Ordinary Man find out? The Ordinary Man did not like those kinds of places and the only person that knew about her location was Gerald!

What the fuck!

Cassandra could not calm down. Does that mean that Gerald was the Ordinary Man?

Cassandra laughed.

How is it even possible!

What was she thinking?

There must be some misunderstanding here. Cassandra shall clarify it from Gerald again the next day.

Cassandra finally calmed herself down and let off of that matter temporarily.

The next day was a Saturday and Gerald woke up slightly late. He slept in until his phone rang. It was Elena.

It has been a few days since they had spoken to each other. What does she want to do with me?

Gerald still picked up the phone out of curiosity. "Gerald, are you busy?" Elena asked softly.

"I'm not. What is it?" Gerald asked.

"Remember the last time you acted as my boyfriend to help me? My aunt from Rivington City and some other relatives are coming over to Mayberry to visit my father today!"

"But my dad will be having meetings for these two days and I'll be accompanying them!" Elena kept on talking.

"Then you should keep them company! If you plan to visit Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, I can get you and your family a luxurious suite!" Gerald answered.

Even though there were some misunderstandings between them at first when they met and Elena had beaten him up before. However, after everything that they had been through, they had become friends.

Gerald did not mind at all but that was not what Elena meant.

"Gerald, I'm not asking you to arrange a room for us. I'm trying to ask if you have the time to accompany me and families to go around town?"

"Accompany them? Please don't tell me you want me to continue acting as your boyfriend. Elena, I've had enough for the last time okay! Like seriously, please don't do this to me!" Gerald rejected her request.

Chapter 250

Gerald was trying his best to avoid ideas like these nowadays.

Nothing personal but it was all for Mila. Ever since he decided to date Mila, he had to think about her for every decision he made.

But Elena started crying on the other end of the phone.

“Okay...Gerald. I understand what you mean, how can I make you do so much for me right? It’s just my aunt has told my relatives about you and they all really want to meet you! It’s okay, I’ll just tell them you’re not my boyfriend and I don’t deserve to be your girlfriend...I shouldn’t trouble you either!” Elena said as she sobbed.

Gerald did not know what to do. He could never stand a girl crying in front of him especially when it was because of him.

Gerald sighed and said, “Please stop crying. I’ll do it. Send me a location and I’ll go meet you!”

“You’re the best, Gerald! I love you so much!” Elena immediately stopped crying.

Gerald only promised Elena to put an end to the story. Since he was the one that helped her from the start, he should take the responsibility to end things with her!

Gerald changed and he decided to call a taxi to meet with Elena because it was quite late and there were going to be many people. He met up with Elena first and arranged a car from Elena’s family to pick up her relatives at the Mayberry Airport.

Meanwhile at the airport, there were eight to nine people waiting for them. Some were middle-aged and some were young and pretty.

“What is going on, Aunt Larson? Didn’t you tell Elena we will be arriving at nine thirty, it has been an hour! Why isn’t she here yet?”

“Be patient, Carmen. Maybe Elena was busy. I called them just now. They should be reaching soon. Don’t worry!”

“It was so different from the last time we were here. There must be many new attractions around! Anyways, didn’t you say Elena brought her boyfriend to pay you a visit the last time, Ruby? How was the boy? I don’t understand what you mean when you say he’s not decent enough through the phone!” A lady that looked like Ruby Larson asked.

She's Harriet Larson, Ruby Larson's sister. She had moved to the north ever since got married. She was the manager at a Security Agency and she makes a few hundred thousands of dollars each year.

"Don't even mention that poor brat! Just the thought of him makes me so mad! That person just won some small lottery and he was as arrogant as a peacock! He was just a poor brat to start with and he dared to flirt with Elena! I wanted to introduce my best friend's son to her, Dickson but...sigh!"

Ruby was so mad when Gerald came into the topic. She would never allow him to be part of the Larsons.

"Amber probably thinks that he's too disgusting. She wouldn't come no matter how hard we asked her. Ever since he visited us and went to that party with them, Amber hasn't been fine. She wouldn't say a single word no matter how hard we asked her!"

Ruby sighed. "She was probably shocked by how disgusting that poor brat was!"

"Hahaha! Ruby, you have become really mean these days. How could you talk about a child like that? But I would really love to meet this Gerald. It's hard to imagine how disgusting he can be!" Scarlet laughed bitterly.

"Of course! He can't even compete with all my nieces' husbands over here!"

There were three ladies and three men standing beside Harriet.

One of the girls looked like she was in her mid 20 and the two other girls were around Elena's age. They were all decent looking and fair but their eyes were fierce and arrogant.

They were all Elena's cousins and beside them were their boyfriends. The two younger ones were Harriet's daughter and the older one was Harriet's husband's niece. They were all here for vacation.

"How dare you say aunt is mean, mom! Is there anyone meaner than you? My sister's ex-boyfriend almost killed himself because of your insults!" The youngest and the most fashionable girl said.

“Don’t you talk to me like that, you little rascal! I’ll slap you if you ever say that I’m mean again. I was just being honest. He thought he could marry my daughter with just a multi million dollar company? Your father’s company alone is worth more than that!” Harriet sneered. She looked extra arrogant with those sunglasses.

Everyone laughed.

“Elena is here!” One of the girls pointed at the gate as Gerald and Elena walked toward them...

Chapter 251

“I’m really sorry for being late, aunties!”

“Don’t be! It’s okay, child!” Harriet smiled at Elena and glared at Gerald while judging him from top to toe.

“Nice to meet all of you!” Gerald greeted them politely.

“You must be Gerald!” Harriet said as she folded her arms. She already had a first impression of him.

He was dressed very casually. Even though he looked decent she could tell that he was from a small village with no fashion sense! Harriet shook her head. She would never allow someone like him to be his son-in-law! She would not just insult him but also give him a few slaps!

“Hi!” Harriet greeted him back.

“Hah! Haven’t seen you in a while and you still look the same!” Ruby said rudely.

The other cousins turned to their own boyfriends and shook their heads at them.

How could their cousin find someone like that?

That fashion sense was so bad!

Gerald just smiled lightly.

It seemed like Amber had not mentioned anything ever since she went back! Though he really wished that she had mentioned something to her family!

“The car is ready, aunties. Let’s get in the car and go look around first!” Gerald was still smiling.

“The car is ready? Why, you’re already talking like the car is yours!” Ruby could not stand it when she saw Elena was holding onto Gerald’s arm tightly. She immediately pulled her away unhappily.

There were two luxurious cars to bring them around Mayberry. After they got onto the car, they were ready to leave for the attractions.

“What do you plan to do after you graduate, Gerald?” Harriet asked with a fake smile on her face.

As they were on their way, they started chatting and the conversation landed on Gerald.

“Maybe some of my resolutions!” Gerald answered in a very blunt way.

“What?” Elena cousins laughed and their boyfriends shook their heads.

Since Elena’s cousins had brought along their boyfriends, they must compete with one another.

Before this, they all heard that the prettiest among them, Elena had found herself a boyfriend. They all brought their own boyfriends to make some comparisons.

The three sisters were nervous at first. But now, they were not pressured at all! They did not even see Gerald as an opponent.

“You? Your own resolutions? You’re so naive!” Harriet shook her head speechlessly. This child was way too arrogant.

“Aunt, it’s good that he has such a mindset. But again, after graduating you should gain some experience first before you could venture into the business world!” The boyfriend of the youngest cousin said.

Since he was the youngest, he should have called Gerald a big brother but he did not and it showed how much he disrespected him.

“Pierre is right. This is what someone with a big business empire would say. Will you be working at your father’s company?”

“I’ve thought about it!”

“I wouldn’t work with my father. I’m ready to venture!” Elena’s second cousin’s boyfriend spoke.

“Felix is right too!” Ruby laughed as she said, “It seems like both my nieces have found themselves good husbands! Now I’m just worried about Amber and Elena. When will they find someone like Felix?”

“Um, auntie, Gerald is still here.” Elena’s second cousin was trying to cover her own laughter.

“Haha! Him?”

Chapter 252

They could not stop talking and Gerald almost threw the drinks at them.

He saw that their drinks were finishing and he decided to get up to get more drinks for them. “I’ll go get some more milk tea so you guys could continue talking!”

Gerald immediately stood up and left.

After Gerald had left, the two sisters and Elena's other cousin went to surround her. They saw each other a lot and they were very close. "Elena, what's going on? Why would you choose him!"

"That's right, sis! This person is so cheap and it's unbelievable!"

"Yes! This kind of person in our school doesn't get any friends!"

"You all really shouldn't judge a book by its cover you know. Gerald is a great person. He's loyal and honest but most importantly he has great ideas! Isn't these the qualities to look for when dating someone?" Elena was feeling helpless.

"Elena, you're too naive! You'll soon realize that money is the most important thing in the future! But this isn't a money issue, Elena. Even if he has a bit of money people would still look down on him! Just breakup with him already, okay? I'll introduce you to someone better!"

The three sisters were trying to persuade her but Elena lowered her head and she decided to not say a single word while everyone was worried for her.

Meanwhile, Gerald came back with hands full of drinks. He brought back some milk tea.

"Have some drinks, everyone! The weather is too hot these days!" Gerald felt better after leaving for a while. In fact, these are just Elena's relatives. He did not really have a reason to be mad at them.

"No, thanks. You can have it all!" The three sisters shook their heads speechlessly.

"We don't want it either!" Harriet and Ruby said as they shook their heads.

"I think we are well rested here. We should move on to the next location!" Ruby continued.

"Alright! Let's visit the Mountain road and then we could have lunch at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment!" Elena nodded her head.

Gerald did not dare to mention anything about his identity!

Everyone walked toward the car and was ready to go on to the next location.

Suddenly, Elena's third cousin turned to her own boyfriend and said, "I'm so thirsty! Could you please get me a drink and buy a few more."

"Yes please, and less ice. I don't like cold drinks!" Harriet said.

"Alright! I'll go get it!" Pierre said as he ran off.

Gerald shook his head speechlessly as he held those milk tea. He thought he was just poor but he did not know even the drinks he bought could 'quench' their thirst so nicely.

They finally set off to the Mountain Road and Gerald did not say a single word. He was playing his phone in the co-pilot seat the whole time.

Meanwhile, the three sisters and Harriet put their heads outside the window discussing the scenery.

"Wow! This is so beautiful, mom! Look at the mountain view!" They were amazed by it.

"It has been a while since I've visited Mayberry and this mountain view is just so iconic!" Ruby said happily.

"Stop the car now! Mom, aunt, look what I just saw! I think it's a mirage!" Elena's third cousin shouted excitedly.

"What? Mirage? Let me have a good look!"

Everyone got out of the car to catch a better view.

There was a luxurious and fancy house on top of the mountain with clouds covering it slightly.

The house seemed like it was floating on the clouds.

“It’s so beautiful! But I don’t think it’s a mirage!” Harriet was very excited. She immediately took out her camera and started taking pictures of it. Harriet was just a general manager, she was also a photography enthusiast.

“You’re right, aunt! It’s not a mirage. It’s a bungalow on top of Mayberry City called the Mountain Top Villa!”

“That is the Mountain Top Villa?”

Chapter 253

“I know I know! It was very well known among the rich people a while ago because Crawford’s son bought it with eight million dollars!”

“So it’s here! It looks amazing!”

“Anyways, Elena, since your family has something to do with Mayberry Commercial Street. Do you think you could bring us to the villa just to have a look at the surroundings?”

The aunts were very envious about it.

Elena turned and looked at Gerald. He did not reject them and she nodded back at them.

They immediately reached the place.

Whenever Gerald was not around there would be security guards outside to stop people from going in.

They were only halfway through and the guards were already there to stop them from going up.

“What are you guys doing here? This isn’t an attraction, please leave right now!” the two middle-aged security guards were really strict.

“We aren’t tourists, okay? This pretty lady over here is the daughter of Mr. Larson from Mayberry Commercial Street! Can’t we go in and have a look since Mr. Crawford hasn’t moved in yet?” Ruby said proudly.

“Oh! It’s Elena Larson. Our apologies!”

The Commercial Street and the Mountain Villa were all under the same company and these securities were Michael Zeke’s people hence they would know about the important people of the Mayberry Commercial Street.

When they saw Gerald standing beside Elena, they smiled happily.

“Ms. Elena, we are just here to look after Mr. Crawford’s villa. It would not be possible to let you all into the villa and if Mr. Zeke finds out, we would be in big trouble. So, please, Ms. Elena if you all aren’t planning to go into the villa, you all can stroll around!”

The people that wanted to visit the villa were all people that were very well known. For example, Yoel Holden claimed that Gerald was his godbrother and kept bringing people here.

Even though they could not verify if he was the real deal but just his name alone was terrifying.

However, the villa was really not opened to the public.

The securities did not dare to stop Elena Larson either.

“Okay, We’ll just stroll outside the villa!” After noticing that Gerald did not say anything she turned to securities and said.

“Another thing, Ms. Elena. Don’t you think the people that you’re bringing in are slightly too many? We would be fired if the management sees it!” The securities were troubled.

“You’re so troublesome! We’ll just leave one behind, that’s all! Nine of us are going up” Harriet said.

Everyone knew that one person that was going to be left behind was Gerald.

Gerald was utterly speechless. Afterall, it was his own house and now he was not allowed to look at his own house.

Gerald was not planning to pamper them anymore when they reached the mountain top later.

He actually wanted to be low profile but they were way too much. Because they do not even care about him!

“That would be our arrangement! Let’s go, Elena!”

“There’s no point for him to go up there. People like him are good enough even with a house. He can’t afford a bungalow!” Ruby sneered.

Everyone else went up excitedly leaving Gerald behind.

Gerald smiled bitterly as he shook his head. He would not just stay there. Since he was already here, he would go and have a look and see if Michael has finished his work.

“What the hell are you trying to do?”

One of the securities stopped him from going up.

Gerald was stunned. “What? You guys don't know who I am?”

How could the security from Wayfair Mountain Entertainment not know himself?

He thought they only acted as if they did not know who he was because they were told to. He did not realize that they were not aware of his identity!

“You? Who do you think you are? Aren’t you just a lowly peasant that is going to marry a rich family? You don’t seem very welcomed by them either!”

Chapter 254

“Look at you! Your job is to be insulted!” The securities laughed as they humiliated him.

“Mr. Crawford!”

Someone shouted.

The securities were nervous now. They stopped laughing.

What did she call him just now?

Gerald?

Gerald turned his head. “Rita! It has been a while!”

Rita was the designer for the villa and soon she would also be the butler at this villa.

Beside Rita was Nyla and a few others. They all met the last time when they were dealing with the villa.

“Good afternoon, Mr. Crawford!”

They used to look down on him before knowing his identity. After knowing that he controlled the entire Mayberry Commercial Street and he was really low profile, they all thought they should try their best and hope that they could marry him.

“My sister was asking about you yesterday but don’t worry. I’ve not said a single thing!” Rita said.

Gerald understood because after that day, Cara went back to dine in again and they did not get a discount for the second time.

He must have gotten the attention of Cara and she was investigating him!

“Don’t mention it. Your sister is worse than you!”

Gerald smiled bitterly. “Did you bring them here to visit?”

Rita nodded her head, blushing. She could not reject them after they had been asking her for so long.

But seeing Gerald there was a surprise!

“Alright, follow me then! I’ll bring you all into the villa!” Gerald smiled.

Rita took out a spare key from her bag and passed it to Gerald.

Gerald walked through the guard house leaving those securities dumbfounded.

“Quick, Elena! Help us take a picture!”

“I need to stand close to the entrance. I want to post it on my social media to let my friends see it!”

“Elena, help us too!”

Ruby and the others were standing at the front of the door excitedly.

The view up here and the villa was amazing.

Elena's cousins were all very happy.

Meanwhile, they saw Gerald walking up the mountain.

"What the hell is he doing here?"

"Did he sneak up here? It's going to be so embarrassing if people find out!" The sisters complained.

"Why are you up here, Gerald? Did you sneak up here by yourself? You could have just asked Elena to video call you!" Ruby was frowning.

"Um, excuse me, everyone. But if I'm not here, all of you won't be able to see the interior of this villa. So please allow me to show you around as a host and then buy all of you a drink!"

Gerald was still holding onto the milk tea that nobody was willing to drink and his other hand was holding the remote key.

He pressed the button and the door automatically opened up.

"What?"

"What the fuck?"

Chapter 255

Everyone was dumbfounded.

“Who are they, Mr. Crawford?” Rita asked. She was envious when she saw the pretty Elena Larson.

Rita did not feel comfortable there but she did not want to trouble Gerald.

Gerald can't actually say that Elena was his girlfriend because it would be another trouble if Mila found out.

“It's a story for next time. They are all my guests so please make some arrangements!” Gerald smiled.

“Yes, Mr. Crawford!” Rita nodded her head.

Ruby was stunned when she heard what Rita called him. “What? You're a Crawford? Mayberry's heir, Gerald Crawford?” Ruby shouted.

“Yes, auntie! That's me!” Gerald laughed interestingly.

“Elena, is it true?”

Even Harriet was shocked and she felt as if her face was swollen from being 'slapped' by Gerald. The poor peasant that had been humiliated by them along their way was Gerald Crawford!

Elena nodded her head.

Elena's cousins were all taking deep breaths. Clearly, they had heard about him many times and could not believe the person standing right in front of them was the very well-known Gerald Crawford.

They all felt regrets rushing through their heads. They must have looked like a circus show in front of Gerald!

Everything has become way more interesting for the following hours. Their conversations were still about Gerald but whatever he said, they would just agree with him. Gerald knew this time he would make them look like a fool and they just became really quiet.

“The house has completed, Mr. Crawford. When will you be moving in?” Rita asked Gerald softly before they left.

“Within these few days. Michael is quite efficient. He only took six days to complete the job!” Gerald answered and brought them downhill.

“Gerald, where are you? I would like to see you for dinner tonight. There’s something we need to talk about.” It was Mila. She texted Gerald.

Gerald was shocked by the text message after all he had done today.

“I’m at campus. I’ll see you at the canteen tonight then!” Gerald replied.

“Elena, I still have things to do in school and I have to leave now. You could bring them to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment tonight!” Gerald said.

“It’s okay, Gerald. We had been troubling you for the entire day! Don’t worry about us!” Ruby said.

“That’s right, Gerald! Don’t worry about us! You three! Bid your brother-in-law goodbye now!” Harriet said while she embarrassed the three sisters.

“Goodbye, brother-in-law!” The three sisters said as they smiled at him seductively. These women were having thoughts in their heads!

Chapter 256

She could not help but feel that Gerald did not only look very refined but the more she looked at him, the more she felt that he was very handsome even though he was dressed so casually. He definitely looked much better compared to her boyfriend in every way!

“Um...”

Gerald could not take this enthusiasm anymore and left immediately.

As for whether he hated them or not, he did not feel anything whatsoever. After all, both he and Elena were just pretending anyway.

“Oh my God! Elena, you did not tell me that Gerald was Mr. Crawford! Your aunt nearly offended Mr. Crawford just like how your eldest aunt did!”

Ruby clapped her hands excitedly.

Harriet was obviously unhappy when she heard this. “I say, Ruby, you were the one who was speaking viciously in the first place, and you are clearly the one who had offended Mr. Crawford. So, how could you say that it is me? If you don’t believe me, you can ask my daughter. Was my tone impolite at all when I was speaking to Mr. Crawford earlier? Wasn’t it your second aunt who was sneering at him all along?” Harriet hurriedly asked her daughters.

Her daughters did not know what to say.

Fortunately, her son-in-law, Pierre, said, “I don’t think so! Hehehe! Besides, Mr. Crawford’s attitude was pretty good when he left just now. He certainly did not look like he was holding anything against us at all!”

Harriet looked at Pierre in disgust as she said, “Don’t you know your own place? I was asking my daughter so why are you trying to speak up now? Do you think that you can show off just because you have some money? You are so vile! Why can’t you learn something from Gerald who is so mature and stable?”

Pierre’s face turned green immediately.

At this time, her second cousin’s boyfriend, Felix, suddenly laughed.

“You’re laughing? What are you laughing at? Do you think that you are that great? You are always pretending to be so mature and oppressive all the time. Do you have enough money to be so pretentious? A bunch of good-for-nothings who are not promising at all! I want both of you to stay away from my daughters in the future!” Harriet yelled.

After meeting Gerald, who was none other than Mr. Crawford today, Harriet finally realized that both of her future sons-in-law were so lowly. No, they were not only lowly, but they were not even fit to be human at all!

Ruby simply ignored her sister.

She simply turned around and held Elena’s hand as she said, “Elena, we really have to go around more in the future. Your aunt has never been to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment before. Since Gerald has already talked about it, why don’t you bring us there to look around?”

“Yes, Elena! Bring us there!”

“I am not in the mood. If you want to, you can go and have a look on your own!” Elena simply replied lightly.

Her voice was very cold.

She was not intentionally directing her anger at her aunts, however, Elena was in a state of confusion right now.

This was because Elena had been sitting with Gerald just now. Therefore, Elena had happened to see the contents of a text message that Gerald received on WeChat.

It was a text message sent by a girl named Mila, and she was asking Gerald to accompany her to have dinner.

After that, Gerald had lied to her and told her that he was actually at the university before he had left in a hurry.

Gerald did not even dare to tell the other girl that he was with another girl at this time.

Elena could tell that Gerald obviously cared a lot about this girl!

This made Elena feel as though she had received a direct blow to her heart.

To put it bluntly, what was the reason she had been asking for Gerald's help the last three to four times?

Was it because she truly needed Gerald's help?

Besides, couldn't Elena get anyone else to pretend to be her boyfriend?

Why did she have to look for Gerald?

Wasn't it just because she wanted to create more opportunities to spend more time with Gerald?

However, all that Gerald could think about was that girl named Mila! She could tell just by looking at the nervous expression on his face!

Thus, Elena's mind was completely blank at this time, and she was not in the mood to do anything at all!

She simply wanted to be alone.

At this time, Gerald was already back at campus.

He headed straight toward the entrance of the cafeteria.

Upon arriving there, he hurriedly sent Mila a text message: [Why aren't you at the cafeteria yet? I am still waiting for you at the entrance of the cafeteria!]

Gerald thought of the tricks that Naomi and Harper had taught him—to interweave the truth with some falsehood at the same time.

Mila replied apologetically: [Hehe! I will be right there! I am just done with the meeting for our broadcasting department!! Sorry for making you wait!]

'This trick really worked!' Gerald thought to himself.

"Hey! Did you hear that a girl almost committed suicide today?"

At this time, Gerald happened to hear the discussion that was going on between some of the girls who were walking past him at this time...

Chapter 257

"Huh? Suicide? Why?!"

"Hmph! Isn't it just because she confessed her love to Silas but he did not accept her feelings? After that, the girl could not think right anymore!"

"Ah, so that's what it is. Sigh. It seems as though more and more people are beginning to confess their love to Silas recently. However, I seem to have heard something over the past two days. It seems as though there is a girl who is actually getting pretty close to Silas!"

"D*mn it! I am so jealous. Which girl could possibly be so fortunate to be favored by Silas?"

"No matter who the other girls are all interested in, I only have one goal in mind, and that is none other than Mr. Crawford! Hmph!"

At this time, a very cold and beautiful girl who looked like a goddess spoke up.

“Wow! No one can see or touch Mr. Crawford at all! How could he possibly be as glamorous as Silas?”

“Oh! Is there something wrong with you? Why are you standing in front of the entrance of the cafeteria and blocking everyone’s way? Don’t you realize your own stupidity?”

The few girls continued their loud discussion as they glared coldly at Gerald.

Pfft!

Gerald snorted as he ignored them directly!

“Hello, Gerald!” By this time, Mila had already walked over to him.

As soon as she walked up to him, Mila took Gerald’s hand in hers.

They were just like any other boyfriend and girlfriend.

In fact, the encounter between both of them was a little strange.

After their last misunderstanding, Mila knew what Gerald’s true feelings were, and Gerald also knew what Mila wanted.

That night, Gerald had asked her “Will you become my girlfriend?”, to which Mila had replied, “Hasn’t it always been that way?”.

There was no glamorous or big love confession, and there was nothing dramatic at all, but both of them had eventually ended up as a couple.

Gerald did not even bother to ask whether Mila was implicitly implying that she had always been his fake or real girlfriend. No matter what it was, the situation right now was perfect to him anyway.

“Let’s go and eat now. What should we eat tonight?” Mila asked.

“I feel like eating braised pork!”

Both of them continued chatting and laughing as they entered the cafeteria together. Many boys who were witnessing this scene could not help but feel a little jealous and envious.

Mila was such a beautiful girl. Why had she ended up with someone like that?

This was unbelievable!

After that, a plate of braised pork and a few plates of vegetables were served.

Gerald and Mila were having dinner face to face.

At this time, many boys and girls were sitting around them.

All of them were talking about Silas and the number of girls who had failed to pursue him.

Gerald was also bewildered.

“Why is this Silas so high-profile? Is he really here to attend school?” Gerald asked as he smiled bitterly.

“Haha! Do you think that everyone is just like you? Your family trained you by making you live in poverty for so many years, but on the other hand, he has been spoiled ever since he was born. By the way, Gerald, why don’t you tell me how powerful your family really is? Why haven’t you told me anything at all?” Mila asked softly.

She was not a materialistic person who worshiped money, but she had always been very curious to find out about Gerald's family's strength. After all, what kind of power would Gerald's family actually possess that they could actually mobilize so many helicopters and allow Gerald to spend money so endlessly.

"I do not know much about my family, but I only know that my family is very rich and we have so much money that we will never be able to finish spending it!"

Gerald replied honestly.

"Pfft! I don't believe you! How could you have so much money that you can never finish spending it?" Mila felt that Gerald was just bragging.

However, Gerald was really telling the truth.

Both of them continued arguing amongst themselves and it was rather noisy and lively.

Suddenly, at this time, the entire cafeteria exploded with various people shouting and screaming.

Gerald was taken aback.

When he looked up, he saw a group of people walking toward the cafeteria.

And this person was not just anyone. It was none other than Silas.

The atmosphere in the cafeteria was similar to a scene where a big celebrity had just appeared.

"Silas, I love you! Can you accept me?" Some of the girls yelled shamelessly.

"Silas! What must I do before I can finally become your girlfriend? Can you please tell me?"

“Wow! I have to take a picture right now!”

These kinds of girls who were yelling out so boldly would often be those girls who always liked to dress and doll themselves up.

Chapter 258

However, it seemed as though Silas was already used to it.

“I am just here to accompany one of my friends to have a meal, okay? There is no need for you to make such a big fuss!” Silas replied with a wry smile on his face.

After that, he looked at the doorway behind him.

At this time, two girls stepped forward under everyone’s watchful eyes and stood beside Silas.

“Puff!”

Gerald had just taken a sip of the soup in front of him, but he nearly spat the food out at Mila’s face when he saw the two girls who came in after Silas.

“D*mn it!” Gerald was shocked.

The two girls were naturally very stunning and beautiful, and they were none other than Alice and Jacelyn.

“Oh my God. Is that Silas’s girlfriend? Why? Is it just because she is beautiful?”

“You are so disgusting! Why are you trying to seduce Silas?”

Some of the girls began to scold them indignantly.

“She is not his girlfriend. Didn’t you hear what Silas said just now? She is a friend! She is just his friend! That simply means we still stand a chance!”

“Alice, Jacelyn, why don’t you sit down? To be honest, if both of you did not say that you liked the food in the cafeteria, I would not have come here at all. This is the first time I have ever stepped into the school’s cafeteria after growing so big! Hahaha!” Silas said as he smiled.

After that, he sat down at the table in the center of the cafeteria.

As for Alice, she simply straightened out her hair and smiled slightly before she sat down.

She obviously did not want to say too much.

In fact, Alice was already scared after getting hurt by Quinton, followed by Gerald.

Therefore, although Alice was excited and flattered that Silas, who was now well-known to everyone in Mayberry University, was endlessly pursuing her, she was still very conservative.

She would not be the kind of girl who would take the first step anymore.

Moreover, to be honest, it would be impossible for Silas to date her just because he was rich and had some money.

What Alice was interested in was love, not sex.

Either way, Alice wanted to protect and defend her own innocence and virginity before she got married.

Besides, she had been in a very bad mood for the past few days after she had gotten dumped by Gerald.

At the same time, she had only proved to herself that she had been thinking too much.

Perhaps Gerald was not truly as powerful as she imagined him to be?

No!

After getting to know Silas over the past two days, Alice had discovered that Gerald might not be as good as she thought he was. All he had was just some money.

She had really thought too highly of Gerald!

Compared to Silas, Gerald's various behaviors were at an elementary school level! Simply a joke!

This was especially so because of all the attention Alice was currently enjoying—as though everyone was in awe of her. Gerald could not possibly give her any of this.

Jacelyn was also enjoying this refreshing feeling at this time, and she had a look of arrogance on her face.

“Hey! Hey! Hey! Are you looking at beautiful girls?” Mila stretched out her hand before she waved it in front of Gerald's eyes. After that, she put down her chopsticks as she felt a little angry at this time.

“Ahh! No!” Gerald hurriedly explained himself. “I was just curious as to how Alice met and got acquainted with Silas.”

“Hmph! What do you mean no? I think you must be a little upset and uncomfortable now, aren't you? Alice still liked you two days ago, but it is obvious that she likes someone else now. You must be feeling very uncomfortable, right?” Mila asked as she frowned.

“I am not feeling uncomfortable. Even if I am feeling uncomfortable, it is just because I pity Alice. She is actually a pretty good girl, but she is simply too materialistic. I am afraid that she will lose her

confidence and wallow in self-despair after getting stimulated and hurt by another guy again!” Gerald replied truthfully.

“Who else has stimulated and hurt her before aside from you?” Mila continued questioning him to get to the bottom of this matter.

“There was also this boy that we knew before. She was truly hurt very deeply at that time. Hahaha. Forget it. Let’s stop talking about this, okay? Let’s continue eating!” Gerald replied as he shook his head helplessly.

However, after taking two bites of his food, a small peanut suddenly hit his table.

Who was it? This person was simply too idle, right?

Gerald could not help but curse inside.

After that, another peanut hit Gerald’s table again.

Gerald was finally certain that someone was trying to provoke him.

When he looked up, he saw Jacelyn, who was wearing branded clothes from head to toe, staring at him with an arrogant look on her face as she sneered at him. She was holding a peanut with her chopsticks...

Chapter 259

It seemed as though Jacelyn was trying to say ‘Gerald, you never would have expected this would you? I, Jacelyn, could actually end up in this favorable situation today. A local tycoon like Silas actually favored me and took me in as his godsister! He even bought me clothes, bags, and many other things!’.

Jacelyn wanted to return Gerald all the humiliation he had made her suffer in the past.

Of course, Gerald simply ignored her as he continued eating his food.

Alice naturally noticed what Jacelyn had been doing.

In fact, Alice had already noticed that Gerald was here when she entered the cafeteria just now.

However, she simply glanced at Gerald before she looked away in a huff.

Speaking of how Alice had gotten acquainted with Silas, this also had something to do with Gerald.

Hadn't Gerald dumped Alice in the small park the other day before he went to pursue Mila instead?

She had felt very ashamed and angry at that time, and she had happened to meet Silas by coincidence.

After Silas had added her as friends on WeChat, both of them had become good friends.

It was also precisely because she had met Silas that the damage to her self-esteem because of Gerald had completely disappeared.

Therefore, Alice did not feel the need for her to talk to Gerald anymore!

She could also find other boys who were a hundred times better than Gerald! Hmph!

"By the way, Mila, didn't you say that you had something to tell me? What's the matter?" Gerald withdrew his thoughts and asked Mila the question as he continued eating.

"Oh, yes. It is about me going to the Hong Kong Television Station for a three-month study plan. I will be leaving the day after tomorrow. I've already registered and would like to go there so that I can learn and study more. After that, I will come back to Mayberry City to look for a job internship!" Mila replied.

"Oh my! Why is it so sudden?" Gerald was taken aback.

“I received the notice this morning, and then, I began to proceed with the registration. After signing up, I’ve been attending the meeting for the whole day. The study period is for three months! I also want to stay in Mayberry City, but I do not want to constantly be living under my family and your shadow! I want to be able to prove myself!” Mila replied firmly.

Gerald was slightly dejected as he nodded. “It’s okay. We should be learning more since we are still young. It is not only you, but I will also have my own study plans.”

This was not a breakup, however, Gerald could not help but feel a little reluctant because they would be separated for three whole months.

Mila held Gerald’s hand as she smiled and said, “You can come and visit me anytime you want to! I am not going missing anyway!”

“Okay. Alright then, I will come and see you whenever I have time!”

Anyway, he heard his sister saying that the core location of his family was in Northbay, so, they would probably have many estates and industries in Hong Kong.

When the time came, he could just give them a heads up, and he would be able to feel relieved even when Mila was there.

Gerald could not help but feel that this was so dramatic.

When he was poor in the past, he felt as though the whole world had abandoned him.

Now that he had money, he felt as though he owned the whole world.

As for Alice, Gerald did not want to think about it anymore.

Fortunately, he did not have much interaction with her anyway. Gerald really did not want anything to do with a girl who had this kind of personality, not to mention, Jacelyn.

On the third day, Gerald sent Mila off on a plane.

After sending Mila off, Gerald calmed himself down completely. If he had nothing to do, he would learn about the relevant knowledge of economics and management or he would take a look at the development issues of Yorknorth Mountain.

Time flew by quickly, and soon, it had already been three days since Mila had left.

It was a Friday afternoon and Gerald was lying on his bed as he was playing with his cell phone as he was being idle. Harper suddenly came in and asked nervously, "Gerald, Gerald, have you seen Benjamin?"

"No. Didn't you guys go to the internet café together?" Gerald thought that they would certainly be at the internet café at this time.

Over the past two days, something had not been right with Benjamin. He had been extremely depressed every day, however, he would not say anything at all when Gerald or the others asked him about it!

In short, a person who had always been very lively had suddenly become very weird.

When they were having lunch together at noon, Harper had asked Benjamin to go to an internet café with him to relieve some boredom.

However, he could not be found anywhere at all in the evening!

Chapter 260

Harper was a little worried.

Gerald was also starting to break out in cold sweat. Could something bad have happened to Benjamin?

Gerald took his cell phone and tried to call Benjamin.

However, his cell phone had already been turned off.

“D*mn it. What’s going on?” Harper asked as he scratched his head anxiously.

Gerald no longer had the mood to lie down anymore, so he jumped off his bed as he whispered, “Speaking of this, Benjamin has indeed been acting strangely recently. Since last week, I have realized Benjamin would be smiling at his cell phone sometimes. When I wanted to peek at his cell phone, he refused to let me see it. However, he seemed really depressed over the past two days. He had to be hiding something from us!”

Gerald spoke up as he thought about Benjamin’s performance and behavior over the past two days.

However, since Benjamin had always been a very cheerful and happy-go-lucky person, no one in the dormitory took it to heart when he was depressed once in a while. They simply thought of bringing him out to relax and have some fun.

“Yes. I also noticed that. The most important thing right now is for us to find him as soon as possible. I hope that nothing bad has happened to him!”

After Harper was done speaking, the brothers immediately got ready to go out and look for Benjamin.

Gerald felt so anxious that he was even thinking of calling the police.

As soon as they opened the dormitory door, everyone was stunned.

Benjamin was back!

He was soaked in sweat from head to toe, and he looked unusually haggard.

“F*ck! Benjamin! Where did you go?” Harper scolded him anxiously.

“Oh, oh, I went out for a while. I had something going on in the last two days!”

Benjamin seemed a little preoccupied as he replied to them. After that, he yawned before he entered the dormitory.

“Why was your cell phone turned off?”

When Gerald saw Benjamin’s appearance and reaction, he felt that something was a little off.

“Benjamin, are you hiding something from us?”

“Huh? I... I’m fine!”

“Then, didn’t you say that something happened in the past two days?”

Gerald and Harper exchanged glances with one another. It would be strange if Benjamin was truly fine. At this time, everyone in the dormitory had already surrounded Benjamin.

Benjamin lowered his head and stopped talking, but he had a very gloomy expression on his face.

“Benjamin, are you trying to make us die from worry?” Gerald asked as he patted Benjamin on his shoulder.

Benjamin’s mouth twitched slightly as he was faced with everyone’s questioning and concern. He could not help but grabbed his hair frantically at this time as he said:

“Don’t ask me if everything is okay. Don’t worry about me. I, Benjamin, am worthless. I am a scumbag! Please, I beg you. Stop asking me about it!”

"I... I have been lying to all of you all this while. I am truly a scumbag. All of you don't have to treat me as your buddy anymore in the future. If I tell you about it, all of you will definitely look down on me!"

"?!"

Both Gerald and Harper were a little confused.

After that, Gerald said, "How could that be possible, Benjamin? We will only look down on you if you are running away from your own problems. Unless you mean that you have never regarded us as your brothers?"

"No, no, no! Of course I have always regarded all of you as my brothers! My feelings for all of you are absolutely true!" Benjamin replied as he scratched his head earnestly. "Okay, I will tell you everything. Perhaps, I will feel a little better after telling all of you about it!"

"In truth, Gerald, Harper, my family is actually quite poor. Haven't all of you always thought that I come from a pretty good family background? I have always been faking it! To be honest, my family's situation is not any better compared to how Gerald used to be in the past. My parents are both ill, and I also have a sister who is seriously ill!"

"Everyone looked down on my family ever since I was young. Do you know something? When I was seven years old, my mother brought me to my aunt's house to borrow some money from her. As a result, they threw my mother and me out of their house! They even threw out all of my family's agricultural products!"

"Therefore, I have always been particularly afraid that people would look down on me. I have always had this fear ever since I was a child. I am especially afraid that people will look down on me if I do not have money. So, ever since I was in high school, I have been deliberately faking it and pretending that I have money!"

"Last week, the high school class monitor that I had been pursuing for several years finally agreed to get together with me. However, she is completely different compared to any other girl. She is not a greedy and materialistic person, but I lied to her. I lied and told her that I was doing very well in school. I even told her that I opened a few shops, but now..."

Benjamin lowered his head in desperation.

Gerald understood what he was saying. "She said that she wants to come here to see you now?"

"Yes. I told her that I would go and find her instead, but she insisted on coming here. What can I do? If she finds out that I have been lying to her, she will definitely break up with me. I really cherish her a lot! That is why I have been working hard and taking on part-time jobs over the past two days to make some money!"

Gerald did not know how to persuade Benjamin when he saw the state his friend was in.

After all, he himself had also deceived Mila a few times.

Therefore, he understood what Benjamin was feeling. He wanted to obtain love, but he was also afraid that he would lose love because of poverty. That was why he had done that.

"Well, Benjamin, you don't have to worry anymore. I have a solution for this matter!"

Chapter 261

At eleven o'clock that day.

At the gates of Mayberry University.

Three girls were standing outside the gate of the university and were looking around their surroundings from time to time.

They were starting to get a little impatient.

"Fanny, what's going on? Didn't he already agree to meet you at the school gate? Why isn't Benjamin here yet?"

“Yes, Fanny! I initially thought that Benjamin would send a car to come and pick us up, but he is making us wait for so long!”

The two girls asked the girl named Fanny impatiently. All three girls were extremely beautiful.

This was especially so for the girl named Fanny who was standing in the middle. She was especially refined and had a very elegant aura surrounding her.

“Okay, Yolanda! Benjamin has already started his own business and he might be busy because he opened so many shops of his own. I already called him just now and he said that he is already dealing with some things at hand. After all, he will be spending the whole day with us today!” Fanny replied as she smiled.

Their school was in Harbour City, and they had already heard about the prosperity of Mayberry City for the longest time. Therefore, they wanted to come and take a look at this place.

The girl named Yolanda was Fanny’s roommate.

They had heard that Fanny’s boyfriend, Benjamin, was doing very well in Mayberry City. Since Fanny was coming to see Benjamin today, of course the both of them would also have to follow her here as well.

On one hand, they wanted to come and enjoy some benefits because of Fanny.

On the other hand, they wanted to come and see if Fanny’s boyfriend, Benjamin, was just bragging.

If he was really that awesome and treated Fanny so well, they would truly feel very envious of her.

“Hello, you three beauties! Are you waiting for someone?”

At this time, a black Passat suddenly stopped in front of the trio.

The car window was rolled down, revealing two rowdy boys in the car.

Fanny and her friends simply lowered their heads without saying anything. After all, this was not the first time they had met guys who wanted to hit on them like this.

The two boys saw that the girls were really beautiful, and they did not plan to leave anymore.

“It seems as though you girls are not students at Mayberry University. Are you here to look for someone? Why don’t you tell me who it is? Perhaps I can help you then!” The two boys said as they got out of the car directly.

Yolanda replied immediately, “Sorry, but Benjamin will be here to pick us up soon!”

“Benjamin? D*mn it. I have never heard of him.” The two boys exchanged glances with one another. They could only assume that Benjamin was not very well-known in the university.

If he was slightly famous, the two boys would have just turned around and left immediately. After all, it would be best if they could have one less enemy.

However, since it was a very unfamiliar name, the two boys were not afraid at all.

Fanny and Yolanda were truly very beautiful.

At the very least, the two boys would have to ask for their WeChat information.

“Oh, oh, we do not know any Benjamin at all. However, the weather is so hot today. Your beautiful skin is going to get tanned if you continue waiting out here. There is a nice café not too far from here. Why don’t we go and get some coffee while you wait? Get in the car!”

To be honest, Yolanda really did have an urge to get into the car at this time.

After all, the two boys looked like they were very rich. However, when she thought about it, she felt that Benjamin was probably richer than them. Besides, she had come here with Fanny today.

When she saw Fanny shaking her head, Yolanda also shook her head in response.

“Why are you being so modest? Get in the car! We can just be friends!” One of the boys boldly tried to hold Fanny’s hand as he spoke.

Fanny pushed his hand away. “What do you think you’re doing? You must be sick!” She yelled angrily.

The two boys could not help but feel a little embarrassed as there was a crowd of people around. They had already hit on countless girls before, but when had they ever been embarrassed and rejected by a girl in public?

At this time, the boys exchanged glances with one another before they sneered and said, “Beauty, you are really not giving us any face, are you? You should not lash out at a person who has good intentions and only wants to befriend you, right?”

As he spoke, he was still trying to grope and get fresh with them.

“What the f*ck!”

However, he could not even touch her.

After a loud bang, the boy was suddenly kicked to the ground.

Benjamin, Harper, and Gerald had already rushed over here at this time.

When the three of them had left the school gate, they already noticed the two boys trying to grope and get fresh with Fanny and her friends, and they had rushed over in anger.

Harper cursed, "D*mn it! You actually dare to touch Benjamin's woman? Are you seeking your own death?"

After that, Harper and Gerald also beat the other guy up.

"D*mn it. Are the three of you really tired of living? You actually dared to hit me?" The boy who had taken the lead yelled as he placed his hand on his waist. He was already breaking out in cold sweat from the pain.

Chapter 262

"Hit you? Who asked you to harass my girlfriend?! I am going to beat you to death!" Benjamin was truly angry.

It was obvious that he sincerely cared about Fanny.

He pounced on the guy as he continued hitting him again.

Gerald and Harper also bit the bullet and continued beating both of the guys up.

"Boys, you'd better keep this in mind in the future. You'd better be more vigilant and scramble and run as far as you can when you see Mr. Langdon's woman in the future! Do you understand?" Gerald shouted coldly.

"Mr. Langdon? Well, I hear you clearly, and I will definitely remember you!" The two boys knew that they would not be able to outfight them. Thus, they could only admit defeat before slipping away.

First of all, even though they had never heard of Benjamin's name, he had two loyal brothers who were fighting for him. Hence, he had to be extraordinary.

They had to ask around and make some inquiries about this person before they could take revenge, right?

In fact, Gerald and Harper had already discussed this matter amongst themselves. Gerald's solution to help Benjamin pull this off today was simply for the both of them to pretend to be Benjamin's younger brothers for the day.

It stood to reason that Gerald and Harper should not help Benjamin since he had only picked his girl up because of his bragging.

However, they could not help but feel moved because of Benjamin's feelings for Fanny.

Besides, the three of them already had a very strong friendship and brotherhood over the past three or four years. Therefore, they could not stand by and just watch Benjamin drown in such a sad and desolate state.

Thus, both of them were more than willing to help him.

They wanted to help Benjamin get through this first.

Unexpectedly, they had run into Benjamin's girlfriend getting bullied! This was pretty good!

"D*mn it! Fanny, your boyfriend is truly very cool!" Yolanda gushed as she looked at Benjamin excitedly.

He had simply hit them when he said he would, and the two other rowdy boys did not even dare to fight back at all.

He was truly heroic! So suave!

Fanny scolded Benjamin slightly, however. "Benjamin, all you had to do was just scare him away. Why did you have to hit him? Wouldn't you have to compensate the other party if they got injured?"

"It's okay! That's just a trivial matter." Benjamin said as he patted his chest lightly. "By the way, Gerald, have you already booked a place for lunch?"

Gerald smiled at Benjamin obediently as he said, "Don't worry, Mr. Langdon! I have already made all the necessary arrangements. I made a booking at Homeland Kitchen. Should we go there now?"

Gerald had deliberately arranged this for Benjamin.

Since he wanted to leave a good impression, he would have to buy them a meal at Mayberry Commercial Street. The Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was a little too impressive, and it would seem as though Benjamin was being a show-off. However, it seemed as though the Homeland Kitchen was the perfect place.

Benjamin scratched his head in shock as he looked at Gerald.

He was trying to give him a hint that Homeland Kitchen was simply too expensive. How would he be able to afford it?!

Gerald simply gave him a look that said to rest assured.

After that, all of them hailed a cab before they headed to Homeland Kitchen together.

"Wow, is this Mayberry Commercial Street? Homeland Kitchen must have very high standards! I heard some of my friends in Mayberry City saying so!" Yolanda looked around the place in excitement on the way there. She also took out her cell phone to take pictures from time to time.

"Mr. Langdon, you will buy a car after you graduate, right? Does that mean that we will not need to take a cab anymore when I come here with Fanny to play again?" Yolanda asked expectantly.

"Of course!" Benjamin replied as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

Fanny was holding Benjamin's hand at this time, and she could feel a slight joy when she heard that.

She was not the kind of girl who placed a lot of importance on money. However, she also felt very proud because her boyfriend was doing so well.

“Hey! We’re here! We can get out of the car now!”

Gerald and Harper were sitting in the cab at the front. After getting out, Gerald hurried over to open the door for Benjamin.

“Come! Let’s go and enjoy a meal together!” Benjamin said as he smiled.

After that, everyone went into the lobby as they prepared to head toward the room that Gerald had already booked for them.

“D*mn it! Benjamin, Harper, and the one with the last name Crawford! Why are you here?”

At this time, there was also a group of men and women in the lobby who were preparing to head to their room.

As soon as one of the girls who was dressed very glamorously turned around, she could not help but exclaim in astonishment.

This was obviously unexpected.

“Jacelyn?” Gerald was also dumbfounded. He never expected to meet this crazy girl here...

At this time, the people on both sides were all staring at one another in consternation.

Chapter 263

“Hello? I’m talking to the three of you. Why did the three of you come here today? Did you come here to eat? Wow! You’ve even brought three girls here with you today?”

Jacelyn had truly changed a lot compared to how she was before.

Other than dressing in branded clothes now, her status and identity had also risen greatly after Silas recognized her as his godsister.

According to Hayley, the only person Jacelyn cared about right now was Alice.

She looked down on everyone else.

She felt as though she lived in a completely different world compared to everyone else.

In short, she was extremely arrogant and had no respect for anyone else at all.

How could it not be this way? She had a good brother who bought her clothes and bags.

Benjamin heard Jacelyn's question, and he could only grab the corner of his shirt nervously. He had been in close contact with Jacelyn in the past, and she knew about his background very well.

D*mn it! This was just too embarrassing!

"We are just here to enjoy a meal. We will not talk anymore. We're going to go upstairs first!"

Gerald did not want to keep the conversation going anymore. This was especially so because he saw that the person Jacelyn was here with to have a meal today was none other than one of Silas's lackeys. This was Jayden, the one who had pinned him to the ground with his car when they had first come to the university.

According to his observations, Jayden was one of Silas's lackeys who was very provocative.

He could tell that Jacelyn seemed to have a very close relationship with him. Could it be that both of them were lovers?

Gerald was obviously not afraid of Jayden. However, since the protagonist today was Benjamin and not himself, he did not want to cause any trouble for his brother.

However, Jacelyn was simply staring at Gerald in disgust. "Haha! The one with the last name Crawford, stop right there!"

She no longer called Gerald by his name anymore. This was because she felt that Gerald did not deserve it at all.

Hmph! Weren't you really great, Gerald? Weren't you very awesome?

Those who did not know any better would have thought that you were actually Mr. Crawford! You were as awesome as you could possibly be.

I, Jacelyn, used to like you. I was even thinking of going to bed with you.

But what about you, with the last name Crawford?

You were so bullish, and you never took me, Jacelyn, into your considerations at all.

Do you remember how you personally came to pursue Alice in the broadcasting department just some time ago? You obviously knew about my feelings for you, but you ignored and disregarded me anyway!

Jacelyn was filled with hatred, and she could only grind her teeth in anger.

At this time, she had already become Silas's godsister. Moreover, Silas's good friend, Jayden, was already interested in her, and both of them were in an ambiguous relationship now.

Weren't they better than Gerald?

Therefore, Jacelyn did not target anyone else but Gerald alone!

“The one with the last name Crawford! Weren’t you very bullish in the past? Why aren’t you bullish anymore now that Silas is here?” Jacelyn asked as she crossed her arms in front of her chest.

“Also, weren’t you just eating with Mila in the cafeteria a few days ago? What are you doing with these girls now?”

“Hey! Hey! Hey! Who are you and what are you talking about? Who said that we are here with him? We are just good friends of Mr. Langdon’s girlfriend!”

At this time, Yolanda could not help but retort at Jacelyn’s words coldly.

To be honest, Yolanda had already looked down on Gerald who had no class or fashion sense at all.

If it was not for the fact that he was Benjamin’s brother, Yolanda would not even look at him.

Therefore, when she heard Jacelyn say that she was together with this young man called Gerald, she could not help but refute her words immediately.

The main reason was because she felt that Jacelyn was not pleasing to the eyes.

“Huh? Mr. Langdon? Which Mr. Langdon are you referring to?” Jacelyn asked as she frowned.

“I am talking about Mr. Benjamin Langdon! What of it?” Yolanda and Jacelyn continued arguing at this time.

As soon as they heard these words, both Gerald and Benjamin could only rub their foreheads in despair.

Why had Gerald been desperately trying to persuade them to go into their room as soon as possible? Wasn’t it precisely because he wanted to prevent the conversation from getting to this point?

What he had been afraid would happen had truly happened in the end.

Jacelyn laughed out loud. "Hahaha!"

Chapter 264

"What are you talking about? Are you referring to Benjamin as Mr. Langdon? He is Mr. Langdon?" Jacelyn laughed as though she had just heard the funniest joke in the world.

"Which Mr. Langdon are you talking about? I have already been to this university for quite some time now, and there have also been many rich heirs who have come to greet me. Why haven't I heard of this Mr. Benjamin Langdon before?" Jayden crossed his arms in front of his chest and asked, as he was extremely amused.

Yolanda immediately retorted. "Hmph! Benjamin is not a rich heir. He started from scratch and has already opened several shops in Mayberry City! Am I right, Fanny?"

Fanny simply nodded slightly.

"Oh my God!" Jacelyn covered her mouth with a surprised look on her face. "Benjamin, you opened several shops in Mayberry City? Oh my God! When did you open these shops? What kind of shops did you open?"

Jacelyn deliberately asked as she pretended to be surprised.

Everyone fixed their gaze on Benjamin at this time. Benjamin was completely at a loss. "I... I..."

Gerald glared at Jacelyn angrily.

He felt that this crazy girl seemed to have figured something out. No matter what, she had to get to the bottom of this matter, and she really did not want to give the three of them any face at all.

Her purpose was obviously to humiliate and embarrass the three of them.

“Jacelyn, Benjamin has already opened many different shops. Do we have to let you know of all the shops one by one? Sister-in-law, Fanny, come, let’s go to our room upstairs now!” Gerald made an inviting gesture as he deliberately blocked Jacelyn to prevent her from talking nonsense any longer.

However, Jacelyn simply raised her leg and kicked Gerald’s ass. “D*mn it! Get out of my way!”

“Why don’t I have the right to know about it? Hayley and I are really close friends, and Harper is Hayley’s boyfriend. Benjamin is Harper’s buddy, so why doesn’t Hayley know anything about Benjamin opening any shop at all? I really want to find out what is happening here!” Jacelyn continued speaking in a very domineering manner as she smirked. “Anyway, I will not let you guys leave today until I get to the bottom of this matter!”

“Forget it, Benjamin. Just tell her the names of the shops that you opened so that we can hurry up and eat already!” Fanny said softly as she looked at Jacelyn in disgust.

“Yes! Mr. Langdon, tell her which are the shops that you opened, lest this snobbish person continues looking down on you!” Yolanda also chimed in at this time.

“You actually dare to call me a snob?!”

Both of them were about to get into another heated argument when suddenly, Jayden’s cell phone rang. Everyone became relatively quiet at this time.

“Cousin! Why aren’t you here yet? What are you waiting for? What?! You went to the hospital? You were beaten up? By whom?!”

Jayden’s tone suddenly became very cold and serious.

“Okay, after getting some treatment, you can come to Homeland Kitchen and eat first. After that, we will go and settle the score with those guys who beat both of you up later in the afternoon!”

Jayden hung up the phone after cursing in anger.

Jacelyn then ignored Gerald and the others. "Jayden, what's wrong? Was it a phone call from Kingston?" She turned around to look at Jayden with a worried look on her face.

Jayden twisted his neck slightly and made a crackling noise as he did so. "Yes, my cousin brother called to tell me that he was beaten up by three people just now. He went to the hospital to get his injuries treated, and he will be here anytime soon!"

"Who did it? Who would be so bold to actually dare to beat Kingston up? Who wouldn't know that Kingston is your cousin?" Jacelyn also replied in a harsh tone.

"Who cares about the identity of the other party? You, I want you to make a few calls. Ask Asher, Josiah, and the rest of them to gather more people. I want to deal with things later in the afternoon!"

"Yes, Mr. Scott!" Jayden's lackeys replied right away.

At this time, Gerald and Harper exchanged glances with one another. What they were thinking of at this time was self-evident. Could it really be such a coincidence?

This was awkward!

During this stalemate situation, a black Passat roared and suddenly braked outside the entrance of the restaurant.

Two boys with swollen and bruised faces jumped out of the car.

Yolanda was also shocked when she saw the two boys.

She exclaimed, "F*ck! It really was both of them!"

Chapter 265

"Cousin, were you really beaten up? They even beat you up so badly? What was the reason?" Jayden asked in concern when he saw both of them walking toward him.

As for these two cousins, when Jayden was not here in the past, both of them were just slightly unrestrained at Mayberry University.

D*mn it. Now that he had already transferred over to Mayberry University with Silas and after he had already made it clear that they were going to establish authority here, his cousin brothers had been beaten up so badly.

This was simply humiliating!

When Benjamin and Harper saw both of them, they could not help but lower their heads in embarrassment.

These two guys were the two boys that had been beaten up by the three of them in front of the school gate earlier.

To be honest, they had not felt anything at all when they were beating them up, and they had felt very courageous at that time.

However, after calming down a little, both of them could not help but feel a little terrified. After all, Jayden was Silas's lackey. In fact, even without Silas, they could not afford to offend Jayden alone.

This was so unfortunate!

"Cough, cough. Don't mention it anymore, cousin. We originally saw three rather beautiful girls today and we wanted to strike up a conversation and hit on them. As a result, we were... f*ck!" The boy named Kingston yelped indignantly at this time.

As he turned around, he happened to see Benjamin and Harper, and he could not help but exclaim out loud.

“Cousin brother, do you know them?” Kingston asked as he stared at Benjamin.

“No! But your sister-in-law, Jacelyn, knows them.”

Jayden had a wry smile on his face as he asked, “What’s wrong, Kingston?”

“D*mn it, cousin! Both of us were beaten up by the three of them!”

Jayden was also a little surprised. He immediately looked at Gerald as he stared at the three of them coldly. “What?! You were beaten up by both of them? Kingston, are you sure about this?”

“Of course I’m certain! These two were the ones who beat him up and this is the guy who beat me up! By the way, this guy was the one who punched me in my eye!” Kingston replied as he pointed viciously at Benjamin.

Benjamin and Harper could only swallow their saliva. The more they were worried about something, the more it would happen.

Jacelyn questioned them as she gloated, “D*mn it. Benjamin, Harper, and the one with the last name Crawford! When did the three of you become so bold? You even dared to beat up Jayden’s cousin brothers?”

At this time, the lobby of Homeland Kitchen was crowded by the many guests who were here to watch the entertainment.

Kingston said as he sneered at this time, “Jacelyn, do you really know this person? I was just about to ask you if you know who this Mr. Benjamin Langdon is. After all, you know even more people compared to me. I really did not expect you to know who this Mr. Langdon is!”

“Haha! What? Mr. Benjamin Langdon? Are you talking about him? Pfft! Let me tell you something. Out of the three of them, aside from Harper, all of them are just good-for-nothings! This one called Benjamin has no money at all and is just a poor student. As for the one with the last name Crawford who is

standing next to him, he is nothing more than a pathetic pauper. So, Kingston, do you know that you've just gotten beaten up by three pathetic people today?"

At this time, Fanny and the others were also blushing in embarrassment as they stared at Benjamin, who simply lowered his head without saying anything at all. Fanny and the others finally seemed to understand what was going on.

It was no wonder why Benjamin had not responded at all even though Jacelyn had been questioning him so aggressively earlier. Could it be that Benjamin had been lying to her all along?

"It turns out that they were just being pretentious! I've already said that I've never heard of any Mr. Langdon before! This is perfect. Why don't we just settle the score here today then?" Kingston sneered before he cracked his neck. After that, he grabbed a bottle of beer from the side bar.

He shook it in his hand before he smiled and turned around to look at Jayden and said, "Cousin brother, is it okay for me to be a little presumptuous here?"

Jayden nodded as he said, "It's okay. The manager here is Jane, and she is Silas's godsister as well as mine. Hahaha! You can do whatever you want to!"

"Got it!"

"D*mn it! You actually dared to be so pretentious in front of me? Alright then, Mr. Langdon, I am going to treat you to some beer!"

Splash!

Kingston opened the beer and sprayed a large amount of beer directly at Benjamin's face.

This was really similar to a scene in a movie.

"F*ck you!"

After that, Kingston raised the bottle in his hand as he prepared to slam the bottle down on Benjamin's head.

As for Benjamin, he could only clench his fists tightly as he accepted everything that was about to happen.

After all, he knew that he could not afford to provoke Jayden. That was for certain.

He was about to graduate soon, and he believed that Jayden would have ten thousand different ways to deal with him.

Therefore, he had no choice but to willingly accept what was coming next.

He had no money and no power, so he was as helpless as he could be. He could not even afford to protect his own girlfriend.

He closed his eyes tightly as he waited for the bottle to hit his head.

At this time, he suddenly heard a loud bang.

Chapter 266

Beer spilled all over the floor.

Immediately after, Benjamin saw Kingston fell to the ground as he held onto his head that was already bleeding profusely at this time.

It was Gerald who had grabbed a bottle of beer before smashing it directly on Kingston's head.

"You dare to hit Mr. Langdon? I think that you really do not want to continue living anymore!" Gerald could not stand it any longer when he saw Kingston humiliating Benjamin like that.

Since they were already putting on an act, he might as well continue it to the end then.

Benjamin, Harper, Fanny, and the others were dumbfounded.

Jayden and Jacelyn were also dumbfounded at this time.

Jayden cursed directly, "The one with the last name Crawford! You actually dare to hit my brother?! You must be tired of living! Do you know whose territory this is? Do you believe that I can make sure you do not leave this place if you are still standing today?"

After that, he instructed one of his lackeys, "Go and ask my godsister to come here. My brother was attacked in her shop today! I want Jane to come and settle this matter on my behalf!"

After he was done speaking, Jayden sneered as he glared at Gerald.

"Oh! This young man is truly impulsive. Does he know what place this is? This is Homeland Kitchen which is on Mayberry Commercial Street! This is Jane's territory! This kid actually dared to attack Jane's godbrother's own brother on her territory? He must be really tired of living!"

"D*mn! I heard that Jane is really very domineering on Mayberry Commercial Street. I heard that even the newcomer, Mr. Zeke, does not dare to treat Jane inappropriately. Just imagine what kind of background Jane has!"

"F*ck! Haven't you heard that Jane has a very close relationship with the mysterious Mr. Crawford? Some people even said that Jane is Mr. Crawford's woman. So, it is only natural that even Mr. Zeke has to give her face too!"

"Oh my! Oh my! This is really awesome. I think that this young man will not be able to leave this place standing today!"

The spectators who were watching the scene at this time could not help but discuss this matter worriedly.

Of course, many people were here just to watch the exciting scene.

Harper quickly urged, “Benjamin, Gerald, both of you should try and run away now! I will just stay here. They can deal with me however they want to, but you guys can’t afford to offend them, so you should hurry up and leave now!”

At this moment, Fanny was already crying as she heard the people who were whispering and talking around her.

“No! Gerald, Harper, both of you should take Fanny and the girls away from this place now! I will stay back and take care of this matter on my own!” Benjamin was also burning with enthusiasm at this time. He already had the mentality that he would just perish with the other party today!

“No one can leave this place today!” A loud and high female voice suddenly rang out at this moment.

Right then, a woman was seen walking down the stairs.

It was Jane, the manager of Homeland Kitchen.

Jayden greeted her immediately as he started to complain, “Jane! Someone beat my brother up!”

Jane turned around to look at the person who had beat his brother up.

At this time, she saw Gerald who had an indifferent expression on his face as he placed his hands in his pockets. Jane could not help but feel her body trembling a little.

Since Gerald had already booked a room at Homeland Kitchen today, he had naturally made all the necessary arrangements with Jane in advance on how she should be receiving her guests. He had asked her to put on an act so that Benjamin could pretend to be a big shot.

This was also the reason why Jane had been upstairs all this while—she had been personally cleaning the room upstairs in preparation for their arrival.

She had only come downstairs after she heard that someone was fighting. She truly did not expect it to be Mr. Crawford.

“Mr. Craw...”

Gerald gave Jane a warning look before she could even finish her sentence.

“Ahh! Oh! You must be Mr. Langdon, right? It turns out that Mr. Langdon is already here!” Jane looked at Benjamin as she smiled professionally.

Benjamin was at a loss at this time. What was going on? Shouldn't he be receiving punishment from the strong and powerful, Jane?

Gerald leaned in closer to Benjamin as he reminded him to be firm and insist that he was Mr. Langdon!

Benjamin trusted that Gerald would not allow him to make a fool out of himself. Therefore, he simply nodded slightly as he said, “Yes, I am!”

“Oh! Mr. Langdon, you should have told me in advance that you were here. I would have come down to meet you personally, then. Mr. Langdon, did anyone offend you?”

As Jane spoke, her gaze swept across Jayden and Jacelyn coldly, and Jayden's eyes widened in surprise.

As for Jacelyn, of course she was certain that Benjamin was nothing more than a pathetic jerk. What Mr. Langdon?

Even if he was Mr. Langdon now, it was simply because Jane was helping him. This was because Jacelyn already knew Jane from a long time ago. She also knew that Gerald was a gigolo, and he used to be Jane's lover.

It was also precisely because she had had some conflicts with Jane in the past that she was initially planning to use her relationship with Jayden to clear up their previous misunderstandings. However, it was obvious that Jane was helping Gerald.

But didn't Gerald already have a girlfriend? How could he possibly still be Jane's lover?!

No! Could it be that Jane did not know that Gerald already had a girlfriend?

When she saw the situation going in the opposite direction than she had intended it to, Jacelyn's eyes shone brilliantly at this time...

Chapter 267

"Jane! They smashed my brother's head!" Jayden complained bitterly at this time.

Slap!

Contrary to his expectations, Jane simply replied by giving Jayden a tight slap across his face.

"Jayden, I think you are really too bold and courageous now. You actually dared to cause trouble here? You even caused trouble with Mr. Craw... Mr. Langdon!"

Jayden was shocked when he received a slap across his face.

Although he felt seriously wronged, he still shut his mouth obediently.

He was not an idiot. Today, he was certain that this person called Mr. Langdon was obviously someone with a strong background. He was not just a poor and pathetic jerk as Jacelyn made him out to be.

Otherwise, why else would Jane, who was usually so arrogant, actually give Benjamin so much face?

At this moment, all he could do was simply lower his head and remain silent.

“D*mn! This is really a very cruel scene!”

Yolanda, who came with Fanny, was also completely shocked.

Yolanda especially felt even more envious of Jane’s attitude as a strong career woman.

She could not help but wonder if she could also get acquainted with someone as powerful and influential as Mr. Crawford. If that was the case, she could also give a slap to any rich heir that was not pleasing to her eyes! Hahaha!

“If you know what’s best for you, you will leave as soon as possible. Otherwise, Jayden, you will not be able to step out of this place anymore!” Jane said coldly as she crossed her arms in front of her chest.

Jayden could not help but shudder in fear.

Right now, he simply wanted to apologize to Benjamin and leave this place immediately.

Just then, Jacelyn yelled out loud, “Wait a minute!”

“Miss Jane, please wait a moment! Even though we’ve had our conflicts and misunderstandings in the past, please listen to me before you chase us out. After I finish speaking, you will definitely regret helping a certain person today!” Jacelyn stared coldly at Gerald as she spoke.

It seemed as though she could already visualize Gerald getting hacked into a thousand pieces by Jane later.

“Hehe. It’s you, you little b*tch. What do you have to say? What you say better be useful to me. Otherwise, I will settle both the old and new scores with you all at once!”

When Jane saw Jacelyn, she also recalled the scene where she had been accused of raising a gigolo when she sent Gerald back to school back then. This had caused a lot of embarrassment and humiliation for Mr. Crawford.

“Okay, Miss Jane. I will just tell you everything directly then. That person with the last name Crawford has betrayed your trust. He actually has a girlfriend at our university, and his girlfriend is from my department!”

This was Jacelyn’s biggest trump card.

After she was done speaking, she pointed at Gerald as she said, “If you are a man, you will tell Miss Jane the truth, right?”

Gerald nodded slightly as he said, “Yes. My girlfriend’s name is Mila, and she is from the same department as Jacelyn. Hahaha! The both of us just became a couple a few days ago!”

“Hahaha! Miss Jane, did you hear that? He admitted it himself. He said...” Jacelyn had been laughing, but at this time, she gradually stopped laughing.

She had originally wanted to see anger, rage, and even a murderous expression on Jane’s face.

After all, she had been played and betrayed by a man. They were all women, so who would not understand the feeling of anger and the murderous intent that one would have if they found out that they had been betrayed?

However, all Jacelyn could see was a look of frustration and impatience on Jane’s angry face.

“Is this what you wanted to tell me? Haha. So, one of Mr. Langdon’s lackeys has just gotten a girlfriend for himself. Why are you telling me this? Did you honestly think that this young man with the last name Crawford is really a gigolo that I am raising?” Jane replied as she sneered.

“Ahh? Isn’t that so?” Jacelyn was startled.

Slap!

Jane gave her a tight slap across her face. “You b*tch! You have already been slandering me since the last time, and you actually dare to continue coming up with arrogant claptrap?”

Jacelyn was dumbfounded.

It turned out that her assumption was wrong!

“Hurry up and get out of this place now!” Jane yelled, her eyes burning with anger.

“Oh! Oh! I will leave right now!” Jacelyn was already in tears, and she covered her face as she prepared to leave immediately.

“Wait a minute!”

At this time, a girl suddenly spoke up timidly.

Chapter 268

It was Yolanda who stood up at this time.

“What do you want?” Jacelyn asked.

Slap!

Yolanda plucked up the courage to give Jacelyn a tight slap across her face.

Who asked this Jacelyn to be so rude and arrogant as she insulted them earlier?

Now, even Jane was being so polite and respectful toward Mr. Langdon. So, what else could she possibly be afraid of? She was Fanny’s best friend!

This was the first time Yolanda had ever hit anyone in the face. Jacelyn could only stare at her without saying anything at all. This felt really great!

Gerald simply laughed as he looked at Jacelyn.

Jacelyn had truly embarrassed herself today! Haha!

After Jayden, Jacelyn, and the others had left, Jane finally revealed the look of disappointment on her face. She even nearly turned the dishes over a couple of times when she was serving Gerald and the others.

Ugh!

When Jane heard Gerald personally saying that he already had a girlfriend, Jane could only pretend to be fine.

In truth, Jane felt a severe pain as though someone had stabbed her in the heart.

However, her professionalism and her long career experience naturally helped her to hide her emotions very well.

The entire meal proceeded very smoothly. After the meal, Gerald had already made all the other arrangements for Benjamin in advance. He had already planned the next place that they would be having fun at and their accommodations for the night.

He also chose places with a high and reasonable standard that was not too outrageous.

“Mr. Langdon, my girlfriend keeps calling me!” Harper said as he spoke to Benjamin at this time.

Just then, they were preparing to make a trip to the Little Bamboo House to check-in their luggage and settle all the accommodation matters.

Benjamin hurriedly replied, "Alright then, Harper! You can go back first!"

Harper hailed a cab before he left immediately.

At this time, Yolanda glanced at Gerald in disgust. "Mr. Langdon, Mr. Langdon, ask this person to leave too! It is so embarrassing to bring him along with us!"

After the meal just now, Yolanda had even asked her idol, Jane, for her WeChat account. She was thinking that she knew a very reputable sister in Mayberry City now, and she would have to pay close attention to her own image in the future.

Gerald was taken aback.

What?

When Yolanda said 'this person', she was actually referring to him?

Unexpectedly, he had worked like a slave today as he served the three young ladies, but as a result, he was being despised once again?

Benjamin panicked when he heard this. "Ah? He cannot leave!"

Although Benjamin did not exactly know what Gerald's precise background was, Gerald was now his biggest support.

"Why? Mr. Langdon, why do you have to allow him to keep following us?" Yolanda kept pleading with him.

"Um, it's okay, Mr. Langdon. You don't have to put yourself in a tough spot. I have already followed your instructions and arranged everything accordingly for the next activity. You can just go ahead. I will leave first!"

As he spoke, Gerald winked at Benjamin as he motioned for him to continue keeping up the act.

Benjamin could only nod helplessly at this time.

Gerald left immediately as he was also tired after playing and being out the whole day. Harper had already gone to look for Hayley, and Gerald could already guess that it was probably because Jacelyn had said something to the girls in her dormitory. That was probably the reason why Hayley had called Harper in a hurry to ask him about the situation.

As for him, Mila was not around because of her training. Therefore, he did not have anything else to do. Thus, he could only head back to the dormitory to sleep.

At this time, Gerald's cell phone suddenly rang.

It was a phone call from Michael.

"Mr. Crawford, the renovation for your house has already been completed. I have also specially built a garage for you at the foot of the mountain according to your instructions. Moreover, all the cableway to go up the mountain has also been completed! When are you planning to move in?"

"Mr. Zeke, thank you for the trouble. I really did not expect the garage to be completed in just seven days! As for when I will be moving, I have already chosen the date. I will be moving in three days' time! As for the house key, you can hold on to it for me first. When I am prepared to move in three days, you can arrange for someone to go over there and make all the preparations for me in advance."

When Gerald accompanied Elena up the mountain and saw that the renovation was almost completed, he had already told Rita that he would be moving in three days later.

"Okay, Mr. Crawford! You can rest assured, I will make sure that you are satisfied!"

After hanging up the phone, Gerald thought to himself. Since the garage was already completed, there was no need for him to continue keeping his Lamborghini at the small park. He would just park his car in the garage below the mountain!

After keeping his cell phone, Gerald hailed for a cab and left Mayberry Commercial Street.

At this time, a girl got into another cab as she fixed her eyes on Gerald. "Sir, please follow the car in front of us!"

Chapter 269

"Hehe. Miss, is the kid in the cab up front your boyfriend? Are you trying to find out if he is cheating on you?" The cab driver laughed, and he was very talkative.

"To tell you the truth, most of the men who would often come to Mayberry Commercial Street are fickle. Do you know why? This is because the people who often come here must be really rich!"

"Stop talking so much nonsense! Just make sure you follow him closely!" The girl yelled coldly.

The driver did not continue speaking anymore and simply focused on following the cab in front of him.

This girl was none other than Jacelyn.

Why was Jacelyn tailing Gerald?

Let's talk briefly about everything that had happened between Jacelyn and Jayden after leaving Homeland Kitchen.

After they had left, Jayden was extremely angry and embarrassed! He had been slapped in public, and he was even chased out of Homeland Kitchen. He had even offended Jane, who was his backup and support.

His younger brother had also gotten his head smashed.

This was simply equivalent to suffering a double loss. He did not gain anything at all, but on the contrary, he had suffered even more losses.

In short, he felt extremely unsatisfied!

Who could he blame?

Jayden blamed Jacelyn for everything!

D*mn it! This was all because Jacelyn kept fanning the flames! She kept insisting that Benjamin was just a poor and pathetic person who could not possibly be Mr. Langdon.

How could he, Jayden, actually be so reckless?!

He had even allowed his younger brother, Kingston, to go ahead and smash another person's head.

Jayden also only found out today that Jacelyn had offended Jane in the past.

Therefore, Jayden attributed and blamed everything that had happened today on Jacelyn, and he regarded her as the culprit.

An argument naturally broke out between both of them, and Jayden had dumped Jacelyn after the argument.

Jacelyn was furious.

She could not help but wonder what was happening?

Benjamin was definitely not Mr. Langdon. She knew this very well. This was because Jacelyn had already investigated and looked into the background of everyone in Gerald's dormitory after their first meeting.

She was initially planning to find out if there were any potential rich heirs that she could target, but in the end, she found out that there was none. Jacelyn had also found out that Benjamin's family was actually quite poor.

After that, she told Hayley about this matter, but no one talked about it.

Regardless, she had not investigated or looked into Gerald's background. Why would she investigate him? What was the point? He was nothing more than a pathetic pauper.

However, she truly did not expect Gerald to be so full of surprises.

She knew that Gerald had to be the mastermind behind the incident today.

The only person who could possibly make Jane act that way would be none other than Gerald. Even if he was not Jane's secret lover, he must have some sort of inexplicable relationship with Jane.

Moreover, Gerald had always given people a very mysterious feeling.

He was not a rich heir, but sometimes, it felt as though he was even better than any other rich heir.

Today was another testimony of this!

Therefore, Jacelyn intended to follow Gerald to find out what was going on with him!

It had been a while since she had tailed Gerald, Harper, and the others!

However, Gerald did not know anything at all.

He got off the cab directly in front of the school gate. It was already late at night.

There would not be many people at the small park now.

Hence, Gerald came to the small park where he parked his car.

He was planning to drive it to the Mountain Top Villa.

Beep! Beep!

Two crisp car lights flashed immediately.

After that, the car door opened automatically.

Gerald was about to get into his car to drive away.

Bang!

He suddenly heard the sound of a cell phone falling and crashing to the ground behind him.

“Sure enough... I guessed it right! It really is you!”

A terrified and appalled female voice sounded.

Gerald was taken aback as he looked behind him.

“D*mn it! Jacelyn, why are you acting like a ghost? I did not hear you coming at all.”

Jacelyn, who was standing about ten steps behind him, was staring at him with a blank expression on her face.

She was covering her mouth in astonishment, and her phone was already shattered beneath her feet.

Her body was shaking uncontrollably at this time.

Jacelyn regained her sense and she stared at Gerald in shock. "Gerald, is this car yours? Is it yours?!"

Oh my God! The luxury Lamborghini sports car that had attracted countless girls in Mayberry City actually belonged to Gerald.

It was a luxury car worth two million and six hundred thousand dollars!

What was this?!

Jacelyn was utterly shocked.

If she did not witness this with her own two eyes, Jacelyn would not have believed this at all even if she were to die.

The owner of this luxury sports car was actually someone whom she was extremely familiar with.

"Well, since you've already seen it, I will admit it then. Yes, this car is mine!"

Chapter 270

Gerald sighed helplessly.

"What?" Jacelyn's eyes were filled with tears.

Gerald replied lightly, "Alright, then. I will leave first if there is nothing else. As for the car, help me keep this a secret. Otherwise, in the end, everyone will only be unhappy! Haha!"

After that, he got ready to enter his car.

"Gerald, don't leave!"

Unexpectedly, Jacelyn rushed over to him and hugged Gerald tightly from the back.

"D*mn it! Jacelyn, are you crazy?! Is there something wrong with you? What are you doing?" Gerald was shocked and kept struggling to set himself free!

"No! I will not let go! Gerald, I will not let you run away from me anymore! I love you! I truly love you! Please just give me a chance!"

Jacelyn hugged Gerald tightly again as she stuck her body close to Gerald's body.

D*mn it!

Gerald had already witnessed Xavia's love for money, so he thought that he would be immune to all girls who loved money in the future.

Unexpectedly, Jacelyn was even worse than Xavia.

Yes, Jacelyn was already willing to risk everything now.

Gerald's past and the fact that he was driving this car now... Jacelyn believed it as soon as Gerald said that this car belonged to him.

Why?

This was because her mind worked very fast. As long as she connected the dots between Gerald's current car and everything that had happened in the past, it would all make sense now.

Why would she be skeptical?

In addition, Jacelyn knew that Gerald was the kind of person who had a very soft heart, especially when it came to women. He was easily entangled, and he would give in easily when it came to women.

She had already caught onto Gerald's weakness.

This was the reason why Jacelyn was willing to try her luck.

"D*mn it. Don't do this, I beg you. I am already getting goosebumps!"

Gerald was already breaking out in cold sweat because he was feeling extremely anxious.

"No, I won't! I will keep following you unless you give me a chance!" Jacelyn continued clinging tightly to him.

Crazy! Crazy! She was completely insane!

Gerald was a little ruthless as he used a little force to push Jacelyn away vigorously before he got into his car and slammed the car door behind him before locking the door.

He was planning to start the car engine and drive away immediately.

Boom!

After hearing the slight noise, Gerald realized that Jacelyn was actually lying on top of his car hood!

Gerald yelled anxiously. "Sister! Jacelyn! What are you trying to do?"

"Gerald, let me ask you a question. Besides being really rich, do you have another identity? Tell me! Can you just tell me the truth?"

Yes. Jacelyn only had one suspicion in her mind right now.

That was, the rumored super secretive Mr. Crawford from Mayberry Commercial Street was none other than Gerald!

Otherwise, why else would Aiden in the past, the current Jane, and even Zack from Wayfair Mountain Entertainment be so polite and respectful toward Gerald?!

Ahh!

Taking into account everything that had happened today as well as the sports car now!

The smart and intelligent Jacelyn could already guess the truth no matter how stupid she was!

The awesome and powerful Mr. Crawford was none other than Gerald!

She was trembling all over in excitement, and she really wanted to find out the truth.

"I am telling you, I do not know anything about Mr. Crawford, but if you refuse to leave, I will really step on the accelerator! Don't doubt my car's horsepower!"

"I am not leaving! I'm not leaving until you admit it!"

D*mn it!

Gerald became a little angry, and he really stepped on the accelerator.

He had simply stepped on it lightly since he was afraid of hurting Jacelyn, so he hurriedly stepped on the brakes afterward.

However, he never expected the inertia force and the fact that his wheel would be pressed against a rock.

“Ahh!”

Jacelyn flew off the car and fell to the ground directly.

“D*mn it!” Gerald had just been planning to scare her, but unexpectedly, an accident had happened.

Gerald opened his car door and rushed over to Jacelyn.

Jacelyn had hit the back of her head on the ground and she was unconscious at this time.

Gerald patted her face a couple of times.

“Jacelyn, don’t scare me. Are you okay? I really did not mean to throw you off like that.”

Gerald could not help but blame himself.

This was because even though he truly hated Jacelyn and felt like slapping her big mouth sometimes, he was definitely not as cruel or heartless to want to hurt Jacelyn or cause her to lose her life.

Gerald could see the pained expression on Jacelyn’s face at this time.

He quickly carried her up before throwing her into his car and heading to the hospital immediately...

Chapter 271

The incident involving Jacelyn really made Gerald break out in cold sweat.

Fortunately, after sending her to the hospital for a diagnosis, he realized that Jacelyn had only suffered a concussion and had passed out from the impact.

She would be fine after recuperating for a while.

“Gerald, don’t leave! I love you!”

“Mr. Crawford, don’t leave! I love you to death!”

Jacelyn was still muttering nonsense to herself while she was in a coma.

Gerald was also a little frustrated. Do you really love me? You only love the identity of Mr. Crawford!

Finally, Gerald paid for Jacelyn’s high medical expenses.

After that, he drove to Mountain Top so that he could park his car there.

After leaving the garage, Gerald was just about to take a cab and leave.

At this time, Gerald suddenly noticed that something was wrong with Mountain Top.

That was to say, the Mountain Top Villa was very brightly lit at this moment.

The architectural style of this villa itself had an ancient charm to it. At this time, as the night was getting deeper, it looked extremely magnificent and radiant with the brightly lit lights.

It was simply amazing.

However, he was not there, and Rita would not dare to live in the villa so blatantly.

Who could it be?

Gerald was very surprised.

Thus, he decided to go up and take a look for himself.

When he arrived at the entrance of the villa, he realized that there were indeed people inside. There was more than just one person inside. There were many men and women, and it was very lively inside.

This was strange. Who were they? Why were they holding a party at his house? They even had his house key too!

Gerald walked over a little angrily and pushed the door open.

“Ahhh?”

The people inside were obviously taken aback when they saw Gerald appearing, and they all stared at him in amazement.

As for Gerald, he also looked at these men and women in astonishment.

Hmph!

There were about a dozen men and women inside the villa.

They had already turned the center of the living room into a makeshift bar, and it was filled with various food and drinks.

A dozen people were drinking and enjoying themselves at this time!

However, Gerald did not feel that these people looked familiar to him at all. They were definitely not from Aiden's group of friends, and they were certainly not his godbrother, Yoel's friends.

This was weird.

The two security guards halfway up the mountain were still there. So, how did these people get into his villa?

"D*mn it. Who are you?! D*mn! Is this a place where an ordinary person like you can just come?" A scowling boy scolded him as he frowned.

"Oh my God. He must be a pathetic jerk who heard of the atmosphere on Mountain Top! That's why he wanted to come here to visit!"

"Could it be possible that he came from the back of the mountain? Oh my! There are really all kinds of people in this world."

Several girls looked at Gerald with a satirical look on their faces.

Yes. Gerald had never paid any attention to his own dressing. He only felt that it was important to wear clean and fresh clothes. Therefore, he would naturally always be rejected wherever he went.

These girls who were already used to seeing tall, rich, and handsome guys would naturally despise him.

Gerald frowned as he asked lightly, "I also want to ask you. Who let all of you in here?"

It would be a lie to say that he was not angry.

His original intention in buying this villa was not because he wanted to show off. He simply wanted to have a place for himself in the future.

But what had it become now? Was this their playground?

A girl who was obviously drunk walked up to Gerald before she poked his chest unceremoniously. "This person's tone is not polite at all. Do you think you have the right to ask us how we came in?"

"Forget it, Lucille. We have already seen many people like this. If Silas did not warn us repeatedly not to shed any blood on Mountain Top Villa, I would have already beaten him up. Let's just call the security guards and send him to the police station directly!"

"Yes! We should send him to the police station!"

As everyone agreed, they started making phone calls immediately.

"Why are you guys so noisy?"

Chapter 272

Suddenly, at this moment, an extremely impatient boy's voice sounded from the balcony on the second floor.

Right after, a boy brought a girl down with him as they walked down the stairs slowly.

"I am enjoying the scenery here. Can't you just be quiet for a moment? Do you really think that this is your house?"

This boy was obviously the leader of this crowd of people. Moreover, he was scolding them unceremoniously at this time.

The boy who was scolding Gerald immediately replied with a smile on his face. "Yes, yes, yes, Silas! It's just because someone is trying to cause trouble here!"

The boy who had been enjoying the scenery on the balcony was none other than Michael's son, Silas.

Gerald suddenly realized what was happening.

It seemed as though Michael had given his house key to Silas!

"Someone is causing trouble here? Who is so bold? Is he tired of living?" Silas asked as he frowned.

"Silas, Silas, it's him! It's him!"

Immediately afterward, five or six girls came up one after the other before they grabbed hold of Gerald.

This was a scene that seemed as though a group of lackeys had caught hold of an intruder. After that, they were trying desperately to claim credit for their action from their boss.

They dragged Gerald directly in front of Silas.

As for the girl who had been standing behind Silas all this while, the expression on her face tightened after she saw Gerald's face clearly. "Gerald, it's you?"

She was obviously very surprised.

Gerald had been very focused on looking at Silas and had not noticed her at all. Therefore, he also had a baffled look on his face when he saw her.

Alice!

After the surprise, sarcasm immediately followed. “Hehe. Gerald, how did you come up here? Did you come up here because you wanted to see and experience the elegance of Mountain Top Villa?”

This event had already been planned for today.

To be honest, some time ago, the news that a rich heir had purchased the Mountain Top Villa for one hundred and twenty million dollars had already been circulating the internet.

Alice and the others must have already heard about the Mountain Top Villa.

However, they could not even dream about it even if they really wanted to take a look at this place.

This was a truly grand location.

However, Alice discovered that even the impossible seemed to be possible after she had met Silas.

When Silas told everyone that he had the keys to the Mountain Top Villa today, no one had believed him at all.

Everyone was only taken aback when he had held the key out in his own hand.

It was also agreed upon that Jayden and Jacelyn would come here tonight.

However, there had been no news from Jayden at all ever since the afternoon. Moreover, Jacelyn’s cell phone had already been turned off!

This made Alice feel a little awkward because she was all alone. Fortunately, Silas had been accompanying her throughout the whole night.

As she looked at the scenery in the distance from the balcony just now, Alice finally realized what it meant to be above everyone else.

Thus, at this time, Alice's voice had a mocking tone to it. She no longer had the kind of vengeance that she felt against Gerald before this.

What was there to retaliate against someone like this?

"Alice, do you know this person? How would you like to deal with him?" Silas clearly looked down on Gerald even more, and he was smiling faintly at this time.

"Ask him to leave! I don't want to see this kind of person in such a good environment!"

After she was done speaking, Alice glanced at Gerald before she walked back upstairs again.

"Didn't you hear what sister-in-law just said? She asked you to leave!"

"Get lost!"

Before Gerald could say anything, he had already been pushed out of the villa by a group of girls before they slammed the door close behind him.

This made Gerald feel extremely furious.

First, he had been humiliated and ridiculed by this group of girls. After that, he had been insulted by Alice.

And finally, they had asked him to get lost?!

Were they really treating him like a joke just because he was not showing his power?

Gerald could no longer hold in or bear the previous rage he was feeling including the anger that he was feeling right now.

Therefore, he took out his cell phone and called Rita and Michael, one after the other...

Chapter 273

Gerald called Michael and Rita, but he did not say anything much. He simply asked them to come up and take a look at the Mountain Top Villa. After that, he hung up the phone immediately.

As for just now, Gerald really had the urge to have a showdown with them.

However, after thinking about it, the reason why Alice had suffered time and time again and turned out like this was also because of him.

To put it bluntly, it had always had something to do with him.

He was the one who had released the video of Quinton and his stepmother. This had really stimulated Alice and caused her to be further aggravated.

After that, he had made a fool out of her.

Although he did not know how Silas treated her now, Gerald could tell that she seemed to be quite satisfied. Therefore, Gerald also felt a little relieved.

If this was the case, couldn't Gerald simply let this matter slide instead of calling Michael?

No!

Gerald was still a little selfish.

Alice was so beautiful, and it seemed like she was going to spend the night with another man tonight.

Gerald could not help but feel a little uncomfortable.

Although he did not like Alice, he did not feel good about it.

Besides, this was his own house. He could not just let it go like that when a group of outsiders had thrown him out of his own house!

Gerald went down the mountain and prepared to leave.

“Mr. Crawford!”

It just so happened that Rita had already arrived in a hurry.

She already knew what was going on when she saw the bright lights shining from the villa even from a distance.

How could Rita possibly not be nervous?!

“Mr. Crawford! Mr. Crawford!”

However, Gerald completely ignored her.

Instead, he simply walked to the side of the road before stopping a cab and leaving directly.

“Ahh! It’s over!” Rita exclaimed nervously.

In fact, Rita already knew that this group of students would be coming up to the villa to play because Michael had already told her about it in advance.

Rita originally disagreed with this matter. However, Michael had been praised by Mr. Crawford for his work this time. Moreover, his unworthy son had kept pestering him relentlessly.

It would not be a problem for him to allow his son to go up to the Mountain Top Villa just to have a look, right?

After all, even his subordinate's son, Aiden, had gone to play at the Mountain Top Villa before.

That was the reason why Michael had finally agreed to give the villa house key to Silas.

He simply intended to let him go up to Mountain Top Villa to have a look before coming down immediately.

Therefore, Rita did not take it to heart at all. However, Rita could not help but feel a little anxious because Gerald had ignored her completely just now.

At this time, she quickly rushed up the mountain.

"Oh! Miss Rita is here! Everyone, quiet down. Alice, I will introduce Miss Rita to you. She is the personal housekeeper of the Mountain Top Villa. She is also one of Mr. Crawford's favorite personnel, just like my father!"

Silas had a glass of wine in his hand, and he held Alice's hand as he brought her over to Rita.

These were all people who worked for Mr. Crawford.

Therefore, Silas also knew many of them, such as Aiden, Yoel, and the big bosses of many establishments on Mayberry Commercial Street.

He had even become Jane's godbrother.

Therefore, he was also naturally familiar with Rita.

“Hello, Miss Rita!”

Rita was completely speechless. “Why are you so happy?! Silas, do you know that you have caused a terrible disaster this time?”

As soon as her words came out, the villa became very quiet. The music was also turned off immediately.

Silas was stunned and he asked, “A terrible disaster? What disaster did I cause?”

Rita placed her hand on her forehead as she said, “Let me ask you, who gave you permission to host a party at the Mountain Top Villa? Weren’t you supposed to just take a look at the place and leave immediately afterward?”

Silas replied confidently, “Hehe. It’s okay! My dad told me that Mr. Crawford is in Northbay, and he will not be back here tonight. Besides, I will definitely restore the villa to its original state tomorrow!”

Rita responded coldly, “Northbay my ass! Let me tell you something, Silas. Mr. Crawford was here just now. I believe Mr. Crawford has already called your dad too. You should be prepared to explain things to your dad later!”

“What?! Mr. Crawford was here?” Silas was even more confused. His father had told him that Mr. Crawford was not here and that he was away in Northbay.

Alice was also taken aback.

How could she possibly not know if Mr. Crawford had been here? When did any Mr. Crawford make an appearance?

“Miss Rita, aren’t you making too big of a fuss? We did not see Mr. Crawford, only a pathetic jerk who was just here! Hahaha!”

“We have already chased that pathetic jerk down the mountain just now!”

“Yes, Miss Rita, we also want to give you a suggestion. You should not wait for three days before sending the full security team over here. The security team should be working at full force now!”

The girls all chattered, one after the other.

Chapter 274

Rita did not continue answering any of their questions. Regarding Mr. Crawford’s matter, it was obvious that Silas knew too little about him. Therefore, she knew that it would be inconvenient for her to disclose too much information.

She simply shook her head as she went down the mountain immediately.

Silas spoke as he smiled bitterly, “What is the matter with Miss Rita today? Why did she say that Mr. Crawford was here earlier? If Mr. Crawford was really going to come here, my dad would have already...”

But at this time, his cell phone suddenly rang.

Silas answered the phone with a smile on his face. “Dad!”

“Don’t yell at me, dad. You are my father!”

Michael continued yelling wildly on the other side of the line, he was also panting.

After that, both of them continued speaking. By this time, the smile on Silas’s face had already gradually disappeared, and his face had turned pale.

In the end, Michael simply hung up the phone.

“Silas, Silas, what happened?” Alice asked as she was also in a perturbed state of mind.

“It’s over. It’s all over! My dad told me that Mr. Crawford might have actually been here! Moreover, Mr. Crawford specifically called my father and Miss Rita to ask him about this situation. I am going to get my legs broken now! I’m done for!”

Silas dropped his cell phone to the ground in fright.

He was obviously very afraid of his father. He knew that things had already gone awry based on the current tone of his father’s voice.

“What? Mr. Crawford was truly here?” Alice could not help but tremble uncontrollably.

As the girls had just mentioned, throughout the entire event, no one else had been here aside from that pathetic jerk, Gerald!

That’s right! Alice came to a sudden realization.

Gerald... wasn’t Gerald’s last name Crawford too?!

He was indeed much richer compared to the past. Moreover, if you just added the honorific, ‘mister’, in front of his last name, it would be... Mr. Crawford!

What?!

How could it possibly be him?

Alice felt that her mind was a complete blank.

To be honest, this was not the first time that Alice had had some suspicions about Gerald’s identity. However, everything had always been hazy and there was no solid evidence in the past.

However, she had never gotten closer to the truth than this!

Yes! Gerald came up to the mountain, and he had left the mountain after she had taunted him.

After that, Rita and Michael had gotten entangled in the situation almost immediately.

Moreover, they even said that Mr. Crawford had been here!

At this time, Alice was filled with doubts as she thought about everything that had happened between her and Gerald in the past.

If she imagined that Gerald was Mr. Crawford...

Then, everything would make sense!

“Impossible! It’s absolutely impossible! How could he possibly be Mr. Crawford? How could Mr. Crawford be him?”

Alice felt as though she was about to collapse.

If Gerald was truly Mr. Crawford, Alice would just want to jump off the top of the mountain and fall to her death now!

Had she truly missed out on this great opportunity from the very beginning?

She could never accept this!

Silas scratched his head before saying, “Okay, everyone. We should stop speculating now. How could that guy possibly be Mr. Crawford? Besides, how could Mr. Crawford be so low-key? At most, this guy is

a stalker who came here to supervise things, and he reported what he saw here today! Just listen to my instructions first! We will clean up the scene, and then, we will leave the mountain as soon as possible! Otherwise, my dad will really kill me when he gets here!" Silas hurriedly instructed them.

Everyone agreed with him. This included Alice, who agreed that Gerald was probably just a stalker.

This was because she knew that Silas would not lie to her. The mysterious Mr. Crawford had always been in Northbay!

After they were done cleaning up, everyone rushed to the garage, all prepared to get into their cars and drive away.

"F*ck!"

"F*ck!"

"F*ck!"

However, after going down the mountain, they saw the cool Lamborghini Reventon sports car parked in the garage, and they were all dazzled.

Everyone asked in surprise, "Whose car is this? Silas, is it yours?"

"How could it possibly be mine? My car is a Ferrari!"

"Whose car is this? Very few people in Mayberry City drive this kind of sports car!"

Everyone was puzzled.

As for Alice, although her heart had already settled down initially, her emotions were all over the place again when she saw the car at this time...

Alice whispered incredulously, "I know the origins of this car..."

Chapter 275

"You know?" Silas and the others asked in surprise.

"Yes!" Alice replied in certainty. She continued, "This is a luxury sports car that has been parked at the small park near Mayberry University. There have also been rumors that this car was bought by Mr. Crawford. After that, there were rumors stating that this car had been bought by a mysterious local tycoon, Ordinary Man, who is also a student in the Department of Language and Literature in our university. Some people also said that Ordinary Man is actually Mr. Crawford's online nickname!"

"In that case, this car should be parked at our school! Why would the local tycoon, Ordinary Man, park his car here?"

"This is the villa bought by Mr. Crawford!" Alice frowned as she said in disbelief.

Yes. Anyone else could believe that Gerald was Mr. Crawford and it would mean nothing to them at all.

However, Alice could not believe it.

She was scared. She was especially frightened.

When she was still in the villa just now, she had been wracking her brains to figure out how she could remove Gerald entirely from this equation.

She only needed one reason to avoid this fact, and Silas had finally come up with a reason for that.

However, how could things be explained now?

Ordinary Man's car was parked here, and it was rumored that he was Mr. Crawford. Now, it was almost certainly sure that Ordinary Man was truly Mr. Crawford!

Rita had already mentioned that Mr. Crawford was here.

The only other person who had been here throughout the entire night was none other than Gerald!

The local tycoon, Ordinary Man, was from the Department of Language and Literature, and Gerald was also from the Department of Language and Literature!

Alice could feel her breathing increase rapidly.

Why? Why did it seem as though everything was pointing to the fact that Gerald was actually the mysterious Mr. Crawford?!

Silas took a deep breath before he gave his instructions. "Oh, it seems as though that kid from earlier also has some background of his own. Anyway, everyone should just listen to me. Just hide when you see him in the future, and if you cannot hide, just be courteous to him!"

He was very courageous, but he had only accepted one concept ever since he was a child. He would have to be very cautious and careful when handling matters related to the Crawford family.

This was the case now.

Although he did not know who Gerald was, he would just treat him with common courtesy and respect from now onward. Wouldn't everything be fine then?

After he was done speaking, Silas looked at Alice before he said, "Alice, you should also stop thinking about this matter. Anyway, listen to me. Just be polite and respectful toward Gerald when you see him in the future. What's the big deal? You can also apologize to him for everything that happened today!"

"Be polite? Apologize to him? Why should I apologize or be polite to him? Silas, you are the son of the boss of Mayberry Commercial Street! Why are you afraid of Gerald? Didn't you say that you will get rid of and teach a lesson to anyone who is not pleasing to my eyes? I think Gerald is not pleasing to my

eyes! I want you to teach him a lesson and get rid of him on my behalf! As long as you do that, I will be yours from now on!" Alice replied as she jumped up.

This was because she could not accept the fact that the Silas that she felt was omnipotent was actually conceding to Gerald?

Wouldn't this mean that Gerald was better than Silas then?

Since Gerald was someone she despised, he had to always be a scumbag! Alice would certainly not be able to accept it if Gerald gained a good reputation!

Thus, she was yelling like a crazy person at this time.

"D*mn it! Alice, are you crazy?" Silas replied in a somewhat displeased manner.

Although the condition offered by Alice was really very attractive and even if he had always been a romantic who was very willful, he was not stupid!

This Gerald could very likely be Mr. Crawford and she still wanted him to teach Gerald a lesson? He might not even be able to keep his own tongue if he cursed at him!

Alice was about to cry as she yelled, "I don't care! Gerald can't possibly be Mr. Crawford. Didn't you say that he is probably just a stalker? How could he possibly be Mr. Crawford? How could that be possible? Moreover, he has always been famous as the pathetic pauper in our school!"

Chapter 276

Silas was also a little confused.

At this time, Silas's cell phone suddenly rang. As soon as he saw the name on the caller ID, he answered the call with an angry look on his face. He also turned on the speaker on his cell phone without any hesitation!

“F*ck! Jayden, where were you? Didn’t you already agree to come to Mountain Top Villa with Jacelyn tonight? Why? Did the two of you go to open a room?” Silas asked as he cursed at him.

“Don’t talk about it, Silas. I caused a huge catastrophe today and was beaten half to death by my dad. My mom just finished applying some medication for me!”

“What? Uncle Scott has always spoiled and doted on you, yet he actually beat you up today? Did you do something terrible or did you do something to offend the Crawford family?”

“I don’t know who I provoked today. However, how could I possibly have offended the Crawford family? I am not stupid. To tell you the truth, I simply had a conflict with some of the guys from the Department of Language and Literature today. Do you know that Jane also hit me just because I offended someone called Mr. Benjamin Langdon from the Department of Language and Literature? Jacelyn also knows who he is!”

“F*ck! Mr. Benjamin Langdon? Why haven’t I heard of him before? Jane beat you up because of him?” Silas could not help but feel a little confused. What was going on today?

“Wait a minute. Who are you talking about? Benjamin? Are you sure that Jacelyn knows them too?”

These words made Alice’s body tremble a little.

She leaned over as she spoke over the phone.

“By the way, Alice, you should know them too. That woman, Jacelyn, told me that you often associate with people from their dormitory! What is that Benjamin’s background? D*mn it! He is simply too powerful!”

“Well, if it’s the same Benjamin I know of, then I know for certain that he is just a pathetic jerk who has no money or power at all. How could he possibly cause such a huge sensation?”

“Who said no? I also checked it out again. Benjamin has no background at all and his family is actually suffering to make ends meet. The only good thing about their family is that there was someone who

actually did very well in the civil examinations in the past. That's all! I really do not understand why my father is beating me up like this!"

Jayden had even investigated and turned over Benjamin's full family background and history as he felt that things were simply too unclear.

Alice paused at this time. She seemed to have thought of something. She did not want to ask about that person, but she couldn't help it.

Alice asked solemnly, "Jayden, let me ask you something. Was there a guy named Gerald by Benjamin's side today?"

"D*mn it! How did you know? Yes! Yes, there was a man following him named Gerald, and he seemed to be one of Benjamin's lackeys. I think that the booking for the hotel and restaurant were all made by that guy named Gerald. He even picked up a beer bottle and smashed it directly on my cousin's head! However, he seems to know Jane really well." Jayden replied, filled with doubts.

"Sure enough, it's him again!"

Alice was shocked once again.

What was Jayden saying? What Mr. Langdon? How could Gerald possibly be his lackey? Gerald was very likely the legendary Mr. Crawford of Mayberry City!

The Mr. Crawford who had countless assets!

"D*mn it. It seems as though we really should not be messing around with that guy named Gerald. We should even apologize to him the next time we see him! Otherwise, we will really be done for if he turns out to be Mr. Crawford!"

"Yes! Yes! Fortunately, I did not say anything harsh to Gerald just now. I was also very gentle when I poked him in the chest!"

Several girls had already turned pale in fright.

Silas simply nodded in response.

Alice was very dissatisfied when she saw that everyone was shocked because of Gerald.

She started laughing out loud as she said, "Hahaha. You're all cowards! All of you are truly cowards! A pathetic jerk like Gerald could actually scare you like this? Well, all of you are terrified of him, right? I'm not afraid of him at all! What's so great about Gerald? I don't believe that Gerald is really Mr. Crawford! Gerald is just a scumbag and an idiot!"

Alice clenched her fists tightly until her nails were digging deep into her palms.

She was not convinced at all, and she really felt very uncomfortable. Why were all these high ranking people so afraid of Gerald?

Let's talk about Gerald.

He had already gone back to his dormitory to sleep. So, he could not even be bothered to ask what Michael would do to deal with this matter, and he slept all the way till dawn.

Gerald was feeling just fine when he woke up the next day.

It was only then that he thought of Jacelyn. After all, he was the one who had caused the accident. So, shouldn't he find out if she was already awake?

Chapter 277

Gerald did not drive. Instead, he simply took a cab to the hospital.

Jacelyn was placed in a special VIP ward.

When Gerald came to the ward, the environment in the area was very quiet.

“Get out! I want all of you to get out! I will not accept your examination unless I see the person who saved me! Get out!”

Unexpectedly, when Gerald arrived at the door of the ward, he heard Jacelyn yelling and losing her temper.

A group of senior doctors and nurses were chased out of the ward by her.

“Oh! This Miss Leigh really has a very bad temper. She will not even allow us to examine her at all. What if her condition worsens because of the delay?”

“Yes! How are we going to explain this then?”

Several nurses spoke anxiously.

When they turned around, they saw Gerald walking toward them with some fruits and gifts in his hand.

“Hello, Mr. Crawford. You are finally here. The patient has been clamoring to see you as soon as she woke up!”

Several beautiful nurses approached Gerald immediately.

This was because Gerald had been so lavish when he arrived at the hospital in his Lamborghini the other day. Therefore, these beautiful nurses naturally paid a lot of attention to Gerald, and they all referred to him as Mr. Crawford in a respectful manner.

Gerald nodded faintly at the group of nurses before he asked a middle-aged attending doctor, named Dr. Zech about Jacelyn’s condition. “Oh, Dr. Zech, when did Jacelyn wake up? How is she?”

Dr. Zech’s eyes lit up immediately as soon as he saw Gerald.

After that, he waved his hand slightly as he motioned for the nurses to leave first.

“Hello, Mr. Crawford. The patient only suffered a slight concussion which is not a major problem. We have also given her some medication, and she has already lost about half a month’s worth of her memory now!” Dr. Zech replied as he smiled faintly.

He seemed to have already known about Gerald’s identity.

This made Gerald feel a little puzzled. After sending Jacelyn here yesterday, he had called Zack and asked him to arrange for the ward and special care for Jacelyn in the hospital.

However, he had never asked Zack to give Jacelyn amnesia!

Gerald did not even need to think about it to know that Zack had already called the hospital to make all the necessary arrangements after ending the call with him. He not only arranged the VIP ward and special medical staff to watch over Jacelyn, but he also instructed the doctor to make sure that Jacelyn would not remember everything that had happened.

Zack was really very thoughtful and meticulous!

Gerald could only smile wryly to himself.

However, this was perfect too. It would be less burdensome for him in the future.

“Okay. I will have to trouble you with this matter. I will reward you greatly in the future. I will go in and see her first!”

“Okay, Mr. Crawford!”

Gerald pushed the door of the ward open.

“Get lost! I told you... f*ck! Gerald, why are you here?”

Jacelyn had already picked up a water glass and was about to throw it, but she was stunned when she saw Gerald entering the ward at this time.

To be honest, ever since she had woken up in a daze last night, she had been filled with doubts. She had begun to put on airs and display a very bad temper when she noticed the cautious and respectful attitude that the medical staff had toward her.

At first, Jacelyn had asked them how she had ended up in the hospital.

The doctor told her that a rich man had brought her here, and he had even arranged for her to stay in the VIP ward.

When Jacelyn eagerly asked about the identity of the rich man, the doctors refused to say anything at all.

Moreover, everyone was very courteous and respectful toward Jacelyn.

That was the reason why Jacelyn dared to act so unscrupulously just now.

However, she really did not expect to see Gerald.

“You seem to be feeling a lot better based on your voice.”

Gerald put down the bag of fruits in his hand before he sat down.

Chapter 278

“Oh my God. Gerald, why are you here? Wait. Don’t tell me that you were the one who saved me? But what happened to me? Why can’t I remember anything at all?” Jacelyn asked in surprise.

Gerald replied without feeling ashamed at all, "Yes, I saved you. As for what happened... you were walking too fast on campus and you tripped over a stone, subsequently hitting your head on another stone. I was the one who rescued you and brought you to the hospital!"

"Ahh! So, that's what it was. Cough! Cough!" Jacelyn replied in disappointment.

Gerald felt like laughing when he asked, "Why does it seem as though you are very disappointed to find out that I was the one who saved you?"

Hmph! Of course that was the case!

I originally thought that I got hit lightly by a car, and it was a luxury car. The owner of the luxury car was also a very handsome man.

Finally, it would be better if it was raining last night. The handsome man squatted down in the rain before he hugged me and patted me lightly on my cheek as he asked me anxiously, "Miss, are you okay?"

When he saw that she was in a coma, the rich and handsome young man carried her in his arms as he rushed her to the hospital in the car.

After that, he would visit her with a bunch of delicious fruits, and he would peel some apples for her too.

Then, he would take her for a walk in the park.

After getting along for more than half a month, the both of them would suddenly fall in love.

He would fall in love with her, and he would kneel down and propose to her on a starry night.

As for the marriage proposal, he would light up the sky with fireworks and spell out the words 'I love you'.

“Jacelyn, I love you! Will you marry me? I am willing to use everything that I have in exchange for your lifetime happiness!”

“Yes! Yes!”

Then, both of them would start kissing on this romantic night. Halfway through the kiss, Jacelyn opened her eyes.

D*mn it! Gerald!

So, everyone could imagine Jacelyn’s mood and what she was feeling at this time.

“Hey! Hey! Why are you holding my hand? I’m asking you a question! Are you disappointed that I was the one who saved you?”

Gerald could not help but smile bitterly when he saw the idiotic look on Jacelyn’s face.

“Ahh! I... I’m not! Well, Gerald, you are actually pretty tall, and you do not look that bad. In fact, as long as you wear some nice clothes and dress properly, you will also look very handsome. Now, after winning the lottery, you are also rich and have some connections. So, you can be considered a tall, rich, and handsome man!”

“However, you are still far off from those who are really rich, powerful, and handsome. I do not know why it is like this. Perhaps it is just your temperament!” Jacelyn started complaining, “Hmph! I thought that it was a tall, rich, and handsome man who saved me, but I guess you’re not too bad either!”

Jacelyn knew that Gerald was also quite rich. Although it was highly possible that he was a gigolo who was someone else’s lover, it was fine as long as he had money. She could try her best to get her hands on his money!

Gerald could tell that Jacelyn’s current memory was at the moment when Alice had misunderstood his intentions at her department the last time.

“Gerald, can you peel an apple for me?” Jacelyn held her cheeks in her hands and asked as she tilted her head to look at Gerald, smiling delicately.

“But I didn’t buy any apples. Can you eat a banana instead?”

Gerald also felt a little guilty toward Jacelyn. After all, he was the one who had bumped into her, and he was also the reason behind her amnesia. Anyone would feel uncomfortable in this situation.

Gerald started to peel a banana for her.

“Oh, I don’t want to! Pfft! I am not eating it. Put it away!”

“Gerald, can you go out and buy some apples for me? I want to eat some apples that have already been cut!” Jacelyn asked as she held Gerald’s hand.

Gerald quickly retracted his hand before he said, “Okay. Okay, then. I will go and buy some apples for you. Wait for a moment.”

After that, Gerald slipped away in a hurry.

Gerald had just gotten into the elevator when the elevator door beside his elevator opened.

About four to five girls stepped out of the elevator with a fruit basket in their hands.

“Alice, did Jacelyn explain everything clearly to you? This is the VIP ward!”

“Yes, don’t worry, Hayley. I’ve already clarified everything. Come! Let’s go and see her.”

Chapter 279

”1902! This is it!”

When Hayley saw it, she pushed the door open.

“Jacelyn, we’re here to see you!”

“Alice! Hayley! You’re here!” Jacelyn was eating a banana at this time. She was delighted when she saw that Alice and Hayley were here.

The next step was very simple. They started asking Jacelyn about her condition.

Finally, they were talking about the cause and effect!

“What? It was Gerald who saved you? Where is he, then?” Alice stood up suddenly as she exclaimed in surprise.

Everyone was shocked. If anyone was particularly sensitive to the word ‘Gerald’, it was none other than Alice.

After Alice had returned to her dormitory yesterday, she did not think about Silas or anything else. All she could think about was Gerald alone.

Her heart hurt terribly, and she could not help but feel a little afraid.

What would she do if Gerald was indeed Mr. Crawford?!

To be honest, Alice had had the urge to leave her dormitory and rush to Gerald’s dormitory before she held Gerald in her arms and told him she was sorry. She would try to make things up with him, and she would treat him well in the future.

She really wanted to put everything in.

However, after thinking about it, she could not help but wonder what if Gerald was not Mr. Crawford? This was because Gerald was really a very confusing person now!

Oh! She did not want to say anything anymore!

In short, Alice felt even more entangled and uncomfortable than ever.

So, as soon as she heard about Gerald, she wanted to see him immediately so that she could ask him about things and make things clear once and for all. After all, both of them had already lost contact with one another after the last time.

“Alice, are you okay? Why do you have such a strong reaction?”

Everyone could not help but feel a little surprised.

“Oh! Oh! I’m fine. I have not seen that scumbag in such a long time, I was just feeling a little angry when I heard his name!”

Alice had an ignorant look on her face. She was also a very shrewd person, and she did not disclose anything about what had happened yesterday.

“Hmph! That’s right! Me too! I am so angry that Gerald actually treated you like that!” Hayley also replied.

Jacelyn hurriedly asked, “Hey! Hey! What are you guys talking about? Why can’t I understand what you are saying at all? Why is Gerald a scumbag?”

“Jacelyn, are you pretending, or did you truly lose your memory?” Hayley and the others asked worriedly.

After that, they told Jacelyn about everything that had happened before.

“Ahh? I don’t believe it. I can’t believe that Gerald would get together with someone else!” Jacelyn said as she shook her head sharply.

As for Alice asking Jacelyn if she could remember who Jayden was, Jacelyn simply shook her head.

Moreover, Jacelyn did not know why, but she actually felt a little disgusted when she heard the name Jayden.

What was even stranger was the fact that she actually felt as though she was convincing herself that Gerald was the person she was pursuing right now.

It was truly strange.

When everyone realized that Jacelyn did not want to talk about things that had happened just before this, everyone stopped talking about it.

As for Alice, she was also a very smart person. She could tell that Jacelyn seemed to be feeling very affectionate toward Gerald at this time.

This was because she could not stop herself from mentioning Gerald in every other sentence that she spoke. She even asked everyone if they realized that Gerald was actually quite handsome.

Alice was even feeling a little jealous at this time.

It felt as though someone was boasting about how handsome her boyfriend was and how she wanted to get together with your boyfriend in front of everyone else.

However, the worrying fact was that Gerald was not even Alice’s boyfriend at this time!

“Sigh. Why isn’t Gerald back yet? He said that he was going to buy me some apples. Shouldn’t he have already returned a long time ago?”

Jacelyn already felt as though she was missing Gerald at this time. Thus, she tried to call him.

Alas, Gerald's cell phone was already turned off.

What was happening?

Something must have happened!

In fact, this was because Gerald's cell phone had already been smashed into pieces after falling to the ground.

Back to three seconds ago on Gerald's end.

After going downstairs, Gerald went to the fruit stall.

After buying the apples, he was preparing to pay using his QR code.

At this time, a woman standing next to him accidentally hit his arm.

Chapter 280

He was not holding his cell phone firmly, and it fell to the ground with a bang, and his cell phone shattered immediately!

Gerald had already had this cell phone for more than two to three years, but he had always been very unwilling to change it.

At this moment, Gerald felt a little dumbfounded as he picked up the cell phone from the ground.

The woman hurriedly said, "I am sorry! I am really sorry, handsome! I did not mean it. I will compensate you for your cell phone!"

Gerald smiled slightly before he said, "It's okay, it's okay. I will just bring it to the shop to try and repair it. Eh?!"

However, Gerald was stunned as soon as he saw the woman standing before him.

The woman was also taken aback.

"It's you?"

"Oh, it's you!"

Both parties exclaimed in surprise at the same time.

The woman in front of Gerald looked to be about thirty years old. She was dressed very elegantly and she had long hair, fair skin, a very good figure, and an exquisite face. She was definitely the kind of person who would make people turn their heads around to take a second look at her when she walked on the street.

Moreover, there was also a young girl who was about four or five years old with her hair tied up in a bun standing next to her.

Both of them were the mother and little girl that Gerald had rescued by the river near the milk tea shop the other day.

Last time, when he went to buy milk tea with Mila, he had heard a cry for help and had hurried over to rescue the other party immediately. Upon his return, Nigel had already had the opportunity to kidnap Mila!

Gerald had a very deep impression of this event.

"Look! It's Uncle Hero! Mom, haven't you been looking for Uncle Hero all this while?"

The young girl with her hair tied up in a bun said as she smiled.

She also ran over to Gerald and held his hand immediately.

Gerald had a very familiar and affectionate feeling when he saw the little girl, and he pinched the little girl's face gently.

The woman smiled cordially and looked at Gerald as she said, "Young man, we are truly fated! I have been trying to look for you after you saved Minnie. I wanted to find the opportunity to thank you specifically. However, I never expected to see you here today!"

To be honest, this was the case with most women. They would always remember the person who offered them a helping hand during their most critical moment.

This was exactly what this woman was feeling toward Gerald at this time. Moreover, she also felt very safe when she saw Gerald's kind appearance.

"Anyone in that situation would have done the same thing too! Madam, you don't have to worry too much. Is your daughter called Minnie? I am just glad that Minnie is fine!" Gerald replied as he smiled.

"Nevertheless, we have to thank you! My name is Wynn Thornton, and my daughter's name is Minnie Tessa Thornton!" Wynn straightened out her hair as she smiled and spoke to Gerald.

"My name is Gerald!"

"Gerald, you will not be able to leave today! Are you free now? If you are free, it is almost noon. Can I treat you to a meal, then?"

Wynn looked like the kind of woman who had already been in society for a long time. Moreover, she was very mature, and each of her gestures and actions was all very charming.

“Uncle Gerald, please agree to my mom’s request! We can go to my house and eat together. My mom’s cooking is really very delicious!” Minnie shook Gerald’s arm and pleaded profusely.

To be honest, he was actually free. However, Gerald really did not feel like going. After all, he felt that it was only right for him to save a person who was in need. Why should he be treated to a meal?

However, Minnie was begging him to go now.

Gerald could not bear to disappoint Minnie. Thus, he nodded immediately.

“By the way, Miss Wynn, I just have to buy some fruits for a classmate of mine first!” At this time, Gerald suddenly remembered Jacelyn.

“Boss! My phone is already broken so I cannot pay using the QR code now. I can only pay with cash.”

After he spoke, Gerald placed his hand into his pocket. However, he suddenly recalled that he had forgotten to take his wallet and ID with him as he had left it behind in the Lamborghini because he had left in a hurry out of anger.

“Boss, how much is it in total? I will pay for it! Also, can you send someone to help me to deliver these fruits up to the ward later? Just tell the patient that her classmate has gone out for a meal with his friend!” Wynn smiled and continued, “By the way, Gerald, I will also have to buy a new cell phone for you!”

The reason why she said this was because she noticed that Gerald did not seem too anxious about the patient he was visiting. This obviously meant that they did not share any special relationship at all.

Therefore, she decided to decide on his behalf.

In truth, Wynn’s decision made Gerald feel very comfortable and relieved.

Indeed, he did not feel like going back to the ward to see Jacelyn acting coquettishly toward him like a baby!

Minnie cheered happily as she held Gerald's hand, "Yay! Uncle is coming to eat at my house!"

Minnie was very close and affectionate toward Gerald who had saved her life.

After getting into Wynn's BMW 7 Series, Gerald saw Wynn's business card in the car. He was really taken aback after seeing it.

Wynn was so young, but she was already the boss of a company!

Chapter 281

"Are you the general manager here, Miss Thornton?"

Gerald couldn't hide his shocked expression as he posed Wynn the question. With just a glance at her demeanor, he felt her overbearing female presence, and never before had he felt an aura as potent as this.

"Why? Do I not seem like one to you?"

Wynn drove along, smirking as she looked at Gerald through the rear-view mirror.

"Oh, by the way, you should stop referring to me as 'miss.' It makes me sound old. Since I'm only ten years older than you, just call me by my name!"

Wynn frowned, looking grumpy.

"Alright then, I won't call you Miss Thornton anymore!" Gerald nodded.

"Pfft!"

Wynn somehow seemed amused by Gerald's reply, and she let out a hearty laugh.

Gerald initially wanted to have a conversation about Wynn and her family, thanks to a lingering doubt that had been floating at the back of his mind for a while—Minnie's last name was Thornton.

It made Gerald wonder if Wynn had brought up the child all by herself.

But since a topic as such would be too personal, Gerald abandoned the thought.

Wynn stopped by a supermarket along the way home, and later on emerged with a few big bags of groceries.

It was just as Gerald had guessed—Wynn's home was clean and tidy. After a simple tour around the house, there were no signs of any men.

That little fact somehow made Gerald feel a bit more comfortable.

Wynn then got to show off her cooking skills to him. In just a couple of minutes, she had whipped up a table of delectable dishes, way better than anything they served at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Anyone who married Wynn in the future would be more than blessed to have a wife as such.

Not to mention how she was really good at conversations too.

After the dishes were served, Gerald felt that Wynn had grown a little warmer, as if the two had known each other for a long time.

Wynn had her eyes fixated on Gerald.

She was even more attracted by Gerald's down-to-earth personality.

With much in common, their conversation quickly picked up as they naturally opened up.

Wynn stared adoringly at Gerald as she rested her rosy cheeks on her palms.

"Gerald, you must be curious about Minnie's father, right?"

"Well... not really..." Gerald replied, with slight awkwardness.

Wynn smiled as her gaze pierced into Gerald. "Really? While I was cooking earlier, I noticed you were kind of scanning through my room. Were you looking for something?"

Her deadshot gaze made his heart skip a little.

Wynn wasn't someone to be messed around with, having observed Gerald's every single move the moment he stepped into her house.

And every single word she said was exactly what he had in mind.

The situation made Gerald feel like an elementary school student, where all his thoughts were exposed.

"Hmph! Don't even think about hiding anything from me. The truth is, I had nothing to hide from you anyways. Minnie's father left us long ago, and it has always been just the two of us. Minnie usually spends her time in kindergarten while I work at my company. I'll bring her along to work during the weekends. Here's the problem. Last week, a capital invasion by some wicked bastard forced many of Mayberry's small and medium establishments out of business. God, I was so stressed out!

"There was this one time, where I was so bogged down about this that I slipped and Minnie accidentally fell into a river! You have no idea how much it scared me, and god knows how much I wished I had a man by my side to help me get things sorted!"

As Wynn downed a few glasses of red wine, her pretty face had started to blush, causing her to look increasingly sultry and charming.

Frankly, Gerald had always been attracted to women who were around his age or younger than himself.

He'd never actually hook up with mature women who were in their thirties.

Especially not with a such beautiful yet temperamental woman like Wynn.

Gerald could not help but stare at the gorgeous sight before him, his heart thumping in his chest like crazy.

Putting that thought aside, Wynn had only invited him over for dinner as a kind gesture, and Gerald felt a little awkward when she brought up the topic of looking for a man. He was unsure if he misunderstood her words.

"Miss Wynn, earlier on you mentioned that some young man invaded the capital of Mayberry. Now, what did you mean by that?"

"Oh, about that. Nah, it's nothing much, but you must've heard of Mayberry's most wicked man, Gerald Crawford, right? He's the dude that owns Mayberry Commercial Street!"

Wynn's tone was filled with anger.

"Hmph?"

Gerald almost died choking on a mouthful of potatoes.

Chapter 282

Since when did he become the most wicked youngster in Mayberry?

“Well...of course I’ve heard of him! But I’ve only heard of the good things!” Gerald’s face flushed beet red in embarrassment.

“What do you mean by good things? Don’t you know how businesses work? Some time ago, Gerald invested a large amount of capital into Mayberry’s major enterprises. It might have seemed like a power move, but many other businesses in the Mayberry community were screwed as well, no thanks to him. The businesses that received a sudden injection of funds underwent some over-rapid development, disrupting the business community’s balance. Of course, it also posed an enormous challenge to second and third-tier enterprises like us! Many people from the business community hate him to the bone!”

Wynn was done talking. Gerald lowered his cutlery and rubbed his nose.

Of course, he knew all about those massive investments Wynn was talking about. He represented his sister while investing in those projects, including the funding of Scothow Elementary School and other similar projects.

Gerald never gave it much thought and simply did everything per what his sister told him to do.

After doing so, however, he did not delve in any deeper.

Unbeknownst to him, the influx of large funds had disrupted the economic balance of Mayberry.

To put it in one way, he was the reason why Wynn was so worried about her investment. It resulted in her neglecting Minnie, where she eventually lost sight of her and let her fall into the water.

Gerald could not help but smile bitterly.

“Hmph, enough talking from me. Right, so Gerald, you’re about to start your internship soon, aren’t you? Any good places in mind?”

It now seemed to be Wynn’s turn to ask the questions.

Gerald was honest and kind, but from the way he dressed and the cell phone he used, Wynn could tell that he came from a poor family.

There was kindness within Wynn's heart, and she was all but concerned over Gerald's future.

"I haven't decided where I'd go yet!" replied Gerald.

"That's fine. If you don't have any place to go, you're welcome to intern at my company. I'll double your salary, and as long as you follow me, I guarantee you'll be able to buy your own house in Mayberry within five years!"

Somehow, Wynn was tempted to keep Gerald by her side.

Their conversation was interrupted by Minnie. "Mommy, what do you need Uncle Gerald to buy a house for? Just let him live here with us! Once I grow up, I'll have my own house, so you can live with Uncle Gerald!"

"Minnie, what are you babbling about! How can mommy live with Uncle Gerald? Only married couples are allowed to live together, do you understand?"

Wynn couldn't help but smile bitterly.

"Ooh, I understand now!"

Wynn turned her attention to Gerald, only to see him smiling silently.

"You should consider the offer, Gerald. My company may be small, but it has a great future!"

Gerald nodded in reply.

He wondered what she would think of him once she discovered that he was indeed the Gerald who had messed up her company!

From the conversation, though, he knew that he was somewhat responsible for the doldrums that Wynn's company was facing. Gerald would not just ignore it.

Minnie wiped her mouth with a napkin.

"Mommy, I'm full! Can I get my toys from downstairs? I want Uncle Gerald to come with me!"

"What toys! If you want new toys, you'll have to wait until tomorrow. That's when mommy will bring you to the toy store."

"No, I want Uncle Gerald to go with me!"

At this point, Minnie seemed to have taken a liking toward Gerald.

Her hands gripped Gerald's arms tightly, refusing to let go.

"It's okay, I'll accompany Minnie to the toy store. I'll keep an eye on her, so don't worry!"

After that was done, Gerald brought Minnie downstairs with him.

As they were on their way, Minnie glued herself close by Gerald's side. Although he was delighted, he pitied her a little. There was no doubt that Wynn was a strong woman, but no matter how strong she was supposed to be, she was still a woman, and Minnie, a fatherless child.

"You like being with me a lot, Minnie?" asked Gerald.

"Yes!" Minnie Thornton nodded hard.

“Hmm, why?”

“That’s because you’re a good man, unlike the bad guy who keeps coming to my house. He hits mommy, and sometimes he hits me too!”

“Huh?”

Gerald was startled by the little girl’s words.

Initially, he only wanted to learn more about their family, hoping he could render Minnie and Wynn with more assistance. He definitely did not expect to hear something like that from Minnie.

Those bad guys... did that mean Wynn’s social relations were quite complicated as well? And who in their right mind would beat up a child like Minnie?

Chapter 283

Now, which socially successful woman didn’t have a man behind her back?

After hearing about Wynn’s significant other, Gerald, for no apparent reason, felt a fleeting sense of disappointment.

He wished to help Wynn, not just because she was pretty, but also for her child, Minnie, the little girl he had started to find favor in.

Perhaps it was because he saved Minnie’s life. It gave him a sense of fatherhood, where he automatically felt the sense of paternal affection each time they met.

Things, however, seemed to be more complicated than initially thought.

Wynn probably didn’t require his help at all.

As for his disappointment, it was because Gerald really thought Wynn was that type of woman. Why then would Minnie say that a man had been coming to look for her!

It was someone else's private life anyway, and it was none of his business.

So after buying Minnie her new toy, Gerald brought her back to the neighborhood.

Without explanation, Minnie abruptly grabbed Gerald's arm. He did not know what she saw—her happy expression had disappeared, and her face had turned pale.

He saw that her eyes were staring right at a large black Mercedes-Benz parked along the driveway. The car wasn't there before.

"What's the matter, Minnie?" Gerald asked in shock.

"Uncle Gerald, the bad guy is here again, and that's his car! He was the one who hit mommy and me!"

Minnie's body trembled in fear, and she immediately hid behind Gerald.

"Huh?" Gerald was slightly startled when he saw that the car was empty. It could only mean that the driver must have entered the house.

After dining at someone's house, there was no way he would just walk away and pretend that nothing happened.

"Come on, Minnie. Let's get inside!"

Gerald immediately picked Minnie and rushed upstairs.

Upon his arrival, he found that the door was left ajar.

Inside, a big commotion had taken place.

“B*tch, did you bring another man home? Why are there three sets of cutlery on the table?”

His voice was raspy, and he sounded like a middle-aged man.

“You’re insane, Damien Rye! What happens in my family is none of your business!” Wynn retorted angrily.

“Hmph! So it seems that there really is another man here. Wynn, have you forgotten what we agreed on half a month ago? I’d help you maintain your business to provide you with funds so you could pull through this difficult time. I did everything for your sake, and in return, you promised to be with me. How else did you think your tiny little establishment withstood the blow from Gerald’s commercial street? You would have gone bust by now!”

“Now that I’ve helped you out, you still have the nerve to hook up with another man?! Hehe, alright, I’ll collect the interest today. I’ve been wanting to f*ck you for a long time now, and I can’t hold back a minute more!”

What followed next were plates flying off the table and the sickening shatter of clayware.

“Get off me, you son of a b*tch! *sshole!”

Wynn cried out with every last breath.

Coincidentally, Gerald pushed the door open and was welcomed by the sickening scene.

“Stop it!” Gerald shouted as he grabbed a vase beside him and lunged at the man sitting above Wynn. He was going to bust his bald head wide open.

With a mighty swing, he brought down the vase to his head.

Upon impact, Damien Rye's skull cracked open.

"F*ck! Who the hell are you?" he cursed loudly, clutching his bleeding head with one hand and struggling to pull up his pants with the other.

"Mommy, are you okay?"

Minnie quickly helped Wynn get up.

Her blouse had been ripped apart by Damien, leaving her breasts exposed.

With a cold and murderous stare, Gerald picked up a stool from the floor and eyeballed Damien. His eyes were filled with rage.

He now pretty much knew everything that was going on in the family.

It was because of that investment plan, something that had almost destroyed Wynn's company.

Then, things got worse when this b*stard, Damien, came into the picture.

This was his condition, in exchange for the help of Damien Rye.

Chapter 284

To be frank, everything happened due to the things that he did without much consideration, which led to a countless chain reaction of bad repercussions.

When Gerald witnessed Wynn being assaulted, he also felt some self-loathing inside, and all of a sudden, his blood boiled.

“F*ck, I understand now. Wynn, he’s the sugar baby you’ve been feeding, right? How dare you have the balls to hit me! I’m Damien-f*cking-Rye! Just wait and see, kid, I’m going to skin you alive!”

Damien was still cursing at Gerald as blood gushed down his face.

Gerald was not afraid of him. He ran up to him, ready to swing his stool.

Growing up in his hometown, Gerald has suffered all kinds of hardships. He used to be poor and timid, but he was quite strong.

As things started to escalate, Damien dared not stall any longer.

He was then continuously smacked with a stool as he wailed in pain. In the end, he managed to get to the door and fled.

“Miss Thornton! Are you okay?”

Gerald threw down his stool and approached Wynn with concern.

Wynn wiped her tears and shook her head. “I’m fine, that son of a b*tch, he came up shortly after you guys left. Fortunately, you came back in time, otherwise I would’ve been...”

“...It’s better to not talk about it, now you’ve saved both of our lives, I can’t drag you into this mess, so you’d better get out of here now. Damien Rye is a vengeful b*stard, he’s from one of the most powerful families in Mayberry. You’d better leave now before he gets a good look on your face!”

Panic flashed in her eyes.

No one knew Damien Rye better than she did. He once heard someone mentioned that Damien had a crush on a service girl at the bar. He wanted her to accompany him, but that service girl’s boyfriend also worked at the same bar, and he was reluctant to let her go.

Her boyfriend stepped forward to stop him.

As a result, Damien Rye sent his goons to beat him up, severing his hamstrings.

Then, he raped the service girl and let his goons have their turns.

In short, Damien Rye was an inhumane beast.

And he had the entire Rye family behind his back.

“I’m not afraid of him, besides, who knows what will happen to the both of you if I leave? He will definitely not let go of you and your daughter!”

Gerald was indeed not afraid of him.

If he were to run off from the scene like a pussy, he would rather jump off the building! He knew he could not be that kind of person.

“How about, you take Minnie and go? I’ll stay, I believe I can calm his anger!”

Wynn said as she bit her lips.

Everyone understood what she truly meant.

“If that’s the case, I think we should hide for the meantime. I know a safe place, you and Minnie can follow me, so both of you don’t have to worry about Damien. I know for a fact that there are other ways to resolve this matter!”

Gerald was not planning to expose his identity, but he still gave Wynn a firm look.

The main reason was that his phone was now broken, and he could not contact Zack and the others.

The only thing he could do first was to hide, and then replace his broken phone. He believed that his plan would not bring him too much trouble.

In the end, Wynn was still a woman, and she had completely no idea what to do when it came to such situations. Staring into Gerald's convincing eyes, she could only nod her head.

After they had finished packing their items, the three of them went downstairs.

Just as they got in the car...

A luxurious car suddenly crashed into the streets of Mayberry, followed by three or four commercial vehicles.

All of them looked very intimidating.

The vehicles loomed into the small neighbourhood, blocking all entrances.

Then, Damien, who had his wound now slightly bandaged, was escorted down from his car. Not knowing what order to command, his goons rushed up the stairs.

Seeing what was happening outside of her house, Wynn's face turned pale, and even Gerald was feeling a little scared.

If Gerald were to leave a minute later, he would probably be smashed to death.

It took him a lot of effort to get to where he was today, and if he was to be smashed to death like this without Zack and the others' knowledge, he would be dead meat!

“Go on sir, drive! Bring us to the slums near the newly-built Scothow Elementary School!” Gerald said hurriedly.

The driver stepped hard on the pedal and they fled the scene.

It seemed that the driver picked up the tension that was going on and wanted to leave the place as soon as possible. He started speeding.

Looking out of the car window, Damien’s eyes caught the sight of the car.

He was standing downstairs and was turning his head, as he looked towards the direction of the taxi with suspicion.

Chapter 285

“Geez! I wonder who messed with Damien Rye, I guess it won’t end well for that person today!”

The taxi driver was clearly in shock while he was driving.

It was apparent that he knew Damien Rye and had heard of his name before.

Gerald was a little confused. “Who is Damien Rye and where did he come from? Is he more powerful even than Flynn Lexington from Mayberry Commercial Street?”

Gerald asked the driver.

After taking a peek at the back of the car, it seemed like Damien did not follow them. Gerald let out a sigh of relief.

“Ahem, how do I put it... Flynn Lexington is indeed a powerful figure in Mayberry, he has the entire Mayberry International Inc. behind his back. As for Damien Rye, he’s from the Rye family, one the wealthiest families in Mayberry. He’s the cousin of Henry Rye, the former head of Rye Group. Although Mayberry International Inc. is the first, it’s still a foreign company that has been established in Mayberry

for just over ten years. On the other hand, Rye Group is different. It has been here for forty years, and the Ryes, a local mafia family, has deep roots here in Mayberry.”

“No matter how powerful Mayberry International Inc. is, they’re still strangers to this land. However, both the Rye Group and Mayberry International seem to get along pretty well!”

The driver was like a chatterbox who would not stop talking once he opened his mouth.

As the driver introduced the Ryes to him, Gerald started to recall his past memories, especially about Henry Rye.

He remembered he once had a brief encounter with the Ryes before.

But when was that?

Why did both Chad and Danny Xanders disappear from Mayberry? What made Alice cry so much that she would not dare to come out of her dormitory? In the end, not even her parents could do anything, and they had to seek help from Zack Lyle to resolve the issue.

He remembered while they were dining in Royal Dragon Villa, Henry Rye’s second-generation rich son, William Rye, flirted with Alice and Jacelyn while being drunk.

Then, Danny ordered his people to teach William a lesson.

Which led to the Rye family’s retaliation.

He did not ask Luke for any help. Instead, Zack was the one who stepped in to mediate the matter which involved Alice and Jacelyn.

The Ryes let them go.

However, Gerald also remembered clearly that Zack used to warn him on keeping an eye out for his own safety and to conceal his identity and so on.

There was no doubt that Mayberry International Inc. was indeed the largest company in Mayberry, but that did not mean that every other company would be intimidated by them.

After all, they only knew that the company was run by her sister, Jessica. They were unaware of Jessica's terrifying past, so the local underground mafias were not afraid of her.

They did not even miss the chance to use tactics to sabotage the company.

For instance, Gerald and Mila Smith were once kidnapped, and Zack had no choice but to make a phone call directly to Henry Rye, begging him to let them go.

He knew Henry Rye was up to no good.

It was pretty obvious how dangerous the Ryes were in the eyes of Zack Lyle.

It turned out that Damien Rye was the cousin of Henry Rye, which proved how powerful the Ryes were!

As he sat in the car, Gerald could not help but ponder over the matter.

He was not afraid of finding trouble. Worse-case scenario, he will seek Jessica's help and lean on the power the family holds to resolve the issue. After all, no matter how powerful the Ryes were, the Crawfords can still easily crush them with just their fingers.

What Gerald can do for now was to get his phone repaired and contact Zack Lyle.

Gerald brought Wynn and Minnie to where Queta Smith and the others lived.

The place was extremely remote.

So remote that Damien would not be able to track them here for a while.

“Big brother Gerald, you’re here!”

“Hey kids, where’s Yasmin?”

Once he set foot inside, Danny and Edmund, who were doing laundry, immediately rushed to his side.

“She’s inside making dinner with Queta!”

In just a short while, Queta and Yasmin came out of the house.

Gerald did not go too deep into the details, he simply explained that Wynn and her daughter were staying for the night. Queta was fine with it, and immediately cleaned up a place for Wynn.

Wynn was also touched when Gerald told her that Queta had adopted the three children.

Maybe it was because she was also a single mother raising a child by herself, Wynn felt an immediate sense of connection with Queta. The two chatted with each other like long-lost best friends.

After Gerald had settled things down, he went to a nearby mobile phone mall by himself and quickly changed a new phone.

Otherwise, things would get delayed.

The standalone mobile phone mall was huge, and there were all sorts of well-known mobile phone brands available.

Chapter 286

The mall was crowded.

Gerald strolled around, not knowing which brand to buy.

He just needed a sturdy phone.

In the end, his eyes were locked on a phone model. It was of extremely good quality with a price tag of 2830 dollars.

It was arguably an expensive phone.

“Miss, may I have a closer look on that new phone? Thanks!”

Gerald politely asked the saleswoman.

The saleswoman had seen Gerald searching around for almost half a day. From the way Gerald was dressed, she knew he would probably pick a cheaper phone.

However, she thought he was just trying to save face.

Since he was walking around in a well-known mall, the saleswoman thought Gerald was here pretending to look around. Then, she expected him to act as if the phone was not what he wanted and he would instead buy some 50-dollar miscellaneous unbranded phone and slip away.

She had seen too many such people.

When the shabby-looking Gerald walked towards her store, she looked down on him.

She was surprised when Gerald said he wanted to have a look at the most expensive phone among the bunch.

“Sorry sir, customers aren’t allowed to try out this phone without buying it!” The saleswoman said impatiently.

What she really meant was show me the money if you have it, f*ck off if you do not.

“Can’t I even have a look at it first?!” Gerald asked.

He did not have his wallet on him at the moment, so the only way for him to pay was to insert his SIM card into the phone and pay via online payment.

“No, sir! It’s our store’s rules!” The saleswoman snickered.

“Margie! Are you busy at the moment? I’ve brought some friends over to have a look at some phones!”

“Ahhh, welcome!”

At that very moment, a dude with his bunch of friends came over to the store.

“Hayward, aren’t you going to change to a new phone? We’ve just received a new model in our stores!”

The beautiful saleswoman, Margie Steward, gleamed at Hayward with sparkly eyes.

“Oh? A new model?”

Hayward and his friends gathered around.

Concurrently, one of the girls glanced at Gerald, who was about to leave. She was surprised.

“Holy sh*t! Gerald, what are you doing here?”

And that girl was not just any other stranger, it was Lilian Cole.

The one standing next to her was Sharon Leslie, who did not change a single bit.

It seemed like they were all hanging along with Hayward now.

As for Gerald, he had already noticed them.

And for that reason, he was about to leave.

After all, they were just female classmates from high school. Their friendship was long over, and there was nothing much for them to talk about.

Besides, they would probably ridicule him for how he looked, and Gerald did not want to bore himself to the point where he could not hold back his fists.

So, he simply walked away.

But no matter how he tried to slip away, he still failed.

“Why are you still here, are you buying a new phone too?”

“Oh my, you’re really here to get a new phone, do you even have the money? Wait, did you have to relocate, and you’re still thinking of buying a cell phone? And you have the balls to come to this well-known brand’s store?”

Lilian said with a surprised expression.

Sharon, who was standing on the side, looked at Gerald and shook her head with a cynical smile.

Chapter 287

“Whew! Hayward, do you guys know each other?”

The saleswoman asked as she smirked at Gerald.

Hayward was quite well-known amongst the people in this area.

It was rumored that there would be a big development in the west side of Yorknorth Mountain. The village where Hayward resided, Yorknorth Village, will be relocated.

In the near future, this area will be developed into a main commercial zone.

After becoming rich with the demolition compensation, Hayward was very active around the area.

He frequently changes his phone here, hence he got more acquainted with the saleswoman.

“Oh, not really. We were just classmates from high school!”

Hayward shook his head.

Then, he ignored Gerald and turned to Margie, smiling.

“Margie, what about that phone you recommended? Can I have a look, I’m going to buy one for each of my friends!” Hayward said.

Obviously, the friends he was referring to were Lilian and Sharon.

Both girls were beautiful, and they suit Hayward’s taste. But the thing was that both girls seemed to be interested in him as well, which made him really anxious. If he were to break either one’s heart, he too, would be a little heartbroken.

Therefore, he simply chose to have both of them by his side.

The two girls would usually fight and fret all the time, but in turn it boosted Hayward's ego, which made him feel wanted, as though they could not live without him.

Knowing that both of them were getting new phones, they were first delighted by the news, but then they gave each other cold stares.

In what way can either of them get Hayward's sole, unconditional love?

For the girls, they were only envious and jealous of each other.

"Here it is, this is the one! Try it out and have a look first!" Margie smiled as she handed over the phone which she refused to show Gerald to Hayward.

As he stood by the side, Gerald's blood started to boil.

It turns out the store's rules only applied to him!

Gerald wanted to lash out on them.

But Sharon and Lilian were both standing there. Gerald felt a little embarrassed and could not stay on any longer.

He then turned and came across another mega brand's store.

"Sir, a newly-released phone just arrived at our stores! It's an international brand, and it's priced at 4800 Dollars, but the first 50 customers will be able to get this phone with just 4300 dollars! Would you like to have a look, sir?"

As soon as he entered, a saleswoman who looked roughly around 18 or 19 years old smiled at him.

He could tell that she was quite reserved.

She looked like a newcomer here, who does her job without judging a person's outfit.

But the price of the phone definitely gave him a great shock.

The phone was priced at almost 5000 dollars, which was way too overpriced!

But yet, with closer inspection on the features and the brand of the phone, he understood why the phone was that expensive.

Rumor has it that many politicians and military captains used this kind of phone.

The functions of this phone were quite powerful, and the quality was reliable. It can also conceal the user's privacy pretty well.

It was much better than that 2830 dollars phone.

"Sir, this is the most expensive model in our store with pro-features. You can have a look at this too, the price starts at just 1030 dollars!"

The saleswoman thought she had frightened Gerald as he looked stunned.

Who would not be shocked by a phone with a 5000 dollars price tag? Most ordinary people could not afford it, hence she hurriedly recommended something else.

For a megastore with a big-branded phone like this, it was pretty normal for them to sell the cheapest phone with a 1000 dollars as the starting price.

“That wouldn’t be necessary, just show me the most expensive phone here. By the way, can I borrow a SIM card pin?” Gerald smiled.

“Yes, sir!” The saleswoman handed both the phone and the pin to Gerald.

The mall was a mobile phone specialty mall, so there were security guards patrolling at the entrance. Besides, there was also a special scanner equipment, hence no one here was to be afraid of losing their wallets or getting robbed.

Upon receiving the requested items, the first thing Gerald did was to insert his SIM card in it.

Chapter 288

“Holy moly, what did you just say Margie? This phone costs 2830 dollars? That’s crazy!”

At the same time, Hayward’s surprised yelp could be heard coming from the mobile phone store not too far away.

Sharon and Lilian who were beside him were also a little startled.

They were definitely shocked by the phone’s price.

They have tried out the phone’s functions and features, all of which were really great. The phone’s camera quality was clear and crisp, and for pretty girls like Sharon and Lilian, having a phone with an excellent camera was more important than anything else.

They all looked at Hayward expectantly, waiting for him to buy one for each of them.

Beads of cold sweat trickled down Hayward’s forehead.

“Nah, it’s too expensive. It’s over 1500 dollars for one, close to 6000 dollars for two, this phone is way too overpriced!”

Hayward wiped the cold sweat off his forehead.

It was confirmed that his house was going to be demolished, but the compensation would only be transferred to him after two or three months. As for now, he could only draw out money from his credit card, and only pay back once he receives the compensation.

He could not afford the phone even if he was beaten to death on site.

“Oh, so there are still things that you can’t afford! Since these beauties like the phone very much, you should at least buy one for them!”

Margie was quite good with her role as the salesperson. She used Sharon and Lilian to persuade Hayward to buy one from her.

“Ehem, maybe not now, we’ll see next time! Come on, let’s go somewhere else!”

He took Sharon and Lilian to another place.

Margie was left disappointed. It took her so much effort to lure Hayward to her store, but he still managed to get away.

She immediately followed behind the group.

“Hayward, why don’t you have a look at this store? They’re a well-known brand too, and even if you buy their lowest-end model, the phone will still attract the attention of many people!” Lilian spoke up.

“Well, let’s see then! F*ck, the lowest-end starts at a thousand dollars?”

Hayward approached the store and his jaw dropped when he saw the price of the phone.

Not to mention, there was a promotional event for a 5000 dollars phone!

He could not hide his shock this time round and he said, "Why don't we go somewhere else..."

Sharon and Lilian were both disappointed again.

1000 dollars for a phone was indeed expensive, but he was about to receive a huge sum of money once his house got torn down for development anyways. Spending a little bit of that money on them would not hurt much right?

It was not like they were asking him to buy them the 5000 dollars phone.

Just as Lilian was about to beg Hayward, she caught something at the corner of her eyes.

She just so happened to see Gerald, who was inserting his SIM card into a phone.

"Holy moly! Gerald, you're like a ghost that wouldn't stop following us around, eh? Besides, did you even check the brand of the phone that you're buying? How can a peasant like you afford it?"

Lilian was not in the mood. When she met Gerald the first time, there was nothing much for her to say.

But now, they were in a store where Hayward could not even afford to buy them any of the phones. And just as they were about to leave...

They saw Gerald here, flipping the phones around and pretending as if he was able to afford any.

This struck Lilian's nerves.

Gerald replied in a mocking manner.

“I’m getting a new phone, how is this any of your business?”

Gerald loaded his SIM card into the phone. He quickly downloaded Paypal and was ready to complete his payment.

But after hearing Lilian’s words, he was having none of it.

He immediately replied with a harsh tone.

“Good heavens! Stop pretending, have a look on yourself, how can someone like you afford this type of phone?”

Lilian grew even more agitated.

“Lilian, look! He’s holding the 5000 dollars phone! F*ck, and he’s thinking of buying it? Hahaha!”

At that point, Hayward felt a lot more relieved for not being able to afford the phone. Gerald was there, right in his face, to take his place as the punching bag.

Sharon, too, was glaring at Gerald as her brows furrowed.

Chapter 289

“Who would’ve thought that Gerald is such a great actor? Haha, if we didn’t run into him today, he might have stopped by each cell phone store and then act like he’s going to buy it!”

“I know right, and then he will end up not buying it. I’ve seen far too many actors like him!”

The two girls took turns to scoff at Gerald.

“I hope you’ll become more sensible, Gerald. Your family is poorer than everyone else, and in the future, you’ll have a lower starting point in your career than anyone else. Even Hayward, who’s about to receive

his compensation from the demolition of his house doesn't dare to buy any of the phones, and yet you're thinking of buying one? Stop pretending!" exclaimed Sharon.

Honestly speaking, her attention had always been on Hayward before this.

She never bothered paying attention on Gerald at all.

Now that even Hayward was mocking Gerald, she could not help but follow suit and ridiculed him with a word or two.

Then, she shook her head in contempt.

"Hayward, since you've come all the way here, I've just asked my boss for his permission, and now I can sell you that phone for 300 dollars less! The condition is that you've to buy two phones, and you've to promise me that, in the future, you must bring more customers to my store, or else I'll be scolded by my boss to death!"

Margie came out of nowhere to convince Hayward to buy her phone.

She was really good with promoting her products, and those who did not know would think that she had suffered a great loss.

Lilian and Sharon were both convinced by her marketing skills.

Hayward had made a mistake, but a mistake is yet just another mistake as he could just change the topic.

"Ahem, just hold on for a moment, Margie. I'm not rich, but the real rich guy is this dude over here. He was about to purchase a 5000 dollars phone, so why don't you persuade him instead of me!"

Hayward hurriedly shifted the topic to Gerald.

“Huh? Him? I’ll smack myself twice in public if he can even afford it, Hahahaha!”

When Margie saw that the person was Gerald, she laughed so hard that she even snorted. “Hey, Hayward, don’t change the subject and get over to my store to check it out!”

“Miss, you can’t just barge in and snatch our customers away, it’s against our store’s rules!”

The young salesgirl said nervously.

“Oh, you must be new here, am I right? Everyone in this mall knows me, why don’t you go around and ask who am I? If you dare to talk to me like that again, I’ll get someone to slice open your pretty little face after work, so you better watch out!”

The salesgirl dared not speak up anymore.

“Miss, could you get me another one wrap it nicely, I’m buying two of them!”

Gerald brushed off their mockery.

He said to the salesgirl.

Why?

Because it just occurred to Gerald that it seemed like it was also time for Queta to replace her old phone. Since he was going to buy one, he might as well buy one more for her.

“Holy sh*t! Did you guys hear that? He’s buying two? Hahahaha!”

Hearing this, the crowd burst into laughter.

Margie looked at Gerald in awe, she was wondering where this idiot came from, and believed he was joking with them.

The salesgirl took his words seriously and brought another one of the same phone for Gerald.

Gerald used his phone and scanned the payment code, which was then followed by a “ding” sound.

“Payment successful! 8740 dollars deducted from Paypal account!”

“Holy sh*t?”

“What?”

The notification prompt was crisp in their ears.

The crowd was stunned.

Especially Hayward, who was laughing so much that his stomach hurt a second ago. He even bent over from laughing so hard, and after hearing the notification prompt, his smile was immediately wiped off. He stared at Gerald, shocked.

Lilian and Sharon’s jaws dropped to the ground.

Their breath was a little shaky at that moment.

They looked down on Gerald, but it never crossed their minds that someone like him would be able to purchase two of the most expensive phones without even needing to think twice.

Where did Gerald get that much money?

Margie was also shocked, and she felt her cheeks were already on fire before she even slapped herself.

“Gerald, where did you get that much money from?”

Gerald took the phone and was about to leave.

Lilian grabbed Gerald’s arm.

D*mn! As teachers, their salaries were only 750 to 900 dollars per month, and they had just witnessed Gerald spending their one-year worth of salary on two cell phones.

Chapter 290

That was unbelievable!

Could it be that he has won the lottery?

And how much did he win?

It was apparent that the question bugged Lilian and Sharon very much.

They were anxious and wanted to know the answer.

It did not matter to them if the money was stolen or robbed. They were only hoping that he did not just win the lottery.

Otherwise, it would be too much for them to handle!

“I’ve got things to do, gotta go!”

Gerald ignored their questions as he was not obliged to answer them.

He turned and walked away coldly, leaving them staring with widened eyes and mouths.

The moment he walked out of the door, Gerald immediately called Zack Lyle with his new cell phone.

He told him the predicament that he was facing and that it would be great if he could come and pick him up. He would explain the matter further once they met and they would find ways to resolve it as soon as possible.

Zack was shocked when he heard the news.

He had to act immediately.

Gerald hung up and sent him his location. Then, he returned to Queta's house.

Just as he walked passed the entrance of Scothow Elementary School...

...He suddenly stopped walking.

Before him, there was a large group of people and a few luxurious cars blocking at the entrance.

Next to it, a taxi was broken to pieces, and wails could be heard coming from the middle of the crowd.

It was clear as day that someone was being beaten.

One of the luxurious cars caught Gerald's attention as it looked familiar. His heart stopped beating for a moment. It was Damien Rye.

He did pursue after them!

And Gerald finally recognized the taxi, it was the one he had taken to come all the way here!

The surrounding onlookers were watching.

Gerald was nervous, and as he turned to the direction everyone was staring, to his horror, he realized that the one being beaten was the previous taxi driver.

He was beaten to a bloody pulp. His body sprawled on the ground, and blood smeared on his entire face.

“D*mn it, are you going to tell or not? Where the hell is that b*tch and that b*stard?”

Damien’s roared heartlessly.

“Mr Rye, please forgive me! I really don’t know, and if I knew, I would have told you!”

The driver lied on the ground, begging.

“They got off from this area, and I don’t know where they went!”

“F*ck, he’s still not telling, beat him up boys!”

His goons took turns to swing and smash him with sticks.

The beatings went on for a few more minutes, and the onlookers felt a chill up their spines.

The driver continued to deny as he was beaten until he became unconscious.

Gerald watched from the side. His entire body was shaking with rage.

And the driver really moved him.

What did he do?

It was because the driver dropped him and the others off near the entrance of the slums, so there was no way he could not have known where Gerald was going!

And it was pretty evident that the driver was not going to tell them anything.

“F*ck, find me this driver’s family, immediately. He must have known where they are, damn it, and he dared to lie to me? I’m going to ruin his entire family!”

Damien roared.

“Listen up, to whoever that saw a beautiful woman with a child and a twenty-year-old kid today, come forward and give us the information. The Ryes will reward you greatly. Otherwise, you might just end up like him!” Damien ordered, his voice boomed with dominance.

“Hmph! Someone come help me pluck out his hamstrings!”

“Stop it!”

Chapter 291

A shout broke through the silence of the crowd.

Damien’s goons stopped when they were just about to beat up the taxi driver.

The crowd immediately looked towards the direction of where the shout came from.

It was Gerald.

While standing here alone and seeing the taxi driver refusing to give up his information even though he was beaten up to the brink of death, Gerald felt a sense of gratitude towards him.

Now, not only was he unconscious, but his family was also dragged into this mess, and he was about to have his tendons plucked and severed by Damien's goons.

Even if Gerald was inhumane, he would still stand up against this violence!

Gerald walked through the crowd.

"I'm the one you're looking for, so why are you torturing the driver?"

Gerald glared at Damien, stone cold.

"Ha! Brat, I sure as hell found you, it seems that my gut was right!"

Damien smiled cynically the moment he saw Gerald.'

Earlier, Damien ordered his men to barge into Wynn Thornton's house so they could capture Gerald and Wynn.

He was bound to teach the two a good lesson.

But at that moment, a taxi suddenly accelerated and drove away.

It drew some attention, especially from Damien Rye, who glanced twice towards the taxi and did not think much of it.

He thought to himself, even if Wynn wanted to take the kid on the run, she still had to drive, but her car was still parked downstairs.

What followed next was when his own men rushed down and reported that there was no one home anymore!

Damien Rye immediately put the pieces together!

Since it was kind of a last-minute thing, he temporarily borrowed his friend's goons from the nearest street to go after them. It was only just a short five or six minutes, so where could Wynn and her child run to?

Shoot!

F*ck, they must be in that taxi!

He immediately picked out a shop's surveillance camera and retrieved the taxi's license plate info and other details.

Then, he had his goons tail the taxi.

The driver turned out to be quite insensible and did not cooperate with them at first.

Which they forced him to only lead them to this place.

But then, he still refused to give up their location.

What the driver had in mind was quite simple. He wanted no part of their business.

He did not want to go against his own conscience to betray others.

He figured that he would let Damien and his goons beat him up, then they would leave him alone.

Hence, he clenched his jaws and withstood to the beatings. This way, Damien might even believe him.

As a result, the driver misjudged Damien Rye. There was no way Damien would fall for it that easily.

Which all led to what was happening now.

But for now, it did not matter to Damien anymore, since the brat he was looking for came out on his own.

“Tell me kid, where did Wynn go? Hm... but of course, it doesn’t matter whether you say it or not, because I’m going to teach you an unforgettable lesson later!”

Damien sneered.

“Damien Rye, I know you. You’re from the Rye family, but you do have to give some face to Mayberry International Inc, right? Just for your information, Zack Lyle and his men will be here in less than ten minutes!”

Truth to be told, Gerald started to panic too.

It would not be worth it to be beaten half to death by an *sshole like Damien just like that!

If he was to say he was Gerald Crawford, Damien would not believe it.

He could only mention Zack Lyle.

And when Damien heard of his name, his entire body shook with fear.

Back in Mayberry, Zack Lyle was on par with his own cousin, Henry Rye.

Zack was a business tycoon, and as for his own cousin, he had to rely on the power accumulated by his family through generations and generations in Mayberry, but yet he was still barely equal to Zack.

Now, the ruthless Michael Zeke and the people from Mayberry International Inc. were on their way.

Rumor has it that Michael Zeke was very powerful.

Therefore, it would be a lie for an asset like Damien who lived under the shadow of his cousin, to be unafraid when he heard of their names.

“Boss, don’t listen to this kid. Why would Mr Lyle come to a place like this!”

Immediately, one of his men tried to persuade him.

“Crap, of course I know that!” Damien cursed. “B*stard, you tried to scare me with Mr Lyle, I’ve seen this kind of trick too many times! Die! Go and get him!”

Damien waved his hand fiercely.

His group of bodyguards rushed at Gerald. The scene was even more frightening to the surrounding onlookers.

“Oh my, this kid will probably end up even worse than the driver this time!”

Chapter 292

“Agreed. I guess he was scared out of his wits, that’s why he brought up Zack Lyle’s name, but why didn’t he say he’s Gerald Crawford?”

“Young people these days, they love messing around. Don’t they know that there are some people who cannot be messed with at all?”

The surrounding onlookers shook their heads and sighed.

But none of them dared to come out and do justice. They did not even dare to videotape the entire scene when the ruthless Damien Rye was around.

Gerald was being held down by a few bodyguards.

“Hahaha, hold his head down tightly. I’m going to bash his head into a bleeding pulp!”

Damien picked up a stick. He held the stick up high, ready to swing and smash.

Buzz!

Suddenly, more than thirty luxury cars came whizzing by.

A car took a sharp brake and swung its tail directly at the onlookers.

Then, a team of black-suited bodyguards came down from the cars.

The atmosphere was tense.

Two extremely agile bodyguards dashed speedily towards the scene, and with three strikes, they managed to wrestle Damien and forced him on the ground.

“Don’t you dare mess with me, do you guys know who I am? I’m Damien f*cking Rye, cousin of Henry Rye of the Rye Group, so don’t you dare touch me!”

Damien felt that this was something out of the ordinary as he felt the strength of the bodyguards.

Feeling things were getting helpless at his end, he hurriedly begged for mercy.

“Hmph, you’re lucky that I came earlier, otherwise not only will Damien die, but also me!”

Zack Lyle came trotting towards the scene.

He kicked Damien Rye right at his face.

Fresh blood spewed out of his mouth.

As soon as Zack heard that Gerald was in trouble, he immediately dropped all his work aside and brought his men over to resolve the situation.

Naturally, there were people coming over to find out what was going on, only then did they find out that someone was after Gerald again.

So, Zack immediately rushed to the scene, only to find out that he was almost too late!

If that stick smashed against his head.

Things would not go well for Gerald.

Even though Damien was from the Rye family, both Zack Lyle and Damien Rye would not survive the consequences either. Only a number of people in America knew about the strength of the Crawfords, and Zack was one of them.

It would be a lie if he said he was not afraid of them.

“Mr Crawford, are you alright?”

After beating up Damien Rye, Zack helped Gerald up tenderly.

“What? Mr Lyle, he’s Mr Crawford? The Crawford of Mayberry?”

Damien panicked.

He was also confused.

He was surprised that Zack would even come here, and even more shocked when Gerald was actually Gerald Crawford!

“Whew! How can you not recognize Gerald Crawford of the Crawford family...Bang!”

Before he could even finish speaking, Zack picked up the stick on the ground and smashed it towards Damien’s head.

The swing was so forceful to the point Damien’s eyes almost turned white.

“Mr Lyle... please, I’m the cousin of Henry Rye, could you please give him some face and spare me...”

“Spare you? Do you really think things are this simple?”

Then, another luxury car came whizzing. This time, more help came and the entire street was completely blocked.

Michael Zeke had brought more men over.

...

“Holy sh*t! Lilian, Sharon! Can the both of you please run quicker, something major is happening over at Scothow Elementary School! F*ck! There are sixty to seventy luxury cars blocking the entire street!”

At that moment, many people on the street ran towards Scothow Elementary School upon hearing the news. They wanted to see what was happening there.

It was an extraordinary scene which they had never seen before. Sixty to seventy Rolls Royce Phantoms blocked the road, which was simply awesome!

Hayward Davies and the others were even more curious.

They immediately ran ahead of the others.

“What the hell happened?”

“I don’t know, I heard that a kid was beaten up, and then Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke from Mayberry came here. I also heard that quite a few commerce leaders and Mayberry’s higher ups are here. Just the bodyguards, they’re almost a hundred of them surrounding the scene!”

Hayward shouted excitedly.

“Holy sh*t!” Sharon Leslie and Lilian Cole were even more excited now. All of them rushed towards the scene...

Chapter 293

The place was getting more and more crowded.

Damien Rye was also getting more dumbfounded.

He was the one who ordered his men to go after Gerald, and as a result, almost half of Mayberry, be it the military, or government officials, or even the business higher-ups came here instead.

Even his very own cousin, Henry Rye was at the scene. He was deeply embarrassed.

On the other hand, Gerald could not stay any longer after being surrounded by so many people.

If he stayed, his identity would definitely be exposed.

Moreover, the driver was still unconscious and no one was taking care of him. He approached the group of bodyguards and then instructed Flynn Lexington, who had just arrived, to do something about it.

They immediately drove the car, bypassing the crowd, and sent the driver to the hospital.

As for the rest of the matter, Gerald believed that Flynn would take care of it.

“Damn, they’re all really here!”

Hayward and the others finally managed to squeeze through the crowd after a lot of effort.

Seeing the spectacle in front of them, they were simply gobsmacked.

Lilian and Sharon’s jaws fell wide open.

“Isn’t that Flynn Lexington?”

Hayward immediately spotted Flynn who was standing majestically in the center.

He asked obnoxiously.

“Huh? How do you know big shots like Flynn Lexington?”

Lilian and Sharon were now even more amazed by Hayward.

“Mhmm, well, do you remember that time we went to Yorknorth Mountain for a picnic. In fact, that afternoon, Gerald Crawford from Mayberry came to our village with Mr Flexington and signed a series of contracts!”

“Hehe, my father is the accountant for our village, and he was also appointed as the head accountant of the Yorknorth Mountain Village Development project, so he has to deal with Mr Lexington. Didn’t I mention that I went to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment last week? I know you wouldn’t believe it but my dad really took me there. My dad even asked me to have a toast with Mr Lexington!”

Since this project was Gerald’s first development project, Flynn paid very much attention to it, and he had to entertain everyone involved in it.

“That’s unbelievable! Even if you beat me to death I still wouldn’t believe that you went to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment!”

The two girls were quite jealous and envious of him.

“Oh, still taking me for a bragger, huh?”

Hayward raised his eyebrows.

“Are you done bragging little brat?”

“Damn, this kid really likes to pretend eh? As soon as there’s a big scene, they act next to each other as if they know what’s going on or they know the big shots. Drop the act brat.”

“That’s right, what’s the point of pretending. Go there and say hello if you’ve got the balls.”

Before Lilian and Sharon could question him.

Few onlookers on the side scowled at Hayward.

“Then you’ll just have to wait and see!”

Hayward did not say much. With both of his hands in his pocket, he walked up amidst the surprised gazes of the crowd.

“Hello Mr Lexington, I didn’t expect to run into you here!”

Hayward greeted with a slightly constrained expression.

Flynn was stunned at first, then he scanned Hayward up and down, “You are?”

“My father is Quashawn Davies, nicknamed Davy Baton, an accountant from Yorknorth Mountain Village. We met you last week!”

Hayward was nervous and afraid that Flynn Lexington would forget about him.

“Ah I remember now, you’re Little Davy. There’s nothing else here now, don’t pry. You better leave here early and return home!”

As soon as Flynn heard about Yorknorth village, he paid a considerable amount of attention to him and shook his hands.

He told Hayward to leave the scene quickly.

“Oh my god, oh my god! Sharon look, Flynn Lexington really knows Hayward!”

Lillain was completely excited.

If only she could shout, she would've totally done it.

“Uh-huh!”

And while Sharon was shocked, she also stared at Hayward, impressed.

At that very moment, Sharon felt as though Hayward was so incredibly handsome that she felt all those other dashing men she had seen before were no match for him!

Chapter 294

Hayward had returned to the crowd with glee as the crowd looked at him with awe-filled eyes.

“Alright, Mr Lexington just told me that we shouldn't be staying here, something big might happen later, so I think we'd better retreat first!”

Hayward smiled.

“Yeah, yeah, anything you say Hayward!”

The crowd nodded and then left in a hurry. The embarrassment that Hayward felt after being proven wrong by Gerald earlier, all vanished at that point.

Compared to Hayward, Gerald could not even be considered humane.

Speaking about Gerald...

He had already sent the good-willed driver to the hospital.

As for the matter which he informed Flynn Lexington about, he told him to look after the driver's family and sent over a sum of money.

To show his gratitude.

As for Queta's family, Gerald was thinking of going back after Flynn had completely settled the matter.

Just as Gerald was struggling to decide about where to head next.

Suddenly, he saw someone in the class group chat tagging all the members.

It was Cassandra McGregor.

"The entire class must gather at the university's Student Entrepreneurship Base, Block B, at three o'clock in the afternoon. Be there or be square!"

Gerald was stunned. What were they going to do at the Entrepreneur Base?

Just as he was wondering to himself, he received a call from Harper Sullivan.

"Gerald, where are you? Have you read the class news?"

"I read it! By the way, what's this all about?"

Gerald asked.

"F*ck, Felicity is really incredible. Didn't City Live just get upgraded to Exceptional Live? Now that Felicity is under the support of Exceptional Channel, she can maintain her level as a reputable anchor. She has started her own business and owns her own studio. Since tomorrow is the open celebration, why don't we head there this afternoon to see what we can help with!"

“Ugh, we still have no idea what to do after our graduation. And look at Felicity, she owns a company now!” Harper sighed.

Gerald remained silent and smiled.

You could say that Felicity worked hard to feed and raise herself to this point. At this moment, she was considered the most influential among the other classmates, and rumor had it that she was earning around 15,000 dollars per month.

That was a lot of money.

As for Harper and the rest, Gerald would never forget them, and there will be plenty of opportunities for them in the future.

But as there were many troubling matters at hand, Gerald was unwilling to attend the meeting.

But since the entire class was going, it would not seem polite if he did not turn up.

“Fine, then let’s meet at the Entrepreneur Base!

Once the call ended, he handed the car to his bodyguard and took a taxi.

By the time he arrived at the place, he was an hour late.

“Gerald, what took you so long? Luckily, you’re not the latest one, haha!”

Harper patted Gerald on the shoulder.

“Something was up, that’s why I’m late. Right, why are all of you still outside? Isn’t it three o’clock, damn, why isn’t the door open yet? Where’s Felicity?”

Gerald looked at the base's entrance, where the door to a separate studio was still locked.

Then he asked.

"Huh, now that she's a famous, reputable news anchor, us classmates are just hanging outside to wait. We're still waiting for Felicity to arrive!"

Harper commented sourly.

They were all from the same class and had the same starting point, but Felicity had become a money-making internet celebrity overnight, which made the other classmates somewhat jealous.

"Felicity is here!"

Suddenly, one of the classmates shouted.

Then, Felicity was seen coming out from a Ferrari sports car. A few boys who were loitering around immediately gathered around her to take pictures of her. They were also hoping to get the chance to greet her.

In the end, Felicity did not even bother. With her shades on and the protection of her bodyguards, she walked straight towards the Entrepreneur Base.

While looking at Felicity, who was not the same as before, his eyes slightly flickered...

Chapter 295

The way Felicity dressed herself up today was not the same as how she used to. She used to dress like a goddess to give off a flirtatious charm, but now her dressing seemed more mature and elegant.

Frankly speaking, as Felicity was already very beautiful to begin with, she looked even more attractive now.

Gerald was awestruck.

As for Felicity, she did not expect her career to be so successful.

Sometimes, it really was just a matter of opportunity.

If it was not for Ordinary Man, she might have still stayed as a small, anonymous, live-streamer.

But now, such a big transformation has taken place in just a matter of a few months.

The feeling of being admired by many was simply amazing.

Moreover, once people had achieved certain heights, their personalities would also somehow change. Felicity was much more aloof and colder than before.

In the past, when she saw fans greeting her, Felicity would greet them with a smile. Now, she ignored them.

She opened the door to let the students in.

Felicity crossed her arms. "Is everyone here yet? If so, Blondie will assign the work to everyone. Today, be sure to help me clean out the studio, I can't delay tomorrow's opening. And by the way, I'll treat everyone tonight for dinner at Emperor Karaoke Bar, you can order anything you want to eat or drink!"

"Yay!"

The crowd shouted with excitement.

Felicity beamed with pride at the moment.

It made some people jealous.

It was normal for people to feel proud. Since Ordinary Man had bought the entire channel just for her, and who else had this much good luck?

Their jealousy towards her was bearable and not to the point of hatred.

Plus, the crowd had always liked to party.

Especially in a place like Mayberry Commercial Street.

When they heard that they would be treated to dinner at Emperor Karaoke Bar, of course the crowd would be excited.

Blondie was as excited as a dog wagging its tail.

The guy was quite fond of taking advantage of the situation. Now that he was sticking by Felicity, his position in the class had been promoted to second in command.

It was also true that Blondie was very attentive when he worked for Felicity, as if he was handling his own family-owned business.

He assigned the work in a well-organized manner.

There were a handful of students who did not want to work for Felicity, but as that would be quite disrespectful and it was not worth offending Felicity like that, hence they cooperated.

“F*ck, why did I forget the toilet! I need to find someone to clean the toilet!”

After all the work was distributed, Blondie scratched his head and frowned.

“Huh? Blondie, there’s no need for us to clean the toilet! Scrubbing the floor is just fine!”

Few boys in the class were afraid of being chosen to clean the toilet.

They hurriedly gave Blondie a cigarette.

Blondie cheerfully took it. He did not want to offend anyone from the class, but there was one person that he did not bother about.

“Gerald, how about you do the job. You no longer have to clean up windows, just handle the toilet. That place is a loner’s heaven. I’ll check in after you finish cleaning it up, haha!”

Blondie pointed at Gerald who was cleaning with a rag.

“Pfft!” The classmates burst into laughter.

“Yeah, Gerald will do the job just fine, he cleans up better than we do, so it’s perfect to leave the toilet to him!”

“Hmm, Gerald is indeed the perfect candidate!”

The students all spoke in unison.

On the other hand, Gerald did not want to clean the windows for Felicity. F*ck, she opened up her business and asked them to work for her, where is the logic?

Harper and the others did not say anything, and Gerald was not the kind of person who would pick a fight after all.

They might as well just do it.

Now, it was obvious that Blondie was deliberately trying to bully him.

He did not want to offend the other students, but the only person he was not afraid to offend was Gerald. That just showed that Blondie was definitely looking down on him.

Gerald wanted to refuse.

“What’re you still waiting for? I told you to clean up the toilet, and you do as I say, or else you won’t get to eat tonight! Hahaha!”

The female classmates who had been following Felicity also mocked Gerald alongside Blondie.

“What the hell is this, you want Gerald to clean the toilet for you guys?”

At that instance, Benjamin Langdon yelled at them as he smacked the rag on the ground.

Ever since the last time Gerald and Harper helped him, Benjamin had regarded the two as brothers who were more important than his own life.

Chapter 296

Benjamin and Harper were not too sure about Gerald’s strength. They could not help but feel that he was actually very powerful.

These people were obviously attempting to stir up trouble.

Naturally, they felt unhappy and reluctant when they saw everyone mocking Gerald.

“Oh, Benjamin, and Harper, what is the matter? It’s the opening day of Felicity’s studio. Are you both going to cause trouble instead of helping out?”

The female classmate sneered as she turned a cold shoulder.

“You!”

“Forget it, Benjamin, Harper. Don’t worry. I will just do it!”

Gerald replied with a wry smile on his face, not wanting Benjamin and Harper to offend them because of this trivial matter.

It wasn’t worth to slap them in the face by revealing his identity now. Gerald felt the method only too vulgar.

What would he be trying to prove?

Hah!

It was why he would rather turn the big problems into small ones and the small ones into no issues at all. It was just a trivial matter after all.

Gerald went to clean the washroom after that.

As for Felicity, she only glanced at them slightly when the conflict almost took place.

However, when Gerald passed her, she didn't even dare lift her eyes to look at him.

And just like that, Gerald ended up cleaning the washroom.

The people outside continued enjoying themselves, whereas Gerald quietly cleaned the washroom by himself.

Suddenly, Zack called Gerald, saying that Damien had already been settled and that all his limbs were broken.. He would probably have to spend the next few months in bed. That said, Damien didn't dare tell Henry about this.

Why?

It was because Zack had evidence that Damien had been stealing money from his cousin's company for years.

Anyway, he would not be able to cause any trouble at all for the time being.

He heaved a big sigh as he told Wynn about it.

Naturally, he didn't tell her that he was the one who had helped, simply saying that Rye Group had a confrontation with Mayberry International Inc. After that, someone took care of Damien, and he told Wynn that she could put her mind at ease.

After that, Zack just ended the call.

All of a sudden, the door to the washroom was pushed open.

Gerald saw Felicity walking into the washroom with a cold expression on her face.

"I asked you. Are you sick? Have you had enough? I already told you that I won't be seeing you! Why would I meet you? Who do you think you are?"

"Hahaha! Thought you were a big shot, huh? All you gave me was 12 or 13,000 dollars right? Did you really think that you could act like a big shot just because of that? Why don't you give me your bank account now? I will transfer the money back to you now. I will transfer 15,000 dollars to you right away,

so you disappear and never ever show up again. Who has ever heard 'Jersey' on Exceptional Live anyway? Get lost!"

Felicity hung up the phone angrily.

The female classmate who had been hanging around Felicity came into the washroom. Her name was Yvonne and she was rather disgusting and sickening.

"Felicity, is that Jersey harassing you again?" asked Yvonne.

"Yes! Yes! He even said that he would come to the university to pick me up so I could accompany him for a drink. Who does he think he is?" replied Felicity smugly.

Gerald, who was cleaning the washroom at that time couldn't help but speak up. "Jersey? Isn't that the rich dude who's always in your broadcast room? Hasn't he been paying a lot of attention to you all this while? Didn't he give you lots of gifts during your last competition? Not to mention the number of red envelopes he's been giving you in private."

.

Gerald had some recollection about who Jersey was. Felicity only had two big shots behind her back all this while. The first was him and the second was this dude called Jersey.

Gerald felt that Jersey definitely liked Felicity more than he did. This was because she had told him herself on WeChat that Jersey would often pursue her and send her many red envelopes, although she refused to accept it.

She even took screenshots and sent it to Gerald as proof. Why?

Was it because she wanted to prove to Gerald that she wasn't interested in other men?

Nonetheless, Gerald felt Felicity crossed the line a little when he heard her scolding Jersey like that, so he couldn't stop himself from speaking up.

“So, what? That person can't even reflect on himself! All he keeps trying to do is ask Felicity out. Don't you think he deserves the scolding? By the way, Gerald, how do you know everything that happens in Felicity's live broadcast room? Don't tell me a pathetic jerk like you actually watch her live broadcasts too?” Yvonne asked in surprise.

Even Felicity was looking at Gerald.

Of course, she wasn't surprised that he actually watched her live broadcast. She wasn't even surprised that he was criticizing and rebuking her.

She was only surprised by his last sentence.

“How did you know that Jersey sent me red envelopes in private?” asked Felicity as she stared at Gerald.

Chapter 297

It was only natural that Felicity was surprised.

Fuck! She had never mentioned this matter to her roommates before. So, how did Gerald find out about the red envelope Jersey sent to her in private?

She did not say anything to anyone, aside from Brother Ordinary Man.

“Ahhh?”

Gerald panicked for a moment when faced with Felicity's question.

He really didn't understand how Felicity could have been that cruel, and as a result, he couldn't stop himself from interfering, merely blurting out everything that was on his mind.

Then, he suddenly remembered that Felicity told him all these on his second WeChat account.

“Well... when I was watching your live broadcast one night, I saw Jersey talking to you about some red envelopes that he sent in private. So, at that time, I thought he must have been sending them to you in private!”

Gerald hastily made up some gibberish.

Felicity, nonetheless, felt a little more relieved.

Yvonne, who was standing aside, sneered.

“Hahaha! Gerald, I really did not expect you to be so pathetic. To think that you actually watch Felicity’s live broadcast every night too. To be honest, do you do any bad and inappropriate things when you are watching Felicity on her live broadcast?” she asked with a lascivious smile.

Felicity was very generous when it came to this, but now, she stared at Gerald with the coldest of eyes.

She really didn’t expect Gerald to be a fan of hers too.

“I didn’t do that!” Gerald replied truthfully.

Although he had thought about it more than once, he had never actually done anything like that before.

“Hmph. You better not! Our Felicity is a goddess that you can never get close to anyway!” replied Yvonne as she tried to flatter Felicity.

“Alright, then. Go see if everyone has finished cleaning outside. Gerald, you can continue cleaning up.”

Felicity then turned around and left immediately.

Gerald blew out a breath of relief.

It had been so risky just now, almost impossible to explain himself.

After pondering for a while, Gerald took out his cell phone and logged into his second WeChat account.

He sent a text message to Felicity.

In general, he said that he had been watching her live broadcast lately and felt she'd changed a lot. Feeling she was no longer the same person she used to be, he also mentioned she no longer showed the same enthusiasm toward her fans.

He thought her show was getting boring, and it seemed as though he would have to watch some other beautiful anchors in the future.

It was all in the name of scaring her a little.

After all, he was the one who brought her up and made her famous, and he knew all too well that her current vicious attitude would only cause harm sooner or later. Gerald felt that he had to give her a warning and reminder in advance.

He didn't want her to take the wrong path.

After they were done cleaning, Felicity called for a few cars as everyone prepared to head over to Emperor Karaoke Bar.

The group came out and waited outside.

"Felicity, look! Brother Ordinary Man sent you a message!"

Yvonne ran out with Felicity's cell phone in her hand.

"Huh? When did he send me that?"

"Four minutes ago! I didn't hear it!" apologized Yvonne.

"Damn it! I asked you to hold onto my cell phone; you can check if I'm getting any messages on WeChat. It means twenty-four hours a day! Why did you delay four minutes?"

When Felicity heard this, she became very anxious.

"Well, Felicity... when everyone was preparing to leave just now, I saw that a few places hadn't been cleaned up yet. Gerald was about to leave, but I made him clean it up again. When I finally saw that Brother Ordinary Man sent you a message, four minutes had already passed!" replied Yvonne, a hint of fear spreading over her face.

"It's okay. I will just reply to Brother Ordinary Man's message now..."

After taking a look at the content of Brother Ordinary Man's message, Felicity was stupefied.

She felt like crying.

"Felicity, what's wrong?" Yvonne asked.

"I think Brother Ordinary Man doesn't love me anymore. He said I've changed. Have I really changed, Yvonne? Have I changed in any way? Am I no longer the Felicity that he used to love?"

Felicity started crying.

She felt hopelessly anxious.

Compared to everyone else, Felicity was more concerned about Brother Ordinary Man's perception of her.

Chapter 298

"Felicity, don't be nervous. Explain yourself to Ordinary Man immediately!"

Yvonne advised her.

"Which car should I get into?"

At that moment, Gerald stepped outside once he was done with his work.

He saw that there were many cars parked in front of him. He could not help but ask Yvonne since she was the one who asked him to stay for the clean-up.

'Does she want me to hail a taxi back just like the last time?'

"You can just get into any car you want. Don't you notice that Felicity is feeling troubled? You're just so dim-witted, good-for-nothing!"

Yvonne scolded him impatiently.

"Yvonne, don't bother him. Help me think of a way to reply Ordinary Man's message quickly!"

Felicity said anxiously.

As they were discussing, Felicity then thought of a response. She then drafted the reply.

The sound of a bell was heard.

In that instance, a sharp notification tone ringed and Felicity caught it faintly. It seemed to come from a student's phone from the car beside them.

It stunned Felicity.

"Oh gosh! What's going on? Yvonne, did you hear that?"

"What?"

"I don't know whether it's just a coincidence. You know what? When I sent a message just now, I heard a notification ringtone from one of the cars, receiving a message."

Felicity thought, 'It doesn't seem like a coincidence.'

'Does it mean that Ordinary Man is one of my classmates?

'Who could he be?'

Felicity became anxious.

"I didn't hear that. Besides, there are so many similar notification ringtones. Felicity, aren't you overthinking?"

Yvonne asked, puzzled.

Felicity tried to listen, and what Yvonne said was true indeed. There were many students who received messages at the same time.

She then nodded in disappointment.

'Yes, I'm always so anxious when it comes to Ordinary Man. Even now, I've become so sensitive and nervous about him.'

"Maybe I was overthinking. Let's go!"

Felicity said dispiritedly, as she noticed that Ordinary Man did not reply. She immediately appeared listless.

At the same time, Gerald who was in the car, wiped away the sweat that formed around his forehead anxiously. He quickly logged out of his other account on social media.

'Oh my god! That was a close call!'

Gerald thought to himself.

At the Emperor Karaoke Bar. Gerald was quite familiar with that place.

Felicity was considerably quite capable and wealthy given that she could book such a huge private room directly. It was more than sufficient to fit around sixty people.

The classmates gathered there just like they were having a party, and it was rather lively and noisy.

At first, most of them were too embarrassed to sing in front of everyone. But shortly after warming up, they started to get into the mood and started singing vehemently.

Although their singing wasn't melodious or in key, they just wanted to enjoy themselves.

Gerald was drinking beer with Harper and the others.

"God d*mn it! What do you mean? Are you crazy?"

Suddenly, Felicity shouted into her phone and it startled everyone.

Everyone soon fell into silence.

At the same time, somebody switched off the music too.

“What’s wrong, Felicity?”

Blondie and the others immediately asked with concern.

“Blondie, I’m threatened by Jake. I don’t know where he got my personal photos, and he even knows that I’m at the Emperor Karaoke Bar now. He said that he’s coming for me. F*ck! He’s mad! Fine, let him come. I just want to see what he’s up to!”

Felicity lashed out nervously.

“Fine, let him come. There are a lot of us here!”

Blondie raised his beer and shouted.

“Felicity, please calm down. Just think about it. Jake is a local here in Mayberry. He was able to get your personal photos and even knows that you’re here. He must have some ways to dig into it. Please calm yourself down and let’s tackle this issue. Otherwise, why don’t you ask for help from your seniors from Exceptional Live and tell them about it?”

As Naomi was drinking beer with Gerald, she then reminded Felicity about the idea.

Felicity sneered. “I don’t care. I’m going to lose my sanity like this! He said that he wants to stop me from leaving, and he claimed that he’s going to hire somebody to rape me. D*mn it! Who the hell does he think he is? I want him to know! I’m not someone to be messed with easily!”

Felicity sputtered.

Chapter 299

“Felicity, if that’s the case, go and call up your seniors from your company immediately. And contact Ordinary Man quickly too!”

One of the girls said nervously.

Since she was a girl, she became rather nervous hearing that somebody else was coming, looking for trouble and to pick a fight.

Felicity sniggered. “What should I be afraid of? I need nobody. If Jake dares to come to Emperor Karaoke Bar for me, I’ll make him pay a heavy price for it. We’ve got a close friend, and even the CEO here is afraid of that friend of ours. This is our territory!”

Felicity planted her arms at her waist firmly and burst into laughter.

Gerald was stunned. ‘Oh gosh! Is my identity exposed?’

They were puzzled. “Who is that?”

When they learned that they had a friend like that, Yvonne and the others became quite curious.

Felicity boldly replied. “Let’s not talk about it anymore. I just want you to know that you’ve got nothing to be afraid of. I’m here to take care of the situation. Let’s just enjoy ourselves!”

Blondie and the others then held up their wine glasses and gulped the wine down excitedly.

The scene then grew increasingly vibrant and noisy.

However, Gerald became quite nervous and worried.

Felicity was just too smug and arrogant.

Gerald regretted it slightly. He wondered if he should talk to Exceptional Live and ask them to censure her about it.

As he was deep in thought on the matter, he heard a bang all of a sudden.

The door of the private room was kicked wide open.

Soon after, a lot of people flocked the private room.

There were around thirty of them.

“What the hell are you doing?”

Blondie was stunned at first and then gained his sense as he shouted.

A few youths were then seen pulling Blondie’s hair. They then grabbed a bottle of beer and smashed it hard on his head directly. He immediately fell to the floor.

The girls soon started screaming.

“Don’t move!”

Some youths shouted ferociously.

Those girls had seen people getting into fights before but never have they witnessed such savage and cruel fights, and there were many of them.

They were ruthless and ferocious. They acted without any hesitation. Certainly, the girls were terrified.

“What are you doing? Don’t you know what place this is? Do you know who I am?”

Not only the girls, but even Felicity was terrified too.

No matter how smug and arrogant Felicity appeared, she was still scared deep inside.

She stood up immediately and answered back with a flushed face.

“Of course I know who the hell you are. You’re Felicity, and you’re an arrogant internet celebrity. Didn’t you ask me to come for you? Now that I’ve come, what do you think about it, Felicity? Don’t you want to have a drink with me given how I’ve supported you?”

A thirty-eight-year-old man who was slightly plump stepped forward and smirked coldly.

Amongst the lot, he was the only one who dressed up casually, decked in just a T-shirt.

His arms were also covered with dragon tattoos. He seemed quite a gangster.

“Are you Jake?”

After observing, it wasn’t difficult for Felicity to catch on who he was.

“How dare you come to Emperor Karaoke Bar for me! Just wait and see if I’ll hire somebody to deal with you!”

Felicity retorted, without showing any fear.

However, Jake was not afraid at all. He just smiled coldly and walked toward Felicity.

After that...

A loud smack was heard, and he slapped Felicity's face directly.

Felicity immediately stumbled on the sofa at the impact of the slap.

"F*ck you, b*tch! Don't you think so highly about yourself! At first, I spent some money to have fun with you just because you seem quite beautiful. But surprisingly, you don't even appreciate it. You looked down on me! There's no rush to get somebody to deal with me today. Let me teach you a hard lesson first!"

Jake sniggered coldly.

Chapter 300

At the same time, all of a sudden, the door swung side open.

"Miss Dunn, who were you referring to? Who dares to pick a fight here?"

They were the bodyguards who worked at Emperor Karaoke Bar. There were five of them, and they entered the private room with Yvonne.

Yvonne was quite a smart girl. When the others barged into the private room just now and got into a fight with Blondie, she sneaked away quietly and carefully as they were beating Blondie up.

As the room was dark and fights were ongoing, hence nobody bothered about Yvonne.

She then quickly hailed the bodyguards.

The bodyguards there seemed quite sturdy.

“Oh! It’s the CEO—Mr. Jotherell! Hello, Mr. Jotherell!”

Unexpectedly, the bodyguards were stunned the moment Jake turned around and looked at them.

“Who the hell is Mr. Jotherell? He’s the one who’s beating people up here!”

The minute Yvonne saw how the bodyguards reacted, she was stunned.

“What nonsense are you talking about? Does Mr. Jotherell have to trouble himself with beating you up? He’s the CEO from a listed company—Rye Group. Why would he trouble himself with such childish young people like you? We’re leaving now. Please don’t talk nonsense next time. If not, we’ll make you pay for it. Mr. Jotherell, we’ll leave you to your business!”

The bodyguards flashed him a polite smile before retreating from the scene.

In fact, the bodyguards were not afraid of Jake. But Flynn had ordered them to show some respect to the people from the Rye Group if they came to the Emperor Karaoke Bar.

They could not help it since Rye Group was infamous for its villainous and treacherous acts in Mayberry.

However, if Mayberry International Inc was going to stand against Rye Group, they were not afraid at all. But they needed to be courteous to each other.

So if some customers offended the people from Rye Group, and they came looking for trouble there, the bodyguards would just ignore them.

As Jake knew about his stand well, he knew where the line was not to cross.

But Felicity became quite nervous after listening to the bodyguards.

'D*mn it! The person who I despise the most is actually the CEO from Rye Group!

'No wonder he could look me up and obtain my personal details.'

Seeing that the bodyguards retreated in fear, Felicity's confidence plummeted.

"Felicity, what do you think? Do you want to have a drink with me now? I know that you want to call your seniors from Exceptional Live. Fine. Why don't you give it a try? By the way, just tell them my name, and see if they are even willing to give you a hand."

Jake smirked.

Felicity touched her flushed face and said, "Don't be smug here. Who told you that I'm calling my seniors? I'm going to call up someone else. I'll definitely make you pay for this until you cannot even leave unscathed!"

It was certainly useless to call her seniors, so she had no choice but to ask for someone else's help.

"Fine. Just make the call. I want to see how capable you are!"

Jake appeared like he was enjoying the show, eager to know what other tricks she could pull at.

Felicity made a call immediately and described the current situation to the person at the other end of the phone.

She then proudly folded her arms and glared at Jake.

Gerald sat at the corner, and brushed it off ignorantly, as if it had nothing to do with him. He was actually rather surprised to see that Felicity had quite good connections. There seemed like there was someone else who was also on her side besides him.

It was true indeed.

Soon enough, Gerald heard multiple footsteps of what seemed to be a large group of people outside the private room.

It was apparent that the large group was rushing toward the private room.

The door of the private room was opened again. A group of bodyguards in black barged in and faced Jake's subordinates ferociously.

Jake was caught by surprise.

He grew even more surprised to see the person who came in last with the group of bodyguards. "Mr. Lexington, you're..."

The person who entered the private room was none other than the manager of Emperor Karaoke Bar— Flynn.

"Mr. Jotherell, you're quite a man of reputation. Why look for trouble with a bunch of university students? Why not, let it go for my sake?" Flynn started walking towards Jake and flashed a faint smile.

'Of course. Since you've brought it up and we're at your place too. You're on their side. How could I say no?"

Jake glanced at the bodyguards and he did not dare to act recklessly.

"You've misunderstood, Mr. Jotherell. I'm not trying to protect Miss Nelson here, but one of my leaders does. She always protects her. Besides, she mentioned that everyone here is somewhat related to her. Hence, you cannot touch any of them!"

Flynn said.

“Oh? May I have the liberty to know who that is, given that you’re willing to act like this on her behalf?” Jake smiled politely and asked.

“It’s me! What seems to be the problem here?”

At that moment, a clear female voice could be heard. She then strutted into the private room, her high heels clicking.

Chapter 301

The moment that woman walked in, Gerald and everyone else immediately knew who Felicity’s patron was.

Cassandra McGregor!

“Counselor!” As shocked as everyone was, they greeted her warmly nevertheless.

This was a big deal! They’d only known Cassandra as a beauty queen with impossibly high standards, and never any boyfriends.

Who would’ve thought that she’d have something going on with a big-shot like Flynn Lexington?

Even more astounding was the reverence Flynn seemed to have for her.

It was truly befuddling!

Regarding the relationship between Felicity and Cassandra—it all started from that night, when Gerald rescued Cassandra from that newly opened bar.

That time, he’d sent her back with Flynn.

Whilst in the car Cassandra had discovered Gerald’s power bank which was left behind. With that giving her a heads up, she slowly started to realize that it might have been him behind her rescue.

Just as she headed back to get to the bottom of the matter, she ran into Felicity, who freshly came out after her latest recording.

It had startled Felicity too, seeing Cassandra step out from a Rolls Royce. She'd hurried over to ask if anything was the matter, and Cassandra had given her a brief rundown of the recent events. She also subtly mentioned about being the one to see about Mayberry affairs.

Since it was about Gerald, she'd then hurried back to ask about things.

All she got was what Flynn and Gerald had already arranged ahead of time, and it was enough for Cassandra to drop the matter.

However, that wasn't the end of it.

Some time during last week, Cassandra and Felicity had gone shopping for cosmetics.

They ran into a spot of trouble when some drunken old tycoons sought to have a bit of sport with them. A frightened Cassandra called Flynn immediately, and Flynn had rushed to the scene with a bunch of men to beat up the troublemakers.

What a thrill that had been for Cassandra. What more, it had garnered a new-found admiration from Felicity.

It felt really good to have someone powerful on your side!

And so, when this latest fiasco had happened today, Felicity had obviously called for Cassandra as soon as she could.

That was how things had ended up this way.

Sensing that Jake might yet have realized whom he was dealing with, Flynn leaned in and whispered a few things into his ear.

Color drained out of his face. He finally understood—this lady was not to be harassed by the likes of him!

Cassandra examined Felicity, and her eyes narrowed. “Did someone hit you? And you too, Blondie?”

Unbeknownst to Felicity, Cassandra had secretly been in contact with Ordinary Man. She owed a lot to Felicity for that.

“That’s right, Cassie!” Felicity huffed.

“Blast! Whoever did this... you go get him back!” Cassandra folded her arms.

Slap! Bam!

Felicity stepped up and smacked Jake right across his face. Rage flared in his eyes, but remembering what Flynn had just told him, he didn’t dare make so much as a peep.

As for Blondie, he smashed a beer bottle against the head of his assailant.

It felt good. Ahh, it felt good!

Those university students all thought so too.

There was nothing Jake could do about it either. Even if they broke his jaw and shoved him all his teeth, he’d still be owing them an apology. Even if they smeared a turd all over his shirt, he’d still have to lick it and call it delicious. That was how pathetic the position he was in at the moment.

Satisfied with how the situation had been resolved, Flynn took his leave.

Everything he'd done was for the sake of returning a favor with Gerald Crawford.

Yet he'd completely failed to notice that Gerald was sitting right there in the corner.

"Counselor, you're so awesome!" everyone cheered enthusiastically. Toasts were raised in her name.

Chapter 302

Even Harper Sullivan joined in the merry-making.

Gerald could hardly stay out of it. "A toast to Cassandra!" he announced, raising a glass.

"Oho, so you were here, Gerald? It's like you're always there whenever something's going on. I didn't spot you earlier—where were you at?" Although Cassandra still held little regard for Gerald, through sheer force of habit—nevertheless, she was no longer as cold to him as she used to be, considering he'd helped her out before, in his own way.

"Ahaha, are you asking about him, counselor?" Yvonne cut in. "He's been hiding in that corner the whole time! When Jake burst in here with all his guys, Blondie and the others stood up to them, but Gerald just sat there! Gosh, he's more helpless than us ladies!"

Earlier, when she'd slipped away, she also happened to pass by where Gerald was seated, and had noticed him there.

"That's right! Anyway, were you really expecting this guy to be any help in a fight?"

"Now, I'm sure Gerald would have stood along with everyone... it's just that his knees were too weak from fear, ahahaha!"

Several girls sniggered, their voices filled with mockery.

Cassandra watched as Gerald only shook his head and sighed helplessly. She sipped to his toast.

“I’m going to the washroom!” Deluged with insults, there was no way for Gerald to respond. Certainly, he’d been of no help at all today. His only option was to flee.

“Hahaha, he literally pissed himself!”

“Goodness me... I’d rather die than have a boyfriend like Gerald!”

“Pfft, and what girl would be interested in a guy like him?”

Annoyed, Felicity changed the subject. “Gosh, enough already about that guy! Oh, right—counselor, when I called you earlier this afternoon, you said you wouldn’t be free to hang out. Did you have something else going on?”

“Oh, I had an errand to run, things to buy and stuff. If it wasn’t because Flynn was busy himself as well, I’d have sent him along to watch over you girls. Sadly, that matter really took him a while to settle—in fact, half of Mayberry is in an uproar over it!”

“Oh? What happened?” Everyone's interest was piqued.

“How come I haven’t seen anything on the news?” someone exclaimed.

“Don’t be stupid. It’s too big to talk about in public. Flynn wouldn’t tell me any details either, but something seems to have happened at Scothow Elementary, and it’s got major players like Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke involved, as well as a bunch of other notable businessmen. They’ve sealed off the road outside the school, cordoned off by nearly a hundred cars!”

“My god!”

“No way!”

Everyone was in disbelief.

Meanwhile, Gerald was just leaving through the door. Overhearing this bit, he shook his head again. He had no clue what that was all about, either.

Some people you don't care about, but they get something good out of you anyway.

Some people you want to help, but end up harming instead.

It wasn't yet time to reveal his true status, and Gerald really, really didn't want that to become public knowledge in any event. Sometimes, this made things rather complicated and difficult.

It seemed that from now on, he ought to keep a low profile, and stay out of matters which didn't concern him!

He'd just mind his own business, and finish his studies quickly and quietly.

Just then, his handphone rang. It was Queta Smith calling.

He ducked into the washroom and took the call.

"Gerald, are you busy right now?"

"Not at all. What's up?"

"It's Yasmin," Queta whispered. "She said she's not feeling well again. I just checked her temperature—she's got a high fever. She needs to go to the hospital!"

Gerald knew that for her to call him directly meant that she really needed his help. She was probably tight on cash at the moment, otherwise she wouldn't be bringing this matter to him.

He'd have to help Queta find a better job soon. Rather than to give a man a fish... better to teach the man how to fish, right?

Worried for Yasmin, Gerald didn't dare delay any longer. Leaving with a quick goodbye, he drove over to fetch both girls to the hospital.

It was the middle of the night, but surprisingly there were quite a few people here to see the doctor. Holding Yasmin in his arms, Gerald lined up behind them.

Just as their turn was about to arrive, a woman suddenly stepped in front of him.

Chapter 303

A young woman suddenly cut right in front of them, without a word, displaying not the slightest bit of regard for others.

Gerald was not in the mood for this. "Miss, don't you find this a little rude?"

The woman ignored him.

"That's right! My teacher says you can't cut in a queue!" Yasmin exclaimed with a frown.

"Bah!" The woman turned around and snapped, "So I cut in front of you, so what? What can you do about it? All bark and no bite!"

One could see she was around twenty-one, with a fair complexion and a pretty face—and dressed in such a way as to leave little to the imagination.

However, her stuck-up attitude only pissed Gerald off to look at her.

"You're the one barking!" At the limits of his patience, he snapped off a harsh reply.

“What did you say to me? Just wait right here—I’ll have somebody cut you down to size!” Shrieking and swearing as though she’d suddenly gone mad, the woman was pulled away by several bystanders.

Finally, she left in a huff.

Well, that came out of nowhere. Brushing it off mind, Gerald got back in line.

“Sir, maybe you shouldn’t have done that. That woman seemed like trouble!” A pretty young nurse whispered this as she was ushering some patients in. “She was here earlier this afternoon to visit one of our patients—someone of note—and she came with a whole train of fancy cars! I wouldn’t underestimate her clout, you know? Hurry on in—and no more trouble!”

Clearly, she’d started it! Well, the nurse meant well... Gerald made no further remark.

“Let’s not fuss over it, Gerald,” Queta agreed. “We’ll just wrap it here and leave immediately!”

So Gerald brought Yasmin in to see the doctor. It turned out to be nothing alarming—just a common cold—and some medicine was prescribed.

Queta was visibly relieved, and they left the hospital together.

As they arrived at the entrance, glossy black cars suddenly rolled up, one after another... at least a dozen in total. A massive group of well-dressed people got out and headed inside.

When she saw the woman who emerged from the car in the middle, Queta quaked with fear. It was that woman who’d cut in line earlier, starting off a spat with Gerald.

Had she really returned to cause trouble for them?

Thank goodness they’d made it out of there in time.

“I only just heard about it. How’s Mr Rye? Is he still in the Intensive Care Unit?” A dashing young man asked.

The woman nodded. “Yeah. He’s suffered terrible bone fractures in all four limbs, and he’s still in the ICU ward—but thankfully his life is not in danger!”

“Blast! Who could be behind such savagery? I know... it must have been Mayberry.”

“Hey! Don’t talk about that here!” the guy snapped at her, causing her to shut her own mouth.

Gerald lingered nearby, easily within sight of them. Why did he do this?

Because he recognized that dashing young man.

Face still beaten up from that fiasco at the Emperor Karaoke Bar, it was none other than Jake!

Having overheard their discussion concerning a ‘Mr Rye’, he finally saw the picture now.

It was most likely the great Damien Rye himself. So that scoundrel had been admitted to this hospital.

It appeared that all these people—including that horrendous harpy—were from Rye Group.

Vroom, vroom! Then, in a rumbling storm of engines, another fleet of a dozen cars appeared.

One would naturally assume they were with Jake and company.

That wasn’t all of them. More cars continued to follow from behind.

It stood to reason. Rye Group, under the Rye family, had long encroached upon Mayberry territory. Their roots ran deep.

They were a fierce gang of thugs.

Damien Rye was guaranteed to have powerful backers. No matter how hard anyone tried to cover things up, the events of that afternoon were simply too great to hide.

Chapter 304

Word about this whole incident, with the maiming of Damien Rye, was guaranteed to get out.

The question was how Damien himself would spin it.

“Do you know them, Gerald?” Seeing all these powerful people gathering outside the hospital, Queta stood beside, feeling anxious.

“I know them; but they don’t know me.” Gerald smiled wryly. “They’re just here to visit somebody. Never mind about it!”

“That gave me a fright! I thought that woman had summoned a bunch of thugs!” Queta gave a long sigh of relief.

After one last look at them, Gerald turned to go. He drove Queta back to her place.

Zack Lyle had some dirt on Damien Rye, so the latter would probably hesitate to stir up further trouble.

Along the way, Gerald didn’t forget to bring up that other matter, concerning a change in employment for Queta.

“By the way, Queta... interested in changing jobs?” he asked with a smile.

If she wanted to, she could have her pick of any position in Mayberry International. It wasn’t out of the cards to just build a kindergarten for her, either.

“I have also been meaning to ask you about this...” Queta replied. “Today, Manager Thornton told me that they might be interested in investing in the kindergarten, and even providing me with training at Sunnydale University! I’ll be attending some Psychology lectures there as soon as tomorrow!”

“Oh? That’s great!” Gerald nodded.

Ah... at times the thoughtfulness of men is no match for the consideration of women.

Many universities held community classes for people who were already working a job, or who had never received a higher education themselves.

He’d actually had the same idea before—about getting Queta signed up for such classes—but he’d just never found the time.

Well, this was an agreeable turn of events. Sunnydale was on par with his own Mayberry University. Everyone said so.

Gerald wanted to show her his own sincerity, so he promised that whenever he was free, he’d come see her at Sunnydale.

After dropping her off, he finally returned to his room at almost ten-thirty.

It had been an exhausting day. He fell asleep right away.

Two days passed without any incidents. Gerald spent this time studying quietly in the library. Summer break would be coming soon—but before that, the term exams.

That same day, at around 10 a.m., Gerald was attempting model questions in the library.

Suddenly, a sweet fragrance wafted over from his side.

It was the smell of a woman.

Turning to look, Gerald found a tall girl taking the seat beside him.

Everyone knows what it's like inside a university library—particularly star students such as Gerald—research and revision were going on non-stop, and the place was packed to the brim.

Gerald had been occupying this spot since 5.30 in the morning.

It started to get a little crowded in there.

The girl was tall, slender, and statuesque, with skin as fair as porcelain. Long hair cascaded down to her waist. She was a serene, captivating beauty.

One could tell that it wouldn't have been her first choice to sit down next to some guy—but it was the only empty seat left.

This was compounded by how all the guys had been eyeing on her since she came in, causing her to feel terribly self-conscious. Gerald meanwhile was fully engrossed in his studies, which afforded her some small measure of reprieve.

Blushing faintly, she gave him a little nod and a smile, then sat down and opened her book.

Resting her head upon one hand, turning the pages with the other... she was a mesmerizing portrait to behold.

“Damn it, that babe went and sat over there!”

“Come on! I'm a hundred times better looking than that turd! Ah, I can't take this!”

Jealous cries arose from the local menfolk.

“Ah-choo!” Meanwhile, inhaling the scent of a woman elicited a great sneeze from Gerald.

Immediately realizing that it was her own perfume at fault here, the girl flushed bright red, and began edging her chair away from him.

But for Gerald, this unfortunate event was only the beginning.

He lowered his head to focus on his work.

Drip. Splat.

All of a sudden, his nose was on fire—and then blood began to trickle out from it, dripping onto the papers before him.

He needed a tissue, right now!

Fidgeting about anxiously, he saw that the girl had turned away from him, her head laid upon one hand with discretion. Her other hand, however, surreptitiously extended a pack of tissues his way.

Her face was similar to a sight of a wildfire, blazing red.

As for Gerald, right then he’d wish for nothing better than to find a hole to crawl into...

... and then maybe he’d just die there.

Chapter 305

Gerald couldn’t remain in the library a moment longer. Wiping the blood from his nose, he promptly fled the scene.

His life was over.

He couldn't even help himself! First off: That girl was simply fine as hell! What a body!

She was the sort of goddess that average guys weren't even allowed to dream about.

And that fragrance she'd been wearing... so intoxicating, his very nose had been aroused.

Sigh. A beauty of that caliber most likely came from a wealthy background.

What sort of ordinary man could win her attention?

Hold on! Wasn't he, himself, a wealthy fellow? Gah! How did he keep forgetting about this?

Gerald shook his head wryly.

He tried to peek into the library through a window—but by some strange coincidence, that girl had her head turned, and was presently looking out the very same window. She watched him curiously.

Their eyes met—and then she hurriedly dropped her gaze.

Gerald decided not to keep staring at her, either.

With a guilty little start, he remembered that he had Mila, now. He shouldn't be ogling at other chicks like this. Anyways, there would always be a pretty girl around the next corner—he couldn't very well go falling for each and every one of them!

That wasn't the way of Gerald Crawford, no.

Fighting to suppress the surging tides of his heart, he realized that he wouldn't be able to concentrate on his revision like this.

It was almost noon. He'd made a date with Queta to meet her for lunch at Sunnydale University, where she'd been taking professional courses the past couple of days. He hadn't gone to see her there yet.

He drove over to Sunnydale which, like Mayberry University, was located in the Mayberry University District—further proof of its equivalent prestige.

Fortunately, this meant that the two campuses weren't located too far apart. It took him roughly twenty minutes to get over there.

"Gerald!" Having received his call, Queta was already waiting at the gates.

They exchanged a few pleasantries upon meeting each other again.

"Hop in, let's go eat!" Gerald gave her a smile.

"No need for that, Gerald. Let it be my treat today!" Queta suddenly replied, with an air of mystery.

"Why this, all of a sudden?"

"Well... today's my birthday, you see." Queta's voice fell to a whisper. "I used to have no friends or family—no one to celebrate my birthday with. Now I have you. You've helped me with so much... this is the least I could do for you!"

"It's just that... Gerald, is the cafeteria okay with you?"

At the end of the day, Gerald Crawford was a rich young heir. Although Queta already knew he wouldn't cause a fuss over this, she felt compelled to ask nonetheless.

Gerald scratched his head. "Now I see why you called to ask me out yesterday... So today was your birthday! You should have said something—I don't even have a gift ready!"

“I don’t need one. Just share a meal with me!”

Since Queta put it that way, there was nothing more Gerald could add. Still, it was her birthday—he couldn’t actually allow her to pay today... and if this was really her first time ever celebrating it, they should be doing more than this.

As such, Gerald chose instead to go to Surati, a Western-styled restaurant in Sunnydale campus. Back when he used to run with Aiden Baker and his lot, he’d often hear about those big spenders going on about this joint.

It was a nice enough place. Pretty expensive, obviously, but since Gerald had asked to come here, Queta voiced no objections, and followed him inside.

Classic symphonies greeted them. At this hour of the day, there were already quite a few patrons within—all finely dressed kids from families rolling in dough.

Chapter 306

Queta and Gerald walked in, dressed plainly.

The sight of them elicited disdainful scowls from many of the women in the restaurant.

“Isn’t that Queta Smith? She came here, to Surati?”

Next, a group of four or five girls and guys entered as well. As they walked past the table where Gerald and Queta were seated, some of them stopped in their tracks to stare at Queta in surprise. A playful spark flitted through those eyes.

“Linda...oh, hey, everybody...” Queta blushed as she greeted them, setting her food down and clutching her dress nervously.

Linda was fetchingly made-up and wore a form-fitting little black dress that only barely covered her butt.

Her female friends were clad in similarly risqué fashions, while the guys had piercings which announced their considerable social statuses.

It should be fair to assume that these were Queta's classmates.

They had such teacher training courses at Gerald's university too. You get all sorts in there.

Some were rich brats who'd failed to qualify for other courses. Some were small-business entrepreneurs. Some were regular working stiff.

The rich brats attended classes mainly to pick up chicks.

The pretty young things there were hoping to find a sugar daddy.

The rest were like Queta—genuinely here to learn something.

"Hahaha... surely you can't afford this place, Queta?" Linda hugged her shoulders, grinning at Queta with delight. Clearly, putting Queta down like this made Linda feel like she really was somebody.

Particularly because when classes first began two days ago, one of the rich boys had raised the topic in class as to who the prettiest girl among their classmates was.

At first, Linda had been all for it...but then, after the votes had been cast, the winner turned out to be Queta!

There had been joking invitations for her to come up front and present an acceptance speech for this honor, but Queta had so far paid no attention to their jibes and their attempts to chat her up.

However, this only further antagonized the competitive Linda, who'd never once lost to anyone in terms of looks. After all, wasn't it said that the greatest cruelty to inflict upon a woman was to name another woman as being more beautiful than her? Even if they admitted it out loud, it's still such a heart-wrenching thing.

So it was for Linda, and to make matters worse, she'd lost to some penniless tramp!

"It's my birthday today and I'm treating a friend to lunch!" Queta wasn't oblivious to Linda's enmity towards her, so she only offered her a simple reply and no more.

"Good heavens, is this your treat? I'm guessing this guy's your boyfriend, then?"

Another one of the girls joined in. "Ahahaha! Someone has to say it: the two of you are a perfect match! Look at what you're both wearing!"

"Quit sulking, you two. They're only some steaks and fruit juice," one of the guys with them pointed out, shaking his head. "It's our class beauty Queta's birthday today, let her enjoy herself. Stop causing a scene!"

'Class beauty', he'd said. Linda couldn't let that pass.

"But look, you guys! They're only having the bare minimum here! Someone's celebrating her birthday, but I bet they can't even afford a cake! Looking at the two of them, I'm guessing she had to spend all of her life savings just to be in here! Gahahahaha!"

"Well, I shan't interrupt you any further. No wonder Queta's neighbors were talking about how she never eats any dinner—and that even for lunch, all she has is one bowl of plain rice. Here I thought she was just watching her figure, but I guess she just doesn't have much money for food!"

Having spoken her piece for the moment, Linda harrumphed, folded her arms, and stalked off.

"We're going now. You'll have no more trouble from us. After all, we'll still have to accompany Finn to Miss Liara's birthday party afterwards. Isn't that right, Finn?" Linda made a show of clinging to a young man's arm and finally left.

Having been humiliated like that, Queta bowed her head and kept silent. She didn't eat another bite. A moment later, Gerald saw hot tears winding their way down her cheeks.

Chapter 307

"I'm sorry, Gerald. I've disgraced you too," Queta wept. "I shouldn't have come here, to a place like this!"

It was her birthday today and she was spending it with her only friend in the world. Even Queta's feelings would be hurt by such ridicule.

No one understood her feelings better than Gerald. He too had once been poor. Whenever his pride had been trampled on like that, it felt like he was being stabbed through the heart.

When Queta was being attacked by those girls, Gerald had wanted to retaliate.

But if he'd done that, how much more would Queta suffer in class with them from that point onwards? Anyway, he hadn't really understood what was going on until the end, just as they were walking away, and it's not as though Gerald could chase after them and give them five across the face, right?

"Don't mind it. The day will be over before you know it," Gerald consoled her. "What you've got to do right now is work hard at your studies!"

He wondered if he ought to ask Aiden to help look after her here.

Queta nodded vigorously.

"Wait right here for me. I've got to go get something. I'll be right back!" Gerald told her with a smile, and then slipped outside.

He was going to get her a cake.

Earlier, he'd placed an order online with a dessert shop on campus.

Outside, he had encountered two dozen young men and women crowding around a girl with sunglasses. They had all gone inside together and everyone was wearing the latest fashions.

Gerald didn't have any interest in them. Perhaps he'd heard that Linda girl mention something about someone's birthday? That was probably her, then.

Whatever.

Gerald found the dessert shop, which was just close to Surati. It took him another fifteen minutes to secure the cake and then he headed back.

Now there was a massive crowd of students outside the restaurant. They were peering in through the entrance, with some even taking pictures on their cell phones.

Something must have happened.

"Hot d*mn! I guess that girl must have pissed off Miss Liara! Really, now... of all the people to pick a fight with!"

"Lucky that it's Miss Liara's birthday today and she doesn't want to make too big a fuss over it— otherwise, that girl would be done for!"

"But what exactly did she do wrong?"

"Seems like there was an old grudge from before. Sad...she's quite the beauty. This is gonna be tragic!"

The onlookers were all in heated discussion over the matter.

Ignoring everything else, Gerald pushed his way through the crowd, and got a great shock!

Several girls were pulling Queta's hair and holding her down on the floor.

One woman sat imperiously before her, one leg crossed over the other.

Queta's face was red and raw, as though she'd been hit.

"Let her go!" Gerald roared. Charging in, he shoved away the girls around Queta.

"Hmph! So it really was the two of you..." The woman in charge here rose to her feet. "I've searched high and low to no avail, but in the end you came to me on your own!"

Now that she'd opened her mouth to speak, Gerald finally remembered who she was.

It was the woman he'd quarrelled with, that night at the hospital.

She had connections to Damien Rye.

He hadn't recognized her right away because she was made up in a different style today.

"Well? Why did this have to come to violence?" Gerald hollered in fury.

Chapter 308

"Violence, you say? Heh! You were lucky you escaped the hospital when you did, let me tell you...otherwise, you would've been admitted there that night!" the young woman cackled. "I've been searching for the two of you so I can get my revenge—how nice of you to allow me to find you here instead!"

"Miss Liara, is this the punk who was bothering you last time?"

"Pfft. Just a couple of losers. And here I thought it might be someone special and that's why we couldn't track them down. You must be tired of being alive, huh? Trying to start something with our Miss Liara!"

Several men were posturing hopefully for Liara's approval.

“Miss Liara, I know these two! The girl is one of my classmates. Her name is Queta Smith. That guy seems to be her boyfriend!”

Linda finally understood what was going on here. One moment they'd been welcoming Miss Liara, and the next, she was pointing at Queta and shrieking for someone to grab her.

And then, Miss Liara slapped Queta right across the face.

So... Queta had been stupid enough to draw Miss Liara's ire.

Beside herself with excitement, Linda scrambled to tell on the offending duo.

Liara was a big-time celebrity in Sunnydale University, with Rye Group behind her and all.

She was one of the empresses of the campus, haughty and forbidding. No one dared to cross her.

In fact, matters of reputation played a major part in why Liara was holding such a grudge against them. That night, she'd planned to put on a big show in front of her uncle's men. That was why she'd showed up all of a sudden, aiming to be the first one on the scene to take charge of everything.

Instead, she'd crossed paths with an ignorant fool who wouldn't allow her to cut in line.

Damn him! He deserved the worst fate imaginable.

She was the renowned Miss Liara! If not for the sake of appearances, would she even have bothered with getting in line?

What a joke!

The point was that she was very upset over the whole affair. She'd managed to keep it bottled up at the time, until they were finished with visiting Uncle Damien. Then, she'd summoned a small army of men to hunt down Gerald, but he'd slipped through the net.

And yet, what a beautiful coincidence this was!

"Hey, seize that guy too!" Liara shrieked jubilantly. "Ahaha! This is the best birthday present I could possibly receive! I'm going to enjoy this to the fullest!"

Immediately, Gerald was pinned down by a whole horde of guys.

He hadn't expected that girl to be a student here at Sunnydale.

"Liara, your beef is with me! She's got nothing to do with this—let her go!"

Held down and unable to escape, Gerald knew that his time had finally come.

But what about Queta? She was completely innocent.

"Hahaha! So this is true love! But the more you beg me to let her go, the more I want to punish her too! I'm going to make an example of you two! You over there, give them each a sharp slap across the face! And you, start streaming this live! Make sure everyone knows what happens to those who cross Miss Liara!" This last command was directed toward Linda and was accompanied by a huge grin.

This appointment caused Linda to puff up with pride.

Her main goals in university were to catch a big fish and to make powerful friends. That was how she would get ahead in life.

All of a sudden, she was this close to Miss Liara already?

Sneering wickedly, she moved to stand in front of Gerald and Queta.

“You heard it yourself—I’m carrying this out by Miss Liara’s command. Blame yourself for not knowing your place, like ants railing against the heavens, hahaha!”

Smack! Smack! She meted out the punishment upon Gerald and Queta as ordered.

Quite a number of students were streaming this scene on their phones. Naturally, many of them had been doing so right from the start.

“Holy cow! Elena, check this out! Miss Liara is staging a public execution in Surati Restaurant! Who’s the unlucky fellow who ticked her off? LMAO!”

In a girls’ dorm somewhere, someone was announcing this news flash.

“Gosh, she’s even appointed a professional headswoman...what a drama queen!” another girl exclaimed. “Elena, let’s get down there now and see it for ourselves!”

“I’m not going!” Or so she said, but Elena glanced over at the video anyway before turning away again in disinterest, and flopping down in bed to continue using her phone.

A long moment passed, and then...

“What the hell?”

Chapter 309

Elena was just about to take an afternoon nap, but now she was wide awake.

She snatched up her handphone for a closer look, and her heart flip-flopped between joy and alarm. Still wearing her pajamas, she raced to the cafeteria.

Joy, because the man who had been in her thoughts had somehow appeared in her campus.

Alarm, because...good lord, was Gerald Crawford being abused on live-stream?

Meanwhile, at the Sunnydale University Fight Club...

It was a large organization, created at the whim of some rich kid or other, which went on in a particular corner of the campus.

This club boasted many members—over three hundred in total.

Presently, in the fighting ring...

“Yeah! Awesome!”

One of the fighters had just knocked down his opponent with a masterful technique. The spectators burst into uproarious applause.

“Water!” The fighter shrugged his shoulders as he walked out, and was immediately greeted by a disciple, who uncapped a water bottle and presented it to him. After several mouthfuls of water had been gulped down, the rest of the bottle was flung aside.

“Wow, you’re amazing! So cool!” Several pretty young things, phones in hand, dove into his arms with ingratiating smiles.

“Cool, you say?” The man harrumphed. “You think I didn’t notice how you girls were staring at your phones the whole time? Something interesting there? More interesting than my fights?”

“Tee-hee...we were watching that Liara mess somebody up. Have a look—she’s teaching some unlucky bum a lesson!” The girls showed him the ongoing live-stream.

“God d*mn, Crawford—” The fighter stiffened, and pushed aside the fawning girls.

“What’s wrong, Aiden?” They sulked.

“Hurry, get my guys! Tell them to run to Surati!”

The fighter was none other than Aiden Baker!

Hearing his command, the assembled disciples raced for Surati Restaurant without delay.

Even Aiden’s close friend, Yancy Zimmerman, was summoned.

Over at Surati Restaurant, Linda had just delivered her third slap to Gerald’s face.

“Hoo hoo...you dare mess with Miss Liara? I’m gonna kick your ass!” With each passing moment, she was enjoying this more and more. As she raised her hand for a fourth strike, someone shouted, “Holy crap! Aiden Baker and his guys are here! A whole lot of guys!”

The crowd at the restaurant’s entrance instantly scattered wide.

A couple hundred people were charging this way.

“Yo! Aiden came, too? Heh, that’s sweet of him...so he heard about what I’m doing here and has come to help out?” Liara stood to greet him.

It was a bit of courtesy on her part. Although Liara was not one of Aiden’s subordinates herself, she nevertheless recognized his tremendous influence within Sunnydale. They usually got along well with each other.

However, when Aiden reached them and Liara made to welcome his arrival, she heard him holler instead.

“D*mn it! Beat them up! Beat everyone here into the ground!”

With a shout, his fighters surged in. The men holding Gerald captive were instantly knocked senseless.

Even the furniture was being smashed to pieces, and as for Liara’s personal entourage... not a single person was spared from this violence!

Liara was on the verge of going mad, staring wide-eyed at the scene before her.

“What in heaven’s name... Aiden, have you lost your mind? It’s me, Liara! How dare you attack my people!”

Aiden marched up and slapped Liara hard. Whap!

“You dumb broad. I’ll make you pay for this!”

Then he hurried to Gerald’s side. “Gerald...Gerald, are you okay?” Now, Aiden was drenched in a cold sweat.

Gerald rubbed his sore cheeks. His wrath would be legendary.

If Aiden hadn’t come to his rescue, what might this crowd have done to him?

Thank goodness he’d been saved in time.

“Gerald, this woman who’s been hitting you... what would you have us do with her?” Holding a handful of Linda’s hair, Yancy dragged the would-be executioner before him.

She was on the clawing edge of hysteria.

Chapter 310

Yancy Zimmerman was an august personage in this campus and Aiden Baker even more so.

And they'd come in here with a veritable army to rescue this Gerald person.

What was the connection, here?

What's more...they were actually taking orders from him?

"What are you waiting for? I want the stuffing beaten out of her!" Aiden roared.

Yancy dragged Linda away and barked for the guys to start smacking her about.

"You're totally barking mad! Aiden Baker, are you really going to make an enemy of me...for the sake of these two nobodies?" This turn of events had happened too abruptly for Liara to make any sense of it.

Aiden...how dare he treat her like this?

"Hah!" Aiden sneered coldly. "That's right—and what can you do about it? You're just another whore under Rye Group!"

"No way! You dare insult me?"

Smack!

Humiliation turning to rage, Liara lunged forward to attack Aiden, only to be knocked back to ground with another ringing slap.

Blood was trickling from a corner of her mouth, now.

Liara couldn't understand it at all. Was Aiden on drugs or something?

But worst of all was the way everyone was watching her right now, as though they couldn't believe their own eyes.

And Aiden wasn't even done with her yet.

At that moment, Liara's phone rang. The caller was identified as 'Captain'.

Her eyes lit up and she took the call straight away. "Captain, I need your help! Hurry, or else your boss will never see me again!" She wept into the phone.

The captain spoke emotionlessly, "Yes, Miss Liara. Someone's already called me. Could you pass the phone to Mr Baker?"

The hell she would! Liara switched the call to speakerphone, for everyone to hear.

"Hello, Mr Baker. There must be some misunderstanding going on here..." the captain called out. "I'm sure you're well aware whose woman Miss Liara is!"

"I couldn't care less how close she is to William Rye. Even if she were Henry Rye's personal plaything, that still wouldn't stop me now!"

What a joke! Aiden knew very well who Gerald's sister was—Jessica Crawford and all her family held power beyond measure. There wasn't even any question as to whose side to take!

Put it this way—if it had been Madam Jessica in his place here, there would be much more than a mere beatdown going on!

"Alright, I can see you Mayberry people have no regard for Rye Group whatsoever. Mr Baker, no one would deny Mayberry's clout, but you've only been around the block for a dozen years or so. Why don't you go home and ask your daddy how long Rye Group has been doing things?"

The captain was spitting out every word now. “To attack Mr Rye’s woman like this is no different from attacking Mr Rye himself!”

Liara could feel her courage returning. “Heh...let me tell you, Aiden Baker... my boyfriend is none other than William Rye himself! He’s back in the country these days, and when he finds out what happened to me...Your Mayberry people have some influence, sure, but you’d still try to get along with the Rye family, don’t you? Your dad’s under Zack Lyle, and even if Mr Lyle were to cover for you, it would still have to be for a good reason, right? Hah!”

Aiden Baker wasn’t invincible. There were matters that went over his own head.

In this regard, he turned to Gerald. If Gerald ordered the assault to continue, there would be no hesitation and nothing to fear!

But Gerald kept silent. Apparently, one of Aiden’s subordinates had supplied him with a taser.

He walked up and stuck Liara with it. Zap!

Liara’s whole body tensed up and then she collapsed to the floor, convulsing.

With some things, one had to endure, take a step back, and see the bigger picture. But when she’d started talking about how Rye Group would have her back, Gerald had lost his temper.

Truly, there was no escaping some feuds.

Last time, he’d nearly been made a cripple by Damien Rye. To tell the truth, he still hadn’t gotten over that incident.

And then today, this Liara girl had disgraced him. If Gerald held in his anger any longer, it might kill him!

It had all started with Damien Rye—and now he had to settle a score with Rye Group...

This was enough for now, and there was no hope in continuing with lunch, so Gerald took Queta and left with the others.

A solemn hush fell over the onlooking crowd.

“My gosh, that guy’s name was Gerald, wasn’t it? He looked like a total loser, but it turns out he’s a total bad-ass! Even Aiden Baker was at his beck and call!”

“Yeah! It’s so depressing, man! I’ve heard that Yancy Zimmerman is filthy rich, too, but he looked like he was ready to lay down his life for that Gerald tramp!”

“Are you guys retards? Still calling him names...don’t you get it? What was his name again?”

“Crawford, I think. Oh, crap! Could he be...?”

Chapter 311

Gerald was able to let off a lot of steam there. He’d never felt so good before.

However, he realized that things could get very complicated from here on out. Although he’d lived a modest life thus far, he at least understood this much.

Therefore, he decided he’d take this matter a little further. At the next opportunity, he’d have to sit down with Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke to discuss what had happened here.

He thanked Aiden and Elena for rushing over to his side before dismissing them.

The events of the day had left Queta frightened and humiliated. She was down in the dumps. Even her clothes had been ripped and torn by Liara’s gang. It broke Gerald’s heart to see her like this.

Ultimately, it was his fault that this tragedy had to occur and that Queta had been dragged into it.

“Come on, I’m buying you new clothes!” Gerald declared cheerfully.

“No...I’m fine like this, Gerald!” Queta bowed her head.

“I insist. No matter what, I had gotten you into this mess. Anyway, it’s your birthday!” Dragging her along by the hand, he pulled her onto his car and brought her to a fancy clothing emporium filled with high-quality high-fashion items.

Gerald bought two outfits for Queta all the while coaxing and consoling her. He promised something like today would never happen again.

He paid for the clothes, but just as they were about to leave...

“Gerald, is that you?” A clear, feminine voice called out to him. The tone was laced with unexpected delight.

He turned to look. It was Naomi Milton. “Naomi!”

Naomi also had three other girls with her: Felicity Nelson, Yvonne Dunn, and Cassandra McGregor!

Well, it didn’t surprise Gerald to see Naomi running with these girls. After all, there’d been that thing at Emperor Karaoke Bar a couple days back. That time, everyone had lost their minds, except for Naomi, who’d remained calm and advised Felicity to moderation and she’d been right: Jake had proven to be no trifle.

In that way, Naomi had also proven herself to be a voice of patience—something which Felicity felt she had a need for.

As for Yvonne, well...it wasn’t as though Felicity wasn’t aware that the girl mainly sought to benefit from her recent popularity. This was made especially obvious by how uncomfortable she was about Naomi joining their clique.

Naomi informed Gerald that the afternoon following that incident, Felicity had invited her to help out around her workplace.

As for right now...naturally, both Felicity and Cassandra spotted Gerald too, but neither one offered him greetings.

They only glanced at him, then began examining Queta, who was beside him.

“Gerald, who’s this? What a beauty! Won’t you introduce her to us?” Naomi cajoled teasingly.

Gerald handled the introductions. “This is my good friend, Queta Smith. Queta, this is Naomi Milton, that bro I’m always telling you about. She’s a real man among men!”

“Pleased to meet you!” Although in low spirits at the moment, having met the Naomi that Gerald had told her so much about, she was delighted to shake hands.

Chapter 312

It had barely been an hour since that catastrophe.

Gerald didn’t want to talk about it in front of Felicity and the rest, so after greeting Naomi, he hurried Queta away.

“Hot d*mn, holy cow!” Yvonne exclaimed in frustration. “That Gerald has some guts, huh? Felicity and the counselor are both here, but he didn’t even say a quick hello to them? You ladies saw it, too! He completely ignored us!”

To herself, Yvonne thought about how someone like Gerald ought to show someone like her only the utmost courtesy and always mind his manners.

Instead, he’d snubbed them! Yvonne wouldn’t stand for it.

Neither Felicity nor Cassandra could believe how Gerald had treated them, either.

They hadn't greeted him, but he hadn't greeted them, either. He'd grown some balls.

"Hmph! Loser! I couldn't care less!" Felicity huffed.

"Alright, alright...leave Gerald alone, now." Naomi tried to salvage the situation. "I noticed he was in a bad mood just now. Something's probably happened and he was too preoccupied to say hi, that's all."

"You don't have to defend that person, Naomi. He's free to do as he pleases. Hmph! Anyway, we're going to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment later—we'd best hurry home and try on our new clothes! Isn't that right, Felicity?"

Remembering that they'd be making a trip to that wonderful Wayfair Mountain Entertainment as soon as today, nothing could bring Yvonne down right now.

Felicity's company superiors were having a friendly gathering at the villa. Since their top personality Felicity was one of Mayberry's own, she was naturally entitled to bring a few guests along.

Now that Exceptional Live had risen to become a national-level media platform, they were worth a lot more these days. That meant better company vacations in nicer spots!

Suddenly, Naomi's phone rang. She took the call, grunted in acknowledgement a couple of times, and then hung up.

Anxiously, she reported, "Felicity, that was the car rental service. Their driver has just left on urgent business and all their other drivers are at some wedding function, so there isn't anyone to drive the Mercedes-Benz G-500 we reserved! They've asked if we'd be able to find our own driver!"

"What! The driver dumped us? D*mn it! It's just one thing after another..." Felicity was fuming. "How am I supposed to find a driver last-minute to take us there? Anyway, I always hand-pick my drivers—they have to be good-looking! Every detail counts when going for an event like this!"

Really! Why did everything have to be so complicated?

“That’s right! Among us, only the counselor can drive, but as she’s going as a guest of honor, that’s out of the question!” Yvonne squealed. “Anyway, we can’t ask the counselor to serve as our driver!”

“Oh, I’ve just remembered that Gerald has a driving licence! He could do it!” Naomi exclaimed. “Shall we ask him to be our driver, then? He’s even been to that villa before!”

The truth was that Naomi was serving a personal agenda of her own here.

Previously, Gerald had really borne the appearance of someone who’d suddenly struck it rich, indulging in luxuries left and right. After a while, however, he’d gone right back to ground.

His classmates believed that he’d splurged it all away, and that was the end of it.

However, that brief period in the limelight had also left Gerald with a nasty preoccupation with appearances.

Naomi hadn’t failed to notice this.

She was asking him to be their driver now because she knew that Felicity had commissioned their previous driver for nearly a thousand dollars.

A thousand bucks for an afternoon’s work. It was a lovely arrangement.

Yvonne was the first to protest. “No, no way! Naomi, didn’t you hear what Felicity said? We need a good-looking driver, not some crass dork like Gerald! Forget about it!”

Felicity, however, arched one eyebrow and murmured, “Hmm...I actually think Naomi’s suggestion has some merit. Crass and dorky though he may be, Gerald has a certain innocence about him which is rather refreshing. Mm-hmm...our old dorm-mate Xavia wasn’t entirely without taste. I’ll just need to give him a bit of a makeover and he might even do very well as our driver!”

“Okay. Let’s give him a shot, then! He can drive, after all!” Cassandra raised no disagreement.

“Alright. Naomi, give Gerald a call. Tell him I’d like him to be our driver!”

Chapter 313

“Gerald, are you busy later?” Naomi asked, when Gerald took her call.

“Who, me? No, I’m not busy!” He was sending Queta back to campus. Once she was in class, he’d obviously be free.

“Oh. I’ve found you some side income. A thousand bucks for a day’s work. It’s a simple job: Felicity needs a driver. I know you’re not hurting for money these days, but a little extra scratch never hurts, right? What do you say?” Naomi presented the proposal delicately.

She knew he’d just about used up his windfall already, but she spoke with tact nevertheless as she was also aware that Gerald had become an image-conscious person. He’d even developed a taste for fine clothes!

But for all that, he was still a bro and nothing had changed that between them.

Honestly, when Felicity’s name came up, Gerald had wanted to decline—not least because he knew Yvonne and Cassandra would probably also be involved. It would be a madhouse, being caught between those chattering hens.

Yet, he couldn’t bring himself to turn down Naomi’s goodwill.

After a slight pause, Gerald nodded his head and agreed after all. It was all for Naomi’s sake.

“Alright! First, I’ll need you to get back here. We’re going to buy you some things and dress you up!” Naomi laughed happily over the phone.

Gerald sighed in exasperation and turned the car around.

As the girls' captive, he was given an expensive suit and a pair of leather shoes, all of which he had to put on right away.

It had to be said that Felicity, despite her aloofness towards him all this while, had to admit to being a little smitten when she saw Gerald in those handsome clothes. She almost complimented him, even...

But then she saw him carefully folding up his old clothes, as though intending to take them with him.

Oh, dear...still just a loser, after all.

"These are fine clothes. Don't wear them out in a hurry, Gerald! Between the cost of this outfit and some spending money for you as our driver, you're getting well over a thousand bucks out of this!" Cassandra remarked with arms folded.

"Yes, I see." Gerald could only smile and nod.

"Oh? Gerald, is that your new phone?" Naomi had just now spotted what he held in his hand.

He nodded. "Yup! Just got it a few days ago!"

"Whoa, that looks pretty sweet! Pass it here!" Yvonne peered at the device, her interest piqued. Without waiting for permission, she reached over and snatched it away.

One look at it, and she squealed. "My gosh...Felicity, Cassandra, look at this! This is the latest model, new on the market...it goes for over four thousand bucks! Gerald, is this yours?"

As a matter of fact, the most expensive smartphone she'd ever owned, she'd paid for it by installments, to a total of one thousand dollars.

Gerald, the poor man of their class, used a phone worth four times as much?

“No kidding!” Felicity gasped when she saw it, in spite of herself.

“Gerald, I don’t know when you’ve become such a show-off—but for a guy like you to buy a phone like this, what were you thinking? Felicity is at the top of her game right now and her phone only costs half as much! You’re just a student with no steady income, so how can you splurge like this? How many times must I tell you?” This came from Cassandra, the counselor.

It was as though someone had stepped on her tail.

Only a moment ago, she’d been lecturing Gerald about a set of clothes worth a few hundred bucks...and then he’d whipped out this four-thousand-dollar phone! Where did that leave her?

“Exactly! Why did you get something so expensive? Were you trying to impress some rich kids? Ahh...some people simply don’t have class. Don’t you know, Gerald? Only poor people go for things like this, people with money just buy the cheaper models!” Having suffered some affront from this, Yvonne eagerly joined in the harassment.

Chapter 314

“Yes. You’re right. Of course.” Gerald just nodded away compliantly.

There was no point in arguing. He’d let them talk.

Next, they brought him to the car rental company, where they collected the Mercedes-Benz, and set out for Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Now they were back on track.

Gerald had to open the door politely for Felicity to step out from the car. The other girls followed after and they were all greeted warmly by the staff at the villa.

Why was the villa showing such consideration for Exceptional Live?

It was simple: though neither Exceptional Live nor that upcoming Yorknorth Mountain event was that big a deal, the sponsors behind them were. Ultimately, Michael Zeke was trying to put on a show to impress Gerald Crawford.

As she posed for the photographers, Felicity turned and muttered under her breath to Gerald, who had been about to follow them inside, "Very good, Gerald. Now take the car to the parking lot and wait for us there. You'd best stay clear of the event proper, lest you blow your own cover and embarrass us all! Regarding dinner, you can buy yourself some bread if you get hungry—it's not like they're serving the kind of food you're used to eating."

Clearly, she thought he was likely to say something that might embarrass her.

Unbelievable! One day, she'd get her just desserts!

Gerald had had it up to here with Felicity. He had his pride too, for crying out loud! Couldn't she show him at least a little respect?

Cursing in silence, Gerald could do nothing but comply and bring the car to the parking lot.

He couldn't reveal his true identity, one way or the other.

Of course, Gerald wasn't going to just hang around here like a fool.

He'd already decided that while he was here, he'd seek out Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke to discuss about Rye Group.

When he arrived at Michael's office, the man was reading a newspaper. When he saw Gerald, he shot to his feet, caught by surprise.

Moments later, Zack hurried over to join them.

Gerald recounted recent events to them and they in turn shared what they knew about Rye Group.

In summary, Rye Group pre-dated all their other organizations and was a stone-cold criminal family.

In this Mayberry region, they were big shots. As business continued to grow, Henry Rye established a formal group, going legitimate.

However, for all the legitimate businesses they conducted, some of the things they did...well, Gerald had some first-hand experience. One example would be when Chad and Danny Xanders attacked William Rye, and then the Xander family vanished overnight. Then there was Damien Rye, who commanded his own private army of thugs.

The reason Zack Lyle maintained cordial relations with them was because of their might. The vast network of people who served them, as well as their extensive underworld connections, made them a force to be reckoned with.

Peace begets prosperity, after all.

By now, Gerald had a much clearer understanding of the state of the game. Then his phone rang. It was his elder sister Jessica, whom he hadn't spoken to for over a fortnight now.

"What are you up to, Gerald?" she began.

"Nothing much. Just having dinner with Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke!" Gerald answered brightly, deciding that Jessica didn't need to know about all this. At the end of the day, she was grooming him to eventually take over the whole Mayberry Commercial Street. If he went running to his sister for help with every little thing, what sort of worth would he be demonstrating?

"That's great. I'm calling to let you know that I'll be paying a visit to Mayberry in three days' time and I want to see my precious baby brother. Hahaha!"

"Oh? You're coming here?"

"Yup—and I'll have some earth-shattering news to deliver to you, too!"

Chapter 315

“What’s the big news?”

Gerald froze. However, hearing that his sister would be coming, he thought back to one year ago, when she and both his parents had gone abroad to work off some debts, and how he’d never seen them since. This was a truly exciting prospect.

Of course, that was just a story they’d made up to tell him.

“Ahahaha...you’ll find out when I tell you! Alright, eat your dinner!”

Doot... doot...With that, Jessica had hung up.

Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke were turning pale. “Mr Crawford? Will Director Jessica be coming here?”

“Yup, that’s right!” Gerald replied. “Three days from now! No idea why!”

The two men looked as though they were going to be ill. They must be terrified of his sister.

Next, Gerald had dinner with them and talked about simpler things.

Three or four hours crawled slowly by.

“I say, where are you, Gerald?” Felicity just called him directly. She sounded most displeased.

Gerald checked the time. Whoops, it was already well past eight!

There was a rule at these hot springs: After sunset, no one was to make too much noise. Remembering that time when some celebrity starlet was trying to sneak a dip in the baths, and nearly started a fight with him...

...what more a grand function like tonight.

“Oh! I’ll bring the car around right away!” Hanging up, he fetched the car and picked up Felicity and friends, who were ready to leave for the night.

“Blast! Did you do this on purpose, Gerald? What did I instruct you? When the party’s about to finish, have the car ready nearby! Instead, you were nowhere to be found!” The moment she got into the car, Felicity started chewing his ear off.

“On purpose? Perish the thought! It’s just that you forbade me from stepping inside there, so how was I to know when the party would be ending?” Gerald whined.

“Y-y-you...just for that, you’re only getting half pay tonight!” Yvonne snapped.

“Gosh, what an utter failure you are!”

When the guests came out, some of the other drivers had already been standing by at the entrance, but where had hers been? Even when she’d walked all the way out to the car, the man himself had been nowhere in sight. The shame of it!

“I’ll drop you ladies off at our campus and then I’ll return this car!” Gerald muttered.

“Back to campus? Forget that!” Yvonne snapped. “We haven’t had enough fun yet tonight—we want to head to Emperor so we can sing all night long. Am I right, Felicity?”

It had actually been a marvellous evening already, and they’d gotten to see Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. However, the girls were reluctant to call it a night, including Cassandra.

Especially Cassandra. Several of Felicity’s superiors had gotten her drinks and even asked for her number. Back then, she would have only been too delighted.

Now, though, her heart belonged to Ordinary Man.

Nevertheless, she'd felt very flattered.

"Yeah, send us to Emperor Karaoke, then return the car!" Cassandra said pleasantly.

There was nothing for it but to do as he'd been told before finally driving himself back to campus.

"Gosh...what do you think? A guy like Gerald—what kind of woman would be willing to be with him?"

In their own private room, the girls were drinking and chatting together as music played.

For want of a better topic of conversation, their thoughts strayed back to Gerald.

"Heh! Speaking honestly, a guy like him has no hope of getting himself a girlfriend. Even if he gets married one day, it won't be to any great beauty, and even if she is, she'll most likely be used goods. The reasons are simple—one, he's dead broke; and two, he's a total loser!" Felicity was drunk now and spoke with little restraint.

"You're wrong... Gerald has a girlfriend! You may not be aware of this, but...she's a radio DJ and she's really pretty!" Naomi didn't feel comfortable listening to them insult Gerald like this.

"Pah. Wasn't Xavia pretty too? And what happened there?" Yvonne sneered, then perked up as she broached another topic. "Oh, yeah! Speaking of which...Felicity, what kind of guy are you looking for?"

"Oh, me? Well...he's gotta be hot, of course—that's one. Two, he has to be able to afford me. Three, um...someone from an influential family. Four, someone nice. Five, willing to spend lots of money on me. Six..."

"Good heavens, couldn't you just say that you're looking for someone like Ordinary Man?"

Chapter 316

Yvonne burst into laughter.

Cassandra, who had been standing beside Yvonne, started acting slightly awkwardly. The truth was, that inside, she was filled with jealousy.

“And you counselor, what kind of future husband are you looking for?”

Yvonne repeated her question.

“I’m just looking for someone humble. A solemn and mature man who is sensible as well as knowledgeable. Not to sound overly materialistic, but he should also be a well-to-do man since we, as women, will be relying on them for support for the rest of our lives.”

Cassandra ended her explanation with a faint smile.

Another burst of laughter escaped Yvonne’s mouth. “So what you’re saying is that you’re looking for someone like Ordinary Man. After all, he’s just a regular person who’s a bit more sensible and solemn. Speaking of which, what do you think he looks like? Handsome? Or could he just be some ugly person?”

“Definitely not ugly!”

“Far from ugly!”

Both Cassandra and Felicity yelled in unison after Cassandra’s question.

Felicity threw an odd gaze toward Cassandra.

Cassandra seemed a bit too nervous. Felicity could tell that something was definitely off.

Felicity recalled the moment when she had given Cassandra Ordinary Man's contact information. It was to allow Cassandra to help investigate which class Ordinary Man came from.

Back then she didn't think much about it.

But after what happened after... The more Felicity thought about it, the more she felt that something was amiss.

She was so nervous earlier... Could Cassandra have fallen in love with Ordinary Man as well?

Women certainly were the most selfish creatures on Earth.

Ordinary Man was nothing short of outstanding and rich. After all, he was able to allow people from Exceptional Live to host a social gathering at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

It was quite possible that Ordinary Man's true identity was the mysterious Mr. Crawford.

No woman could ever say no to a man like that.

'I may have been a little too careless...' thought Felicity to herself.

No one said anything after their answer, and the situation itself became rather awkward.

At that moment, the private room's door creaked open.

"Excuse me... Is Miss McGregor here?"

At the door, stood a bodyguard who had a black suit and earphones on.

"That would be me. Is there something I can help with?" asked Cassandra.

“Allow me to introduce myself, Miss McGregor. I’m Mr. Lexington’s driver and he’s invited four of you to a meal at Homeland Kitchen. A feast has been prepared as a form of apology. I’ve been ordered to pick you up,” explained the bodyguard.

“Ah, I see.”

Cassandra nodded after saying that. Though she was still slightly confused, she found no problem with it. Flynn respected her and he was definitely feeling guilty about what had happened the other day.

What more, Flynn was Gerald’s subordinate and he definitely knew that she had a good relationship with Gerald.

While she thought about it, Cassandra realized she had yet to tell Felicity that Ordinary Man was indeed, Gerald.

But how did Flynn know how to find her? She considered the fact that it could be because they were all currently in Flynn’s territory.

After pondering about it for a while, Cassandra eventually decided to call Flynn up to express her thanks.

However, her call led straight to his voicemail.

“Let’s just go. Homeland Kitchen isn’t too far off from here. It wouldn’t be wise to make Mr. Lexington wait for too long,” said Yvonne.

Cassandra simply nodded in response. “That’s true. Alright, start up the engine, and let’s be on our way.” The driver nodded and led the way to his car.

A black Rolls-Royce was parked right outside the door.

Entering the vehicle, it wasn’t long before they were on their way to Homeland Kitchen.

Homeland Kitchen was located in Mayberry Commercial Street but from where they currently were, it would only take them about seven minutes to get there.

However, the driver didn't stop the car even after they had passed the street. In fact, he drove on and on till Mayberry Commercial Street could barely be seen anymore. They were headed west now.

"Um, we've passed by Homeland Kitchen!"

Said Yvonne who had been sitting next to the driver all this time.

"Don't worry, I noticed. We're not going to this Homeland Kitchen. Our enterprise has just established a new branch, west of the city. We're going there instead."

While he said that, a faint smile formed briefly on his face.

Chapter 317

"A new branch? When was it established? I've heard nothing about it..."

The gears in Cassandra's head began to grind. Something about all of this seemed suspicious.

Earlier when they were still in Flynn's territory, the bodyguard had told them that Flynn wanted to treat them to a meal at Homeland Kitchen as an apology.

Cassandra didn't think much of it. After all, she saw the familiar Rolls-Royce before her eyes.

Because of that, they just went along with the bodyguard.

However, seeing that they were now going west of the city, more and more alarms in Cassandra's head were going off.

The west of the city was a factory zone. Very few entertainment centers would be there. Why would anyone consider establishing a Homeland Kitchen branch there?

“It opened just a few days ago. The chef there’s quite the prodigy at cooking. Mr. Lexington’s told me that he’s hosting this feast with you in mind since he wasn’t able to serve you well at the Emperor,” said the driver.

“That’s nice of him, but why didn’t Mr. Lexington notify us about this beforehand?”

The driver cleared his throat slightly. “I wouldn’t know about that. You can ask Flynn yourself once you reach the restaurant,” said the driver as another faint smile appeared on his face.

“Did you just address Mr. Lexington by his name?”

The more she observed the driver, the less Cassandra trusted his odd behavior.

Hearing her question, the driver began smiling awkwardly.

The car’s pace began accelerating at that moment. Not too long after, he took a turn and entered the highway, west of the city.

Due to the abundance of factories, there weren’t many cars on the road. Only the faint glow of a few street lamps lit their way.

The more they went down the road, the more Cassandra felt that there was something wrong.

“Um, mister? I’m not feeling too well... Can we postpone this? I think I’m going to be sick. Please send us back.”

“I’m afraid I can’t do that.”

Cassandra's heart sank. They wouldn't have entered the car in the first place if he had only specified that the Homeland Kitchen that they were going to wasn't in Mayberry Commercial Street.

Thinking back, he had accelerated while driving down Mayberry Commercial Street too. They weren't able to react quickly enough to ask him anything.

The car driver looked from left to right, averting his gaze.

All this only served to further worry Cassandra.

"We've driven so far anyway, why not go down and have a look once we're there?" persuaded the driver as he smiled.

"We refuse! Stop the car immediately!" shouted Felicity in a cold voice.

The driver pointed at the rearview mirror. "I can't do that or we'll crash with the car behind us. Besides, Mr. Lexington's already waiting for you."

"Oh really? Well, I'm calling him now!" sneered Cassandra as she rummaged for her phone.

However, the only voice she heard through the phone was his voicemail.

'Why on earth does it keep going to voicemail?'

All of a sudden, a loud bang could be heard.

The driver had turned the steering wheel abruptly to make a sharp turn. The car was now going down a slope.

Cassandra and the others were almost knocked out after being violently thrown about inside the car.

“Where are you taking us! Who are you?!” roared Cassandra who was both in anger and fear at the same time.

However, the driver simply ignored her.

He pressed a button on his earphone before saying, “Copy that. They’re in the car now along with two other young beauties. We’re about to arrive, over.”

“Who the hell are you? Is this a kidnapping attempt?” Yvonne had been sitting next to the driver the entire time and she bore a look of terror on her face.

The car slowed down soon enough. It would appear that their destination was some kind of incomplete factory building.

She used to think that scenes like this were only present in action movies.

“Stop the car. Stop the f*ucking car I said!” Yvonne screamed, almost like a mad person as she grabbed the driver’s arm.

It took her a second to feel it, but she felt a slap on her cheek.

It was loud and clear. Yvonne almost fainted on the spot, as the slap she took was direct and precise.

At that moment, the driver hit the brakes.

Behind them, five people got out of the car which had been tailing them for a while now. From the building, emerged three other people.

Cassandra and the rest were dragged out of the car, one by one.

It was all clear now.

This was a premeditated kidnapping attempt!

All of a sudden, Naomi started shouting into her phone which she had secretly taken out while they were still in the car. "Hello?! We've been kidnapped! Please come save us, we're at the-"

Before she could finish, a bodyguard ran toward her and snatched her phone. It took less than a second for him to smash it on the ground, disabling it for good.

A tight slap from him awaited Naomi.

"How dare you make that call! Third Brother, do you usually work this sloppily? Retrieve their phones immediately!"

"Give me your phones now!"

Felicity attempted to hide her phone as a few bodyguards rushed toward them. However, her attempt was futile and in the end, her phone was snatched away as well.

Chapter 318

"Humph! Tie them all up while we wait for the boss's next order!" shouted one of the men.

Cassandra and the others were then dragged into the building before being tied to some chairs.

"They're all so beautiful! If the boss enjoys himself today, maybe we'll get to have some fun with them too!" A guard laughed with a cruel smirk on his face.

"That can wait. Let's make sure the boss receives a warm welcome first! You three remain upstairs to stand guard over them. Until the boss arrives, suppress your sexual urges. If he finds out about it, you'll definitely be castrated!"

The three chosen subordinates nodded respectfully as the rest of the men descended the stairs.

The women were extremely beautiful and, fearing that they might kiss them if they looked at them for too long, the three men decided it was best not to look at them at all. They squatted down by the door and began playing games on their phones.

“Psst... Hey, Naomi. Did you manage to get the call across earlier? How about you Felicity?” whispered Cassandra, her face as white as a sheet.

Felicity wept in silence as she shook her head. “Didn’t manage to... My phone was snatched away before I even had the chance to press the call button... What should we do, Counselor? I’m an internet celebrity! This is no way to treat such a person!” cried Felicity as she burst into tears.

The corner of Yvonne’s mouth was still bleeding from the slap earlier. She was terrified and she started weeping as well.

Regardless of how calm and cold a girl she was, anyone would be frightened half to death if they were to face a similar situation.

“Counselor... I’m not sure whether I managed to get the call across... But it seemed like it did. However, I only managed to shout for a brief moment...” Compared to the others, Naomi was still relatively calm though her breaths were heavy.

“Who? Who did you call?” In this life or death situation, the recipient of that call could be the miracle they needed to escape unscathed.

Though they were still university students, their minds were fickle and bore ample wits.

Earlier in the car, most of them had caught on that something was going very wrong. During the moment the guard had slapped Yvonne and while he was giving death glares toward Cassandra, Naomi and Felicity were hard at work, carefully trying to make calls without being caught.

Among the girls, Naomi had been the first to act. Long before the car had driven off the slope, Naomi was already aware enough about their situation to try making emergency calls.

The biggest help now, of course, would be from Flynn in this situation, even though Cassandra had tried several times to no avail.

"I... called Gerald..." Back then, the first number she saw was Gerald's and it was such a critical moment that her thumb moved faster than her mind.

"You called... Gerald?" Cassandra said in a disappointed voice.

"You called that good-for-nothing? What could he even come up with to save us, being the stupid person he is..."

Felicity's fears peaked and she felt cold sweat drip down her forehead.

"It's all over now... I... I don't want to die!" cried Yvonne.

"Shut up, b*itch! God, you're so noisy! Leo, go tape her mouth up! You can scream all you want later!" chuckled one of the men.

The guard that went by Leo smiled lustfully as he approached them.

While all this was happening, Gerald was still looking at his phone, dazed and confused.

He was in the boys' dormitory when it happened.

About three minutes ago, Naomi had given him a call. He was taking a bath then, and his phone had been ringing for a while.

As soon as he picked up the call, he heard Naomi shouting.

Her words were mostly vague, but he heard something about them being kidnapped before the call ended from her end.

What on earth was happening?

He tried calling her back to no avail. He even tried to call Cassandra and the others but even their phones went straight to voicemail.

'...I hope it's just them having too much fun together...' Thought Gerald to himself.

However, the cryptic call was still worrying. Knowing that they were all at Emperor Karaoke Bar, he decided to give Flynn a call.

His call went straight to voicemail.

Scratching the back of his head, Gerald then tried calling Flynn's personal number. Thankfully, he was able to reach him soon after.

"Still haven't retired for the day, Mr. Crawford?"

"Not yet, no. Why does your business number keep going to voicemail? Are you still at the Emperor Karaoke Bar?" asked Gerald.

"Don't even start, Mr. Crawford. I'm looking into it as well. Just forty minutes ago, my phone was being targeted. I received calls every two seconds and yes, I'm at the Emperor now. I'm still trying to find the brains behind all this!"

"I see. Well, Cassandra, Felicity, and a few others were having fun in the Emperor too. Could go over and see if they're still there?"

"Sure thing."

Without hanging up, Gerald continued to wait for three more minutes. "Mr. Crawford, they were apparently picked up by someone around twenty minutes ago. They've left," said Flynn when he finally spoke again.

"...Huh? Could you please have a look at the surveillance footage? Who on earth could have picked them up?"

Gerald could feel that something was going terribly wrong.

Flynn felt the same.

While he started with the Emperor's own surveillance footage, Flynn soon found himself going through the footage from the surveillance cameras littered all over Mayberry Commercial Street.

Flynn's voice began to quiver nervously. "...Mr. Crawford... It seems that they were picked up by a Rolls-Royce. The car moved at an accelerated pace and the last footage we have of it shows that it drove west of the city."

"...Oh no. Could this be a kidnapping attempt?" Gerald felt his anxiety grow by the second.

"Quick, call Zack and Michael. Tell them to meet up at the Emperor Karaoke Bar immediately. I'll meet you there too!"

Chapter 319

Inside the Emperor Karaoke Bar's office, the mood was heavy.

"We've pinpointed the exact location, Mr. Crawford. After tracing Miss Milton's last call, we found that it was made outside an incomplete factory, west of the city," explained Michael.

"Mr. Crawford!" shouted Zack as he burst through the office's door.

“We’ve run some investigations on the gangsters in Mayberry City and the Rye group. According to our spies, Jack had been acting strangely tonight. Earlier at eight, he had held a dinner party with a few others, including a few business-focused bosses from Mayberry City. In between meals, he would leave the table a lot to make calls. It was also found that his subordinates had drugged the wine beforehand. About ten minutes ago, his driver picked him up and his final destination was the same factory Miss Milton last called from!” Zack reported.

Gerald had a confused look on his face. “Mr. Lyle... How do you know so much about them?”

Zack smiled. “The truth is, Mr. Crawford, I’ve planted some spies in their group much earlier on to prevent them from pulling any unexpected tricks. I’m proud to say that one of Jake’s most trusted subordinates is our spy!”

“Excellent work! Mr. Crawford, everyone’s here now. It’s best that we leave now,” said Michael.

“Let’s go!”

With that, those gathered there began driving swiftly to the west of the city.

Meanwhile back at the unfinished factory.

“Boss! It’s good to see you!” The subordinates from earlier took turns shouting the phrase.

A roar of laughter followed. “Where’s my little beauty? Where is she?”

Obscene laughter could be heard before Jake began ascending the stairs.

The moment Felicity and Cassandra saw him, their eyes almost popped out.

He was here because they had offended him immensely the other day...

They were here because Jake wanted to personally take revenge on them.

Jake simply laughed at how surprised they looked. "So you're all here! Come! Remove the tape from their mouths!"

As soon as her mouth was free, Cassandra shouted at him. "Do you have a death wish Jake? Do you know whose woman I am?! Let me go now, I belong to Mr. Crawford!"

Cassandra knew very well what kind of relationship she had with Mr. Crawford ever since Flynn told her about it the other day.

However, she didn't have much of a choice at the moment. She could only hope that she could use her relationship with Mr. Crawford as a way to scare Jake off.

However, her statement scared Felicity and the others too.

'No wonder Flynn respected the counselor so much... So she was in such a relationship with Mr. Crawford.' Felicity thought to herself, rather upset.

Jake simply laughed. "I'm aware of your relationship, yes. Not only are you protected by Mr. Crawford, but Flynn as well! However, not even God can save you today!"

"You utterly humiliated me in the Emperor the other day, and you'll pay for it today! I'll break you inside out!"

"And you Felicity! I supported you at first but what good did it even do? I bet you never expected to find yourself in my grasp again, did you? You slapped me once, remember? There's no need to rush. I'll let each one of you experience first-hand how brutal I can be!"

Once his sentence ended, Jake stretched a hand out toward Felicity with lustful intentions.

Felicity, who was both terrified and nervous, instinctively retaliated by biting hard on Jake's finger.

“You b*itch!”

The sound of a hard slap echoed through the building.

“How dare you! Even if you kill us, Flynn and the others will eventually find out about this. No matter how powerful you are, you’ll end up in ruin soon enough. Wipe that smug smirk off your face!” shouted Cassandra toward Jake.

Jake burst into laughter at her statement. “Oh, you don’t have to worry about that. Flynn and the others will have no idea that I was involved in this at all! I have an alibi that I’m currently drinking wine with a few bosses from the business field. The wine is strong and we’re all drunk and after a little while, we’ll be taking a rest in a hotel.”

“Those bosses would definitely vouch for my innocence!”

“Come! Set the video camera up for me! I’m going to make sure they watch every second of their slutty moments over and over after we’re done with them! I need to make a video call too! Damien should definitely enjoy this, live!”

As he said that, he started the video call.

On the other end of the line, Damien was lying on his hospital bed, his hands and legs bandaged. He picked the call up.

Jake chuckled. “Mr. Rye, you gave me such a brilliant idea the other day. Look! I have four beauties by my side today. And I’m having a go with each and every one of them!”

“By god! They’re so beautiful! What kind of a monster are you? Zoom in on that slightly older girl for me!” shouted Damien happily.

“We have all the time in the world. Let us begin!” laughed Jake, almost maniacally.

With a subordinate holding on to Jake's phone, Jake rushed toward Cassandra first.

The girls were all in tears, including Cassandra.

Chapter 320

With Ordinary Man on their side, the girls had thought that they could do anything they wanted in Mayberry.

None of them had ever anticipated that they would end up being in such a hopeless situation.

They were all frightened half to death at the thought of getting r*aped.

"Boss! There's a call for you!" called out a subordinate.

"I'm not answering that, can't you see I'm busy?" Jake scowled as he shed his clothes off.

"But..." The bodyguard then whispered the rest of what he wanted to say into Jake's ear.

"...What?" A sense of nervousness quickly filled Jake. "Why is he calling me now?"

Jake wasn't in any position to refuse the call. Gulping down, he braced himself as he answered the call.

"...Did you misunderstand me? How is this possible? I-"

"Cease your nonsense. Your subordinates downstairs are under me now. Release them immediately Jake, or you're meeting death early today!" The person's voice on the other end of the line was frigid.

Jake gulped.

At that moment, footsteps could be heard ascending the stairs.

People began rushing in soon after, swiftly surrounding Jake and his men.

They were bodyguards dressed black from head to toe.

The leader of the group was a person with snow-white hair. He bore a cold and fierce expression, accompanied by a long scar on his face that made him look extra intimidating.

“You... Who are you?” Jake shouted, shocked.

With his white hair and ferocious gaze, this was certainly no ordinary man.

Cassandra and the others, however, gave opposite reactions. Relief washed over them the moment they saw the white-haired youth.

He was their savior.

“Get them!”

From that single order, the guards under the man moved forward in unison. Their swift and precise movements painted a picture that all of them were seasoned professionals.

Jake and his men were pinned down on the ground in no time flat.

“What are you doing? I work for the Rye Group! Think of the consequences you’ll be facing!”

A loud thud could be heard.

The white-haired man had kicked Jake straight in the face.

Despite being pinned down by two men, Jake was still sent flying by that kick. He flipped in the air and fell on his back.

Jake's chin had been broken and his teeth were covered in blood. The blood stained the ground as his body twitched uncontrollably.

The rest of Jake's subordinates were knocked out immediately after.

"Mister! Have you come to rescue us?" shouted Yvonne excitedly.

However, his cold demeanor remained. He glanced at all four of them before asking, "Which one of you is Miss Milton?"

"I am!" replied Naomi.

"We've received an order from our superior to rescue you. Please, come with us."

The leader then personally untied Naomi's hands before heading toward the exit.

"Um, hello? We're still here." Both Felicity and Cassandra were dumbfounded.

"Apologies, but my order was to save only Miss Milton, and nobody else."

"D*amn it! Naomi, tell him to release us too!" shouted Felicity in a quivering voice. She didn't want to stay in this horrible place a second longer.

Sitting in his Maybach downstairs, Gerald observed their actions through his laptop.

He had intentionally set up the rescue this way. He wanted neither Felicity nor Cassandra to freely use his name again to act as recklessly as they had before.

'Look at how anxious they've become...' Gerald thought to himself before picking his phone up.

Chapter 321

Leopold White's next order from Gerald was to untie the other three girls and bring them along.

They had used his name freely, thinking they could do whatever they pleased without having to face the consequences. Making them anxious was his way of teaching them a lesson. He had never planned to leave the girls stranded there in the first place.

Leopold White—the man with white hair—was an outstanding bodyguard who worked under Michael. To put simply, Leopold's job was similar to Flynn's who worked under Zach.

Michael had brought him here from Hong Kong.

"They'll be arriving soon, Mr. Zeke. It'll be inconvenient for me to meet them here so I'll be taking my leave first. Is my ride ready?" asked Gerald to Michael who was sitting beside the driver.

"The ride will be here at any moment now, Mr. Crawford. We'll depart as soon as it arrives. Leopold can handle the rest. He'll be safely escorting Miss Milton and the others back to their college."

As he said that, a limousine stopped beside them. Gerald wiped the sweat off his forehead as he stepped into the limousine. He then left the area together with Michael.

Earlier when they had pinpointed the girls' location, Gerald had told Zack to keep a close eye on the Rye Group as well as the police. Following that, he and Michael drove immediately to the place.

Gerald breathed a sigh of relief as soon as he confirmed that Naomi was safe.

As the four girls left the unfinished factory, they looked at Naomi. Yvonne, particularly, looked toward her with eyes filled with admiration.

“What was all that? Was it only you that they had initially come for, Naomi? Were you the one who called them over?”

From what they had seen and experienced, it seemed only fair to assume that the rescue team had only arrived to save Naomi.

As they descended the stairs, they were momentarily stunned when they realized how many people were involved in the operation.

In the room downstairs, at least twenty professional-looking bodyguards waited with their hands behind them.

Outside, there were at least six Maybach cars. There was even a high-end SUV.

Though Cassandra was rather powerful, only a few Rolls-Royce had come to pick her up at that moment.

Thinking back, Naomi’s team of bodyguards seemed even more outstanding than the current one, especially the white-haired youth who acted both coldly and cruelly without hesitation.

Both Felicity and Cassandra looked at Naomi curiously.

“Um... I don’t know either. I have no idea who any of these are! I’m as clueless as the rest of you...” said Naomi, looking extremely confused.

“If that’s the case... Who ordered you to save us, mister?” Cassandra couldn’t help but ask curiously.

Leopold however, retained his emotionless facade. He continued leading them without saying a word.

Realizing he wouldn’t answer, Cassandra signaled Naomi to try asking him instead.

“We’d like to thank the person who had told you to save us, mister. Please tell us who it is,” pleaded Naomi.

“I’m afraid I cannot comply, Miss Milton. My superior has specifically told me not to reveal his true identity. Not even to you,” answered Leopold respectfully.

“Actually... Couldn’t it be Gerald?” Yvonne said out loud.

“Gerald?” Both Felicity and Cassandra were stunned. The thought had never crossed their mind.

“Thinking back... We had all tried to call for help earlier but only Naomi was able to get her call across. Didn’t she call Gerald? That would mean that only he would be aware that we were in trouble in the first place!”

Analyzing the situation, Yvonne seemed unwilling to accept her own suggestion.

The same went for Felicity and Cassandra.

“Actually... Assuming it was Gerald who saved us, how would you say he got that many people to come save us? It’s kind of illogical to conclude that he saved us, don’t you think?” said Felicity.

Cassandra looked at Naomi nervously after Felicity had ended her sentence. She then asked, “Naomi, are you really sure that you called Gerald earlier? Maybe you actually called someone else? Are there any other influential and powerful people in your family? Maybe outside connections?”

They took turns looking at each other anxiously.

This was because both Cassandra and Felicity looked down on Gerald the most.

Chapter 322

However, if it was indeed true that Gerald was a powerful and influential man, they would prefer to die rather than accept that fact.

Cassandra recalled the time she had suffered terribly and had a restless night when she found her power bank in Flynn's car before.

"I was nervous back then and now that I think about it, I'm not too sure if I had called Gerald anymore... However, it is undeniable that the first contact number in my contact list is his. The second is my cousin's, whom I called just this morning. If we're talking about connections, it could be her. She works as a vice president for an international trade enterprise so she would definitely know a lot of people," said Naomi, careful with her words.

"That sounds much more logical. Your finger could have accidentally tapped her number. Following that, your cousin must have arranged for the rescue! Some of the guards here look like they could be SWAT cops while the others look like gangsters!" Cassandra said in a soft voice to them as she analyzed the members of their rescue team.

"Did we guess correctly, mister?" Felicity asked Leopold. They were quite sure that they had made the right conclusion.

However, Leopold's face didn't move a muscle. He simply opened the door of the Maybach which was parked in front of the other cars. It was the same car which Gerald and Michael had arrived at the factory with.

"It's time to return to your college. Get in the car," said Leopold.

"You're avoiding our question... That must mean we guessed correctly!" Yvonne said happily.

"Mister, may I borrow your phone? I wish to call my cousin." Yvonne's confidence had assured Naomi that it was indeed her cousin who had saved them.

"Very well, Miss Milton," said Leopold as he handed his phone to Naomi with utmost respect. All of them then entered the car.

"Hello? Cousin, is that you? This is Naomi. Were you the one who had orchestrated the rescue mission?"

"I wouldn't say orchestrated but yes, I was the one who called the criminal investigation team. Have they already saved you? They work really fast. I'm glad to hear that you're fine. I had tried to call you back earlier but the line kept going to voicemail. So I called your counselor but that failed too. I began to worry that something bad may have happened so I sent a message to your classmate, Gerald, to look into the situation. He told me that you had been kidnapped!" Naomi's cousin said nervously.

Wait... How did her cousin know about Gerald? Was it because she had that many connections? Actually, where had Gerald gotten the money to buy that phone and those clothes for Xavia before? Was it even possible to earn that much money through a part-time job alone?

Thinking back, it was Naomi who had asked her cousin to find a place for Gerald, Harper and the others for their part-time jobs.

Sometime then, her cousin had occasionally made Gerald run errands for her. That was probably the reason why she had Gerald's, Harper's, and a few of her other friends' contact numbers in the first place.

"I see... Well don't worry, we're fine now. They're taking us back to the college at the moment."

"That's good to hear. Rest well, I'll meet up with you tomorrow. You're going for an internship soon so I'll have to discuss the work details with you anyway."

"Got it. Make sure you hit the hay soon too!"

Sitting so close to each other, the other girls were able to listen in to the entire conversation.

Putting two and two together, they eventually pieced the puzzle together.

It was indeed Gerald who had notified her about the kidnapping.

"That stupid Gerald! He knew we were being kidnapped but he didn't do anything about it!"

"If Naomi's cousin hadn't called him, who knows what would have happened to us!"

"I'm going to strangle him to death once we return to college!" scowled Cassandra under her breath.

All of a sudden, Felicity yelped in pain. It seemed as though she had hurt herself somehow.

Biting her lower lip in pain, Felicity moved her hand beneath her to find whatever had hurt her butt.

She pulled out a small coat that had a phone inside it.

"I'm terribly sorry mister, I accidentally sat on your clothes!" said Felicity apologetically.

"...Hmm? This coat looks familiar..."

It took her a moment, but when she realized who it belonged to, Felicity was dumbfounded.

Chapter 323

"...Eh? Isn't this the coat I bought for Gerald?" Felicity asked aloud, a clear confusion in her voice.

There was no doubt about it. It was definitely the coat she had bought for him in the mall that afternoon.

"Are you sure Felicity?" asked Cassandra, stunned at her claim.

She took the coat from her to have a look at it herself, and it was true. It was indeed the exact same coat.

'How could this be? Why would his coat be in this particular Maybach?' The girls were all thinking the same thing, their confusion reflected in their eyes as they took turns staring at Leopold who was still driving.

Leopold, for the first time since meeting the girls, began fidgeting slightly.

Mr. Crawford had specifically ordered him to keep his identity a secret.

However, with the progression of the girls' conversation, things were becoming awkward for him very quickly.

"That's my coat. I usually just leave it on the passenger's seat," lied Leopold.

Felicity and Cassandra looked at each other. They doubted Leopold's claim because the coat definitely looked like it cost less than a hundred bucks. While Gerald usually wore coats that ranged around three hundred dollars, Leopold was even less likely to be the owner of the coat.

This was because the coat Leopold currently wore probably cost at least five thousand dollars.

'Oh god, was Gerald in this car before them?' the girls thought to themselves, shocked.

"It really is mine, no need to speculate. I wear casual clothes too you know!" said Leopold with a slight quiver in his voice. He knew they weren't buying his story.

A guilty person usually starts talking more. Cassandra knew this as a fact.

Felicity didn't believe him either. She slid her hand into the coat and took the phone out. It was what had hurt her butt earlier.

"Isn't... This Gerald's phone?" she asked, stunned as she observed the familiar phone.

"Let me have a look!" Felicity said aloud, her hands shaking slightly.

Before she could grab it for herself, Yvonne snatched it out of Felicity's hand. '...It's true!' Yvonne thought to herself.

'Mr. Crawford must have forgotten about his coat and phone earlier while he was hurrying back,' Leopold concluded in his mind.

But Leopold wasn't one to give in easily to pressure. No matter how much the girls asked after that point, he remained quiet and refused to say anything.

His mission was completed the moment they returned to college. After dropping them off, he drove away immediately.

"So... Counselor, is it really true? Was it really Gerald who saved us? Why else would his coat and phone be in the car! Thinking back, he was the first to learn that we were kidnapped too!" Yvonne cried out, almost in tears.

Her nervousness was warranted as Yvonne had always condemned Gerald. If there were to ever come a day where he grew more powerful than her, she would definitely feel extremely upset.

Felicity's face went pale as well as she considered the thought. 'If that were the case, what was Gerald's true identity? Could he actually be Mr. Crawford? Or even Ordinary Man?' Felicity thought to herself, slightly shaking.

"That's enough! Stop playing the guessing game and calm yourselves for a moment. The coat and phone may be similar to Gerald's, but how certain are we that they're actually his? Another possibility would be that Gerald could have been in the car for a while after he told the police about us. Since the police needed to keep the informant's identity a secret, they sent Gerald to a safe place before coming over to save us. Aren't those explanations logical as well?" Cassandra explained her theories in a quivering, but mature voice.

She had experienced a similar nervousness before. In fact, Cassandra was probably the most nervous among the girls at that moment.

It was because she knew that Gerald had borrowed her power bank before this. It was left behind in a Rolls-Royce. Now both the coat and his phone were left in the Maybach. It was just too much of a behavioral coincidence.

What more, Gerald was the first to suspect that something was wrong in both incidents.

At the moment, Cassandra's mind actively refused to link the coincidences together.

"That's enough. How about this? We'll go to Gerald's dorm and ask him about it in person. We're going to ask him what happened today."

Cassandra said again.

"Alright. If we've our phones with us, we could give Gerald a call!" Yvonne reacted soon.

"Tried it. It won't work since the phone's switched off and the battery's dead anyway." Felicity sighed as she lifted her hands in the air to show her resignation to the idea. "However, we can still take the coat and phone along with us to pass them back to him when we meet him later. Hopefully all our questions will be answered."

Back in the men's dormitory, Gerald shed his clothes off, leaving only a pair of shorts on before he lay on his bed.

All of a sudden, the dorm's door was flung open with a loud bang.

A scream followed shortly after.

It was Harper as he ran off to find something to hide his underwear from plain view.

"Counselor Felicity! What on earth are you doing here?"

Chapter 324

Harper repeated his question, his voice full of anxiety.

However, Yvonne simply ignored him and walked toward Gerald's bed.

"Get up immediately, Gerald!" she sneered.

She then pulled Gerald's blanket off him without bothering to consider what he had on at the moment. Once he was in plain view, she yanked him off the bed recklessly.

"What are you doing?!" Gerald yelled as his hands moved to cover his crotch.

These women were terrifying.

But instead of answering his question, Yvonne simply began rummaging through his things. Not too far away, both Cassandra and Felicity had their arms crossed as they watched the scene play out. Naomi simply hid in a corner.

"Counselor, Felicity! I found his coat and phone here!" Yvonne shouted as she held the two items up for them to see.

All the girls were stunned. All of them were thinking the same thing. 'So it wasn't Gerald after all!'

They felt relief wash over them as if they were prisoners who had just been freed after many years.

This was especially the case for Cassandra who felt almost overjoyed. 'I'm glad it wasn't him.'

After calming themselves down, they soon came to the realization that all the men in the dormitory were staring at them in shock.

Cassandra coughed before clearing her throat. She then asked, "Gerald, after you received a call from Naomi asking for help, where exactly did you go? And what were you doing at the time?"

"Well I was nervous of course, and I wanted to call the police. Before I could, Xyleena sent me a message asking me where Naomi was and I told her what I knew. She immediately arranged for some people to rescue you. I'm glad to see that all of you are safe and sound," said Gerald with a smile on his face.

"...It seems you hit the nail on the head, Counselor. So much for overthinking earlier! We really were saved by Naomi's cousin!" shouted Yvonne excitedly.

"And why don't you wear pajamas when you sleep? Disgusting!"

After condemning Gerald one last time, the women were finally willing to leave.

Naomi however, stayed back for a while to explain to Gerald about the incidents that had happened.

Gerald couldn't help but smile bitterly. 'Thank god I reacted quickly enough...' thought Gerald to himself.

The truth was that he had been extremely nervous throughout the entire rescue mission. He was sweating profusely so he had to take off his coat in the car.

Before the limousine arrived, he spent every second nervously observing the girls as they left the building. He did so through his laptop which had access to a surveillance camera.

Once he actually entered the limousine, his eyes were still glued onto the laptop's monitor. It took him a while, but he eventually realized that his coat and phone were still in the previous car.

In his mind, Gerald knew that his identity would definitely be exposed if he didn't act swiftly.

In the nick of time, an idea came to him. He immediately went off to get a similar phone and jacket. However, he could only hope that the battery in his old phone died quickly so that the phone would turn off on its own. If someone made a call before the phone died, it would all be over.

Thankfully, the phone seemed to have died before they managed to call him.

To be safe, Gerald even canceled his number at the last minute so that the phone would no longer be able to receive any calling signals.

From that point on, Gerald would have little need to contact the women aside from Naomi.

'There's no reason for me to expose my identity to them.'

The night had been an anxiously eventful one, but they somehow managed to subdue all the danger in time. It was finally time to get a well deserved rest.

A few hours later, Saturday morning came.

It was ten in the morning and Gerald was doing some revision in his dorm.

Out of the blue, Naomi gave him a call.

Though he canceled his number the night before, Gerald had told Zack to help register his number again with his ID before he slept. It wasn't exactly a difficult task.

Earlier that morning, Gerald had gone to the service hall to retrieve his new contact number card.

"Good morning, Gerald. My cousin came to visit today and after the chaos yesterday, she's planning to hold a feast for a table at a restaurant near our college. I'm indebted to you for your help yesterday. Please come! My cousin could even arrange a job for you. Harper and the others are free to attend as well."

"I think I'll pass. Besides, I hardly helped at all," Gerald said, a bitter smile on his face.

“You had better come immediately, Gerald. Otherwise, I’ll come to your dorm to invite you over personally! On a serious note, my cousin really wishes to express her gratitude toward you.”

“Well... Alright, we’ll be there soon.”

Gerald couldn’t bring himself to decline Naomi’s invitation. In truth, he had indeed helped them. It was fine to indulge himself with a simple meal like this every once in a while.

The problem wasn’t meeting up with Naomi. Gerald was simply reluctant to meet up with her cousin.

Chapter 325

When Gerald, Harper, and a few others arrived at the restaurant, Naomi was already there with her cousin, Xyleena.

Cassandra, Felicity, and Yvonne were there too. Sitting beside Xyleena, was a young man in his mid-twenties. He wore a suit and his shoes were made of leather.

Xyleena looked as feminine as ever. She was one of the more outstanding people in society, and she had social connections all over the place.

Gerald, Harper, and many others knew Xyleena mostly due to her social connections with them. This, however, granted them the knowledge that Xyleena was actually a rather arrogant person. She only helped Gerald and a few others find part-time jobs because they were friends with Naomi. Otherwise, she wouldn’t even have batted an eyelid at them.

“Come, take a seat. All of you,” Xyleena said in a soft voice.

Gerald complied.

“What a frightening chain of events, last night was. We’ll have a toast in a bit, but before that, I’d like to introduce someone to all of you. This man is Brian Merrall, and he’s been my friend all the way back from high school. He’s the team leader of the criminal investigation team in Mayberry and he’s also the one I called for help yesterday!”

“Nice to meet you Brian. Thank you very much for saving us!” said Yvonne. After realizing who Brian was, Yvonne couldn’t help but admire him.

“You’re very welcome. I’m just doing my job. Honestly, it should be me thanking all of you. After catching the suspects yesterday, we were able to uncover an even bigger criminal case that they were involved in. If it wasn’t for you, we may never have gotten the chance to take down such a powerful person as Jake.” Brian smiled after finishing his sentence.

“Look at how well-spoken he is, Naomi! Let’s have a toast with the one who saved you!”

Seeing that her cousin wasn’t reacting appropriately, Xyleena took it into her own hands to remind her cousin immediately.

“Oh yes, aside from thanking Brian, I would also like to thank Gerald as well. If it wasn’t for him, we may never have been saved in time!” said Naomi.

After all, if he hadn’t told anyone about the call, who knows what would have become of them.

“What are you doing Naomi? I told you to thank Inspector Merrall, not Gerald,” said Xyleena, slightly unhappy.

“Xyleena’s right, what did that poor man do? He said he was going to launch a police report but he must have been too stunned to do anything. Had Xyleena not messaged him or called Inspector Merrall, all of us could be dead by now!” said Yvonne.

Brian simply shook his head and laughed.

“Well said! If anyone is to receive our gratitude, it should be Xyleena and Inspector Merrall! I’ll be having tea instead of wine, but allow me to toast to you. Since I failed to protect Naomi and the others, I’ll drink first!” said Cassandra as she smiled.

Clearly, she didn’t care about Gerald at all.

While all this was happening, Naomi felt that something was off.

She realized that Brian had not appeared at all throughout their rescue mission the day before. On another note, Leopold was also clearly much stronger than Brian in terms of both aura and strength.

Something was definitely wrong.

In addition to that, Naomi felt slightly sick hearing how the rest continued to ridicule Gerald.

“Naomi, I know that you have quite a good relationship with Gerald. How about this, I’ll use my connections to try landing him a job with benefits. One that includes endowment insurance, medical insurance, unemployment insurance, work-related injury insurance, and even childbirth insurance!” said Xyleena. She didn’t want to embarrass her cousin too much.

“Is that true, cousin? How about a job with all the previous insurances as well as housing funds?” asked Naomi.

“That would be quite difficult! Only outstanding companies provide their employees with housing funds these days. With Gerald, it may be a little difficult to arrange such a company to take him in. However, I’ll try my best!” said Xyleena before coughing slightly.

It was quite obvious that she was indirectly saying that Gerald was clearly not that capable.

“Xyleena’s right. If Gerald gets into an outstanding company, he’ll most probably only be a hindrance to the other employees!” Yvonne said without filtering her words at all.

“That’s true! The best he can do is paperwork or be an office worker given his character. He really can’t do much else and even the counselor would agree,” said Felicity as she shook her head, a bitter smile on her face.

Gerald felt his blood boil as he heard all the insults.

'D*amn it, this happens every time! It's almost as if they run out of topics to say if they're not mocking me!'

'Sure, I was an honest man before this, but that doesn't mean I'm stupid.'

'I was only honest because I didn't have much money or power.'

Gerald fumed angrily in silence.

At that moment, his phone rang.

Glancing at it to see who was calling, he saw that it was his sister.

He then got up and walked away from them before picking up.

Chapter 326

"Sister, what's up?"

"Bro, are you busy? A butler and a few of my subordinates are landing at Mayberry's airport soon. Could you please find someone to pick them up? I've arranged some other tasks for both Zack and Michael to deal with. They'll be needing a living space as well, so please find one for them!"

"Alright, no problem," said Gerald as he nodded to himself.

This was actually the first time Gerald had been in contact with his family for a long time. He heard his sister chuckle.

"I'll be there the day after tomorrow. We can meet up then, just brother and sister!" Jessica smiled after saying that.

Gerald had missed her too.

After talking for a bit, Gerald finally hung up.

Since both Zach and Michael were busy, it was best that Gerald didn't disturb them.

'Who could I assign the task to?' He scratched the back of his head as he thought.

After a while, he decided to just leave the restaurant since Felicity and the others were there anyway.

He concluded that it would be best to just pick them up himself since they were his sister's butlers.

Nodding to himself, he re-entered the restaurant and told Naomi that he was busy, so he left directly.

"Gerald seems to be quite busy!" said Xyleena sarcastically.

'I graciously invited you to a meal today and you claim that you're busy? How dare you!' thought Xyleena to herself.

"I'm sure he's just feeling pressured to be here, being as poor as he is. Speaking of which, Brian. We saw a handsome white-haired guy yesterday. What position does he hold?" asked Yvonne at that moment.

"Honestly, I've been curious as well. You keep talking about a handsome white-haired person in a Maybach, but judging from your description, it's quite impossible that such a person is from our police team," replied Brian somewhat awkwardly.

The more he heard from the girls, the more Brian felt that something was off. The police team certainly did run a big mission the night before.

The mission was big enough to the point where there were even rumors that superiors from the province came to investigate as well.

During the commotion, Brian had received a call from Xyleena, claiming that her cousin had been kidnapped along with three other girls.

The report was far too similar to the case which they had been handling the night before.

Brian told her not to worry and said that the police would take immediate action.

However, by the time he arrived at the spot with his large team, the criminals had already been caught. The hostages had even been rescued, and had long left the scene.

Given his rank, he was not allowed to look too far into the matter.

It felt strange to him to be sharing that meal since he knew he hadn't done anything much to save them.

All he knew at the moment, was that there were two groups of people who had participated in the girls' rescue mission.

He was only there in time to clean up the mess.

"Eh? He isn't from the police team? I suppose so... It does seem quite impossible for a policeman to be driving a Maybach," Yvonne responded, puzzled.

"So what you're saying is that you weren't the one who saved us, Inspector Merrall?" asked Cassandra in shock. 'Why was it so difficult to get to the bottom of this trivial matter?'

"Technically speaking, no, we weren't. By the time we got to the scene, you had already been saved. You girls had even left at that point!" explained Brian as he smiled.

He only shared some rough details with them. All they needed to know was that he hadn't really done much to save them.

“So after all that talk, we’re back to square one. Who was it exactly that came to our rescue?” All four girls were stunned again.

At that moment, Felicity’s phone rang.

“Yes? Who is this?”

“Good day, miss. I’m part of the customer service from the Rex Suit Flagship Store. You bought a suit from us yesterday. However, your boyfriend came last night to buy another of the exact same suit. We only had a smaller one in stock, but he insisted on buying it. A few suits his size have arrived today and we were wondering if he would like to exchange the suit he bought last night for this one. We’re calling you because he was in such a hurry last night, we weren’t able to get his contact information.”

“Boyfriend? Ah, you mean Gerald. He’s not my boyfriend. Why did he even buy two suits?” Yvonne asked aloud, utterly confused.

Cassandra had heard the conversation as well and was equally shocked.

“That means... The suit we found in Gerald’s room yesterday wasn’t the one that Felicity had bought for him. He fooled us! But why did he? So... The coat we found in the car last night... It really was his?”

Without warning, Cassandra began screaming.

Chapter 327

“Was it Gerald all along?”

Cassandra found no other explanation, especially when she linked this event with the previous one concerning the power bank.

Gerald was indeed a strange person. He lived a very secretive life.

‘Thinking back, Gerald was the first to learn about the incident back when I was first brought into the hotel. Because of him, I was saved just in time.’

'I also found Gerald's power bank in Flynn's car. The same happened this time. Gerald was the first to realize that misfortune had befallen us, which led to the four of us being saved in the nick of time. Even Gerald's coat and phone were there!'

'At first, it seemed that Mr. Crawford was the one orchestrating all this, but this time, his attention went to Naomi instead.'

'And Gerald currently has a good relationship with Naomi!'

'He even beat up the vice president of the student union the other day! What happened in the end? Come to think of it, the department director was respectful toward Gerald!'

'He's filthy rich now and we don't even know how or when it happened!'

'But most importantly... Gerald shares the same surname with Mr. Crawford!'

'Oh god. If Gerald was indeed Mr. Crawford, everything would make sense now!'

Cassandra's face turned pale as her onslaught of thoughts ended.

Even Felicity and the others were catching up to the same conclusion.

They were left completely astonished.

"Is... Gerald really Mr. Crawford? Then is he Ordinary Man too?" Felicity asked in a nervous and low voice.

"I don't know, but that's very likely to be the case!" said Cassandra, her voice weak. "But we shouldn't be nervous. We can observe Gerald secretly until we're sure of his identity. We can then decide what to do about it!" Cassandra said, trying to calm herself.

It had never occurred to her that she would end up falling in love with Gerald.

The meal became a strange one, with many of the girls filled with anxiety.

Meanwhile, Gerald was already at the villa. He started up the engine of his high-end limousine before driving off to pick his sister's butler and her other subordinates up.

He had heard that his family had sent them over, and that each of them held quite a privileged status in his family.

Gerald had never taken a plane before, so he didn't know what an airport arrival gate looked like.

Did he need to hold a sign up and wait at the arrival gate?

He parked the limousine just outside the arrival gate. He couldn't really park his limousine anywhere else.

He then sent a message to the butler through the contact number his sister had given him. It contained the car's license plate number.

Not too long after, Gerald began regretting parking there.

Several young people, especially girls, were gawking at his limousine.

Some even took group photographs with it.

Sitting in his car, Gerald felt extremely uneasy and awkward.

While this was happening, a group of four walked past the arrival gates.

“Didn’t you say that Mr. Crawford would be sending someone to pick us up? Where is he?” asked a female voice.

A kind-looking old man with white hair took the lead. Following behind, was a young and lively girl who seemed to be either eighteen or nineteen of age.

Even further behind, was a pair of twins. Both brothers seemed to be in their thirties and they both wore suits. However, even that did not fully erase the fact that they both of them looked equally strong and fierce.

The two seemed to act as bodyguards for the grandfather and his granddaughter.

“Yes, Mr. Crawford will be sending someone here to pick us up. I’ve just received the car’s license plate number. Drake, Tyson, go check if our ride is here.”

“Right away, Mr. Kendall!”

The two guards then began looking around.

“Grandpa, I’ve done some research, and apparently the food here is rather special. Is it alright if I try some for myself later?” the girl asked. She appeared to be more on the naughty side as she pleaded to her grandfather.

“We’ll be staying in Mayberry for a while anyway. You can eat whatever you want.”

As he ended his sentence, the brothers returned.

They had located the limousine.

Once they got there, Gerald was there waiting for them.

As Gerald was about to exit the car to introduce himself, he heard the girl speak.

“Say grandpa? Is Mr. Crawford extremely handsome? Miss Crawford is such a charming lady, he must definitely be as handsome as she is beautiful!”

Hearing that, Gerald became slightly embarrassed to introduce himself.

Chapter 328

“Mr. Crawford is indeed, extremely handsome. However, you shouldn’t say such nonsense when you meet Mr. Crawford later, Dorothy. Control your rashness as well. Miss Crawford may adore and spoil you, but what if you accidentally anger him? I may not be able to help you then! You know how much of a temper you have.”

“Alright. You know, I’ve asked around and learned that though Mr. Crawford is a rather reserved person, he’s a wicked man inside! He appears to have several wives!” The girl stuck her tongue out before grinning.

“You naughty girl! I’m slapping you if you say that again! Where did you hear that from?”

“It’s true! Almost all the youths living in Northbay talk about it. I’ve also heard that he’s a promiscuous man who has gotten several women pregnant here. It’s said that whoever offends him will end up becoming pregnant so I’m quite afraid of him!” said Dorothy as she patted her belly.

“I can see that those ignorant kids are indeed done for! How could they spread such baseless rumors about Mr. Crawford? Truly preposterous! Dorothy, Miss Crawford has told me that Mr. Crawford is an extremely kind man. Those kids are just gullible rumor spreaders. Nonsense, all of it. You had better stop talking to them!”

“Miss Crawford is his elder sister. She’ll praise him no matter what he does!”

“That’s quite enough you naughty girl! Keep your mouth shut!” Mr. Kendall said extremely angrily.

It was then when they noticed that Gerald was standing behind them, his face flushed. He had silently exited the limousine and circled around it while they were talking.

He was certainly unable to introduce himself now after hearing all that she had said.

'How and where the hell did these rumors sprout from?'

"Ah, good day little brother. My apologies, my granddaughter here doesn't know much about Mr. Crawford. Don't worry, she has no real intentions of condemning Mr. Crawford. Might you be Mr. Crawford's chauffeur?" asked Mr. Kendall as he smiled.

The butler knew that he was Mr. Crawford's subordinate and as Mr. Crawford was the heir to the Crawfords, his status was definitely higher than Jessica's.

Even if he was just a mere driver of Mr. Crawford, his status was definitely not a low one.

With how loud Dorothy was speaking, the chauffeur had no doubt heard every word of it.

Sadly, there were just too many people in the family who gossiped about him.

Some claimed that he was a humble and reserved man. Others shared tales that he was instead, a promiscuous man. While plenty were there to praise him, plenty more were bold enough to mock him.

It was inevitable that he would be gossiped endlessly about, especially since he was the future heir of the powerful Crawfords.

"...Huh? Oh, no... No, I'm-" Gerald ended his sentence early, a sheepish smile on his face.

Gerald had indeed heard everything Dorothy had said, and he couldn't bring himself to reveal his true identity.

'People are claiming that I make women who offended me pregnant? As if I could ever do that! If that were the case, then all the women in Mayberry University would already be pregnant since all of them constantly mock me!'

Things would certainly become awkward if he told them who he really was at this point.

While he was thinking to himself, the girl yelled, "That's great! Since you're his driver, you must be familiar with this place. Bring me to a place that serves special food in Mayberry. Since you've been here for a while, you should definitely know where the best food is, right?" asked Dorothy excitedly.

"Of course!"

In truth, Gerald had never actually enjoyed any of the special food in Mayberry. He definitely couldn't afford any of the meals here in the past.

Dorothy laughed in glee. "Then it's settled! Take me to one now!" she shouted.

"That's quite enough, Dorothy. Stop acting so rashly. If the driver takes you food hunting, who's going to drive the car?" Mr. Kendall said, a defeated smile on his face.

"Humph! Drake and Tyson are already with you, grandpa! I've been looking forward to this day for so long. Please let the driver accompany me. It'll be my treat today!"

"Please agree to that. If you don't, I'll tell Mr. Crawford every single rumor I've heard about him once we meet. Then I'll tell him to get me pregnant too! Humph!" shouted Dorothy.

Mr. Kendall sighed. This granddaughter of his was uncontrollable. Shaking his head, he smiled as he said, "I give up. Little brother, how about this. We should be able to find Wayfair Mountain Entertainment from where we are now. We'll go by ourselves. Meanwhile, could you please accompany my granddaughter and take her to someplace fun? I'll explain the situation to Mr. Crawford in person later."

"I can do that," said Gerald as he scratched the back of his head.

He sighed internally. At first, he had wanted to meet up with people from his family properly.

Unfortunately, that wasn't going to happen, seeing how poor his reputation and image already were to them.

'You say you're going to meet me, but I'm taking Dorothy out food hunting. Who exactly are you going to meet?'

'This is getting too convoluted, I might as well just reveal my identity now.'

"Actually Mr. Kendall, I'm-"

"It's him!"

At that moment, they heard a female voice outside the airport. It sounded like the voice of a person who had finally found someone they had been looking for after a long ordeal.

"Liara, who is that?"

"Humph! Mr. Rye, he's the one who beat me and Aiden up! He's the reason why I had to be admitted into the hospital! You said you were going to take revenge for me after you returned to our homeland. Here he is now!" shouted Liara excitedly, her eyes almost bulging and bloodshot.

Behind her, was a group of suited bodyguards. There were several luxurious black Mercedes-Benz cars parked at the exit's opening as well.

Standing right beside her was a man wearing a pair of sunglasses. A man who had attracted the attention of endless numbers of girls. It was none other than William.

"D*mn it! Are you sure that's the guy Liara?"

William then threw his sunglasses to the side, glaring at Gerald coldly.

Chapter 329

“Surround them at once!”

As William barked his order and waved his hand, ten bodyguards immediately rushed toward them. Gerald and the four others had been encircled.

Behind William, stood a sturdy-looking man. He looked to be almost thirty and wore a pair of sunglasses as well. Up till this point, he hadn't said a word.

His arms were crossed and almost half of his face seemed to have suffered severe burn scars. He looked rather hideous to be honest, and he appeared to be William's personal bodyguard.

“Humph! Enemies are always bound to meet again! It's just been a few days so I'm sure you never saw this coming!” Liara shouted as she clung on to William's arm and slowly began walking toward them. Her eyes were filled with fury and if one could kill a person with cold glares alone, Gerald would definitely be dead by now.

Liara, for one, wanted that to be true. She wanted to torture and kill Gerald with her own hands.

From a young age, she had been spoilt rotten by everyone around her.

She had never even been hit before.

It had been a crushing blow to her pride when she was beaten up in front of the others the other day.

She had been too embarrassed to tell the others about it, but she had lost control of her bladder at the restaurant the other day and wet herself.

It was beyond humiliating for her, and it was all because of this b*stard!

“So you beat my woman up, huh? You b*stard! I’ll make sure you face the consequences today! Break his limbs first! We’ll ruin the rest of his family later!” ordered William.

After what had happened the other day, William had returned to M Country to relax for a few days. However, he soon found himself rushing back to Mayberry after hearing that his girlfriend had been beaten up.

For those who dared to offend William, only punishing the offender alone was a blessing. Usually, William would ensure that the offender’s entire family line suffered as well.

In William’s eyes, Gerald’s family was not going to be treated any differently.

Immediately after his command, two bodyguards rushed forward and attempted to grab Gerald’s shoulders.

Before they could do so, Gerald felt a gust of wind behind him.

In a split second, the two bodyguards were thrown onto the ground as easily as two sacks of potatoes.

Drake and Tyson had been standing behind Gerald this entire time and now they both took a step forward.

Their actions were so rapid that Gerald had barely noticed them moving to shove the guards away at all.

Mr. Kendall simply smiled bitterly as he watched the scene play out before him. He looked at Gerald and sighed with a smile. “Little brother, are these your enemies?”

Gerald nodded, a smile forming on his face. “Yes, we’ve had some conflicts before,” he said before beginning to laugh.

He was no longer afraid of William and Liara.

“Your enemies are Mr. Crawford’s enemies and his enemies are ours. Drake, Tyson, we’ll leave them to you,” said Mr. Kendall as he smiled while nodding.

Dorothy had been standing beside Mr. Kendall and she smiled as well.

“Oh, a treat! It’s been such a long time since I’ve seen Drake and Tyson engaged in a fight!” shouted Dorothy excitedly.

“Both of them seem quite powerful,” said Gerald as he observed their martial arts stances. He couldn’t help but feel pleased that he had such powerful bodyguards under him.

“Of course they are! They were both sergeant majors who had great reputations during their time in the army. You know, if you say Drake’s name to gangsters living abroad, they’ll start trembling in fear!” said Dorothy smugly.

“They are both indebted to the Crawfords. After they left the army, they came to work for them. As the master had ordered them to leave Miss Crawford, they’ll only listen to Mr. Crawford from now on!” explained Mr. Kendall.

Gerald’s eyes widened.

So apparently his family had sent two sergeant majors to be his bodyguards. He had initially thought that both Flynn and Leopold were already exceptionally capable.

It surprised him to see that both Drake and Tyson were much more powerful than them.

Their expressions barely changed no matter who and how many opponents they were up against. Each punch and kick was calculated and they could strike the opponents’ vulnerable spots with ease.

In the blink of an eye, all of William’s bodyguards were sprawled on the ground.

“What?”

While William and Liara were smug in the beginning, they were at a loss of words now.

'These two were originally dad's bodyguards. They're seasoned professionals, that's for sure' Gerald thought to himself in awe.

Chapter 330

It took less than ten seconds for the twins to completely bring down the ten guards. How was that even possible?

"So you've decided to mess with the Crawfords. You lack common sense, kid. Let's beat some sense into you!" said the twins in unison as they walked toward William slowly, cold smiles on their faces.

"D*mn it! Carl! Get them! Make sure they can't even stand after you're done with them!"

William was in shock.

Initially, he had thought that getting revenge for his woman was going to be an easy task. All he needed to do was to have his guards cripple Gerald. He had never anticipated that Gerald would have two expert bodyguards with him.

He was now forced to order his trump card to make a move.

Carl was the bodyguard who had been standing behind William all this time. Though he looked intimidating with all the severe burn scars on his face, he began to tremble when he saw Drake and Tyson approaching.

It wasn't out of fear, but an odd emotion in his heart which he just couldn't suppress.

He stood in front of William.

"You can kill me, but please let Mr. Rye leave unharmed," said Carl calmly.

Drake and Tyson stopped moving forward for a brief moment and looked at each other before fixing their gaze on Carl again.

“D*mn it! I didn’t ask you to give yourself up to die! Beat them up already you hideous man! How dare you disobey me!”

At that moment, a loud thud was heard.

William had punched Carl directly in the cheek.

Carl hadn’t dared to dodge and the corner of his lip began bleeding.

“What a waste of space! Useless!” yelled Liara before she slapped Carl on the other cheek.

‘You idiot! We ordered you to avenge us, not cover for us so we could run away!’ Liara continued to rage in her mind.

“Mr. Rye, Miss Liara, please leave immediately. I am no match for them,” said Carl calmly again.

“F*ck that! Aren’t you powerful yourself? It’s such a waste that dad kept you with us! Once we return, you’re going to start carrying a dustbin around with you every day and everywhere you go!”

It had never occurred to William that Carl would surrender himself so easily.

He was becoming slightly nervous now. He then pointed toward Gerald and the others.

“Hey b*stard! I wasn’t ready today! If you’re bold enough, let’s make an appointment! We’ll compete with each other then!”

William had noticed that more and more people were surrounding them. He knew that he would either be beaten up or humiliated if he continued to stay here for any longer.

Gerald noticed that Mr. Kendall was looking at him. Gerald knew that this meant that he was going to be making the final decision.

Thinking about it, he understood Mr. Kendall's thought process. Since he was supposedly Mr. Crawford's driver, if he was in trouble, so was Mr. Crawford. He currently held the highest position to make the final say.

"Sure. We can discuss the details of our match later. You may leave, but the woman stays with us for now," said Gerald with a faint smile.

It was true that Gerald usually kept a low profile, but it did not mean that he was a fool.

After all, he had offended the Ryes, and he could not shake that off now.

Gerald had reached the conclusion that it was better to take them down early on so that they wouldn't be able to cause further trouble in the future.

William was a person who relied on his family's power. Without the Ryes, he was only an ordinary person with no merits. Ruining him would mean nothing to Gerald.

Hearing Gerald's rule, Liara started becoming nervous.

"Mr. Rye! Please don't leave me with them! Bring me along with you!"

"Don't worry, Liara. Just stay with them for now. I'll rescue you soon enough so wait for me patiently!" said William hurriedly. He then rushed toward his car, started the engines, and left immediately. He didn't even care about his pile of unconscious bodyguards lying on the ground.

Carl nodded toward Drake and Tyson respectfully before turning around to walk toward his car.

“Frank Dunkin!”

Both Drake and Tyson shouted at Carl who was just about to get into his car.

Carl’s body trembled slightly. However, he pretended not to hear.

“D*mn! They’re so alike! He looks exactly like the guy!” Tyson said aloud, his gaze still fixed on Carl.

“Yes, he does resemble Frank. Those eyes of his never change. But why would he ever become a bodyguard for such a person?”

“I don’t know, and he clearly doesn’t want to identify himself with us!” Both of them continued to taunt him in low voices.

Mr. Kendall stepped in at that moment. “That’s quite enough. We’ll talk more about this once we arrive at the villa. It’s high time we met Mr. Crawford. Drake, Tyson, bring that woman along!”

Chapter 331

With Liara now being held captive, Gerald began driving to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

Upon arriving at the villa, Gerald called out to the bodyguards who had opened the gates for the limousine to enter. They were told to bring Liara to a vacant room and keep a constant eye on her.

“Wow, little driver! I didn’t expect you to have so much power over the guards here! They’re listening to all your commands!” said Dorothy as she laughed.

“Mr. Crawford, you’re here!”

Zack and Michael saw Gerald entering the building and they hurried over to greet him. They greeted Mr. Kendall respectfully as well.

While Zack and Michael usually appeared assertive in Mayberry City, in front of Jessica and Mr. Kendall, they instead gave the impression of just being regular minions.

However, that wasn't what caught the four new people's attention. Mr. Kendall, Drake, Tyson, and Dorothy were all stunned when they heard how the two addressed Gerald.

"Mr. Crawford?"

"You're Mr. Crawford?" Mr. Kendall asked, shocked.

"That would be me, yes. I had wanted to introduce myself earlier but the situation hadn't allowed for it," replied Gerald, a bitter smile on his face.

Mr. Kendall coughed. The revelation was both surprising to him as well as shameful.

After all, they had earlier been discussing all manner of rumors about him for quite a while when he was, quite literally, sitting right next to them in the limousine.

To think that this casually dressed and introverted person was actually Mr. Crawford. It seemed that what the eldest young lady had told him was really true.

"...I see. So... You're Mr. Crawford?" said Dorothy. Though she had initially been comfortable talking to Gerald due to how honest a person the driver seemed, she couldn't help but feel shocked at the revelation.

Gerald simply nodded slowly, a wry smile on his face.

Gerald hadn't expected any less a reaction. What's done was done and the four were led to a dinner banquet which had been arranged by Michael. The five then slowly got to know one another better as they ate and drank.

“Mr. Crawford, the eldest young lady and the master have sent us here to pass on an important announcement. I believe that the matter has been brought up several times between you and the eldest young lady,” explained Mr. Kendall respectfully.

“While the eldest young lady completed her assessment six years ago, yours is to officially begin now. The family has decided to auction off Mayberry Commercial Street which had initially belonged to both you and the eldest young lady. Once the auction is complete, you will be given an exclusive asset. With said asset, you will need to create a completely new group to run in Mayberry City. You’ll have to control and develop it on your own as well!”

This was nothing new to Gerald. On the contrary, Jessica had previously told Gerald about this many, many times.

Because of that, he had prepared himself for the assessment for quite a long time now.

His previous discussion to set up two projects under his name, them being Exceptional Live and Yorknorth Mountain, had already been approved.

However, he had not anticipated that his family would auction off Mayberry Commercial Street.

“While I understand that the goal is to develop something on my own, Mayberry Commercial Street is already very profitable. Is there really a need to auction it off?” asked Gerald as he smiled bitterly.

Gerald had experienced many things there and it bore some sentimental value to him now.

“Well, the profit gained was simply used to assess both you and the eldest young lady. The family could never allow such a small group to survive forever. However, Mr. Crawford, if you really like the place, you can buy it again in the future for your own entertainment and leisure!” Mr. Kendall couldn’t really grasp the meaning behind Gerald’s question.

However, Gerald still found his answer from Mr. Kendall’s statement. While it was true that Mayberry Commercial Street was impressive, compared to the other industries owned by the Crawford family worldwide, the street was nothing special.

There was nothing he could do but allow his family to auction it off.

Besides, he was also not short of money anymore. Owning Mayberry Commercial Street would only be for bragging rights now and he didn't want any part of that!

"Speaking of which, Mr. Crawford, a portion of the Crawford family's defense force in Mayberry City will also be under you in the future. Drake and Tyson themselves will be working as your personal bodyguards," said Mr. Kendall.

After saying that, he looked toward Zack.

Zack immediately caught on to what Mr. Kendall was hinting at, and carefully retrieved a small machine with a red button on it. He handed it gently to Gerald.

Gerald was no stranger to the contraption.

Back when Nigel was very close to killing him, Zack had pressed the button to summon forty to fifty helicopters to save him.

"This device functions as a communication tool for Military Emergencies. It now belongs to you!"

The next step was for them to sign some transfer documents and to be done with all the formalities. By the time everything was completed, it was already almost eight o'clock at night.

To tell the truth, it was only today that Gerald realized just how much influence and reach his family had over Mayberry City.

It was surprising, to say the least.

Chapter 332

Not only did the so-called Military Emergency Base host a section for its armed forces, but it also boasted one of the most efficient medical teams as well as intelligence gathering departments.

It was just like how it was in action movies.

Gerald had personally never been in contact with any of those departments before.

Being granted access to the Military Emergency Base meant that he would be in charge of all of this in the future. It only further affirmed Gerald that he was going to be the future leader.

It was already late when he was thinking about this, and Gerald himself was ready to retire for the night.

Before that, however, he suddenly remembered that he still had some unfinished business!

Gerald sneered as he walked toward the room.

“Oh, behave yourself won’t you? Otherwise, I may really end up killing you! Did you really just try to bite me? Are you some kind of dog?”

Even from quite a distance away, Gerald could already hear his bodyguard cursing from behind the door.

“Release me you b*stard! If you don’t, I’ll personally make sure Mr. Rye hacks you to death when he arrives!” growled Liara.

“Oh no... Mr. Rye... I’m terrified... Hahaha! Lady, look around you. I’ll drop you a hint, you may as well just await your death since you dared to offend Mr. Crawford of Mayberry City!”

“What? Mr. Crawford? Since when have I ever offended Mr. Crawford?” asked Liara in genuine surprise.

“Still trying to feign ignorance? Mr. Crawford’s the man who brought you here today!”

“...Wait, he’s that Mr. Crawford?”

At that moment, Gerald entered the room.

“Mr. Crawford!” shouted the two bodyguards inside respectfully before leaving the room under his command.

“You... What are you planning to do with me?” asked Liara. The terror had finally sunk in.

She finally realized how he could’ve gotten so many people to rush over back when they were at Surati.

This man was actually Mr. Crawford in the flesh!

“You’re already a captive in this room. What do you think I’m going to do?” replied Gerald as he smiled.

“But... Mr. Crawford, I’m Mr. Rye’s woman!” whimpered Liara. Her arms were still tied and her head was lowered.

Understanding the power difference between them made her feel scared and embarrassed at the same time.

The bodyguards were right. Mr. Rye was nothing compared to Mr. Crawford.

She, for one, would never be able to reach the top by becoming Mr. Rye’s woman.

Perhaps it would be better if she became Mr. Crawford’s woman instead.

Though both of them definitely still bore grudges against each other, she believed that Mr. Crawford would eventually fall for her beauty.

“I don’t really care whose woman you are. I won’t personally be touching you either way. However, since you’re already here anyway, then this makes it the perfect opportunity for me to settle this score with you. You don’t really have a way to pay me back, so you can just settle this score with your body!”

“What... What do you mean by that?”

As soon as her question ended, Gerald turned around and slowly began walking toward the door while making a phone call. “Hey, get me a random homeless person off the street...”

“Wait, what are you planning? Get back here! Wait!”

A terrified Liara continued yelling at him as he left the room.

The intention of his phone call was obvious.

Of course Gerald wouldn’t touch a woman like her.

Outside the room, Gerald began strolling down the hallways, enjoying the peace of the moonlit night.

It was a little under half an hour later when Zack gave Gerald a call.

“Heh, Mr. Crawford, that girl was so terrified that she revealed everything she knew about the Rye Group. I honestly wasn’t expecting her to know that many of their secrets. She’s also agreed to help us get what we want!” said Zack, a grin on his face.

“Your idea was truly brilliant Mr. Lyle. If you hadn’t suggested it, I would have just ordered some guards to beat her up,” replied Gerald as he smiled awkwardly.

Zack had naturally given Gerald some advice about the matter.

“Don’t worry Mr. Crawford. The Rye Group offended you because they don’t know their own place. Give me one day and night. You’ll definitely hear satisfactory results from me!”

Chapter 333

Gerald really couldn’t be bothered about Zack’s methods of dealing with the matter.

He rested early that night.

Though it was raining heavily when he awoke, Gerald rushed to school anyway. After all, his homework review was important as well.

As per usual, his driver dropped him off at the school gates and Gerald walked into the school with an umbrella in hand.

All of a sudden, Gerald heard a loud scream.

When he turned to look at the source of the sound, he saw a girl in a white dress who seemed to have sprained her ankle. She held an umbrella in one hand while her other held onto her ankle. Gerald deduced that she must have sprained her ankle while she was opening her umbrella.

Since she could hardly walk properly at that moment, it seemed that the sprain was a severe one.

Gerald found himself walking toward her under his umbrella. “Are you alright?”

“It hurts!” cried the girl as she raised her head to look at him. Her eyes were all teary.

Gerald was slightly taken aback when he saw her face. “It’s you?”

The girl showed obvious surprise on her face as well.

This wasn’t just any random person. She was the good-natured girl who had previously sat next to Gerald when he was studying in the library a while back.

The memory of the event embarrassed Gerald.

Not only did he have a nosebleed back then, but he had also sneezed. What an embarrassing thing to remember!

It was unexpected, to say the least, for him to encounter her today while returning to school this early in the morning!

“Yes, it’s been a while... I had initially planned to call a cab to go out and get some materials. Thinking back, perhaps I was walking a bit too hastily!” said the girl as her cheeks flushed slightly red. It was an obvious sign that she remembered what had previously happened in the library.

“With this heavy rain, it would be best if you postponed that plan for now. I’ll help you get to the infirmary,” replied Gerald.

He hadn’t forgotten the fact that she had handed him a tissue during his embarrassing plight back then.

Even though they were still pretty much strangers at this point, he still felt obligated to help her.

After all, the girl was someone good-natured and was beautiful to boot.

If he were to ignore and just leave her there, his guilt would surely come back to bite later.

Though she hesitated at first, she eventually nodded. The pain was too overbearing for her.

Even with Gerald’s help, she still found difficulty walking.

In the end, Gerald resorted to carrying her on his back. Fortunately, the girl had sensed that Gerald bore no ill intentions, even from when they had first encountered in the library. Therefore, she didn’t try to resist at all and simply allowed Gerald to carry her.

She held on to her umbrella as they walked toward the infirmary.

Gerald couldn't help but blush slightly as his nose caught the scent of her body.

However, he already had Mila so why on earth was he still overthinking the situation?

Gerald shook his head slightly to clear his mind before starting to walk faster.

Beep, beep!

A Mercedes Benz G500 honked as it passed by Gerald and the girl.

"Hey there beauty! It's raining heavily so why don't you get in my car? I'll drop you off wherever you're headed to!"

The shout came from a well-dressed teen who had rolled down the car's window.

Gerald couldn't help but stop in his tracks when he heard the teen's words.

In his mind, Gerald knew that all beautiful girls loved luxury cars.

However, she hardly even looked at the driver.

Instead, she pinched Gerald's shoulder lightly. "Don't just stop here! I'm dying from the pain!"

"Oh! Right!"

Gerald nodded before starting to walk hurriedly again. It seemed that this girl was different from the others he had encountered before.

“D*mn it! If I had known she’d be here I would have come a bit earlier! It’s such a shame! That girl’s so beautiful!”

The boy sighed loudly before slamming his hand against the steering wheel as he watched Gerald slowly walk away with the beauty still clinging on to his back.

Fortunately, the infirmary wasn’t too far away. Once they arrived, a doctor came over immediately to check on her injury.

Knowing that she would be taken care of by the doctor, Gerald turned to leave.

“Wait! What’s your name? Mine is Giya,” shouted the girl toward his back.

“Mine’s Gerald!”

“I see! Thank you so much for today. You’ve saved me from a world of pain. I don’t know how I would have managed to return with that sprained ankle! Also, I noticed that you’re holding on to a book. Are you possibly headed to the library to study?”

“As a matter of fact, I am,” replied Gerald as he nodded.

Chapter 334

“Giya! Are you alright? How could you be so careless?”

At that moment, the infirmary’s door was pushed open. Four girls who all looked well-mannered walked into the infirmary.

Somehow, each of them bore beauty comparable to car showgirls on the internet!

They seemed to be Giya’s roommates.

They were here because Giya had sent them a text message earlier, telling them that she was going to the infirmary.

“I sprained my ankle but I was lucky to bump into Gerald! He carried me all the way here on his back!” explained Giya with a smile as she looked at Gerald.

“Oh my god! You’re telling us that a hero saved our beauty? Hahaha! Then we’ll really have to thank the handsome guy who saved our Giya then!”

The girls continued chatting among themselves before turning to look at Gerald.

It was reflected clearly in their eyes that they felt a slight disappointment after looking at him for a while.

The clothes he wore were a little tasteless and to be frank, at first glance, Gerald looked like a pathetic jerk.

However, he did look like a decent person with a nice, chiseled face.

He looked like an honest and silly person as well.

However, they didn’t know him personally so they didn’t want to end up judging a book by its cover.

“Hey there handsome! So you’re the one who saved Giya?”

“I wouldn’t say I saved her, I was simply helping her out!”

Gerald didn’t know what to do. His nervousness had increased the moment he saw all those beautiful girls.

He was obviously not like this in the past.

“I see, speaking of which, Giya has never owed anyone any favors. What do you say, handsome? How would you like Giya to repay the favor to you?”

The girls continued to tease Gerald.

“That’s true! Well how about this, why don’t we ask Giya to marry you?”

The girls giggled at this in unison.

“Marriage is rather extreme, why not just ask Giya to spend the night with you instead?”

“Ahh! This is so embarrassing!”

The girls continued to chatter loudly among themselves.

“There’s really no need for any of that!”

Gerald had honestly not expected these girls to be so bold and direct when all of them looked like goddesses.

He felt extremely embarrassed.

“Oh, why’s that? Do you think Giya’s not pretty or worthy enough for you? Is that the case?” asked several of the girls as they gathered around Gerald.

“N-no! That’s not what I meant!”

“Then what did you mean hmm? Why don’t you elaborate, handsome?”

While her roommates continued to tease Gerald, Giya watched silently from her sickbed. This wasn't out of the ordinary for her roommates. They weren't exactly known to allow boys to play around with them. Instead, every single one of them had the capability of both fooling and duping dozens of guys easily.

When she looked at Gerald, she could see that he was already blushing severely after being bombarded by teases.

Giya couldn't help but laugh at the sight. "Alright girls, stop teasing him already! Tammy, I'd like to eat an apple. Could you peel one for me?"

"Alright!"

Tammy was a tall girl and she was about to peel an apple before she paused. She then turned to look at Gerald again before smiling. "Hey handsome, you said you didn't mean it right? Could you peel an apple for Giya then?"

"Huh? Me?" Gerald was surprised at the request.

"Of course, I wouldn't ask you to do it without a reward. After peeling it, I'll allow you to kiss me anywhere you want! How's that for a deal?" said Tammy as she slowly approached Gerald.

This was the first time Gerald had ever encountered such a bold girl. Was she really as bold as Jacelyn was?

Comparing the two in his mind, Jacelyn was definitely a rookie compared to these girls!

Out of every ten sentences the girls said, eight of them were dirty talk.

They were also equally bold and straightforward when they spoke.

After toying with him for a little longer, Gerald could barely hold himself together.

Once the apple had been peeled, they told him to peel a banana.

After that, they even told Gerald to drench the bracelet on Giya's hand with boiling water.

Gerald felt queasy and really didn't want to stay a second longer.

That was it, once he completed this favor, he was leaving.

Right as he held onto the bracelet which Giya had just removed from her wrist, Gerald felt himself being pulled backward. A strong hand had pushed him away from Giya so suddenly, that he lost his grip on the bracelet and it shattered the moment it hit the floor.

"Giya! I heard that you got injured! You had me worried to death!"

The anxious voice came from the boy who had just rushed in.

Chapter 335

"Don't worry Yacob, I'm fine," replied Giya in an indifferent tone.

The boy was dressed presentably in a suit and looked rather handsome.

Though Giya gave a slightly cold impression toward him, Yacob wasn't angry at all.

"Oh, Giya! Your bracelet's broken!" exclaimed Tammy. She had looked at the floor to see what had caused the shattering sound earlier and found that it was the bracelet.

"Gerald, how could you be so careless? Is it because you're unhappy that Yacob's here to be concerned about Giya?" asked another girl.

Her words caught Yacob's attention.

Though the boy liked Giya to the point of infatuation, Giya wasn't interested in Yacob at all.

Despite him having a very good family background, she still didn't have any feelings for him. She knew what she liked, and she didn't like him that way at all.

Naturally, it was impossible for her to have feelings for Gerald just because he saved her once.

Giya's roommates knew this and they were simply just playing around with Gerald.

Everyone had clearly seen that it was indeed, Yacob who had yanked Gerald away earlier which caused him to accidentally drop the bracelet.

"It's fine, it's just a bracelet. I'll just buy another one!"

Giya felt slightly embarrassed. After all, her friends were still making fun of Gerald now even though he was the one who had helped her.

"Yacob! You and Gerald are the reason the bracelet's broken! Both of you will have to pay for it!" said Tammy.

The girls obviously had to speak a bit more respectfully toward Yacob.

"Heh, I'll just buy a new one without his help. How could he possibly even afford to pay for half?"

Yacob scoffed as he looked at Gerald, displeasure clearly reflected in his eyes.

"Well, if there's nothing else, I'll be taking my leave first. Please, take care Giya!" said Gerald.

Gerald knew that he would continue to be teased as long as he stayed here. What more, Yacob was glaring daggers at him.

Gerald didn't really want to hold it against the girls either.

If he really wanted their respect, all he needed to do was to drive his own car and park it in front of them.

After all, people just found him fun to bully because they all thought he was poor!

It was just a coincidence that Gerald had stumbled into Giya today, and he really didn't want to get entangled within the situation.

As for the broken bracelet, Gerald had already been thinking about it. Since it was also partly his fault, he would simply buy a similar one to compensate her. Then the entire matter would be resolved peacefully.

As she watched Gerald leave, Giya wanted to call out to him to stay but she also knew that he wasn't going to adapt easily to her circle of friends.

She would just have to wait for another opportunity in the future.

After finally leaving the infirmary, Gerald headed straight for the library to study.

In a blink of an eye, noon had come.

It was then when Zack gave Gerald a call.

"Everything's been settled, Mr. Crawford. Rye Group will cease to exist in Mayberry City!" said Zack, a smile on his face.

"I knew I could count on you, Mr. Lyle!" replied Gerald.

Zack's process was easy, really. All that was needed was a little coercion.

In the past, both families had minded their own businesses. In order to make money peacefully, there was mutual comity between the two parties.

However, if the Rye Group were to ever attempt to go against the Crawford family, they would definitely be no match against them.

"Speaking of which Mr. Crawford, I've checked and found out that we'll need to use one of your identity cards for some of the master's other industries in Mayberry City. Are you currently busy? If you aren't, there are some documents that need to be signed. If you can't come over, I can go to where you are!" said Zack respectfully.

"There's no need for that! I'll come over."

Gerald was almost done reading his book anyway. He was also thinking of heading to a jewelry shop in Mayberry Commercial Street to get a jade bracelet similar to Giya's previous one. Just to make sure that she was properly compensated.

By now, the rain had already stopped.

Gerald first drove to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. Once he was done signing the documents, he headed for the jewelry shop in Mayberry Commercial Street.

"Boss! I'd like to buy a jade bracelet!"

It had taken him a while, but he finally found a jade bracelet similar to Giya's.

"Good sir, that jade bracelet is made from excellent hetian jade. It is very expensive, are you sure you want this?" asked the salesgirl, a professional smile on her face.

Though she smiled, an expression of contempt on her face was still slightly visible.

The young man before her wasn't well-dressed at all.

Despite that, he had come to buy jewelry. What more, he had chosen to buy a jade bracelet made from hetian jade!

Was he pulling her leg?

However, due to professionalism, she just kept her thoughts to herself.

Chapter 336

Gerald didn't care. Picking the bracelet up, he carefully observed it before saying, "Wrap this up for me. I'm buying it."

"Are you sure sir? This excellent hetian jade bracelet costs seven thousand and five hundred dollars... Perhaps you would like to look at something else instead?"

The smile on her face was beginning to fade at that point.

"Just do it already, why are you asking so much?" replied Gerald, rather coldly.

The salesgirl packed the jade bracelet up before swiping it on the payment machine. However, the transaction was a failure.

Gerald suddenly remembered that the minimum amount for each of his bank transactions had to be at least thirty thousand dollars!

"Hehe... Since when has Trinity Jewelers become such a low-class shop? Can any random person just waltz in now? What'll become of our noble customer experience then?"

The scornful voice came from a couple who had just entered the shop and witnessed Gerald's payment failure. The couple consisted of a woman who was in her thirties and an even older looking man.

All humans were like this, weren't they? Trampling all over others was their only way of showing how rich and powerful they were.

The salesgirl smiled apologetically at the couple.

Her expression turned into an impatient one when she looked back at Gerald again.

It was no secret that Trinity Jewelers was a very well-known shop in Mayberry City.

In the past, it was not uncommon for pretentious people to enter the shop just to take pictures of themselves holding jewelry in their hands.

It was getting far too common, honestly.

In her eyes, Gerald was no different from them.

"Sir, if you aren't going to buy it, then please leave. Can't you see that other customers are waiting to buy something?" the salesgirl said with a tiny hint of scorn in her voice.

"Who said I'm not buying it? It's just far too cheap! I'll just pick a more expensive item!"

Gerald said this, trying to save his own face.

The woman locked arms with her partner and sneered at Gerald. "Children nowadays! They can be so vain!"

"Truly! If I had such a son, I would just break his legs off!"

"I'll buy this one! Wrap it up for me!"

Gerald pretended to not hear the couple's comments and simply pointed at another jade bracelet in the middle of the glass display case.

"Hehe... This is a famous jade bracelet made by the top master himself. The market price for this bracelet is thirty-two thousand dollars. Are you sure you want to get this?"

The salesgirl's tone was cold and her voice was close to a sneer at this point.

"Not only this one. I'm buying both!" replied Gerald.

"Pft! That would be almost forty thousand dollars! This silly boy really thinks he can afford that! Hah!" said the man as he laughed.

As he did so, the salesgirl proceeded to swipe Gerald's bank card on the payment machine.

Since this pathetic jerk was so stubborn, the salesgirl was also starting to lose her temper. Her plan was to embarrass Gerald even more by showing the couple that the transaction had failed.

"Hmph. This person really doesn't know what's good for himself," said the woman coldly as she glared at Gerald.

It was at that moment when the couple and the salesgirl's eyes widened in shock.

After he had keyed in his password, the payment machine displayed that the transaction was a success.

"...What?"

All three of them were stunned speechless.

Not too long after, their faces began burning with embarrassment. This pauper was actually someone rich!

“Pack the two jade bracelets for me, and make sure there’s not a single wrinkle on the bag or I’m coming for your head!” Gerald huffed.

“Right away sir!” said the salesgirl as she quickly bowed respectfully.

Gerald was already used to such a scene. More often than not, it would end up like this. Being polite to others would only fuel their pride. You would only be given respect if you had this kind of attitude.

“Please wait in the rest area for the moment, sir!” said the salesgirl as she began carefully packing the purchases.

Gerald complied and thought to himself once he sat down.

The bracelet he had originally wanted to buy would be given to Giya as compensation, while the much more expensive one would go to Mila when he met her again.

It seemed like a good plan to him.

“Please give me another chance, Sharon! I really love you!”

“Haha! You love me, do you? Then come in here and buy me a piece of jewelry!”

“Hehe... Don’t worry, I won’t compare you to Hayward! You can just buy me something cheap. If you manage to buy me a single piece of jewelry from this shop, then I’ll stay with you, how’s that sound?”

At that moment, a young man and woman noisily entered the shop.

Gerald then raised his head to see who was making such a commotion. The people he saw made him lift an eyebrow.

Wasn't that Sharon and her ex-boyfriend, Murphy?

Chapter 337

Gerald remained in the VIP waiting area as he watched the two continue to bicker, a quarrel seemingly imminent.

From what he was able to hear, Gerald was able to piece the reason for their argument together.

Essentially, Sharon had broken up with Murphy without giving him a proper explanation. Her only excuse was that she wanted some time to herself.

This was very reminiscent of the time Xavia had broken up with him. F*ck. She had said the exact same thing to him too. That she wanted some time alone.

He really shouldn't be thinking about her anymore.

Shaking his head, he turned his focus on the duo's argument again.

The rest of the story was rather straightforward. Murphy had not been convinced with her excuse from the very beginning. He later found out that Sharon was getting very close to a rich heir.

What more, Sharon's friend had also told him that Sharon had been actively pursuing said heir.

Because of that, Murphy now had conflicted feelings for Sharon.

On one hand, he was still in love with her. On the other, he felt betrayed.

Thus, Murphy had been trying to get Sharon to reconcile with him for some time now. He simply wanted to do so because even he had his own dignity as a man.

All that eventually led to the current scene in the jewelry shop.

Now, Sharon was telling Murphy to buy her a piece of jewelry from Trinity Jewelers. She said that she would return to his side as long as he could afford to buy her even a single piece of jewelry.

That was going to be a difficult task for Murphy.

The items there were all atrociously expensive. Even the cheapest piece of jewelry there would have a price tag of up to four thousand and five hundred dollars. Murphy had just started working so he definitely wouldn't have that kind of money.

"Sharon, the jewelry here is much too expensive. Could we please go to another shop instead? As long as it doesn't exceed a thousand and five hundred dollars I'll definitely get it for you."

Murphy had a determined voice and expression on his face as he said this.

"Hehe... You want me to be your girlfriend when all you can afford is one thousand and five hundred dollars? Are you daft, Murphy? This cell phone alone that Hayward bought for me costs at least a thousand dollars!" replied Sharon as she sneered.

Since she was already going to break ties with him anyway, she might as well go all out!

"It's all crystal clear now. You like Hayward just because he has more money. Even if I did manage to buy you a piece of jewelry in this shop, you'd still refuse to go out with me. That's the plain truth, isn't it Sharon?" said Murphy, his face red with anger.

"Oh, Murphy. To be honest, I don't really want to hurt you that much since you've treated me so well in the past. So be a good boy and run along. Stop bothering me alright? And to set things straight, I really do love Hayward. You've never been able to make me feel the way he has. From that alone, I believe that it really is impossible for us to be together anymore. So why not just drop the relationship talk for good? Maybe we could even still be friends in the future. You're an outstanding person and I'm sure you'll find a better girl than I am," replied Sharon in a sudden, serious tone.

“You really are too much, Sharon. I’ve always treated you well and I’ve been willing to do anything for you. But now you’re just breaking up with me without even considering my feelings! It’s all too clear now. You’ve already slept with him, haven’t you?”

Murphy’s self-esteem had been trampled on enough. His eyes were bloodshot and he was done playing nice.

The sound of a slap echoed through the shop.

Sharon’s instant reply to him was a tight slap to the face!

“You lunatic! You absolute f*cking lunatic!” yelled Sharon.

Another slap could be heard. But this time, it wasn’t Sharon who did the slapping.

Murphy had retaliated and slapped her back in rage. Sharon now lay on the ground, stunned by the force of his slap.

By this point, several pedestrians had already gathered around the scene to watch.

“I’ll just end myself along with you! I... I’ll beat you to death this instant! Return all the money that I’ve spent on you!” yelled Murphy as he continued punching and kicking her.

The man seemed to have gone insane.

Initially, Gerald had not wanted to get involved in the matter. He had once been in an ambiguous relationship with Sharon and they nearly became a couple.

It had been three years since then, and Gerald knew that Sharon definitely looked down on him now.

Back to the present, Gerald had thought that they would only end up quarreling for a while. This had become way too physical for him to just ignore.

If he didn't step in now, his guilt would definitely come back to bite him later. Plus, there was a time when he had strong feelings for her in the past after all.

Thinking back, the cause of their breakup was also indirectly related to him.

Gerald shook his head before walking over to help separate the two of them. By that time, several big bosses who had come to buy jewelry were already trying to stop the fight.

Chapter 338

"Alright, that's quite enough, young man! You can't prove anything by hitting a woman! If you really want to prove your worth, work hard so that she'll regret leaving you in the future!" rebuked a well-dressed, middle-aged man who looked noble and dignified.

At this point, Murphy had already calmed down a little. He could only sigh as he clenched his fists tightly.

"That's right! If you want to show your worth then go make something of yourself! I think that's impossible though since you're a lunatic! How dare you hit me today? You're done for!" shouted Sharon who was still sprawled on the ground, panting heavily.

"You should speak less yourself. Young girl, you should stop dating only wealthy men. Rich people are fickle. If you want to break up, clarify things with your partner first. There's no point of saying anything else just to trigger emotional responses from them," reprimanded the same man toward Sharon this time.

Sharon went silent and simply covered her face with her hands as she wept.

She couldn't really talk back since the middle-aged man was most definitely a big boss.

"Are you alright, Sharon?"

Gerald wasn't sure what to do so he simply tried to initiate a conversation with her as soon as he walked over.

Sharon looked at Gerald in surprise. She hadn't expected him to be here as well.

"What the gentleman there had said is right. Misunderstandings can always be cleared peacefully as long as both parties remain calm. From what was heard, both of you seemed to have a good relationship in the past. Fate changes things so there's really no need to treat each other like enemies now..."

"F*ck you! This is none of your business! Do you actually think that you're worthy enough to educate me? You were dumped too! You're as pathetic as Murphy, yet you actually have the audacity to attempt to educate me?"

Gerald had only good intentions with his words. However, despite saying almost the same things as the middle-aged man, Sharon's reaction was completely different.

Sharon was extremely anxious at this point, akin to a barrel of gunpowder which had just been lit.

In her mind, she was thinking about how she would be fine with anyone from any place in the world educating her, but a person like Gerald? He would never be worthy enough.

Hadn't he just bought two high-end cell phones? Why was he showing off here?

Her rage was further fuelled when she thought about how she had not only been humiliated in public, but also witnessed by Gerald while she was being beaten up.

He even had the audacity to point at and reprimand her!

She didn't dare provoke Murphy for fear that he may start acting like a lunatic again. The middle-aged man who reprimanded her was out of the question as well.

Thus, the only person she could direct her anger toward was Gerald in an attempt to restore her own self-esteem.

She began pushing and shoving Gerald while spewing all matter of foul language toward him.

It was all too clear that she was just trying to save her own face.

“Someone like you should just stay out of this and get lost! I must have been blind in high school to even have considered falling in love with such a pathetic jerk as you!”

Gerald only stepped backward with every shove she made without saying anything else.

At that moment, the salesgirl from before returned with the jade bracelets held carefully in her hands.

“Stop!” yelled the salesgirl the moment she saw her most distinguished customer being shoved around by some random girl.

A rage had fuelled the salesgirl as if her own husband had just been slapped by another woman. She ran over to stop Sharon immediately.

“Get lost!” growled Sharon as she pushed the salesgirl away.

The sound of shattering could be heard.

The two exquisite boxes which the salesgirl had carried out were now both on the ground.

The sound that had come from inside the boxes when they fell wasn't very reassuring.

Everyone who saw the event play out went silent.

After all, everyone knew that the jewelry in this specific shop was extremely expensive. Judging from how extravagant the two boxes on the floor were, the contents were most definitely not just any regular jewelry.

The shattering sound definitely brought Sharon back to her senses.

“A-ahh! The jade bracelets!”

The salesgirl had not expected Sharon to be so violent. As she stared at the two boxes on the floor, cold sweat began forming on her forehead.

Gulping, she squatted down immediately and began unpacking the first box.

When she opened it, everyone could see that the jade bracelet had already broken into three pieces.

Chapter 339

“Oh my... That doesn't look like any ordinary jade bracelet... It's a shame that it's already in three pieces...”

“Hmm... It seems to be a hetian jade bracelet. I'd say it costs about seven thousand and five hundred dollars. What a pity that it's broken now. That girl really is too violent. She should have to pay the full amount since she was the one who pushed the salesgirl!”

“There's still another box. I wonder what happened to its contents...”

Several of the people there were contemplating the matter as they looked at Sharon.

Meanwhile, the salesgirl had fallen into a panic and forgot to even apologize to Gerald. She immediately began opening the second box.

Once she opened it, everyone there instantly exclaimed out loud.

“That... That’s the jade dragon! The one and only jade dragon! I’ve heard that if you look very carefully, you’ll be able to see the shape of a dragon inside the jade itself!”

“I’ve heard about it as well! It’s one of the top-selling items in this shop. It was made by a very skillful master jeweler. It costs around thirty-two thousand dollars!”

“Fortunately for the violent lady, the dragon jade bracelet isn’t broken. Imagine how much money she would have to compensate!”

“What do you mean thankfully it is not broken? It’s absolutely vital that the jade color of a dragon jade piece is maintained. If the color combination of the jade dragon piece is disturbed, then it won’t be in the shape of a dragon anymore! Should that happen, it would be better off just breaking the bracelet!”

Several knowledgeable people were actively sharing their views.

“Wow, I wonder where the owner of the bracelets is...”

Even the middle-aged boss from earlier was surprised by this turn of events.

“What’s happening here?”

At that moment, the young manager of the shop rushed out.

When he saw the two jade bracelets in their boxes which were still on the floor, his face instantly went pale.

“What are you still doing here? Bring the dragon jade bracelet over to the master jeweler immediately! Have him inspect it to see if the shape of the dragon in the dragon jade has been damaged!”

“O-Okay! Right away! Then, this-”

“Why are you still here?!” the manager shouted, his voice extremely anxious.

The salesgirl once again forgot to apologize to Gerald and simply rushed to meet up with the master jeweler to have the dragon jade bracelet appraised.

“Miss, remain in the shop. We’ll be having a talk about the compensation once the appraisal results are out,” said the manager coldly toward Sharon.

“Yes... Um... I hadn’t meant to break the bracelet... I simply wanted to push her away...” Sharon said meekly.

Once she heard how expensive the two jade bracelets were, she became so frightened that her legs began quivering like jelly.

“Of course you didn’t mean it, but that’s beside the point. While you wait, feel free to contact your family. If the dragon jade bracelet has not been damaged, then you’ll only need to compensate for the hetian jade bracelet,” replied the manager.

Though Gerald was the one who had bought the two jade bracelets, he remained silent.

He was very angry and upset at the moment.

Gerald had simply wanted to advise Sharon earlier but she treated him as if she didn’t even see him as a human being at all.

He decided not to say anything this time. He chose to simply stare at Sharon in silence.

“Damn it! This is all your fault! How unfortunate am I to run into both of you on the same day!” scowled Sharon as she took her cell phone out to make a call.

Naturally, she wasn’t going to call her family. If her parents found out about this they would definitely kill her.

The only people she could think of were Hayward and Lilian.

Once she had contacted them, the only thing she could do was to wait for the appraisal results.

Sharon clenched her fists tightly as she glared at both Gerald and Murphy.

She had a threatening look on her face, as though she was telling them that they would face their punishment sooner or later.

Hayward and Lilian arrived shortly after.

Once the whole story was explained to Hayward, he fumed with anger.

He appeared to be most angry about the fact that Sharon had been beaten up.

“Who did this to you?” asked Hayward.

“Murphy!” shouted Sharon.

Though Hayward didn't really get together well with Sharon, he still maintained an ambiguous relationship with both Sharon and Lilian.

As the so-called love rivals were meeting face to face, they were also equally filled with hatred.

Hayward immediately picked up a vase that was close to him and smashed it on Murphy's head.

The shattering of glass was heard and in no time at all, blood was already spewing from Murphy's head.

Murphy had initially been shocked silent by the broken jade bracelet. He had not anticipated Hayward smashing the vase directly on his head like that. Due to his lack of preparation, all he could do was remain sprawled on the ground, his blood forming a small puddle on the floor.

“How dare you mess with me? I’ll kill you!”

Chapter 340

Fortunately, the manager managed to stop Hayward before he could continue attacking Murphy. A few good-natured people helped Murphy to get on his feet before calling for an ambulance.

“F*ck! Why are you here too, Gerald?”

Lilian finally saw Gerald who had been standing at the side.

“Don’t even mention his name anymore! If it wasn’t for that pathetic jerk I wouldn’t have broken the seven thousand and five hundred dollar hetian jade bracelet and the thirty-two thousand dollar dragon jade bracelet!” replied Sharon with a look of disgust on her face.

“...Come again? More than thirty thousand dollars...”

Harvey was dumbfounded. Through the phone, Sharon had only said that she had met with an accident at the Trinity Jewelers shop. She hadn’t mentioned anything about the compensation or the outrageous cost.

Naturally, he was speechless for a moment when he heard this. The same went for Lilian.

Due to her nervousness, Lilian began scolding Gerald.

“So what if Sharon got beaten up? What’s that got to do with you? Did you think you needed to step in to stop the fight? Who do you even think you are? D*mn it! So what’re you going to do about this? Aren’t you going to pay for the compensation?!”

Lilian pointed toward Gerald as she continued to curse at him.

“I can’t believe that you think you’re that remarkable just because you bought two cell phones! Disgusting!”

“Oh Lilian, just leave him be. Hayward, can both of you please help me figure out what I should do to gather that much money?”

Gerald wasn’t even prepared for the verbal attack from Lilian.

He was stunned to a point where he didn’t even know how to refute them.

He was upset beyond compare. It had only been three years since they had lost contact with each other but during that time, any of Sharon’s lingering feelings seemed to have evaporated completely!

“It’s out! The appraisal results are out!” shouted the salesgirl.

She ran over excitedly this time.

Hayward, Sharon, and the others stared at her, anticipating her announcement with eyes wide open.

“Fortunately, the dragon jade bracelet isn’t damaged. Therefore, you only need to pay the compensation for the hetian jade bracelet, which is only seven thousand and five hundred dollars!” explained the salesgirl.

“Oh, thank god!”

When Sharon heard this, she nearly fainted. The enormous weight on her shoulders had been lifted and so had most of her anxiety.

However, another problem remained.

Seven thousand and five hundred dollars was by no means a small amount. What could she do to gather all that money?

“Hayward, Lilian, how much money do you have? You’ve got to help me out!”

Sharon felt like crying again.

“I have about four thousand and five hundred dollars with me at the moment. How about you, Lilian?”

“Only seven hundred and fifty,” she replied.

“I have about seven hundred and fifty too, but adding everything together we’ll have about six thousand dollars. I’m still short of a thousand and five hundred dollars!” said Sharon as she jumped anxiously.

“Don’t worry just yet, I’ll call my dad first. I’ll just ask him to transfer that amount over!”

Hayward could feel his wallet lighten as he considered how much money he would be spending. However, he would definitely lose face if he said that he didn’t have any money in front of so many people.

The three of them waited anxiously at the side of the shop as Hayward made his phone call.

“Dad? I need a thousand and five hundred dollars. It’s important. You’ll be receiving a second batch of compensation money in a few days, right? I really need the money now, okay? Okay!”

Hayward hung up the phone and a few seconds later, he heard his WeChat notification sound.

The money had successfully been transferred over.

“Alright! We have enough money now!” said Hayward with a smile on his face.

At that moment, Sharon was filled with admiration toward Hayward. She felt that as long as he was there, she would always be safe and secure.

She affirmed to herself that she would definitely marry him one day.

Lilian on the other hand, felt slightly uneasy watching Hayward spend six thousand dollars on Sharon.

Her jealousy was warranted as who wouldn't feel that way around such an outstanding man.

"Speaking of which boss, could you give me the broken jade bracelet? After some repairs, it could possibly still be worn!" said Hayward to the manager.

"Ah... Sure, why not?" The manager then shook his head with a wry smile on his face.

Hayward and the others then took the broken jade bracelet out of its box and inspected it to see if it could still be repaired.

While this was happening, the salesgirl reappeared again, this time with two, new, beautifully wrapped boxes.

"I apologize for making you wait so long, Mr. Crawford. Both of the jade bracelets have been packed nicely now!" said the salesgirl respectfully while she passed the boxes to Gerald.

"Thank you," replied Gerald as he nodded and took the boxes from her hands.

Chapter 341

"...What the f*ck?"

"...Huh?"

Both Sharon and Lilian were dumbfounded as they watched Gerald leave with the two boxes.

The boxes which contained the two jade bracelets that had almost scared Sharon to death earlier.

The moment her issue had been resolved, Sharon felt that she could finally breathe again.

However, she now felt as if someone had just kicked her in the head. Her mind went blank.

Gerald was the one who had bought the two jade bracelets?

Lilian and Hayward's eyes were open wide in shock.

This was especially the case for Lilian. She was so shocked that she didn't hold on to one of the jade pieces firmly enough and accidentally dropped it onto the ground where it shattered.

"Wait! Gerald! You... You were the one who bought the two jade bracelets?" asked Lilian in surprise.

Gerald simply ignored her and continued to walk away with the jade bracelets in hand.

He was beyond angry this time. There was no need to bother explaining anything to them.

"Humph! He could just be buying them with someone else's money! Forget about him! Sharon, Lilian, why don't we head to a restaurant and enjoy a nice meal together instead?"

Hayward didn't want to get outdone.

D*mn it! It felt as if Gerald had just sent an abrupt slap to his face!

The only reason he was willing to spend that much money today was because he wanted to win Sharon over.

No matter how he tried to dice it, deep inside he knew that Gerald had clearly outdone him this time.

“What the hell is even going on here...? Was he really the one who bought the jade bracelets? Where did he get all that money from?” they questioned aloud as they left the jewelry shop.

Both Sharon and Lilian felt very uncomfortable.

They were both afraid that it was indeed the truth.

If Gerald was now somehow richer than they were, that would be even scarier than the events that had taken place in the shop earlier.

Out of the blue, Lilian suddenly came up with an idea.

“Why don’t we invite Gerald to have a meal with us? After eating, we could ask him more about it. After all, you guys saw him buying the cell phones last time. He must really be rich! We must ask him about it to get to the bottom of this!”

“While I do think that that’s a good idea, I’m not sure if he’ll be willing to even sit with us after the way I treated him earlier,” said Sharon a little worriedly.

“Relax, just leave it to me. What do you think, Hayward? Should we investigate and get to the bottom of this together?” asked Lilian.

Hayward had an extremely displeased expression on his face up till the point Lilian had asked him for his opinion.

“Hmm? Ah yes, sure! It’s just a regular meal anyway! Go ahead and call him!”

Hayward was having mixed feelings about the entire situation but he had to admit, even he was curious about what on earth was going on.

In the past, Murphy was Hayward's strongest competitor.

While Sharon had indeed mentioned that she had nearly fallen in love with Gerald during her high school days, he hadn't regarded Gerald as a competitor at all.

Now, however, he was struck by a realization that this seeming poor boy was actually the biggest threat!

The way Sharon and Lilian were talking about him now was proof of that.

Once the girls were done discussing the matter, Lilian made a phone call to Gerald.

On the other end of the line, Gerald was walking with the bracelets in hand when his phone began to vibrate. He checked to see who was calling and saw that it was Lilian.

She had received Gerald's contact number when they had met in town for dinner last time.

"Ah! Hello Gerald! Where are you now? I'll be frank, I'm feeling a little embarrassed about everything I had said to you earlier. Now that I'm calm, I realize that I shouldn't have treated you that way."

"I'm sorry as well! I was overly impulsive earlier!" shouted Sharon hurriedly into the phone.

"Essentially, both of us regret treating you the way that we had. We want to invite you over to have a meal with us right now so that we can formally apologize to you. Maybe even reminisce a little!" Lilian continued.

A wry smile was on Gerald's face as he heard all this. If he hadn't walked out of the shop with the two jade bracelets in hand, they would never even have thought about apologizing in the first place, let alone decide to reminisce about their past.

To put simply, it was all about the money again.

If you had money, people would want to befriend you.

However, if you were penniless, just remembering your name would be giving face to you!

Gerald knew that well. As long as he had money, both he and Sharon could even pick up from where they left off and pretend as if the three-year gap had never happened.

Chapter 342

“Haha! It’s fine, forget about it. It wasn’t a big deal!”

Gerald did not want to go.

“No, no Gerald, I insist! You don’t look down on us, do you? You would never look down on your own high school classmates, right? Or do you secretly look down on us because you were admitted to Mayberry University while we only took the normal entrance exams for normal universities and colleges? I see how it is now!” said Liana shamelessly.

“You know I don’t mean that! Fine, let’s have a meal together!” Gerald said before sighing. How could anyone be this shameless?

Gerald was at a loss for words.

However, since it was only a meal, he was willing to just eat together and be done with it. After all, he had nothing to lose. Besides, it was an opportune time for him to prevent them from having anything more to say about him in the future.

He would just join them for their meal and see what they had to say then!

Gerald nodded to himself before turning around again.

They didn't eat in any of the stores in Mayberry Commercial Street. Instead, they went to an ordinary restaurant right next to that street.

Sharon had ordered a lot of delicious dishes for Gerald.

"So tell us, Gerald, how did you become so rich?"

The topic was finally brought up by Lilian. Sharon listened in closely as well. It was the highlight of their concerns.

"Rich? When did I ever become rich? I'm penniless!"

Gerald held back his laughter as he enjoyed the expressions on their faces. They were both hilarious and ridiculous at the same time. He was no longer angry. Rather, he was feeling playful at the moment, so he simply replied in a plain and casual manner.

He then took some roasted pork knuckles and rice before savoring them.

"Pft! You're really mischievous aren't you, Gerald? You're getting quite good at acting I see!" said Lilian as she laughed.

She had studied art before this and that included a bit of theatre. She was less rigid than the other two for sure.

As she spoke, she also slightly pinched Gerald's thigh.

"I... I really don't have any money!" said Gerald again.

"Hmm... If you don't have any money, how did you manage to fish out seven to nine thousand dollars just to buy cell phones? What more, how could you have bought the two jade bracelets today without having any money? The dragon jade bracelet alone cost around thirty-two thousand dollars! You're not deceiving anyone, Gerald."

Gerald groaned slightly as Lilian continued questioning him.

Sharon simply continued to stare at Gerald, her eyes wide open.

“Ah, those? That money doesn’t belong to me! I’m just running some errands for some people! I’m going to be sending the bracelets over to the buyer immediately after this!”

Gerald really didn’t want to tell them the truth.

By deceiving them, the best outcome he could foresee was that they would just continue treating each other as strangers in the future.

“Ahh... I see. So the money really wasn’t yours?”

Lilian and Sharon exchanged glances. They both felt as though a huge weight had been lifted off their shoulders.

“Say, Sharon, could you pass the pork trotters over to me? I can’t reach it from here!” said Gerald to see their reaction.

“D*mn it! Why are you still eating pork trotters now? Are you some pig? You’ve already eaten so much! Just look at how unpromising you already look!” said Sharon coldly as she glared at Gerald.

D*mn it... I really thought you were rich for a second there... That was the only reason why you were invited in the first place... I guess in the end you were just being an errand boy for someone else!

While those were the thoughts in Sharon’s head, Lilian had begun inching slowly away from Gerald.

Once she was sitting quite far away, she said coldly, “Oh, Gerald Crawford. I used to think that though you were poor, you would at least be useful in the future since you’re good at studying anyway. However, now that I look at you, I feel that you’re only going to become more useless in the future!”

Apparently he was going to be called by his full name now.

“Didn’t you guys say that we should support each other and provide helping hands since we’re all in Mayberry City anyway? Since you guys are obviously doing better than me, could you lend me a helping hand as well? After all, we’ve been classmates for three years in high school!” asked Gerald.

“Oh my god! As if we could help you! What can you even do? You shouldn’t talk about our high school days anymore. I haven’t even spoken to you for so long! Why don’t just keep chatting with Sharon? Weren’t you two almost a couple back then? Sharon definitely still likes you!”

Lilian said this deliberately for Hayward to hear.

Sharon caught on to what she was trying to do immediately. “What do you mean by that Lilian? How could I ever like Gerald! I’ve never liked him!”

As Sharon ended her sentence, she slammed her chopsticks on the table angrily.

The two then started to argue.

Hayward could only try to persuade them to stop fighting each other.

Ah, to be as rich and handsome as he was, was a sin.

Gerald paid no attention to them and simply continued eating while also enjoying the lively atmosphere.

All of a sudden, the door was pushed open rather loudly.

Several police officers suddenly walked in.

“Is that them?” asked a policeman coldly as he pointed toward Gerald and the others.

Chapter 343

At that moment, several police officers walked into the room along with the one who had initially pointed at them.

“That’s them!”

An angry voice came from someone who had white gauze wrapped all-around their head. As he walked closer, the group could finally make out who the person—who was pointing at Hayward—was.

‘His name was Murphy right?’ Gerald thought to himself.

The situation was quite clear. After Hayward had attacked Murphy, Murphy must have called the police after getting his injuries treated. It seemed that the police had managed to track them here through the help of the surveillance cameras on Mayberry Commercial Street.

If that wasn’t enough, Hayward had also booked a table at a restaurant near Mayberry Commercial Street under his name.

“Alright then, we’ll be needing all of you to come with us!” a single police officer said coldly.

Both Hayward and Sharon began panicking.

Even though Hayward was feeling rather superior a few seconds ago, his actions had come back to bite him. After all, he had crashed a vase over Murphy’s head earlier.

Though he was clearly anxious, his next response was to brazenly say, “Sure, let’s go! I’ll be released after two hours anyway!”

“Oh, two hours you say! After you’ve dared to hit my brother? I’d like to see you try!” said a cold and arrogant voice.

A woman soon began walking forward. She stood next to Murphy.

“Sister! That’s the kid who attacked me!” said Murphy as he pointed toward Hayward.

“Don’t worry, I’ve already explained the matter to the inspector! He’ll definitely be upholding justice on your behalf!” replied the woman.

Being able to utter that sentence alone proved that Murphy’s family had sufficient connections to turn the situation from a simple into a rather difficult one.

Hayward began feeling even more nervous now.

Sharon had also not expected Murphy to have such a powerful sister.

As the woman shifted her cold glare from Hayward to look at the others who sat at the same table, she couldn’t help but raise an eyebrow in astonishment.

“Gerald? What are you doing here?”

Gerald was busy eating but when he heard his name and the familiar voice, he looked up. Even he was surprised.

The woman standing before them was none other than Naomi’s cousin, Xyleena. He really hadn’t expected Murphy to be connected with her as well.

Gerald knew very well that Xyleena didn’t have a brother.

D*mn it! With her in the picture, there would be no outsiders in this dispute at all. On one side was his high school classmates while on the other was Naomi’s relatives and friends.

Gerald couldn't help but laugh wryly at the ridiculousness of the situation.

"Don't mind me, we're just having a meal together!"

"Humph! So you're actually enjoying a meal with the people who beat my brother up? And of course a pathetic jerk like you is involved in the matter as well! To think that I took such good care of you in the past!" replied Xyleena coldly.

To be honest, ever since Xyleena and Naomi had invited Gerald and the others to a meal back then, she had already been extremely dissatisfied with him for running off before the meal was even over.

The embarrassing thing was that she had initially planned for her classmates to act impressively and display their power to Naomi's classmates. She still couldn't understand what went wrong that day. All Naomi's female classmates did was whisper among themselves and she had no idea what they were even discussing about.

In the end, they barely even looked at her classmates at all.

In short, the entire meal was embarrassing.

Of course, she blamed the entire thing on Gerald for not being appreciative of her efforts which led to the others doing the same.

It was, however, unexpected that both of them would actually meet like this today.

"Humph! That person was also there while I was beaten up!" said Murphy as he pointed toward Gerald.

"That's enough. You don't have to say anything else. If you wish to add anything you can say it back at the police station! For now, all of you are coming with us!"

The police then brought all of them back into their police cars.

Gerald felt depressed. What terrible luck!

What could he even say at this point?

Upon arriving at the police station, the police officers began taking their statements. Since surveillance cameras were present, Hayward couldn't deny anything.

After that, the four people were placed in a small room while they awaited their results.

"What should I do Hayward? Do you think I'll get charged as well? I've just been offered a job as a teacher and I haven't even started my first day at work yet! If I get charged by the police then the school will definitely expel me!" said Lilian as she started panicking in the detention room.

"I really don't know... We actually hurt someone this time and they have solid evidence too! That Murphy... And his sister! She's pretty incredible herself!"

Sharon was silent but she was clearly nervous as well.

Chapter 344

This was because all of them could tell that Xyleena was not the kind of woman that they could afford to mess with.

Thinking about the current situation, Hayward's face had already been pale for some time now. He was pacing back and forth anxiously.

On the other hand, Sharon was feeling a little disappointed.

She had come to learn that Murphy's sister was very powerful in Mayberry City. She was also very capable in society in general.

This would mean that Murphy was also someone quite capable himself.

As she thought about it, Sharon began feeling slightly regretful. Had she been too cruel to Murphy?

What if Murphy's future achievements somehow surpassed Haywards?

Thinking back, Hayward mostly only knew how to show off. Murphy, on the other hand, was actually a very capable man.

The more she thought about it, the more conflicted Sharon felt.

Ahh! Why!

She had only ever fallen for three people in her lifetime.

The first was Gerald but she had already moved on from him for a very long time. She wasn't even interested in him anymore.

The second and third were Murphy and Hayward!

Now, Sharon was feeling very entangled in the mess she had brought upon herself.

"Okay, okay! Stop talking about it already. I've already told my dad about the situation. He'll definitely come up with a suitable solution to free us. You won't have a criminal record either, don't worry!" said Hayward as he scratched the back of his head.

"Murphy will obviously refuse to accept settling this in private. Therefore, there'll definitely be a criminal record no matter what!" said Gerald who had been quiet for a while.

"F*ck! Shut up already! You really like to say inauspicious things! People acquainted with you must be really unlucky!" scowled Lilian toward Gerald unceremoniously.

“That’s enough Lilian. There’s no point in scolding him now. Let him say whatever he wants. After all, only Hayward and I participated in the fight! I think Gerald’s just making fun of us at this point!” said Sharon as she rolled her eyes at Gerald.

Hayward’s father arrived shortly after. Both parties were then taken to the interrogation room to meet with one another. Two policemen were present to mediate the situation.

Hayward’s father had some connections too. After all, he couldn’t just rely on the Mayberry Commercial Group when his son had gotten into a fight and beaten someone up.

Asking for help from the Mayberry Commercial Group now would simply be giving others a reason to look down on them.

Therefore, Hayward’s father could only depend on his personal relationships and connections. Due to the absence of help from the Mayberry Commercial Group, both sides now had equally strong backgrounds that resulted in a stalemate.

It didn’t help that his son was unscathed while Murphy was badly hurt. After all, no matter who started the fight first, the one with more serious injuries would always be the victim.

“Dad, why have you gone silent! You have a solution in mind, don’t you? I don’t want to have a criminal record! What am I going to do if I have one? My whole life will be ruined!” said Hayward, his voice terrified. The realization had finally caught up to him that he was at the mercy of both Xyleena and Murphy now.

“Me too! Officer, you can look at the surveillance camera recordings! I was simply tagging along! I didn’t do anything at all! I’m a teacher please don’t place a criminal record on me!” begged Lilian and she quivered.

She then looked at Murphy who was sitting opposite her, “We were friends before this, right Murphy? Have you already forgotten our time together?”

“Humph! No, of course I haven’t! But you’re also part of the reason why Sharon cheated on me! No matter what the case is, my sister’s definitely getting to the bottom of the matter for me today!” said Murphy determinedly.

Hayward’s father sighed before frowning and looking at Xyleena. “Miss Xyleena, I am aware that you have a very broad network of connections. However, you shouldn’t push people into a dead-end either. I know people from the Mayberry Commercial Group. Do you really want people from that group to intervene in this matter?”

“Hehe... Don’t try to use the people there to scare me off. Do you think you’re the only one who knows people from the Mayberry Commercial Group?” replied Xyleena as she glared at him.

Hayward’s father gritted his teeth as he began contacting people from the group.

Xyleena began doing the same, though she also contacted Naomi this time.

This was because during the last incident, Naomi had explained everything that had happened to her. Naomi had even told Xyleena about the white-haired youth along with his men that had driven several Maybach cars over to rescue them.

“Naomi, I’m going to have to trouble you a little. Do you still have the contact number of the young man who had saved you last time? Could you contact him on my behalf? Our brother has been beaten up. Hadn’t he told you that you could contact him if you ran into any trouble in the future? Could you ask for his help now?”

“Hello, Chairman Lloyd! I’m the docking accountant for Yorknorth Mountain. Remember that time when we were having a meal together? I remember you saying that I could contact you if I ran into any trouble? Well... Right, yes that’s right... There’s just a small issue right now!”

Both parties had begun showing their impressive connections.

Lilian and Sharon could only stare at them, dazed.

D*mn it! Both Hayward and Murphy had quite complex backgrounds!

Sharon used to think that Murphy was just a young man who could only work hard and struggle at the bottom. However, his sister seemed to have very strong connections all over the place. She even had a team of people driving Maybach cars.

She was flabbergasted and if there was one thing she had come to learn from all of this, it was that life really was full of ups and downs.

She also learned to not look down on young or poor people ever again!

Chapter 345

Once the two parties had made their calls, they both waited in a temporary stalemate.

At the time, even the police couldn't really predict how the situation would end. The results later would be the deciding factor of whether today's events were going to be released to the public or remain private.

"Which party's going to come out on top?" muttered Sharon silently to herself, her heart filled with doubt and hesitation.

One moment, she was rooting for Hayward to be the victor, and the next, she was hoping that Murphy—who had still been sneakily looking at her with infatuated eyes—would be the one victorious.

To put it simply, an onslaught of complicated emotions were being flung at her.

While Sharon continued to wonder, footsteps could be heard from behind the interrogation room door.

Several footsteps in fact, and they all seemed to be moving rather hastily.

"Hell yeah, dad! Is Chairman Lloyd here?" asked Hayward excitedly.

“Don’t even dream about it. Chairman Lloyd and the others would never physically attend to deal with such matters!” replied Hayward’s father with a soft sigh.

The creak of an opening door was heard.

A group of middle-aged policemen entered the room immediately after.

“Sergeant Zales! Lieutenant Leeds!” shouted the two police officers immediately as they saluted them.

A group of men was also following behind them, an almost pressuring aura exuding from them.

“Ah, sergeant Zales. I was the one who had called Chairman Lloyd!” greeted Hayward’s father excitedly the moment he saw the attractive policewoman.

“Lieutenant Leeds! The victim’s side has already contacted Miss Naomi as well! The person who was beaten up was none other than Miss Naomi’s younger brother!” said Xyleena as she took a deep breath.

Even ** and ** were called here today!

Previously, she had found it hard to believe her cousin’s story when the white-haired youth and Maybach were added into the equation. However, she now knew that her cousin’s sister was definitely more powerful and capable than she was.

What followed was a short series of explanations, both parties expressing their positions to the two leaders.

“Mm? What Chairman Lloyd and what younger brother are you even talking about. Officer Wiles, have you sufficiently interrogated them on what truly happened?” asked George.

“Yes, I have. Murphy was the one who started the whole thing by hitting Sharon at Trinity Jewelers. What followed was that Sharon then called Hayward to beat Murphy up!”

“Well since neither party is willing to back down, there’s really no point deciding whether this matter should be settled privately or publicly. They’ll just go through normal procedures, administrative detention and also punishment! All the troublemakers are to be detained!” said George coldly.

At that moment, confusion swept through both parties.

“What do you mean by that? Aren’t you here to help?” asked Xyleena. She hadn’t expected that answer at all.

To think that her persistence was actually going to get her younger brother locked up!

What was going on here?

Was this really her sister’s power? If it wasn’t, who else could have gotten ** and ** to come here?

“You are Mr. Gerald Crawford, correct?”

A few people then turned to look around the room till their eyes were fixed on Gerald.

“That would be me,” said Gerald as he nodded.

The truth was, Gerald had already contacted Mr. Harrison much earlier on while he was still in the police car.

He had explained the entire situation to him.

Gerald was clean since there really wasn’t anything shady going on and he hadn’t actually done anything worth noting at the scene.

However, it was still surprising to see ** and ** in person. Gerald had initially just expected Mr. Harrison to speak to the police officers on his behalf.

“Well, you’re just an eyewitness in this case so you don’t need to stay here any longer. You may leave!”

“Alright, thanks for all your troubles!”

Gerald said nothing more and he simply walked out of the police station, leaving the others dumbfounded.

It was clear as day now.

The group of people there had come for Gerald.

As if it wasn’t clear enough, the men with strong auras completely ignored everyone else in the police station as they turned to leave together with Gerald.

“F*ck!”

Xyleena felt her face turn red with a cocktail of embarrassment, shock, and surprise.

The same went for Sharon and Lilian.

All of them were left speechless.

Gerald seemed to have very good connections and relationships. From their attitude toward him earlier, it was obvious that his connections were much better than Hayward’s father’s and even Xyleena’s!

‘Who exactly is Gerald?’

All of them were simultaneously thinking about this at the same time.

The weights that had been lifted off their chests seemed to have appeared again, this time possibly even heavier.

Xyleena wasn't expecting to get such a mental slap to her face like this!

Chapter 346

Aside from feeling ashamed, she was also starting to grow a little nervous. All three of the women were feeling the same emotion.

They were terrified to even think about the possibility of Gerald actually being a big boss!

As Gerald left through the police station's front door, he was surprised to see that Wesley—from the Bureau of Commerce—was already waiting for him in a car right outside.

Gerald got into the car.

Wesley smiled before saying, "Mr. Crawford, you were just a witness so why were you still being held on hold? Hahaha!"

Gerald knew that he was talking about the fact that Xyleena had continued to insist that he was an accomplice in the matter. "Don't even mention it, she just has a small grudge on me."

Gerald didn't need to get into the details so he simply provided a simple answer.

"I see, I see... By the way, Mr. Crawford, there's been something on my mind that I'm still unsure whether I should be sharing with you," said Wesley with a smile as he continued to drive Gerald back to his school.

Gerald had a good impression of Wesley.

He was a real leader who really wanted to further develop and help the business community in Mayberry City grow.

Due to that, Gerald leaned forward slightly to show that he was listening.

“So, here’s the thing. Some time ago, our business management team received a task indicator to strengthen our urban and rural economic construction. Of course, the business management bureau’s cooperation is necessary for us to achieve this. Therefore, I’ve planned to set up some pilot projects in other countries, cities, and townships!”

“I personally feel that I’ve already troubled you a lot, Mr. Crawford. Hence I decided to put some investment sources into some other big groups instead. Everything had been agreed on. Alas, who could have anticipated the Rye Group suddenly collapsing like that just a few days ago! Their collapse triggered a chain reaction, and many other related companies were affected because of that event. After all, all our original investments are now gone, just like that!” said Wesley as he smiled bitterly.

Gerald was unsure whether to laugh or cry. After all, he was the one who had ordered the Rye Group to be destroyed.

However, it would seem that destroying the group had brought trouble to several other people as well.

“So here’s my take on the situation, Mr. Crawford. I’ve found out that your hometown is a township in the Serene Country below Mayberry City. I’ve looked into the information and transportation location there and from what I found, it’s actually pretty good. If you would be willing to invest in the development of the enterprises there, it would only take a few years to improve the economy of the Serene Country. Naturally, we’ll also be providing all the resources as a form of support!”

Wesley was trying to get Gerald to invest in the project.

Knowing how efficient Wesley was, Gerald had no problem with it at all.

He would be completing his examination in seven more days. After he was done, Gerald would have more free time in the coming months to devote himself to the development of the projects.

What more, Gerald had previously thought about investing in his own hometown before. He had already been planning to talk to Wesley about it but Wesley had come to him instead!

Now that he had indirectly destroyed Wesley's original investment plan, Gerald saw no reason to refuse his request at all.

Besides, the sum Wesley was asking for wasn't too much for Gerald.

Thus, Gerald agreed to his request immediately.

Upon returning to his dormitory, Gerald found a safe spot to place the jade bracelets that he had bought.

Harper and Benjamin were busy studying at the time.

At that moment, he felt his cell phone vibrate in his pocket. It was his sister, Jessica.

Since it wouldn't be convenient for him to talk to her in the dormitory, Gerald headed for the bathroom.

According to his calculations, his sister should be arriving today. Gerald had been meaning to contact her as well.

As soon as he left, five people who were originally 'studying' in the dormitory put down their textbooks immediately.

One of the boys even moved to keep watch at the door.

"Harper! Look at that! He's bought some really expensive looking things again! If Hayley and Alice's guess is correct, then Gerald really is Mr. Crawford! We'll be able to have a higher status just being around him!" said Benjamin as he laughed.

This wasn't the first time the roommates, including Gerald himself, had stolen food from one another or rummaged through each other's belongings.

There was zero guilt in what they were currently doing.

What more, they were now very curious and keen to uncover Gerald's true identity now!

"I know right? I really hope Hayley and the others made a right guess!" said Harper as he smiled while scratching the back of his head.

His words were sincere, as Harper really would be happy for Gerald if the rumor turned out to be true.

At that moment, Harper suddenly received a video call request on WeChat.

Looking at the caller's contact name, he saw that it was Hayley.

"Harper! Harper, is Gerald back yet?"

"He just got back not too long ago but he's in the bathroom now. He's brought back two boxes of really expensive looking things!"

"Hey, I want to see it too!"

This time, it was Hayley's roommate who had butted in. In the background, Alice could also be seen with a curious look on her face.

It was clear that until they could uncover Gerald's true identity, these people wouldn't be able to sleep well. This was especially the case for Alice.

A day could feel like an entire year when a person was feeling desperate, and Alice had been feeling tormented for no short amount of time.

Should she apologize to Gerald?

Now that Mila wasn't here, was there a chance that she could get back together with him?

But what if Gerald turned out to not be Mr. Crawford and just some pathetic jerk?

D*mn it! The question was seriously driving her crazy.

"Hey Benjamin! Open it up to see what he bought this time!"

Chapter 347

"Holy! That's such a beautiful jade bracelet!"

Everyone was equally shocked when they saw what lay inside the parcel.

The receipt that came with the parcel made them even more shocked.

The two bracelets had cost more than forty thousand dollars.

"Hey, we want to see too!"

Jacelyn started jumping and shouting on the other side of the screen.

Harper and Benjamin took the jade bracelets out before showing it to them through his phone's camera. Gerald's other roommates continued looking at the boxes

Even the boxes didn't look cheap.

Everyone was now convinced about one thing. Gerald was rich! That was an undeniable fact,

At that moment, the boy standing by the door started whispering hurriedly, "Gerald's back! Put it away quickly!"

Harper immediately ended the video call as the other boys hurriedly placed the bracelets back into their original boxes.

When Gerald opened the door to enter the dormitory, he saw that all his classmates were standing. They all looked flustered as they stared at him.

It was a puzzling scene for Gerald so he simply smiled and asked, "What? Do you see money on my face?"

"Gerald, please tell us the truth. Are you really rich now?" asked Harper curiously.

"As if I've ever had any money in the first place," said Gerald reflexively.

"D*mn it! He's still trying to hide the truth from us! Brothers! Let's unite and crush him!"

Harper and the rest of the boys then lifted him up together before pinning his arms and legs on a bed.

They turned him around and took his pants off before spanking and tickling him mercilessly.

"Alright! Alright! I surrender! I'm rich now! Stop it already!"

Gerald knew that the cat was out of the bag and there was no point trying to hide it any longer.

It would appear that all his recent odd behaviors had caught Harper and Benjamin's attention.

They had a right to be doubtful. After all, how could such a miserably poor student suddenly become so rich? What more, he wasn't just rich. He was also very powerful.

Gerald had originally not intended to tell Harper and the rest the truth. This was because he was afraid that the brotherly affection he had with them would cease once money came into the equation.

However, he remained silent on the fact that he was indeed Mr. Crawford.

Despite that, his roommates had already speculated that there was a high chance of him definitely being Mr. Crawford.

No matter what they did, Gerald refused to reveal who he really was and wouldn't admit anything else, including how he got so rich all of a sudden.

There was nothing that Harper and the other boys could do.

Though they continued to fool around for a while, they were all genuinely happy for Gerald.

As for Gerald, he had already made up his mind a long time ago that he would definitely be helping all his brothers in their careers in the future.

Once things calmed down a little, the boys playfully blackmailed Gerald while they discussed among themselves how they were going to spend the next few days at school together. Everyone in the dormitory had helped Gerald before in the past. Therefore, he found no issue in treating them well now.

Once they were done revising and studying, Gerald and the boys went out to enjoy themselves. They ate, drank, and had loads of fun before finally returning to the dormitory to rest.

While all of that happened, that content of Jessica's call earlier has still been left undiscussed.

Dialing back in time a little, Gerald had just entered the bathroom when he finally picked up her call. He had wanted to ask his sister whether she would be coming and if she needed him to pick her up.

However, her response wasn't quite an expected one. She wasn't going to be able to make it over anymore.

"Brother, an important guest is visiting our family and dad has asked me to accompany them. I'm afraid that I won't be able to visit for a while. Dad told me to tell you about it!"

"I see. Well, it can't be helped!"

Gerald was honestly slightly disappointed. After all, he really missed his sister.

"Hey, do you remember that our father used to have a brother and comrade-in-arms back when we were in our old house in Mayberry City?"

"I do," said Gerald as he nodded.

It was a long story which he had heard from his father over the phone some time ago. Part of that story involved his father telling him that the Crawford family had always had a way of educating their children to survive in poverty.

His father had been no exception to that.

Chapter 348

Back then, his father lived in poverty and he had failed to pass the entrance examination to get into university. Therefore, Gerald's grandfather had forced him to serve as a soldier in the army instead. There, he met his comrade-in-arms.

After being in the army for two years, he returned to his hometown and took up farming.

He needed the money since he was broke.

Somehow, he managed to gather just enough to open a steamed bun shop and he stopped farming then. However, since his father wasn't one to just let a thief escape when he saw one, he ended up

maiming the thief. As a result, he had to give up his steamed bun shop to the other party as compensation.

By then, he had also borrowed a lot of money and had a lot of foreign debt.

It was a point in his life where he was so poor, that he didn't even have the money to celebrate the New Year. Seeing no other hope, he decided to look for his comrade-in-arms.

His comrade-in-arms lived within the country and came from a pretty rich family. Both his parents were civil servants so they naturally had a pretty good life.

However, every time his father arrived at his home according to the address he had been given, his comrade would never be available.

It was nothing short of cold and disappointing back then.

While they were brothers, they were extremely close to each other. They had even made a pact that their future sons would be brothers as well. If one of them bore a girl, then they would become a couple instead.

Well, apparently that pact was just a joke to his comrade.

From then on, he didn't try to contact him anymore.

Finally, when his father was at the ripe age of twenty-two, Gerald's grandfather finally told his father that he was actually a rich heir.

His father was then led to start up a business before he was finally able to inherit the riches of the Crawford family.

It wasn't until both Gerald and his sister had been born that his father and mother finally returned to their hometown. They both controlled their businesses remotely while also planning a proper poverty system to educate their children with.

Gerald could clearly remember that it was his neighbors, Mr. Winters and Mrs. Winters, who had taken care of Gerald and his sister for a large portion of their childhood. Their parents were always busy making money abroad to pay off their family's debts.

His parents would only come back to visit them twice or thrice a year at most to check up on their progress.

That was a basic summary of everything that had happened.

As for when his father would finally meet up with his comrade-in-arms again, it happened when Gerald was ready to begin his high school life. His father had brought him over to meet up with his old comrade-in-arms. Gerald's father remembered that his comrade had said that he did well in his studies. He now wanted him to help Gerald look for a good school.

When they finally locked eyes at the parking lot of his comrade's home, his comrade-in-arms simply said that he was busy with a meeting the moment his father asked for his help. He then immediately changed the topic and told his father to meet him again sometime in the future to reminisce about the past.

In the end, Gerald managed to enter a prestigious high school through his own good grades.

His father's comrade seemed to have a very high status and it felt normal that he would look down on Gerald and his family.

That was the only impression that Gerald personally had when he met his father's comrade-in-arms.

"What about it, sister?" asked Gerald as he shook his own thoughts aside for the moment.

“Well you see, dad has constantly been saying that he misses his old friends. However, you know that he’s always been indifferent to fame and fortune. Now that our poverty educating system is already over, it wouldn’t be convenient for dad to return to Mayberry City to visit his old comrade in person, with dad’s extremely high status and all. Yes, I know his so-called ‘comrade’ has always looked down on us and our dad, but our father likes to see the good in people. Since I can’t go back to personally do anything now, I’ll have to leave this matter to you now!”

“Since you’ll be staying in Mayberry City to clean up some of your business matters during summer break anyway, try taking a few days off to go home and stay there for a while. While you’re there, you could visit dad’s old friend as well as his special friend. I’ll be mailing something to you soon. It’ll contain the contact information and address of the special friend in it as well. You’ve never met the special friend before I think. If there’s anything you can do to help with the situation, please do so.”

“Also since Mr. Winters and Mrs. Winters had been taking care of us for so long, maybe build them a villa on the mountain. Make sure you give their children some money to help them too! Well, I’ll need to leave now, bye!”

After giving him so many instructions, she then hung up immediately.

Gerald could only feel puzzled at the moment.

Who was his father’s special friend?

Realizing that thinking about it wasn’t going to help, he simply shook his head before heading back to the dormitory.

Everything that happened after then played out as shown earlier

Back to the present, the night was silent as the boys slept peacefully.

Early in the morning the next day, Gerald had gone to the library with some textbooks in hand to study.

There were already several people there despite being this early.

Gerald simply walked on to his usual studying spot by the window.

As soon as he saw the familiar table, he was reminded of Giya. After all, this was where they had first met.

He had wanted to give her the jade bracelet which he had bought for her. However, he didn't see her on his usual routes and he didn't have her contact information either.

His secondary mission at the library was to see if he could finally meet up with her again.

After sitting down, Gerald found himself looking up from time to time.

All the while he did so, a few well-mannered looking girls who had been sitting at another corner of the library continued to observe Gerald's actions.

"Hey, hey! Who do you think that pathetic looking jerk is looking for?" asked one of the girls as she smiled.

Chapter 349

"Who knows? Didn't Giya say that he had an actual nosebleed the first time he saw her? Apparently he grew too excited from her scent! I don't buy it honestly!"

"Yeah! Why don't boys have nosebleeds when they see me then? Don't you agree Giya? I really think he's looking for you!"

The girls continued to chatter silently among themselves.

Giya could only blush as she sat there.

She had felt embarrassed back then in the library when Gerald had his nosebleed.

Now she was even more embarrassed with her friends constantly teasing her about it.

They were supposed to be studying now.

Much earlier, Tammy had nudged Giya gently before pointing toward the door.

Giya and her group of friends then saw Gerald entering with his books in hand. He seemed to be looking for someone for a while before finally deciding to sit down.

His quirky actions had prompted the girls to start discussing about him.

“Hey, Gerald!” yelled Tammy softly out of the blue. Since it was quiet in the library, Gerald heard her call almost immediately.

When he looked up, he saw Tammy standing a distance away as she signaled him with her hand to come over.

Gerald could see that Giya and the other girls were seated there as well.

Gerald was pleased that he had finally found her.

He then walked over to them.

“Hey Gerald, what exactly have you been looking for since you stepped into the library? Are your classmates here too?” asked Tammy with a smile as soon as he got close enough to their table.

“Huh? Not at all!” replied Gerald nervously.

‘D*mn it! So they had been observing me from the moment I stepped into the library!’

“Hmm? Then what are you looking for?”

“Hahaha! I knew it. You were looking for Giya, weren't you? Trying to find her at the library?” said Tammy in between giggles. She covered her mouth to make sure she wasn't too loud.

“I...” Gerald froze momentarily. He didn't have a good comeback.

It was certainly a little embarrassing for someone to read him like an open book that easily.

Giya raised her face to look at Gerald, a mix of doubt and expectation showing on her face. She was wondering whether Tammy's assumption was right as well.

“Well... Yes, I admit that I was looking for Giya. I had broken your bracelet last time and I wanted to compensate you,” said Gerald in a defeated tone.

“Oh? There's really no need for you to do that, Gerald! The bracelet isn't that expensive, only a few thousand dollars. However, in all honesty, I've been looking for you as well. I want to properly thank you for your help the other day!” said Giya who had initially looked slightly dazed from his confession, though it quickly turned into a smile when she found out about his true intentions.

Of course, she hadn't meant to be rude by her statement. A few thousand dollars really was nothing to someone like Giya who had an excellent family background.

It was the only reason why she could say it so casually.

“Well, since you want to thank Gerald anyway, how about this. Since it's still pretty early, you've probably not had breakfast yet, have you Gerald? It just so happens that a new breakfast shop has opened right next to our university! Why don't we have a chat while we have our breakfast together there?” said Tammy as she smiled.

“You're being given a chance to treat six beauties to breakfast, Gerald! You'd better take advantage of this opportunity!” she added with a grin.

“Definitely! Let’s go!” replied Gerald as he nodded.

“Gerald doesn’t need to treat us. Everything all of you order will be on me today!” replied Giya, a hearty smile on her face.

With that said, all of them agreed and they left the library together.

“You girls can go ahead first, I have to get something back in my dormitory. Don’t worry I’m not running away!” said Gerald before splitting with the group of girls for now.

He had gone back to retrieve the jade bracelet.

Gerald wanted to give it to her as soon as possible so that he wouldn’t feel like he owed her anything anymore.

Giya was truly beautiful and she was definitely the kind of girl who could make any boy feel a strong desire for her with a single glance.

Chapter 350

However, Gerald’s heart was reserved solely for Mila.

He had always felt guilty whenever he had too many interactions with girls like this.

That was also the reason why Gerald had constantly hidden and kept his distance from both Alice and Jacelyn.

Upon entering the dormitory, Gerald took the box containing the hetian jade bracelet. He then told Harper and the other boys about his plan before running downstairs to look for the girls again.

While this was happening, the girls had arrived and found a table for themselves at the breakfast place.

As soon as they sat down, Tammy and the other girls covered their mouths as they started laughing.

“Giya, I’m very sure that Gerald kid really likes you!”

“Same here! You girls may not know it, but I’ve already done some research on him. Gerald seems to be from the Department of Language and Literature. He’s also a pauper!”

“So what if he’s poor? Do you think Giya’s someone who lacks money? At most, Giya can just give him a career after both of them get married!”

“That’s true! In fact, he has a chiseled face too!”

“Alright, calm down girls! What on earth are all of you on about? What do you mean what’s the big deal after we get married? Gerald’s a pretty decent and honest person. It’s fine if you want to joke around with me but don’t tease him like this later. No matter how you dice it, Gerald has already helped me once!” said Giya with a sigh.

She couldn’t stand her group of sisters sometimes.

The more they spoke, the more excited they would become and this more often than not, led them to go a bit overboard.

“But Giya, you’ve never been in love before, right? Don’t you want to experience how it feels like to be in a relationship?” asked Tammy.

“So what if I’ve never dated before? I don’t really see anything impressive about you seasoned girls!” replied Giya, a wry smile on her face.

“Giya, what a coincidence. Are you girls having breakfast here too?”

Out of the blue, a boy walked up to them while they were still chatting among themselves.

His eyes had lit up immediately the moment he saw Giya and her group.

In his hands, was a very beautiful looking box.

“Yes, truly a coincidence Yacob. Why are you here?” said Tammy as she smiled while waving a hand.

Her tone had turned into a flattering one.

The boy before them was indeed, Yacob. The one who had pulled Gerald away from Giya the other day in the infirmary.

In truth, his family’s financial background was rather well-to-do.

They owned their own company and were quite powerful.

Due to that, Yacob could drive a BMW 7 Series which cost more than a hundred and twenty-one thousand dollars.

That was why Tammy and the other girls naturally thought highly of him.

After all, any girl who ended up marrying Yacob would definitely be able to enjoy a very nice and stable rest of their lives.

Yacob had been trying to get Giya’s affection for a long time now but she just didn’t have any feelings for him.

“What are you girls laughing about? I just so happened to be thinking about looking for Giya too! What a coincidence that we managed to meet just from that thought alone!” said Yacob with a smile as he comfortably sat on the seat which had initially been reserved for Gerald.

“We were talking about how we would all be graduating soon and how Giya still didn’t have a boyfriend. Any suitable candidates in mind, Yacob?” asked Tammy as she blinked her eyes.

“Is that so? Well, that depends on whether Giya is interested in me...”

There was a quiver of excitement in Yacob’s voice as he said that.

“Alright, we’re done talking about that. Tell me, Yacob. Why were you looking for me?” asked Giya as she forced on a smile.

“Well, your jade bracelet was broken because I was a bit too reckless. That’s why I bought you a new one! Here, why don’t you try it on to see whether you like it or not?” said Yacob as he placed a jade bracelet on the table.

Tammy and the other girls all gasped in surprise after opening the box.

“F*ck! That looks amazing! How much did you spend on it?” shouted Tammy. Her voice attracted the attention of a few other girls who were also having their breakfast there.

One after another, the girls tried peeking from where they sat to see what the commotion was about.

Yacob smiled faintly before saying, “Why don’t you try making a guess? If you guess it right the first time, then I’ll get one for you too! Hahaha!”

Chapter 351

It was at that moment when Gerald finally arrived.

In his hand was his own bracelet which he had bought the day before.

Though Giya had said that breakfast was going to be on her, Gerald had given it some thought while he was on his way there. Since he was planning to leave the girls alone once the bracelet had been handed over to her anyway, he might as well treat them to one final breakfast.

He was prepared to pay the bill no matter what.

However, as he approached their table, he noticed that Yacob was also there. What more, it seemed that Yacob had just given Giya his own bracelet gift.

“Gerald! Over here!”

Giya had not wanted to look at Yacob so she had been staring at the staircase. The moment she saw him, she smiled and waved her hand to call Gerald over.

“Why’s that kid here too?”

The expression on Yacob’s face instantly soured the moment he saw Gerald.

It was a rare occasion for him to be able to spend time together with Giya and the other girls. However, Yacob’s jealousy evaporated the moment he saw how Gerald was dressed.

However, it was still slightly troubling to him since Gerald was obviously getting closer to Giya.

“Of course he’s here! Giya specially invited Gerald here for breakfast today! You’re actually sitting in his seat now, Yacob!” replied Tammy.

“Hold on... What’s that in your hand, Gerald?”

“Well, it’s partly my fault that her bracelet fell out of my hands the day before so I got her a new one!” replied Gerald bluntly.

“Gerald! Didn’t I say you didn’t have to compensate me? You’re spending way too much money for just a jade bracelet! I never blamed you in the first place!”

It was no secret to her that Gerald wasn’t too rich since she overheard conversations about him from time to time.

It was too bad since he was the one who had helped her in the first place. However, now he had spent so much just because of her.

How could she possibly rest easy?

What more, Giya really hadn't thought much about the bracelet since it wasn't really worth much to her anyway.

She felt slightly anxious now.

"Hah! How much money would this kid even have to spend in the first place? You're overthinking it, Giya. He probably bought the gift for a few dollars at the night market!" said Yacob coldly.

"Hahaha! Don't worry we're aware of the possibility. How could Gerald ever afford to pay for a seven thousand and five hundred dollar bracelet?" Tammy laughed after saying that.

"Also, tell us the price of the jade bracelet already! We really can't guess it!" she continued.

"Alright, alright. I'll just tell you the price then. It's not too much. It only cost around eighteen thousand dollars!"

While he was speaking, he kept peeking at Giya to see what her reaction was.

However, Giya's expression remained indifferent.

All the other girls however, were stunned.

"Eight... Eighteen thousand dollars?!" shouted Tammy.

The other girls couldn't say anything, their mouths wide open in shock.

Even a few other female students who were sitting close by constantly peeked at their table.

The bracelet itself already looked spectacular from every angle and felt like a rare gem.

The price reveal after was simply too outrageous and several girls in the shop ended up looking at Yacob with different expressions on their faces.

"My god, Yacob! You're really willing to spend for Giya!" said one of the girls enviously.

After all, the man had spent eighteen thousand dollars just to buy a gift! How capable was he in order to afford that without going broke?

Were there any girls who could resist this kind of temptation in the world?

"Do you like it Giya?"

Despite knowing that Giya didn't like him, even if she had a heart of stone, she'd definitely be moved by his gift this time, right?

Giya didn't bother to answer his question. Honestly she was starting to get fed up with him.

After getting ignored despite his good intentions, Yacob couldn't help but feel slightly uncomfortable.

While all this was happening, Gerald was still standing where he initially was with his own jade bracelet in hand.

Chapter 352

"Heh. Hey, your name's Gerald, right? Why don't you take out the jade bracelet you bought for Giya and show it to us too?"

In his mind, Yacob thought that Gerald was most definitely the reason why Giya had been ignoring him all this time.

Therefore, he was targeting Gerald now.

“Forget about mine! The jade bracelet which I bought is nowhere near as good as yours. You don’t have to look at it!” said Gerald truthfully.

After all, he had simply bought a jade bracelet which cost seven thousand and five hundred dollars for Giya. It was nowhere near the absurd price of Yacob’s gift.

Besides, if he really wanted to mock Yacob, it’d be easier for Gerald to just slap the boy in the face.

However, Gerald didn’t want to get involved with him or Giya and her friends too much in the future so he abstained for now.

Mila was sincere to him so he wanted to do the same.

Therefore, there was no reason for him to compete with Yacob. Nothing good would ever come of it nor would he gain anything.

“That’s right, Gerald! Don’t be shy, we won’t laugh at you. Show us already!” said Tammy.

Before he could even respond, Tammy had already walked up to Gerald. She grabbed the box from his hand and placed it atop the table.

All the girls were looking forward to it.

Imagine comparing an eighteen thousand dollar jade bracelet to one that just cost a few dollars!

The difference would be like heaven and hell.

Tammy opened the box in one swift movement.

Gerald simply lowered his head, knowing he was about to get ridiculed. After this, he would simply need to look for a reason to excuse himself and leave.

Everything would be settled and he wouldn't owe Giya anything anymore.

He waited for the mocking to start.

He waited, and waited, and waited.

But it never came. Neither Tammy nor Yacob were mocking him at all.

Peeking up to see what was taking them so long, he saw Tammy staring at his jade bracelet, an extreme look of shock on her face.

"Gerald... this... this bracelet... You bought this jade bracelet?" stuttered Tammy when she finally mustered the strength to speak.

The rest of the girls had still not recovered from the revelation, their mouths left wide open, speechless.

"F*ck! That's the dragon jade bracelet! I saw this thing online and it sold for about thirty thousand dollars!"

"I've heard about it too! Could this just be a high grade imitation jade bracelet? I'd like to believe so but... The color. It just seems too realistic to just be an imitation!"

"What do you mean a high grade imitation? It's really easy to authenticate it from a fake so imitating it in the first place is impossible!"

“That’s true! Oh my god! Gerald’s jade bracelet is worth thirty-two thousand dollars!”

If the girls had not actually seen and held on to the actual product at that moment, they wouldn’t have believed that statement even if it cost them their lives.

However, there it was. The dragon jade bracelet in their hands.

Gerald was stunned as well and he felt cold sweat begin to drip from his forehead.

F*ck! He had grabbed the wrong box this morning! Even though the two boxes were quite similar, Gerald had marked them with the numbers, seven and thirty-two, to differentiate them.

He made sure to check that he was holding on to the cheaper bracelet’s box before he left with it, so what was the thirty-two thousand dollar dragon jade bracelet doing here?

D*mn it!

Gerald’s heart was beating frantically.

Everyone else was still shocked speechless!

Even the surrounding female student customers had gotten off their seats and gathered around their table by this point.

“Let me see that!” said Giya as she gingerly took the jade bracelet from Tammy’s hands.

After carefully examining it, Giya looked at Gerald with a look of disbelief on her face. “...It’s the real deal. It’s absolutely authentic. Gerald, did you buy this?”

Gerald had no idea how to answer her.

While all this was happening, Yacob's face had grown to be as red as a tomato. His cheeks were flushed with both surprise and anger. He felt as if he had just been slapped hard on the face!

"H-heh! And here I thought that you were an honest guy. You're just another one of those pretentious folk, aren't you? Saying that your own bracelet wasn't as expensive as mine... You're doing this on purpose to mock me, aren't you?"

Even Yacob's taunts were said in a slightly quivering voice. He couldn't help but feel extremely anxious at how he utterly lost face today.

"I... didn't... mean it... I really thought that mine was cheaper than yours... Who could have guessed that it was actually more expensive?"

Those words were true as Gerald had not wanted to compare his bracelet to Yacob's in the first place.

At that moment, Gerald suddenly recalled that he hadn't touched the two jade bracelets at all since he had brought them back to the dormitory. Someone must have either accidentally, or deliberately switched them around. He would ask Harper and the boys about it when he got back.

Hearing Gerald's honest reply, Yacob felt like he had received a punch in the gut this time. He was beyond embarrassed at this point.

"Hurry up and answer us Gerald! Did you buy this jade bracelet?"

All the girls were looking at Gerald expectantly. Their eyes were sprinkled with both admiration and excitement at the same time.

Chapter 353

"This jade bracelet... was originally my grandmother's. Since I have nothing else to compensate Giya with, I'm giving this to her instead..." lied Gerald.

“Oh my god! Gerald, don’t you know the value of this bracelet? Are you sure you aren’t going to regret it if you give it to Giya now? I’m telling you seriously that it’s still not too late for you to regret it now!” said Tammy as she felt the weight on her chest slowly lift.

God d*mn! She was almost scared to death just now. If Gerald had actually bought the jade dragon bracelet that cost thirty-two thousand dollars, then he could possibly be a low key rich heir!

Unlike most other girls, Tammy hadn’t felt any contempt toward Gerald.

However, it would have been beyond surprising and unbelievable if a pauper like Gerald suddenly turned out to be a heir richer than all of them there could ever be.

Fortunately, that wasn’t the case.

“I didn’t know the value of the dragon jade bracelet before this but I do now. I don’t regret anything. Do accept it, Giya,” replied Gerald as he gently pushed the box with the bracelet in it back to Giya.

Since such an embarrassing thing had already happened, Gerald could only play along with his lie. After all, he couldn’t possibly take back what he had already given out.

As for Giya, she simply stared at Gerald with her eyes wide open.

The bracelet was precious. It could even be the most valuable and precious item in Gerald’s family. But here he was, just giving it to her.

Giya was touched beyond words.

As for Yacob, steam was erupting from his ears.

He had lost face severely today since he had been caught completely off guard!

What more, it was even more embarrassing since it all happened in the presence of his personal goddess! He felt that he was only going to further bring shame to himself if he continued staying there.

After glaring daggers at Gerald, Yacob got up and huffed before leaving angrily.

Gerald himself wanted to leave.

After all, his main goal to hand Giya the bracelet had been completed. He didn't even want to stay for breakfast anymore.

He felt that the longer he stayed, the more awkward the situation would become.

Therefore, he came up with a random excuse to leave before turning around and descending the stairs quickly.

"Hold on, Gerald!"

Giya chased after him, running down the stairs with the bracelet in hand.

After peeking shyly at Gerald, she returned the bracelet to him before saying, "What do you mean by this? This is unacceptable. Why are you giving me the jade bracelet that your grandmother left behind for you? I can't even begin comparing the value of this to my old bracelet!"

"Huh? I don't mean anything at all. Just think of it as compensation for the bracelet I broke!"

It would be too embarrassing for him to explain that he had bought a much cheaper bracelet for her. He didn't even want to think about asking Giya if she could exchange the dragon jade bracelet for the hetian one instead.

"You can't just expect me to treat it as a mere compensation! This is the most valuable and precious item in your family. Your grandmother left this behind for you! It should only be given to the future daughter-in-law of the Crawford family! You can't just give a girl something like this and call it a

compensation! Do you even know what Tammy and the others were saying the moment you left just now?" said Giya as her cheeks began to blush.

Giya was an extremely good-natured goddess and she had been pursued by countless boys before this. However, very few of them were able to touch Giya's heart.

Of course, she wasn't interested in Gerald just because he had given her the dragon jade bracelet. She simply felt touched.

Yet at the same time, an indescribable feeling for Gerald had begun to sprout deep down in her heart.

She simply felt that he was a very honest and sincere person toward everyone around him. It was rare to find such a boy now.

He studied well and worked hard as well.

She finally understood that it was the feeling of admiration...

Her chain of thoughts were broken when Gerald asked, "What did Tammy and the others say?"

"I... don't know," said Giya as she looked to the side for a moment before looking back at Gerald. "Either way, this is simply too valuable! I refuse to accept it!"

"I insist that you do. After all, we'll be graduating soon and once school starts again, very few people will continue to stay in the university. I'm afraid that I may not have the opportunity to compensate you again in the future!" replied Gerald with a bitter smile on his face.

"Pfft!"

His words really amused Giya. "By any chance, are you the type of person who doesn't like owing others favors, Gerald?"

"I am!" said Gerald before nodding.

"Well, alright. I'll hold on to this jade bracelet for the moment. I'll return it to you when you're about to get married in the future then!" replied Giya with a huge smile on her face.

"Okay!"

Not thinking too hard about it, Gerald thought that the matter had finally been resolved the moment Giya accepted the jade bracelet. Therefore, he found no reason to stay any longer.

"Hey! Hey, Gerald!"

Chapter 354

Giya ran after him again. "You know, it's going to be difficult for you to notify me when you're actually getting married. Why don't we exchange contact information to ease that process?"

"That... Well, alright. Let me add you on WeChat. I'll definitely let you know when it happens!"

Gerald didn't know what else to say.

He couldn't just refuse and turn around to leave. He just wasn't that kind of person. After all, Giya would definitely lose face if he had left without accepting her offer.

So he simply went along and added Giya on his WeChat account.

Of course, Gerald wasn't that narcissistic to believe that such a beautiful goddess would ever like him.

Even after adding her on WeChat, he felt that they wouldn't be talking much with each other anyway.

He tried his best not to think too much about it.

Once the exchange was done, Giya took the bracelet with her as she walked upstairs again. At the time, several of the girls were still doubtful about Gerald's claims.

"Giya! Giya, he didn't want to take it back?" asked the girls with smiles on their faces as they saw her slowly return to their table.

"Hahaha! See, I guessed correctly! Gerald's absolutely in love with you, Giya! He's given you the most precious and valuable thing in his family! That alone is enough to explain everything!" said Tammy confidently.

"That's right! The rest of you probably hadn't noticed earlier, but Gerald had been looking at Giya as though he was afraid that she would reject his gift!"

"Hey, hey! All of you should know that this kind of jade bracelet is usually given to a family's future daughter-in-law! Hahaha! That kid's really smart!"

The girls continued talking among themselves in glee.

"Alright girls, settle down. Gerald's not how you guys are imagining him to be like at all. He's not a cunning or scheming person. I honestly hope that you girls will stop picking on him all the time in the future!" said Giya with a slightly forced smile on her face.

"Oh? Being protective and defensive of Gerald? Giya, don't tell me you've..." said Tammy as she acted out a look of surprise while looking at Giya.

"If you spout any more nonsense, then I'm buying three trays of buns later to stuff them up your foul mouth!"

The girls simply laughed at that and continued chatting.

Gerald on the other hand, couldn't go back to the library. When he arrived there, it was already full.

Seeing nowhere else to go, he sighed before returning to his dormitory to study instead.

He was planning to go out for lunch with Harper and the rest at noon anyway.

Unexpectedly, he received a WeChat message from Giya not too long after.

“Say, Gerald, which cafeteria are you going to be eating at for lunch?” she asked.

“I’m probably leaving the decision to my roommates. We’ll be eating out together. Why?” replied Gerald, slightly surprised by the message.

“Oh! You’re eating out with them? I was initially planning to invite you over to lunch. After all, you’ve already helped me twice!”

“Twice?” Gerald scratched the back of his head, confused.

“Yes! You carried me to the infirmary the other day, and today, you helped me get rid of that annoying Yacob! Hahaha! He must be feeling extremely embarrassed right now. Hopefully he’ll leave me alone now and I can finally have some peace!”

“Well, he’s not a bad person. I do think that he likes you very much.”

“??? What are you implying? Does that mean I have to be his girl? Are you giving us your blessings?”

“No, I didn’t mean it that way!”

“Well, it would be useless even if you did. I’m unwilling to be with someone that I have no feelings for anyway! By the way, I’ll be at the library later at noon to study. I’ll reserve a seat for you. Why don’t you come over and study together later? We can be study companions!”

Gerald stared at his phone’s screen. He was unsure of how to reply.

At the very least, he was certain that she wasn't interested in him.

However, he couldn't help but feel slightly awkward every time he was around her. He was honestly afraid that he would end up falling for her.

After thinking about it for some time, he felt that it would be better if he stopped doing such things.

Therefore he decided not to reply at all.

He then went downstairs to eat with Harper and the others.

However, he didn't go to the library once his lunch was over. He simply stayed in his dormitory to study.

The afternoon passed by quickly.

Around evening, Giya sent him another message.

"Why didn't you come? I reserved a good seat for you and I've been waiting since half past one for you to come. Are you busy with something else?"

Chapter 355

"Sorry, there were just too many people in the library earlier for my comfort! I just studied in my dormitory!" replied Gerald.

"Oh, I see! Well, from now on, we can go to the library earlier. Whoever comes first can reserve a seat for the other, alright?"

"Actually there's something I have to attend to now, I'll get back to you later!"

Gerald threw his cell phone aside after replying to her message.

He was indeed, trying to avoid her. In fact, ever since things had gotten better with Mila, Gerald had been deliberately trying to keep his distance from other girls.

After all, once the current exams were over, Gerald and the other students from his department would still have to stay back in school for another three months to deal with their thesis and dissertations.

Those from Giya's and most other departments would have left to get their internships during that time.

He would never see her again.

Gerald also knew for a fact that he could never fit in well in Giya's circle of friends.

With that reasoning in mind, his muddled thoughts became clear and he didn't spend time worrying about it any longer.

After that, two days just came and went without much of a hitch.

During those two days, Giya would always send him a message in the morning and the afternoon, saying that she had already reserved a seat for him in the library and that she was waiting for him to come study with her.

Every time she asked, Gerald simply made up an excuse to turn her down.

Aside from that, she had also been inviting him for meals to express her gratitude. Since she knew that he would be uncomfortable if Tammy and the other girls were around, there was even a time when she asked if he wanted to eat with just the two of them together.

However, Gerald simply turned those invitations down as well with more of his excuses.

After that, Giya stopped asking him out. In the next three days, he didn't hear from her at all.

It almost seemed as though she had disappeared.

Gerald didn't think too much about it. He simply focused on studying and doing his own revision every day. He would also spend his time chatting with Mila about her recent developments.

Everything was back to normal.

Late one afternoon, Gerald was returning to school after meeting up with Zack. He stopped by the milk tea shop in front of the school as he was planning to get Harper and the other boys some drinks.

"Gerald?"

Out of the blue, a female voice called out to him.

When he turned around, he saw that it was Tammy. It seemed as though she was waiting in line to buy milk tea as well. Though she looked slightly surprised to see him there, she also had a very bitter expression on her face.

In the past, she would always laugh and tease him whenever she saw him.

However, the only look she was giving him now, was one filled with hatred.

Gerald didn't mind that. His milk tea was ready at that moment. He smiled at Tammy before saying, "I'll pay for this beautiful girl's drink as well!"

"Alright!" replied the seller with a smile on his face.

"There's no need for that! Who needs you to pay for me! Why are you so nosy?!" shouted Tammy in response as she glared at Gerald.

"I... Tammy, what did I do?" asked Gerald, confused.

"So you don't even know what you've done, huh. Don't you realize how many times you've already rejected Giya's invitations?" growled Tammy angrily as she frowned.

Gerald coughed. He knew this was coming.

"Do you know that Giya would wake twenty minutes earlier every day just so that she could go to the library and reserve a seat for you? When we asked her why, she told us that you would be joining us at the library to study together in the future. But you never came. You just kept making dumb excuses!"

"Even during her afternoon study invitations, she would always bring fruits along saying that she had already notified you about studying together. But of course you didn't go!"

"You did it to Giya for two days in a row! Don't even talk about the times Giya tried inviting you out for meals. She was so afraid that you just weren't used to eating out, that she even ordered and booked some food for you from the cafeteria! She just wanted to have lunch with you and she didn't even allow us to join her since she was afraid that we would tease you too much. Even then, you still refused to accept her invitation!"

Chapter 356

"Why are you hiding? Why can't you be more like a man? I can tell that Giya is into you even though we don't know why, but you have truly hurt her!" Tammy said.

Gerald immediately felt guilty after listening to her, because Giya had indeed invited him multiple times, but he had always rejected her offer.

Gerald thought that Giya was just being nice, but he never knew that she had always been serious about it and had bought food, waiting for him at the canteen.

Gerald felt very guilty toward her.

"Do you know what Giya said about you?"

“What?”

“Giya thinks that you’re a nice and honest guy. She also thinks that you’re quite cute, and she would really love to be friends with you. However, who knew that you were just a jerk! Giya is in trouble and you’re here buying drinks for pretty girls! You don’t even care one bit about Giya at all. She was so wrong about you!” Tammy immediately felt better after releasing her emotions at Gerald.

Gerald was shocked. “Giya is in trouble?”

“It’s not Giya, it’s her mom. Her mom has fallen very ill. It was that day when she asked you for lunch at the canteen. She brought some home-cooked food and waited for you there, yet how dare you call it off again! She then received a call from home saying that her mom had fainted and she immediately left after taking leave!”

“All of us could tell that you never saw Giya as a friend before! If so, why did you give her such a precious jade bracelet?!” Tammy glared at Gerald.

Then, as her drink was ready, she paid and left Gerald alone there, dumbfounded.

Gerald felt really guilty and heartbroken, not because he was in love with her or something, but it was because Giya actually saw him as a friend, but he had not really cared about her at all. Even when she was going through a tough time with her family, she had waited for him at the canteen, and yet, during these three days, Gerald had not even bothered contacting her at all.

Gerald opened up his social media and saw Giya’s post about her mother which said ‘Hope you’ll get well soon, mom. Everything will get better! Daddy and I will look for the best doctor in the world for you!’.

That post was three days ago, and Gerald had not even asked if she was doing okay!

Gerald felt really bad, but at the same time, he did not know what to do either.

Tammy had not gone far yet, and Gerald immediately gave chase to catch up to her.

“What do you want?” Tammy asked coldly.

“I just want to know which hospital is Giya’s mother in and what disease does she have?” Gerald asked.

“Only now do you bother to ask? What a jerk!” Tammy scolded him.

“She’s in the Provincial People’s Hospital. It’s a very rare and troublesome sickness. Many doctors could not diagnose it either!” Tammy said curtly, and then, she left.

Gerald was still contemplating whether or not he should visit them. If he went, he would not know what to say to them, and he could not help them either.

Suddenly, Gerald remembered something. Now that he had control of the Military Emergency Base, he might be able to help Giya’s mother.

The Military Emergency Base was where they kept all the weapons, medical equipment, and even confidential information. According to Mr. Kendall, these were the worlds’ most powerful sources, and maybe, the medical information that they held might be able to help Giya.

Gerald immediately gave a call to Drake.

Chapter 357

“Yes, Mr. Crawford. I’m at the military base. What is your command?”

Drake and Tyson had become Gerald’s bodyguards, but they didn’t need to follow him around for 24 hours, and hence, he had put them in charge of the military base.

“Can the resources at the military base help diagnose unknown diseases?” Gerald asked.

“Of course. The medical department in the military base includes the best doctors in all fields. They can cure most diseases! What do you need, Mr. Crawford?”

“There’s a patient whose daughter’s name is Giya in the Provincial People’s Hospital. She’s a student at Mayberry University. Please look it up and send the best doctors over!”

“Understood, Mr. Crawford!”

Gerald then hung up the phone. That was all he could do to help. He was not hoping that Giya would thank him since he was not supposed to expose himself anyway.

After that, he went back to his own hostel to study.

Meanwhile, at the Provincial People’s Hospital. “Doctor, please help my wife! No matter how much it costs, I’ll be willing to pay!” A middle-aged man was begging the doctor at the Provincial People’s Hospital desperately. Beside the man was a young and pretty lady with her eyes filled with tears. These two were none other than Giya and her father, Walton Quarrington.

“Mr. Quarrington, we have informed the worlds’ best doctors over to help, but honestly speaking, none of us have seen a disease like this before. Please be rest assured that we will try our best!” The doctor said.

Walton fell backward, but luckily, Giya was there to hold him. He then sat on the chair to rest.

“Dad, should we make a call to Yanken? They should be able to help!” Giya was heartbroken to see her father like that.

Walton shook his head. “No. We don’t have anything to do with your grandparents anymore. There is no reason for them to help us! I just hope that this isn’t your mother’s destiny... She has been suffering for most of her life with me!” Walton cried as he said this, and Giya cried with him too.

“Mr. Qarrington, Giya, we are here to visit Mrs. Quarrington!” A few people came up.

It was Giya’s roommates and a guy named Yakob Lincoln.

They had brought along many things. Tammy had gone back to the hostel and come along with them as well.

“Nice to meet all of you, Giya’s friends! Thank you all so much.” Walton forced a smile to greet them.

“Thanks for coming, guys!” Giya was touched.

“Anything for you, Giya. How’s Mrs. Quarrington doing?” Tammy asked worriedly.

“The doctors have brought in some specialists this morning, but they still couldn’t figure out what was wrong!” Giya said as she shook her head and cried.

“Maybe I can get my dad to bring some doctors over to have a look? He’s overseas now and knows some pretty well-known doctors,” Yakob said.

Both Walton and Giya were hopeful again, and Walton immediately thanked him. “That would be really helpful, Yakob! Thank you so much!”

“You’re welcome, Mr. Quarrington. After all, Giya is my classmate!” Yakob smiled.

Yakob immediately gave his father a call. Deep down, he knew that his father’s connections were not as good as Mr. Quarrington’s. He was not sure if his father could even be of any help at all, but he had to try.

Chapter 358

Yakob’s father immediately promised him when he heard about the situation. He only had this one son, and he had to help him.

Yakob’s father immediately contacted the doctors he knew from overseas as well as local Traditional Chinese Medicine doctors.

Yakob then went back happily and said, “Mr. Quarrington, my dad has already arranged a few doctors to drop by tomorrow!”

Walton replied, “Thank you so much, Yakob! We will cover all the fees, and the Quarringtons will owe you one big favor!”

“Thank you so much, Yakob!” Giya said.

Yakob nodded and said, “You’re welcome!”

Meanwhile, overseas.

“Hey! It’s me, Mr. Lincoln. May I know if Specialist Dorian is in? Yes, tomorrow... oh, he’s not free? Okay, it’s alright, thank you!” Andy Lincoln was not very happy after being rejected.

He would be very embarrassed if he could not fulfill what his son had promised to other people.

He immediately contacted a few other specialists. Most of them had some time to spare, but it was quite tough to get them to fly over within two days. Especially since Mr. Lincoln was not a very big character, most of them would not rush over to Weston because of him.

Since he could not get any specialists from overseas, he contacted some doctors within the country, but all of them rejected him as well. All of them would only be free three days later.

Andy thought that three days should be fine.

He wanted to contact his son, but Yakob was on the phone. He then forgot about it, and in the blink of an eye, it was the next morning.

The next day, after the specialist conference had ended, the doctors and specialists still could not figure out the disease. Walton was covered in sweat already.

Suddenly, two doctors rushed over excitedly.

“There's good news, doctor!” One of the doctors shouted excitedly.

The head doctor frowned and glared at them, signaling that Mr. Quarrington was still there.

“This is good news for Mr. Quarrington! There's a group of specialists outside waiting to see Mrs. Quarrington. There are at least ten of them from all around the globe!”

“A few of them are even famous specialists like Dr. Eden from M Country and Dr. Zachary. They've all come!”

“What?!” The head doctor and specialist were all shocked.

Giya and Walton were very surprised as well.

Tammy, Yakob, and the others were around as well.

Tammy and the others looked at Yakob in shock. They were all amazed by him. They never thought that Yakob could bring in any famous specialist since they were all very clear about Yakob's family status. Even though his family was doing not too badly, it was not as great as the Quarringtons.

They all thought that if Mr. Quarrington himself could not do anything any longer, how could Yakob do anything?

Yet, Yakob's father had managed to bring in so many specialists! Was he still the Yakob Lincoln everyone knew?

What was going on?!

Chapter 359

After hearing about the situation, the specialists went into the ward. The head doctor did not dare to stop them.

All of these specialists were the greatest of their time. They only came out three and a half hours later.

The specialist told the hospital that the patient had recovered from the disease, and she just had to rest well.

“Please stay for the interview, doctors!” The head doctor immediately asked them to stay.

The specialist did not bother about him and walked out of the hospital.

“They were telling the truth, doctor! The patient has indeed gotten better!” One of the doctors in charge said excitedly.

Walton and Giya were very touched.

“Thank you so much, Yakob! I’ll have to thank your father personally when he comes back!” Walton said.

“Anything for you, Mr. Walton!” Yakob felt incredible in front of them, but at the same time, he was really confused.

Had his father really called those specialists over?

Yakob could not believe it. He immediately called his father from the washroom.

“Dad, did you call in those specialists?”

“What specialists?”

“The very famous Dr. Eden and Dr. Zachary. Did you call them?”

“Don’t be crazy! How could I possibly know those doctors?! I only called some ordinary specialists within the country. Don’t get too excited, son!”

Yakob instantly felt disappointed. He truly thought that those were the doctors his dad had contacted.

However, if it was not his dad, who could have called those doctors? Yakob was really curious.

“Yakob! We’ve been waiting for you. Mr. Quarrington asked Giya to bring us for dinner later!” Tammy and the others said happily.

Now that Giya was feeling better, Tammy and the others were happy for her!

“Sure! I didn’t really do anything though. Just called some doctors!” Yakob said.

Since everyone thought that it was Yakob who had helped the Quarringtons, Giya’s attitude toward him was better.

Yakob could never tell them the truth. After all, this was the best time to get Giya to fall for him.

Everyone was talking happily outside the ward.

Meanwhile, in the ward, Giya did not want to wake her mother up and his father called her to the side.

“Giya. I noticed that you’re not very fond of Yakob, but I think he likes you! Since you all are graduating and the Lincolns are doing better... They even helped us...”

“Dad! What are you talking about?!” Giya shouted.

“I’m just saying that you should treat Yakob better! He has helped us with a lot of trouble!” Walton said.

Giya thought about what had just happened, and she was confused. “But dad, don’t you think it’s weird?”

“What is?”

Giya said, “You know the Lincolns. And let’s be honest, those specialists that saved mum seemed really professional. They saved mum but did not ask for anything in return. They didn’t even communicate with us! The thing is, they didn’t look like they knew who Yakob was! It was as if they came here with a specific mission, not invited personally to cure mum!”

Walton nodded his head. “You’re right. It does indeed feel strange, but only Yakob called his father to bring in specialists to help us. Nobody else was here to help us, don’t even mention Yanken. It’s impossible that they would send help!”

“Didn’t Yakob call his dad to verify it earlier on? Maybe it was his father’s connections overseas. Don’t think too much about it, Giya!” Walton persuaded Giya.

Giya then went out with Yakob and the others.

“Giya, I saw Gerald before coming to the hospital!” Tammy said as they were eating.

Giya was stunned when she heard Gerald’s name. Her face changed, but it was mostly an expression of disappointment. “Oh.”

Chapter 360

Giya spoke gently.

Giya had been touched when Gerald had helped her and even given her something very precious to him.

She had then developed feelings for Gerald.

She had always thought about him whenever she was free. She found him really cute, but she knew that Gerald probably hated her.

She honestly wanted to be friends with him, but what Gerald had done to her made her truly disappointed.

“What’s so great about that poor peasant anyway?!” Yakob said angrily.

Everyone stopped talking about him after that, but Giya felt really upset. What was so bad about her? No guys had ever rejected Giya like that except Gerald.

When Gerald found out that Giya’s mother had recovered, he was instantly relieved, and his life continued as usual.

That same evening, Gerald brought some books over to return to the library. He saw a girl outside the library who seemed to be waiting for somebody.

Gerald was stunned. That girl was Giya!

Giya raised her head and saw Gerald.

“Hey, Giya! You came to study?” Gerald asked her awkwardly.

“Nope. I came to return some books!” Giya said.

Gerald felt genuinely guilty about what had happened previously.

“Have you eaten? I could treat you to a meal at the canteen. I’ve just heard about what happened to Mrs. Quarrington today. How’s she doing?” Gerald asked

“She’s doing better now, thanks for asking. Also, I’ve already eaten. Thanks for the offer, but I’m meeting with my friends!” Giya nodded politely.

“By the way, Gerald, regarding the bracelet you gave me previously. I thought of keeping it for you, but I’m not good at keeping stuff, and it would not be nice if people knew. I should return it to you. As for my bracelet that you broke, it’s fine. You don’t have to pay!” Giya took a bracelet out from her bag and handed it to Gerald.

At the same time, a Porsche Seven series stopped next to them.

Yakob rolled down the window and peered out, a pair of sunglasses perched on his face. “Hey, Giya! Sorry for being three minutes late! Where should we go for dinner tonight? You should pick a place!”

“Any western restaurant will do, Yakob. I’m fine with anything. You’ve been accompanying me at the hospital for days and even saved my mom. I know I have already treated you to lunch this afternoon, but dinner is on me too! I have to treat you individually!” Giya walked toward the co-pilot seat smiling.

Giya continued, “There’s a nice movie showing at the theater tonight as well! Shall we go for a movie?”

“Sure!” Yakob said happily.

Then, Yakob glared at Gerald proudly and drove off.

Gerald was stunned. Even though he was not in love with Giya, he did not feel good. Especially when he knew that the credit for sending those specialists was stolen by Yakob.

Giya was very grateful for Yakob and hence, they had gotten closer.

Should he tell the truth?

But still, what was the point in telling the truth? So that Giya would be grateful toward him and grow feelings for him again? The bracelet incident had ended, and Yakob had feelings for Giya, while Gerald already had Mila. Everything should stay that way.

Meanwhile, Giya left the school with Yakob.

“Giya, which restaurant would you like to go to? I know a place near the cinema, but the choice is still up to you...” Yakob was excited. He had been even more fired up when Giya had texted him to pick her up.

“Just stop in front...” Giya looked away from the back mirror and said disappointedly.

“Here? There’s no restaurant here, though?”

“I don’t want to go to a restaurant! Stop the car. I would like to go home!”

Chapter 361

Giya did not know what was wrong with herself either. It was strange seeing Gerald being like that.

'How could Gerald not be attracted to a girl like me?!' Giya still couldn't accept the fact.

Giya had purposely texted Yakob to pick her up just to show Gerald she was not that easy to get!

Girls were like that. As long as they were interested in you, they would try their best to get your attention.

However, Gerald didn't understand things like that.

When Giya had given him back the bracelet, she was hoping that Gerald would stop her, but he hadn't. He had even taken back the bracelet, and when Giya was being picked up by another guy, he did not say anything either.

Giya was really pissed off by Gerald. How could she still possibly want to have dinner with Jakob?! Hence, she really wanted to get out of the car.

Jakob was dumbfounded as he watched Giya get out of his car and call a taxi. He thought that it was something he said that had made her angry!

Meanwhile, Gerald had already gone back to his own hostel. He saw Harper smoking at the balcony as he scratched his head, seemingly rather upset, and Benjamin was accompanying him.

“What’s wrong, Harper?” Gerald walked toward them.

“Oh, you’re back! Look, the thing is, exams are coming, and Hayley’s mum is coming to Mayberry. They are even expecting me to go back with them! Hayley told her mum about us, and her mum insists on seeing me!”

Gerald smiled. “Isn’t it a good thing to see your girlfriend’s parents? You should celebrate!”

“How’s that a good thing?! I know what Hayley meant when she said her mum is coming over! She wants me to arrange a place for her mum, and if her mum is happy, she might still compliment me a little. But if her mum isn’t happy, we might just end up breaking up after graduation!” Harper was very troubled with this matter.

Nowadays, being in a relationship could be tough. People always said that mother-in-laws were the most troublesome creatures to please, and it could be very true.

Even though Harper’s family was quite wealthy, it was quite tough to find anywhere good to go in Mayberry.

Gerald did not really know how to help him either since Mayberry Commercial Street had been sold, and Wayfair Mountain Entertainment was not his anymore!

Maybe he could help him just like how he helped Benjamin the last time he came to visit.

“What are your plans, Harper?” Gerald asked.

“I’ve thought about it with Benjamin just now. Both of you could come along with me to pick Hayley’s mum up. I’ve arranged a nice hotel, and I know that the Yorknorth Mountain is holding an event tomorrow night. I’ll be bringing them there!” Harper said.

Gerald nodded his head.

Gerald did not know about the event that would be going on tomorrow because after all, it was organized by the village themselves and Zack did not have to report to him about things like that.

“Alright, then. Let me know if you have any other requests, I’ll try my best!” Gerald said.

Chapter 362

Harper felt instantly relieved, and he gave a pat on Gerald’s shoulder.

Hayley’s mother would be arriving the next morning. Gerald, Benjamin, and Harper met up with Hayley and her roommates outside of the school early in the morning the next day.

Harper did mention that it would be weird and awkward if it was just him and Hayley that would be picking up Hayley’s mother, but if there were a group of them, it would seem more exciting and fun.

Gerald was mildly shocked when he saw the other girls. One of them was Alice, the other one who was staring at him was Jacelyn, and there was another girl whom he had never seen before.

“Hey, Harper and Gerald! There’s someone I would like to introduce to you guys. This is my high school classmate, May. May’s mum is coming over with my mum, and May will be joining us!” Hayley said.

May was very pretty. She sure knew how to dress herself up even though she was not a natural beauty like Alice, but when compared to Jacelyn, she was definitely much prettier.

“Nice to meet you, May! I think we’ve met before once.” Harper said.

May gently nodded her head and asked. "How are we going to pick both Hayley and my mum up later?"

"We'll call an Uber!" Harper replied.

"What? An Uber? You don't have a car? I thought Hayley's boyfriend would be like mine too. The minimum requirement is to have a car!" May said scornfully.

Even though May and Hayley were childhood friends, it was clear that they did not really interact much in school just by how Harper had mentioned that they had only met once before.

It was simply that they did not have a choice since their mothers were coming to town together, and they had to go pick them up together. It was normal for girls to compare what they had with each other especially when they came from a small city to study in a big city.

In fact, Hayley's roommates were really pretty, and that made May even more jealous. She became very harsh with her words.

"Harper hasn't bought a car yet. Your boyfriend already did?" Hayley was not very happy, but she asked her anyway.

May and Hayley both came from a higher-class family, hence, there was nothing much for them to compare on the financial side, and Hayley had always been better in her studies as compared to May. But now that they were in university, there were more things to compare.

"Yeah, he did. Just an Audi A4L though. At first, he wanted to get a 7 Series Porsche because all of his friends were driving it, but I told him an A4L was good enough. He only compromised because he loves me very much!" May crossed her arms as she glanced toward Alice and the others, looking very satisfied.

Jacelyn and the others did not really give a d*mn though.

Hayley nodded her head. "Wow! Your boyfriend's friends are doing quite well!"

“Of course! Pretty different from Harper’s friends... let’s not discuss this any further!” May said.

Just as she finished talking, she looked into the school compound and was surprised!

“My boyfriend and his friends are here!”

Chapter 363

A white color Audi A4L stopped in front of them and rolled down the window, and a fashionable young man got out of the car.

“Jayce! You’re finally here! Where are your friends?”

“I asked them to go and book a hotel first. After picking up Mrs. Leny, we could bring her to the hotel to freshen up and have lunch there. After that, we’ll go out to play!”

As Jayce was talking, he noticed Alice and Jacelyn standing behind Hayley.

“Hey, pretty! I bet you girls are Hayley’s friends, right? How are you guys going?” Jayce asked.

“We were just talking about it just now. Harper doesn’t have a car, so they were planning to pick up Hayley’s mum with an Uber.” May said.

“How about you girls follow me since my car can still fit in three more passengers. Care to join us, girls?” Jayce only asked because he found Alice and Jacelyn really pretty, and he wanted to please them.

However, before Hayley and the others could say anything, May immediately rejected his offer. “Excuse me, but where will my mum be sitting if the car is full? And don’t forget that my other two roommates will be joining us as well!” May was jealous when she saw how Jayce looked at Alice and the others.

“It’s fine, May. We’ll take the Uber!” Hayley did not want to cause any trouble.

“Alright, then! We’ll head over first, so it’ll be fine if you guys are slightly late. Then, we’ll all head to the hotel that Jayce has booked, and we can have lunch over there. Since there are quite a number of us, I say we should split the bill. Is that okay?” May said.

“Sure!” Hayley nodded.

May waited for her two roommates to arrive before they left.

Meanwhile, Gerald and the rest waited until their Uber arrived and then headed to the station.

“Look at her! She’s so proud just because her boyfriend is driving an Audi A4L. She doesn’t know that all we need is a phone call from Alice and Silas would be here at any minute!” Jacelyn huffed.

“Jacelyn, what are you talking about?! I’ve not been in contact with Silas for so long!” Alice glanced at Gerald as she replied.

“I heard that Mayberry Commercial Group was sold shortly after Silas’ father came. It’s such a shame that a big company like that is gone in no time! However, if Silas were here, I’m pretty sure it would shut this Jayce and May up!” Jacelyn said.

Whatever Jacelyn had said was one of the reasons why Alice was ignoring Gerald.

Everyone knew that Mayberry Commercial Group belonged to Mr. Crawford. Even though she was not sure if Gerald was truly Mr. Crawford, she really wanted him.

Except, after what had happened with Mayberry Commercial Group, Alice did not really believe that Gerald was Mr. Crawford, hence, she was never really committed to it.

Still, Alice cared about her impression a lot when she was around Gerald. She was never really in touch with Silas anymore, but after what Jacelyn had said, she was afraid that Gerald might get the wrong idea.

No matter what it was, Gerald was still rich. It was just that he did not really care much about anything, and he did not speak much either.

They all reached the station at about ten o'clock in the morning.

"Hey, Mrs. Ians! I heard from May that Hayley has a boyfriend too, right? I'm sorry I didn't get to ask this on the train just now. Anyway, what does his family do? Is he rich?"

Two good-looking housewives walked out of the train station. They were both in their early forties but still looked as though they were thirty years old.

"I'm not sure either. Hayley didn't tell me much, and that is why I'm here! But I believe it can't be too bad. After all, Hayley's grades have been really good!" Hayley's mother said.

May's mother was not very happy. Even though May was as pretty as Hayley, Hayley was really good with her studies and had a great personality.

Hayley was, in fact, much more decent than her own daughter, which meant that her boyfriend must be as good as her too.

Chapter 364

May's mother knew that it was incomparable.

"You're right! Hayley's boyfriend must be better than May's! My daughter could never be compared with yours!" May's mother said.

May and Hayley had been waiting outside the exit.

"How was the trip, mum? Anyway, let me introduce you to my boyfriend, Jayce Warren!"

"Nice to meet you, Mrs. Leny. I'm Jayce Warren, you can call me Jayce. Please let me help you with your luggage!" Jayce immediately picked up the luggage.

“Is this your car, Jayce?” May’s mother was surprised when she saw the car key in Jayce’s hand.

“Yeah. I just bought it last month!” Jayce smiled.

May’s mother glanced toward Hayley’s mother.

“Mum, let’s go. We’re going to the hotel together!” Hayley smiled.

“There’s a driver? Is this Harper’s driver?” Hayley’s mother had been quite amazed when she saw May’s boyfriend pick her up in an Audi A4L.

Hayley’s mother looked at her future son-in-law’s ride. Even though it was just two Volkswagen Magotans, it looked as though he had a driver, and she thought that it was not that bad.

She truly thought that they were both Harper’s drivers, but Harper did not look like a rich guy.

“Are you guys coming or not? Can you guys hurry up? I have two more drives!” One of the drivers became irritated.

“Um...” Hayley and May’s mothers were both stunned.

“This is just an Uber, mum!” Hayley did not look very comfortable.

Harper was also slightly embarrassed, and he lowered his head.

“What? I thought it was Harper’s family driver. I never thought it was just an Uber...”

May’s mother looked rather happy as she looked outside the car window.

“Mum, just get in the car. Harper, get in the front, please!” Hayley knew that it would be even more awkward if they continued to stay there.

“Why let him sit in front. Ask him to get in the car at the back!” Hayley’s mother glared at Harper.

They finally left the station.

“I screwed up so hard! This is all finished!” Harper scratched his head in despair as he got in the other car.

Gerald patted him on his shoulder and said, “Don’t be too upset. The one you’d be marrying is Hayley, not Hayley’s mum. Benjamin and I are always here for you, don’t worry!”

“Sigh, okay. No matter what is it, you have to help me today, Gerald!” Harper was all out of ideas.

Gerald did not say anything else, he merely nodded his head.

Soon, they had all reached the hotel. After knowing that it was Jayce who had booked the hotel, May’s mother was extremely happy.

Hayley’s mother, on the other hand, was extremely disappointed.

“Yakob! You guys must have been waiting for a while now. Mrs. Leny is here together with May’s roommates.” They went into a luxurious dining room, and Jayce began to introduce the people present.

“Mrs. Leny, these are all my friends. This is Yakob, our head of the dormitory. His family owns a company, and he takes care of us really well!”

“Hi, nice to meet all of you!” May’s mother was very happy when she found out that he was in touch with so many wealthy people.

Yakob introduced himself to May's mother first and then greeted Hayley and the others.

Yakob was shocked when he saw Gerald there. "Gerald?"

Gerald was surprised as well. This was such a coincidence. "We meet again, Yakob!"

Chapter 365

Gerald did not expect that the person Jayce kept bragging about was actually Yakob.

But then again, there were only a few students that drove a 7 Series Porsche in their school, and one of them was Yakob.

Yakob was not very happy when he saw Gerald.

At first, Gerald had embarrassed him in front of many girls at the breakfast place, and then, Yakob had found out that Gerald was quite close with his goddess, Giya.

Including the incident that had happened yesterday where Giya had said she was going to have dinner and a movie date with Yakob in front of Gerald, but after they had left him, Giya had gotten out of the car immediately like a different person.

Yakob did not feel right last night, and he had come to the conclusion that Giya might have been using him.

Yakob had not been feeling good about it ever since then, and he wanted to take this chance to relax, but he never thought that he would see Gerald here!

Yakob smiled faintly as he offered Gerald and the others a seat.

"You should rest for a bit, Yakob. Let Jayce do all the work! We have given you enough trouble for the day. It's quite embarrassing to make you work even more!"

“Am I right, Mrs. Ians? Look at Jayce’s friends. They are so well-put and humble. I believe they are very close to Jayce! Don’t you worry about the fees, okay? Jayce and May can do the deed!” May’s mother was complimenting Yakob and talking to Hayley’s mother at the same time.

However, Hayley’s mother had not spoken a single word. She was upset right from the start.

Both Hayley and May’s family were doing equally fine back in their city. In fact, Hayley was doing even slightly better than May. Hence, Hayley’s mother had come here very proudly.

She thought that her future son-in-law would bring his own personal driver to pick her up, and May’s mother would be very jealous of her future son-in-law.

However, everything did not go as she had planned. Hayley’s mother really wanted to dig a hole and hide herself.

Harper could not even be compared to Jayce, and even their social circle was completely different.

Yakob was already such a big deal, while Harper’s friends on the other hand were Benjamin and Gerald. Benjamin looked decent with his glasses and all, but Gerald literally looked like a joke!

Hayley’s mother was extremely disappointed.

Suddenly, Yakob spoke up, “Don’t worry about the money, Mrs. Ians and Mrs. Leny. We’ll handle it, and as long as both of you are happy, I don’t mind paying for everything!”

Yakob had to act like a gentleman because after all, there were two pretty girls around.

“Oh no, this isn’t right, Yakob! Even if Jayce were to pay for everything, Harper would not be happy about it. Am I right, Harper?” May’s mother looked at Harper.

“Yeah. We should split the bill!” Harper nodded his head.

“Splitting the bill sounds good. I would love to try Mayberry’s best dishes!” May’s mother immediately ordered a few signature dishes and then asked Hayley’s mother to order as well.

Hayley’s mother ordered more dishes than May’s mother.

Everything on the table was nearly 5000 dollars, and Harper began to get worried about it.

Gerald knew about his situation and thus, he quietly transferred 2000 dollars into Harper’s account and told him not to worry about it.

Just when he had transferred that money to Harper, he realized that Alice and Jacelyn had been watching him, and they were both looking at him in shock.

Alice and Jacelyn had been observing him quietly all this while.

Chapter 366

Before they had seen the amount of money in his bank account, they kind of knew that he was not an ordinary person, and just as they had guessed it, he was indeed extremely rich!

They had never had evidence until now. They saw him transferring that money over to Harper, but they still could not tell how much money was left in his account because there were too many numbers!

“Girls, what would the both of you like to have? Would you like some wine? I ordered this just for the ladies, and don’t worry, I can send you girls back later!” Yakob looked at Alice and Jacelyn.

He believed that they knew he was great. However, Alice and Jacelyn immediately rejected his offer. “It’s fine. We’re good!”

Alice immediately looked at Gerald and said, “Gerald, what would you like to have? Let me get it for you!”

Yakob was confused and stunned.

Why were all his Goddess' treating Gerald so nicely?!

Yakob had never seen Gerald as competition, but now, it seemed as though Gerald would be his biggest enemy!

Yakob actually wanted to embarrass Gerald at the gathering, but Gerald did not talk much, and if he ever tried to push a conversation on him, he would just smile and shake his head.

It was almost like punching a bag of cotton.

After lunch was over, Hayley was planning to call an Uber to bring her mother to the place she would be staying at.

Yakob jumped up and said, "You don't have to get an Uber. We all drove here, just let us know where Mrs. Leny is staying and we can drive you all there. Let's go to the carpark together!"

"You girls can ride in my car! My car is big and comfortable!" Yakob invited Alice and Jacelyn.

The girls did not say a single word.

As they reached the car park, Yakob took out his car key and unlocked his car.

He then got into the car and started the engine.

Just as he was about to drive off, one of his friends said, "Yakob, you should be careful. The car beside you is too close!"

"So what? It's just a Phideon!"

Yakob wanted to go slow at first, but after what his friend had said, he felt the need to go faster.

Bang!

Yakob felt the impact. The rear of his car collided with the car next to him, and it was quite a bad crash!

“F*ck!” Yakob hit his steering wheel in frustration and got out of his car.

“What do we do now, Yakob?” Jayce was nervous, but Yakob did not care.

“Why the f*ck are you scared? Just call the owner, and we’ll pay him a few thousand!”

“No, Yakob. Look at the car, I don’t think it’s a Phideon. I think it’s a Phaeton!”

“What?!” Yakob became nervous as well. A Phideon usually only cost around 4000 dollars, but a Phaeton could easily go up to 20000 dollars!

And that car was indeed a Phaeton that had been discontinued!

Chapter 367

“What now?!” Yakob was extremely scared.

He had taken a quick glance at the Volkswagen just now and had not taken too much notice of it since the better Volkswagens usually only cost around 5000 dollars. However, they had totally forgotten about the very underrated Phaeton!

“Oh, no! How much money would you even have to pay for compensation? The Phaeton has gone out of shape!” Even May’s mother was worried about it.

“Yakob, why don’t you call the owner immediately and talk things out? Otherwise, you could just ask Mr. Lincoln to settle it for you?” Yakob’s friend suggested.

“F*ck it, man. I did knock him, but so what? Who asked him to park so close to me? It is just a 20000 dollar Phaeton. Do you think I can’t afford it?! I only bought this 7 Series just to go with my internship!”
Yakob was furious.

Still, he called the owner to settle this matter.

After a while, a man wearing glasses came out with a woman. They looked like a couple.

“You knocked my car!” The man said.

Deep down, Yakob was thinking that this guy did not look fierce at all. In fact, he looked like he had not seen much of the world, and Yakob felt rather relieved.

He believed that this man was from a small village and had gotten lucky, consequently buying a fancy car just to show off.

If the other party was an adult, he might have been slightly more respectful, but he was not.

“Are you f*cking blind or what?! Didn’t you see my car there?! Why did you park your car so close to mine? You tell me, how are we going to settle this?”

Yakob rolled up his sleeves and walked toward the man while Jayce and another friend went up to him as well.

The girl beside him immediately said, “You guys were clearly the ones that knocked into our car. You have to fix it!”

“That’s right! You guys have got to fix my car!” The guy said.

“What do you mean? Your car was blocking mine, so why the f*ck should I fix your d*mn car?!”

Yakob kicked the man in his stomach and pointed right at his nose. "Don't you know who I am? Give me your f*cking address, little guy!" Yakob threatened them.

The man immediately held onto his stomach and did not say a single word anymore.

"Wow! Yakob, you're so cool!" May's mother was impressed.

"It's normal. Yakob's family is rich and powerful!" Jayce said proudly.

Yacob kicked the man again. "Now get the f*ck off. Don't ever let me see you again, or I'll beat you to death!"

The man's girlfriend helped him back to the hotel.

"Very impressive, Yakob!" His friend was amazed.

"It's only because his car was more expensive than mine, otherwise, I would have made him pay for my car!" Yakob was satisfied. He was ready to send Alice and the others to the hotel first and then bring his car to the service center.

Just then, a group of men suddenly came and surrounded Yakob.

The one standing in front looked at the man with the spectacles and asked. "Who beat you up, Four-Eyed?"

"That's him!" Four-Eyed pointed at Yakob.

Yakob was not usually afraid of people like this, but when he took a closer look at the guy in front, he got scared.

Yakob swallowed as he asked, "Aren't you Timothy Shen? We've met before previously!"

Timothy Shen!

Everyone present was stunned when they heard the name.

Timothy Shen was the son of Weiner Shen, and they owned quite a number of entertainment facilities in Mayberry.

Weiner Shen was considered Mayberry's biggest mob.

The Weiner Group was definitely more fierce as compared to the Rye Group since the Rye Group had its own considerations, but Weiner Group had none.

Chapter 368

They would screw you up as long as they were not happy with you!

They really did not care who you were!

As for Timothy's name, everyone had heard about him. He studied at Mayberry University and was super fierce. Someone had gotten on his nerves a while ago, and he had brought a group of people to that person's house and messed him up.

Yakob was totally incomparable to Timothy, and he was scared.

"What the f*ck is wrong with you? You knocked Four-Eyed's car and you even beat him up?! You're really out of your f*cking mind, bro. Don't think you can get away just like that. Explain yourself or you're not going anywhere today!" Timothy sneered.

Yakob was trembling. He immediately slapped himself and explained, "It was just a misunderstanding, Timothy. Everything was just a misunderstanding!"

“Misunderstanding? Okay, since this is one of my uncle’s hotels, follow me to one of the rooms, and we can sort out this misunderstanding there!” After what Timothy had said, two strong men went over to Yakob and caught him by his shoulder.

“Four-Eyed, did anyone else touch you?” Timothy asked.

“No, just him!”

Timothy then left with Yakob, who was already very scared for his life.

“This Timothy doesn’t seem like a good person at all! Who is he?” May’s mother asked fearfully.

“Of course he isn’t a good person! His father is even more fierce. Two years ago, Timothy even forced an actress to go out with him!” Clearly, Jayce was aware of what kind of person Timothy was.

“Should we call the police then, Jayce?” Yakob’s friend was worried.

“Are you nuts? We can’t do anything about it now. I’m pretty sure Yakob’s father will find out in no time!” Jayce lit up a cigarette.

Gerald had watched the entire scene, and he thought that Yakob truly deserved it.

Gerald did not care to bother about saving him at all after what had happened. Thus, he said, “Mrs. Ians, Mrs. Leny, since it’s something that we are not able to help with, let’s just get you all settled down at the hotel first!”

“Alright!” May and Hayley’s mothers agreed.

They all then left for the hotel.

There were not many plans on Harper's side for the afternoon except for the visit to Yorknoth Mountain.

Meanwhile, Jayce drove May's mother around Mayberry.

Hayley's mother was extremely jealous of it, and she felt rather dissatisfied with Harper!

Finally, it was five o'clock in the evening, and May's mother had gotten back.

There would be an event going on at Yorknorth Village, and many superstars would be there too.

May and her mother wanted to pay a visit, so Jayce had already gotten them the tickets. They had even gotten VIP tickets. The VIP tickets meant that they did not have to pay any extra money after getting inside.

Meanwhile, Harper had only gotten ordinary tickets.

"You're such a good boy, Jayce! Look at you, you got us the VIP tickets! Why didn't you get another VIP ticket for Mrs. Ians too! Now Harper has to pay for everything inside!"

"Ah! I almost forgot about it. I thought Harper would have known to get the VIP tickets!" Jayce smiled as he shook his head.

"What's so great about it anyway. Didn't Yakob just get brought away by a bunch of gangsters and he didn't even dare to say a single word!" Hayley's mother was extremely upset, but she still fought back.

"Well, indeed, Jayce isn't as good, but he's still better than other people's daughter's boyfriend! Look at the friends he brought! They are just here for free food!" Clearly, those words were for Gerald and Benjamin.

Gerald merely smiled speechlessly. They had nothing else to say.

They were finally there at Yorknorth Mountain, and the place for selling entrance tickets had been set.

“Jayce, I thought you had friends waiting here? Are you sure he’s coming?” May asked.

“Of course! He’s my high school classmate. These tickets were given to me by him! He’s like the second owner of this place! Look, he’s right there!” Jayce pointed.

Gerald looked toward the direction and was shocked.

Chapter 369

Who was that person?

That person was Hayward.

He was still afraid that he might bump into Hayward on the way here. If he saw Hayward, Lilian and Sharon had to be around too.

Gerald did not really want to see either of them, but he saw him, and surprisingly enough, Hayward and Jayce were high school classmates.

“Hey, Jayce! I’ve been waiting!” Hayward greeted them proudly. He was very confident because after all, he was the host of the entire event for now.

“Yeah. There was a pretty bad jam outside. Anyhow, let me introduce you to my girlfriend, May, and that is May’s mother, Mrs. Leny. Those over there are May’s friends. We all came together!” Jayce said.

Together with Hayward were a few other young men and women which also included Sharon and Lilian. Hayward also introduced his friends to Jayce.

“This is Hayward, and his family owns three houses here!” Jayce said enviously.

After the introduction, May and her mother were stunned. They knew that Yorknorth Mountain was going to be developed into a big recreational center. They were even planning to broaden the tourist area and build more properties here! This place would be a very popular spot in the future, and this Hayward owned three properties here! It was enough to keep him sustained his entire life.

May's mother was very impressed.

"That's quite exaggerated. After all, Mr. Crawford was the one who decided to invest in this land! He's the hero of this story." Hayward said respectfully.

"Mr. Crawford? Who is this Mr. Crawford? I heard that he sold the entire company, and now, he's building a new recreational place?" May said.

Ever since she had gotten together with Jayce, she had been reading news about the rich and wealthy.

This topic successfully caught the attention of both Alice and Jacelyn.

They had both seen the news before, and there were all kinds of speculations on the internet.

"Who is this Mr. Crawford, May? Is he truly that great?" May's mother was excited.

"Well, he used to be. However, his company has been dismissed, so not so much anymore!" May said.

Hayward was slightly speechless at this. "Don't listen to the rumors online. Just think about the money this guy, Mr. Crawford, has invested. He bought the entire mountain for about six million, and he will be putting in more money in the future!"

Everyone was surprised when they heard this.

"Hence, when people talked about Mr. Crawford's rumor online, we could only shake our heads!" Lilian folded her arms and smiled.

“That’s so cool!” May was shocked.

Alice looked at Gerald in surprise, and it made him feel slightly uncomfortable.

Alice was grateful that she had never gotten on Gerald’s nerves, otherwise, she would never stand a single chance.

“Wow, Jayce! I never thought you would know someone like Hayward! You have many connections!” May’s mother smiled.

“Alright! Let’s get in the sightseeing car for now. How many of us are here? I think we’ll need a bigger car!” Hayward said.

He then looked toward Harper’s side and was surprised to see Gerald. “D*mn, Gerald?!”

Lilian and Sharon were shocked to see him as well. The last time they had seen him was when they had all gotten arrested because of the fight between Hayward and Murphy, and Gerald had been bailed out.

Chapter 370

They were all very curious as to who this Gerald was.

Sharon and Lilian were really hoping that he was not some great person.

“Gerald, you’re here!” They both toned down a lot when greeting Gerald.

“Hayward, you know him?” Jayce asked.

“Yeah. But that’s a story for next time. Let me go get us a sightseeing car first!” Hayward said.

Harper was driving at first while Jayce was sitting right next to him.

“Harper is surprisingly good at driving this kind of car even though he has never driven before!” May’s mother taunted him.

“Just like his personality. Very dependable!” One of the girls said.

Jayce was not very happy when he heard those words.

“Are you stupid or what, dude! You should be turning to the left side. It’s way more fun on the left side!” Jayce scolded him out of jealousy, and Harper just kept quiet.

“Drive faster, dude! Just let me do it if you can’t! F*cking stupid!” Jayce continued humiliating him.

Harper had had enough to take in for the day. He became really angry at this time and stepped on the accelerator really hard.

He almost knocked into a little girl holding onto a balloon as she chased her little dog!

“Harper! Watch out!” Hayley shouted.

Alas, it was too late for Harper to stop the car. He turned the car to the side, and the car went out of control.

The sightseeing car scratched a car that was parked right at the roadside, and the sightseeing car was knocked out of shape.

The car hit a big rock before finally screeching to a halt.

“Aah!” The passersby shouted, including the girls in the car.

Harper knew he was in big trouble.

One of the passersby shouted, "Look at this dude, man! He knocked into seven Ferraris in one shot!"

Harper and the group were shocked and scared. They were all dumbfounded when they looked at the cars that had been knocked by Harper.

All of it was a Ferrari, and the average cost of each car was 400000 dollars. The worst part was that all of the cars had been heavily damaged, and some of the headlights were even falling off.

"Oh, my goodness! This young man is crazy! Seven Ferraris, dude! That's going to cost at least a few hundred thousand!"

There were more and more people surrounding them.

Not only was Hayley and her mother shocked, but even May's mother was also worried.

This was worse than the incident in the afternoon where Yakob had only knocked one car! Harper, on the other hand, had messed up seven cars!

"Move aside! Move aside now!"

Chapter 371

At this time, Hayward drove Lilian and the others in his more luxurious sightseeing car as he headed over.

He saw a lot of people surrounding the place. After that, he saw that it was Jayce and the others. Therefore, he knew that something was wrong, and he hurriedly squeezed in through the crowd of people.

As soon as he saw what had happened, Hayward could not help but feel that his mind was completely blown!

D*mn it!

“Who did this?” Hayward’s face was pale as he asked them the question.

“Hayward! It’s him! He was the one who was driving the car!” Jayce hurriedly pointed at Harper.

At this time, after regaining their senses, May and the others also stood on Jayce’s side immediately.

That’s right. Who would not be afraid of getting involved and forced to share the responsibility instead?

After all, these damages would cost hundreds of thousands of dollars.

As for Harper, it was true that he had gotten into trouble in a fit of anger. However, it was Jayce who had provoked him. Still, there was nothing that he could do now except bear the consequences of his actions.

After all, he was the one who had hit those cars.

“Oh! You! You... you... I am truly convinced right now. How could my daughter possibly have a boyfriend like you?!” Hayley’s mother felt very aggrieved, and she immediately shed a few drops of tears.

Lilian spoke lightly at this time, “Don’t worry about it too much now. Well, do you have any contacts or connections? You should contact someone now. Perhaps you should call someone from your hometown to come here as soon as possible?”

May’s mother spoke up, “How could he possibly have any contacts or connections?! If Jayce was the one who caused the trouble, he might be able to alleviate and solve the problem, then. After all, Jayce has a wide network of contacts, and this is his buddy, Hayward’s territory! I don’t think Harper will be able to solve this problem. Moreover, Hayward is not familiar with him either. So, Hayward can’t possibly offend the owners of these luxury cars just because of him!”

Harper could not even say anything to refute that. May's mother was a mature person, and she was very sly.

This sentence alone naturally pushed the blame off Jayce and Hayward. She was clearly telling them not to poke their noses into this matter so that they would not be provoking anyone unnecessarily!

At this time, another girl asked, "Hey! Don't you have any friends in Mayberry City?"

Harper's face flushed red as he said, "Of course! Gerald and Benjamin are my friends!"

One of May's roommates asked speechlessly, "Oh! We are not talking about those kinds of friends. We meant if you have any rich or influential friends?"

Hayward frowned as he spoke up at this time. "Okay, don't talk about it anymore. It does not matter if he has any friends or not. After all, this kid has already gotten into a big disaster this time!"

"Huh? What big disaster?" Everyone asked in surprise.

Hayward he took a deep breath and asked, "Do you know who these cars belong to?"

"Who?"

Hayward replied, slightly frightened, "These are the cars of seven rich heirs, such as Aiden, Yoel, Zade, and the others!"

"Hayward, do you mean Aiden from the Baker family, Yoel from the Holden family, Zade from the Zavier family in Harbour City, and the others? Isn't that just too much of a coincidence?" Sharon had been following Hayward around and had seen a lot of the world these days. Therefore, she could not help but ask in surprise.

Hayward closed his eyes as he nodded and said, "Yes, it's them!"

“What should we do?” Benjamin was also panicking at this time.

These young masters were even more powerful compared to that Timothy.

May’s mother opened her eyes wide in panic and said, “Harper, I think you should just hurry up and kneel in front of these cars. Perhaps those young masters will spare you that way. You cannot possibly afford to offend them. After all, these young men are not as simple as the person Yacob offended just now!”

May’s mother continued, “Furthermore, Harper, since you were the one who drove and hit the car, you should just confess by yourself later. Don’t mention the fact that we were all also sitting in the sightseeing car with you! We cannot afford to offend them!”

At this time...

“Look! Aiden, Yoel, and the others are here!”

Chapter 372

Someone yelled out loud. After that, the crowd of people opened their mouths in shock.

Yoel brought a group of people who looked like rich heirs over with him.

“D*mn it! Who did this?” Yoel asked coldly as he threw his sunglasses away.

Aiden and the others also gathered around the group of people at this time.

“Sorry! I was the one who hit your cars!” Harper bowed slightly because he was also frightened at this time.

“So tell me. What are we going to do about this? Men! Come and call the car shop to send someone over here to estimate the damage now! Also, none of you who were with him are allowed to leave today!”

Yoel barked out his instructions.

At this time, some bodyguards dressed in black were already making a phone call as soon as they heard his words. A group of men immediately came over to surround May and everyone else as well.

“Oh! It’s all over. This time, Harper not only hit someone else’s car, but he has obviously offended Yoel too! He has even implicated us in this matter and Yoel is not letting us go either!”

“Yes! He really does not know what is good for him! Why did he even try to stop the sightseeing car from crashing?! Perhaps the damage would not even cost that much! Now, he not only hit all the rich heirs’ cars, but he has also dragged us into this matter with him!”

“That’s right! The most important thing is that we are really wasting these rich heirs’ time now!”

May’s roommates chimed in immediately.

When May and Jayce heard Yoel’s words, they realized that none of them would be able to leave. It seemed as though everyone who had been sitting in Harper’s car would also be in trouble.

They were extremely nervous, and they looked at Hayward to ask for his help.

Hayward immediately understood what they were trying to tell him. So, he immediately walked toward Yoel, Aiden, and the others before he said respectfully, “Sirs, I am Hayward from Yorknorth Mountain. I had a short encounter with Aiden before this.”

Yoel looked at Aiden, and Aiden whispered something to Yoel immediately.

Yoel nodded before he smiled and said, “Well, Hayward. What do you want to say?”

“Well, Yoel, some of my friends here were sitting in this car as well. Could you give me some face? This matter had nothing to do with them!”

“F*ck! What kind of face should I give you? Get lost! If you were in the car too, I might forgive you and let you off because you are from Yorknorth Mountain. However, if it is none of your business, don’t try to be so pretentious in front of me!” Yoel was not giving face to anyone at all!

Hayward’s face flushed red at this time after getting scolded so harshly.

Hayward did not even dare to take a deep breath, and he could only hide in anguish with Lilian and the others.

When Jayce and the others saw that even Hayward was not able to save them, they began to panic.

This was especially so for May’s mother who wished that she could just slap Harper.

At this time, a sudden voice made the crowded scene fall silent immediately.

“I think we should stop wasting everyone’s time. Just forget it!”

Everyone cast their eyes in the direction of the boy who was the source of the sound.

D*mn it! Forget it?!

Was he sick of living?

That’s right! He was too full of himself, right? Who did he think he is?

Everyone was shocked.

Yes. The boy was naturally none other than Gerald.

As soon as he made this remark, even Lilian and Sharon, who thought highly of him, could not help but stare at Gerald as they shook their heads slightly.

May's mother scolded him directly, "Gerald, what nonsense are you talking about?!"

As for Gerald, he was originally waiting for the owners of the cars to come so that he could offer to pay them for the damages himself.

But then, he had found out that the cars belonged to Yoel and the others.

Gerald felt entangled.

If he did not step up to help Harper when they came over, Harper would definitely suffer miserably in their hands.

If he stepped up to help him, his identity would be exposed directly.

However, in the current situation, it seemed as though it would be impossible for him to keep a low profile and choose not to help Harper.

Alas, if his identity were to be exposed, so be it. There was no other way!

Thus, Gerald stepped forward...

Chapter 373

"Mr. Craw... I mean, Gerald?!"

Yoel and Aiden were all taken aback.

No one thought that Mr. Crawford would also be here.

Yoel almost yelled out loud and revealed his identity.

Therefore, this group of rich heirs also moved toward Gerald excitedly.

What?!

The people who were all waiting to watch a good show were all startled.

“Um... this is not a big problem anyway. All of you originally came here to be happy and have fun. Besides, none of you are short of money to repair your cars anyway. So, just forget about it. Just continue having fun and enjoying yourselves, then.” Gerald could only smile helplessly. Since this matter had already come to this state, there was nothing else he could do.

“Yes! Yes! Gerald, you are right. We are all here to enjoy and have fun anyway. Why should we be so angry over this small matter, then? Hahaha! Gerald, in that case, we will let this matter go! Let’s go in and have a drink together later, okay?” Yoel touched his belly before he laughed.

“Okay! I will come and find you for a drink later!” Gerald also patted Aiden’s and the other boys’ shoulders with a smile on his face.

“Goodbye, Gerald!”

“Goodbye, Gerald!”

“...”

The rest of the rich heirs did not dare to joke around with Gerald, and they simply bowed respectfully to say goodbye.

This made the people standing on the sidelines feel even more shocked.

F*ck! What was happening?!

Many people were still in shock, and they did not come to their senses even after Yoel and the other rich heirs had already left.

This was even more so for May, Jayce, May's mother, and the others.

To be honest, no one had taken Gerald to heart at all from the very beginning. They thought he was just a pathetic jerk who had come along on this trip to eat and drink for free. However, they really did not expect him to actually be acquainted and connected to so many rich heirs!

He only had to say a few words, and those rich heirs had left immediately!

Moreover, those people seemed to be afraid of him.

May and the others were even more surprised.

At this time, even Hayley's mother was looking at Gerald with a look of admiration on her face. She was also subconsciously standing closer to Gerald at this time.

It seemed as though she was trying to tell everyone else that this young man was her daughter's boyfriend's good buddy! Hmph! He was not May nor anyone's good friend!

Sharon and Lilian were even more surprised at this time.

It seemed as though their speculations had been confirmed.

The two girls suddenly turned pale.

It seemed as though everything that had happened the last time was not purely accidental. It was true that Gerald was indeed extraordinary!

Moreover, it seemed as though he was even more powerful as compared to Hayward.

Those rich heirs did not even bother to give Hayward any face at all, but they were all so respectful and polite toward Gerald.

Furthermore, these girls were very attentive and meticulous. They could clearly see that some of the rich heirs had even bowed to Gerald when they were saying goodbye to him!

D*mn!

The atmosphere became very awkward at this time.

Gerald smiled awkwardly before he said, "Okay! Everything is fine now! Let's continue playing then!"

After he was done speaking, Gerald continued walking forward with Harper and the others.

"F*ck! Who is this young man?"

"I don't know, but he looks pretty awesome!"

"So many rich heirs were giving him face too! I guess he must be a very powerful and influential person!"

A group of people started discussing this matter amongst themselves.

One of May's good friends suddenly came over and asked Gerald shyly at this time, "Gerald, you... do you want to drink some milk tea? I will go and buy it for you..."

"Thank you, but I'm not thirsty!" Gerald replied.

Lilian glanced at the girl before she handed her cup of untouched milk tea over to Gerald. "Hehe! Who do you think you are? Did you think that Gerald will drink any milk tea that any random girls buy for him?"

"Gerald, look at you! Your lips are a little dry. How could you possibly not be thirsty? You are just too careless, and you don't know how to love yourself at all!" Lilian continued hurriedly.

On the surface, she was snubbing the girl, but in actual fact, she was just putting on an act in front of Gerald.

Since she had had a misunderstanding with Gerald before this, Lilian felt that she had to resolve it!

Gerald did not know what else to say.

Fortunately, at this moment, his cell phone suddenly rang.

It was a phone call from Zack.

"Sorry! You guys can continue playing first. I have to answer a call. I will come and find you later!"

Chapter 374

Gerald found an excuse to slip away and went over to the lakeside.

"Mr. Crawford, I would like to ask for your instructions. I've already made an initial investment plan for the investment in your hometown, Serene County, that Mr. Harrison talked about. There is an investment plan for six billion dollars, and there is another plan for eight billion dollars. The investment plan for eight billion dollars will also drive a part of the township economy, and it will involve a wider range of areas. What is your decision, then?" Zack asked as soon as the call was connected.

"Then, let's decide on the eight billion dollar plan. After all, the reason why I agreed to Mr. Harrison's proposal was to drive the construction and growth of the entire urban and rural economy anyway!"

“Okay, I understand, Mr. Crawford! I will begin the layout of the plan immediately!”

After he was done speaking, Gerald hung up the phone immediately.

He turned around and prepared to go back.

Gerald was stunned as soon as he turned around.

This was because he did not know when Alice had come and stood behind him.

At this time, Alice was staring at him in a dumbfounded manner. It was obvious that she had already heard Gerald’s conversation just now.

“Gerald... you!” Alice was breathing rapidly at this time.

When Gerald had been interacting with the group of rich heirs just now, Alice had already suspected that her guess might be right.

At that time, she did not say anything at all.

Instead, she had been paying close attention to Gerald.

After that, she saw Gerald acting suspiciously when he came here to answer the phone call.

So, Alice had followed him here quietly.

If Alice had not heard everything clearly because of the quiet surroundings, it would have been hard for her to believe that everything in front of her was real!

Gerald was a rich heir, and she was almost certain that he was Mr. Crawford!

He had spoken about eight billion dollars without even blinking his eyes!

Alice trembled uncontrollably.

The guy that Naomi had tried to matchmake her with from the very beginning so that they could become a couple, the person that she had despised and looked down on from the beginning, was actually an incredible God!

“You heard... everything?” Gerald asked awkwardly.

Alice blushed as she nodded. “Yes! I heard everything!”

“You are Mr. Crawford. The Mr. Crawford who owns countless properties and assets?!” Alice asked in shock.

“I... No, I’m not. I don’t have a lot of money. You’ve got it all wrong. Eh! Harper is calling me!”

Gerald quickly reacted. If he admitted it too readily, his effort to maintain a low profile during this period would all be wasted!

He wanted to leave as soon as he could!

Alice blocked Gerald’s way as she stood in front of him. “Gerald, I have already heard everything. Why are you so unwilling to admit it?”

“Why can’t you tell me the truth? Can you just tell me the truth?” Alice asked as she grabbed Gerald’s shoulders with bloodshot eyes.

Gerald was speechless. “You’ve really got it wrong! I’m just a pauper!”

After that, he broke free from Alice's grasp as he tried to run back to the others.

However, after taking a few steps, Gerald was startled when he turned his head around.

Alice was actually walking toward the lake, step by step!

D*mn it!

"What are you doing?!" Gerald was really at a loss for words. This scene was exactly what had happened with Xavia!

He ran forward before he grabbed hold of Alice.

"Let go of me! Just let me die! I treated you so horribly in the past. You will never like me again. Just let me die!" Alice was really filled with regrets at this time, and she really did not want to live anymore.

Fortunately, Gerald had already brought her back to the shore.

Alice cried as she clung onto Gerald's arm tightly. "Gerald, you still like me, right? I know that you liked me from the very beginning when we first met. Isn't that right?"

Gerald could only tell her the truth. "Well, yes. Although you looked down on me from the very beginning, Xavia had just hurt me and broken my heart at that time. When I saw how beautiful you were, I really liked you. I felt that no matter how much you despised me and looked down on me, I was still very happy and excited to be able to see you. However, those feelings are already long gone. The only person in my heart right now is Mila. I really have to thank you!"

At that time, he had truly liked Alice for quite a while, and Gerald admitted it.

Alice did not feel good at all when she heard Gerald's words.

She had once had a very sincere relationship waiting right in front of her...

Chapter 375

Gerald finally got rid of Alice. The crowd of people continued having fun and enjoying themselves.

As for Gerald, he could not tolerate everyone's questions and inquiries anymore. Hence, he could only come up with a reason to excuse himself in advance.

Anyway, he had already achieved his goal. Hayley's mother was staring at Harper as though he was a very precious person now.

Gerald then took a cab before he went back to the school directly.

"Sir, stop!" As soon as he arrived at the university gate, Gerald saw the scene before him, and he asked the driver to stop the car immediately.

It was almost night time now, and there were a few luxury cars parked at the roadside near the school gate.

They were several boys who looked like ruffians who were surrounding a girl who was trying to go back into the school. They were obviously trying to block her way, and they did not want to let her go.

The girl looked very angry, and she even slapped one of the boys across his face.

They got more aggravated and violent at this time, and they looked as though they really wanted to hit her now.

The driver also looked at the situation over there, and he could not help but shake his head with a wry smile on his face. "Oh! Nowadays, some of the rich heirs only depend on the wealth and power of their families to do whatever they want. They are all lawless young people. Young man, if you know what is good for yourself, you should just stay out of this matter. There are some people that we simply cannot afford to offend!"

Gerald handed fifteen dollars over to the cab driver. After telling the cab driver that he did not need the change, he pushed the car door open before he stepped out of the car.

He started walking toward the girl who was being surrounded at this time.

The cab driver could not help but glance at Gerald's back with a little sympathy. "Oh, young lad! I wish you good luck!"

After that, the cab driver stepped on the accelerator and drove away immediately.

"Miss Giya, please do not make things difficult for us. Our boss said that we have to invite you over there to have a drink with him today. There is nothing wrong with accompanying him for a drink, right?" Several young ruffians opened their arms as they surrounded Giya.

There were people passing by at this time, but no one dared to interfere in this matter.

Giya cursed coldly, "Go away! I do not know who your boss is! Why should I drink with him?"

"Haha! Miss Giya, our boss is Timothy Shen! You must have heard of him before. Speaking of it, Mr. Shen and you are really fated! Mr. Shen saw you once before at a business exchange meeting. He could not forget about you since then, but he did not manage to get your contact information. As a result, both of you really seem to be fated today. A young kid actually had your picture on his cell phone. When we asked him about you, we found out your whereabouts immediately. Mr. Shen has already set up a table for you. If you refuse to give him face, we will all be done for!" The ruffians said as they continued smiling.

Giya ground her teeth and said angrily, "Get lost! I already told you that I will not go with you! If you continue acting like this, I will call the police!"

"Cough! Cough! Since Miss Giya is being so difficult, you are also putting us in a tough spot. We can only invite you to come with us by force, then. Don't worry. After you meet Mr. Shen, you will definitely fall in love with our capable boss! Hahaha!"

“Brothers! Drag Miss Giya into the car!”

After the leader of the ruffians was done speaking, two or three other men came up directly before they grabbed Giya’s arms and started pulling her toward the car.

“What are you trying to do?! Let go of me! Help!” Giya shouted in panic.

She seemed to have heard of Timothy Shen before. It seemed as though he was related to some very powerful gang-related organization.

He was a hedonistic person who was always loafing around, and he had done things that were as disgusting as could be.

Giya did not know how or why he had set his sights on her, but she could already imagine what the consequences would be if she were to be dragged away!

She was struggling desperately at this time.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Suddenly, there were several loud and explosive noises in succession!

After that, three of four ruffians were already bleeding from their heads.

The person who had rushed over was naturally none other than Gerald.

After he saw that the girl who was being harassed was Giya, he had gotten out of the car and searched for two thick and strong branches from the side of the road. He did not even care if someone would get hurt badly.

He started hitting them in their heads as soon as he came over.

Chapter 376

There were about five ruffians in total.

In the blink of an eye, Gerald had already knocked four of them out.

“F*ck! Who are you?!” The leader of the pack panicked, and he immediately asked in surprise. “I’ll kill you!”

Gerald did not say anything, but he simply rushed forward to hit him.

It seemed as though the ruffian was already used to fighting. He picked up a brick from the side of the road as he fought with Gerald.

In the end, he could not defeat Gerald who was in a rage, and he could only flee in embarrassment.

“Gerald, you... you... are you alright?” Giya was also terrified at this time.

“I’m fine!” Gerald replied as he wiped the blood off from the corner of his mouth.

Giya suddenly burst out nervously, “Ah! Your head is bleeding!”

Gerald was bleeding slightly from his head because he had been caught off guard just now, and the other party had launched a sneak attack on him.

“It’s just a small wound. Why did they come here to pester you?”

Gerald wiped the blood off his face. Today was the first time that he had ever fought like this.

Fortunately, he still had some strength in him. Moreover, Gerald was simply fighting without worrying about anything at all.

"I don't know. I was just coming back to school today. They called me first to harass me, and then, they came to school to block my way. They were trying to force me to go and have dinner with that Timothy Shen, but I do not know him at all! I don't know who gave him my contact information!"

When Giya looked at Gerald who had fought because of her, she could not help but feel very touched, and her eyes flushed red.

'It must be that b*stard, Yacob!, Gerald cursed in his heart.

Of course Gerald knew about the cause of this matter today. Yacob had been taken away by Timothy earlier in the afternoon. Gerald did not know how the latter had taught the former a lesson, however, Gerald knew that since Timothy had set his eyes on Giya, this must have something to do with Yacob!

Although Gerald had been avoiding Giya, he still regarded her as his friend.

This was especially so after finding out about what Giya had done for him but yet, he had stood her up so many times. Gerald had always felt a little guilty toward Giya.

This was the reason why Gerald did not hesitate to defend her and fight hard for her when he saw that she was in trouble today.

When Gerald saw that Giya was already fine, he wanted to go back to his dormitory to dress up his own wound.

However, Giya refused to let him go and insisted on going to the infirmary with him.

Along the way, Giya held onto Gerald's hand tightly.

He did not know what Giya was thinking about.

She had been very worried and nervous about Gerald a while ago, but before Gerald could say anything, Giya suddenly released Gerald's hand. She even asked him to go on his own.

Gerald was taken aback. "What's wrong?"

Giya replied, "It's okay. I was just thinking about why I was so worried about you, and why I am still treating you so well now. After all, it does not seem like you treat me as your friend at all based on the way you treated me before this!"

Giya was suddenly very upset and filled with grievances. She then said, "You know, there were so many times when I personally prepared food for you at home and brought it to the library with me. I wanted us to be able to eat together at the cafeteria! I wanted to study with you too! However, it seems as though you have been avoiding me. Even when my mother fell ill, you did not even have a single word of concern! It was only then that I realized that I was overthinking it when I thought I was important to you. I thought that you would... treat me as a good friend, and I was even thinking... Forget it! It was all my own wishful thinking!"

"You should not have saved me today. I was already very sad because of you, but now, I have to feel grateful toward you again. What do you want from me?!" Giya asked as she stomped her feet in frustration.

Gerald replied, "I just don't want you to get hurt. I truly regard you as my friend!"

Giya was also a very rare kind of girl. She was not materialistic and she was also very kind and beautiful. Moreover, she had always treated him very well. Thus, of course Gerald regarded her as a friend.

"Okay, let me ask you something..." Giya said as she moved closer to Gerald, staring at him closely.

Chapter 377

"What is it?"

"Tell me! Why were you avoiding me the other day? Tell me the truth! Is it possible that you already have a girlfriend?" Giya asked tentatively.

However, Giya already knew that Gerald came from a poor family background. It was just like what Tammy had said. This man was so boring, so how could he possibly have a girlfriend?!

“Well, yes! I have a girlfriend!” Gerald replied as he nodded.

It seemed as though Giya had also misunderstood them. Although Gerald was not narcissistic enough to think that someone like Giya would like him, he had indeed been avoiding her because of his own girlfriend!

Giya could not help but feel a little hurt for some reason. “What?! Are you lying to me?”

“I am not lying to you. I really do have a girlfriend. Her name is Mila, and she is from the Broadcasting and Hosting Department. We have already been a couple for more than two months now. She went to the Hong Kong Television Station to study two days ago!” Gerald replied as he smiled.

“Oh! So, that’s it! That’s the reason why you have been avoiding me. It turns out that you actually have a girlfriend. Not bad. This shows that you really like your girlfriend a lot!” Giya replied.

“Yes. I like her very much, and she cares about me too!”

“Oh! Then you should go to the infirmary on your own! I will not accompany you anymore. Otherwise, your girlfriend will misunderstand us if she sees us together. Besides, I will also tell my dad about how you beat some people up for me. I will ask him to help settle this matter too. Goodbye!” Giya waved her hand before she turned around and left.

Gerald did not know why there was a sudden change in Giya’s attitude from the start to the end.

However, it did not matter to him. Anyway, since he was already almost at the infirmary, Gerald decided to go in and get his wound bandaged.

After his wounds had been dressed, he called Drake and Tyson and asked them to deal with the so-called Shen family.

Gerald had already become smarter after learning from his past mistakes. Now, as long as someone offended him, no matter how small things were, Gerald liked to take the initiative to deal with the matter immediately.

This way, he would be able to save himself a lot of trouble.

After his wound had been bandaged, Gerald prepared to go back to his dormitory to lie down and sleep.

“Gerald!” At this time, someone pushed the door of the infirmary open.

It was Giya, and she came in with a bag of fruits in her hand.

“For you!” Giya said angrily.

In fact, Giya could not understand her own mental state at the moment.

Why?!

No matter how you looked at it, Giya did not need to treat Gerald like this at all.

However, feelings were sometimes incomprehensible and unpredictable.

Giya did not know when she had begun having strange feelings for Gerald.

Anyway, she just wanted to see him, get to know him better, and just be by his side.

Perhaps it was when Gerald had given her the jade bracelet. That jade bracelet was his family heirloom, and he had given it to her without any hesitation at all. Wasn't that equivalent to an indirect confession of his feelings for her?

Wasn't a confession an indirect promotion of feelings and affections?

Whether it was a stranger or a friend...

As long as the other party confesses, the relationship between the two parties would change very quickly.

If the other party did not hate the other person too much, the relationship between both parties would involuntarily become some kind of ambiguous feelings.

This was obviously what Giya was feeling now.

She was very grateful toward Gerald, and she was also very curious about him. After Gerald's confession, Giya could not help but imagine what it would feel like to be together with Gerald.

She felt that Gerald would probably be very good to her in every possible way.

However, this kind of expectation was completely opposed to reality. It made Giya, who was a very competitive girl, want to fulfill her own expectations.

Of course, the premise of this whole process was that this person had already gotten the girl interested.

That was why Giya had gotten into Yacob's car yesterday—just to annoy Gerald.

There was also the sad little scene just now when Giya had found out that Gerald already had a girlfriend.

Even so, Giya went to buy some fruits back for Gerald!

"Oh! You went to buy fruits for me?"

Chapter 378

Gerald took the bag of fruits.

“I only bought it for you because you endured a beating for me. Don’t overthink it!” Giya replied as she looked at Gerald. “I do not want your girlfriend to overthink things if she finds out about this!”

“Haha! It’s okay! I did not think too much!” Gerald replied as he smiled.

“By the way, Gerald. Since you said that both of us are friends, let me ask you something. What do you think of Yacob?”

Gerald had already walked out of the infirmary at this time, and Giya was talking to him as both of them walked.

Yacob?

Hahaha. Gerald knew that this person was not a good person because it seemed as though he was one person on the surface, but another person behind her back.

What was more, he was even willing to betray Giya.

At this time, Gerald only shook his head slightly before he said, “I don’t think that he is a very good person. Giya, as your friend, I would advise you to keep your distance from him in the future.”

“Why?” Giya asked angrily.

“Because he really does not deserve someone like you!”

“Why? I feel that Yacob really treats me very well! At least he will not make me upset or ignore me, letting me wait for him on my own! As long as I say the word, he will definitely appear right in front of me! I also believe that Yacob will be willing to do anything for me. So, why is he not good?” Giya retorted.

“Just trust me. I believe that even this matter with Timothy that you’ve gotten entangled in this time has something to do with Yacob. You’d better be careful!” Gerald did not want to say too much about Yacob’s matter today. After all, he did not see it with his own two eyes, so he did not know for certain.

However, he knew for sure that Yacob was not a good person. That was for certain.

However, Giya became very angry. “What do you mean by that? Do you mean that no one is actually really good for me? Do you mean that I will never be able to find a guy who is sincerely good to me? Is that what you mean?”

“That’s not what I mean!”

“I think that is exactly what you mean! Don’t worry! I will find a man who is really good to me soon. After that, I will bring him in front of you to show you that you are not the only one who is willing...” Giya had wanted to say that he was not the only one who was willing to do anything for her without any hesitation at all!

However, she suddenly recalled that Gerald already had a girlfriend. So, what was the point of saying all these things to him?!

As for Gerald, he did not know what else to say.

Hence, he could only say, “Then, I wish for you to be able to find a man who truly loves you as soon as possible!”

“Thank you!” After that, Giya took a deep breath before she turned around to leave.

“I can’t finish all of these fruits by myself. Would you like to take some back with you to your dormitory to eat?”

“No need! If you cannot finish eating it, give it to me!” After she was done speaking, Giya grabbed the bag of fruits from Gerald before throwing it into the trash can directly next to them.

“Also, as a friend, I also hope that you will not give your most precious and valuable possession to other girls so casually in the future. This is because you will cause the other girl to misunderstand you very easily. Of course, I will not misunderstand you, but other girls you meet in the future might inevitably misunderstand you!”

After saying that, Giya left immediately.

As for Gerald, he finally understood everything.

It turned out that Giya had been talking about the jade bracelet. Well, if he would have known that this would happen, he would not have lied in the first place.

Gerald returned to his dormitory and lay down on his bed to rest.

They would be having their exams tomorrow. As for the future, who would be able to tell what was going to happen?

Gerald was about to sleep when he suddenly received a few WeChat messages on his cell phone.

[Are you sleeping? I still want to talk to you. I can't sleep!]

[I feel as though I was a little too much today. I should not have thrown the fruits into the trash can like that!]

[But I was really angry at that time!]

[Gerald, are you there?]

[...]

Chapter 379

[Should we have a meal together at noon after our exams tomorrow? Okay? I will be waiting for you!]

Giya sent a series of text messages to Gerald.

Gerald naturally saw all of her messages.

After thinking about it, he replied: [Thanks, but I will not be going. I have to rush home as soon as our exams are over!]

Due to the scattered examination schedule, Gerald had already sat for some of his exams before this. There were only two more subjects for the so-called final exams tomorrow morning.

Additionally, he did not want to have too many interactions with Giya anymore.

He replied to her directly before he turned off his cell phone so that he could rest earlier.

The next day, Gerald completed his exams for all of his subjects.

After that, he packed his luggage and put his blanket into another snakeskin bag.

Zack had initially planned to send a special car over to take Gerald to Serene County.

After all, the project in Serene County had already begun progressing ever since the phone call yesterday.

Zack and Michael who stayed behind were naturally busy and had to get things done back and forth.

However, Gerald did not want to be so high profile.

After all, the first thing that he would have to do after going back to Serene County would be to visit Mr. and Mrs. Winters.

As for the investment matters, Zack and Michael could deal with it themselves.

Moreover, since they had three months of summer vacation, Gerald wanted to settle down to read a book or learn something.

Once his summer vacation was over, he would have to begin his internship.

He would truly be very busy then. Hence, he should just relax when he could now!

After turning on his cell phone, he received another message from Giya on WeChat.

Gerald replied: [I have already returned to my hometown. Goodbye!]

[Oh! Alright, then! I will not disturb you anymore!]

Gerald did not reply, and Giya did not continue talking anymore.

Anyway, Gerald thought that he would not see her again in the future anymore, right?

As he sat in the bus, Gerald felt that he rarely had the opportunity to look at the scenery outside the window quietly.

He could not help but feel a little melancholic.

As he thought about it, it had just been a few months ago when Gerald had taken the bus, and he only had two hundred dollars on him. At that time, he was thinking about how he was going to deal with his tuition fee and his life in the future. Moreover, it would be Xavia's birthday soon. How was he going to save up enough money to buy her a birthday present?

He could still remember that it had been raining heavily when he took the bus to school that day, and he had been sitting in the bus by himself. Xavia did not forget to call him to tell him that she had already arrived at school and was waiting to have dinner with him.

She said that she had brought some delicious food with her from home.

At that time, Xavia was still a pretty good girl.

But this time around, he was going back by bus, and so many things had already happened.

He had found out that he was a rich heir—the exceptionally rich kind!

As for Xavia, she had also changed completely, and both of them had also broken up.

However, one thing remained the same. When he had been going back to school a few months ago, he had been thinking about how he was going to spend his money.

Now that he was going home, he was still thinking about how he was going to spend his money!

Hahaha!

Gerald continued staring out the window in a trance.

“Gerald?”

At this time, a female voice suddenly rang next to him.

This person had obviously recognized Gerald.

Gerald turned his head to look around and saw a beautiful woman who was about twenty-five to twenty-six years old sitting on the seat next to the bus aisle.

She was wearing light makeup on her face, and she was also very beautiful.

“Miss Lewis?” Gerald really did not expect to see a familiar face on the bus.

Moreover, this person was his high school English teacher.

Her name was Montana Lewis, and she had been a substitute English teacher in high school. She had taught Gerald for two years and was very young and beautiful. She had just graduated from university at that time, but she could teach in high school because of her family connections.

There was a reason why Gerald had such a deep impression of her.

It was because Miss Lewis had the characteristics of all the young and modern girls.

For example, she would always be dressed in a very revealing manner. Back then, she would wear a miniskirt and crop top which revealed her belly button while teaching her students.

Everyone also knew that she had found a particularly rich boyfriend because of her beauty. Her boyfriend had even bought her an Audi A6! That was very impressive!

Chapter 380

Of course, her most notable feature was her love for the rich and her disdain for the poor.

She was almost the same as Cassandra, his current teacher.

Rich students were like their close friends and buddies.

If you had no money or power, you could just go and die wherever you wanted to.

Sometimes, her words were also very cruel and heartbreaking. That was the reason why Gerald had a very deep impression of her.

“Oh my God! This is such a coincidence. This is the first time that I’m taking a bus since I was young, but to think I would run into you now!”

Montana replied as she smiled wryly.

It seemed as though she was afraid people would misunderstand her and think that she took the bus often.

“Montana, who is he? Is he one of your students?” A handsome young man in a suit asked as he sat next to Montana.

“Yes. I’ve told you about it before. I used to have a very poor student in my class. He would always bring two steamed buns and a bag of pickles to school every day. Moreover, he would only eat one meal a day! Do you remember?”

“Oh! Yes, I remember!”

“That’s right! This is him. Speaking of which, I have not seen him for almost three years now! He got into a pretty good university. He went to study at Mayberry University! Oh! There was a boy named James Laurie in our class at that time. In fact, everything about that kid was very good. Unfortunately, he did not manage to get into a good university. He should have been admitted into Mayberry University, but he did not. Instead, some people who should not have gotten into the university got admitted. Seriously!” Montana said in dissatisfaction.

“Nevertheless, Gerald, I haven’t seen you in two to three years. It seems as though your temperament has already improved quite a lot. You no longer have the inferiority complex that you used to have before. It seems as though the big city has done you some good!” Montana said lightly.

Gerald replied, “Thank you, Miss Lewis. You are also much more beautiful compared to before!”

To be honest, he had a very bad impression of Montana.

However, it did not matter, because no matter what it was, she was still his teacher after all. There was no reason for him to hold a feud against her.

“Hehehe! You’ve also learned how to sweet-talk. To be honest, you should be more pragmatic and honest. Don’t learn to say these things like other people do. Moreover, even when you compliment me, I don’t feel like it’s a compliment when it is coming from your mouth!” Montana insulted him directly.

If someone rich praised you, that meant that you were impressive, but when a poor person praised you, you would not feel any sense of accomplishment at all.

This was simple.

Gerald could not help but think this to himself.

Anyhow, he decided to change the topic. “Miss Lewis, where did the both of you go?”

“Hehehe! We traveled abroad. Otherwise, why else do you think we are coming back by bus? Seriously. Anyway, you would not understand even if I told you!” Montana replied as she held the arm of the man in the suit affectionately.

Gerald simply nodded.

When he saw that Montana was no longer looking at him, he stopped talking as well. After that, he turned his head around before he continued looking out the window.

The bus arrived at Serene County shortly after.

The passengers got out of the bus, one after the other.

Gerald also carried his own luggage down before he got ready to hail a cab to go home.

Montana and her boyfriend were sharing the same luggage, and it seemed as though neither one of them wanted to carry the luggage. "Well, isn't Gerald here anyway? We can just ask him to carry our luggage to the exit of the station, then. How can your driver be late at a time like this? You shouldn't let him off just like that!"

It seemed as though they felt that they would lose face if they were to carry it.

When Montana saw Gerald, she hurriedly waved at him.

"Gerald, come here and help us lift this luggage! I cannot lift it!"

Montana did not wait for Gerald to speak and she simply pushed her luggage in front of him.

'Can't lift it? If you can't lift it, you can just wait to die then!' Gerald could not help but curse in his heart. However, as he thought about it, he would not lose anything even if he helped his teacher carry her luggage.

Therefore, he carried his own luggage in one hand as he carried the other two parties' luggage in his other hand. After that, he walked behind them as they walked out of the station.

"Dear, do you think that your family can get the investment for the Serene County financing this time? If you can get it, you will really be rich! Hahaha! At that time, Serene County will also become a city in the future! I am so excited!" Montana gushed as she held onto her boyfriend's arm with one hand.

Her boyfriend replied proudly, "Haha. That will not be an issue. My dad's company is considered to have the highest potential in the whole Serene County!"

"Eh? Why are there so many cars parked outside the station? These are all private cars in the county. It seems as though these leaders are all here to pick someone up, right?"

“Yes! Isn’t that Sir Herring Jenkins? He is here as well?”

Chapter 381

“Sir Herring Jenkins is the head of the county. Who on earth could make him wait at the bus station?”

Montana could not mask her surprise.

Was it that rich dude from the city?

No way. Why would someone as rich as him come here by bus?

“Wait here; I’ll go say hi!”

Montana’s boyfriend straightened his suit and tidied up his hair.

He was ready to go over.

“But Jonathan, will this work? Will Mr. Jenkins pay any attention to you?”

Montana couldn’t help but worry.

“I guess so. After all, he knows my dad too, and I’ve had dinner with him twice.”

Jonathan reassured Montana and headed over to the other side.

Montana, however, didn’t dare go with him. The other side was filled with big shots, and several heads of the Ministry of Education were also present.

As a fellow staff member, of course, Montana didn’t possess the courage to approach them.

As for Jonathan, he went and came back quickly.

While there, he looked very proud, thinking that he had a chance to stand out among the crowd if he just greeted everyone.

But when he came back, he was dejected and his face the color of an eggplant.

“Huh? What happened, Jonathan? Did the mayor ignore you? Ugh, I told you so didn’t I? better not go over where all the big shots are!”

“Mhmm, it seems like the mayor and the others are indeed waiting for someone’s arrival, someone important. I heard them talking about a Mr. Crawford, the one about to bring a massive change to the entire Serene Town! He’s a big boss, but something isn’t right. If it really is Mr. Crawford, why would he come here by bus?”

Jonathan was confused.

“Hmm, the mayor probably did not tell you the truth. Let’s go now. The few heads from the Ministry of Education are also there,” said Montana in a hurry.

Jonathan simply nodded.

He hoped that Mr. Crawford could speed up his journey as well.

Gerald had been following from behind and heard them mentioning his name. Could they have come here to pick him up, he thought to himself.

But he had already told Zack Lyle not to turn his arrival into some grand event. He simply wanted to return home and get his own stuff sorted out, and he wanted to stay out of it.

Right now, though, it was a bad time for Gerald to go over and ask them.

He pretended that nothing happened.

His hands were full of Montana and Jonathan's luggage. Her driver stopped in front of them as soon as they exited the Station.

"The heat is killing me! Jon, get the luggage inside, and let's leave!"

Montana rudely snapped at the driver.

After putting their luggage inside, Jonathan and Montana got into the car, and the driver drove away.

Gerald was left alone at the station with his luggage on the side, looking like an idiot.

He might be just a servant, but the least they could do was to greet him, right?

Inside the car, Jonathan looked at the rear-view mirror and saw Gerald, now standing stupidly at their pickup spot. He felt a little sorry for him.

"Montana, I forgot to greet that classmate of yours. We should've at least asked where he was heading and perhaps give him a lift, right?"

"Forget about him. We're not giving him a lift. He's just pathetic, and we're not going to risk soiling our car because of him!"

"Alright then."

Cursing Montana under his breath, Gerald decided to call home and prepared to leave.

On the way back, he remembered to give Mr. Winters a call.

He wanted to tell them not to make him any food as he would take away something on the way back.

The phone back home rang for quite a while, yet no one picked up.

He called three times until someone finally picked up the phone. A faint, weak voice came on the other side of the line.

“Hello? May I know who you are looking for?”

“Mrs. Winters, it’s Gerald here. May I know where Mr. Winters is?”

“Oh, Gerald? You’re back for your break, huh?”

Mrs. Winters sounded a little surprised.

Back when they were kids, Jessica and Gerald were both raised by Mr. and Mrs. Winters.

It was why the siblings had an incredibly deep affection for the old couple, treating them as their own grandparents.

In the past few years, Jessica was the first to rise to the top. Since Gerald still had to support his poor self, he could not provide Mr. and Mrs. Winters a comfortable life. The only thing he could do was give them financial aid discreetly.

So basically, Mr. Winters and his family still retained their original lives.

After Jessica received news that Gerald was about to have a break, the first thing she thought of was helping Mr. Winters and his family settle down.

Gerald would never forget about him.

Chapter 382

“Ahem, Mr. Winters was hospitalized this afternoon. I’d just come back to pack some clothes when I heard the phone ringing.”

“What? Hospitalized? Which hospital?”

Hearing Mrs. Winters’s gloomy tone, Gerald’s heart thumped in his chest. He hastily asked for the hospital’s location.

Mrs. Winters told him the address.

It happened to be at a hospital in the same county.

Mrs. Winters also happened to arrive at the same time after hitching a ride on one of the county’s bread trucks.

Gerald assisted her down from the truck before rushing to the emergency room in one of the hospital’s buildings.

Mr. Winters had apparently suffered from cardiovascular problems and passed out while having his lunch.

The incident gave her a big scare, and she immediately called for an ambulance. Now, the doctors were still doing all they could to save his life.

“Why are we the only ones paying for his hospital bills? Big brother, he’s our dad... your dad, so you’ll have to chip in too.”

In the emergency room doorway, a woman with textured, caterpillar-like eyebrows was speaking to a couple.

Opposite her were also several couples with young children.

Upon closer inspection, Gerald realized they were Mr. Winters's two sons and daughters.

Those young children were his grandkids.

After hearing of the incident, they had apparently rushed to the hospital as well.

"My brothers and sisters, what you said wasn't exactly accurate. You've all been living with dad the longest, and I've always been out, busy with business; as for the bills, I'm only asking you to settle in advance. Never have I mentioned once that I'll make you pay for it all, so calm down! At the end of the day, the four of us will split the bill equally!"

The eldest of the bunch had always been out managing his business. He crossed his arms, taking a drag from a cigarette.

"Why should the four of us pay an equal share of the bill? Both of you brothers are the eldest of the family, so it only makes sense that you foot a little more. Sister and I should pay the lesser part. Besides, my daughter just graduated from university this year, and she's getting an internship soon. I'll need some money for that!"

The third sister was disgruntled.

Gerald understood that they were somehow fighting over the medical bills.

And when Mrs. Hayward heard the fight brewing among the siblings, she was so angry she almost fainted.

"Can you guys stop arguing for once?! If none of you are going to pay, I'll pay for it, even if it costs me a kidney. Are you happy now?"

Mrs. Winters stomped her foot in exasperation and frustration.

“Calm down, mom. Didn’t you use up most of your savings to help your grandson start his own business?” quizzed the second eldest son.

“How much are the medical bills?”

Gerald finally spoke up.

“Huh? Gerald is back?”

Only then did the crowd notice Gerald.

“Hmph! Why did you even bother asking? It’s not like you’ve got the money anyway!” a young lady named Queeny Winters snapped coldly. She was the same age as Gerald.

During their childhood, Mr. Winters had always been more fond of Gerald compared to Queeny. As a result, she was dissatisfied. What grandparents would care more for a poor kid rather than their own granddaughter?

“Stop pretending to be something you’re not and start showing us what you can do,” interjected Clifton Winters, the other youngster who had just set up his own enterprise.

Like Queeny, he despised Gerald all the same.

His hate stemmed from Gerald getting good grades since he was a kid, and his grandparents had often compared him to Gerald. As time went by, his jealousy slowly turned into hatred.

As for Gerald, he knew that Queeny and Clifton disliked him since the beginning.

Yet, he did not say anything.

It was then that a nurse approached them.

“May I know when the surgery fee will be paid? The total is 20,000 dollars, and I suppose all of you can afford it, right?”

The nurse droned on with a tone of indifference.

“Listen to me, brother. Settle it now. I’ll give you the money later,” said the eldest brother.

“And why should I listen to you?”

“...”

Soon, the jabs against each other that had supposedly mellowed down boiled up into a heated quarrel all over again.

The second daughter-in-law and the third sister had joined the quarrel. They even brought up past issues, saying something about how the second-daughter-in-law owed money to the third sister.

Then, the entire scene turned chaotic.

Everything was a royal mess.

The nurse didn’t even try hiding the scowl that had grown across her face.

“I’ll pay,” Gerald whispered to the nurse as he shook his head in helplessness.

“You?”

Chapter 383

The nurse led Gerald downstairs to pay at the counter, though she felt somewhat skeptical about him.

What then could be the reason for her doubts?

It was all because of the way Gerald dressed. He didn't look like one that would have much money on him.

The medical bill came up to 20,000 dollars, almost impossible for the average family to fork out, let alone someone like him.

Gerald proved her wrong, though. He paid the 20,000 dollars for the surgical fee and even settled the accommodation as well.

It was a whopping 30,000 dollars in total!

He paid for everything without even batting an eyelid.

The nurse was stunned, unable to move.

Gerald paid no attention to her and walked back to the hallway.

They were still fighting.

"Everyone, stop fighting, I've settled the bills," said Gerald.

"Huh???"

Only then did the fight die down.

The siblings were stupefied when they heard that.

“You paid for everything? Gerald, it was 20,000 dollars! Where did you get the money from?” asked the eldest brother in astonishment.

“Well, not just 20,000 dollars, but this handsome lad paid 30,000 dollars, including the hospital bills!”

Unbeknownst to Gerald, the nurse had followed him all the way here.

“30,000 dollars?!”

The crowd became even more surprised.

In a worse state were Queenie and Clifton were even more embarrassed, considering how they kept mocking Gerald before this. Now, he had really forked out the money. They felt as if they had been slapped on the face, one hard slap after another.

“The money wasn’t stolen, right?” Clifton asked with a twisted face.

“Yeah, I remember an online news site reporting how someone lost their money! Gerald, did you happen to find that money and not return it?”

“It must have been it! Beware, someone might just call the police on you. That 30,000 dollars might just land you a death sentence!” Clifton warned viciously.

After all, he owned an entire enterprise, and it wasn’t surprising that he knew such things.

It was also precisely these words that scared Mrs. Winters.

“Gerald, where did you get that much money from anyway?”

“Oh, I just won the lottery, so there’s nothing to worry about, Mrs. Winters!” replied Gerald, smiling slightly.

Although there was no reason for him to conceal his identity, he simply didn’t know what to tell Mrs. Winters.

Instead, he panicked and ended up lying.

Queenie and Clifton’s eyes opened wide the moment they heard that.

Especially Queenie.

“How much did you win?” she asked in an anxious hurry.

Mr. Winters’s eldest sons, the adults, thought that it was quite bold that a young girl like Queenie would ask such direct questions. She simply couldn’t suppress her suspicions.

Mr. Winters had always said Gerald was a nice young man, and he intended for them both to be betrothed.

But who would like a poor guy like Gerald?

So, Queenie rejected him.

When she heard Gerald say that he had won the lottery, she felt a jolt run through her body.

Holy sh*t! If he really did become a wealthy man, would that mean she missed her shot?

“Quick, tell me, Gerald. How much did you win?”

Queenie jumped to her feet.

Gerald simply laughed, while showing five fingers,

“Huh? Half a million?” Queenie stared in shock.

On the other hand, Mrs. Winters was delighted by the news.

“What? You really won half a million dollars?!”

“Don’t worry about it, auntie. Just relax. I’ve already paid for uncle’s medical bills.”

Gerald helped Mrs. Winters sit down.

On the other hand, Queenie felt super anxious, as though a swarm of ants was crawling all over her heart.

What could she do now?

From Gerald’s tone alone, he seemed to have won a lot more than just half a million.

Could it be five million?

Gosh!

The more she thought about it, the more anxious she became. Thanks to Gerald getting ridiculed a while ago, he had chosen to conceal the specific value and make them guess instead.

For the next two days, Gerald didn't go anywhere, staying by Mr. Winters' side all the time in the hospital. The good news was that his condition was not serious, and he only needed to stay in the hospital for a while.

During lunchtime, he first waited for Mr. and Mrs. Winters to finish their meals.

When his belly started grumbling, he headed to the hospital's cafeteria to get himself something to eat.

"Aren't you, Gerald? You're back!"

While he was queueing up for food, he felt a sudden tap on his shoulder.

When he looked back, he saw a beautiful girl, all made up and wearing a ponytail.

But even with the makeup on, Gerald still recognized her.

Chapter 384

"You're Morgana Lopez?"

Gerald was a little surprised.

Of course, he knew her. She was from the same class in high school and even representative of the English class. Her name was Morgana Lopez.

During their high school years, she was pretty yet looked normal at the same time.

But he hadn't seen her for three to four years, and all dolled up, she looked really hot and beautiful.

The metamorphosis was pretty evident.

In fact, he was mentally prepared to bump into high school classmates long before he returned to his hometown.

After all, the ones that should be working had already gone to work.

“I saw your picture taken by Montana Lewis in our English class representatives’ group today. You were carrying a duffel bag, so I knew you were back. I didn’t expect to meet you here... what a coincidence!”

Morgana straightened her hair.

Even after graduation, it was common for some teachers to leave behind their contacts to stay in touch with class representatives.

F*ck! Gerald was stunned.

Since when did Montana take a picture of him, and how on earth did he not come to know?

His guess was that she must have taken the picture after she got off the bus.

After all, she did yell at him to bring over her luggage while she was holding her phone at that time, so he guessed it must have been then.

F*ck. That b*tch...

As rude as it may seem, Gerald still cursed in his heart.

“By the way, why are you in the hospital? Someone you know got admitted?”

Morgana had a quick chat with Gerald. Last time, they did not talk quite as much, but now, it seemed she had grown wiser after mingling within society.

“Yeah, my uncle got admitted here. How about you? Seeing someone?” Gerald asked.

“Oh, I’ve got lots of patients here. Say hello to your uncle later for me. I sincerely hope it all goes well for him!”

Morgana smiled.

“Oh, I understand now. You must be a doctor here, right?” Gerald asked.

“Yeah, I’m here under probation, and in a short while, I’ll become a full-time doctor here!” Morgana said with a touch of pride.

“That’s great!”

Morgana’s family seemed to have some connections with the hospital, but that wasn’t unorthodox.

Finding connections was a pretty common thing to do when students were nearing their graduation.

Those with connections would rely on them, and those without connections would need to rely on miracles.

It was nothing surprising.

It was time for Gerald to make his order.

“You don’t have to order anything. Let me treat you to lunch today. Miss, two servings for us, please!”

Morgana hollered to the canteen lady, and she soon filled up both of their plates with delicious food.

The meal was sumptuous and mouth-watering.

“Well, we were classmates in high school, and we haven’t seen each other for quite some time now, so you won’t mind me buying you lunch, right?”

Morgana covered her mouth a little, chucking.

“Now, why would I? Thank you so much for the food! It looks absolutely fantastic!”

The two then took their seats.

Morgana started off the conversation by introducing herself and what she’d been doing for the past two years. It might have seemed like some innocent catching up, but what she really wanted was to show off a little bit. Nonetheless, she was still more comfortable to get along with than the other classmates.

Gerald merely listened, occasionally inserting praises with a few words.

At that time, a young male doctor in a white lab coat walked towards Morgana.

“Who’s this?”

“Oh, this is a friend from high school. I ran into him here, so I treated him to lunch! Hey Gerald, let me introduce my boyfriend to you. This is Gabriel Lyons. He’s the one I told you about, and his dad is the hospital’s vice president.”

Morgana smiled.

“Ahh! A high school classmate of yours. Wouldn’t it be better to get him a proper restaurant meal than in our cafeteria? You both can catch up properly then,” said Gabriel, smiling.

“Ahem. I still have to work this afternoon, so how would I find any time for that? Besides, you don’t mind the cafeteria food, right, Gerald?”

“Of course, I don’t! The food here is pretty good,” Gerald nodded as he shoved two big mouthfuls of potatoes down his throat.

To Gerald, it was actually alright that things turned out this way.

For the remainder of the meal, he listened to Gabriel and Montana ramble on.

“Right, didn’t you have a few more high school classmates coming here tonight? I think it’s Cameron Laver and the others. They’re back for their break, and it looks like you have to be on duty tonight,” said Gabriel.

“Really? Then I guess I have to reschedule my shift for a later time. Cameron and his group were my best buddies during high school, and now that they’re here on break, I’ve to treat them as well. Even if I have to take a day off. I haven’t seen them for four years now... Oh, by the way, did you book the restaurant?” Morgana asked.

“Yep, I booked Johnsbury Bistro for tonight!”

“Nah... that restaurant is too ordinary. How about Buntingford Grand Hotel?” After all, we haven’t seen each other since we left high school, that’s four years now. You’re not going to make me look too shabby in front of them, are you?”

“Alright, then. That’s changed. By the way, when are you going to get the other directors for a meal to settle this? You know that your director is the hospital’s chief, and there’s nothing my father can do about it.”

Gabriel laughed bitterly.

“Urgh, why did you bring up the matter? I’ve just lost my appetite! I can’t swallow another bite of this!”

Morgana slammed her fork onto the table in anger.

From what he had heard, Gerald guessed that Morgana had to be in some sort of trouble...

Chapter 385

“Hmph! Why did he make the other intern a permanent doctor and not me? It’s just as I’ve said before. He isn’t giving face to your father at all! Doesn’t he know we are both seeing each other? He made the other intern a full-time doctor and ignored me instead!”

Morgana was so enraged that her fork almost slammed into the table again.

Gabriel tried to console her.

Gerald listened as he ate, and he could almost understand what happened.

The gist of it was that Morgana Lopez’s entry into the hospital as an intern clinician had been arranged by Gabriel’s father, the hospital’s vice president.

Of course, Morgana was really good at her job, where she was very professional and was very proficient with her skills. Many hospital staff and patients had unanimously commended her.

Gabriel’s father, however, seemed to be at odds with the director.

In the end, Morgana became the victim of the conflict between the two.

She suspected it would be a little more than challenging to become a permanent doctor her, and if her probation didn’t end well, the only obvious choice was to leave the hospital.

Her spot had been given to another intern from the director’s side, but that one seemed to perform way worse than Morgana.

It was apparent that the director deliberately wanted to embarrass Gabriel’s father.

Now, things had become quite upsetting for them.

It was highly possible that things wouldn't work out in their favor.

Thus, it was the reason why Morgana wanted to have a night out with Cameron and the others.

Gerald knew who Cameron and his gang were since they were from the same class in high school.

Cameron's dad worked in a hospital, and his mother in the health bureau.

In short, they were going to have a discussion on the matter later.

Gerald felt uncomfortable and awkward as he listened to their conversation.

He quickly finished his food.

"You're done? Have you eaten enough? See, I've got a lot going on here, so don't take this at heart, alright?"

Morgana asked the question blandly. It didn't sound as warm as it did before.

These days, most people were only polite for the first few minutes. When that time was up, their real character would emerge from within.

"It's okay, and by the way, Morgana, did you just say you were having a hard time at work? Don't worry too much, and just relax. I believe everything will turn out just fine!"

Gerald couldn't finish his lunch and just leave like that.

He could, however, give her a reassuring word or two.

Gerald even thought that if he could help her, he was more than willing to help out.

Although he could tell that Morgana didn't really see much in him, the fact that she invited him for a meal, regardless of whether expensive or not, was what friendship was all about.

As a result, Gerald sought to help and return the favor.

"Thank you, Gerald. Right, tell me the room number to your uncle's ward, and I'll have Gabriel go over and say hello."

"Alright!"

Gerald told them the ward number.

Without interrupting Morgana and Gabriel, he walked out of the cafeteria to go look after Mr. Winters.

At the same time, he called Zack, seeing if he could pull some strings to help Morgana be a permanent doctor in this hospital.

It wasn't a big deal anyway.

Not only did Gerald's long-term investment plan include free-market industries, but it also included many of Serene Town's business establishments.

Hospitals and educational sectors were also part of that investment plan.

"By the way, Gerald, I wonder if you're free tonight?"

Zack asked just as they were about to hang up the call.

“Why, what’s wrong?”

“Well... the head of Serene Town County knew you had returned for a few days. It was all my fault, I let slip of it when I was drinking, and they even went to the station specifically just to greet you. Now, they’ve set up a welcoming party for you, and they wanted to know if you would attend the party?”

“If it’s in the evening... Fine, I’ll go!”

That feeling in his gut was right, all along. They were indeed there at the station to pick him up.

Frankly, Gerald felt quite bad for leaving them disappointed.

As for the welcoming party, even if he didn’t feel like going, they would just keep pestering him anyway.

Chapter 386

So, he agreed to go.

In the afternoon, once Mr. Winters finally slept off, Gerald left for the party.

It would be held in Cape Grace Hotel, somewhere around Serene Town county.

Attracting investors had always been a top priority for the region, and this time, much thought had been put in to make it as grand as they could.

Even many business owners of Serene Town County would be attending.

Zack and Micheal arrived first since Gerald had to look after Mr. Winters.

Gerald stood at the entrance, ready to enter the hotel.

Beside him, a car pulled up at the parking space. A couple came out of the car, arm in arm.

The woman was dressed elegantly and formally, and the man had a suit on him.

“Oh my, we should’ve left earlier. Look at the time now!” complained the woman.

“Hmph, why is it always my fault? You were the one taking hour upon hour to put that makeup on! My dad even called a couple of times to hurry us since Mr. Crawford will be arriving. It’ll be an embarrassment if we are late!” retorted the man.

The couple was none other than Montana and her husband, Jonathan.

“Stop squabbling, let’s get inside!” said Jonathan.

Suddenly, he glanced over his shoulder and saw that a boy had also entered the hotel. He pointed at him in surprise.

“Montana, look! Isn’t that one of your students? Is that Gerald?”

“Wait; what? Your eyes must be playing with y... f*ck, it is him!”

Montana was startled, and by the look of her face, she was seriously taken aback this time.

“Gerald! Stop right there!”

Just as Gerald was ready to enter the hotel, he heard someone calling out to him. He looked back, and by incredible coincidence, it was Montana.

“Ms. Lewis, what a coincidence!”

Gerald greeted with a smile.

Quite frankly, he wanted to kick Montana badly on the kneecaps twice.

“We’re surprised you asked us... do you even know what this place is? They’re planning a grand event, so what are you doing here?” asked Montana, crossing her arms.

Without waiting for his reply, Montana looked as if she realized something.

“I see; you’re here to work, right? Wow, Gerald, I didn’t know you had quite the eye for the finer things! Cape Grace Hotel will be quite busy tonight, so you must’ve smelled your opportunity, huh? Not bad!”

Montana smirked and nodded slowly.

“Okay, work well. I’ll remember to spare you a tip!”

Montana patted Gerald’s shoulder. She then grabbed Jonathan’s hand and went into the hotel.

Hehe...

“Just wait and see, I’m going to make you cry, you b*stards!” Gerald laughed and shook his head.

He took a step into the venue.

The dining hall was packed tonight.

Gerald held his hands behind his back, scouring the crowd for Zack and Michael.

Suddenly, he felt his face pelted by a small object.

F*ck! Who was that? That person must have been really bored, huh?

Gerald turned and saw Morgana sitting by a table, covering her mouth and giggling behind it.

Several young ladies sat next to her, and they all looked like they knew each other quite well.

They all looked at Gerald and laughed together.

“Stop standing there like a dummy. Get over here!” Montana shouted at Gerald.

Chapter 387

Gerald frowned, unhappy, but he walked over to their table anyway.

“Whoa, Madam Lewis, is this one of your students? He looks pretty good... hey, why isn't he in a uniform?” said a woman next to Montana.

“Yeah, look, all the waiters here are in their uniforms, and he's the only one not wearing it!”

“I guess he must be the handyman then. He'll work wherever there's work to be done, so he should be a temporary worker.”

Montana tried to find a reasonable explanation.

“Haha yeah, come here, little guy, come to my side. There's an empty seat beside me. Come sit and have a chat!”

“Yeah, little cutie, don't be shy! It's a rare chance to dine among so many rich and young CEO today, so you've got to appreciate your time here!”

In their late twenties, a few women saw how Gerald looked quite handsome and cute, and they tried to tease him.

Montana rolled her eyes.

“What are you staring at? Can’t you see that they’ve asked you to sit down?! Are you that dumb? Four years of college for nothing!”

In the end, Gerald could not resist the invitation.

He was feeling good tonight, so he chose to sit with them for a little while. He would then cross over to Zack’s table once he spotted him.

Still, he was a little annoyed, mostly because Montana had been incessantly abusing him with insults.

Why?

For the sake of their teacher-student relationship, Gerald did everything that she asked had him to do, yet he didn’t even get a single thank you.

Now, she had been mocking him ever since they stepped into the place.

Gerald was supposed to attend the welcoming party. Instead, he became the ladies’ laughing stock.

He preferred to remain low-profile, but it certainly didn’t mean he was easy to be made fun of.

Unperturbed, he sat down immediately.

“Hmph, you really are pathetic and gullible, aren’t you? I can’t believe you sat down after being told to do so!”

Once again, Montana rudely jeered at Gerald.

It made the women giggle in glee.

These ladies were the wealthy spouses of Serene Town's business elite, their husbands' moguls involved in Mayberry's top corporations.

Montana, on the other hand, was just a substitute teacher.

As a result, she endlessly flattered them on some occasions, hoping she could tag along too.

Seeing that everyone was so happy, she was even more eager.

Thwack!

Montana slapped the back of Gerald's head.

"Why don't you get up and pour some wine for Libby and the others? Think you're some rich heir now?!"

Everyone at the table burst into fits of laughter.

Gerald remained silent, standing up and pouring everyone a glass of wine.

However, when it was Montana's turn, Gerald deliberately shook the bottle, aggressively pouring its contents without the slightest care.

Shaking his hands, he and spilled the wine directly on Montana's abdomen.

Now, her dress was full of wine.

“Ugh! Holy sh*t! My skirt!” Montana screamed.

“Gerald, do you even know how to pour wine??? Do you want to die?! Any idea how much I paid for this dress?”

Montana was enraged.

The party was about to start in a second, and there was no way she could meet people in this state.

Yet, Gerald looked like a numbskull.

She thought Gerald was a brat who had never attended any such events, so he was naturally careless and clumsy.

But she was the one who made him do it anyway, so all she could do was hold her tongue and save her curses.

“I was wrong... this is my mistake. I should never have let you sit here from the beginning! If I didn't, my skirt wouldn't have gotten dirty!”

“Oh gosh, what are you standing there for? I'm heading to the toilet. Hurry up and get me some tissue!”

Since her boyfriend was at another table chatting with some elders, and it would be weirdly unattractive just to go the get tissue by herself, she poked Gerald's head instead.

“Alright!”

Gerald smirked as he looked at Montana. He nodded and followed Montana to the toilet.

“F*ck! I told you to get me a box of tissue! What the f*ck am I going to do with just one piece?”

Montana was in a blurred rage.

The sink was universal, and both the men’s and women’s washrooms were located beside it.

At that moment, a girl came out of the washroom.

She happened to walk over to the sink to wash her hands.

Chapter 388

“Huh? Miss Lewis? Why are you here?”

The girl was surprised.

“Morgana, why are you here at Cape Grace? Didn’t you say you were hanging out tonight with the group at Buntingford Grand Hotel?”

Morgana was surprised as well.

Morgana, the girl Montana chose as the class representative, and now a doctor at the county hospital!

“Forget about it. The hotel is closed for a few days, so we came to Cape Grace, but it seems they have some kind of event today. Luckily, we booked early, or we wouldn’t have gotten a place!”

Morgana shrugged, grumbling away.

She seemed to have not noticed Gerald, who was just standing by her side.

“Miss Lewis, how could you have been so careless? You’ve got red wine all over your clothes!” asked Morgana.

“Hmph! Don’t even ask. I’m here for a business event, and it was all because of that bastard Gerald! He got the wine all over me!”

Montana rolled her eyes at Gerald.

Only then did she notice Gerald who was standing close by.

“Why are you here, Gerald? Don’t tell me you’re here with Miss Lewis for the event?” asked Morgana in astonishment.

“Huh, him? He’s just here as a handyman. There’s no way he would have been invited to this!” Montana said, her mood obviously foul.

No matter how much she tried to clean her dress, the stain was present, but the event was about to start soon, and she quickly stormed out of the toilet in a fury.

“Cameron, guys! Look who we have here!”

As soon as Montana walked out of the toilet with Morgana, a few boys walked out of the hall’s lounge on the first floor.

It happened to be Gabriel Lyons, Morgana’s boyfriend, Cameron, and the other classmates.

The truth was that Gerald hadn’t met Cameron and the others for years now. They didn’t even talk much back then high school, let alone college.

When they saw Morgana, they hurriedly came over to greet her.

Gerald did not interject or take the initiative to greet them, merely standing beside and listening silently.

“Cameron, you were the most handsome in our class. I didn’t expect you to be still a heartthrob! So, what’s next? Any future plans?” Morgana asked Cameron.

Cameron was dressed in a tuxedo, his hair slicked to the back. He had good posture, and indeed, looked absolutely dashing. More importantly, he wasn’t the wealthiest kid in class back then, but his family had the most connections, and the teachers somewhat respected him.

“I’ve no idea; maybe my family will pull some strings for me?” Cameron laughed heartily.

Needless to say, everyone understood that his future career would be stable and secure.

The others were dripping green with envy for him.

“But Cameron, you can’t be the only one that gets a stable path. Morgana is now working in the hospital, and you have to do whatever you can to help her!”

Of course, Montana had not forgotten her own class representative.

“Don’t worry about that. It won’t be a problem for me.”

“Oh right, Gerald was also a high school classmate of yours. Why do you guys not seem to know each other?”

This time, Morgana’s boyfriend, Gabriel, suddenly pointed at Gerald.

“Huh, Gerald? F*ck!” he exclaimed with a smile.

Cameron and the others looked in Gerald’s direction, and sure enough, they realized that it was the same Gerald from high school!

“Yeah, I forgot to tell you guys that I met Gerald at noon today at noon, and he’s now a waiter at Cape Grace Hotel.”

As soon as Morgana saw that Gerald was let aside and ignored, she felt awkward and introduced him anyway.

“Ooh, that’s great, Gerald. Are you stationed in the kitchen or hall? If things don’t work out for you, I’ll find you some connections and promote you to be a supervisor or something?”

Cameron smiled and nodded.

“Is he your classmate from high school?”

Among the group of people, there was also a boy whom Gerald had never seen before, now looking at him and asking some weird questions.

Indeed, running into an old classmate who was a waiter during a class reunion, now that was newsworthy by itself.

“Yeah, he’s the famous broke guy from our class, haha!”

The other boy laughed.

The group introduced Gerald to that boy without hesitation, even bringing up his past.

“Mr. Crawford... so you’re here!”

Just then, a voice suddenly boomed from across the hall...

Chapter 389

“Huh?”

When Gerald turned around, he saw a middle-aged man hurrying toward him.

They did not seem to recognize the man.

Could he have known Gerald personally?

Gerald stepped out of the crowd.

“Damn, Gerald. Why did you go for it? Didn’t you hear how he was calling for one, Mr. Gerald?”

“Haha, yeah! Aren’t you embarrassed?”

The few friends from high school followed Gerald as they laughed.

Even Morgana was laughing as she covered her mouth.

Montana rolled her eyes again and again at Gerald.

“I must have made him drunk... I’m speechless!”

Montana shook her head and sighed.

“Mr. Crawford, I’ve brought your car for you. It’s in Sector-C of the parking lot. Here are the keys, and the master instructed me to ask you to return early.”

“I got it, Mr. Lyle. If there’s nothing else, you should head back.”

Then, a boy next to Cameron stepped out and shook his head with a chuckle.

“F*ck... I think he mistook him!”

Gerald felt a little embarrassed.

“You’re hilarious, aren’t you? Your name sounds nothing like Crawford at all!”

The boys continued to ridicule Gerald.

“Okay, okay, that’s enough; let’s return to our table and continue with the drinking. Oh right, Miss Lewis, I’ll organize a student reunion when you’re free, and you have to attend. All right?”

Cameron didn’t bother ridiculing Gerald, replying to Morgana instead.

“Okay, no problem. Once you gather the students for a reunion, I’ll definitely be there!”

The group agreed as well. Paying no attention to Gerald, they returned to their tables.

Gerald followed Montana up the stairs.

“Aren’t you the least ashamed or embarrassed? Why did you show yourself when that guy called for Mr. Crawford? F*ck! I’m so ashamed of you!”

Montana reproached Gerald a few more times before they both returned to the event hall.

Perhaps he was used to it that he simply sat down on the empty seat next to Montana.

Just as Montana was about to start cursing, the emcee had already started the night’s event.

It seemed to have gone on for quite a bit.

She had to quieten down.

When she looked at the stage, a spinning raffle wheel had appeared out of nowhere.

Several names were written on different sections.

One of them was Mr. Crawford, but without the first name.

This was a welcoming party for Mr. Crawford, after all, and everyone already knew who “Mr. Crawford” was.

The event continued with a raffle, and in the middle, the prize of a Mercedes-Benz G500.

“Montana, you almost missed the good stuff. Look at that, whose name do you see on that wheel?”

The woman beside Montana grabbed her arm.

“Jonathan? F*ck! You’re in the raffle?”

Montana excitedly pulled her husband, Jonathan’s arm.

“Haha, yeah, they were drawing the names earlier, and I made it into the shortlist! It’s enough of an honor to have my name on the same list as Mr. Crawford. It doesn’t matter if I win the G500 or not.”

Jonathan was gratified.

“How could you say that?! That’s a Mercedes G500, worth almost half a million dollars! If we win that car, can you imagine how awesome it would feel going out with it?”

“Right... by the way, is Mr. Crawford here? Which one of them is Mr. Crawford? Look at that table. It looks full of big shots!” exclaimed Montana excitedly.

“Gerald isn’t here yet, but the legendary Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke are both here. Mr. Lyle said that Gerald might come over later, anyways, since Mr. Crawford said he’ll come, he will come tonight.”

Jonathan was excited.

On the other hand, Gerald was looking at his phone. As expected, there were several missed calls from Zack.

Seeing Gerald was using his phone, Montana became dissatisfied again.

She was about to throw some insult when suddenly, the voice of the emcee filled the entire hall.

“Everyone, the raffle is starting now! Let’s spin the wheel and see who wins the top prize tonight, the G500!”

In the county, a G500 was a pretty big deal. It was pretty apparent that they had put in an immense effort into this event.

With a loud hurrah, the emcee spun the wheel.

Ding!

Chapter 390

“Congratulations, Mr. Duffy, for winning a gold keyboard worth 15,000 dollars!”

The host spun the wheel again.

Ding!

“Congratulations to...”

“...”

Three prizes were sent out subsequently.

Ding!

“Congratulations, Mr. Jonathan Ladd! You’ve won an emerald jade bracelet worth 30,000 dollars!”

“Ahh!!!”

Montana was dizzy with excitement as she heard the emcee’s announcement.

The audience burst into applause too.

The prize alone was just a part of the raffle.

More importantly, Montana could go up the stage with Jonathan, the same stage which the other big shots stood on. Besides, there were a ton of reporters on the side.

Gosh!

What more could a woman ask for?

Montana was so elated that she even smacked Gerald on the cheek. She was just too excited, and the smack felt like it was no big deal!

“Who will be the one to go home with the grand prize?”

The voice of the emcee echoed loudly, and the crowd fell into a hush.

As the pointer dropped, the crowd’s eyes widened in anticipation.

Ding!

Finally, the pointer stopped moving.

“Congratulations Mr. Crawford, on winning the Mercedes-Benz G500 prize worth 300,000 dollars! Let’s give him a huge round of applause!”

The host yelled in excitement.

“Ahhhh!!!”

The crowd screamed.

Of course, the winners for the other prizes were all by random, but as for the main prize, Mr. Crawford was set to win it even though he may not have appreciated it.

Everyone knew the ruffle’s set up.

“All right, may the winners please come up on stage! Also, Mr. Crawford, if you’ve arrived, please come up to the stage as well!”

The audience was suddenly quiet again.

Everyone’s eyes searched everywhere around the hall.

“Hurry up, hurry up Jeremy, you can share the stage with Mr. Crawford!”

Montana straightened her dress to hide the wine stains.

She hurriedly took Jonathan’s arm and stood up.

On the other hand, Gerald did not want to keep the others waiting any longer.

He decided he was not going to keep a low profile anymore. He stood up along with Montana and followed them towards the stage.

“F*ck, why are you following us?”

Montana only realized that Gerald was following behind her as she was reaching the stage.

“I’m here to claim my prize!” Gerald replied.

“F*ck off, no one said your name. That prize is not for you, that’s for Mr. Crawford, not Gerald, are you f*cking blind?”

Montana retorted anxiously.

“Oh my, Jonathan, you don’t even want to know what just happened earlier. I ran into my ex-students at the hall downstairs. Then, one of the student’s housekeepers came and called for Mr. Crawford, and this dumb*ss Gerald stood up, even I as a bystander could feel the embarrassed for him!”

“And now, he’s trying to get on the stage to receive the prize! If people start making fun of him and find out he’s one of my students, we’ll be embarrassed!”

That was all that Montana was concerned about.

“Mr. Crawford, please come up the stage!”

This time, Zack Lyle took the stage as the guest of honor.

He looked respectfully at Gerald and called for him.

“Mhmm!”

Gerald nodded and did not say much.

He walked up the stage.

Michael Zeke, who was seated at the VIP table below, as well as the other teams of Mayberry International Inc, all stood up and cheered for him.

“Mr. Crawford, congratulations!”

“Thank you all!”

Gerald smiled blandly.

“F*ck, so he really is Mr. Crawford!”

The entire crowd instantly fell into a pin-drop silence...

Chapter 391

Especially Montana, who had just been reprimanding Gerald all this while.

Her eyeballs were about to drop out of her eye sockets.

F*ck!

She was extremely aware about Gerald's background. He was just a mere poor pauper with no money.

And who was Mr. Crawford?

He was the most reputable man from Mayberry, and even more so the man who was going to change the history of Serene County.

Montana would not believe that the two of them are the same person, even if she was beaten to death.

However, Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke knew who Mr. Crawford was.

So that meant Gerald's identity was not a mistake.

F*ck, Montana's was completely mind blown.

"Mr. Lyle, you guys must be mistaken right? You're calling this poor b*stard Mr. Crawford?"

Montana could not help but blurted out in a straightforward manner.

Zack frowned slightly at the question. Looking at the wine stains on Montana's dress, he turned to the organizers of the event with displeasure and said, "What's going on here? How can a woman this unkempt dare to go on stage and be so rude towards Mr. Crawford?"

"I'm sorry Mr. Lyle and Mr. Crawford, we overlooked our part!"

The organizer's staff immediately nodded as sweat trickled down his forehead.

He pointed at Montana and Jonathan, "You, and you! Get out of here!"

"Huh? Why? This guy is a fake, he's just a poor student! You guys are mistaken, I'm her teacher! F*ck you Gerald! Say something, tell them you're just a poor b*stard and they've got the wrong person!"

Several people dashed onto the stage to apprehend Montana and Jonathan.

Montana struggled to hold back a screech.

First, it would be too humiliating to be thrown out of the hall in front of others.

Second, how could Gerald be Mr. Crawford?! If it was true, Montana vowed she would jump off a building.

At that very moment, she just wanted Gerald to say something to clear the air.

Gerald was too much of a d*ck after all. Earlier when they were downstairs, why did he even dare to step forward when that person called out for Mr. Crawford?

Zack glanced at Gerald this time.

He wanted confirmation from Gerald.

If this woman was acquainted with Gerald, Zack would not dare to go overboard with things.

Gerald unexpectedly then spoke out.

"Well, she used to teach me, but I don't know her that well!"

Gerald laughed, "But if you want me to admit it, fine. I'll admit it, I'm a poor pimp, a poor student, and they've got the wrong person!"

"Hah! Did you hear that Mr. Lyle? Hahaha, he admitted it, he just admitted it himself!"

Montana yelled in exasperation.

She thought to herself that she might even be able to get appreciation from Mr. Lyle this way.

But Zack looked at Montana and sneered, "Someone, get these two out of here!"

There were already people waiting, and in a flash, they apprehended Montana and Jonathan and forced them out of the hall.

The atmosphere in the hall grew ever more sombre.

Gerald was annoyed with Montana. Ever since they had arrived at the bus station, Montana had treated him this way, and the feud between the two had begun.

In the past, Gerald could tolerate these kinds of treatments, such as Alice Bradford's mocks and taunts. He saved her face because she was a friend of Naomi Milton.

Hence, Gerald endured as much as he could.

But as for Montana, whose face was he going to save for? And why should he respect her?

With that, Gerald was a little more decisive this time.

This time, Gerald had won himself a Mercedes-Benz G500. The organizers thought that Mr. Crawford would think the prize would be a little too cheap since Gerald was asked to support this event after all.

But Gerald did not say anything.

To Gerald, the Mercedes was pretty good.

And now that he was back, he could not drive around with his own Lamborghini.

At first, he was thinking of borrowing a car from Zack to drive around the county, but it just so happened that he got himself a new car.

The event then continued as they made a toast and chatted about other topics.

In the blink of an eye, a week passed.

Mr. Winters was also discharged from the hospital.

Lately, Gerald had nothing much to do, so he was ready to go over to Zack's side to help oversee projects and others.

Plus, his sister had called him a few times too.

Chapter 392

After they had chatted over the phone, Gerald suddenly remembered his dad's advice to visit his comrade from the army in Serene County. He had been back for more than a week and he had long forgotten about it.

Gerald had nothing else to do at present. He then bought some gifts and headed to the upper-class area of Serene County to visit Mr. Willie Jung.

The relationship between their families, as mentioned earlier, had drifted apart quite a bit after several incidents that went on in the later stage.

But his dad was a very sentimental man.

He did not believe that it happened, but the reality remains. As a person, how could one have no humane feelings at all?

Gerald remembered the cold treatment from the Jung Family when his dad brought him along to beg them so he could go to high school six years ago.

Gerald understood his dad's feelings.

But this time round, he was alone, and he came here with a different identity!

He wondered if he would face the same treatment as before...

As he was deep in thought, he realized he arrived at their house, solely based on the directions from his memories.

He knocked on the door.

"Who is it?"

The door opened, and he was greeted by a middle-aged lady at the door.

Gerald knew the middle-aged woman, her name was Leia Tolbert, and Gerald referred to her as Aunt Leia. She was Willie Jung's wife, and she was quite the influential leader in a reputable bank.

"Hello Aunt Leia, do you remember me? My name is Gerald, and I've visited your house with my dad before!"

"Ooh, I remember! Aren't you the son of Willie's friend, Dylan Crawford? I haven't seen you for years, you've grown up so much! Come on in!"

She glanced at the things Gerald brought to her house.

Leia was very polite and friendly towards Gerald.

To her, this was an all-too-familiar scene. Judging by Gerald's appearance, she knew he was here to ask for a favor.

She had already made plans on how she would refuse him later.

But it would be ill-mannered and rude to do it now.

They entered the living room.

Gerald saw a middle-aged man reading the newspaper on the sofa with his legs crossed.

He gave off a vibe as though he was an important director.

He was Willie Jung, whom Gerald referred to as Uncle Jung. He worked as a director in the Development Bureau.

They were a family of government officials.

"Hello, Uncle Jung!"

Gerald had no idea why after so many years, he was still quite constrained to meet them again.

"Oh, it's Gerald Crawford, it's been years since we've met. Right, I heard that your father left the country to make money to pay off his debts?"

Willie Jung put down the newspaper and quipped.

“Hmm, yeah something like that!”

Gerald chuckled.

“Didn’t you just graduate from college this year? What course did you study?”

Willie asked, blowing gently on his tea a few times.

“I studied literature, English language as well as codification!”

“Ahem, this major is pretty unpopular, but then again, jobs are pretty easy to arrange. By the way, have you found a job yet?”

Willie asked.

“Not yet Uncle Jung! I came this time to pay you a special visit, and my father specifically instructed me...”

“By the way, honey, don’t you have an appointment this afternoon?”

Leia interjected their conversation.

“Oh right, I have got an appointment! It’s a pretty urgent one. Gerald, how about you stay here for lunch?”

Willie smiled.

Gerald was not stupid. From what Willie and Leia said earlier, he knew that they thought he was here to beg them to pull some strings for him to get a job as soon as Gerald told them he was here to pay them a special visit.

They were putting on an act to try to get him out of their house.

It seems that they did not treat Gerald's family as friends. If he were to go back and tell his dad about the incident, his dad would've probably given up on the friendship.

In the middle of the conversation, Gerald stood up and was about to leave.

Just then, a girl breezed down from the second floor of the house. She wore on headphones, and she was pretty cute.

"Mom, my classmates will be coming to our house for lunch later, is the cooking done? Do you need my help?"

The girl said with a smile.

Suddenly, she turned and saw Gerald, her gaze was fixed on him, "Mom, who is he?"

Chapter 393

The girl stared at Gerald, her eyes filled with curiosity.

To be honest, she was somewhat looking down at Gerald when she saw the ordinary clothes Gerald was wearing. His sense of fashion was a bit countryside-like.

When they heard of her question.

There was a minute of awkwardness between Willie and Leia.

Especially Leia.

It was just a second ago that Willie said he had an urgent matter to handle and he would be having a meeting soon. They were hoping Gerald would not stay for lunch.

And then her daughter jumped out of nowhere and popped this question.

This made things much more difficult for Willie and Leia.

If only their daughter had come out a little later, Gerald would have left by now!

“Oh, Leila, have you forgotten, he’s Uncle Dylan’s kid, didn’t you two meet when you were little?”

Leia said with an awkward tone.

“Ah I remember, he must be Gerald, right?”

The girl replied.

“You still remember me, I’m Gerald! It’s been years since I’ve seen you, and you’ve gotten much prettier!”

The girl’s name was Leila Jung. Gerald knew her.

That was because when he came to her house as a child, Leila would point at Gerald with a disgusted face, “Mom, ask him to leave our house this instant, he’s making our floor dirty!”

It was also a matter of pride. During their childhood, Gerald was afraid that Leila would mock him.

But things were much better now, Gerald replied with a hint of politeness.

“Thank you, Gerald, you’ve become much handsome too! You have to look after me if I’ve any trouble in the future!”

Leila generously extended her arms to shake hands with Gerald.

Leila showed courtesy too.

To Gerald, it was considered to be the warmest words Gerald had ever heard from her since coming to the Jung family.

“Okay, that won’t be a problem at all, you can look for me if ever you need anything in the future!”
Gerald replied, smiling widely.

She withdrew her hand while smiling gingerly, but deep inside, she thought differently.

‘Huh, look for you if I need any help? Who do you think you are, I can’t believe you got carried away just because I was being polite towards you!’

Leila was from a family of government officials. Her father may have a lot of connections, but she too had her own.

Once she had graduated, she would set up her own business. She did not require anyone’s help!

Not to mention, how can Gerald help her?

“Gerald, why don’t you stay for lunch? It just so happens that Leila’s friends are coming over, maybe you should join along. Ah, I must’ve been so busy that I almost forgot, I’ve to prepare the meal!”

Leia said awkwardly.

Earlier on, she was trying to get Gerald out of her house, but her daughter ruined her plans. It would not look good on her part.

If she did not ask him to stay for lunch, it might ruin a good impression of her.

“Yeah, you should stay, it’s good to meet more people!”

Willie Jung added nonchalantly.

Only Leila was looking a little displeased.

She only intended to invite her classmates over for lunch, but it was extremely awkward for a shabby-looking dude who looked like he was from the countryside to join in for lunch.

But since it was her parents who had invited him, it was better for her to not say anything.

Her attitude towards Gerald grew much colder immediately.

Soon after, Leila’s classmates all arrived.

There were around seven or eight of them, men and women.

After chatting for a while, Leila had finished preparing the dishes.

Willie hurriedly greeted Leila’s classmates and showed them to their seats.

“Douglas, come sit next to me, you must drink with me today!”

Willie politely pulled Douglas’ arm and insisted on letting him sit next to him.

Douglas was a good-looking boy. Based on their earlier conversations, Gerald got to know that he seemed to be quite a higher-class leader.

He was quite a capable person.

Yet, looking at Douglas, he seemed to have some interest in Leila.

Willie could not help but try to make Douglas develop a close relationship with his daughter. He was especially fond and friendlier towards Douglas.

“Leila is lucky to have become good friends with you, it’s truly an honor for our Jung family! Look at Douglas, he’s so talented and capable. Who knows which lucky lady is going to be with him in the future! That lady is for sure not our Leila, I mean look at her, she’s still like a child, and she’s so far behind you!”

Willie joked.

“Mr. Jung, you must be joking! Leila is so beautiful, and she can be anyone’s girlfriend. That’s a blessing! Besides, Leila told us that you were in the army, could it be that you’ve betrothed Leila to your comrade’s son? Haha!”

Chapter 394

Douglas forced out a peal of laughter.

“That doesn’t count!” At that moment, Leila smiled as she served the dishes in front of them. Then, she turned to Douglas, “This is Gerald, the boy whom Leila’s father had made a promise to while her dad was drunk. As you can see, Gerald is now well-groomed, and Leila is no match to him, don’t you think so too, Gerald?”

Leila asked Gerald who was sitting at the very edge of the table.

“Yes, yes!”

Of course, Gerald had caught on what Leila's words meant. He was also afraid that the crowd would draw the topic to himself, so he hurriedly nodded his head.

This, however, made Douglas a little scruple.

Honestly speaking, he had liked Leila for quite some time now, but he had not confessed his feelings to her. The two of them had always been in an ambiguous relationship.

But then, Mrs. Jung said that the boy whom Leila was initially betrothed to was also here.

Here comes the drama.

Everyone else was also looking at both Douglas and Gerald.

They were trying to compare the two.

Douglas immediately stood up and laughed, "Whew, if it wasn't for Mrs. Jung's introduction, we wouldn't have known that you almost became our goddess Leila's husband! Come, we haven't formally gotten to know each other yet. Nice to meet you, Gerald, I'm Douglas Lindt, I'm currently working for the government, eh..."

Douglas pretended to be surprised as he stood up and shook Gerald's hand.

As he introduced himself, he shook his wrist, displaying the dazzling golden-strapped watch on his hand and continued speaking modestly.

"My job was arranged by my family, so you can say that I've got the upper-hand or some sort! I don't have many capabilities myself after all!"

"Haha, Douglas, you don't have to be this modest. If you don't have the capabilities, who else would? Let's take Gerald as an example, if you let him have your position, he wouldn't be able to do much! Let's not go over about those small matters shall we? Come come, let's have a toast!"

Willie smiled and patted Douglas' shoulder lightly.

They then proceeded to chat about some personal matters. The others just listened to the two as they talked and occasionally made a joke or two.

Leila was pleased. She rested her rosy cheeks on her hands as her eyes were fixated on Douglas.

She was proud of him.

She had an expensive taste in men, and the average joe was not up to her league.

Gerald sat on the chaperone's seat, and from time to time, he stood up and poured drinks for everyone.

"Thanks, Gerald!"

A pretty girl who was sitting next to Gerald smiled at him.

"You're welcome!" Gerald replied.

"You don't have to keep pouring us drinks, they will pour it themselves if they want, hehe. Do you rarely eat out with others?"

The girl looked at Gerald curiously and asked.

The girl was extremely elegant. In short, she was very pretty and stylish, just like Leila.

Because they were not drinking, the girls sat a little off to the side.

And through their chat just now, Gerald got to know the girl's name.

Her name was Cindy.

"Yeah, not that often!"

Gerald indeed had only attended just a few occasions.

The main reason was that this occasion was different from the ones in the past, after all, the main, most respectable person in this event was Willie Jung.

Leia then served a plate of food and was about to put the plate in front of Douglas.

But Douglas wasn't paying attention to her, and with a swing of his hand, he accidentally swatted Leia, knocking the plate of food out of her hands.

"Oops!"

Leia screamed.

Douglas immediately stood up and apologized to Leia.

"It's alright child, I was afraid of burning you with the hot food. I'll clean up this mess, please carry on with your drinks with Mr. Jung, I'll prepare another plate of food for you!"

Leia smiled at him.

She hurriedly cleaned the floor.

Then, Gerald saw that their wine glasses were half full. He got up and poured them some wine.

God knows if Douglas did it intentionally or not, as soon as Gerald poured wine into his glass, Douglas' hand shook and the wine glass slipped out of his hand. The wine glass shattered on the ground.

"F*ck!"

Douglas was shocked.

Leia rushed out of the kitchen to see what was happening.

"Do you know how to pour wine? What the hell did you do? Why did you drop the wine glass?"

Leia pointed her fingers at Gerald as she scolded him. She was outraged.

On the other hand, Wille glanced at Gerald with icy cold eyes. He despised Gerald for his rudeness...

Chapter 395

Because of what had happened, they gave Gerald a good scolding.

It made Gerald quite embarrassed.

F*cking hell, it was Douglas who did not hold the glass properly, and they were all coming after him?

But Gerald understood.

Heh.

It was down right obvious that the unfair treatment was because Douglas held some special status and Gerald was just a nobody.

"It's not Gerald's fault, I was the one who didn't hold the glass properly. By the way, Gerald, you're not working yet, are you?"

Douglas smiled as he asked Gerald.

"No." Gerald shook his head.

"That's not good, didn't you find anyone to pull some strings for you? Why didn't you find any?"

Douglas looked surprised.

"Connections are hard to maintain nowadays unless you've strong ones. Just like Leila's current job, I wasted a huge deal of effort just to find it for her!"

Willie said bluntly.

He immediately disclosed that piece of information.

"I'm good, thanks!" Gerald replied.

"Hmm, I don't think that will be good, let me help you out. Right, Yorick, wasn't your dad looking for two young security guards for his factory? I think Gerald should sign up for that, I mean look at him, he looks like a loyal person and I think he will do a pretty good job!"

Douglas pointed at him.

"Pfft!"

Everyone at the table burst into laughter when they heard that.

Leila rolled her eyes at Gerald. "How can Gerald be a security guard when he's a graduate from Mayberry University?"

"I know right, my friends will laugh if I tell them about this!"

"I don't think he'll be able to look for a girlfriend after that!"

Several girls laughed.

Only Cindy was silent at the table.

"Hmph, our family's business is quite strict when it comes to choosing security guards, we want someone capable, not trash!"

Upon hearing the group of girls, Yorick thought that asking Gerald to work for their family was quite condescending, and they were mocking his family's enterprise. He immediately retorted.

"Yeah, you shouldn't think of that just because Yorick's family enterprise is the nearest here. Honestly, it doesn't matter whether he's a college student or not. In today's society, university graduates are everywhere, and most workplaces don't distinguish between the rich and the poor. What's wrong with being a security guard?"

"Being a security guard is also a popular profession required in many places!"

Douglas said with a serious face.

"Well said Douglas, I didn't expect you to have so many insights and be so matured at such a young age! You guys shouldn't laugh, because what Douglas had said makes sense, so you guys should learn more from him!"

Willie added.

The crowd nodded their heads with stifled laughter.

Gerald did not enjoy the meal. He was getting picked on the entire time. He wanted to lash out at them, but it would be humiliating for him to do so.

Deep inside, he told himself to forget about it. He was just here to grant his father's wish.

Although they looked down on father.

His father is a peculiar person who likes to reminisce about the past.

It did not matter to him even if you disliked him.

He simply forced a smile as he swallowed the food.

After finishing the meal, Willie had an idea. "Right, how about you guys hang out in the karaoke bar for the rest of the afternoon? Don't stay out too long and come home early, so that your family will be at ease!"

"Got it, dad!"

"Don't worry Mr. Jung, I'm here, so I'll keep an eye on them!"

Douglas reassured with a smile.

"Hmm, that's why I'm so relieved that you're here, Douglas!"

Willie smiled and nodded his head.

Douglas looked at Gerald again. "Right, Gerald, we'll head to the karaoke bar later, you should come along too! Are you free this afternoon?"

"No, I won't be joining, you guys should go ahead and have fun!"

Is he being serious? Of course, Gerald will not go! Although Leila was quite pretty, he felt like he was not in the right circle while being with them.

"Don't overthink, Gerald. After having a meal together, of course, we have to go out and have some fun together! Unless the reason is that you don't like us, do you, Gerald?"

Douglas said.

There was a hint of displeasure on his face.

The real reason why he asked Gerald to hang out with them was that he intended to use him to relieve boredom.

Was that not how people are? Once they become capable, they would pick on the weaker ones to make fun of.

When Willie saw the displeasure in Douglas' face, he added on.

"Gerald, I suggest you'd better go with them. Can't you read what's going on? Douglas is quite an important person, and what about you? Now that he has invited you to come along, why won't you just accept his kind offer!"

"All right, I'll go."

Gerald was unable to brush them off.

Especially the girl next to her. Cindy kept looking at him, hoping that he would come along to have some fun together.

And Willie's persistence.

Gerald thought that he would just go with them, maybe he would just ignore their petty remarks.

Hmph.

A short while later, the group of them were waiting downstairs.

Douglas and Yorick had their cars ready.

The two men drove the group in their cars.

Chapter 396

Finally, it was Gerald's turn to get into the car.

But there was no space.

"Oh, f*ck! Just look. Both of our two cars are already full. We cannot possibly ask you to sit with the girls, right? It wouldn't be convenient!"

Douglas laughed and said after rolling down the car window.

He had been deliberately mocking Gerald ever since he heard that he had a marriage contract with Leila and deliberately making things difficult for Gerald to embarrass him.

Gerald also knew that the reason Douglas had invited him to the karaoke bar with them was probably for this very reason too.

“What’s wrong with sitting next to a girl? I will move in a little. Gerald, come and sit next to me!”

Cindy said as she waved at Gerald.

Douglas felt a little unhappy at this, but he did not dare to say anything because Cindy was also a beautiful goddess too.

“Thank you!”

Gerald smiled and nodded slightly before he sat next to Cindy.

Soon, everyone arrived at a room inside a karaoke bar.

Douglas also invited another group of friends to join them.

The group also had both guys and girls, and the room suddenly became very lively.

Those who were drinking, drank, and those who were singing, sang. Everyone was very happy.

“Yorick comes to this karaoke bar very often. He is also very familiar with the female manager here. Hahaha! So, today everyone can just order whatever you like. Yorick and I will treat all of you!”

Douglas said as he laughed.

“Thank you, Douglas!”

“I love you, Douglas! Ahh!”

“Wait, Douglas belongs to Leila! How can I say I love him?”

A girl patted her head as she exclaimed.

That made everyone laugh out loud again.

Yorick also brimmed happily. He really gained a lot of face today.

Leila also blushed as she lowered her head.

To be honest, Leila was really very satisfied with how Douglas carried himself. On the other hand, Gerald was sitting at the corner, who didn't dare say anything. The difference between both of them was really contrasting, like heaven and earth.

Leila could only shake her head helplessly as she looked at Gerald.

Suddenly, someone pushed the room door open. A woman in a red dress strutted into the room.

On first impressions, one could tell that this woman had the expertise of handling such social gatherings.

She was holding a bottle of red wine and smiled as she said, "Douglas and Yorick, I know that the both of you are here today so I came here to specially give you a bottle of red wine. Have fun today!"

"And since Yorick comes here so often, I'll give all of you a ten percent discount on the overall bill today! Have fun!"

"Ahh? Why is it only a ten percent discount? Yorick, aren't you very familiar with this sister in the red dress? Why is she only giving you a ten percent discount?"

Several boys joked and booed.

Yorick's face blackened immediately. He felt as though he had already lost face.

"No! You have to at least give me a twenty percent discount!"

Yorick replied, with an unpleasant look plastered across his face.

"That will not work, sir. I still have to do business!" The woman in the red dress covered her mouth before she chuckled.

"Hmph! Okay, fine. But Miss Hanna, please come and enjoy a drink with us too!"

When the boys saw that the woman dressed in red was very sexy and beautiful, they asked her to accompany them to drink.

"Sorry, but I have another important customer to attend to today. I really cannot drink with you!"

Miss Hanna waved her hand before she went out.

The atmosphere suddenly became very awkward.

Several boys looked at Yorick, one after the other.

"Yorick, what's going on here? Why isn't Miss Hanna giving you any face at all?"

"F*ck! How could you say that you are familiar with her? She is only giving you a ten percent discount. I thought that the both of you had a good relationship but she completely ignored you!"

A few boys voiced out bitterly after Miss Hanna left the room.

This made Yorick feel as though he had been insulted with pins and needles.

He felt extremely uncomfortable.

Yes! Miss Hanna did not give him any face at all just now.

When he came before this, she was still very polite to him and that was the reason why Yorick thought that he was already very familiar with her.

However, now that he had already bragged about it to everyone, she did not give him any respect when he needed it. It was no use bragging at all.

“Hmph! You don’t believe me? Okay then! I will go and bring her over here to drink with us now. Just wait for me.”

Yorick yanked open the room door angrily and stormed out. It seemed as though he had gone looking for Miss Hanna.

Gerald could only shake his head as he smiled wryly, observing the situation from the side.

Was keeping one’s face really that important sometimes?

Was it worth being so angry and causing a scene just because of such a trivial matter?

Moreover, Gerald could tell that Miss Hanna was generally the kind of person who was courteous and polite to everyone. It was only normal for people to think that they were familiar with her when she was just doing her business.

It was not good for a person not to have any self-knowledge.

“Ahhh!”

A short while later.

One of the girls who went to the bathroom earlier suddenly ran into the room with a panicked expression on her face:

“Douglas! Go out and take a look! Yorick is getting beaten up!”

Chapter 397

“What? He got beaten up?”

“F*ck! He got into trouble!”

The boys and girls in the room suddenly grew very nervous.

Even Douglas became anxious.

But he did not panic. He simply replied calmly, “Why are you so anxious? Come, let’s go out and take a look. I want to see who’s the prick that actually dares to touch my buddy!”

Douglas then waved his hand and a crowd of boys and girls followed closely behind him.

A few of the boys even grabbed a few bottles of beer with them. It seemed as though they were going to start a fight today!

Gerald had already expected Yorick to get easily agitated.

But he really did not expect him to get beaten up.

Everyone had already headed out now. It would not be good for Gerald to continue sitting and drinking in the room by himself. Hence, he decided to just follow everyone out.

Let's talk about Yorick. A group of people were surrounding him in the center of the karaoke bar.

He was curled up on the ground and blood was oozing out of his forehead.

About a dozen bodyguards from the karaoke bar had just beaten him up.

As for Hanna, she was just glaring coldly at Yorick with a sinister smile on her face.

"You pathetic brat! Don't you know how to appreciate it when I was still giving you face? You actually dare to pull my hair? You must be sick of living. Don't you know whose territory this is? Aren't you afraid that Big Dolph will hack you to death? F*ck!"

Hanna sneered.

Upon the words, 'Big Dolph', the faces of several people standing on the sidelines turned pale immediately.

They could not help but look at Yorick, who was lying on the ground, with sympathy.

Earlier on, Yorick had called out to Hanna, who had just entered another room. He angrily pestered her to come and drink with them. Of course, Hanna ignored him completely.

In fact, there were not many people in this karaoke bar who had the ability to convince Hanna to give them a toast and drink with them.

However, Yorick refused to tolerate it. Towards the end, he even pulled Hanna's hair.

In the end, things turned out like this.

Someone from the other room witnessed this young man barging into his room and pulling Hanna's hair.

With just a flick of his wrist, seven or eight strong men rushed forward immediately.

They even brought out some sticks and bashed Yorick to the ground.

They taught him a good lesson.

It was also the same time that the girl who went to the bathroom witnessed the entire event unfold. She dashed back to the room to report this incident to everyone else.

“Miss Hanna, just let my subordinates handle this matter. The guests at my table are still waiting for you to drink with them!”

A rather lax young boy was standing next to Miss Hanna.

He had a scornful look on his face but he looked like someone rich.

“I know, Mr. Lourdes, but can you let me vent my anger first? Look at him! He pulled my hair just now!”

Miss Hanna replied as she smiled cynically.

“Hahaha. No problem. If that’s the case, drag him into my room then. Since he dared to cause trouble for you in front of my room, then he is not giving me face either! Damn it! I really have to teach this damn kid a lesson today for being so obnoxious!”

As soon as Louie raised his hand, several bodyguards immediately acted on his order. They grabbed Yorick before they started dragging him into Louie’s room.

After entering the room.

“Stop! If you know what is good for you, then let my buddy go!”

Suddenly, someone shouted out loud.

It was Douglas, who had one hand in his pocket as he led a large number of people over here with him.

He was very aggressive.

And he looked impressive.

“Damn. This is getting interesting. There are still people who are coming here to seek revenge on his behalf. I really want to see who it is who is so brave and courageous.”

Louie had a nonchalant look on his face. He then entered his room before asking his bodyguards to open the door to let them in.

Douglas felt even more unfazed now because he thought that the kid was afraid of him.

So the group of people swarmed into the room.

However, as soon as they saw the man waiting inside the room, not only Douglas, but many others behind Douglas who were holding beer bottles in their hands were all shocked.

“Mr. Lourdes, it’s you? Mr. Zorro, Mr. Hank, and Mr. Saul...you...you are all here?”

Douglas’s eyes immediately widened and all of his arrogance was instantly extinguished.

As for the few girls, they initially thought that they would be able to enjoy a good show with Douglas. The moment they saw Douglas losing his spirit, they were all very embarrassed.

This was especially so for Leila who was standing next to Douglas.

Chapter 398

"Louie, who is this young brat? A friend of yours?" asked a man with a dragon tattoo.

"I don't know him, but f*ck! He actually knows who I am!"

Louie replied with a laugh.

"Douglas, who is he?" asked Leila as she quietly nudged Douglas's arm.

"He is Louie Lourdes. The mine in Serene County belongs to their family. He's the richest man there, and their family is considered one of Mayberry City's top-ranking families. His father is also the leader of Serene County's underground triads. Big Dolph works for him. They are definitely a bunch of ruthless people."

"The few around him are also famous members of triads."

Since Douglas knew many people, he hurriedly explained the situation to them.

After listening to his explanation, Leila and the others became even more afraid.

They had heard of Louie's name before.

They knew about his great influence and power. In fact, how could they not panic when they heard Big Dolph's name?

"Wow! Buddy! What are you doing here with people holding beer bottles in their hands? Trying to scare me to death?" Louie said, crossing his legs as he lazily slouched on the chair.

"Cough! Erm... Mr. Lourdes, this is all just a misunderstanding. It is all a big misunderstanding. Everyone drank a little too much today. My friend over here has offended you too. I hope that you will show grace

and let him go. I am Douglas Lindt, and my father is Gary Lindt. Please give us some face. Mr. Hank, Mr. Saul, my dad even brought me along to drink with you guys..."

Douglas hurriedly pleaded as he introduced himself.

"Oh, oh! I know who he is... But Douglas, no one has ever dared to confront me with beer bottles in their hands. What do you think I should do about this?" Louie replied with a smile.

His eyes swept across the faces of Leila and the other girls who were standing next to Douglas.

He couldn't help thinking that all these girls must be of the highest quality.

"That will not do. Look, Mr. Lourdes, why don't I finish a bottle now? Please take it as my sincerest apology!"

"Yes, Mr. Lourdes! We will down a bottle of beer now!" echoed several boys, one after the other.

"Well, if that is the case, then each of you will have to empty a bottle each. As soon as that happens, this matter will be over."

Louie looked at the scared girl laughing his head off.

"There is but a condition. It's not going to work for sure if you just finish the beer. You will drink white wine instead. I want each of you to finish a bottle of white wine each, and the issue will be resolved. This includes all of you girls who walked into this room."

"What? White wine?!"

Douglas was dumbfounded.

"Why? Are you not humoring me this round?" he asked Louie with a cold expression on his face.

As soon as his voice fell out, a bodyguard had already walked in with a box of white wine.

Douglas gritted his teeth in frustration. He had no choice but to take the lead and set the example.

He pinched his nose, gulping down the entire bottle as though it were plain water.

The other boys followed suit, and each soon finished their own bottles.

“Clap! Clap! Clap!”

Louie applauded in admiration. He looked at Leila and the other girls. “Beautiful girls, don’t you know you have to drink too? If you refuse, you won’t be stepping out of this room today!”

“As for you guys, you can get lost!” snapped Louie said as he pointed at Douglas.

“Mr. Lourdes, this is my girlfriend. Will you allow me to take her with me? I beg you, please? Can you give me face?”

“No! There is no need for me to give you face. If you don’t choose to leave now, you might just be unable to leave after this.”

As soon as Louie said these words, a few boys quickly left the room in fear.

As for Douglas, he could only stay silent with gritted teeth. He sincerely didn’t know what else to say. After all, Louie was known to be very ruthless.

He could only walk out of the room with his head hung low.

As for Leila, Cindy, and the other girls, they were naturally stopped by the bodyguards.

Leila was so frightened that she was about to burst into tears.

“You are Mr. Lourdes, right? Why don’t you give me some face and let them go?”

Chapter 399

“Huh?”

A moment of silence broke out in the room. Everyone was staring at the young man who just spoke.

Give you face?

Who are you? Why would I give you face?

The person who just spoke was none other than Gerald.

He had been outside the room, watching in excitement when he saw Douglas getting embarrassed and humiliated.

It had nothing to do with him, after all.

Now, Louie obviously had eyes for Leila, Cindy, and the rest of the girls.

He didn’t have many reasons to worry about Leila.

After all, even though Leila was somewhat polite to him on the surface, Gerald knew very well that this girl actually despised and looked down on him.

There was no need for him to brag or show off in front of her.

However, Cindy was also here, and Gerald would feel bad if he really did not care about her.

She had treated him well since the beginning, never once despising him in any way. She was also the kind that held no preconceived judgments or prejudice in her heart.

Perhaps, it might not have meant anything to Cindy, but Gerald was still very grateful nonetheless. Thus, he decided to take a stand for her sake.

“Gerald, what nonsense are you talking about? Why don’t you just get lost? There are some things about the underground that you will never understand.”

Leila reprimanded Gerald with a cold hard look on her face.

She couldn’t accept it. Leila grew up in a small town, and she was very well-informed. She naturally understood the situation about to unfold tonight.

be that as it may, Leila’s mind was made up. What was the big deal anyway? At most, she would have to finish up an entire bottle of white wine like Douglas did, then run out of the room quickly. Louie wouldn’t dare be too rambunctious, would he?

Unexpectedly, Gerald stepped up and pretended to be a hero. She was annoyed now, really wanting to give him a tight slap or two across his face.

“Give you face? What right do you have?” Louie asked with a deep frown. The rest of the men in the room also stared at Gerald.

Gerald put his hands in his pockets, grinning lightly.

“This girl over here is my friend. So, I will settle this issue on her behalf. Mr. Lourdes, if you really want to drink, why don’t you let me make a call so that I can get some people here to accompany you?”

Naturally, Gerald wanted to pay no attention to a puny roach the likes of him. He looked at Cindy.

Louie gawked at Gerald and sneered. “Young brat! Did you know that there are grave consequences for pretending to be the hero? Based on your words, it seems you’re getting some people to deal with me too. Hahaha! Why don’t you take a look at your pathetic face right now? Ask yourself. Are you worthy?”

“Nothing to worry about, Gerald. You should leave now,” said Cindy, her tone worried and anxious.

Gerald gave Cindy a reassuring look.

“It’s okay, don’t worry,” he promised with a smile.

Gerald then looked at Louie.

“So, what about it, Mr. Lourdes? Why don’t you tell me if you dare or not? My people will be coming over here later. Perhaps they’ll have a good drink with you?”

“Okay. Fine! It’s the first time I’m challenged before so many of Serene County’s reputable folk. It seems I’ll have to experience it for myself today, but allow me to put in all the ugly words first. I may not be so forgiving later. Know what happens to those who dare offend me? I believe you will find out very quickly if you just ask around,” retorted Louie in the most condescending way as though Gerald was a joke.

Gerald simply asked Cindy, Leila, and the rest of the girls to leave now.

Cindy looked at Gerald with worry on her face. She felt suffocated but wanted to stay back and accompany him anyway.

As for Leila, she simply stared blankly at Gerald, as though he was really an idiot. After that, she dragged Cindy away forcibly.

Louie did not stop them. It was because he knew that there had to be a sequel to this. When the time came to look for those girls, it wouldn’t be as simple as making them drink a bottle of white wine.

Gerald made a phone call after that.

Of course, the call was to Drake and Tyson.

“Call. Call as many people as you can! Hahaha!”

When the call was done, he looked at Louie with a smile on his face.

For several reasons, Gerald had no choice but to keep a low profile in front of acquaintances. This was the case when he was at Willie’s house today. It was all because he was an elder.

Gerald was no prodigal son of a millionaire, so he usually tolerated whatever that could be tolerated.

As a matter of fact, it would be elementary for Gerald to give their family a slap in their face if he wanted to.

However, things were different with Louie this time, just like when he dealt with William Rye from Rye Group. It would be problematic, but Gerald wasn’t afraid.

Very soon.

The sound of cars screeching to a halt could be heard, where a larger number of luxury cars pulled up at the entrance of the karaoke bar.

Bodyguards, dressed in black, stepped out of the cars in unison. They were all led by Drake and Tyson, Gerald’s current base manager, and personal bodyguards.

Wherever Gerald was, so would they, providing him with on the clock security support.

“Mr. Crawford is inside. Go in now, double-time!”

Chapter 400

A group of men rushed into the karaoke bar after Drake and Tyson waved their hands.

At the same time, in the room.

Louie was fiddling with the wine glass in his hand as he looked at his watch and said: “Young lad, it has already been five minutes now. There hasn’t been a single phone call. Are you kidding me?”

He laughed as he spoke.

The next moment, the room door was kicked upon with a loud bang.

A group of men swamped into the room.

The bodyguards of the group immediately tried to stop the men.

However, before they could even do anything, the bodyguards had already been kicked to the ground by the men dressed in black.

Their action and movements were all very swift and violent, like a predator attacking its prey!

“Who are you guys?”

Louie was taken aback.

When he saw the skills of these people and the tough yet mysterious aura surrounding them, Louie knew that these men were not from any ordinary backgrounds.

“Mr. Crawford, is it him?”

Drake and Tyson walked over to Gerald and whispered in a low voice.

“Yes. Teach him a lesson!”

Gerald replied as he nodded lightly.

“F*ck! How dare you? Do you know whose territory this is?”

The middle-aged man called Mr. Dee cried out in a hostile manner.

Although his expression was fierce, his forehead was already beaded with sweat.

He knew that they definitely encountered a tough opponent this time!

“This is Big Dolph’s territory! When Big Dolph arrives, don’t even dream about being able to step out of this place!”

Louie continued threatening.

“Miss Hanna, call Big Dolph!”

Louie signaled Hanna.

Hanna nodded and replied, “Okay! I have already sent a text message to him just now. Big Dolph is already bringing his men over here. When he arrives later, then we will be able to watch a good show!”

On the other side.

“Douglas, stop the car! I want to get off!”

Douglas had already drove away in a hurry.

Halfway through, Cindy suddenly yelled out loud as she anxiously wanted to get out of the car.

“What’s wrong, Cindy?”

Leila asked.

“No! No! I am still worried about leaving Gerald behind all alone! Everyone knows who Louie is! He will really destroy Gerald!”

Cindy could not help but cried out of worry as she thought about it.

“Hmph! Why are you so worried about him? It serves him right for pretending to be a hero! He deserves it!”

Leila replied contemptuously.

Everything was as clear as day. Gerald and Douglas were simply incomparable.

One was a fool whereas the other was really a man who knew how to find a way to survive.

This was especially so when earlier on, Douglas had taken the lead to down the bottle of wine. Leila was moved.

Man. Nothing could beat that!

But when it came to Gerald, Leila simply shook her head because she was utterly speechless.

“That’s right, Cindy. Besides that, the both of you don’t even know each other that well anyway. Why do you care about his life or death? Why are you so worried about him? Damn it! Cindy, don’t tell me that you like that pathetic dickhead?”

Douglas asked as he continued driving.

“Go ahead and think whatever you want. All I know is that if it weren’t because of Gerald, none of us would have been able to get out of that place so easily! Stop the car! I want to go back and take a look!”

Douglas could not bear to see Cindy acting so anxiously. So, he stopped the car.

Cindy got out of the car before she ran back towards the karaoke bar.

“Cindy, come back!”

Leila yelled anxiously.

“Douglas, what do we do now? How am I going to explain it to Cindy’s grandfather if she is in danger?”

“Oh.. okay you know what, let’s do this. We’ll turn around and go back too.”

“Ahh? No! Douglas, do you want to save that Gerald too?”

“F*ck! Why would I want to save him? I am just afraid that something will happen to Cindy. We should go back and look out for Cindy from a distance. That way, we can also see what’s going on with the entire situation!”

Douglas explained.

Everyone agreed to his plan. So, the two cars turned around, back to the karaoke bar...

Chapter 401

“Huh? What’s going on, here?”

Staying out of the way by the side of the road, Leila and the others watched what was happening in shock.

A veritable fleet of expensive cars lined outside the karaoke bar. A throng of people swarmed about the place.

“Something must have happened! Gosh... could it be that rascal Gerald’s gotten in over his head?” Douglas wondered aloud.

“Must be. I mean, who else in Serene County could stir up this much of a fuss? I should’ve known better than to bring that guy here, no matter what anyone said. Now look at this mess: The moment something major goes down, we’re gonna get dragged into it—Mr Lourdes knows very well he’s with us!” The guys whispered amongst themselves, their outlook seemed bleak.

Cindy had gone pale, hearing their words. If what they said was true, then Gerald’s life might be in extreme danger!

No, she had to go in and see for herself. If things were really that bad, she’d call the cops! Thinking thusly, Cindy threw open the car door and ran for the karaoke bar.

Gerald had left a good impression on Cindy. They’d only just met, so it was still too soon to talk about any real feelings between them... but she just felt that he was a really nice guy, down-to-earth. What’s more, in order to save everybody, he’d taken the whole thing onto himself.

Abandoning him without a second thought, like Leila and the others had done... that was something Cindy simply couldn’t do. She couldn’t just sit this one out.

“Cindy, are you crazy? Get back here!” Leila had gotten out of the car as well, shrieking hysterically.

Cindy was her best friend. Leila couldn't allow her to do this. Seized by terror, she chased after her, desperate to stop her.

As for Douglas and the rest, they remained right there inside the car, just smoking and keeping watch from afar.

"Holy hell, it's a bloody mess in there! I don't know who Mr Lourdes pissed off, but he's been beaten to a pulp!"

"Anyone else wants to go next? Oh, the horror... but what a twist! Mr Lourdes thought he was the biggest cheese around—never imagined he'd bump into someone even more powerful than him... ahahaha!"

Some young men and women passed by in front of Cindy, chattering noisily about what had happened. Overhearing them, first she was shocked by the news of Mr Lourdes' tragedy...

But what about Gerald?

Anxiously, Cindy stopped them to ask about the situation within. This allowed Leila to catch up.

Aroused by the sight of these two ravishing beauties, the guys scrambled to recount what had happened back at the bar.

"Hey, babes... I guess you weren't there, so you wouldn't know—but of course you've heard of Mr Louie Lourdes, the richest kid in all Serene County!" One of the guys was so excited he was sputtering. "Just now, a whole gang of black-clad bodyguards beat him within an inch of his life! Totally brutal, and I hear they're from Mayberry City! Just take a look at all these cars they brought here! Incredible!"

The other guys were eager to contribute as well:

"As for Louie, when he started shouting for someone to get Big Dolph over here, I thought the tables had turned, you know? I was expecting Louie would clean all their clocks out! But when Big Dolph

arrived, he was suddenly bowing and scraping for those two, offering them smokes and drinks... Mr Lourdes' face was a nasty sight, then!"

"The other big players in the room all knew whose side to take, then!"

"But I'm not asking about Louie Lourdes!" Cindy wailed. "I'm asking if there was some other young man who also got hurt! Did Louie... hack up some other guy in there?"

"Huh? Some other guy? Well, Louie and someone he called 'Uncle' caught a bloody good thrashing... but no, no one else was hurt... Oh! Louie's own bodyguards were knocked out cold instantly—but I wouldn't have called any of them a 'young man'..."

"How could this be? What about Gerald? Is there any possibility you might have made a mistake?" Leila blurted out in disbelief. "Are you absolutely sure the one who got roughed up was Louie Lourdes?"

"Of course! We've all seen his picture before!" Hooting and jeering, the group wandered off.

"Does this mean... Gerald's alright?" A massive weight in Cindy's heart was suddenly eased—but then she added, "But why would all these wealthy people suddenly turn on Louie? Leila... do you think Gerald might have summoned them to his aid?"

Thinking back, she'd just remembered how, as Gerald was clearing the way for them to escape, he'd also said something about calling his own people to come deal with Louie.

Chapter 402

He'd meant summoning people to help fight Louie Lourdes.

At that time, Cindy hadn't paid much thought about it. She'd assumed Gerald was just stalling for time.

But right here right now, were a whole horde of people whom, sure enough, had attacked and vanquished Louie.

What Cindy was suggesting sent a tremor through Leila's entire body.

“Impossible! That guy? I don’t know much about him, but isn’t he just some penniless loser? How could he have so many rich and powerful friends? Don’t you fall for his nonsense, Cindy!”

Heaven’s sake! If it turned out to be true... Leila might as well just ram her head against the nearest wall.

But no, haha, it was simply not possible!

Leila turned to gesture for everyone back in the car to come over and join them, where she then shared with them what had been learned. Everyone was gobsmacked by the news that Louie had been wiped out clean. They gazed with admiration at the magnificent cars lining up along the street outside the karaoke bar.

“Look! Isn’t that Gerald?” Glancing around, Leila suddenly spotted him in the Western restaurant next door, dining at the window seat.

For a moment, she doubted her own eyes.

“It can’t be... no, but it really is him!” Douglas was every bit as stupefied.

Everyone had been convinced that Gerald was dead meat. Instead, he was in a fine restaurant nearby, sitting at their premier table?

This... how... what...

“Gerald’s okay after all! Leila, maybe he was really telling the truth! Maybe all these guys really did come here to back him up! Maybe Gerald really is friends with lots of rich people!” Cindy seemed delighted by this.

“No way, no way! I refuse to believe it!” Leila was stamping her feet in agitation. “Douglas, we’re going over there to get to the bottom of this. Anyway, can you believe that tramp can afford that class of fine dining?”

Someone she held so much contempt for, turned out to be someone so amazing? That would be a right slap to the face!

“Right! Let’s get over there! You, send the drunk ones home first!” Douglas issued this command to one of the boys, ignoring the fact that he wasn’t completely sober himself.

Earlier, quite a few of the guys had downed an entire bottle. Now the alcohol was running its course, and some were no longer able to stay on their feet.

Douglas himself had quite a high tolerance—and anyway, he couldn’t bear to walk away from such a momentous affair, so he would just grit his teeth and bear it.

Leila and Cindy were by his side as he walked straight into that restaurant.

In the grip of a terrible rage, Leila stormed across the floor. “Gerald, do my eyes deceive me? So it really is you... Huh! You came into a place like this, but ordered nothing, just sitting here... Don’t tell me you just slipped out from there, and just needed some place to sit down?”

She’d been a little worried—worried that Gerald might actually turn out to be someone of wealth and influence. However, now that she was standing at his table, she was able to breathe a sigh of relief.

Most likely, he’d only ducked in here to find shelter.

“Leila, perhaps you’re not aware of how exclusive this restaurant is. It’s considered a first-class establishment, with their main branch based in Mayberry. Common folk generally don’t dare to trespass in here—so you could hardly have found a safer hiding place, Gerald! Hahaha!” Douglas added his own mocking comments to the mix.

Gerald just sat there mutely.

Back in that karaoke room, when his bodyguards were giving it to Louie and his grunts, Gerald had watched for a while, but then lost interest.

It was enough just to teach that fool a lesson. There was no reason for him to hang around. That sort of thing wasn't his style.

Anyway, he hadn't had much to eat for lunch earlier, so by now he was starving, and had come out looking for a bite to eat.

But after he'd placed his order, and was taking a moment to contemplate how he'd handle things from here on out...

... Unexpectedly, Leila and company had come charging back into the fray.

What was this? Hadn't he gotten rid of them already? Gerald couldn't even begin to imagine how he'd explain himself now.

At the corner of his eye, he saw six restaurant staff form into a line, trays of food in their hands. And then, they began making their way towards Gerald...

Chapter 403

"Excuse me, miss!" The waitress in the lead smiled at Leila, who stared with mouth gaping wide as a feast was laid out upon the table before Gerald.

"Huh? What?" Leila stuttered for a moment, then exclaimed, "Hey, hey, hey! There must be some mistake—you've got the wrong table!"

Anyone could tell that it was a sumptuous meal worth a small fortune—at least five hundred dollars or more—and it was meant for Gerald?

Leila had always held him in contempt as a man with nothing to his name. One time, she'd let slip that their fathers had been arranging for them to be married, and it had made her a complete laughing stock.

"Hey, Leila! Somewhere on a far away farm, your fiancé's waiting for you!" She could still see those mocking grins vividly at the back of her mind.

It had been the greatest source of misery in her life. She never spoke of it, but it was always on her mind. As a symbol of her humiliation, she utterly despised Gerald Crawford.

And yet, Gerald was eating so well right now...

“How could there be any mistake? Mr Crawford here ordered our most expensive menu, prepared by the hand of a master chef from France! It costs a thousand dollars in total!” The waitress offered her another sunny smile, then bowed to Gerald, and left him to his meal.

“What? One thousand dollars!” Leila stood stunned. Never had she ever indulged in such luxury!

“Gerald, what are you up to? No one’s poorer than you, and yet you’re burning money like nobody’s business... French cuisine? Are you out of your mind? Have you never thought about taking that one thousand bucks and doing something useful with it?” Leila harangued him acidly.

“That’s right, that’s right,” Douglas joined in. “The poor sure like to act like they’ve got money to spend! Who am I, and who are you? My handphone costs as much as this meal you’re eating here! Did what happened just now scare the wits out of you?”

Truth be told, here in Serene County, a five-hundred-dollar smartphone was a substantial status symbol—but Douglas was one step up: With his thousand-dollar phone, it showed that he was really somebody.

But now, it was nothing more than the price of one meal for Gerald. No one would take this without comment.

“Gerald, it’s not that we’re trying to make you feel bad... But wouldn’t it be better to take this money and buy yourself some nice clothes, or a decent phone, or maybe some kind of makeover... Instead, you’re just... urgh!” Leila shook her head at him in disgust.

Compared to Douglas, whether in terms of manners or intellect, Gerald fell far short.

Bzzt! Gerald's phone was vibrating. He pulled it out for a quick glance. It was an unknown number calling.

Leila and Douglas stared with eyes as wide as the plates on the table.

Due to the awkwardness of the current situation, Gerald didn't take the call. Terminating the connection, he tried to shove the phone back into his pocket.

At the end of the day, she was still Uncle Jung's daughter, and he shouldn't cause her too much offence.

"Hold it right there! Let me see that phone!" Seized by a sudden frenzy, Leila snatched it over, and murmured, "This model, it's..."

"It's the latest model to hit the market, four thousand and five hundred dollars apiece. This is your phone, Gerald?" Besides Leila and Douglas, even Cindy was shocked to see it.

"Haha, I borrowed that from a classmate! Just for appearances, you know!" Gerald disparaged himself.

"Hmph! Tell the truth, or else!" Cindy rolled her eyes at him. "Don't you think I can't tell that this belongs to you?"

Leila was no longer able to speak, now.

How could this be possible? The man she hated so... how could he be... Did this mean all those guys back there had truly been summoned here by him?

"Alright, alright... it's just a phone. You guys were only drinking back there—you haven't had anything to eat... How about I treat you all to some French cuisine?" Gerald attempted to change the topic with everything at his disposal.

"Oh, that sounds good! I'm famished—and I've never had a thousand-dollar French banquet before! Hahaha! This will be your treat, Gerald!"

Chapter 404

Cindy giggled.

“Of course!”

Stony-faced, Leila snapped, “Cindy! Have you forgotten what you came here to ask about? And, and... weren’t you so worried about Gerald, just a moment ago? Aren’t you curious why he’s unscathed?”

“Oh, right! Gosh, in my excitement I quite forgot. Gerald, tell us. How are you still in one piece? And are all those guys outside your people?”

“Indeed... how am I still in one piece?” Gerald answered dumbly.

“We’re asking you!” Leila frowned, glaring at Gerald.

Then Gerald clapped a hand to his forehead. “Oh, I remember now. Just as I was about to come to blows with Louie, the patrons from next door burst into the room, and maybe they had some kind of grudge against Louie, because everyone started fighting on sight! In all that chaos, I managed to slip away.” Gerald finished with a laugh.

Leila was so mad that words failed her.

Gerald was obviously lying. Slipped away? Like, out of the karaoke bar... and into the restaurant next door, for a spot of fine dining? Who’d believe you!

Ah, forget it! She was too angry now, too agitated!

“Why don’t the two of you stay for dinner, too? It’ll be my treat, okay?” Gerald said pleasantly to Leila.

To be honest, seeing the mouth-watering feast that had been served, Leila felt extraordinarily tempted. All girls are gluttons, aren’t they?

But with the way things were between Gerald and her, how could she accept?

What about her pride?

“Hmph! No need—if we wanted to eat, we’d order something ourselves!” Folding her arms, Leila glanced towards Douglas.

Oh, how she wanted to order something.

Douglas peeked into his wallet. A thousand bucks per pax... he’d started the night with a thousand five hundred on each person. He’d picked up the tab for karaoke earlier, to the tune of a whopping one thousand and two hundred dollars. There was no way he could afford to whip out another couple thousands for an impromptu feast...

His family held influence—but not so much affluence...

“Um, well... Perhaps next time, Leila. My treat! It’s just... I’ve had too much to drink tonight!”

“You...” Leila could also tell that it was beyond his means.

She sighed wretchedly. Douglas felt the same.

They stood up to leave, but as they turned to go, they ended up knocking over a vase of flowers on a side table.

With a crash, the vase shattered on the floor.

Ah, crap! Douglas froze. A moment later, a waitress hurried into view, having heard the noise.

“Sir, this vase...” she began in a whisper.

“Just a bunch of lousy flowers, barely worth looking at. I’ll pay for them, alright? Here, one hundred. Is that enough?” Fishing out a hundred-dollar bill, he slapped it down on the table.

How’s that for cool?

He glanced at his woman. “Leila, let’s get out of here!”

Swooning for him all of a sudden, Leila nodded submissively.

“Hold a moment, sir!”

“What’s the matter?”

“That was an artistic flower arrangement... Rather than a hundred dollars, it’s worth a thousand five hundred!” The waitress declared with a smile.

Douglas was paralyzed on the spot. “What? A thousand five hundred?”

Chapter 405

“That’s right, sir. One thousand and five hundred dollars!” The waitress beamed.

Douglas’s face was a sight to behold. At first, he’d thought to just toss down a hundred bucks, and then swagger out of there. He’d never expected that bunch of flowers to be worth so much!

If he called his father over to make some noise...

No, that wouldn’t do. This restaurant chain was owned by a powerful figure over at Mayberry. Whatever clout his family had counted for nothing in here!

But neither did he have a thousand five hundred on him right now!

“Hmph. So it’s a thousand five, so what? No big deal!” Leila sneered. She was this close to slapping the money in that waitress’s face.

Gerald was watching. No matter what, she had to have the last word in this!

Leila glanced towards Douglas. He’d definitely be able to do something about this!

Patting his pockets, he leaned in close to whisper to her, “I’ve only got a few hundred left on me... I can’t pay!”

“Ah?” Leila had been expecting Douglas to still have around a thousand left, just like her. That way, they’d be able to pool their money and fumble their way out of this mess somehow... but he barely had any cash on him at all!

Now, this was embarrassing...

Gerald hadn’t planned to get involved, until he saw them whispering furtively amongst themselves, and realized that Douglas was probably broke. “Hey, waitress! Add it to my bill! I’ll pay in their stead for now!”

Leila was wearing an absolutely hideous expression on her face right then.

Although those two had been very rude to him, Gerald nevertheless couldn’t bear to see Leila caught in such a plight. Anyway, when they’d encountered each other again earlier, he’d mentioned something about counting on him in case of any trouble—that was why he spoke up now.

“Hmph! Douglas doesn’t need your money! He’s got friends, you know?” Leila snapped.

But who was going to lend Douglas a thousand five on short notice? What’s more, his dad would hear about it, sooner or later... and then he’d be in for it.

This was his way out. He'd be a fool not to take it.

"Alright, Gerald!" Douglas said. "Just cover for me this time, and I'll pay you back tomorrow!"

"No problem—but you'll have to write me an IOU!" Gerald chuckled.

The waitress produced pen and paper for them.

His face a portrait of misery, Douglas nevertheless wrote out that IOU and presented it to Gerald.

Then he took back that hundred-dollar bill on the side table, and stuffed it back into his wallet, before making his escape with Leila.

Outside, Douglas decided to get back at Gerald a little. "Hmph! Leila, it would have been silly not to take advantage of that fool, back there! I've been disgraced in front of him this time, but heh! When he comes calling for me to pay back that IOU, well, fat chance! It's not like that worm's got any kind of clout!"

Hearing him speak like this, Leila felt like she didn't even know who he was anymore. Was this really the man she'd taken as her boyfriend?

What a piece of trash!

That's what Douglas looked like to her right now. There was a time when Leila used to believe that money wasn't the most important thing. Having been raised in the lap of luxury, she'd never wanted for money herself. As such, she'd decided that she needn't find a boyfriend who was totally loaded—as long as he could treat her to a little something once in a while, that'd be fine!

Douglas was well-connected, and had an amazing job, so he'd been her preferred choice. After all, everywhere he went, people looked up to him.

However, after what had happened today in that restaurant, Leila's worldview had been changed completely.

Someone who could give her a little treat, once in a while? Forget that! Without money, they wouldn't even be able to get anything worth eating!

Leila wanted to be at that table with Gerald right now, partaking in that sumptuous feast—but Douglas couldn't afford it.

He couldn't even afford to pay for a broken vase of flowers.

Someone had bailed him out, and now he was plotting revenge against that someone.

Was this her type of guy? Leila shook her head.

"Leila, come on! I'll drive you home!"

Chapter 406

Douglas called out to her, but Leila replied, "That's alright. You go on without me. I'll find my own ride home!" With that, she hailed a passing cab, and departed—leaving Douglas dumbfounded by the side of the road.

He already knew what was wrong—and he blamed Gerald for it!

Some time later, Gerald and Cindy finished their meal together, and exchanged their contact numbers. Then he called for a cab to send her home.

Gerald stepped into the karaoke bar next door to have a look. Everyone had left, and the bar had closed for the night.

He hadn't expected this to be such an eventful day. He was exhausted.

Hailing a cab for himself, he returned to the hotel where he was staying. The moment he stepped into his room, his phone rang again. It was that unknown caller who'd tried to reach him while he was at the restaurant earlier.

Who could it be? Curious, Gerald took the call.

"Gerald, what's going on? Why didn't you pick up?" It was a lovely, feminine voice. Gerald was taken aback when he recognized who was speaking.

"Giya? It was you calling?" he exclaimed, baffled.

It had been half a month since term break started. Gerald had spent most of this time in the hospital looking after Mr Winters. Perhaps because of what had happened on the first day of term break, Giya hadn't spoken to him at all since.

Gerald had been thinking that it was just as well. And so, they'd severed contact with each other.

He hadn't been expecting to get a call from her.

"Hmph. Surprised? I'm calling you from the landline phone in my room. So what am I to make of you not contacting me all this while? Are we not friends anymore?" Giya grumbled.

"Nothing like that... I'm just shocked that you called me!" Gerald responded wryly.

"And just what's wrong with me calling you?" Giya asked teasingly.

"Well, I'm not some rich guy... just a poor loser with no money!"

"I won't allow you to talk about yourself like that!" she snapped.

"It's true! Most girls say that about me!"

“Most girls. I’ve never looked down on you—if anything, I think more of you than all those rich brats. I know you were only treating me that way for the sake of your girlfriend. If not for her, you’d be much nicer to me, isn’t that so?”

“Something like that...” For lack of anything better to say.

Truth be told, a girl like Giya, gorgeous and charismatic, with a heart of gold... Any man would be lucky to have her as their girlfriend.

But Gerald already had Mila. Though he admired Giya... it wasn’t like that.

“Was there some reason you called me?” Gerald inquired.

“I can’t call you without a reason? Well then... No, no reason! Hang up, won’t you?” Giya’s tone was sharp as a knife.

Doot... doot... doot...

As instructed, Gerald hung up. A moment later, she called back.

“What the hell? Why did you do that? You’re killing me, here! Look, something’s come up, alright? Something big!”

“What is it?”

“I’ll pay you a visit tomorrow at your place—and then I’ll need to stay for a few days. Is that cool? Hello, Gerald? Can you hear me?”

Chapter 407

“What was that?” Gerald couldn’t believe his ears.

Stay a few days, at his place? How would he be cool with that? He talked to Mila every day, and on that note: He was spoken for right now—just that his girlfriend was abroad at present—and yet he'd be living together with another woman?

Even if the rest of the world was cool with it, Gerald certainly wasn't! What madness was this?

"No way, forget it!" he answered.

"Oh... haha, it's alright... I thought someone would be willing to help me, but I get it now..." Giya's voice was barely more than a whisper.

"Has something happened over there?" Gerald asked, intrigued.

Come to think of it, Giya was hardly the sort of girl to suddenly run off to crash at some guy's place for a few days without rhyme or reason. Had she fallen for him?

Hah! As though Gerald thought that highly of himself... He was only asking out of curiosity.

After a pause, Giya suddenly announced, "I'm getting engaged!"

"Oh, congrats—" As Gerald began to respond to this, he suddenly realized there had been something odd in her tone. Changing tack, he instead tried, "That's wonderful news! Who's the lucky fellow?"

"Jacob Lincoln. My dad's business has recently hit some rough waters, so he's hoping to win the patronage of the Lincoln family to help us get through this. Meanwhile, Yacob's been after my hand, and when his dad brought up the subject of us getting married... well, Yacob's dad helped save my mom, too—so my dad said yes! Now I'm engaged to Yacob!"

"But I don't want to be engaged to anyone, you know? This whole thing feels like a nightmare! I had so many plans... I didn't think I'd even consider marriage until I was thirty! But here I am, not even finished with university yet, and already engaged to somebody—somebody I don't like! I just don't know what I should do!"

"I'm looking for a place to hide—but Yacob knows all my friends, and he'll definitely be able to find me through them—that's why I came to you, but you're leaving me out to dry!" Somewhere along the way, Giya had started sobbing.

Gerald felt he more or less understood, now. Indeed, it was a heavy burden for anyone to have to bear. Furthermore, it wasn't as though her predicament had nothing at all to do with him...

After all, when Giya's mother was saved, the one behind it had actually been Gerald. He'd kept quiet about that, in order to minimize his involvement with Giya.

Turns out, the Lincolns had taken full credit for it, and had been holding it over Giya's family. In that sense, it was also Gerald's fault that Giya had now been forced into her current dilemma!

So, now what?

It was obvious that Giya was seeking asylum somewhere—and that, by running away from home, she hoped to apply pressure upon her father. That was why she'd sought him out.

If he turned her away, would she be forced into that marriage, after all? To be perfectly honest, a girl like Giya falling into the clutches of a guy like Yacob, it was akin to feeding caviar to pigs. Even Gerald himself considered it a crime against nature.

If he agreed to help her... how would he explain it to Mila?

But he already knew that he'd never forgive himself for abandoning Giya now. He'd planted these seeds himself—now he had to reap the harvest!

"Alright, you can come stay with me," Gerald said, "But I'm not at my family home—I'm staying in the city. Also... Once this matter has been settled, out you go!"

Since he was the one to blame for all this, it naturally fell to him to resolve the problem. The solution was simple: He'd reveal his true identity! Problem solved.

It would be okay to let Giya come over, because he had it all planned out.

Giya was jubilant. "Alright! You got it! Thanks, Gerald! You're the best! Don't worry, I'm only doing this to give my daddy a scare! Once he annuls the engagement, we'll be in the clear!"

After the call ended, Gerald had some thoughts about the nature of impropriety.

Well, too late for regrets—he'd already said yes!

Anyway, he was renting a suite here, which was convenient for having guests over—besides taking care of Mr Winters, he also had to meet with Zack Lyle and the others regularly. It wasn't merely a one-bedded room.

Gerald had decided to drop the ruse with Giya, and let her know who he really was!

First thing the next morning, Giya arrived by train. Gerald drove to the station in his Mercedes-Benz G500 to get her. If not because he'd left it behind at the Mountain Top Villa, he would have taken his Lamborghini instead.

If he was going to reveal his big secret to her, as part of helping to resolve this matter, Gerald was sure that all he needed to do was show off a little.

Chapter 408

He parked the 4WD outside the train station. As expected, it attracted a lot of attention. There were even some girls coming over to snap pictures on their phones.

After all, this was a car that cost over three hundred thousand dollars!

"Oh, wow! A G500 here in Serene County? Who's inside? Must be some rich kid!"

"Gosh... Hey, how do I look? What if he gets off the car, and falls for me at first sight? What will I do?"

“Hahaha! Get over yourself!”

“Girls, let’s go over there and say hi!”

The girls whispered amongst themselves, giggling out loud every so often.

Just then, an old woman of eighty approached the girls and said, “Whoever owns that car must be loaded, I guess?”

“Of course! The G500 goes for over three hundred thousand dollars! What’s up, grandma? Hoping to catch a big fish? He’s probably some young lordling, though...” The girls chortled with laughter.

“So what if I’m old? I’ve still got just as much right to flirt around. Hmph!” the old woman replied flippantly.

Saying so, she began to hobble towards the car. The girls followed after her.

A crowd was growing outside the train station. More and more people were gathering to look.

Inside the car, Gerald sucked in a deep breath. This should be the first time he’d ever made such a show of himself.

He’d always kept a low profile before this. He admitted to some excitement over the occasional moment in the limelight.

How would he describe these feelings? He’d been waiting three years for a moment like this. He was going to make a statement—not about how great he was, but about how he was going to get back everything he’d lost!

Hahh...

Gerald put on his sunglasses, and withdrew the car keys from the ignition.

Time to make his debut.

Wham! When he opened the door, he seemed to hit something. A moment later, there was a cry of agony.

A white-haired old woman was sprawled across the ground outside, her cane still rolling away from her.

Good heavens! Gerald stared in shock.

“Young man, ahh... I hope your car’s alright...” the old woman mumbled in fright, still prone on the ground.

“What’s happened here?” Someone arrived on the scene immediately. The crowd surged forward.

“Hah! What do you think happened? When that young man opened his door, he knocked that old woman down—but I saw that she was lying in wait beforehand... and rushed forward just as he was getting out! It’s a scam!”

“So that’s how it is!”

But other onlookers continued to arrive, ignorant of what had really happened.

“Goodness, how could that guy be so careless? Repairing a G500 is gonna cost an arm and a leg!” someone remarked.

Annoyed, Gerald stepped out of the car to help the old woman to her feet.

“Don’t touch me! It’s no concern of yours! I fell down all by myself!” the old woman wept. “I live all alone by myself, no sons or daughters... I simply can’t pay you back for your car!”

“Hmph! Don’t you worry, ma’am! Being rich doesn’t make him untouchable! Even a rich man has to pay for injuring somebody! He opened the door and knocked you down, isn’t that right? Rest assured, ma’am—we’ll get you justice!” There were some hot-blooded youths, hollering with fury.

Soon, the police arrived on the scene, and dispersed the crowd.

Although the old woman had tried to set him up, it couldn’t be denied that he’d knocked her down with his own hand. She was sent to the hospital, and Gerald was brought to the police station so they could take down a statement from him, that sort of thing.

Gerald was on the verge of tears. Why was any of this happening?

It took forty minutes to settle everything. Gerald even gave some money to the old woman.

Leaving the police station, he got a call from Giya: “Didn’t you say you’d be picking me up from the station? Where are you?”

“Oh! I’m on my way right now!” Gerald spluttered.

“Forget it! I’m already in a cab, heading to your place!”

Chapter 409

“Gerald, I bought these fruits for you. I’ve already washed them, so come over and eat them!”

Giya set a tray of fruits down upon the coffee table, then took an apple herself and began munching on it as she watched the television.

Rather than a runaway fiancée escaping an arranged marriage, Gerald thought she looked more like she’d come for a pleasant holiday.

He’d returned half an hour ago. After helping Giya get settled in, he’d gone to take a bath.

At the moment, he wasn’t sure what to say about this relaxed, untroubled mood she was in. Regarding the luxurious suite he was in, Gerald had only mumbled some throw-away excuse so far.

His earlier attempt at theatrics had flopped, and now he was no longer in the mood. Imagine bringing it up out of nowhere...

Gerald took a seat. "So, about your engagement... I think it's best to talk things through with your father. Certainly, you can't keep running away from it forever. The trouble with his business will ease in time—surely it's not worth sacrificing his daughter's happiness forever?"

Anyway, if the Quarrington family was facing any financial issues, he could simply make an investment in their interests.

"I get that... but it's not as simple as you think! Gah, I finally managed to calm myself down a little—could you not keep bringing that up?" Giya sulked at him.

Then, with a simpering smile, she said, "Gerald, I haven't seen you in a while... Your skin's turned fairer, and you've become so handsome now!"

"Is that so..." Gerald chuckled dryly.

That was when Giya's phone rang. It was easy to see that she didn't want to pick up, but after a moment, she did.

"What is it? I already said I'm not going back! Don't try to find me, either! I'm not coming home until you call this whole thing off! There's no way I'm marrying him! I don't like a single thing about him! In fact, I despise him! And I don't plan to get hitched so soon, whatever you say! I'm doing just fine over here! If there's nothing else, I'm hanging up!"

Giya tossed the phone down on the table, in abject misery.

Gerald had heard it all. That had most likely been her father, trying to persuade her to return.

And then Giya's phone rang again.

"Argh, so annoying!" Giya testily snatched up her phone once again. "Didn't you hear me? Oh, it's you, Tammy..." Giya eased off a little. Setting the phone to speaker mode, she laid her hands on her lap, and her head on her knees, and the two girls began chatting.

"Giya, you didn't really run off to Gerald? You know, just now your dad even called my dad, asking if you were here! He's asked all the girls from our dorm, too! He's worried sick!" Tammy burred.

"Yeah, I'm with Gerald right now. Let him worry... as long as he knows there's no way I'm marrying that guy!"

"Mm-hmm... Hey, I've got nothing going on right now. I know some people over in Serene County, too. How about I come over there to hang out with the two of you? Now that the two of you are an item, Gerald owes us all a treat, surely... Hahaha, you know... for Gerald to become your boyfriend, it's truly a case of scattering pearls before—"

Tammy was spilling all the beans right now! Giya turned off the speaker in a hurry—and then, with infinitesimal care, she stole a peek over at Gerald, who sat there in stunned silence.

Indeed, Gerald was thunderstruck! Exactly when did he become Giya's boyfriend? What had this girl been telling everyone?

Some moments later, Giya finished with her phone call, then came back.

Sheepishly, she said to him, "Gerald... they all know I'm with you right now. I didn't want to raise a scandal, so I also told them that you're my boyfriend. You don't mind, right?"

Gerald shook his head. "Not at all!" What else could he say?

"Also, Tammy said she'd be swinging by in a bit. She's got a relative staying in these parts—let's all go out and have some fun together! I mean, if you don't go, then they might start to think..." Giya was pleading with him.

"Alright, I'll go!" Since he'd already promised to help her, he couldn't very well refuse.

It was almost noon when Tammy arrived with a younger cousin sister—a high school girl from Mayberry.

Chapter 410

Tammy's car was a handsome Camry.

The very first thing she said to him was, "Hmph! Gerald Crawford... to think that a bottom-feeder like you could snare yourself a goddess like Giya—what a dream come true for you!"

"Yes! Yes, indeed!" Gerald nodded.

"Huh? Tammy, this guy is Giya's boyfriend? Ah... what is this world coming to?" Tammy's cousin clutched her forehead, staggering in place.

After all, anyone who knew Giya, knew that she was a beauty among beauties, a goddess among goddesses. No one would have expected her to find someone like this to be her boyfriend.

It seemed that Tammy and her cousin were of like mind. They stood there now, scowling contemptuously at Gerald.

'Wipe those dirty looks off your faces!' Gerald thought to himself.

"Alright, that's enough," Giya cut in. "Oh, Tammy—didn't you say you had a bunch of distant relatives here in Serene County? Are they not joining us?"

As she said this, she hugged Gerald's arm tenderly... and also rolled her eyes at him, as though to say, 'There, you see! Everyone thinks you hit the jackpot, scoring a girlfriend like me! But some people don't seem to appreciate their good fortune!'

"Oh, they're coming. I just got off the phone with them—they were asking me where we'd be eating, you know? Gerald, what have you got planned for lunch?" Tammy's tone was kind of sharp as she posed this question, as though Gerald's relationship with Giya came as some sort of affront to her.

As though she held some sort of grudge against him.

Indeed, Tammy didn't hold Gerald in high regard. She grew up in the cosmopolitan city; he was a country bumpkin. He was simple and poor, a lightning rod for ridicule.

The thought of him becoming a mainstay of her inner circle... she just couldn't stand it!

With a grimace, Gerald replied, "On the subject of lunch... just leave that to me! There's a decent place here in Serene County, called Mead Hall. Let's eat over there!"

"Hmph! You should have told us that earlier! Come on, Giya! We'll go in my car!"

And so they found their way to Mead Hall, the finest restaurant in Serene County, frequented mainly by the rich and powerful.

When they arrived, Tammy announced with a mysterious air that she needed to find a place to park her car, and wanted Giya with her. Gerald was to go ahead and reserve a table for them.

Since that had been his intention all along, anyway, Gerald went inside and asked for a table for eight. Rather than having any private dining rooms to offer them, all the patrons were seated in the same enormous hall together.

Just as a table was found for them...

"Oh, gosh! Is that you, Gerald?" someone called out.

"It really is him! What's he doing in Mead Hall?"

A group of young men and women, halfway through their own meal, exclaimed with surprise when they spotted him.

Gerald turned when he heard someone calling his name, and saw six or seven people sitting together over there. Not just anyone, either—they were his classmates from high school, including Morgana Lopez and Cameron Laver.

What a coincidence! Almost as though...

Chapter 411

"Gerald, did you come here to have lunch?" Morgana enquired, with no small amount of disbelief.

At the table sat Morgana, her boyfriend, Cameron, and several others. Everyone was smiling his way.

Mead Hall was unmistakably an upper-crust establishment, and you paid by the head here, from a starting minimum of thirty dollars per pax. After accounting for drinks and so on, each meal could easily cost hundreds.

Everyone knew Gerald wasn't rich, so this was a fairly peculiar circumstance.

Gerald smiled back at them. "That's right! I'm meeting with some friends, and I thought I'd treat them all to lunch here! Who would have thought I'd run into you guys here, too!"

“Pfft! We eat here all the time!”

“Ah, Gerald... It’s nice that you’re treating your friends to something, but do you know they charge at least thirty dollars per person here? Are you sure this is a good idea?” This was coming from a girl seated beside Morgana, who had also gone to the same high school with them.

Sully was her name. Not a bad-looking girl. She pursed her mouth as she gave him that warning.

This was a high-class place, after all, meant only for people like her, who already held a certain standing in society. It wasn’t as though she took especial pride in eating here, but... come on, a hobo like Gerald taking his lunch here? That just put her off her palate.

People like him ought to just stick with fast food joints and hot dog stands, that sort of thing.

It was downright disgraceful. Did Gerald presume to being their equals?

That was why she’d taken such an acrimonious tone with him.

“Hey now, Sully! You shouldn’t talk to Gerald like that—he’s got his pride, too! If he wants to eat here, then that’s that. Anyway, this is a chance for us to get to know the friends he’s made! Hahaha!” Cameron sneered as he said this.

Whether in terms of family background or career prospects, he was indisputably the alpha at this table, making him the keystone of the group.

Sully cackled. “Goodness, Cameron... The sort of friends a guy like Gerald would make—are you sure you’d like to shake hands with them? Anyway, I only said that for his own good: Without taking stock of his own capacities, thinking to eat wherever he pleases... are appearances all he thinks about? Living beyond his own means... no one respects a person like that!”

She had disliked Gerald since high school: some impoverished bum prancing about before her... Pathetic! She could hardly care less about his feelings.

Anyway, for Gerald to be eating in the same restaurant as her showed that he didn't care about her feelings, either.

"Alright, Gerald's friends will be here any moment. Pipe down, you guys!" Morgana couldn't bear to watch any longer.

Gerald gave her a smile and a nod.

"Cameron, who's this guy? A classmate from high school?" An exquisitely made-up girl beside Cameron inquired curiously.

"That's right, ahahaha! Think he's cute? If he's your type, Gerald's still single—you could be his girlfriend!" Cameron burst out laughing.

"Hey! Cameron, you're the worst! Keep this up, and I'm not talking to you anymore!" The girl pinched the tender portion of his arm.

Everyone chuckled. Gerald kept quiet and continued nodding away.

"Hey, look! Gerald's blushing! I know... he must really like the idea of Maybelline becoming his girlfriend! Otherwise why would his face be turning red like that? Haha!" Another one of the guys decided to join in.

"Yo! Serious offer, Gerald. If this girl's to your taste, she's all yours. My word is good!" Cameron guffawed again.

"That's alright—I already have a girlfriend!" Gerald replied in exasperation, although he understood that they'd only been making fun of him with that. It had been the same back in high school. Gerald knew it was best to just keep quiet.

Chapter 412

He couldn't very well go around telling everyone that he was rich, like some fool who'd just won the lottery, and try to show up everyone, right?

Feh. What would that achieve?

“Heaven have mercy! Gerald’s actually found himself a girlfriend?” One of the guys exclaimed. “Holy hell, this is big news! We’ve got a high school reunion coming up in a few days, right? Everyone will be floored when they hear about this!”

“Gosh, what sort of girl would take a fancy to him? Oh, no... who’s grandma is it?” Sully shook her head, and took a sip of her juice.

This elicited a round of merry laughter from everyone at her table.

Morgana watched Gerald with a growing sense of disquiet. Then she said, “Gerald, today we’re actually celebrating my promotion at work—to the Reserve Department, no less. Cameron’s my guest here today. How many friends of yours will be coming? I’d be glad to have them join us.”

“No, I can’t accept that. There may be seven or eight of them!” Gerald said with a laugh.

So Morgana had finally settled that problem of hers. He remembered bumping into Zack Lyle, there. However, Zack hadn’t followed up with him on that matter, probably because he considered it too minor to be worth his attention.

As for her recent stroke of good fortune... Gerald couldn’t say if that was thanks to him, or Cameron. As such, he didn’t offer any comments, only nodded. Then he took a seat at the next table.

Honestly, he felt embarrassed to be here, too. However, the restaurant was packed right now, and there were no other tables available further away—even if there were, it would be too awkward to switch places now. Neither could he just walk out of here...

He could only sit there and sweat.

Just then, Giya and Tammy entered. Following after them, besides Tammy's cousin, were also two other guys and girls each—presumably Tammy's aforementioned distant relatives.

“Wow, wow, wow! Babes! Hot babes!” Cameron and the other guys had noticed the new arrivals, and were too stunned to do much more than gape. Such beauty as had suddenly graced this hall!

“Who are they? They're smoking hot! Absolute, top-tier charisma!” One guy beside Cameron noted.

“Hmph! They're not that hot. They're just really tall and sorta skinny. Pah!” Sully actually thought Giya and Tammy looked like celebrity supermodels, and had been moved by envy to speak.

As for that girl in the heavy make-up, sitting on Cameron's other side... Compared to the girls who'd just walked in, she looked like a party clown.

“Anyone got the stones to go ask for their numbers? Whoever steps up, I shall know him as my lord!” The guy who said this was positively drooling.

And then, all eyes turned to Cameron.

After all, whether in terms of family background, or career prospects... he was the alpha!

Cameron was already getting up from his seat. He cleared his throat, smoothed out his shirt...

“Watch this. I'm going in!”

“Oh, yeah! Cameron rocks!”

“All our hopes ride with you, my lord!”

But Cameron had already intercepted the targets. “Hey there, sweet things... Here for lunch? Found a table yet? Maybe I could be of assistance—I come here all the time!” They were even more dazzling up close. Cameron’s heart was racing out of control.

“We’re fine, thanks!” Giya and Tammy calmly deflected his advances. Something about him just put them off.

Cameron fished out his phone. “Ahem... Could I ask you ladies for your numbers? Call me Cameron. You may have heard of my family—”

“He’s over there! Come on, let’s go!” Spying her target across the hall, Tammy completely ignored Cameron, and led her entourage straight towards Gerald.

Chapter 413

“Hmph! Gerald, don’t you even know how to wait for us outside once you’ve got a table?” When Tammy reached him, Giya was by her side. The first thing that spewed out of her mouth was abuse.

Gerald put down his phone and smiled faintly. He’d been preoccupied with reading investment reports coming in from Zack Lyle.

Meanwhile, Sully and the others were staring as though their eyes might pop out of their sockets. “What? What! These are the friends Gerald was going on about?”

Cameron still stood there, phone in hand, his face now turning blue.

They ignored him, but yet, they were so friendly to Gerald? Blast! It was indeed a vicious slap across the face!

“Huh? Gerald, happen to know those people at the next table?”

Giya had taken a seat beside him, and she now wondered why everyone at the adjacent table seemed to be gawking strangely in his direction.

“Hey, hey! Gerald, why don’t you introduce your friends to us? When I went up to welcome them, those ladies just brushed me off, you know?”

Cameron, smiling stiffly, tried again.

He thought Gerald perhaps hadn’t moved to receive the girls, hoping that Cameron might get some humiliation there.

He continued in an aggravated tone, “How are you doing, ladies? We went to the same high school as Gerald! How lucky we must be to meet such gorgeous girls today... Really, this isn’t right of you, Gerald—the ladies have already taken their seats, so why aren’t you ordering anything to eat? How could you bear to watch these beauties starve?”

Desperate to salvage his dignity, Cameron was now hovering beside Gerald’s table, trying to assert himself as someone handy, hoping to attract the attention of those girls.

“Indeed, they’re my ex-classmates from high school. What a small world we live in!” Gerald reluctantly admitted.

Giya laughed merrily.

“That’s great! You ought to introduce these old friends of yours to me! After all, as your girlfriend, I can’t possibly not know who your friends are.”

To her, it was simple: Gerald’s friends were her friends and though they were just masquerading as a couple, it was becoming more real to her with each passing moment.

However, that last thing she said left everyone at the next table wholly disconcerted.

What? Really? This epitome of loveliness was Gerald’s girlfriend? Seriously?

Fires of jealousy flared in the eyes of the other guys.

Who were they? Uptown boys they were—filthy rich, set for life.

Who was Gerald again? Some loser who couldn't even rub two pennies together.

Not all of them had even found their own girlfriends, yet here was Gerald, a supermodel by his side. Who wouldn't be jealous? Without a doubt, Cameron was turning viridian green with swathes of envy oozing out of his chest.

“So you're Gerald's girlfriend, I see! How do you do? I'm Cameron. My parents are in the Health Bureau. I do hospital work. Ahaha!” As he made clear his superiority, Cameron reached out to shake hands with Giya.

With a flick of his wrist, a watch with the commanding price tag of well over a thousand dollars slid into view.

Giya considered this fool before her, one who felt the inexplicable need to introduce not only himself but his parents as well. What an odd way to go about things.

She decided not to take the hand he was offering her.

Anxious not to embarrass Cameron too much, Gerald shook his hand instead, at least so he wouldn't be left hanging there.

“Haha! Who would have thought: Gerald Crawford, the renowned tramp of our year, back in high school... reviled and loathed everywhere he went...” Cameron went on. “Who could have possibly imagined that he might have caught himself such a ravishing beauty of a girlfriend?”

As he said this, he shot a meaningful look at one of the other guys back at his table.

The indicated henchman slapped the tabletop hard! “That's right! Gerald,” he shouted. “I can't believe your luck! Do you all still remember that one time when Gerald almost couldn't pay his own tuition fees

because he was just six bucks short or something? Great Scott, our teacher chased him right out of the classroom! Hahaha! And guess what—I think it rained heavily that day!”

“Of course I remember,” Sully sneered. “Gerald trudged through the rain looking for trash to sell and somehow managed to scrape together those last six dollars, just so he could stay in school. Hahaha! No one in class cared to lift a hand to help him! He’s sure come a long way, hosting his own table at Mead Hall with that doll at his side... Well done!”

There was a strange parade of veiled hints getting passed around here. They were digging up all manner of dirt from Gerald’s past, all to be stripped bare before Giya and her friends.

Predictably, Tammy’s cousin and several of her friends were already peering at Gerald’s askance. Thus far, he sounded all but a sorry loser.

“Never mind that, Gerald!” one of the guys hooted. “To commemorate your girlfriend’s first-ever visit to Serene County, you can’t start lower than sixty dollars each, right?”

Cameron frowned.

“What nonsense are you spouting over there? Only sixty dollars?! This pair of goddesses are worth far more than that! Gerald, if you don’t go straight for the best quality at a hundred dollars per person, you don’t deserve the company of these ladies! Haha! But worry not, Gerald—if you’re strapped for cash, I’ll pay for you. It’s important to keep up appearances, after all!”

Just then, the waiter arrived to take their order.

Chapter 414

“What grade will you select today?”

Across all tables, all eyes turned to Gerald.

“Give me your best. A hundred per pax!”

It was what he'd been planning for all along, anyway.

"Pfft!" Cameron and company tried to hold in their laughter.

What an imbecile! A hundred dollars per head, plus drinks—the final bill would add up to a thousand dollars!

Tammy's side of the table was equally shocked by the turn of events. They reached the same conclusion: Gerald was a complete fool. Anyone could see that Cameron was up to no good, provoking him intentionally. Yet, Gerald walked straight into his trap. Really?

Gerald's lack of affluence was hardly news to Tammy. She'd already agreed with Giya not to allow Gerald to foot this meal's bill.

Now, Gerald was going for the most expensive option available? Argh! May the heavens help her!

"I beg your pardon—that's not what we want. Something simpler will do just fine," Giya interceded.

"Nope, a hundred it is. Go on, then!" Gerald was losing his temper under the barrage of jeers from Cameron and the rest.

"Hmph! Let him order what he pleases. We'll see what he does when the bill arrives," Tammy's cousin declared.

And so, the best food in the house was brought to their table. Cameron's table deliberately ate as slowly as possible. As Gerald's table was being cleared, both parties rose in unison to pay.

"Oh? Leaving already, Mr. Laver?"

The cashier smiled and waved when she saw Cameron.

Cameron made sure his wristwatch was in full view as he waved back. “That lady’s a good friend of mine,” he pointed toward Morgana. “Please set a good price for her!”

“No problem, sir. 30% off! In fact, please accept this exquisite tea set and our best compliments! Each set is worth quite a bit, and it’s just a promotion we are running at the moment.”

The cashier, clearly older than Cameron, beamed as she answered him.

“Aha! Hanging out with Cameron Laver means good times all the way,” cheered one of the other guys.

Morgana settled the bill, but Cameron continued to hang around—Gerald would be next to pay.

“Another friend of yours, Mr. Laver?”

The cashier could tell that they were acquainted, meaning she’d have to extend certain courtesies to Gerald as well.

Cameron pretended he didn’t hear it, peering at his watch.

The cashier understood what it meant.

“Hello, sir. That will be nine hundred and seven dollars in all. Cash or credit card?” she asked smoothly.

“Surely, you can round off the last seven dollars,” Gerald chuckled. Cameron could leave him out in the cold if it were what suited him. One meal wasn’t something worth fretting over.

With her face resting idly on her palms, the cashier responded indifferently.

“Forgive me, sir. Our prices are not open to haggling. Seven dollars or seven cents, you’ll have to pay it all, just the same.”

She saw it all from behind the counter—Cameron had deliberately coerced that fellow into going for the top of their line. It was apparent the man didn't have much in the way of money. There was no need to be too nice to him.

“Hey! You gave that bunch a thirty-percent discount! Now what's all that 'no haggling' about?”

Giya was first to lose her patience after seeing how everyone ganged up to give Gerald a hard time.

Gerald shook his head. “Forget about it, Giya. We'll just pay for our food and leave.”

“Hmph! You'll be offering us a tea set too, at the very least? We've spent over a thousand bucks at your place!” Giya hissed icily.

The cashier replied without the slightest sincerity, “We'd certainly like to—but you must forgive us, miss... These gift sets are only limited to fifty pieces per day—and the fiftieth has just been given to Mr. Laver. Perhaps if you come again tomorrow, I'll make sure I reserve a set just for you!”

At the end of the day, these were only one-time customers. It made more sense to appease a big spender like Cameron Laver. Furthermore, her own little sister was currently in the Laver Academy. The cashier knew that if she kept playing for this side of the field, her little sister would have a smooth sailing journey in the future.

“Hey... Bring me the bill!”

Right at that moment, a hoarse voice boomed across the hall. Someone strode up and slapped a hand on the countertop.

It was a young man, and when the cashier, Cameron, and friends included, saw who it was...

Chapter 415

“Mr. Lourdes...” Cameron murmured. He suddenly felt silly for waving his watch around earlier. He stood at attention, much like a misbehaving student before the discipline teacher.

“Cameron, which Mr. Lourdes did you mean?” the girl beside him wondered aloud.

“Who else could I have meant? Louie Lourdes, scion, and heir to the Lourdes family mining conglomerate! The big kahunas!”

“So, it’s that guy!”

“I didn’t know he was that handsome in person!”

Morgana, Sully, and the other girls gazed with ardent admiration at the legendary character.

The guys, meanwhile, seemed afraid even to breathe too loudly.

Not mentioning the cashier, who was already on her feet, displaying the most professional smile she could muster.

Louie had a handful of people with him, not even bothering to look at Gerald or his guests as he cut in front of them.

“My bill!” Louie barked.

The cashier’s smile didn’t falter. “Of course, Mr. Lourdes. Your bill this time comes up to one thousand, two hundred dollars. To this, sir, we are pleased to offer you a 70% discount!”

As she spoke, she also leaned forward, inviting gazes at her cleavage. Who knew... perhaps her figure might entice the interest of the great man?

“Bah! Who needs your discount? I’ll pay the full price!” Louie hurled a wad of money on the counter.

“Understood, Mr. Lourdes. Any of our promotional gifts tickle your fancy, sir? We will provide you with anything you want,” the cashier responded reverently.

“None of that hogwash! Just give me my receipt!”

“Gosh, so this is the real Mr. Lourdes! What commanding aura he has!”

The girl standing beside Cameron was about to go cross-eyed from amazement.

Even Morgana and Sully were exchanging stares from the corner of their eyes, wondering when they'd be able to find a man his equal.

Meanwhile, Tammy simply wasn't in the mood to play games between Gerald and his stupid friends. Seeing somebody cutting the line, her temper instantly flared up.

“Hey, now... haven't you ever heard of first come, first serve? Don't you know you've interrupted us right in the middle of our turn?”

“That's right, bro. First come, first serve. I've been waiting in line for a while now too.”

Gerald hadn't expected to run into Louie here. He could still see the fresh scars on his face. What a pounding he must have been given that night.

Barely a couple of days later, here he was, coming out looking for trouble again.

A wry smile worked its way across Gerald's face.

“Hmph! Be quiet, you. Your comments are not welcome. If Mr. Lourdes is here, you'll all have to wait then.”

The cashier had utterly abandoned all gestures of courtesy toward them. She rolled her eyes at Gerald.

“Good lord, this blind fool!” Cameron cackled from the side. “Don't you know Mr Lourdes? He's obviously in a foul mood today... this Gerald is really tempting for misfortune today!”

Now, even the cashier had started ridiculing Gerald. Louie, on the other hand, pretended to have heard nothing. Now, it was his turn to get angry.

He planted his foot hard into Louie's butt.

Whack!

"Ow!" Louie cried out, his wounds searing with pain once again.

Louie smacked the counter hard. "God d*mn it; I'll kill you!"

Cameron and the others couldn't believe their eyes. Gerald actually dared to strike Mr. Lourdes? The only thing that could happen next was him getting beaten to a pulp.

As Louie whipped around to retaliate, his fist suddenly halted mid-air.

"Cr... Crawford?"

Louie was paralyzed.

Wasn't this the same Gerald Crawford who'd summoned all those guys to clean his clock at the karaoke bar the other day?

Those men were skilled fighters. The beating he'd taken from them nearly crippled him, yet, they left no incriminating marks.

His misery definitely hadn't ended. That very same night, his dad had been summoned by a few who demanded to speak with him.

On the other hand, Louie had been expecting his father to respond with all his wrath and fury and leaving the men bowing and scraping like a winded dog. Afterward, Louie's father had come away from that meeting, practically skipping with delight.

Chapter 416

Louie's father had even told him that he deserved to be beaten up.

His father explained that the person who had beaten him up was none other than the extremely rich and humble heir, Mr. Gerald Crawford from Mayberry.

Hearing that, Louie felt chills run down his spine.

He had almost brought great trouble upon himself that day.

Perhaps like his father had said, being beaten up was a good thing after all. Maybe it could even get Mr. Crawford to invest in his company.

Thus, with that possibility in mind, Louie was faced with a cocktail of surprise, fear, and joy at the same time the moment he saw Gerald.

"Gerald! So you were eating here as well!" said Louie with a chuckle as he patted his hurt bottom.

'What.'

Cameron and the others were all thinking the same thing. They had all been eager for some drama but Louie's reaction only left them stunned.

'What? Why does Louie know Gerald? He even addressed Gerald in such a familiar way!'

'How is that possible!'

"That's right. If we weren't, how else could we have seen you cutting the queue?" replied Gerald with a faint smile on his face.

In his mind, he was wondering if he had not beaten Louie severely enough that night.

“W-well, you see, my dad’s invested quite a bit in this place before. Because of that, I’m used to not having to queue! But don’t you worry Gerald! Your meal’s on me today! Actually, scratch that. All of your meals here in the future will be on me!” said Louie as he rubbed his hands together.

“That won’t be necessary. This lady here won’t even lower the price by a dollar for me. We aren’t being given any special gifts either. I’m afraid that this will be the last time I ever come here,” replied Gerald, a smile on his face.

“What? Give me a minute, Gerald!”

Realizing that it was the cashier lady who had offended Gerald, Louie turned to glare at her. She had been standing beside them all this time, a dumbfounded expression on her face.

“Ah! Louie, so this gentleman here is your friend!”

The cashier lady was terrified now. She began thinking up excuses in her mind as cold sweat dripped down her forehead.

‘I only treated him like that because Cameron had signaled me too! He told me to make it difficult for Gerald so I was only following his orders!’

‘Cameron’s family works in the health department so of course I wouldn’t dare disobey him!’

‘Besides, that Gerald guy looked like a loser so I didn’t think twice about it. To think that he knew you, Louie!’

Before she could even begin explaining herself, a slap was heard.

Louie’s hand left her now reddened cheek as he shouted, “How could you look down on a customer! Isn’t Gerald just here to enjoy a meal? How dare you bully a customer you’re not even familiar with! I better hear about your resignation the next time I come here!”

“But I... I only did it because...”

Her left cheek was swollen and red and in pain as she looked toward Cameron.

Cameron had already been nervous even before she looked at him. He simply pretended as if the incident had nothing to do with him as he quietly began sneaking out of the place.

He didn't want to retreat like a coward, but the situation was a difficult one so with a great reluctance and unwillingness in his heart, he left the premise.

He regretted his actions tremendously.

As for Gerald, he exchanged a few pleasantries with Louie before finally leaving with Giya and the others.

Gerald already knew that Louie was just a rich and useless brat so he didn't want to get too close to him.

Upon leaving the shop, they caught sight of Cameron and the others standing not too far away from them.

In the beginning, Cameron and the others had wanted to enjoy Gerald's misfortune, but humiliation greeted them headfirst instead.

This was especially true for Cameron who had a terrible expression on his face.

“How on earth does Gerald know Louie?!” said Sully.

Her respect for Gerald had grown tremendously now.

Cameron simply sneered at her question. "He just showed Gerald a little respect! He said all that but Gerald was still the one who paid the bill in the end! It's only a matter of respect. Don't you know who Louie is? He would never befriend a person like Gerald!"

Cameron was brimming with jealousy.

As per usual, Gerald made up a story regarding him and Louie to casually explain what had just happened to Giya and the others.

They then left and returned to the hotel.

"Oh my god! Why is Gerald staying in such a grand hotel?"

Since Tammy and the others had not entered the hotel earlier, the little cousin was shocked when they stepped through its front doors for the first time.

What more, Gerald had spent a lot of money just on the meal they were treated to earlier. He also knew a lot of people. Tammy and the other distant relatives were constantly surprised the longer they stayed around Gerald.

As they went further into the hotel, a few men tried to gain Giya's affection. However, they gave up immediately the moment they knew that they first had to rival Gerald. They were nothing compared to him.

Once they got into their room, Gerald put his phone on the coffee table to wash some fruits for them.

"Oh my god! Tammy! Tammy come look! Look at the phone Gerald's been using!"

The little cousin picked the phone up to show her, an expression of surprise on her face.

Tammy was equally stunned.

'That phone could easily amount to two to three thousand dollars... Why would Gerald have it?'

At that moment, his phone began to ring.

"...Hmm? The most beloved Mila? Who is this person?" said the little cousin as she looked at the caller ID. She was dumbfounded by the discovery.

Chapter 417

The little cousin's surprise turned into a sneer. "Who is this 'most beloved' Mila? Doesn't he like you most Giya? Let's see who she is!"

Giya couldn't react fast enough and before she could stop her, the little cousin had already answered Mila's call.

"Hello? Who is this?" asked the little cousin.

"What? You're definitely not Gerald's girlfriend. Stop spouting nonsense!"

Even though she said that, the little cousin was stunned.

She then looked toward Giya before saying, "Giya! This girl's saying that she's Gerald's girlfriend!"

"That's quite enough, Felicia! Hand me the phone immediately!"

Giya then snatched the phone from her and hung up immediately.

Giya, for one, definitely knew who Mila was. She was Gerald's girlfriend who was in a long-distance relationship with him.

However, that was all Giya knew about Mila. She had been quite curious about what Mila was like in person ever since she knew about her existence.

Still, it would be inappropriate for her to say anything else at the moment.

“Felicia, what did you say? What did that other girl say again?” asked Tammy as she confirmed with Felicia if she had heard right.

Felicia simply sneered again. “I asked her who she was and she said that she was Gerald’s girlfriend! She even asked me where Gerald was!”

Felicia spoke as if she had just uncovered a great secret.

“Giya, do you know that girl?” asked Tammy as rage brewed in her mind.

‘What the actual f*ck! How sleazy is this guy! To get Giya to be his girlfriend is no easy feat and yet look at him! How bold and absolutely disgusting! To think that he still dares to fool around with other women when he already has Giya!’

“What are you all talking about? I have some fruits with me!”

At that moment, Gerald finally came back, holding a plate of fruits in his hands.

“To hell with the fruits! Who’s this Mila, Gerald! You better have a good explanation!” sneered Tammy.

She snatched the phone from Giya and held on to it as she glared daggers at Gerald.

Gerald didn’t even know how to begin explaining the situation.

Mila was his actual girlfriend of course.

“It had never crossed my mind that you were such a vile and disloyal man! How dare you treat Giya this way!” scolded Felicia next.

“That’s enough! Don’t scold him anymore! I already knew about this and... And let me just admit that we’ve never been a couple!”

There was no use hiding it anymore so Giya simply shouted the truth out.

“...What? You two aren’t a couple? Oh god, then why are you living with him if you’re not his girlfriend?” asked Tammy, shocked.

“I did it so that no one would get suspicious! I needed Gerald’s cooperation to lie to my dad, otherwise, he would definitely continue to force me!” explained Giya truthfully.

“You scared me half to death! I thought you really had become Gerald’s girlfriend! But I guess it really is impossible. It’s a little hard to believe that since Gerald’s been treating you so well today even though he already has a girlfriend. He’s even given you so many expensive things!” said Tammy as she glared at Gerald.

Women hated vile and disloyal men.

It was clear that Gerald had that label on him now.

“That’s enough, Tammy. Didn’t your mom call earlier? Asking you to go home immediately? And you need to promise to keep this a secret for me. Please don’t meddle with Gerald’s business!” said Giya in a persuading tone.

Eventually, Giya managed to persuade them to leave.

Only Gerald and Giya were left in the room now.

Chapter 418

It definitely took Gerald a while to explain the entire situation properly to Mila.

By the time he was done, Mila was no longer angry.

Gerald sighed. He had never anticipated for that crazy girl to actually pick up and answer his phone.

He was stuck in an extremely awkward position now.

“Say, Gerald, do have a seat... I have something I want to ask you,” said Giya as she looked toward him. On her face was a demure smile.

“I’m fine standing. What’s your question?”

“Do you really like Mila that much?”

“Of course I do!” replied Gerald without hesitation.

Giya took in a deep breath before continuing. “Then, if that’s the case, why did you give me such an expensive gift in the first place? In case you weren’t aware, when I learned that it was the most priceless gift your family could offer, I was touched beyond compare!”

“I’ve never been in a relationship before, Gerald. Though many other men have given me expensive gifts before, those gifts were different from yours. Your gift was meaningful. And to tell you the truth, to me, you’re different from the other men.”

Deep inside, Giya knew that she was trying to win Gerald’s affection.

She couldn’t explain why. She was just in love with him.

Initially, she had thought that his long-distance relationship girlfriend posed no threat to her. However, Giya now realized how much Gerald cared for her.

Gerald on the other hand, was filled with self-reproach at that moment.

He knew that the dragon jade bracelet was never his family's heirloom.

However, back at university that day, he couldn't just say that for fear that his identity would be exposed. His lies became the truth that day, at least for those who heard it.

He had lied because he had assumed back then that he was nothing but a loser compared to Giya, Tammy, and the others.

His logic was that there was no way that they would ever feel anything for him.

What more, lying wouldn't matter since he had also assumed that he would never have to contact any of them again once the jade bracelet had been handed over.

Never could he have imagined the complex chain of events that would soon follow and eventually lead to this very day.

Now here he was, in a room together with Giya. A Giya who had misunderstood his intentions from the moment he had given her the bracelet.

It was getting too messy. Gerald knew he couldn't hide the fact from Giya any longer. It was useless to even hide his identity from her at this point.

Gerald took in a deep breath before saying, "The truth is, Giya, I lied to you. The dragon jade bracelet is not a family heirloom like what you and the other girls thought. I bought two bracelets from the shop, the dragon jade bracelet being one of them. You were supposed to receive the other, as I just wanted to compensate for the one I broke."

"However, I somehow mixed the two up and gave you the wrong one," he said as he left the room. He came back soon after along with the two jade bracelets and placed them in front of Giya.

He didn't want Giya to believe the lie any longer. With the proof in front of her now, she definitely couldn't.

Giya bit her lower lip softly before smiling bitterly. She nodded slowly.

"So that's the entire story... No man would ever be that stupid and give his family heirloom to a girl he barely even knew! I guess I've just been overthinking everything!"

Gerald looked down with a sigh. The weight on his chest had been lifted. It felt relieving to finally be able to clear things up with her.

"Alright then Gerald, I won't be disturbing you anymore. I've given it some thought and I know that I'll only end up troubling you more by staying here. I really shouldn't worry my dad too much either. Though Yacob has numerous flaws, at least I can trust that he'll be sincere. I've decided. I'm going home now."

As soon as she ended her sentence, she stood up immediately and began packing her things up.

Giya had made up her mind. She would return home to be engaged to Yacob.

Gerald felt uneasy but who was he to stop her?

He had Mila now. What right did he have to have ambiguous relationships with other women? With that thought in his head, he chose not to stop her.

As he sent Giya off, he thought that the incident was now truly over.

He could finally focus all his attention on the investment of Serene County.

Sometime later, Gerald received a call...

Chapter 419

It was a call from Morgana.

She told him that the gathering for high school friends was going to be held that afternoon.

Morgana had simply called to remind him about the event and to tell him to be there early.

It had been three days since Gerald had last eaten a meal at Mead Hall.

So Giya had been gone for three days now.

Morgana had elaborated on the event the day before. Soon, many of their classmates would start their internships or work.

Therefore, the gathering was planned for old friends to catch up with one another while they were still here.

At first, Gerald had not wanted to participate. However, Gerald had attended an opening ceremony for a newly invested company the day before. As he was about to leave, he bumped into Morgana and a few others who had gone to the carnival to have some fun.

Tagging along with Morgana was another female high school friend by the name of Xella Jaquin.

She was their assistant monitor back then and she was definitely one of the class beauties. She was excellent in her academics as well. Similar to the old Sharon, she had always had a good relationship with Gerald who shared an equally good academic performance.

Gerald found out that Xella had returned to Serene County for future prospects. She seemed to have also found a nice job there.

The moment they saw Gerald, they tried their best to invite him over as well.

Gerald found it hard to reject so many people so he ended up promising that he would go.

After telling Morgana he hadn't forgotten, he hung up.

A few seconds later, he received a message on his phone. It was Xella.

"So when are we going, Gerald?"

Gerald knew that she lived in Serene County. Actually, it wasn't too far off from the hotel Gerald was currently staying in.

On the day they met, Gerald had joked that they should go to the gathering together.

However, he hadn't expected Xella to agree to that.

"I'll be right there soon!" replied Gerald.

"No need to rush. I need another forty minutes to wash my hair and some other things. Let's meet up at the Tranquil Road bus stop later!"

"No problem!"

Though Xella used to be the assistant class monitor, she was a quiet and gentle girl who rarely talked.

She just liked to study and her friends in class were mostly the more studious people.

A good example would be how she didn't like talking to people like Cameron—who had a powerful family background—and Waylon Letts—who was the wealthiest in class—since they were both quite mischievous. Money and power just weren't how she chose her friends.

Meeting her again, however, Gerald could see that Xella had undergone some big changes from when they had last met years ago.

The way she presented herself, she had become quite optimistic and capable. She was even able to joke with the others, much unlike her past self.

It seemed that girls would naturally change after experiencing different things in society.

Ignoring all that, something much more important was on Gerald's mind. He remembered back when he had an ambiguous relationship with Xella at the start of their junior year.

She had been with him not because of his charm.

Back then, Gerald was still considerably handsome. However, the things that mattered to her was his honesty and his studious nature. Adding to that, he also liked to listen to a group of girls—which she was a part of—when they told him things. As a result, an ambiguous relationship blossomed between the two.

However, his ambiguous relationship with Xella lasted only for a short while. It ended not too long after.

Shaking his head, he batted the old memories away before taking his car key out.

Gerald then drove his Mercedes-Benz G-Class to the Tranquil Road bus stop.

He didn't need to keep a low profile anymore since he was no longer in the university.

Besides, he wasn't driving the car to show off. He simply needed a vehicle to get somewhere.

He knew that there was a chance that Sharon and Lilian might be at the gathering as well. Though they didn't know who his true identity was, they at least already knew that he was rich. Knowing that, Gerald didn't think too much about them.

When he arrived at the bus stop, there was still half an hour left before the appointed time.

Since he still had some time before she arrived, he parked his car at a nearby parking lot.

He then went to a coffee shop to buy two cups of coffee before finally walking toward the bus stop to wait for Xella.

“Gerald?”

While sitting there, he heard a female voice call out to him.

Gerald turned around.

Before him, was a girl intimately locking arms with a man. Both of them were wearing sunglasses and they were dressed up fashionably.

Though her eyes were hidden, the rest of her face was beautiful. She even had a nice figure going for her. The man, on the other hand, looked slightly displeasing to the eye to be absolutely honest. He was short, plump, and ugly. His face was filled with pockmarks too.

Despite them looking like night and day, they appeared to be a couple.

Chapter 420

“What, it’s only been a few years, Gerald. Have you already forgotten about me?” said the girl as she removed her sunglasses.

“You’re Rae!” said Gerald, recognizing her immediately.

After hearing him say that, her partner took his sunglasses off as well. Gerald immediately realized who he was after that.

His name was Heath Seaver. His classmates liked calling him 'tycoon' since he definitely looked the part. He was actually quite rich back when they were still in school. However, he was also famously known for trying to gain the affection of up to ten girls back then, though he was rejected more than fifteen times.

How was that possible? It was because some of the girls rejected him twice!

The issue always boiled down to his face having too many pockmarks.

Aside from that, he had suffered from a high fever once when he was young, so his reactions were always a bit slower compared to the others.

When it came to bullying back then, the victims were always either Gerald or him. Both of them suffered the same misfortune.

And what about Rae Walker?

She had been a beauty even back then.

She was from the school's art team and she danced Latin just like Lilian.

However, compared to Lilian, she was way more attractive and seductive.

Gerald still remembered how much Rae had enjoyed herself during the schooling years. There were always several people trying to gain her affection. As a result, she had been in love many, many times.

Some of the boys she dated had rich family backgrounds and were quite famous in school.

Others were from the school's sports team. Back then, they all looked like they would become celebrities one day.

Rae had even dated handsome gangsters from outside their school before.

During that period, a few magnificent motorcycles could always be seen parked at the entrance of the school during weekends. It meant that she was going out on a date, and it always made for a spectacular scene.

It was a surprise to Gerald that she would end up being together with the tycoon after graduating from high school.

His surprise was obvious to them as his eyes were wide open.

“What are you staring at? Actually, I never expected to see you attending the gathering! It’s really been quite a while since we’ve last met!” said Rae as she placed a hand on Heath’s shoulder while rolling her eyes at Gerald.

“It truly has been. Both of you are even together now!” replied Gerald with a smile.

Rae simply sneered. “That’s right, we are. What about it? He loves me very much and that’s all that matters. He even owns a few shops in the county town!”

Gerald couldn’t tell whether she was trying to show off, but she really liked talking.

Seeing that he had gone quiet, Rae showed a smug expression on her face as she locked her arms with Heath’s again.

She could sense Gerald’s astonishment at how the tycoon and her were a couple now.

Gerald couldn’t deny that he was slightly jealous.

However, it wasn’t about love. Gerald and Heath were both losers at heart. However, one of them had a beautiful girlfriend now while the other remained the same.

With that in mind, anyone would be unhappy about that.

Rae enjoyed seeing Gerald's mood sour.

"Xella will be here soon. Let's go together!" said Gerald as he smiled bitterly while shaking his head.

Rae simply sneered again. "We're definitely not taking the bus. We're just waiting for our ride here. Jason and the others will be picking us up later. That's only because the tycoon hasn't had the time to get his driving license yet. Otherwise, we would have bought a car by now!" replied Rae.

"I see!"

It was unpleasant talking to her so he spent the remaining time chatting idly with them.

It was sometime later when he heard a female voice calling out to him.

"Gerald!"

Looking up, he saw her standing opposite the road, a parasol in hand. Her body appeared slim and tall, and her shoulder-length curls were red. She was walking toward him now.

The closer she came, the more attention she received from the other men waiting at the bus stop. Their eyes were glued onto her.

With her beauty and grace, who could blame them?

The woman who now stood before Gerald, was none other than Xella.

Chapter 421

"Here comes Xella!" said Rae as she and the others smiled toward Xella.

"Have you waited for a long time, Gerald?" asked Xella, smiling as she looked at him.

“Not at all!” replied Gerald.

Xella was dressed charmingly that day. She was certainly the kind of woman who could bewitch others with a single glance.

However, Gerald knew better and actively stopped himself from thinking unnecessary thoughts.

“Speaking of which, Xella, I looked at the group chat yesterday. The others were discussing how you had landed a great job. How did you manage to get into the Dream Investment Group? I heard that a billion dollars were required for the registered capital!” said Rae, a slight jealousy projected in her voice.

Initially, Rae was considered much better compared to her other classmates in the group.

Since she was now dating the tycoon whose family owned a few shops, she was considered quite well-to-do and she was proud of that.

She had a great life as well.

However, comparing herself to Xella, she felt like a small fry.

Everyone knew that the Dream Investment Group was established with the funds provided by Mr. Crawford from Mayberry. In the near future, it was planned to become a large development project in Serene County. Whoever managed to enter the group would continue their efforts even though they had to pay about one to two billion dollars that year.

Naturally, when the news was shared in the group chat, everyone became excited.

It was a sign that Serene County was going to undergo some drastic changes soon.

“I just so happened to be recruited by the company. I’m not too sure how its development will end up being and to be frank, I don’t have much confidence either. Besides, it’s not like I’m working in the

headquarters of Dream Investment Group. I'm just working in a subsidiary investment holding company under them, it's not as mysterious and good as most people say!" said Xyla as she smiled bitterly.

"That's still quite an exceptional post, Xella! You don't have to be modest!" replied Rae, her jealousy more apparent in her voice now.

Gerald on the other hand, was standing beside them and he appeared quite shocked.

So Xella had been recruited by a subsidiary company under Dream Investment Company.

And who owned the Dream Investment Company?

It was, of course, Gerald!

No wonder Xella and the others were there the other day! After completing the procedures for the opening ceremony, he had bumped into them in the main square just outside the hall.

Quite a few celebrities had attended the carnival the day before so it hadn't crossed Gerald's mind that Xella was involved with the Dream Investment Company.

With her role as an employee of the subsidiary company under Gerald's, it was definitely alright for her to bring along a few friends to enjoy themselves there.

Gerald couldn't help but think to himself, 'What a great coincidence!'

"Since we're all here, let's get on the bus together!" said Xella.

"It's fine, someone's picking us up later! Actually Xella, why don't you come with us instead?"

Just as Xella was about to reply, her phone started ringing.

The moment she picked up, she stepped to the side before saying something, a blush forming on her cheeks. She continued talking for a while before finally hanging up.

“Your boyfriend?” asked Gerald with a smile. He couldn’t help it, seeing her face all shy and flustered.

“What are you talking about? I’m single! That’s just a friend!” she replied with a smile though her voice was quivering awkwardly.

Gerald shook his head with a smile before fishing his car keys out. He was ready to drive her to the gathering.

All of a sudden, a new white Audi A4L could be seen and heard dashing toward the bus stop.

The brakes were slammed and the car stopped abruptly right next to the surprised crowd.

The car’s window was rolled down and a man in sunglasses poked his head out.

“Come on, Xella! Your classmates will be there soon! Let’s get there before them, just the two of us!” said the man.

Naturally, the car caught a lot of attention from the people who were waiting for the bus there.

As usual, the beautiful one would always get picked up by the rich kid.

This was what a few of the boys there thought as their inferiority complex sank in.

“Ah, hello Waylon. Is this the newest car you’ve bought?”

Chapter 422

Rae recognized the man and she bore a look of surprise on her face.

Seeing that Rae and the tycoon were there, Waylon was surprised as well.

He got out of his car and leaned against it with one hand in his pocket. He then smiled and said, "Bought it about half a month ago. I finally found a chance to drive it today!"

Waylon was another of Gerald's old classmates.

Back when they were still in school together, there were only two boys who were very rich and powerful. They still are today.

One of them was Cameron, whose family was related to the health department. The other was none other than Waylon.

Both Waylon and Cameron shared a good relationship back then. They enjoyed messing around during class.

Since the two of them had wealth and power, they both lived good lives even after graduating from high school.

However, Gerald was more interested in Waylon's relationship with Xella. The two of them had never had a good relationship, even quarreling with each other at times, at least as far as Gerald could remember. They now looked like they shared quite a good relationship.

As they were chatting with each other, Rae pointed at Gerald before saying, "Say, Waylon, Gerald's here too. Why don't you talk to him?"

Waylon then finally looked toward Gerald who had been standing beside them all this time.

"Oh goodness! If you hadn't told me about it, I really wouldn't have recognized him. You're here too, Gerald!" said Waylon as he smiled faintly.

Rae simply sneered at that. "What, have you forgotten already, Waylon? You once asked Gerald to lend you his workbook so that you could copy his answers. Gerald didn't let you so you took a chair and beat him up all the way from the platform to the back of the classroom. I remember him looking scared half to death back then since you did it so harshly," said Rae as she reminisced.

Gerald was placed in an extremely awkward position as soon as she said that.

He distinctly remembered that incident and it had been a reoccurring bad memory for him. Waylon was like a shadow in Gerald's heart since he always ridiculed Gerald openly. That wasn't the only time he had beaten Gerald up either.

It had been so traumatizing that whenever Gerald heard even his name, he grew instinctively frightened.

During that incident, both Xella and Sharon had quarreled fiercely with Waylon because they wanted to help Gerald.

Xella had even taken a textbook and smashed it on Waylon so that she could avenge Gerald.

It was an unpleasant experience as a whole and Gerald could only reply with a bitter smile.

However, Waylon was indifferent to the situation and simply changed the topic. "Well, that's enough chit chat. When I called Xella earlier I thought she was going to be here alone. It turns out that all of you were here waiting for the bus! Either way, come on Xella, let's go."

'Xella must have been afraid that I would misunderstand earlier, so that's why she answered the call secretly' Gerald thought to himself.

It wasn't really necessary. Gerald didn't care, quite honestly.

However, she had promised and agreed that they would be going to the gathering together. As it turned out, she had both Gerald and Waylon waiting to take her there. That was the only thing that slightly troubled Gerald.

“Sure. Let’s go in Waylon’s car together, Gerald. You don’t have to take the bus too!” said Xella as she blushed slightly while looking toward Gerald.

In their minds, the tycoon and Rae had added themselves to the picture. ‘Imagine riding in an Audi! That would feel so good! We could even deepen our relationship with Waylon! How nice!’

“I’m afraid that just won’t be possible. I need to pick up another classmate later and if Gerald joins, there won’t be any space in the car left!” said Waylon, a grimace on his face as he stepped into his car.

Xella was now sitting beside Waylon who had just gotten into the driver’s seat.

This made Xella feel even more awkward. “I... see... Then... What should we do then?”

“How about this, Gerald can just hail a taxi since it’ll only cost about ten dollars!” replied Waylon.

“You don’t need to do that! Aren’t there Ofo bikes by the street? Just scan one then ride the bike to the gathering!” said Rae.

“D*mn! That’s just too pathetic!” Waylon then burst out laughing.

Once he stopped, he said, “Let’s just meet later at the hotel then, Gerald.”

After that, he just drove off without saying another word.

Xella had wanted to say something to Gerald but in the end, she couldn’t bring herself to say anything. She could only roll up the car’s window.

She sighed internally. ‘What else could I have said...’

Once they left, several people were already looking at Gerald pitifully. A few others simply sniggered.

'That Gerald guy there was clearly being looked down upon. He's so pitiful!' That was what almost everyone there was thinking at that moment.

However, Gerald didn't let it bother him. He simply smiled in resignation before walking to the parking lot beside the bus stop.

He passed by the bus stop as his Mercedes-Benz G-Class drove swiftly toward the venue of the gathering.

Chapter 423

Once he had parked his car, Gerald entered the private room. Almost half of his classmates were already there.

There were about twenty people and the atmosphere was quite lively.

The dining table that they had booked was huge as well.

Most of the students there only greeted Gerald casually before turning to look away and continuing talking among themselves.

To them, Gerald was simply a poor loser so he was naturally easy to be ignored.

Going back to Gerald, there was one thing that surprised him.

Both Lilian and Sharon were nowhere to be seen.

"By the way, Waylon, why aren't Lilian and Sharon here? Didn't they say they would join us?"

Similar to Gerald, some of the other classmates were also puzzled.

Waylon simply smiled faintly. "They won't be joining us. They're not the same as they used to be. They've entered rich and powerful circles. They're arguably the most powerful among us! Why would they ever attend such a small event such as this?"

"Oh my, is that really true? What else do you know, Waylon?" asked Xella who was sitting beside him. Her curiosity had gotten the better of her.

"Well, Sharon's found herself quite a powerful boyfriend in Mayberry. Do any of you know about Yorknorth Mountain Entertainment City?" said Waylon as he lit a cigarette.

"Of course we all do! It's net famous! Yorknorth Mountain is going to be developed and transformed into a tourism, food, and culture focused city. Literally everyone has heard about it!"

"Well, Sharon's boyfriend came from Yorknorth Village, though the village has now been demolished. But that's beside the point. See, her boyfriend's family owns a few shops on the commercial street in Yorknorth Mountain Entertainment City. The amount of money they'll be earning in the future will be almost impossible to calculate!"

"Holy cr*p! They sound really powerful!"

Hearing that, everyone was astounded.

"Her boyfriend's name is Hayward, and he's quite famous in Mayberry. I had visited Mayberry last month for a little entertainment and fun. I called Sharon while I was there and met up with her boyfriend too. We had a meal together and exchanged contact information too," said Waylon rather proudly.

"D*mn Waylon! You're so great!"

"Back when we were in school, Waylon and Cameron were equally influential and powerful! Waylon still is! How about you Cameron? No news from you? You've got to work harder!" teased a few girls who were sitting casually beside Cameron.

A hint of jealousy could be seen in Cameron's eyes.

Cameron knew that he couldn't compare himself to Waylon.

This was especially true now since Waylon had already grown to know a lot of people from Mayberry whereas Cameron's contacts were only limited to those from the health department.

Thinking about it made Cameron both anxious and restless.

He felt like he was being humiliated.

"Hey, hey, don't say that! Cameron's a great guy too! If your family or relatives work in hospitals or something close to that you can just give Cameron a call! Come over here Cameron! The guest of honor seat is yours to claim!"

Waylon was already sitting on the main seat while Xella was sitting to his left as the secondary guest of honor. The only seat left was reserved for the guest of honor so who else could sit there other than Cameron?

"But Waylon, wouldn't it be better for you to take the guest of honor seat? You're definitely the most powerful among us here! Besides, I'll let all of you know something. Waylon's company has also received funding from the Dream Investment Group!" said a classmate as he smiled while looking at Waylon.

Waylon was enjoying himself. He felt smug that the others knew about his achievements.

When his other classmates heard that, their eyes widened as they turned to look toward Waylon.

"They are companies that belong to my family, so they're none of my business. I've established my own company but it's still quite useless since I've yet to yield any results!" said Waylon while smiling bitterly.

Many of his classmates were both jealous and envious of him.

His declaration only made Cameron feel more and more inferior.

As he smiled awkwardly, he suddenly noticed Gerald who had been sitting near the door. With a cold smile on his face, he said, "Speaking of which, Waylon. We shouldn't just pass the seat of honor among ourselves. Gerald should be the rightful one sitting there!"

Cameron had had enough. He was annoyed and he didn't want to be compared to Waylon anymore so he changed the topic to Gerald.

"What? You're suggesting Gerald take it?" said a random classmate as he burst out laughing.

Cameron simply sneered.

"Of course he should. You may not know it, but Gerald's quite close with our Serene County's Louie. We met two days ago at a restaurant and Louie even wanted to pay the bill for Gerald!"

Chapter 424

Cameron smiled coldly as he said that.

"What? Very funny, Cameron! As if Louie could ever be acquainted with Gerald!"

"I know right? The difference between Louie and Gerald's status is synonymous with comparing a planet with some dirt!"

"You can choose not to believe me, but Xella knows it's true. She saw it too!"

As he looked at Xella, she simply nodded in agreement.

"Well, d*mn!"

At that moment, several of the classmates began looking at Gerald in a slightly different light.

However, there were also a few others who turned to look at Waylon.

Everyone was aware of the incident where Waylon had severely beaten Gerald up back in high school.

Gerald was somehow rich now, and he was even well acquainted with Louie who was known for having a good rapport with both good and bad guys. How would Waylon respond to that? What kind of face would he make?

On Waylon's face was a scornful and bitter smile. "So what if he knows Louie? Also, I'm assuming that most of you don't know about this, but Louie was beaten up by someone in a KTV a few days ago. His father was even warned by that person. What more, their Lourdes Mining Group shares are being taken over by someone else as well! With that in mind, do you still think that Louie is that f*cking great?" said Waylon.

Waylon then continued sharing other information that he had heard regarding what had happened to the Lourdes.

By the time he was done, everyone was finally able to see the entire picture.

"You know Gerald, you look like an honest person! But in the end, you got acquainted with such a person! I would never have expected you to be like that, Gerald!" said Waylon with a smug smile before he continued.

"Are you surprised at how I know all this, Gerald? Unlike some people, I'm not afraid to tell others about these things! See, the person who had framed the Lourdes this time around was none other than the powerful boss from Mayberry, Zack Lyle. He did something to them and whatever he had done, it made them obedient to him. Some time ago, my dad had a meal with Jaxon, more commonly known as Mr. Lyle's driver. During the meal, Jaxon became so drunk that he ended up telling my dad about it. I was present during that meal and Jaxon even patted me on the shoulder and told me to work harder. I've even received his permission to give him a call should anything happen!"

Waylon ended his sentence with a faint smile.

The others were all dumbfounded.

“Mr. Lyle’s driver? Your father knows Mr. Lyle’s driver, Waylon?”

Everyone there knew who Zack Lyle was. It was literally impossible not to know about him if you were from Mayberry.

He was an extremely powerful and influential businessman.

His driver must be very well to do as well!

“Yeah, my dad’s had a few meals with him before. Jaxon’s quite a dominant man. You know, I think that we really should have more gatherings like this in the future. If any of you need any help, I’ll definitely lend you a hand. And don’t just think I’m sitting here telling lies either! Have a look at this photograph! Took it while I had that meal with Jaxon and my dad!”

Waylon then held his phone out to show the picture to everyone.

Curious, Gerald took a look at it too.

It was indeed, Jaxon Sanders in the photograph.

In it, he could be seen dressed up nicely and wearing an expensive-looking watch.

It was surprising to Gerald, to say the least. He would never have expected to see Jaxon like that.

In the past, Zack had always assigned Jaxon to be Gerald’s chauffeur when Gerald went to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. Gerald had been quite close to Jaxon.

He had initially thought that Jaxon was an honest and sincere man, as he presented himself as a simple and plain person whenever Gerald saw him in the past.

To Gerald's surprise, he was actually a quite dominant man.

Not that there was anything wrong with that. Everyone had a private life after all.

"So don't think that Louie is some kind of big shot. The people who fawn over him aren't going to be of any use to you either. Just find me if you have any trouble!"

Waylon then peeked at Gerald before looking toward Xella.

"And Xella, don't you worry! I'll help you deal with that person from your company today. No matter what it takes, I'll help you resolve that issue!"

"Hmm? You're facing troubles at your company Xella?" asked Rae.

Gerald's ears perked at Rae's question and he looked at Xella as well.

Chapter 425

"Yeah, come on Xella, tell us. What's wrong?" asked a few of the classmates curiously.

Xella nodded before she began sharing an incident that had happened to her in great detail.

Not too long after, Gerald's curiosity was sated.

It turned out that not long after she had been recruited by the company, her superior began constantly harassing her. The superior in question was a deputy manager of one of the departments.

According to Xella's description, the deputy manager was a balding man who had lost all his hair around the crown of his head. He looked quite old and obscene in general.

Initially, he hadn't dared to do much. He simply asked Xella out to have meals with him.

After rejecting him several times, Xella eventually found it difficult to continue doing so. Hence, she finally decided to accept and have a meal with him one day.

From that day onward, the man became more perverted and daring.

He constantly called Xella to his office. At the start, he would only say imprudent things to her from time to time. Now, things were getting physical and it was not uncommon for him to use both his hands and legs to harass her.

About two days before the carnival, the deputy manager had called Xella to come over. This resulted in her thigh being caressed by him.

She was so nervous at the time that she instinctively picked a glass of water up and poured it all over the deputy manager.

Now, she was being threatened to be fired. He wanted her to obey him, otherwise she would have to resign from the company. She was told to be sensible and act accordingly as well.

After that incident, Xella ended up telling Waylon about what had happened.

Only Waylon was powerful and influential enough to set the deputy manager straight. Help from her classmates was also welcome.

"Well d*mn! Now I really want to beat up that old pervert! How dare he bully our goddess!" shouted some of the men indignantly.

"That's the spirit! However, we women really need to learn how to better protect ourselves. We're always being harassed and bullied. You know, a few people who didn't know about my connections or background had constantly requested me to do things for them back when I first arrived at the hospital.

Once they got to know who my boyfriend was, nobody tried anything funny with me anymore!" said Morgana.

"I know right? Speaking of which, Xella, you and Sharon were both equally the most beautiful girls in our class during our school days. Sharon's already found herself a good and powerful boyfriend so you should definitely do the same! Find yourself a man like that who cherishes you and you'll bump into way fewer problems like this in the future!" added Rae.

Xella only blushed slightly at this before looking toward the floor.

"Don't worry, Xella. After today's gathering ends I'll resolve the issue for you! He's just a deputy manager after all!" said Waylon confidently.

"Waylon I just want you to scare him a little so that he'll stop bothering me, please don't do anything unnecessary!" replied Xella with a slightly worried tone.

"Don't worry, I know what I'm doing!"

"If you want to scare him off, you need to look no further! Gerald's here and he can easily ask Louie to help with that!" said Cameron as he looked at Gerald.

Gerald looked back at him and could only give a cold smile as the others burst out laughing.

It was a rare moment for Gerald to have finally found someone equally fun, good, and capable. However, it didn't matter in the end.

Xella looked toward Gerald for a brief moment before averting her gaze and looking back at Waylon.

Her answer was quite obvious.

Back in high school, Xella had shared quite a good relationship with Gerald, up to the point where she actively defended him from Waylon.

Now, however, she was much closer to Waylon.

Waylon was naturally considered to be the most powerful among the classmates and he had a lot more connections and resources compared to the others as well. Gerald had nothing except for Louie, as far as the people there knew.

Gerald could understand her reasoning and couldn't fully blame her.

After experiencing enough in society, ordinary people usually concluded that money and resources were much more important than actual friendship.

Gerald was honestly slightly upset since it happened to someone he had treated like a close friend before.

However, Gerald chose to not say anything about it.

He simply looked at the others when the topic was changed to ridicule him again.

Chapter 426

After a while, Gerald stood up and went to the washroom.

Not long after he had entered the gents, Xella stood up to head to the washroom herself.

After washing his hands, Gerald bumped into Xella who had also left the bathroom at the same time.

The meeting was awkward, to say the least.

"Speaking of which, I haven't had a chance to properly talk with you. How've you been recently?" said Xella with a bright smile as she tried to conceal her awkwardness.

She knew how her relationship with Gerald was like in the past, and she was also very aware of the conflicts between Gerald and Waylon.

However, now she had become quite close to Waylon. Even if he didn't say it, Gerald would definitely not feel alright with that.

"Not bad!" said Gerald as he wiped his hands dry with some tissue paper.

"I heard that you haven't found a job yet, is that true? Do you have any plans for the future?" asked Xella.

"I plan to make a name for myself," replied Gerald honestly.

Xella frowned slightly at that before shaking her head with a faint smile on her face. "Listen Gerald, I really suggest that you go look for a job. It doesn't matter what kind of job you get. You know very well that you're different from the others!"

"Or, you could even try to please Waylon. He's started his own company and he's looking for people to hire. If you want, I could put in a word for you so that he'll be more willing to take you in! The basic salary is around three hundred dollars a month and that's better than nothing!" advised Xella.

"I appreciate it, but I'll have to refuse," said Gerald as he smiled.

Xella simply sighed. "Gerald, I know that Waylon beat you up badly back then, but he was young so please try to understand. Why don't you try looking at it this way? If you had let him copy your answers then he wouldn't have beaten you up! Now that you've graduated from university, who knows? He may be willing to lend a hand!" continued Xella.

"I don't take that incident to heart anymore. Also, regarding the issue with your deputy manager. All you need to do is to tell your manager or report the incident to the other superiors at your company. They'll definitely punish him severely!"

The manager and several of the superiors there were originally staff from Mayberry International Inc. so Gerald knew about their capabilities and virtues well. They would definitely not allow any sort of harassment to continue.

Xella simply looked at Gerald for a while before smiling bitterly and shaking her head. "You don't know much about what goes on at my workplace. You don't have to bother about it anymore. Anyway, it's been nice talking to you again, and thank you, Gerald!"

After ending her sentence, she simply waved at Gerald before turning away and leaving.

It made Gerald feel that Xella herself was quite a strange person.

It was just like back when he had met Sharon. She had acted strangely to him as well.

Feeling disappointed, Gerald began walking back himself.

Less than two dozen steps later, he saw that Xella's path had been blocked by a middle-aged man. The man was even trying to hold her hand.

"What are you doing, Mr. Zabel?" said Xella as she moved her hand away from his.

"Xella, I was planning to have my meal here today. I didn't expect to bump into you. Since we're both here, why not have a drink with me? I can introduce some colleagues from our company to you!" said Mr. Zabel, lust reflected in his eyes.

"Come now. Stop trying to leave or I'll get angry soon!" he said.

"Let go of her!"

At that moment, a loud, angry roar could be heard.

Chapter 427

The roar had come from none other than Waylon himself who had just left the private room.

Earlier, another girl had left for the washroom but as she was about to exit the private room, she saw a man blocking Xella's path.

Once Waylon learned about the fact, he immediately got up and headed toward the washroom alongside a few others.

"What's this? A group of uncouth b*stards! Who're you yelling at?"

Though perverted, Mr. Zabel was certainly no small fry. His expression was cold as he asked the question.

"That girl's my classmate. Why are you blocking her path?" asked Waylon, unafraid.

Xella was so frightened that she instinctively hid behind Waylon.

"Xella, I'll go ahead and say this. The colleagues waiting for me this time around are no ordinary people. If you know what's best for yourself, follow me. Also, why don't you tell these b*stards who I am?" replied Mr. Zabel, his arms folded behind his back.

"Waylon... His name is Charlie Zabel... And he's the deputy manager of my department!" said Xella.

"D*mn! So this is the guy!"

Waylon had initially decided to deal with Charlie that afternoon. However, Charlie had been kind enough to show up in front of Waylon! Good, he didn't need to waste any time looking for him!

Xella clearly had not expected to bump into that old pervert here either.

Waylon sneered before saying, “How convenient. I had planned to go looking for you but here you are, Mr. Zabel. Let’s have a chat, shall we? First of all, do you know who I am? My dad is Spencer Leets! My family owns Queenzon Enterprise! The biggest company in Serene County!”

Hearing that, Charlie’s heart skipped a beat.

He definitely knew about Queenzon Enterprise.

In the past, it had just been an ordinary company. Now, however, things were completely different.

Due to Queenzon Enterprise’s high environmental protection standards, they had gained funding from the Dream Investment Group.

One could even say that it’s one of Dream Investment Group’s development projects.

The Leets family’s status greatly benefitted from this, and they now enjoyed a powerful and influential status in Serene County.

Similarly, Mr. Zabel had also received funding from the group. However, as a mere deputy manager of a company, he still needed to think and behave properly.

“Ah, do you’re from the Letts! But Mr. Letts, I have some business to attend to with Xella which only concerns our company. It would be inappropriate for you to intervene in such private affairs, don’t you think?” said Charlie coldly.

His company’s percentage of investment was much higher than the factory and company belonging to Queenzon Enterprise. Comparing the two, Charlie’s company was definitely a more important asset for the Dream Investment Group. Charlie didn’t have to be too scared when it came to the aspect of power and background.

“Oh, but I do wish to intervene. No matter what you say!”

Waylon spoke without filtering his words, projecting his assertiveness in the situation.

Things got physical soon after due to both men feeling the need to protect their pride.

Waylon was first to attack. He rushed toward Charlie and began punching him without even flinching.

Seeing that, Cameron and the others began taking action as well.

In their minds, they all thought that the deputy manager was not as powerful and influential as Waylon's family.

In the end, Charlie was beaten up quite severely.

Xella had been standing beside them the entire time, trying to get them to stop fighting but to no avail.

"You absolute b*stards! How dare all of you! Just you wait!" Charlie shouted with a hand on his bruised cheek as he ran away in a rather pitiful manner.

Not too long after, a group of people rushed out of Charlie's own private room.

The leader of the group seemed to be a middle-aged man in a suit.

"Who was it who started it all?" asked the leader, coldly.

Charlie immediately pointed at both Waylon and Cameron before whispering something into the leader's ear.

The man simply sneered. "Like I care whose son he is! Today's my first day reporting to duty at your company as a senior executive! These brats need to be taught a lesson, otherwise, they'll think we're small fries that can be bullied easily!"

While the tensions continued to heighten, Gerald simply continued standing at the side. He really didn't know whose side he should be on now.

On one hand, Waylon was definitely a useless, rich brat but he was efficient when it came to fighting.

On the other, the middle-aged man was clearly not any saint either.

As Gerald thought to himself, someone from Charlie's group smashed a wine bottle against Waylon's head. Blood soon started dripping down his face.

"Hey! Stop fighting! Cease this!"

Noticing how bad the situation already was, Gerald quickly rushed forward along with a few other men. They tried to persuade both teams to stop fighting.

After all, those people who were beating the others up were Gerald's subordinates. On the other hand, Waylon was the one who was being beaten up. Although Waylon could almost be considered as Gerald's enemy, it was imprudent to cause such a great mess since they were having a gathering that day.

It was something that just shouldn't happen that day.

Charlie's subordinates finally stopped beating up Waylon after the staff from the hotel gave their cooperation to stop the fight. Charlie then paid the bill and left the hotel in a huff, surrounded by the people from his company.

"Oh no, what are we going to do? Waylon, you're bleeding!" said Rae, extremely frightened.

"They're the first bunch of b*stards who have ever dared to beat me up. I'm calling my dad! Those b*stards are going to pay a terrible price for this!" shouted Waylon, his eyes bloodshot.

Gerald had observed how Waylon had fought earlier. He was clearly someone who would never allow himself to accept loss or defeat that easily.

Chapter 428

Due to his father's power and influence, Waylon had always done as he pleased, acting smugly and arrogantly in front of all his classmates.

It had never occurred to him that Charlie's subordinate could act even fiercer. They had even severely beaten him up.

At that moment, Waylon was a wreck both physically and emotionally.

"He needs medical attention immediately!" shouted Morgana before taking her phone out and calling for an ambulance.

The ambulance soon arrived and since Morgana herself was a clinician, she entered the ambulance as well to help bandage his wounds. She left for the hospital together with Waylon.

"Waylon was beaten up and now he's being sent to the hospital... What should we do?"

"Let's just leave for now... What if those madmen come back with reinforcements?"

"You're right! They don't seem like ordinary people..."

The classmates continued discussing the situation among themselves, all of them quite indecisive on whether pride or safety was more important.

Since no immediate conclusion was achieved, they all turned to look at Cameron.

Cameron looked back at them, dumbfounded.

Cameron had been lying on the floor throughout most of the second half of the fight. He had been kicked down and he stayed there. He was afraid of fighting back the moment he found out that the leader was some kind of senior executive.

It was also the reason why only Waylon was beaten up when the fight began again.

He had initially been worried but seeing how everyone was expecting him to make the next decision, he soon became smug again.

“Everyone remain calm! Let’s just head to the hospital first. Waylon’s father will definitely be going there as well!” said Cameron.

The rest of his classmates agreed and they all headed toward the hotel’s underground parking lot together.

For a brief moment, Gerald was too stunned to move but he simply shook his head before heading downstairs to get his own car as well.

‘These people seriously like making a mountain out of a molehill! If Xella had only reported it to her superiors, none of this would have happened! Charlie would definitely be dealt with easily!’

‘All she needed to do was give me a call and everything would’ve ended just like that!’

‘What a mess this has become...’ These were the thoughts going on in Gerald’s mind.

All of them were now in the parking lot.

“Alright, we have four cars with us now. Who else drove here?” asked Cameron.

At that moment, Xella started crying out loud.

“I’m so sorry everyone! It’s my problem but I pulled you all into it as well!”

Xella wailed, a terrible guilt weighing on her heart.

“How could we blame you Xella? I witnessed the old pervert blocking your way with my own eyes! What more, Gerald had been standing beside you but he didn’t do anything! If he had done something, maybe all of this wouldn’t have happened! It’s all his fault!”

“That’s right! If anyone’s to blame it should be Gerald! Don’t blame yourself! Let’s just get into the car and head to the hospital now!” said Rae.

The classmates then began entering the available cars. Xella herself got into Cameron’s car.

“Oh god, look! Gerald’s here too!”

At that moment, everyone finally took notice of Gerald who had just arrived at the parking lot.

“What’s that idiot doing down here? All the seats in the available cars have been filled! Didn’t he come here by hailing a taxi?” asked a female classmate coldly.

“That’s right! Since you took a taxi here why are you down here with us? Were you planning on joining us in a car? You won’t be of any use even if you come along with us! Just hail a taxi and stop blocking our path here!” said Rae with a cold sneer.

Xella simply glanced at Gerald though she said nothing else before looking away.

“Don’t bother about him, Cameron. Is your car or Waylon’s faster?” asked Rae as she rolled her eyes while looking at Gerald.

“They’re almost the same! We’ll be heading out first! Sit tight!” shouted Cameron as he stepped on the pedal, sending the car lunging forward.

What followed was a loud bang.

Cameron had not held on to the steering wheel firmly enough. His car had crashed against the back of a white car that had been parked in front of them.

The hood of Cameron's car was lifted. It looked like it had been badly damaged.

"F*ck!" yelled Cameron in shock.

All of them got out of his car and Rae immediately started screaming. Her mouth was covered with her hands in shock.

"Cameron. Cameron look! I think you crashed into a Mercedes-Benz G500!"

"What? How could that be?"

Most of the other classmates didn't think too much about it. To them, it just felt impossible that such a luxurious car would even be in Serene County.

However, when they approached the car, Rae had unfortunately been correct. It really was a Mercedes-Benz G-Class...

Chapter 429

"F*ck! A Mercedes-Benz G-Class is worth more than three hundred thousand dollars!" shouted a classmate in a worried voice.

Though the two cars had collided, the Mercedes-Benz G-Class had suffered much less compared to Cameron's own car.

However, if compensation was required, Cameron knew he had to fork out at least a hundred thousand dollars. He quivered slightly in fear.

“I’m so sorry Cameron! If it wasn’t for me you wouldn’t have hit that car!” wailed Xella as another burden was added to her heart.

She sighed internally while holding back her tears. ‘If it wasn’t for me, none of these incidents would have happened today...’

‘Waylon’s been beaten up, and now Cameron’s just crashed into another car when he was just trying to send me to the hospital to visit Waylon! What can we even do now?’

Xella’s mind was filled with negativity and it only made her feel more flustered and agitated than she already was.

The others were starting to feel afraid as well. They began discussing how to resolve the issue regarding the expensive car.

“Just go ahead, it’s no big deal. Go to the hospital, all of you!” said Gerald with a sigh while he slid his hands into his pockets.

It was quite unfortunate but of course, the car Cameron had crashed into was Gerald’s.

His Lamborghini was hit by someone and now his Mercedes-Benz G-Class faced the same fate. Was he really that unlucky?

Though it was his car that had been hit, he found it difficult to ask them for a maintenance fee, given how terrified they all already looked thinking about how much money they would have to fork out.

“For f*cks sake! Do you even understand the value of this car, Gerald? This is a Mercedes-Benz G-Class! Who would dare to just leave like that! If the owner of this car ever found out who we were, we would definitely have to pay an even heavier price! Do you even understand half of what I’m saying?!” shouted Rae, her anxiety now in high gear.

“Let’s calm down and think about this. How about we all wait here for the driver. When they arrive, we’ll apologize sincerely to them and with any luck, they might let us leave if they’re satisfied with just that,” suggested one of the girls.

“That’s the best idea we have at the moment. It definitely beats leaving the car like this!”

This seemed to be what the majority agreed with.

Some of the girls even had other things on their minds. They wanted to see whether the driver was a handsome young man.

“Say, Cameron, why don’t you leave with the others first? I’ll stay behind and wait for the driver. I’ll settle the issue of the maintenance fee!” said Xella out of the blue.

Although she didn’t have much money, she couldn’t just allow Cameron to pay for the maintenance fee all on his own.

“No way, we can’t just leave you here! How about this, everyone, please try to use your connections to see if you can find out who owns the car. Maybe someone you know may know who the owner is!” suggested Rae.

The idea was approved by almost everyone there and they began taking action.

“One of my cousins works in the construction zone. I’ll ask him!”

“My uncle is responsible for the housing and building projects. He knows quite a lot of people too. Let me ask him!”

“My uncle’s a teacher. He’ll know a lot of people as well!”

Several of them started calling up whatever relevant connections they knew of.

Xella herself joined in on the effort.

“You guys. You really don’t have to do this, just listen to me! Get going now!” Gerald was getting more and more perplexed at how complicated this simple thing was turning into.

“And what? Let you handle it? What could a loser like you even do!”

“You barely have any common sense in you!”

Before they could continue mocking him, the Mercedes-Benz G-Class made a sound.

Gerald had given up trying to explain. He had retrieved his car key and pressed a button on it. The lights of the car flashed for a moment following the sound of the car unlocking.

At that moment, everyone present was stupefied.

“...What?”

“What the hell?”

Some of the girls couldn’t hold back their shock and accidentally shouted out whatever was on their minds.

Even Xella put down her phone as she looked toward Gerald in immense shock.

All of them were in utter disbelief.

‘How could that Mercedes-Benz G-Class belong to Gerald?’

‘Didn’t he hail a taxi to get here?’

'Isn't he a pauper?'

Everyone had the same questions in their heads. It was nothing short of astounding.

By the time everyone had gotten back to their senses, Gerald had already driven his car out of the parking space. The car had not been severely damaged and he made a mental note that he would find an automobile sales service shop later to get any dents repaired.

Chapter 430

Whatever the case was, Cameron's car certainly wasn't going to be driving anyone anywhere with that damaged hood.

Everything that had gone wrong had stemmed from Xella, but there really was no use crying over spilled milk.

Besides, Gerald didn't think that it was appropriate to just leave them like that. They were friends in the past after all.

"Come on, get into my car. I'll give you a ride to the hospital!" said Gerald calmly.

This new mature and calm Gerald felt quite strange to the others.

Thinking back, no wonder he seemed so calm and casual earlier when he was talking to them at the bus stop.

They honestly hadn't paid much attention to his demeanor then since they thought he was still a loser.

However, now when they paid more attention to the way he spoke, they found that his tone sounded cold and composed as opposed to the old Gerald they knew. It was somewhat awe worthy.

"Gerald! Is... Is this your car?" asked Rae, her eyes wide open.

“Yep. It’s still pretty new,” replied Gerald as he nodded slowly.

“Why are you talking so casually about a Mercedes-Benz G-Class?! My god! Who would have ever thought that Gerald would buy such an expensive car!” said Rae, almost jumping in excitement.

“Um... Gerald? Can I ride in your car?”

“Sure, why not.”

“Oh god. I get to ride in a Mercedes-Benz G-Class!” Rae squealed as she clapped her hands happily before getting into the car.

Xella simply stood at the side, her face flushed red.

‘Well this is embarrassing... I even advised him to get a job just now but to think that he’s doing so well! He even has a Mercedes-Benz G-Class!’

‘We had promised to meet each other at the bus stop yet I left for the gathering without him... So it turns out he had wanted to drive us there in his car!’

“Come on Xella, we don’t have all day,” said Gerald with a smile. He could see that Xella was clearly feeling embarrassed.

Though she hesitated at first, she nodded slowly before getting into the seat next to Gerald’s.

The car was full by the time Gerald began driving off to the hospital.

On their way there, Rae had rolled down the window and poked her head out to take several photographs.

“So Gerald, how did you manage to afford this car? Have you become rich?” asked Rae curiously while her head was still outside the car.

“I didn’t buy this car. I attended an event and I just so happened to win it!” said Gerald honestly.

The car that he had bought—his Lamborghini—was still parked at Mountain Top.

“Ah. So it’s just a grand prize,” said Rae, a slight disappointment in her voice.

Aside from Rae, the other girls were also already planning their next moves.

None of them had boyfriends yet.

Even if Gerald wasn’t actually rich, selling the car alone would instantly grant him three hundred thousand dollars. With that kind of money, they could buy a house and an ordinary car. In other words, a standard well-to-do family.

As they thought about this, some of the girls began developing feelings for Gerald.

However, Xella’s reaction was the complete opposite.

When she heard that the car was only a gift, her surprise instantly disappeared.

Instead of surprise, she now felt only ridicule.

So it was just a prize... At that moment, she concluded in her mind that the reason Gerald had promised to meet her today was to just show off the car that he had won.

Waylon was different. He definitely had the money and capabilities needed to buy himself the Audi A4. Thus, whatever regret she had toward Gerald ceased entirely at that moment.

“Still, I never would have thought that you’d own a Mercedes-Benz G-Class! Ignoring how you actually acquired the car, you’re still a rich person now! Why did you keep such a low profile at the gathering earlier? You should show off a little!” said Rae in a flattering tone.

“Do rich people need to show off? I don’t like looking down on others because even though some people may look ordinary, they may be the only people who can help you one day!”

Gerald was talking like Mr. Crawford.

The girls, however, didn’t agree with his statement.

Xella frowned as well, averting her gaze out the window with a tinge of disgust reflected in her eyes.

Since he was greeted only by silence, Gerald stopped talking as well.

It wasn’t long before they reached the hospital.

By the time they arrived, all of Waylon’s wounds had been bandaged. He was on the phone talking to someone when his classmates entered his ward.

“Hey Jaxon, my dad called you earlier. I’m in the hospital right now, could you please come over for a bit? I heard from my dad that they’re quite a difficult bunch to deal with!”

Chapter 431

Waylon was definitely asking Jaxon for help.

However, before they could hear about the specifics, Waylon had already hung up. This was because he had noticed Xella and the rest entering the room.

“I’m so sorry Waylon! It’s all my fault!” said Xella apologetically.

“What are you talking about Xella? I was just caught by surprise when they started beating us up without even making the situation clear first! Don’t worry, my dad’s subordinates are dealing with them right now! My dad’s heard about your troubles as well!” said Waylon in a fierce voice.

Xella was just about to say something when her phone began ringing.

Taking in a deep breath, she answered it. It was only a brief talk and she hung up not long after.

“...It’s all over now! The call was from my president and he informed me that I was fired!” said Xella weakly.

She knew that she had just lost her chance of having a great career. Since she was now fired, she would no longer be able to enter any excellent subsidiary companies or investment in companies under the Dream Investment Group.

It was all gone.

“...What? You were fired?”

Somehow Waylon had never considered that possibility. At first, all he wanted to do was to show off his capabilities in front of Xella.

His goal was to make her admire and fall in love with him.

He had fought and taken a beating to help her but not only did that fail to resolve Xella’s issue, it only increased her burdens since she was now essentially jobless.

“Waylon... what should we do now? It definitely feels like they’ll continue to harass Xella!” asked Rae, being the meddling person she was.

“Don’t forget! We still have Waylon’s father on our side! He’s definitely much more powerful than some deputy manager!” sneered a male classmate as he analyzed the situation.

At that moment, Waylon's phone rang.

He picked it up immediately.

"How is it, dad? ...What did you say? Oh god. Alright, I got it. What about me? Alright, dad. I get it!"

When he finally hung up, his face was pale and his hand was trembling so much that the phone dropped onto the bed.

"...Waylon? What's wrong?" asked Xella, concerned.

"...It's all over for me. The person who had beaten me up was the senior executive from the headquarters. Though dad wanted to manipulate his connections with Jaxon, in the end, Jaxon is just a driver. He's definitely not as influential as that senior executive... What more, the senior executive has worked for Mr. Michael Zeke before... He's Mr. Zeke's loyal confidant! Even Jaxon doesn't want to get involved in this. My dad's begging them now and he called to tell me to apologize to that deputy manager tonight!"

Waylon wiped the cold sweat off his forehead with his sleeve.

Xella was in utter dismay.

So it turns out that Waylon was also in deep trouble.

"Also Xella... My dad told me... told all of us not to act too rashly anymore... Charlie had harassed you in the company. The issue could have been solved easily with you filing a complaint to your superiors... They'd definitely punish that pervert severely once they find out about his misdeeds... All that we've done today has only made the situation much, much worse... Nothing is going right. I'm in deep trouble now and you lost your job too!" said Waylon in an uncharacteristically soft tone. He was finally speaking like a humble person now.

Hearing that, Xella felt as if someone had given her the exact same advice before...

As her view panned across the wardroom, she noticed Gerald standing by the door. Of course. It was exactly as Gerald had advised her to do when they had met outside the washrooms earlier.

Before this, she had thought that Gerald was inexperienced. She had even disapproved of his suggestion...

In the end, if she had only followed his advice, none of this would have happened. The matter could have been resolved easily.

But it was too late to regret it...

The classmates then tried to cheer the mood by sharing possible positive outcomes from today's events. However deep inside, they all knew that they were just consoling each other.

At that moment, Xella's phone rang again.

She picked the call up and just like before, she only talked for a short while.

However, the details of the call seemed to be either very shocking or very important to Xella. This was because nearing the end of the call, her eyes were wide open and an expression of utter disbelief was painted on her face.

"Xella? What's wrong?"

It took Xela a while to answer as she was still dumbfounded by the call.

"The boss... My company's boss called me in person just now. He told me that I could resume my work there and that I was going to be transferred to the personnel department. I'll work as a trainee there and I'll even be given training so that I'll be able to hold much higher posts in the department in the future... He even apologized to me about the issue regarding Charlie... He told me that Charlie had been fired and he even said that it was a decision made by the superiors!"

“...Eh?”

Chapter 432

Everyone was stunned. In their minds, they were all thinking the same thing.

‘...What? That’s such a drastic change! And so quickly too!’

“...Xella, I definitely think that someone’s been pulling the strings behind the scenes to help you... Otherwise, why would your boss even step forward to deal with the pervert in the first place? Investigating the matter doesn’t require the boss’s involvement and yet he still called your personal number to apologize! What more, the pervert’s been fired!”

“I agree. You said it yourself that the decision was made by the superiors. Someone must definitely have used their connections to do this!”

Rae and the others were openly discussing their speculations now.

“I think that’s the case as well. It’s extremely difficult to get appointed as a potential trainee for the personnel department. I can’t help but wonder who has that much power to make even the boss and my superiors take action...” said Xella as she rubbed her temple gently.

Suddenly, she froze before looking up and fixing her gaze on Gerald.

“Gerald!” she unconsciously shouted as she stood up.

“...Eh? Gerald?”

Everyone else in the room looked at him in shock.

Gerald had not expected Xella’s reaction, even though she was right.

Earlier when the rest were discussing among themselves, Gerald had left the wardroom to give Zach a call. Zach was ordered to resolve the issue as soon as he could.

Now that everything had been resolved, it surprised Gerald that Xella could guess the truth so quickly.

"I think I know who helped me, Gerald!" she said as she walked toward him.

"You know, thinking back, on our way here you had said that we shouldn't look down on others since they may be the only people who can help us in the end, even though we had initially looked down on them. Thank you for reminding me about this Gerald!" Xella continued to express her gratitude to Gerald.

'You think you know who helped you?' Gerald thought to himself. Did that mean that the cat wasn't out of the bag yet?

She then began explaining. "I was hired by the deputy manager from the personnel department. He's a diligent young manager and every time we meet, he nods slightly and says a simple greeting. Though it doesn't sound like much, I think that he's been the one helping me a lot in secret!"

"At first, I simply thought that he was an honest and well-behaved man who only focused his attention on his work. Thinking back, however, he may be much more humble and sophisticated than I thought. I'm saying this now because I heard from my colleagues the other day that he may not be who he portrays himself to be!" said Xella.

Gerald's confusion was cleared the moment she finished her explanation. So she had guessed wrong after all, though it didn't really bother him.

Xella however, still felt the need to confirm her theory so she called up a close female colleague of hers.

"Hello? Lyla? Do you still remember our talk about the deputy manager from the personnel department? I think I remember you saying that he's a cousin to a superior? Alright. Yeah, it's nothing. Thanks! You can resume your work now!"

After hanging up, Xella looked so excited that even her eyes were now teary.

“Xella? Are you really sure it was him? Does he like you or something?” asked Rae, her inevitable jealousy firing up again.

“Whether he likes me or not, I’m unsure. However, I’m sure that he’s helped me several times in secret by now. He must have been one of the first people to find out that I was getting fired! Whatever the case, I’ll ask him to clarify all this when I get to work tomorrow!”

“I’m so jealous of all of you. Morgana was helped by Cameron so she’s now an official doctor while Xella has both Waylon and the deputy manager constantly aiding her! Sharon even has a rich heir as her partner! I don’t have anything that fancy!” said Rae while biting her lower lip in jealousy. She glanced at the tycoon once without saying anything else.

Morgana could only smile bitterly at her statement while she consoled Rae.

“Don’t say that, Rae. The tycoon isn’t that bad! Also, since you’re so free standing there, could you get some hot water?” asked Morgana as she turned to look at Gerald.

‘Really? Everyone else is standing here doing nothing too!’ Gerald sighed as he thought to himself.

Still, he couldn’t refuse so he simply walked over to a table with an empty glass jug on it.

“Dr. Lopez, both the president and the vice president are coming to the ward now!” said a nurse who had stuck her head into the room. After passing the message, she left.

“Eh? The president is coming?” asked Morgana, shocked.

Waylon was shocked as well. “Maybe the president found out that I had been admitted to the hospital so he’s coming over to pay me a visit. Xella, come help me up. My dad is acquainted with the president so I need to look my best.”

Seconds ago, Waylon was honestly still angry that his moment had been snatched away by Xella's deputy manager.

However, knowing that the president was personally coming over to meet him calmed his rage slightly. As Xella supported him, he slowly got to his feet, feeling slightly excited.

Gerald on the other hand, wanted to leave the room since the number of people there was going to increase again. He grabbed the jug and headed for the door to get some hot water.

At that moment, the door opened and in front of him, was the president himself.

"Oh? Mr. Crawford, what are you doing here?"

Chapter 433

He rubbed his hands together excitedly as he asked the question, a smile on his face.

"...Eh? Mr. Crawford?"

The others in the ward were dumbfounded when they heard the name.

This was especially the case for Waylon who had been ready to greet the president and act smugly in front of the others. He was twice as stunned as anyone else in the room.

'Why did he address Gerald as Mr. Crawford?'

"You know who I am, president?" asked Gerald. He was stunned as well.

"Of course I do! Back then when Mr. Winters had been admitted to the hospital, I went to pay him a visit as well. However, I wasn't able to catch you in time before you left!" said the president as he continued to smile.

Thinking about his words, Gerald pieced the puzzle together quickly.

When Mr. Winters had been admitted to the hospital, he had bumped into Morgana at the cafeteria. Back then, Morgana was troubled with her issue at work.

When he left and met up with Zack later, he had told him about Morgana's job issues.

Though her issues were eventually resolved, the credit had been snatched by Cameron in the end.

It must have been sometime then when the president had heard about Gerald.

Thinking back, Mr. Winters had also mentioned the president visiting him a while back ago though Gerald hadn't paid it much notice then.

"Mr. Crawford, I heard from the head nurse that you were here so I specifically came over to meet you! Do tell us if you have any requests. We'll get it done immediately!" continued the president.

He then looked at Morgana who had been standing beside them. "Look here, Mr. Crawford! After being recommended by you, Morgana is now an official doctor here! She's quite a diligent and responsible employee so she's been receiving high praise from both the patients and our staff! It was kind of you to recommend such a good and talented person to us!" The smile on the president's face widened as he said that.

The two of them continued to chat about some other things. A few talented people who had been standing behind the president shook hands with Gerald before all of them finally left.

Back then, Gerald had simply told Zack to use his connections in the province to resolve Morgana's issues. Gerald wasn't even directly part of that.

However, it would seem that the president was quite a capable man himself. After all, he managed to learn that Zack was just Gerald's subordinate acting under Gerald's orders.

When their backs could no longer be seen, Gerald turned to look back into the room.

It was then when he realized that all his classmates had been looking at him in shock.

This was especially true for Waylon. He appeared stupefied as he stood beside his bed, frozen in place.

So the president hadn't come to meet him. He had come to personally meet Gerald alone! How humiliating!

"...I'll uh... Go get some hot water first!" said Gerald before turning for the door once more.

"G-Gerald!"

It was Morgana who had called out to him, a look of disbelief on her face.

"...Yes? What's wrong, Morgana?" asked Gerald.

"Was... Was it you who had helped me? Were you the reason why I managed to become an official doctor here so easily?"

The president had clearly said that earlier. That it was Gerald who had recommended such a good doctor to the hospital.

Back when she first got the job, even she was puzzled. She simply assumed that it was Cameron who had helped her.

Her father had even thanked Cameron's father for that! However Cameron's father just appeared to be a cold and aloof man. The extent of his hospitality to her father was a single glass of water before sending him off.

If it truly was Cameron who had helped her, why would that have happened?

It all made sense now. It was Gerald who had been helping her from the start.

It turned out that Gerald was quite close to the president.

“Well, yes. It’s no big deal though. I’m just lucky to know a few relevant people so I told them about you,” said Gerald as he smiled softly.

Morgana was filled with regret after hearing that.

She remembered the first time she had met Gerald again after such a long time. She had only treated him to a meal in the cafeteria while Cameron was treated to a grand feast in a magnificent hotel.

The actual person who had thought about her future and helped her resolve all her issues was Gerald.

Looking at Gerald again, Morgana found herself looking at him in a different light.

“...Oh god. Gerald, you were driving that Mercedes-Benz G-Class earlier! You even have such great connections with influential people! What exactly are you working as now, Gerald?”

Chapter 434

The question had come from Rae.

“What did you say? He’s driving a Mercedes-Benz G-Class?” said Waylon, shocked.

Thinking back, Gerald had simply smiled calmly at the side while Waylon was showing off his car earlier.

He had thought that it was jealousy, but Gerald was just having fun looking at the fool showing his Audi A4L car off! With the current price of a Mercedes-Benz G-Class, that amount of money could easily buy eight or nine Audi A4L cars!

“As I said before, I won it as a prize! It’s just a vehicle to help me get around,” said Gerald calmly as he smiled.

He then put the jug down and left the ward.

Xella had not said anything, but she now respected Gerald more than she ever had.

He had simply left the ward once the issues had been resolved without expecting any appreciation at all.

In her mind, she knew that even though she had constantly thought that others had been helping her, Gerald didn't care as long as there were no more issues.

Even by the time Gerald had gotten into his car, his classmates had not moved an inch. They were still staring at each other in shock that he had just left like that.

While Gerald drove on, his phone began to ring.

It surprised him slightly that the caller was Tammy but he still picked up.

"Gerald, please advise Giya to come home. Mr. Quarrington's been extremely anxious. He's tried to call Giya several times now but her phone's probably been switched off. She isn't even replying to any of my messages anymore! Please advise her, I'll meet up with her this afternoon!" said Tammy.

Hearing that, Gerald was momentarily stunned.

He immediately stopped his car at the side of the road. "What? What do you mean he's worried? Hasn't Giya gone home?"

He knew very well that Giya had said that she would return home before she left. Gerald hadn't even contacted her at all since then.

He had thought that it was fine just ending it like that.

After all, he couldn't let her stay, otherwise it would only increase the chances of Mila misunderstanding in the future.

Where had she gone? And why couldn't anyone contact Giya now?

"...Eh? What? What do you mean by that? I was still able to contact her yesterday before I found out that I couldn't even reach her anymore today. She had put on a great show and now her father is truly scared. Please don't pretend anymore, her dad isn't at my home. Pass the phone to Giya now!" said Tammy.

She wanted to think that Gerald was only pretending.

"Tammy, I'm dead serious. Don't scare me please. You left my place three days ago and the morning after that, Giya had ridden a car back to Mayberry. She said that she was going to get engaged with Yacob the moment she returned home."

Gerald dabbed his sleeve against his forehead as cold sweat began to form.

He explained to Tammy everything that had happened the day Giya had left.

"D*mn it! Even if that's the case, we should still be able to reach her but we can't! Did she really tell you that she was going to be engaged with Yacob?"

"Who else could it be?"

"I'm just going to say this. The person she was supposed to get engaged with isn't Yacob. It's a man from Yanken known only by others as Mr. Long. However, Giya doesn't want to be with him so she ran away from home. I suspect that she went to you with several excuses in mind just in case you wouldn't take her in! Oh, Giya... Now I'm just worried that something has happened to her!" cried out Tammy in a worried voice.

After sharing whatever they knew about the situation, Gerald hung up before immediately trying to call Giya.

However, it was true. Her phone had indeed been turned off.

He tried contacting her through other social media as well but the result was the same.

'F*cking hell! What happened, Giya!'

'Even though her disappearance isn't directly related to me, the last place she was seen at was still my place!'

Gerald was deeply upset and he was filled with self-reproach.

'If I hadn't said those things Giya may not have left in the first place...'

'If only I had given her a call after she had left, I might still know where she is now.'

'But it's too late for that. I wouldn't have been able to anticipate this happening anyway. Something's happened to Giya and I need to find her immediately.'

'Tammy had also said that she thought Giya was still together with me.'

Gerald scratched his head in frustration. In his mind, there were countless possibilities of things that could have happened to her. Each possibility he thought of only made him even more frightened than the previous one.

He smacked his steering wheel hard to calm himself down a little.

Shaking his head, he then turned the car around immediately.

He was now returning to Mayberry...

Chapter 435

While all this was happening, a sigh was heard. "Tammy, Mr. Quarrington is extremely nervous now. He's even gone to the police station to launch a report. What should we do? How much longer should we wait here for that Gerald?"

Something had happened to Giya and her family and friends definitely knew about it.

The one who had sighed was one of Giya's roommates.

They were all now waiting for Gerald at the entrance of Mayberry University.

Tammy had agreed to meet him there on the phone earlier.

Since Mr. Quarrington had gone to make a police report, Tammy and the others had acted sensibly by going to the university. Informing and sharing what they knew with the university was really all that they could do at that moment.

"Let's just wait for him. He's the one who knows most about the situation since Giya was last seen at his place. However, he's not free from being taught a lesson by us later! Her disappearance is still related to him!" said Tammy angrily.

The other girls were angry as well. They had decided that they would beat him up as soon as he arrived.

"D*mn it! How did Giya ever get bewitched by such a loser! What more, he hadn't even bothered to contact her since the day she left!" said the girls angrily.

All of a sudden, a girl pointed toward the road. "Hey, Hey all of you! That's a Mercedes-Benz G-Class! The driver must be a handsome guy!"

"For god's sake, Yvette! Read the mood a little! How could you still have more interest in luxury cars and handsome men at this moment!"

Though the roommate had said that, she and the rest of the girls still ended up staring at the Mercedes-Benz G-Class. It was, after all, a magnificent and cool looking car.

“...Hey. Look at the window. Doesn’t that look a bit like Gerald?” said Yvette.

“As if that could ever be possible! He’s a poor loser! I’m expecting him to appear before us on a bike!” scolded Tammy.

However, the Mercedes-Benz G-Class was coming closer.

Gerald hit the brakes once the car was in front of them and got out of the car immediately.

“What’s the situation like?” he asked anxiously.

After a short silence, one of the roommates screamed.

Tammy and the others were equally as astounded.

They had always had the impression that he was just a regular poor loser. But here he was! Driving a Mercedes-Benz G-Class!

Tammy had initially assumed that she knew Gerald inside out. However at that moment, all she could do gape her mouth in shock.

“Why do you have a Mercedes-Benz G-Class, Gerald?” she finally managed to ask.

“I got it a while back but is that really what’s important now? What’s the situation like?” asked Gerald again.

Tammy gulped, suppressing the shock that she was still feeling.

She then told him the details of the current situation. In short, it didn't look very promising.

Despite having launched a police report, not much progress had been done. No further clues had been uncovered either.

Both Mr. and Mrs. Quarrington were worried out of their minds now.

At first, they had been quite upset to know that the Longs from Yanken had wanted to force a marriage on their daughter to marry their son.

Now that Giya was missing, the weights on their chests had been doubled. Their grief was immeasurable.

As Gerald heard all of this, his self-reproach only intensified.

As for Tammy and the others, they didn't dare to beat Gerald up now after seeing his Mercedes-Benz G-Class. Their tones had turned polite as well.

"However, you don't have to worry that much, Gerald. I've thought up a plan. See, my cousin, Felicia, had told me that one of her classmates was in charge of controlling the live broadcasts of a famous anchor. A month ago, their live studio had asked for help from their fans to look for a young boy who had been missing for several years. Shockingly enough, by investigating through different social media and forums, they actually succeeded in finding him!"

Chapter 436

"I've called Felicia and told her about the situation. She's told me that she'll try to get her classmate to help us. Hopefully it goes well! With the help of the anchor's fans, we could finally locate where Giya is! There is strength in numbers after all!" said Tammy.

Gerald nodded. He thought that it was a good idea.

Normal people didn't understand the true capabilities of those who worked with mass media and those who treated the internet like their second home.

As long as one was willing to research, the information they needed would definitely be found.

Gerald called Drake and Tyson to investigate the matter as well. None of them were taking any chances.

“Felicia’s here!”

At that moment, a black car parked by the road and Tammy’s little cousin hopped out. A handsome man in glasses guided her toward the group.

Gerald had met Felicia the other day along with Tammy, so he knew who she was.

She definitely knew what had happened to Giya since the moment she saw Gerald, she rolled her eyes in disgust.

“I’ve brought Quade along, Tammy. He’s my classmate. As I’ve explained earlier in the car, Giya’s missing. We would like to ask for you to broadcast a missing person report so that the anchor’s fans can help look for her! We’ll definitely pay for it!” said Felicia.

Quade adjusted his glasses slightly before saying, “You don’t need to worry about the pay. The Internet Celebrity Carnival is coming soon and the anchorwoman is thinking of doing some charity to increase her influence. It’s definitely not a problem!”

“Also, her office is here in the city of Mayberry University. I’ll bring all of you over to meet her. You can then give her a general understanding of the situation!”

“...Wait, is the anchorwoman you’re referring to Felicity?” asked Gerald, stunned.

Quade simply sneered as he looked at Gerald. “Who else could it be? You?”

“Oh god, Gerald! I asked my classmate to come look for Giya! You’re just looking for the anchorwoman! Could you please stop being such a loser you b*stard?” said Felicia coldly.

“That’s enough. Time is ticking so let’s just use it to find Giya with Quade’s help!” said Tammy.

“Alright! Get in the car, I’ll bring you there!”

At first, Gerald had thought that tackling the issue would be slightly inefficient if they didn’t know who the anchor was.

Now that he knew that it was none other than Felicity, he became slightly more excited and hopeful.

Since Felicity had become famous with the help of Ordinary Man, she would definitely listen to him.

As Gerald opened the door of his car, a shout was heard.

“Oh my god, is that a Mercedes-Benz G-Class?” Felicia asked, stunned.

“Gerald, is that car yours?”

“Just get in the car already!” said Gerald in resignation.

Quade had a surprised look on his face. He adjusted his glasses again. Though Gerald looked like a loser, he drove such a luxurious car.

Tammy drove her own car as they set off. Gerald knew the way there well. Soon, they reached the Entrepreneur Base which belonged to the university students.

Quade worked there. He was a person who had never finished high school yet he dreamed of becoming an internet celebrity. In the end, he became the person who controlled the live broadcasts for Felicity.

“Miss Dunn, Tammy and the others are here!” said Quade as he brought Gerald and the others into the office.

A girl had her back facing them when they first saw her. She was none other than Gerald’s classmate, Yvonne Dunn.

“Ah, alright...”

When she turned to walk toward them in her high heels, she was momentarily stunned.

“Gerald? Why are you here?”

Chapter 437

Yvonne had been working as Felicity’s assistant which explained why she was there. She was clearly shocked when she saw Gerald there.

“Don’t worry about it first. More importantly, we need your help!”

It felt like ages ago since Gerald had last met Yvonne and Felicity.

They had not met face to face since the day he had saved them when they were kidnapped.

Gerald felt slightly uneasy talking to them now.

“Wait here for a moment. Felicity’s still having her makeup done. I’ll tell her that you’re all here first!”

Yvonne wasn’t as mean as she used to be toward Gerald now.

A lot had happened since then and it probably really was Gerald who had saved the four of them. Gerald definitely held quite a bit of power and influence. They knew that much.

Now, Yvonne wanted to instead try to please Gerald. Felicity clearly had the same thought process.

His background was suspicious to them, to say the least.

They were in such grave danger back then yet nobody would have been able to help since nobody even knew that they had been kidnapped.

Well, except for Gerald of course.

What more, the incidents regarding Cassandra's power bank and Gerald's coat being left behind in the Maybach car also further increased their suspicion. His items just seemed to be present whenever such a situation occurred.

Once they reached that conclusion, Felicity decided to treat Gerald better.

"Gerald? Why are you here?" asked Felicity as she walked toward the group. She had only light makeup on, but she was still very charming and attractive.

It was a surprise to Tammy and the others.

It had never occurred to them that internet celebrities could look so charming even with basic makeup on.

Tammy, Felicia, and Quade, however, looked even more shocked. "You know her Gerald?"

"She's my classmate of course she would!" said Gerald calmly.

"Gerald, this Giya girl. What's your relationship with her?" asked Yvonne slightly anxiously.

"She's a good friend. Please ask for help from your fans to look for her. Once she's found, there'll definitely be a reward waiting for you!"

Gerald was in no mood to keep a low profile at that moment so every word he said sounded dominant and strong.

However, both Felicity and Yvonne didn't think that it was out of place.

They had speculated about his true identity long enough, and this only served to prove that their theories were right.

"I'll help. However, I'll need you to come into my office with me, Gerald. I need to talk to you about something personally. Yvonne, please serve Quade's friends for me."

Felicity then turned around and re-entered her office.

Gerald followed after her.

In his mind, he had already concluded that both girls already knew his true identity by now.

It was because he wasn't careful enough the few times he had saved them. He had left behind enough clues for them to piece the puzzle together.

Why else would Felicity ask him to enter her office? In fact, Yvonne would have scolded him immediately and kicked him out if she didn't know who he really was.

However, Gerald wasn't one to hold resentment toward Felicity, even if she had constantly remarked sarcastically at him in the past.

Otherwise, he wouldn't have allowed her to become the famous anchorwoman that she was today.

"I'll make this clear, I'll definitely help you with this no matter what. However, Gerald, could you please tell me something and be truthful about it? Are you Ordinary Man? And are you also Mr. Crawford from Mayberry?"

Felicity bit her lower lip as she finally decided to ask Gerald face to face.

Felicity had had extremely complicated feelings the moment she met Gerald again after quite some time.

Was Gerald really the person that she had liked all this time?

Ordinary Man had always treated her well.

Although they had never personally met, Felicity had grown to have feelings for him after receiving his help a few times. It was the kind of feeling that just stuck strongly to her heart.

It had also been the reason why she felt nothing whenever other rich and young men tried to gain her affection or help her.

Chapter 438

Recently after Felicity had become famous, several men who were both handsome and rich began stepping up to help her. Once, she had a minor fever but even then, a few young and rich men had driven over to her place to send her medicine in person.

Some of them would even chat with her every night.

Technically, by doing all that for her, those men were already good enough to reach her 'partner standards'.

Ordinary Man himself had not spoken much with Felicity for a few months now. She had never met him in person either.

Despite all that, Felicity still felt nothing for the others.

It was definite proof of her admiration toward Ordinary Man.

She had even imagined how he looked, countless times.

However, with every passing clue that she got, it further revealed the fuller picture that Ordinary Man was none other than the person that she had always looked down upon, Gerald. How could she not have complicated feelings about that?

'Could it really be Gerald?'

'If it is, then is Gerald the one for me? Will I... Will I still love him?'

'I honestly can't believe that I've fallen for Gerald!'

Such questions and thoughts would fill her mind from the day they last met at the restaurant.

She had been constantly anxious about it, and she was now more anxious than ever with him standing before her.

She couldn't hold herself back anymore so she asked him for the truth.

"And what if I were? Would you still like me?" asked Gerald back, a bitter smile on his face.

Felicity bit her lower lip slightly before shaking her head. "I... I don't know! I don't know if I'd be able to like you even if you truly are Ordinary Man!"

Gerald chuckled at this. "You're just overthinking this. How on earth could I ever be Ordinary Man?"

Though his voice was calm, his face couldn't fully hide his unease. Gerald was having complicated feelings as well as he looked at Felicity.

Gerald was afraid that meeting her again in the future would be awkward if she knew the truth, so he kept silent about his identity.

After what had happened with Giya, Gerald now knew better not to flirt with other girls if he wasn't determined to give them happiness and good prospects in the future.

He was aware as well, that Felicity would definitely be in great pain and confusion if he admitted to her claim. There was nothing to be gained by doing so.

"I don't buy it! You're definitely lying about that!" said Felicity as she stared straight into Gerald's eyes.

"Gerald, please... I... I just want to hear the truth from you. If you tell me the truth, I'll... I'll share some information with you! I'm positive that you'll definitely find the news interesting. How about that?" asked Felicity as she slowly approached Gerald.

"I'm neither Mr. Crawford, nor am I Ordinary Man. There are no lies there. I just won the lottery and it was a great amount of money. If I really were Mr. Crawford, why would I ever keep such a low profile? Besides, Mr. Crawford comes from a huge family. We've been in the same class for the past three years now. Do I look like someone who comes from a huge family?" replied Gerald.

Felicity simply nodded.

Despite that, she still couldn't bring herself to hate Gerald anymore, even if he wasn't Mr. Crawford or Ordinary Man.

"...Fine! I'll believe what you said for now! Also, are you interested in the information?" she asked while shaking her head to regain her composure.

"What happened?"

"Half a month ago, I attended a function in Yanken. I bumped into a girl there!"

As Felicity said that, she peeked at Gerald. She was curious to see what reaction he would give.

“Go on. Do I know that girl?” asked Gerald.

“Of course you do. You’re quite close to her as well!”

“I hadn’t expected to bump into her there, but here’s the thing. She’s changed drastically! If you ever plan to meet her again, I can guarantee that you’ll find yourself very surprised!”

Gerald couldn’t help scratching the back of his head in confusion.

“She’s Xavia! Your ex! Could you already have forgotten about her?” said Felicity when she realized that he still couldn’t guess who the girl was.

“Xavia?”

It was Gerald’s turn to be shocked this time.

Chapter 439

“Xavia’s in Yanken?”

He was stunned just hearing that name again. He hadn’t heard from her for months.

He felt a sudden excruciating pain in his heart.

After all, he had been a couple with Xavia for two years. His memories at Mayberry University mostly consisted of both of them being together. However, she had severely hurt his feelings. At one point, Gerald felt only resentment toward her.

After he revealed his identity as Mr. Crawford to her, he became quite cold toward Xavia.

She received such a great blow from that, that she dropped out of university.

Since that happened, any resentment he had for her ceased to exist.

He was instead filled with self-reproach.

In the past, he had nothing. Yet Xavia didn't dislike him for that. She still chose to be with him.

They had their meals together, and even went shopping together.

While it was true that Xavia had changed in the end, she was much better compared to Alice and the others.

After all, she hadn't been disgusted with him for being poor. That was what touched Gerald back then since most girls naturally preferred rich partners.

His coldness back then literally ruined her future, to the point where she could not even complete her studies at the university.

Gerald had pondered before about getting someone to look for Xavia. If he was able to find her, he could provide her with a job that had a steady income and good prospects. He would be able to rest much easier if he knew she could still sustain herself.

However, Gerald gave up on that idea because he felt that she would hate him even more if she ever found out.

"What kind of response even is that? Are you happy? Excited? Or maybe you're just blaming yourself in your head now?" Felicity asked curiously.

"How is she now? Is she doing well?" asked Gerald, ignoring her question.

“Oh, you don’t have to worry about her. Honestly, she’s doing great! She’s living such a good life that it’ll definitely be beyond your expectations. Before we parted ways, she told me that she’ll return to Mayberry one day to retrieve what she’s lost there!”

“She had quite a scary expression on her face as she said that. When I asked her about it, she didn’t say anything else regarding the matter. Speaking of which, Gerald, why did Xavia drop out of university?”

Back then, Xavia had told her to pass a message to Gerald. Felicity, however, was uninterested in anything related to Gerald so she simply kept the message to herself.

Of course, things were much different now, plus she was curious about what Xavia had meant.

“I wonder...” said Gerald, a bitter smile on his face.

She had announced that she would retrieve what she had lost in Mayberry... Xavia was definitely going to have her revenge on Gerald.

What on earth had Xavia gone through throughout the past few months?

Gerald had no idea where to even begin speculating. However, one thing was for sure. Xavia was doing great and that was all that mattered to him.

“Well, it’s fine if you don’t want to talk about it. I’ll just find out when she finally returns one day!” said Felicity before sighing.

“Alright, that’s enough chit chat! I need to finish up my makeup for the live broadcast this afternoon!”

“Alright!” said Gerald as he nodded his head. As he was about to walk out of the office, Felicity called out to him. As he waited for her to say something, she walked up to him before blocking the door with her arms spread out.

“Also, Gerald. I hope that you’ll promise me one thing since I’m helping you this time around.”

“What is it?”

“You can’t marry before I learn who Ordinary Man’s true identity is. That’s my only request. Is that possible?” asked Felicity as she bit her lower lip.

She didn’t even understand why she was asking for such an absurd thing from Gerald.

‘Could this possibly mean that I’ve fallen for him since I know that he’s most probably Ordinary Man?’

‘If Gerald really is Ordinary Man and he marries someone else... What would happen?’

Felicity didn’t want to have to feel such bitter remorse. As she pondered her own question a bit more, she realized that that must have been the reason why she had told him to make such a promise.

She still wasn’t even sure if she truly loved Gerald.

After hearing Felicity’s request, Gerald looked at her in surprise.

“Don’t get any misunderstandings. I don’t like you, I’m just looking for an answer!” said Felicity.

“Alright, you have my promise!”

In all honesty, Gerald was still feeling slightly flustered after hearing Xavia’s name again.

Chapter 440

He made the promise without even the slightest hesitation.

It was much better than telling Felicity that he was actually Ordinary Man.

But now wasn't the time for that. Now was the time for Felicity to ask her fans to look for Giya.

After he descended the stairs, the other could see that Gerald clearly had something weighing on his mind.

As he paced around slowly, both Felicia and Quade followed closely behind him.

Felicia kept alternating between poking Quade and nudging her head toward Gerald's back. It was clear that Quade wanted to say something to Gerald.

Quade, however, definitely looked like he didn't dare to go up to Gerald.

"Quade, it's really no big deal. Go ahead and talk to Gerald about it!" said Tammy as she sighed, looking at the two. She couldn't bear seeing them act so sneakily behind Gerald anymore.

Gerald heard his name being called and he turned around. Behind him, he saw Felicia poking Quade while both of them stared back.

Gerald was slightly confused at the scene but he shook his head before looking at Quade and asking, "What's the matter?"

Quade coughed while adjusting his glasses. "I need your help with something, but I'm not sure if you'll be willing to lend a hand..."

Initially, Quade had looked down on Gerald but when he saw that he drove a Mercedes-Benz G-Class, he was shocked.

"Go on..."

"Well, my elder sister works in a leasing company. She needs to lease a Mercedes-Benz G-Class this month though she hasn't had any luck getting her hands on one yet... If she fails to hit her target this month she might get fired. You may already have guessed by now, but could you please lease it to my

sister's company for three days? Just three days. My sister will definitely pay you the leasing fee!" said Quade.

Gerald understood Quade's situation.

Some companies specialized in stuff like that. People would sign leases for cars for different reasons such as shooting for movies.

Once the lease was signed, if anything happened to the car, the leaser would not be held responsible for it. The leaser didn't have to bother about all the expenses either. The car would just be leased for a few days and they could earn three thousand dollars without needing to do anything else.

"If that's the case, sure. I'll lease it to her," said Gerald as he smiled faintly.

Gerald found no reason to decline. Quade had a hand in helping Gerald find Giya too after all.

What more, Gerald approved of him, seeing how much he cared for his sister. Gerald could understand his worries since he had a sister himself.

If Gerald's sister was ever in any trouble, Gerald would rush over to help her without the slightest fear or hesitation.

"Thank you, Gerald! I'll call my sister now to tell her the good news! She'll be coming over soon with a contract for you to sign!" said Quade excitedly.

Soon after, his sister arrived and the contract was signed. Once that was done, Tammy and the others went home to try getting their connections to help resolve the issue of Giya's disappearance.

Gerald called Zack up himself along with a few others.

They needed to find something. Anything that could give a clue as to where Giya's whereabouts was.

Otherwise, Gerald knew that he would not be able to rest easy for the rest of his life.

Night came soon enough.

Gerald was exhausted and hungry after doing all that he could the entire day.

He retreated for the moment to a restaurant to fill his belly up before resuming the search.

“What do you mean? Do you think I’m unnecessary? Am I that bad?”

While he was having his meal, Gerald suddenly heard arguing coming from a dining table not too far from his.

There were voices of two women and a man.

All three voices came from the same dining table. It seemed that the man had been caught red-handed cheating with another woman. The man’s original lover was the one doing most of the shouting as the cheating duo remained silent.

“I treated you so well! What do I lack that she has? You loved me before this... Do you not anymore? Why do you want to be with her?” The woman continued shouting at them.

This sort of scene wasn’t uncommon. Gerald really didn’t need to look at them at all.

However, he had glanced up out of curiosity since they were being so noisy. This resulted in his gaze being fixed upon the trio.

The shouting woman turned out to be Lilian.

As for the pair who had been caught cheating, they were none other than Hayward and Sharon.

Turning back the clock to the day of the class gathering, Gerald remembered hearing from Waylon that Sharon was now Hayward's girlfriend.

Lilian must have been anxious all this time since she liked Hayward too.

A slap was heard, and the shouting ceased.

The recipient of the slap was Lilian.

Sharon had stood up, a cold expression on her face. "Lilian, that's enough. Are you out of your mind?"

Chapter 441

"Sharon, you- You! How dare you slap me! Hayward this b*tch just slapped me!"

While she said that, Lilian looked at Hayward while cupping a hand over her hurt cheek.

However, Hayward only averted his gaze. It was clear whose side he was on.

"I... I see... So that's how it is... To think that I was that blind before to not be able to see what kind of person you really were..."

Lilian's voice was quivering. She then turned around and ran away in tears.

Sharon slammed her fork and spoon on the table. She was in no mood to enjoy her meal anymore after such a mess. Soon after, both of them left the restaurant.

'What a pity to see two best friends fighting like enemies now...' Gerald thought to himself.

From what had played out before him, Gerald could get the gist of what had happened among the three.

It would seem that Lilian and Sharon were both getting more assertive over Hayward because of the properties that he now owned.

In the past when Hayward was still poor, they never treated him well even though he had always stayed by their sides.

It was a completely different story now. Ever since he owned a few properties and managed to get some great connections, he had essentially become a rich and handsome man to them.

What more, to both Lilian and Sharon, the experience he had gained while obtaining the properties and connections must also have made him more solemn and mature.

Gerald could definitely understand their situation.

However, he wasn't sure how the two girls would react if they ever caught wind that the things Hayward now had were all given to him.

Gerald simply sneered while shaking his head before smiling in resignation.

After finishing his meal, he left the restaurant. However, the minute Gerald's foot stepped out of the restaurant, a hand grabbed on to his other.

"Oh! My grandson, please wait for a short while!"

Looking down to see who was holding on to his leg, Gerald saw an old man sitting by the entrance.

"My god, what are you doing?" said Gerald, stunned.

"My grandson, you must be rich since you can afford to eat at this restaurant! Please spare me some money, I haven't eaten in days now!" said the old beggar as he crawled closer to hug Gerald's thigh.

The old beggar looked dirty and his white hair stank.

He wouldn't let go of Gerald's leg until he got some money.

Understanding this, Gerald could only sigh as he reached into his wallet and handed a hundred dollar bill to the beggar.

In his mind, the old beggar was chuckling victoriously. 'I was right to choose this boy, he's filthy rich!'

The beggar immediately slid the money into his dirty front pocket but he didn't let go.

"Are you done?" asked Gerald, his tone getting angrier.

"My grandson, I need help with something else too... Could you please send me to a clinic? My leg is injured and I need to have it cured!"

"D*amn it you old beggar! Just because you're old you think you can blackmail me?"

Gerald was angry but also speechless.

"What old beggar? I just got into some trouble! I'm no beggar!" the man replied.

By then, several people were starting to surround the two. Naturally, the gossiping soon began as well.

Gerald sighed, thinking how unlucky he was. The old man had even addressed him as his grandson all this time.

In the end, Gerald brought him to the clinic across the road, defeated.

The Chinese medicine practitioner there treated the old man's leg in no time. As Gerald paid the hundred dollar bill, he could only glare at the old man bitterly.

However, it was upon closer inspection that he saw that there was a tattoo on the old man's chest. It was the head of a dragon that looked rather intimidating.

'Could it really be that he really is some hero who's down on his luck?' Gerald thought to himself.

Maybe the old man really was influential and great once. Then again, it was none of Gerald's business.

He had spent a total of two hundred dollars on that old man. Usually he would never do something like that but it was just his luck that the old man had clung on so tightly on his leg and in public no less.

Gerald was just about to leave when he noticed some news being broadcasted on a TV in the clinic. The news was being broadcasted on Mayberry TV and it was regarding Giya's disappearance. It was stated in the news that the police were already investigating the case.

It was clear that Giya's father had thought of using mass media to help look for Giya too.

Seeing the news, Gerald began blaming himself again.

There were a few more patients in the waiting room, waiting for their turn to meet the Chinese medicine practitioner. One of them sighed. "Such a beautiful girl... I do hope that she's safe. The world is filled with all kinds of villainous and perverted people nowadays..."

"I know right? Girls need to learn how to protect themselves when they're out and about..." said another patient.

"Hmm... I seem to recall seeing her a while back. She was blocked by a few men..." said the old beggar who had limped out and saw the news as well, now that his leg had been treated.

Gerald had just begun walking toward the door again when he froze in place.

“What? What did you say? You’ve met her?”

Chapter 442

Gerald’s voice was filled with anxiety as he asked.

The old man simply chuckled as he looked at Gerald. “Why yes, I did. Met her outside Mayberry Station around noon that day, alone. I distinctly remember her because she was so fair, tall, and beautiful. A few people were waiting for her at the station though. After a short chat, she got into their car hurriedly and that was the last time I saw her.”

“You seem interested. You know her or something?” asked the old man as he smiled.

“We’re acquainted, yes,” said Gerald as he nodded before asking the old man for more details.

Based on the old man’s description of the event, the person he had seen that day truly was Giya and the timing was right too.

As long as he knew where Giya first went missing, whether she was kidnapped or not, the situation could be resolved rather easily.

As he was about to leave, the old man grabbed his arm nervously.

“What else do you want?” asked Gerald.

“My grandson, you’re a very kind man... May I please know your name?”

“Gerald Crawford...”

Since he had given Gerald such a vital clue, Gerald felt no reason not to tell him his name.

“Your surname is Crawford you say... Can I have a look at your chest?”

The old man’s voice had suddenly become a mix of agitation and excitement.

Before Gerald could even reply, the old man was already tugging on his collar.

Naturally, Gerald tried to resist but the old man was something else. Though he looked frail, when he needed to, the old man was strong enough to make sure Gerald couldn’t even move his arm anymore.

Once Gerald’s collar had been pulled apart, the old man frowned slightly.

“How queer! It’s not here!” said the old man as he released Gerald.

‘This old man’s crazy!’ Gerald thought to himself as he gently rubbed his wrists.

While the old man was still in a daze, Gerald made a dash for the exit and didn’t look back.

After running quite some distance away from the clinic, Gerald called Drake, Tyson, and Tammy. He told them about what he had found out.

He knew that both Drake and Tyson would be able to get to the bottom of this very soon.

Thinking about the case, Gerald felt that the kidnapping involved lots of fraud and deception. However, his priority was always Giya’s safety.

What a surprising turn of events though. To think that that old man knew about Giya... What a great coincidence!

However, it wasn’t time to dwell on that now.

It was an hour later when Drake and Tyson contacted Gerald again. As expected of highly trained men, they had found their next lead.

Giya had apparently been lied to which consequently led to her being kidnapped. From what they could deduce, she had been locked up in a house in a luxurious neighborhood for about two days now.

After some research, it was found that a student by the name of Yacob was the cause of all of this chaos.

Yacob had owed the gangsters in Mayberry a sum of money, so they were now using Giya to make him pay.

'F*ck!' Gerald cursed in his mind.

Drake and Tyson were immediately ordered to get their men ready to save Giya.

However, being the professionals they were, both of them were already at the neighborhood with their men. They had been waiting there for their next command from the moment they called Gerald to inform him about their findings.

Hearing that, Gerald wanted to rush over himself. However, he realized that his Mercedes-Benz G-Class had just been leased out. He couldn't go to Mountain Top Villa to retrieve his car either.

Thankfully, the neighborhood was not too far away so he got an Ofo bike and rushed there immediately.

A roar of thunder could be heard and soon, it began raining heavily.

Gerald updated Tammy on the situation and he was thankfully able to relay all the vital information before his phone battery died. Cursing under his breath, he continued cycling in the pouring rain till he finally reached St. Cloud Neighborhood.

While Gerald was still making his way there, about a hundred Maybach cars had gathered around the neighborhood, causing a terrible traffic congestion there. All four entrances of the neighborhood had been completely blocked as well.

What more, several men in black suits were standing under umbrellas as they waited outside their cars. It was a rather incredible scene to behold.

Naturally, people began taking photographs of the event through the windows of their homes. There was definitely something big going on.

There were no hints as to what was happening or who had offended who. To put simply, the entire situation was both confusing and shocking to the clueless residents living there.

While all this was happening, a few young men and women were standing behind the door of a restaurant in St. Cloud Neighborhood.

“Counselor, it’s raining heavily and all the entrances of the neighborhood have apparently been blocked! We can’t leave even if we wanted to!” said one of the girls.

“Why don’t we just stay at the counselor’s house then? Since she’s just moved into a new one here!” said the man as he cleared his throat.

“Speaking of her house, if the counselor hadn’t asked us to help her move to her new house, we could easily have missed the scene happening outside. They’re all Maybach cars!”

Earlier, the students had been surprised to see that it wasn’t just a regular congestion since all the cars causing it were Maybach cars.

“...Hmm? Counselor, look there. Doesn’t that man on the Ofo bike look familiar?” said another girl who pointed at someone cycling an Ofo bike into the neighborhood.

Chapter 443

“...Hey. That’s Gerald isn’t it?” said a man who recognized the cycling figure in the rain.

“I think you’re right! Oh god, he’s cycling in such heavy rain! And he seems to be rushing as well!”

“I heard he won a car or something but it turns out that he’s as shabby as ever!”

“Yeah. To think I once admired him the moment I found out he had won a lottery.”

The group of women there began discussing Gerald.

All ten of those standing by the door were his classmates. The counselor, as most would have guessed by now, was none other than Cassandra.

It just so happened that Cassandra was moving into a new house again today. She didn’t need to live in the faculty apartment anymore.

Since St. Cloud Neighborhood was a luxurious neighborhood, the house had cost around four hundred thousand dollars.

Cassandra had been working as a lecturer in the university for some time now. She had even established her own online shop, working as an online seller.

With the help of Felicity promoting her shop and products, it was no wonder that Cassandra had managed to earn so much money.

With that kind of money, she could afford to buy herself a new house with three bedrooms, a living room, and a kitchen.

Since she needed to move her belongings to her new house, she had asked for help from the students at Mayberry University.

Once the moving was completed, she treated all of them to a meal in a local restaurant which explained why they were all huddled near the restaurant’s door in the first place.

Seeing Gerald again after some time, Cassandra could feel her heart skip a beat.

She was just like Felicity as both of them had liked Ordinary Man. Knowing that Gerald could most probably be the real Ordinary Man, she felt sensitive whenever things regarding Gerald came up.

Moving back to Gerald, since it was raining very heavily, he just couldn't cycle fast enough no matter how hard he tried.

At that moment, three cars rushed past him consecutively, all of them moving toward the entrance of St. Cloud Neighborhood.

Once the last car hit the brakes, Felicity, Yvonne, and a few others rushed out. In their hands were their phones along with other live broadcasting equipment.

Gerald had updated Tammy about what he had found out earlier before his phone had died. She must have told everyone else about it.

By the time Gerald got to the house, he saw Tammy and Giya's parents trying to get past several bodyguards who were standing guard over the entrance.

"Let me pass! Let me see my daughter!" cried Giya's mother.

Realizing that they were the victim's parents, the guards looked at each other before noticing Gerald standing in the rain. He gestured for them to let them in and they immediately allowed the rest of the people there in.

A guard hurriedly ran over to Gerald before whispering something in his ear. Gerald's legs felt weak as he could finally breathe a sigh of relief. Drake and Tyson had rescued Giya. Gerald nodded to the guard and the guard ran back into the house to deal with other things.

Gerald noticed that Felicity was just about to enter the house so he walked to her and told her about the good news. Felicity stopped in her tracks for a moment before nodding. Gerald simply nodded back, a tired smile on his face before he walked away slowly.

As she watched him walk away, a voice suddenly called out to her.

“Felicity! Here! Over here!”

The students from earlier had left the restaurant to get a closer look and one of the girls just so happened to catch sight of Felicity.

Felicity was shocked. Why were so many of her classmates here?

Noticing that Yvonne was there, she went up to her.

“Felicity, you’re awesome! They hadn’t allowed anyone in but you’re being given access to enter along with your crew! What exactly is happening in there?” asked a girl curiously.

Felicity had just been told to come along to broadcast the scene so even she was shocked when she first saw all the Maybach cars blocking the entrances. Thankfully, Tammy had told the guards that Gerald had sent them so they were allowed access into the neighborhood.

“A girl was kidnapped. We received news about it so we rushed here without knowing how large a scale the rescue mission actually was. I’m as shocked as all of you are to see this many people involved!”

“Eh? Who’s the girl? Looking at how her parents reacted they don’t seem to be the leader of this group...” asked another girl.

Cassandra was curious as well so she looked at Felicity.

Felicity simply shook her head. “I’m not too sure either. Gerald was the one who told us about the girl’s location in the first place. I was talking to him just seconds ago and he told me that she had been saved as well. She had apparently been kept in the dark about what was happening and she was shocked to find out that she was now in a house in St. Cloud Neighborhood!”

“Gerald?” said Cassandra, stunned.

“Yes, the girl in question is his friend. He was the one who asked for my help to look for her in the first place...”

After saying that, she paused for a moment.

Both Felicity and Cassandra looked at each other, shock reflected in their eyes.

Out of the blue, someone burst into laughter. “Everyone, look! Gerald’s drenched from head to toe! Someone’s late to the party!”

“Look at him! How pathetic! Hey, Yoana! Didn’t you say that you liked him earlier? Why don’t you go confess to him now?”

“F*ck that, only fools would ever confess to him!”

As the students continued laughing at him, a shout was heard.

“Mr. Crawford!”

Several bodyguards holding black umbrellas suddenly shouted in unison. The shout was so loud and clear that the entire neighborhood could probably hear it.

Two bodyguards then instantly rushed toward Gerald to shelter him from the rain.

Gerald shook his head as he wiped his face dry with his hanky. As another guard quickly handed him another one, Gerald pointed toward the Ofo bike laying on the ground.

When he arrived at the scene, he had gotten off the Ofo bike immediately and it had tumbled onto the ground when he was rushing toward the front door. A guard moved toward the bike, putting it upright. Gerald knew the guard would take care of the rest.

“Mr. Crawford, we successfully saved the girl. However, she fainted once she found out where she had been held captive all this time. Rest assured, she isn’t injured, just a little tired,” said a bodyguard who had stepped forth.

“That’s a relief. Take me to her.”

Chapter 444

Though Gerald was relieved, he still felt the need to see her with his own eyes before believing it.

As he walked forward under the umbrellas held by the two guards from before, the guards who had guarded the door lined up in two rows, bowing respectfully as he walked past them.

Inside, a few bodyguards who were dealing with the final procedures of the operation ran over when they saw Gerald entering.

Just like the guards standing guard over the entrance, those present inside stood in two lines respectfully before bowing as well.

“Mr. Crawford!” they shouted in unison.

Tammy, Giya’s parents, and a few others were present in the room when that scene happened and they all looked at Gerald in shock.

“Mr. Crawford?...”

“Gerald... He’s that Mr. Crawford?”

Tammy and the other girls she had brought along all quivered in fright.

They now knew who his true identity was.

Gerald didn't bother about it since he wasn't worried about Tammy and her group of friends at all.

However, when he heard something drop, he turned around and froze.

Felicity had accidentally dropped one of the broadcasting equipment she was holding on to. Behind her, Cassandra and a few others were trying to squeeze through the confused guards who were unsure whether to let them enter the house.

'Why are they here?'

Though the situation was awkward, he signaled to the guards to allow them in. All his classmates were deeply astonished by this.

Gerald sighed. They could wait. What was more important now was to check if Giya was safe.

"Mr. Crawford, you're here!" said Michael who had seen Gerald while exiting one of the rooms.

"We've confirmed it. The rich gangster heir of Mayberry, Kevin Sanford, was the leader of the operation and Yacob was their target. They imprisoned Miss Quarrington to get Yacob to pay up what he owed the Sanfords. He had been given three days and if he failed to return the money by then, it was said that they would r*pe her!" said Michael as he detailed what he had learned from his investigation.

Since Kevin had tried to resist earlier, Drake and Tyson had thrown him off the building. Kevin was now unconscious.

Zack, on the other hand, had continued to pressure the Sanfords till they finally gave in.

That was the basic summary of the entire situation.

Gerald was led into the room where Giya currently was. He didn't want to bother about Tammy, Cassandra, Felicity, or the others who were still in a daze just yet.

A few guards were looking after Giya who had been placed on a couch. She was unconscious as the guard earlier had said.

Relieved that she was still in one piece, Gerald ordered for an ambulance to be called. He could finally breathe a bit easier the moment the ambulance transporting Giya to the hospital drove off into the distance.

While he continued looking out the door, Tammy, Cassandra, and a few others slowly walked toward him.

All of them equally felt that it was strange seeing Gerald like this.

"Gerald... His real identity is Mr. Crawford from Mayberry? Holy c*ap! This is too much for me to take in!" Yoana said aloud as she bit her lower lip in remorse.

The others there were all feeling more or less the same but the revelation affected Cassandra and Felicity the most. They felt their chest tighten the more they thought about it.

"So... It really was true... The one who had always been helping me was Gerald! The rich heir I had been trying so hard to find had been in my class all along! We were so close by!" said Felicity as her phone dropped to the ground. Her hands were trembling badly and her mind had gone blank.

Gerald took in a deep breath before turning to look at all of them. He slowly walked forward, picked up Felicity's phone and returned it to her.

"I had not expected all of you to be here, counselor... What are you guys doing here today?" asked Gerald, a soft and tired smile on his face.

“We were helping the counselor move Mr. Crawford... Wait, no! We were helping her move her things to her new house, Mr. Crawford! Because we helped, she treated us to a meal in a restaurant nearby...” said a girl, blushing hard.

“I see... What a coincidence you were all here while all this happened... Well, since you’re all stuck here because of my cars in the first place... I’ll give all of you a ride back,” said Gerald as he walked out of the house.

A guard opened the door of a car that had been waiting for Gerald outside.

He got inside without another word and left the scene. He knew that even if he stayed for any longer, there was not much else he could say anyway.

Felicity trembled in place as the car Gerald was in slowly disappeared from sight.

“It’s... really him...” whispered Felicity to herself.

“Oh Lilian, don’t be upset anymore! I wonder what’s happening here today... Why are there so many people?”

At that moment, three women walked out of a building unit.

The girl who hadn’t spoken quickly grabbed Lilian’s arm, pulling her out the door to show her all the cars that were slowly leaving. Lilian however, was still in a slight daze. She looked like she had just finished crying not too long ago.

Chapter 445

“You’re right! Look at all the luxurious cars!” said the other girl.

Lilian was momentarily stunned out of her daze when she saw that they were telling the truth.

All of them were Maybach cars and every single one of them was worth as much as a single housing unit on the street they were currently in.

Imagine getting married to a person from such a rich and powerful family... How envious the others would feel.

Lilian sighed internally. 'That god d*mn Sharon... I'm much more beautiful than she is yet Hayward still chose her! That b*tch!'

'The only thing Sharon is good at is pretending!'

Lilian was here because she had rented a house alongside her two other female colleagues there.

Looking at all the Maybach cars refueled Lilian's jealousy toward Sharon and she fumed.

Soon after, the cars all left and everything returned to normal.

As for Yacob, naturally, he was taken away by the police.

The very next day, Gerald immediately headed to the hospital after he woke up to visit Giya.

"Thank you for saving me, Gerald!" were the first words she said the moment she saw him entering her ward.

After she had regained consciousness, her parents had told her what had happened the day before.

"It was my fault for not taking care of you in the first place. I'm just glad you're safe!" said Gerald, a tired smile on his face.

"I've been wondering... Did you save my mother too? I'm asking since Yacob had made some confessions to the police officers. He said that him saving my mother was a lie! If he hadn't mentioned the incident, I wouldn't have entered the car with him the other day!" said Giya as she looked at Gerald.

She had been terribly shocked when she heard from her father that Gerald was actually Mr. Crawford.

“Well, yes I saved her,” replied Gerald as he nodded. He didn’t need to keep it a secret anymore.

“You idiot! Why didn’t you tell me about that earlier? You know, there was a time when I thought of becoming Yacob’s girlfriend! If I ever got into such a situation I’d have blamed you for burdening me like that!” said Giya as she pinched his arm lightly.

“Hey Gerald... Are you afraid that I’ll cling onto you and continue to pester you for the rest of your life?” asked Giya, her eyes serious.

“After thinking about it, I finally understand why you’re so unwilling to be with me. You’re Mr. Crawford from Mayberry, a highly prestigious person! It would be impossible for you to fall in love with a girl like me!”

“Not at all! I’ve already told you before! I’m with Mila now... It’s impossible for me to fall in love with another woman!” replied Gerald honestly.

“I was just pulling your leg, I understood that the first time you told me... Actually, now that I think about it, maybe I was never truly in love with you in the first place. I was probably just touched by the precious gift you had given me the other day... However, now that I know your true identity, I understand that that gift must have been worth nothing much to you!”

“Aah... I’ve been overthinking about this for way too long! I think it’s better this way... I’m feeling much more relieved now... I think I can honestly say this now too. Gerald, I hope that you’ll be happy together with Mila!” said Giya as she smiled brightly.

Gerald felt the tenseness leave his shoulders when he saw that Giya had finally understood and accepted the situation.

“Alright so... We’re good friends from now on, okay? If you have any troubles, I’ll lend a hand as long as I’m able to!” said Gerald as he returned a smile.

In all honesty, Gerald was still filled with self-reproach.

He had canceled so many of her plans in the past. His inactions had also nearly gotten her raped if he had acted any slower!

So Gerald really meant what he said.

“Hmmm... Fine then. I’ll remember what you told me today! If I ask for help in the future you better not try to run away!” joked Giya.

“I won’t! Alright... For now, just focus on resting. I’ll get you some porridge from the cafeteria!” said Gerald as he got up and left the room.

As the door closed behind him, the smile on her face slowly faded. She then clenched on to her blanket tightly.

As Gerald continued walking to the cafeteria with Giya’s lunchbox in hand, he nearly knocked into someone.

“Hey! You blind? Look where you’re going!” scolded the woman who had almost been knocked over. She was being supported by a girl who was also holding on to her IV bottle.

“I’m sorry, I wasn’t- ...Lilian?”

“...Gerald? What are you doing here?” asked Lilian in surprise.

The night before, Lilian’s housemates had accompanied her as she had her IV.

She had suffered from a great shock and she was also fully drenched due to the heavy rain by the time she got home.

Though she showed symptoms of having a high fever, they couldn't do much about it last night due to all the cars congesting their neighborhood.

Lilian had even thought that the fever would be gone by the time morning came.

Chapter 446

Unfortunately, her condition had only worsened by the time her roommates woke her up.

Her roommates then immediately rushed her to the hospital.

Now that she had the drip on, she was finally starting to feel a little better again.

Unexpectedly, she bumped into Gerald here!

"Well, my friend's been hospitalized here. I'm about to get her some porridge now," said Gerald as he smiled.

"Gerald? Oh! Is this the Gerald from your class who keeps running errands for rich heirs?" said one of the girls as she looked at Gerald with contempt.

"Quilla! What are you talking about?" said Lilian in embarrassment.

"What? Isn't this the guy? Look, he's even running an errand for a rich heir now! He said he was getting porridge for someone, remember?" sneered Quilla.

Lilian's face alternated between turning red and pale, unsure which emotion she should be feeling first.

Quilla had always been like this. She had been this straightforward for as long as Lilian knew her.

Honestly, Quilla was even more heartless compared to her.

Though Lilian had indeed been the one who told Quilla about all of that before this.

This was because Gerald had been awesome the last time they were at the Yorknorth Mountain Celebration Festival. Back then, Lilian had insisted on giving her cup of milk tea to Gerald. She was even prepared to lick his boots if she needed to.

She had thought of pursuing Gerald then as well.

Sharon, Hayward, and Lilian were all still speculating on Gerald's true identity back then. They just couldn't understand how he had so many good and close connections with rich heirs. What more, the rich heirs were treating him well!

In the end, Hayward looked into the matter and eventually found out that Gerald wasn't as awesome as they had initially thought. In truth, he had just been running an errand for someone and he was even looking after their home on their behalf!

Lilian and Sharon had no trouble believing Hayward's words.

However, they both kept in mind that they would have to treat Gerald better in the future. After all, he was very close to quite a number of young and rich heirs.

Thinking back, it was precisely because of Lilian's thoughts and her performance during the Yorknorth Mountain Celebration Festival that Hayward felt that she was no good, instead opting for Sharon.

'That b*tch had just been too shocked to react that day!' Lilian thought to herself, fuming slightly.

Between the two of them, Sharon definitely looked down on Gerald more!

Though both of them were shocked and filled with regrets when they found out that Gerald's connections were better than Haywards, Lilian was the only one who had reacted while that b*tch didn't react at all.

After that, Lilian had given it some thought and she came to the realization that just pleasing Gerald just because he had good connections and interpersonal relationships was quite unrealistic. After all, Gerald had nothing else going for him.

Hayward on the other hand, had his assets and also his shop.

What more, he had even helped Sharon by arranging for a better job for her.

This was just the reality of the situation.

Back in the present, Lilian was embarrassed yet again by Quilla's comment and she immediately said, "Don't listen to her nonsense, Gerald. Speaking of which, where are all your young and rich friends?"

Though Lilian still looked down on Gerald for being nothing more than an errand boy, he was still close to several rich heirs, so he wasn't that bad.

"Oh, they've gone to Harnsley to play, I think!" replied Gerald.

"Why didn't they bring you along?" asked Lilian.

"What reason would they have to bring me there?" said Gerald with a bitter smile on his face.

While that group of young and rich heirs enjoyed spending their money specifically only for having fun, Gerald himself liked leading a plain and simple life. Aside from special events or the usual drinking, he didn't really join them for anything else.

Lilian curled her lips slightly. In her mind, she thought that they wouldn't want to bring him along with them anyway.

After chatting a little longer, they eventually went their separate ways.

“You know, he was actually pretty handsome! If he was a little more capable I might have considered pursuing him! Such a pity...” said Quilla.

Lilian looked at her before snorting,

“Pft, if he really was a young and rich heir I’d have pursued him long ago. Unfortunately, that’s just how it is. Speaking of which, I honestly thought of pursuing him just a few days ago.”

“Even though he’s not rich himself, he’s still acquainted with several rich heirs. Life might be a little shabby but we would always have the heirs’ backup and support. That way, I would be able to give Hayward a slap to make him regret choosing that b*tch over me! Plus, Hayward’s always had an inferiority complex whenever it came to Gerald.”

“Once Hayward’s complex is triggered, he’ll definitely change his mind and try to get me back! Once that happens, I’ll have Hayward all to myself!”

“It’s such a pity that those rich heirs are playing by themselves at Harnsley now... D*mn it! If only Hayward didn’t know everything about Gerald’s background... Gerald’s still somewhere at the bottom of the food chain now! How am I ever going to make Hayward regret not choosing me?” said Lilian sadly.

“Hmm... Actually, while you were talking, I suddenly had an idea that just might help you get him back! If it works, he’ll be begging on his knees for you to come back!” said the girl as she grinned.

“What do you have in mind?” asked Lilian immediately, her interest piqued.

Chapter 447

The moment Gerald finally got his hands on some porridge, he felt a light pat on his shoulder.

It was Lilian with a bag of food in hand.

“Say, Gerald! You haven’t eaten yet, right? Come sit with me! I’ve just bought some delicious food from outside the hospital so let’s eat together!”

“I’m fine. Aren’t you still on drips? Why are you here at the cafeteria?” asked Gerald as he smiled.

He didn’t know why Lilian had suddenly become so enthusiastic. It was slightly uncomfortable.

However, despite the fact that she would often ridicule him, Gerald didn’t hold it against her at all.

That was the only reason why he was still speaking politely to her.

“I- I’m fine! I was fine the moment I saw you! You’re... Just like my medicine! Didn’t you know?” asked Lilian with a questionable smile on her face as she looked at Gerald.

She was now standing very close to Gerald and her arm would rub against his from time to time.

Gerald could feel goosebumps all over his body.

To be honest, Lilian had a perfect body figure and looked extremely beautiful. This was because she used to be an art student and she was the captain of the Latin dance team as well.

Compared to Sharon, she definitely looked more enchanting and she was more seductive too.

However, when Gerald had talked to her just a little earlier, her attitude wasn’t like this at all. What had happened under the course of half an hour to make her this enthusiastic? Honestly, she was somehow too enthusiastic this time around.

“Is there something you need, Lilian?” asked Gerald, thoroughly weirded out.

“Oh, don’t worry about it! Food comes first! You know, I ran downstairs to buy some food just now because we all know cafeteria food isn’t the greatest in the world! They’re overpriced here too! But enough of that, look at what I’ve bought!”

In addition to some roast chicken, some drinks, and various other dishes, Lilian had also bought a hot egg crepe.

“I know how much you like eating egg crepes. I remember back during our high school days, you would usually only eat steamed buns with pickles for lunch but on weekends, you’d be willing to treat yourself to an egg crepe after saving a few dollars. Since I saw a stall selling egg crepes by the roadside, I got one for you!”

Before Gerald could reply, she had pulled him down to sit with her.

Gerald felt a little moved when he saw the egg crepe. Back when he was still living in poverty, egg crepes were like food for royalty for him.

He still didn’t know what Lilian was up to. However, seeing how enthusiastic she was and how much food she had bought for him, Gerald felt like it would be a little too cruel to just turn around and leave her like that.

Besides, Lilian was also now starting work as a teacher at the Scothow Elementary School. It was a school that he had built himself, so he would be able to look out for her in the future. Looking at it that way, Gerald became more willing to accept this treat from her this time.

However, the main reason he continued sitting there was still because he didn’t like the idea of outright rejecting her before even listening to what she had to say.

“Come now, eat the food while it’s hot! Why don’t you put the porridge down first? I’ll tell you something once you’re done eating!” said Lilian as she pushed the food toward Gerald.

After doing so, she cupped her hands on her face as she looked at Gerald with a smile.

Gerald began eating and after a while, he asked, “So, what’s the matter? You can tell me already.”

Gerald couldn’t help but hope that Lilian really had a change of heart. If that were the case, then Gerald would definitely be more willing to help her out since they were classmates in the past after all.

“Well... Hehe... I want you to pretend to be my boyfriend for one day! Just for tomorrow! If you help, I’ll always remember your kind deed!”

“...What?”

Gerald was so shocked that he almost spit out the egg crepe in his mouth.

Again with pretending to be someone’s boyfriend?

This wasn’t Gerald’s first time doing that and he knew it wouldn’t be his last either.

It was exactly because of that that he had inadvertently given some girls the wrong idea when he teased them while pretending to be their boyfriend.

Since it was all just for show, it would be impossible for him to really get close to the person anyway. So why should he even pretend to be their boyfriend?

Gerald was sensitive to the matter for sure.

This was because Gerald was really afraid that eventually, someone would come up to him to ask his help for a fake marriage too! That would open an entirely different can of worms.

“Hmm? What are you afraid of? It’s just for one day, and you’ll just need to help me put on a show. Please?” asked Lilian as she placed her hand on top of Gerald’s gently.

She was begging sincerely for his help.

Chapter 448

“Be honest with me... Is it because of Hayward?”

Gerald didn't need to be a rocket scientist to figure that one out. He sighed.

People wouldn't treat you well without a reason. Gerald knew this as a fact since there were no such things as free lunches in this world!

"Bingo! I just need you to act a little so that I can slightly provoke him! If he takes the bait, he'll definitely change his mind soon enough! Hayward's a very petty and narcissistic person so he'll definitely never be able to accept that I'm going out with someone more outstanding than he is!" replied Lilian with a smile on her face.

Gerald sighed as he replied, "Then rather than provoke him, I think he'll only end up laughing at you if we go along with this plan... I'm nowhere near as outstanding as he is... His family is developing Yorknorth Mountain and he even has a shop there! He's lightyears better than me!" lied Gerald as naturally as he breathed.

"Of course I know that, which is why I specified the word, 'act'! Let me tell you something, Gerald, did you know that Hayward's always been rather sensitive whenever it came to you? Not only did you have an ambiguous relationship with that b*tch- I mean Sharon in the past, but you've also put him in tough and awkward situations for quite a few times now! If you change your identity and appear before him, then he'll definitely feel jealous! Consequently, since I'll be pretending to be your date, he'll surely regret not choosing me in the first place! That's why I feel that you're the perfect candidate for this task!" replied Lilian confidently.

It was her friend who had given her this idea earlier. Though Gerald wasn't really a rich and young heir, he could definitely play the part!

"Hold up, change my identity? Elaborate on that please," said Gerald in confusion.

"Oh that, it's simple, really. All you need to do is pretend that you've become filthy rich by winning the lottery! By saying that, in a way, you'll be even wealthier than Hayward! Can you drive? I've rented a luxury car for you to help keep the illusion up. As long as you're willing to act according to how my friend and I have planned, I'll definitely be able to give Hayward a tight slap on his face tomorrow!"

"I'll owe you one if you help me, Gerald. I've also already rented the car so please agree to my request!" pleaded Lilian.

It seemed that Lilian was really going the extra mile just to regain Hayward's love and attention.

Knowing how much this meant to her, Gerald found it hard to turn down her request.

He had initially planned to say goodbye to Giya tomorrow and drive her back to Serene County since his car would be due by then.

However, it seemed that his plans would have to be delayed for another day.

"Alright fine, I'm in," said Gerald as he nodded.

"Yes!" said Lilian as she smiled excitedly.

"I am curious though, how are you so certain that we'll be able to meet Hayward tomorrow?"

"Oh, we definitely will! You don't have to worry about that. You just need to meet up with me at the hospital's entrance tomorrow. I'll pick you up there!"

Once he finished eating, he left the cafeteria with Lilian. Lilian looked much more energized now and it seemed like her fever had subsided.

Gerald couldn't help but think that this was the power of love. Could love really make a girl go crazy?

Then again, since it was Lilian he was talking about, it could also possibly just be the power of money.

Gerald simply sighed.

After the two parted ways, Gerald went back to Giya and fed her the porridge.

Nothing notable happened for the rest of that day.

Early the next morning, Gerald waited for Lilian at the park next to the hospital as they had previously agreed to meet there.

He didn't have to wait long when a brand-new dazzling white Mercedes Benz G500 drove over and stopped in front of Gerald.

When the car window was rolled down, Gerald saw that both Lilian and her friend were inside.

"I really wasn't expecting you to be this punctual! Alright, get in! We're bringing you to a hairstylist next!" said Lilian.

"Hey, Hey! Snap out of it, Gerald! Are you shocked because you're looking at such a luxurious car? Get in already! You're in for a treat today because you'll get to ride in a Mercedes Benz G500 today!"

Gerald rubbed his temple as he shook his head.

Of course he would be shocked! After all, this Mercedes Benz G500 felt way too familiar...

Chapter 449

"Is... This the car you rented?"

Once he got into the car, his doubts were cleared. It really was the same Mercedes Benz G500 that he had leased to Quade's sister, Quartney!

This was way too coincidental.

"It is. Also, I'm assuming that though you're acquainted with many rich and young heirs, they don't usually bring you along to play with them, right? You've probably never had the chance to sit in such a good car before, have you Gerald?" said Lilian arrogantly as she drove.

“You know, this model costs a full, three hundred thousand dollars! What more, this car is brand-new! Lilian and I paid fifteen thousand dollars each for the deposit just to rent it! Our saving accounts are barren right now!” said Lilian’s friend proudly for some reason.

She then took her cell phone out and started recording some videos.

“Lilian, why don’t you open the sunroof? I want to stick my head out and take some pictures!” said Lilian’s friend excitedly.

“Opening it now! But please control yourself up there! The amount we can claim back will be deducted if even the tiniest scratch appears on the car!” said Lilian as she looked for the sunroof’s button.

“...Wait, which is the button for the sunroof? It seems to work both ways? I don’t understand!” said Lilian, confused.

It was natural for her to get confused with how the car operated since it was her first time in it after all.

Gerald had been sitting at the back of the car and he couldn’t help but feel slightly uncomfortable as he watched Lilian press all the buttons she could find.

It wasn’t long before he gave up and told her which button opened the sunroof.

Lilian tried it and it turned out that he was right.

“Well, look at you! I didn’t expect you to be this capable! You seem to know this car pretty well!” said Lilian.

“Oh right, you used to like cars a lot back in high school right? It seems that you still maintain your interests from back then!”

Gerald simply nodded with a wry smile on his face.

With the sunroof now open, Lilian's friend popped her head out to take some pictures.

Not too long after, all three of them arrived at a hairstylist and Gerald was given a cool new look.

They then gave Gerald a suit, a white shirt, and a pair of leather shoes to put on.

Lilian and her friend couldn't help but feel that Gerald looked a little handsome after going through that makeover.

Though Lilian had high standards for her men, she couldn't help but feel impressed and secretly peeked at Gerald whenever she could.

"So where are we going now?" asked Gerald after they got into the car again.

"We're going to the coffee shop next to Mayberry Hotel. Also, Gerald, you should know a few things first. Since you know Aiden and his friends, you know how rich and young men usually behave. However, you're pretending to be a completely different kind of rich and young man today. Since you 'won the lottery', you'll have to display a more rebellious and haughty attitude so that Hayward will take the bait. That's the usual mentality of the nouveau riche, do you get what I'm saying?" replied Lilian.

"I... See. Do I really have to act that way just because I got rich overnight?" asked Gerald, a bitter smile on his face.

Gerald couldn't help but think to himself. If he really had become extremely rich overnight, why would Lilian still be trying to pursue Hayward?

"Just do as I say and everything will turn out just fine! You'll also have to listen to all of Quilla's arrangements! She'll be helping you with all the preparations!"

Hearing that, Gerald could only nod helplessly. What else could he say?

Upon arriving at the coffee shop, Lilian began putting up her act.

She clung on to Gerald's arm as he placed his hand over hers while they entered the coffee shop.

Gerald saw that both Hayward and Sharon were having coffee there as well. Admiration toward Lilian grew in Gerald, understanding how much research she must have done to plan all this out.

Both of them acted like a real couple as they walked toward a table next to Hayward and Sharon before sitting down.

It wasn't long before Sharon idly looked to the side and saw the two beside them.

She was startled silent for a moment.

"May I take your order?" asked a waiter respectfully after he walked over. Seeing how formal both Gerald and Lilian looked and dressed, the waiter was careful to be on his best and most polite behavior.

"Hmm. Give us your most expensive coffee!"

Chapter 450

As Lilian had instructed him, Gerald was now acting out the impression of someone nouveau riche.

He even sat with his legs crossed.

"Our most expensive coffee? Sir, our most expensive one costs forty-five dollars each," replied the waiter, slightly surprised.

"So be it! Nothing is too expensive for me! Two cups of that coffee and make sure they're brewed perfectly!"

"Right away, sir!" said the waiter before bowing and running off.

Lilian found it both curious and funny when she saw Gerald acting so ostentatiously while flaunting his wealth. He even shook his watch from time to time to let others see it! Honestly, Lilian hadn't expected that Gerald could be this cool!

By then, Hayward had already noticed Gerald and Lilian sitting next to them.

His face turned sour the moment he heard Gerald ordering two cups of coffee which cost forty-five dollars each.

What more, wasn't Lilian being a little too intimate with Gerald? Hayward felt very uncomfortable.

He used to have her sticking close to him every day after all. Truth be told, he also enjoyed her constantly fawning over him back then.

When he chose Sharon over her, he knew that Lilian would still love him, being as vain as he was. However, now that she was being intimate with another man, he was feeling extremely dissatisfied.

He had not expected Lilian to move on so quickly.

And to think that she had chosen Gerald! The person he had always felt sensitive and competitive toward!

A fuse snapped in Hayward's mind as he slammed his hands onto the coffee table.

"Pft! Why are you pretending to be rich? Do you think I don't know about your background? Stop being so pretentious!" said Hayward coldly.

Sharon looked at Gerald and Lilian before trying to calm Hayward down.

"Speaking of which, Gerald, you've just bought a new car right? Where are we going to have fun later? Can we go to Mayberry Commercial Street? I saw a skirt that I really liked there so can we please go

there later to buy it? It only costs four hundred and fifty dollars! Please!” pleased Lilian as she gently shook Gerald’s arm.

“Four hundred and fifty dollars? Are you a beggar? You’re only to wear clothes that cost at least a thousand dollars! Otherwise, don’t even bother telling me about it! Have some shame!” replied Gerald as he carefully pushed her hands away from his arm.

Lilian really hadn’t expected nouveau riche Gerald to be this cool.

She simply put on a cute and helpless face before nodding obediently when she heard his words.

“Humph! Showing off when you’re just in charge of running errands for others?”

Hayward was getting more and more agitated by the second when he saw Lilian being so submissive toward Gerald after being reprimanded by him. His jealousy was reaching new heights.

D*mn it! What did Gerald have that he didn’t? How could Gerald ever be better than him in any way?

“Relax, Hayward. Some people just like to show off. They’re just being pretentious so you don’t have to bother even looking at them!” said Sharon as she added her two cents to the conversation.

“Oh right, there was a time when we really thought that you were just an ordinary errand boy for rich people! I’m glad to say that we were wrong about that! While you were helping them you must have gotten some of their good luck as well! Hahaha! I really hadn’t expected you to win that much money from the lottery!”

Seeing that she had hooked Hayward deep into her trap, she began speaking even more admiringly toward Gerald as she held on to his hand.

“...What? Won what lottery?”

Her words had caught Hayward’s attention.

“Gerald, how much did you win?” asked Sharon as she stared at Gerald nervously.

It would be impossible for Gerald to get a girl like Lilian to fawn over him like this if he had only won fifty thousand dollars. What more, Gerald was also spending so lavishly now.

The figure needed to be immense.

Sharon was really afraid that Gerald would surpass Hayward. If that happened, then she would probably be the one regretting it the most. Knowing that, her anxiety and nervousness only grew as she waited for Gerald to answer.

“Oh, I was just lucky... I didn’t think I’d win so much money just like that. As for the amount I won... Well, let’s just say that it isn’t convenient for me to reveal such information to you” said Gerald as he winked at Lilian with a smile on his face.

At that moment, Gerald reached into his pocket to take his cell phone out.

As a result, his car key ‘accidentally’ fell to the ground.

When Hayward and Sharon looked down, their eyes widened in shock.

“That’s... That’s the car key of a Mercedes Benz G500?!”

Chapter 451

“Gerald, is this the new car you bought?” Sharon asked in surprise.

“Yeah. I got it a few days ago. Just a means to get from point A to B,” replied Gerald as he casually tossed the keys on the table.

This excited but distressed Lilian, as she was afraid that the expensive key to the car would be damaged.

What excited her more, though, was that Hayward's face had already turned green.

"By the way, I heard Lilian saying that you've recently bought a car? I haven't seen it yet. What did you get yourself? A BMW 7 Series, a Mercedes-Benz, or an Audi? Worth more than a hundred fifty grand?" Gerald asked with a smile on his face as he looked at Hayward.

"Hehe! Hayward procured the Passat for more than thirty grand, but how could that compare to your three hundred thousand dollar car?" scoffed Lilian as she rolled her eyes at Hayward.

Hayward inhaled sharply, as his hands started going into an uncontrollable tremor.

"Oh? You bought a Passat? Why did you buy that?" replied Gerald with a chuckle.

"I can buy whatever I please, and the two of you have nothing to worry about. Didn't you just win the lottery anyway? So, why the gloating?" Hayward replied anxiously.

"I'm the luckiest woman in the world, Gerald, being together with you. I'll stick by your side for the rest of my life, and we shall enjoy a wonderful life together! You'll have to treat me well, though, and that includes buying me all the clothes I want today!"

"Yes! Of course, I will buy them for you. But don't forget that you've also promised me that you'll give me your first time tonight, hehe!" Gerald whispered as he held Lilian's soft hands.

When Lilian heard Gerald's words, she really felt like giving him a tight, bloody slap..

Damn it! Who gave him the right to say that? When was this ever part of the script?

After all, dating was dating, and if Gerald were to bring the topic into the conversation, Hayward would undoubtedly be very easy to break.

Fortunately, Gerald's sentence left a massive impact.

Lilian originally planned to warn Gerald from talking too much nonsense, but it was then that she realized Hayward's face had already turned green.

His lips quivered with rage.

She saw that those few words from Gerald had provoked Hayward's anger in more ways than one.

"Ah! Naughty, naughty! I hate you..."

Lilian replied shyly.

Sure enough, Hayward got up to his feet, filled with rage and anger.

"No way, Lilian, why are you doing this? What did you want to get again? How about letting me buy it for you instead? Why give your first time to this pathetic jerk? Don't degrade and abuse yourself just because he won the lottery!"

Lilian ignored everything else, instantly refuting Hayward with an aggressive comeback.

"Pfft! Hayward, who gave you the right to call my boyfriend a pathetic jerk? Besides, he's already mine. So, what's wrong with me giving my first time to my boyfriend anyway? What has it got to do with you?"

"You know, I've always thought you were the reliable and dependable kind, Lillian. I thought you'd always paid great attention to your conduct, and frankly, although I chose to get together with Sharon, I felt really entangled, and I was in a hell lot of pain throughout the whole thing. I'm filled with regret as well, but now that I see you behaving like this, I am with no resentment, nor do I blame myself anymore for letting you go. Let's go, Sharon!" snapped a furious Hayward as he was about to pull Sharon away.

Lilian looked at Hayward with a sea of worry in her eyes.

Compared to Sharon, Lilian's most significant advantage was that she understood every part of Hayward. She was the one who knew best about his psychological and mental state.

She also knew all too well that Hayward must be saying this to test if she still liked him or not, waiting to see if she would be remorseful and apologize to him for her actions.

That said, if Lilian were to do that, it would all be truly over.

She hugged Gerald as tightly as she could, as though Hayward's words meant nothing to her at all.

"My dear... I don't care what anyone else thinks of me. I promise I'll treat you well from now on. Will you treat me well too?"

Gerald took the opportunity to hold Lilian's waist, giving it a gentle and passionate squeeze.

"Of course, I will treat you well."

He wasn't stupid either. Why not seize this opportunity and take advantage of her when he could?

He continued caressing Lilian's body.

Those words were loud and clear to Hayward too, and now, his face had lost all color, looking a ghostly white.

Without saying another word, Sharon dragged Hayward out of the coffee shop.

"F*cking hell... that's enough! Why are you still touching me?"

Lilian pushed Gerald away as soon as she saw Hayward leaving.

Chapter 452

Lilian looked at Gerald reproachfully, "You did a pretty good job but I don't want you to be touching me. Do you really think that I am your girlfriend?"

“Oh? So, now that Hayward’s gone, what should we do?” asked a perplexed Gerald.

“Hmph! Don’t worry. He will definitely come back for me... One, Two, Three...”

Lilian counted with her fingers when suddenly, Sharon’s voice suddenly came over her shoulder.

“Hayward, what are you doing?”

“Lilian, there are some things that I need to clear up with you. I don’t know what you think of me now, but I admit I was wrong for not standing up for you when Sharon hit you yesterday. I’ve been regretting it a lot. I sincerely hope that you’ll give me a chance. I wish to prove that I am way stronger and capable compared to a nouveau riche like Gerald!” replied Hayward, his tone contrite, much humbler than he always sounded.

Obviously, his self-esteem seemed completely diminished, which was once held so highly by him.

Gerald couldn’t help feeling a deep sense of admiration toward Lilian as he watched the scene unfold from the sidelines.

“But I already have Gerald, a guy who has a luxury car, and he’s about to buy me lots of branded cosmetics and bags too! What about you? What can you offer me?” Lilian asked in response.

“Wow! So, you and Gerald are together simply because he’s wealthier than me, right?” Hayward asked in disappointment and disbelief.

Gerald remembered how the conversation sounded eerily familiar. Wasn’t that what Xavia said at the small grove the other day?

He completely understood what was going on; it wasn’t because Hayward really loved Lilian but rather, a question of the very fabric of the dignity of a man.

It had always been the case, whether he liked it or not. Men like Hayward, with a wall of ego surrounding him, would never be able to swallow the fact that the person who was once head-over-heels for him was now in love with someone else.

He desired to conquer Lilian in her entirety to reclaim his dignity.

“Say whatever you like! Let’s go for a ride, Gerald.”

Lilian then grabbed Gerald’s arm before the two headed off to his car.

“Get out of my way! You’re standing in my way,” said Gerald as he patted Hayward gently on his chest before walking towards the parking lot.

Unwilling to yield, Hayward chased after the two.

“Gerald, can I drive your car? I have never driven something this good before,” begged Lilian with a sparkle in her eye.

“Yeah sure! Here, take the keys,” Gerald grinned as he tossed the car keys to Lilian.

“Lilian... don’t go! Please. Can you just listen to me? I was wrong. I was really wrong! Can you please just give me another chance? I will cherish and treasure you more than Gerald ever would! From now, I will buy you whatever you want as long as I can afford it! Allow me the chance to prove that I am definitely a hundred times more capable than Gerald!” Hayward implored Lilian as he held her arm tightly.

“Is that so? But don’t you already have Sharon?” Lilian asked as she looked at Hayward with accusing eyes.

Hayward looked into Sharon’s eyes, lowering his tone by a notch. “I’m sorry, Sharon. I just discovered that Lilian is the person I really love. Let’s end this.”

“Hayward? How could you?!”

In a dejecting mix of rage, anger, and confusion, Sharon instantly broke into a fit of tears, weeping and sobbing uncontrollably.

A smile finally appeared on Lilian's face. She felt that her pride had been rightfully restored and a sense of satisfaction and contentment filled her heart.

As for Hayward, Lilian had taken advantage of his ego and pride, knowing how he would undoubtedly be stimulated once he found out that she had gotten a far more capable boyfriend than him.

After all, no matter how beautiful a person turned out to be, her value would certainly depreciate if nobody pursued her. Not to mention how countless gorgeous women were walking the earth.

That would all change the moment a capable man of robust standing was head over heels for you. It was then that your value would skyrocket beyond the bounds of social strata.

Otherwise, even if a man finally managed to capture your heart, they wouldn't cherish you anyway.

Through this, Lilian's importance to Hayward had far surpassed that of Sharon.

After all, Murphy, Sharon's ex-boyfriend's capabilities were simply no threat to Hayward at all.

Hayward grabbed Lilian's hand as he continued to speak to her.

Gerald felt strangely embarrassed, and since he just had a massive mug of coffee, he had to use the toilet urgently.

"This time, since I can tell you're sincere, Hayward, I promise to be with you then."

Lilian replied with a smile on her face when she saw that her goal had been achieved.

At that moment...

“Eh? What a coincidence, Miss Cole! You are here? I happened to be looking for you...” said a woman.

When Lilian caught a glimpse of the person walking towards her, her pupils instantly contracted...

Chapter 453

“Miss Cole?”

A woman looking to be about twenty-five years of age strutted over, calling Lilian as she gazed upon her respectfully.

Lilian, on the other hand, pretended not to know the woman the moment she saw her.

Who was she?

She was none other than Quartney, the business manager who rented this car to her.

“Oh? Is it urgent? Should there be anything urgent, perhaps you can talk to me on WeChat when I am home. It’s not a really convenient time at the moment.”

Lilian’s face was drained of its color.

Oh god! How could there be such a coincidence?

She actually ran into the manager of the rental car here.

Why couldn’t it happen later? She just got back together with Hayward.

“It’s okay, Miss Cole. I just wanted to let you know that I did not pay attention to the time when I rented this car to you. I wrote that you should return the car tomorrow, but I made a mistake. You have to

return the car before 4 p.m today as we will have to deliver the car back to the customer before five! I am sorry. It is really our negligence at work! I was initially planning to give you a call later!”

Quartney smiled apologetically.

She then waved her hand at Lilian before leaving.

What?

Hayward and Sharon were both stunned for a moment when they heard Quartney’s words.

“Lilian, a rental car? What’s going on here?”

Hayward did not understand what was going on.

“Huh? I...I don’t understand what is going on too!”

Lilian did not know what else to say.

She was completely at a loss for words.

“Wow okay, I get the whole picture now. Lilian, you were the one who rented this car, right? You rented it so that you could use it to deceive Hayward on purpose. Tell me I’m right.”

Sharon poked.

Lilian did not know what to do.

She suddenly saw Gerald walking back towards her from the washroom.

Lilian suddenly had a plan in mind.

She turned around and quickly ran towards Gerald.

“Gerald, come here. There is something that I need to tell you!”

Lilian grabbed Gerald’s arm before she whispered, “It’s over! Hayward found out that the Mercedes Benz G500 is a rental car! Can you just pretend that you were the one who lied to me about the car? Okay? Please, you have to help me!”

Gerald was stunned for a second. What was going on here?

As he was lost in the moment, Hayward and Sharon were making their way towards Gerald.

“Gerald, you b*stard! How dare you lie to me?! You rented this car just so that you could deceive me. This car doesn’t belong to you at all!”

Lilian suddenly roared.

“What is going on? This is my car!”

Gerald replied in shock.

“Pfft! Gerald, stop being such a tough nut! I’m shocked to see what a sly person you actually are! Using such despicable methods to cheat and deceive Lilian and she almost fell for your tricks! And not forgetting, I almost broke up with Sharon for real because of you too!”

Hayward sniggered.

“So now, can you see who are the ones who are truly good to you? Some girls simply like to stick to a guy just because they think they’re loaded, but they end up getting fooled instead! Do you see the clearer picture now?” Sharon exclaimed as she glared at Hayward.

“Hayward, you said that you were going to treat me well moving forward!”

Lilian cried out.

“C’mon Lilian, you know I think it’s time for a wakeup call. This pathetic jerk almost cost my relationship with Sharon today. Seriously! The both of us are supposed to attend Miss Larson’s birthday banquet at noon later today. We almost made a fuss and broke up for no reason at all because of this matter!”

Hayward clutched Sharon’s hand tightly, threw Gerald and Lilian a cold glare before leaving for Mayberry Hotel.

It was Miss Larson’s birthday today so Hayward definitely did not want to be late. He then decided to pop by a cafe for a quick coffee fix first.

Alas! What a dramatic outcome.

Lilian’s value just completely plummeted with the devaluation of Gerald’s identity.

“By the way, Gerald, didn’t you win the lottery? Hahaha! Why don’t you come over to Mayberry Hotel too? We have tickets!”

Chapter 454

Hayward mocked Gerald before ushering Sharon away with him happily.

Lilian squatted and started sobbing.

“Oh! Mr. Crawford! How come you’re here?”

A voice suddenly spoke.

A middle-aged man clad in a suit and leather shoes trotted towards Gerald.

“You are?”

Gerald thought he looked really familiar, but couldn't put a name to it.

“Well, Mr. Crawford, it's normal for you not to know who I am. But I know who you are. I was also there at your last reception meeting in Serene County. I witnessed how you took the day with grace. My name is Blake Wadford. Mr. Lyle has just recruited me into the group as the events planning manager. Are you also here to attend Miss Larson's birthday banquet?”

The man smiled and rubbed his hands nervously.

Lilian's sobbing stopped, as she stared at the men blankly.

Even Hayward and Sharon who were about to enter the hotel were confused with the statement they heard.

“Oh! Hello, Mr. Wadford. So you planned Miss Larson's birthday banquet too?”

Gerald couldn't seem to figure it out. Which Miss Larson was he talking about? Why was someone from his own group planning her birthday banquet?

“Ahem. Of course! It's Miss Elena Larson's birthday today. Since we're all members of the same group, it goes without saying that I should be helping out in her banquet arrangements. Many owners of Mayberry Commercial Street will be here too today. Anyways, the whole lot of them will be moving into Yorknorth Mountain Commercial Street in the second half of the year together, so this kinda feels like a gathering too.”

Blake explained.

“Oh, I see!”

Gerald felt a twang of uneasiness creeping up.

Elena was also friends with him. So, why wasn't he invited?

“Mr. Wadford, you know Gerald?”

Lilian asked, her eyes wide with curiosity.

She was observing the look on Hayward's face right now.

Lilian felt as though this was a good chance to make a comeback.

Could this be the man that her friend, Quilla had arranged to come and rescue?

After all, Quilla had been keeping an eye on the situation nearby, but she had not shown up yet.

The more she thought about it, the more Lilian was convinced that this was all staged by Quilla.

“Of course, I know Mr. Crawford. Even if I didn't know him, his car is definitely recognizable.”

Mr. Wadford responded, pointing at the Mercedes Benz G500.

Perfect!

Lilian was certain that her best friend had made the move.

She had zero clue how Quilla managed to find someone like him, but it felt really good.

Since Hayward and Sharon insulted Gerald earlier, it would be tough for Lilian to explain herself if he were to just walk away.

Plus, Gerald wouldn't be happy about it either.

Since he was already here, just in time for Elena's birthday, he figured he'd pop by inside to take a look then. This would also be a slap in the face for Hayward and perhaps stop him from being so pretentious.

Gerald turned to Blake and said, "Mr. Wadford, why don't you give me two tickets then? I didn't bring it with me today."

"Oh? Okay! Of course, Mr. Crawford."

Blake nodded.

Lilian peered at Gerald, as though she was trying to remind him not to overdo it. This was Miss Larson's birthday banquet. How would this man be able to give them admission tickets if he was just here to put on an act?

But much to Lilian's surprise, Blake whipped out the tickets for Gerald.

Hayward and Sharon were stunned too.

Gerald was oblivious to his surroundings. He simply pulled Lilian into his arms as he said, "Come, let's go. Let me bring you to a banquet today!"

Lilian was taken aback and confused when Gerald suddenly pulled her into his embrace, but regained her senses and gently held his waist back.

The both of them breezed into the hotel, under Hayward's envious glare.

'Damn it! Why thick could Gerald get?'

Hayward thought in envy.

He then followed closely behind the pair and went in as well...

Chapter 455

"F*ck! Gerald, we really got in!"

Lilian breathed, stupefied.

She barely showed any resistance, although Gerald was still hugging her waist.

It was all only too exciting, now that the tables have turned.

They were in the venue.

Elena's birthday banquet was exceptionally grand this time. This was mainly because Mr. Larson wanted to take advantage of this opportunity to host a large gathering for all the business owners too.

As Hayward was from the Yorknorth Mountain, that automatically qualified him on the banquet attendees' list.

There were more than a hundred guests on the scene. Most were rich and young heirs, and there were many bosses too.

The layout of the event was a bit similar to that of a wedding ceremony. There was a long aisle in the middle, and the banquet tables lined both sides of the aisle.

Gerald managed to find a seat for both of them.

After all, there were many people here, and most would just be casually looking for a place to sit with their friends.

Hayward made his entrance in the ballroom, threw a fierce gaze at Gerald and Lilian before pulling Sharon over to sit at another table with some of his friends.

“Gerald? Why are you here too?”

A random voice questioned out loud.

As he turned around to have a look, Gerald was startled.

It was a girl, and it turned out to be Leila, Mr. Jung’s daughter.

A group of dashing young men and beautiful women were standing next to her. Leila also stared at Gerald in surprise.

Why was Leila here?

As Gerald gave it some thought, he could slowly put things into perspective.

Mr. Jung was not the leader of Weston Merchants Holdings. Since he was investing in Serene County, he must be acquainted with and had many deals with large managers and bosses.

Since Elena’s father organized such a large gathering and Hayward could get an admission ticket, it went without saying that Leila would get one too.

What a coincidence that they had to bump into one another.

“Leila, is this a friend of yours?”

A young, handsome man next to Leila suddenly asked.

“Well, I don’t think he’s considered a friend? We’re both from the same hometown, that’s all, and his dad had some connections with mine in the past. But we’ve not been in contact with their family since a while back. His family owes a lot of money now, and his parents and sister are working abroad to pay off his family debts. That being said, it’s really unexpected that he’s able to attend such a huge function!”

Leila explained as she squinted at Gerald.

After all, she could still remember how Gerald previously placed her in a very tough and awkward situation at the western restaurant.

She finally succeeded in getting her father to bag an admission ticket for her this time around, not to mention how he got it with inside help. By coming here, she hoped to gain some insight too.

Ever since she became even more exposed, she had met Liam Zachman, a young and rich heir from Mayberry City.

Liam’s family used to run a large enterprise in Mayberry City. When they heard about the developments of Yorknorth Mountain, they managed to secure the contract to run one of the largest restaurants there. It only meant that they wouldn’t have any shortage of funds in the future.

He was one of the most influential and loaded heirs among the rest.

In retrospect, Douglas had been totally eclipsed by Liam.

Leila also found that slapping Douglas in the face just because of Gerald was somewhat ridiculous.

“Liam, he’s a nobody. He used to be an infamous pauper in our Serene High School.”

Douglas was there to attend the gathering too.

“Oh! Hehe, so that’s the case, eh. Well, let’s look for a place to sit down first. We can all then have a good chat together!” He told Liam politely as he emerged from the crowd.

Liam said to the group of young men and women behind him,

“Liam! You just arrived? I’ve already reserved a good seat for you!”

Hayward brought Sharon over to greet Liam.

His table was very close to Gerald, after all.

“Hayward, you’re early! Leila, let me introduce you to my friend, Hayward!”

Liam introduced as he smiled.

Impressions of Hayward skyrocketed.

Since he owned a shop at Yorknorth Mountain, his reputation had peaked.

He, too, was to be considered a part of the rich heir circle.

Chapter 456

Leila too introduced herself after everyone. She had learned a lot from these people.

Leila always thought that the rich only talked about luxurious cars, but these people did not. Their discussions had a depth to them—money management and a healthy lifestyle, and Leila was very much impressed.

Douglas, who loved to flaunt his wealth, or Gerald, of whom she thought was loaded by sheer luck, were nowhere to be compared to this sophisticated bunch of technocrats.

Lilian was upset after listening to the manner in which Hayward spoke. She knew Gerald would not keep up to his self-proclaimed status since everyone there was well off.

Hayward had been doing pretty well and knew many people. Thanks to that, Lilian couldn't bear to raise her head, feeling as though today had been an utter failure.

"When is Elena Larson coming?" quizzed a few young chaps. For most of them, it was their first time meeting Elena Larson, and they were very excited.

Meanwhile, backstage.

"Mr. Wadford, are you sure? He came? How's that possible?"

Elena sprung away from the makeup artist and asked.

"Ms. Larson, did you know that Mr. Crawford is here today?"

"Why would he be here...it must've been an optical illusion. Was there a girl by his side?" Elena questioned.

Ever since Gerald and Mila had gotten together, Elena didn't bother reaching out to him because she knew Gerald never liked her in the first place, and whenever she saw him, she would feel this great sense of grief flood her chest.

She was going to invite Gerald to her birthday party, but her father told her that Gerald had been busy with his project, and one of his older family members was in the hospital. Elena ought to not be disturbing him.

In fact, no one of extreme importance from the company was attending. Not even Aiden and the others, so, there was no point in inviting Gerald.

Elena promised her father, disappointed, as she wanted him to attend really badly. Especially after she heard that Gerald was there.

“It’s true, Ms. Larson! How could I have recognized Mr. Crawford wrongly? I gave him the tickets personally, but he brought along a girl with him,” replied Blake.

“This is really hard to swallow!” She turned to the workers. “I’ll be going out soon, so get ready.”

Elena graced the ballroom as the spotlight fell on her. She donned a pristine, white gown.

“Oh, wow! She is breathtaking!”

“Oh, my goodness! Ms. Larson is so gorgeous!”

When he heard the excited murmurs, Gerald looked up to the stage.

Chapter 457

Gerald had not seen Elena in a while, and she seemed much prettier now.

“Elena Larson is gorgeous!” a stunned Hayward exclaimed. Sharon, nonetheless, wasn’t jealous at all.

She had to admit that Elena was a real beauty.

“Of course, she is! Elena is Mr. Crawford’s godsister. She has to be!” Liam smiled.

“Then why isn’t Mr. Crawford here, Liam?” Leila asked.

She was really hoping to see who Mr. Crawford was.

“Let me tell you why. My dad mentioned he’s someone who keeps a low profile and doesn’t like banquets and functions as such.” Liam explained as if he knew about Gerald very well.

“Aw!” Leila was disappointed.

“Hey Leila, would you like a drink? This fruit juice is imported, it’s excellent! Let me get you some!”

Douglas was unhappy seeing Liam and Leila hitting off well.

“I’m good. Just leave me be.” Leila frowned at Douglas and turned towards Liam again.

“I need one, please!” A waiter passed by Lilian, and she reached out for a drink.

Lilian was parched after what happened earlier on, and she was even more anxious now.

Elena delivered her speech on the stage as her eyes skimmed around the room.

Suddenly, someone shouted, and everyone went silent.

It was Lilian.

She had discovered how lovely the drink was, and she wanted to get one for Gerald too, but the glass slipped, spilling the drink all over him and herself.

“Oh, no! Let me help you!” Gerald quickly offered to help.

He grabbed some napkins, helped Lilian clean her dress, then wiped the remainder of the liquid off his pants.

“How embarrassing! She can’t even hold a glass properly!”

“I know, right! Elena’s still speaking, and she’s only bothered by the food. Ridiculous!”

A few people seated at the same table insulted her.

“There is an obvious difference between finding a rich boyfriend and dating a fraud. Even the standards are worlds apart!” added Sharon, sniggering away silently.

“Thank heavens I didn’t end up with her!” Hayward exclaimed.

Leila just looked at Gerald and shook her head judgmentally.

“I’m so sorry! I really didn’t mean it!” A scared and quivering Lilian immediately apologized.

Her face blushed a bright beetroot, and she tugged hard on Gerald’s sleeves.

“Gerald, I think we should leave!”

Lilian knew how tall of an order it was to get Gerald acting like someone of wealth, but she chose to follow him anyway. Never did she think she would embarrass herself like that.

“Why should we leave? It’s just a glass. We’ll be fine!” Gerald found it really intriguing that a girl like Lilian would have such low self-esteem.

Gerald remembered his first time attending such functions. He was not unlike her.

Chapter 458

Gerald tried to calm her down.

“Who were these two? How did they even come in here? Did they know the rules?” exclaimed a middle-aged man from the other table. The entire room fell into a hushed whisper.

It was nothing but plain rudeness stealing Elena’s limelight while she was still talking on stage.

All the more, standing up while everyone else was seated must have caught the attention of the Larsons.

Everyone’s attention then shifted back to the stage to see how Elena would react.

Tears welled up in her eyes as she dropped the microphone in her hand.

“You came!” Elena cried.

Gerald cleaned his pants, and when he heard Elena’s voice, he realized she was looking right at him.

“Yes. Happy birthday!” Gerald replied awkwardly.

He looked around, realizing he didn’t actually bring any gifts for her except his car keys.

“I’m sorry I didn’t manage to prepare anything for your birthday. I can only wish,” Gerald said apologetically.

“I thought you’d forgotten me!” Elena wiped off her tears, bolting toward Gerald and embracing him as tightly as she could.

The scene shocked everyone.

“It’s been so long since you last called! Ever since you’ve gotten yourself a girlfriend, you completely forgot about me!” Elena wailed helplessly.

“Hey, hey. I’m here now. Don’t cry!” Gerald patted Elena gently on her shoulders.

“What?”

“What the f*ck?”

Everyone was dumbfounded.

Elena was like a goddess to everyone else, and only the elites could be acquainted with her, but this ordinary looking guy just got a hug from her?

Even their conversations were so cheesy! Who on earth was this guy?

The lot of young men had their eyes green with envy and hearts bursting with jealousy.

Even Hayward and Sharon were stupefied.

Gerald must have gotten lucky—how on earth did he ever get that likeness of a goddess?

Hayward failed to comprehend, and even Leila and the others could not believe their eyes.

“I’ll celebrate with you again tonight!” Gerald smiled.

Gerald had made an effort to be present, only to shut Hayward up and the rest. But this wasn’t what he had in mind, and all turned out to be a mighty embarrassing affair.

“Alright. Now’s your chance to make it up to me.”

Elena's tears stopped falling.

Once she had calmed down, Gerald left the scene with Lilian.

The two walked in front while Hayward, Leila, and the rest tagged behind.

They felt really embarrassed by what happened earlier, but they were very curious about who Gerald truly was. How could he do that to Elena?

After walking for some distance, they finally reached the car.

"Ms. Cole, I've been waiting for you but couldn't get hold of you through your phone."

Quartney was waiting next to the car, in her hands, laid the contract...

Chapter 459

"I turned off my phone, Ms. Weaver," Lilian shouted as she ran toward Quartney.

Since Hayward and the others were following them, she was afraid they might get exposed.

The last time Gerald claimed the Ferrari was his, Sharon did not believe him. This time, she had to make it clear.

She stomped over to Gerald and stood in front of Quartney. She glared at Lilian and asked, "What are you afraid of, Lilian?"

"Ms. Weaver, right? Is this car rented by Lilian?"

"Absolutely not!"

Lilian tried to make eye contact with Ms. Weaver—it was apparent she was trying to hide something.

Sharon snatched the contract from Ms. Weaver and laughed, "This is a rental! Look, Hayward! Oh, Ms. Jung and Douglas, let me humor you guys. I was having some coffee with Hayward today, and this girl called Lilian..."

Sharon showed them the contract smugly while spilling the details from this morning's incident.

Hayward was envious of Gerald, but after what Sharon said, he felt terrible for Lilian again. Seeing how everyone had witnessed Elena hugging Gerald, this was the only way to get back at him.

It wasn't that surprising that Gerald knew about Elena, seeing how he was Aiden and Yoel's subordinates.

Everyone eagerly anticipated Lilian's explanation about the car.

The moment Sharon found out the car was not Gerald's, a wave of relief instantly washed over her.

"Lilian, did you really rent this car?"

Hayward threw Lilian a disgusting look.

Lilian started sobbing. "I'm really sorry, Hayward... I'm sorry... I shouldn't have lied to you!"

"Hah, so it's rented by Lilian. Even the IC numbers don't match! Let's see who the owner is. Wait... huh? Gerald?!" Sharon froze, stunned to the point her mouth was wide open.

"This...this has to be a mistake, right?" Sharon's eyes widened in disbelief.

"Mr, Crawford you're here! I was talking to Ms. Cole just now, and I didn't notice you. My apologies!" a surprised Quartney quickly apologized.

"It's fine, Ms. Weaver. Anyway, I can leave after signing, right?" Gerald smiled.

“Yes, Mr. Crawford, but don’t you need to go over the details first?”

“No worries. I’ve been staring at it for the entire day anyway,” Gerald replied and chuckled.

He walked toward Sharon and took the contract from her.

“The car, it’s really yours?” Sharon quizzed Gerald with questioning eyes.

That was the closest she had stood next to Gerald since high school, and all she had was this confused feeling in her heart.

“Who did it you think it belonged to? I’ve already said it’s mine, but none of you believed me!”

Gerald replied calmly, his eyes piercing right into Sharon’s soul.

He then tapped Lilian on her shoulder.

“Let’s go. I’ll send you home first.”

“Okay. Just drop me off at the station; I’m headed back to my hometown tonight,” responded Lilian.

Chapter 460

Gerald felt good about it, but Lilian didn’t resent Hayward at all.

“Gerald, this car must’ve cost a bomb, right? It’s quite a sight!”

Liam walked toward them and smiled at Gerald.

No matter how much the rest mocked him, Liam knew that being friends with him would be advantageous since he personally knew Elena and drove such a luxurious car.

“About 22,000 dollars!” Gerald replied, smiling politely.

They both shook hands.

Meanwhile, Liam’s phone rang.

“Dad? Okay, I’ll go back now!”

Liam hung up his phone. “Hey, Gerald. I’ll have to leave now; it’s really nice meeting you! I’m so sorry, Douglas and Leila, something came up, and I can’t take you guys home.”

“Huh?” Leila was stunned.

They were supposed to hitch a ride from Liam back home since Douglas did not dare drive his car.

Meanwhile, Gerald had already started his car engine, and Lilian was sitting next to him.

Douglas then turned to Leila and asked. “Leila, why not we take an Uber?”

“Uber? Look at you, is taking an Uber all you know? You bought a car, and you don’t even drive it, and now I’ve got to take the Uber!” Leila snapped, pissed.

“I’ll give you guys a ride to the station!” Gerald smiled and beckoned them over.

Gerald just felt that it was not right to leave them there like that.

Leila glanced at Gerald hesitantly and then hopped into the car. She stole a peek towards Lilian and felt a pang of jealousy. She wanted the co-pilot seat to be hers.

“Damn it!” Douglas cursed under his breath.

“What do you think you’re doing?” Gerald eyed Douglas.

“What do you mean? I’m getting into the car!”

“When I said them, I meant both the ladies. Not you, Douglas. And the money you owed me, don’t forget to pay up!” Gerald locked the door.

The last time Gerald tried to help him, he got insulted in return, and this time around, he was definitely not going to offer help again.

As she watched them drive off, Sharon was left in a confused state.

Gerald cared about her a lot back in high school. Even when she forgot to take her meals while busy studying, he would brave the rain just to buy her food. Gerald always saw her differently.

Even after three years, despite what she did to him, he still looked at her the same way. But this time, Gerald just grew so cold. He completely ignored her, and she was not too used to it. He did not even look at her when he took the contract from her.

After dropping them off at the station, Gerald booked a hotel room to rest for the evening.

That night, Gerald received a call from his family. It was a classified call that only his family members knew of. Gerald immediately picked up when he realized who the caller was.

Chapter 461

“Hey, dad!”

Gerald called out respectfully, answering the video call.

Although it wasn't the first time he video called his father after discovering his true identity, Gerald had somewhat grown to be more respectful towards his father.

He increasingly felt how honorable of a man his father was.

"What are you up to now, son?"

Gerald's father broke into a smile the moment his son came on the screen.

"Am just about to rest, Dad. What's up with the late call? Anything you need to tell me?"

"Yes, I do. I was initially planning to ask your sister to look into this matter. As I'm aware, you spend most of your time and energy, focusing on your homework. This thing will be delayed since your sister has gone to handle factory issues in North Africa. I wonder if she'd already told you about it?"

"You need my help finding a woman?"

Gerald recalled his sister's instructions and what she confided in him previously. She had asked for his assistance in looking for a particular woman.

"Yes, I'll send over her picture to you in a bit. I need your help finding out about her whereabouts as soon as you can. Otherwise, this guilt in my conscience will eat me up for the rest of my life!"

"There is also one more thing that you have to remember. You cannot let your mother know about this!"

Gerald's father warned as he sighed.

This made Gerald feel a little awkward.

He scowled as he tried to grasp the meaning of the situation.

Could this have been a woman his father had let down in the past?

Damn it! His father was actually asking both the siblings to look for this woman in secret! The first person that crossed Gerald's mind was his mother. He could not help but feel a little sorry for his mother because he thought they were letting her down.

"What is your relationship with this woman? You have much greater power and influence compared to us. If you wanted to find her, you would've definitely been able to find her. Isn't that the case?" asked Gerald.

"Hey, kiddo. If it was that easy for your father to find her, would I even be asking you or your sister's help? What's my relationship with her? It's a question you both have asked me. Anyway, let me assure you that it's not whatever you are thinking of. But that being said, she was highly involved in our major family event that year. I can't help but feel that the Crawford family had let her down even after so many years. Don't ask me about the details as to what really happened. I'll explain everything to you at a later time."

"Okay, that's it. Please put in some effort to help me to deal with this."

Gerald's father hung up as soon as he finished speaking.

It didn't take long before Gerald received a message.

It was a black and white photo—one which looked like it was a few decades old.

It was a picture of a woman.

The moment he saw the woman, Gerald's hand trembled uncontrollably, and he nearly dropped his cell phone to the ground.

After looking at the photo again, Gerald inhaled sharply.

"This...isn't this Queta Smith?"

Yes. The woman in the photo was indeed beautiful. In fact, she was incredibly charming and enchanting.

She looked almost exactly like Queta.

But if this photo was in black and white, then Gerald knew for sure that it could not possibly be Queta.

Who was she?

Gerald presumed that this woman was most probably a peer of his father, which meant that she was around his age.

If that were the case, it was most likely she was Queta's mother.

After all, Gerald knew that Queta grew up in an orphanage.

It seemed as though her parents abandoned her for no apparent reason.

Putting the pieces together, it led to a clear conclusion that it was Queta's mother, the woman his father asked him to look for.

Thoughts started shrouding Gerald's mind.

He could remember vividly how his heart was throbbing and beating uncontrollably the first time he saw Queta.

He also felt a strange sense of comforting closeness to her ever since the first time he saw Queta and even had the urge to protect her for no reason at all.

Now, as he gave it a much deeper thought, he couldn't help but wonder if Queta was actually his sister?

Despite his father's explanation, Gerald wasn't convinced that his father had nothing to do with that woman at all!

That night, Gerald was washed with anxiety. He tossed and turned around his bed, felt extraordinarily restless, and could not sleep at all.

Gerald called Queta early the next morning. He had to meet up with her and clarify this once and for all.

Chapter 462

Throughout this whole time, both of them have occasionally been chatting with one another on WeChat whenever they were free.

At present, Queta was already teaching at a new kindergarten and was doing pretty well.

Gerald had helped Queta out and gave her a house to live in, where Drake and Tyson shared the same place with her.

"Miss Smith, can you do me a favor? I can't review these children's homework in my class on time. My boyfriend is already on his way, picking me up to go shopping. Could you review their homework on my behalf?"

A female teacher with waist-length hair asked Queta, who was also reviewing her students' homework.

"But Miss Lawrie, I'm still reviewing my own students' homework too!"

Queta replied shyly.

“Pfft! If you’re not keen to help me, then just say it. Why come up with so many excuses? Don’t think for a second that you’re so great just because Mr. Teves introduced you to work here. Hah, just think about it! I mean, who are you, Queta Smith? You got crowned as Mayberry City’s Early Childhood Education Academy’s most beautiful teacher after only joining the kindergarten for a month. Isn’t that great or what? If so, can’t you even help me review my students’ homework?”

The teacher named Kaitlyn Lawrie retorted icily.

She became a teacher at the best kindergarten in Mayberry City two months before Queta’s arrival. When Queta first joined, Kaitlyn would often bully her, making her review her students’ homework on her behalf.

Kaitlyn had a wealthy and influential boyfriend who was really handsome too.

She was confident that she would be selected as the most beautiful female teacher in the entire district, optimistic that she would definitely bag the top spot.

But alas, the students’ parents voted for Queta, a woman that was beautiful inside out.

Of course, that threw Kaitlyn into a nervous breakdown.

She even dug into Queta’s background, but there were zero bad records about Queta at all.

Hence, the bullying situation at hand.

Other female teachers who were present just kept their mouths shut.

“Well, I will just review it for you then, Miss Lawrie.”

Queta bit her lips. She then moved the massive pile of homework from Kaitlyn's table onto her own.

"Hmph! Now that's much better. Miss Smith, don't be too high headed thinking you're so great just cause you won the most beautiful teacher award. Let me tell you something. I, Kaitlyn Lawrie, will not lose to you in anything!"

Kaitlyn mocked before turning around triumphantly as she prepared to leave.

"Queta, everyone should review their own students' homework. You don't owe her anything at all, so why are you helping her to do it?"

Suddenly, a soft voice spoke out.

A boy walked up to Queta's table before moving the pile of homework back to Kaitlyn's table.

"F*ck! Who do you think you are?"

Kaitlyn was appalled.

Gerald did not even bother looking at her. He simply grabbed Queta's arm as he said, "Didn't I ask you to apply for leave? Let's go out and grab something to eat. I have to talk to you about something!"

"Mm! I have already asked for the day off!"

Queta replied as she nodded.

Upon seeing Gerald, Queta was immediately filled with a sense of security.

Kaitlyn seemed really intimidating to her, and she was a teeny bit afraid.

When the other female teachers saw Kaitlyn being outrightly ignored, they simply lowered their heads and giggled.

Kaitlyn's face flushed red.

"Oh! Miss Lawrie, your boyfriend is here to pick you up again! God, I envy you so much!"

Several young female teachers who had gone out to shop were chatting with Kaitlyn's boyfriend at the door.

When they spotted Kaitlyn, they instantly felt jealous.

They then saw Queta and Gerald walking out from the side doors.

The girls continued the gossip among themselves, "Oh, look at that! Is that Queta's boyfriend?"

"Oh my god! Seriously? He looks pretty low..."

"Haha! I guess they're meant for each other."

"..."

The moment Gerald stepped out, these ridicules came flooding...

Chapter 463

"Pfft! No wonder Queta dared to disobey me today. It turns out she's gotten herself a boyfriend! Wow, this is pissing me off right now!"

Kaitlyn rolled her eyes as she glared at Gerald, who was talking to Queta at that time.

“Kaitlyn, what’s wrong?”

The man leaning against his car door had his hands in his pockets asked as he threw a quick look at Gerald.

“It’s all because of Queta! All the kids are on vacation today, so we’re supposed to stay back in school to review their homework. But I’ve made plans to go shopping and ask her to help me review my students’ homework! But look, she refused to help just because her boyfriend’s here!”

“I thought that she actually found a great boyfriend for herself, but he turned out to be nothing more than a pathetic jerk!”

Kaitlyn cried out in exasperation, explaining the details to him.

She saw that Gerald had on a simple white T-shirt, a pair of sports pants and some sneakers.

She couldn’t be bothered to filter any of her words.

“That’s right. He thinks that he’s so great just because he got together with the most beautiful teacher? Hahaha! Kaitlyn, your boyfriend, is still the best! Look, he’s driving a BMW 5 Series — simply too awesome!”

“Of course! It so happens that I’m going out shopping with my boyfriend too. Why don’t all of you get in my boyfriend’s car and we can go together then? After all, we should have a good relationship since we are all colleagues!”

Kaitlyn replied as she laughed.

She wanted to isolate Queta and make sure that she was an outcast in the future.

“Yeah, sure!!”

The girls smiled happily as they got into the car and left together.

Gerald wanted to reprimand Kaitlyn.

He could not help feeling enraged, seeing the way she bullied Queta.

But Queta tugged Gerald's hand back — she didn't want him to act rashly.

“Damn it! Do they really think they're so great just because they're loaded?”

Gerald cursed as he watched them leave.

They then got into the Mercedes-Benz G500 that he had parked by the side of the road.

It was almost eleven in the morning now.

Gerald drove Queta to a restaurant.

“Gerald, you said you've something important to talk about? What is it?” asked Queta curiously once they had taken their seats.

“Queta, do you know a woman named Xara Machamer?”

Gerald asked forwardly. After all, this matter did not only involve Queta, but it also involved his own life to a certain extent.

This mattered even more if Xara was involved with his father in the past.

Wouldn't this mean that he would suddenly have another sister out of the blue?

Gerald felt that the entire situation was just weird—it was best asking Queta himself.

Queta looked stunned when she heard those two words. She looked at Gerald in surprise.

“You...you...how did you know about her?”

Upon seeing how she reacted, he was convinced that this was leading somewhere.

He asked again, “How is she related to you?”

Queta shook her head in response as she said, “I don’t know who she is. I only know that she was the one who abandoned me. She’s probably my mother. The orphanage dean only told me about it when I asked him about it later on.”

“They found me at the entrance of the orphanage, and I was wearing a jade pendant with the name ‘Xara Machamer’ engraved on it.”

Queta carefully examined Gerald before saying, “I have not mentioned this matter to anyone else before. How did you find out about it? Did Drake and Tyson tell you about it?”

Gerald was silent as he thought to himself for a moment.

He decided not to tell Queta the truth for the time being, as he did not know how he was going to explain things to her.

He simply took advantage of the situation and said, “Well, yes. One of them mentioned it to me just randomly. Queta, don’t you want to find your mother or this person named Xara Machamer?”

Gerald quickly changed the subject.

“Of course, I want to find her. But how am I going to look for her?”

Queta replied, “This is one of the reasons why I didn’t want to tell you about this. You’ve already helped me a lot and I don’t want to cause more trouble and inconvenience. Otherwise, I really don’t know how I am going to repay you!”

“What’s the matter? Since you do want to find her, then you don’t have to worry about anything else. I will help you find her!”

Gerald replied and smiled as he patted Queta gently on her shoulder.

“Okay.”

Queta replied, nodding slowly.

She then took out a jade pendant that was wrapped in a piece of red cloth.

“Here, Gerald. This is the jade pendant that I was talking about.”

Queta handed the jade pendant over to Gerald.

Gerald looked at it. Wasn’t this the jade pendant in one of the photos that his father had sent to him?

Chapter 464

“Queta, do you mind if I hold on to this jade pendant for now? I want to look for a master to help me to look into the origins of this jade pendant!”

Gerald asked, smiling lightly.

Queta paused for a moment before she nodded and said, “Yeah, sure, go ahead!”

Gerald continued to question Queta about her past.

“It’s really too hot outside! My sunscreen isn’t working at all!”

Suddenly, a group dashed into the shop.

One of the girls could not help but exclaim out loud as she carried a few bags in her hand.

“Kaitlyn, there is a branded shop next to this restaurant. Shall we go in and take a look later?”

One of the girls asked.

“Okay, let’s eat first!”

This girl was not just anyone else, but it was none other than Queta’s colleague, Kaitlyn.

“Oh my god! Kaitlyn, look! Isn’t that Queta? Can’t believe she’s eating here too!”

The girl next to her pointed at Queta and Gerald.

This was totally unexpected.

Kaitlyn’s boyfriend was filthy rich — they knew that he definitely would not bring them to just any casual place to eat.

This restaurant had quite a reputation.

But seeing Queta was completely unexpected, as she was someone who could usually only afford to eat a meal with a dish every day. How was it that she could actually afford to eat in such a high-end restaurant?

“Oh! Queta, did you come here for lunch?”

Kaitlyn sneered as she walked over to both of them.

Gerald had just taken the jade pendant from Queta. He could not help but frown when he saw those girls heading in their direction.

“Did you order anything to eat? Why are you only having two drinks?”

Kaitlyn questioned.

“Hahaha. Perhaps this young couple simply wanted to come in here just to look around. There are just too many of these kinds. They won’t order anything to eat but just get drinks so that they could take some photos and show off to their friends!”

One of the female colleagues whispered in Kaitlyn’s ear.

Her statement made Kaitlyn and the others burst out in laughter.

“Waiter! Is there a four pax set meal here? Can you give me a set meal that is of a higher standard?”

“Of course, ma’am. Our shop has also recently added a new dish to our menu. It is a special foie gras dish, specially made by our chef from Silton. Would you like to try it too?”

The waiter asked as he looked at Kaitlyn and the rest.

This time around, Kaitlyn glanced at her boyfriend.

“Okay, then. Let me have a look at it...”

Kaitlyn's boyfriend took the menu in his hand, and he was shocked when he saw the price.

"F*ck! Are you crazy? A plate of the foie gras actually costs two hundred and sixty dollars? Just one plate?"

Kaitlyn's boyfriend was speechless.

Kaitlyn was also taken aback. "Ahh? It is so expensive! Oh my god! That is a big portion of my salary!"

"Yes, sir. This is just the price for a small portion. There are about six pieces in it. But once you taste it, you will definitely feel that it is worth the money and experience!"

"Look! All of those customers also ordered it!"

The waiter gestured at the other guests who were dining next to them.

There were indeed plates of foie gras on each of their tables.

When they looked at the large portion's price, they were even more dumbfounded to see that it cost four hundred dollars!

This was simply too exorbitant.

Before coming to the restaurant, they were thinking of spending about two to three hundred dollars tops.

"Why don't we order a small portion to try then?" Kaitlyn suggested when she saw that everyone seated around them had also ordered the dish.

“Alright, you want to order a small portion of foie gras then? Hah, sure! No problem.”

Kaitlyn’s boyfriend raised his voice and ordered, “We’d like a portion of the foie gras, please!”

He wanted to prove that he was superior.

At this same time, Gerald’s food was also being served.

The waiter brought two bread bowls over to his table.

“Hahaha! They only ordered two bread bowls? Isn’t that a little too pathetic?”

“Oh my god! It’s okay. You can ask them for some rice and a plate of potatoes too!”

The girls commented as they laughed.

“Sir, can you please make way. This is the large portion of foie gras that you have ordered. I will serve it to you now.”

Just then, a waiter respectfully placed the large portion of foie gras on Gerald’s table.

Kaitlyn and the others were all covering their mouths in laughter as they continued to make fun of Gerald and Queta. But the moment they saw the waiter and the foie gras, they were so shocked that they froze in place...

Chapter 465

“F*ck! How is it that they’re eating so well?”

Kaitlyn was shocked.

The vanity from her face was thoroughly washed away.

“Pfft! Why are you showing off when you have no money? Why bother ordering something that expensive?” mocked Kaitlyn.

The other two female colleagues who felt the burn also chimed in as they mocked the pair.

Gerald and Queta were really eating very well. Both of them ordered the expensive and large portion of foie gras, while the other four only ordered a small serving to share among themselves.

As the waiter served the dish to them, he could not help but give them a look.

Gerald chose to keep quiet because Queta kept persuading him, and she didn't want him to confront them directly.

They simply continued chatting as they ate.

Once they were done eating, he then realized that Kaitlyn and the others had already left.

They obviously couldn't take the humiliation, so they left in a hurry once they were done with their meals.

“Let's leave too,” said Gerald while rubbing his belly.

He then ushered Queta out.

“By the way, Queta, where are the clothes that I bought you before? Why aren't you wearing them?”

Gerald asked and smiled as he looked at Queta.

Back then, he bought a lot of clothes for her.

Queta blushed slightly, and she lowered her head as she said, "I feel a little embarrassed to wear such beautiful and nice clothes!"

Gerald couldn't help but smile.

She was so similar to him. Back then, when he was poor, he felt that he only needed to wear clean clothes.

Gerald still chose to wear plain and ordinary clothes now because he wanted to maintain a low profile.

Whereas on the other hand, there was no reason for Queta to maintain a low profile.

"What are you afraid of? By the way, there is a branded shop here. Come! Let me bring you in to pick out some nicer clothes!"

"Huh? No, I don't want to! It's too expensive!"

Queta rejected, shaking her head.

"It's okay. Let's go in. I have a black card anyway!"

Gerald replied as he smiled.

He then gently pulled Queta into the shop.

"Grayson, I want this dress. It's gorgeous. Do you think I'll look good in it?"

Kaitlyn asked as she held a dress in front of her, gesturing for her boyfriend to comment.

The dress was really beautiful.

The rich, young chap named Grayson flipped the price tag, and he almost threw the dress away.

“F*ck! This dress costs more than 3,000 dollars! Why not rob a bank instead? Darling, can’t you choose another dress?”

Grayson persuaded Kaitlyn as he clutched his wallet.

“Alright, then. What about this one?”

Kaitlyn asked again.

From a single glance, it was still too pricey, costing 1,500 dollars.

As for the other two girls who were with Kaitlyn, they merely held on to their shopping bags as they sulked in envy from the side. Anyways, they did not have a rich boyfriend like Grayson who could afford to buy them such luxurious goods.

It was sufficient for them to take advantage of being acquainted with Kaitlyn, but it would most certainly be unrealistic for them to expect Grayson to buy them something too!

Even after Kaitlyn chose a couple of dozen dresses to try, Grayson realized that it was way over his budget, and they ended up not buying any of them.

Kaitlyn was extremely depressed.

“Gerald, aren’t you buying too many clothes? I can’t wear that many clothes anyway! Plus, it’s way too expensive!”

Queta exclaimed in shock when she saw the number of clothes piled in Gerald’s hands.

She felt a little distressed.

“Why is it expensive? The tailor makes the man, anyway!”

Gerald strongly felt that Queta did not need to live such a life like him.

“Hey, this dress looks not bad, and it’s quite cheap too. We are buying it!”

Gerald saw the dress next to Grayson, rummaged through to pick the size before asking the dumbfounded salesgirl to wrap it up for him.

“F*ck! Queta? You...are you both crazy?!”

The moment Kaitlyn saw both of them, she could not help but simultaneously feel both stunned and confused, especially when she saw the number of luxury items they were holding.

Judging by the number of pieces in Gerald’s hands, it was probably more than a dozen.

“Oh my god! Can you even afford to buy anything here? How are you actually buying that many? Why are you so pretentious? Are you just going to take pictures again?”

Both of Queta’s female colleagues sneered along.

They felt as though Queta had just trampled all over their self-esteem.

Gerald couldn’t care less about them. He simply walked straight to the counter once he was satisfied with his selection.

Kaitlyn and the others exchanged glances with one another before tailing behind Gerald and Queta.

“Hello, sir. The total amount for all the clothes and bags that you have selected is 48,000 dollars. How would you like to make the payment?”

The cashier was also utterly dumbfounded at the amount.

Kaitlyn and the rest who stood behind gaped, utterly stupefied.

Chapter 466

Without saying another word, Gerald simply swiped the black card in his hand.

Though utterly dumbfounded, the cashier was a professional and he immediately bowed.

“Sir! You’ve spent so much on our shop today that it would be rude if we didn’t give you any free gifts! Please select any three articles of clothing and they’ll be on us!” said the cashier respectfully.

“No, wait! He’s not buying any of that! Gerald, all of this is way too expensive! I don’t need that many fancy clothes!” replied Queta frantically as she shook her head.

“I don’t think I’d ever have a reason to wear half of what you’ve selected anyway! Please just put them back...”

Her voice was still quivering slightly from the shock of the final bill.

“You don’t need to wear all of them, you know. Now come on, go choose another three articles of clothing. If you want, you could even give them to the teachers or colleagues that you’re close to in the kindergarten. I’m sure that that’ll definitely help boost your relationship with them!” said Gerald with a faint smile on his face.

Gerald knew that many people bullied Queta for her honesty. Which was why Gerald thought that it was worth spending some money on her.

Gerald had to use his black gold card anyway. He needed to spend at least forty-five thousand dollars monthly, so Queta was making his life much easier this month.

Gerald was also aware that he could be willingly spending so much for her because of the feelings that he had for Queta, deep down in his heart.

While this was happening, Kaitlyn and the other two female colleagues were standing not too far behind them.

All three of them were surprised, and this was especially so for the two female colleagues who had heard Gerald's last statement.

"Wow! Queta, your boyfriend's so rich! His name is Gerald, right? What a nice name, and he's so handsome too!" said the two girls who had begun walking toward them and praising Gerald.

Who the more powerful one now was, was clear as day.

"...Huh? Gerald- He's not..." said Queta, still in a state of shock as she tried to tell them that he wasn't her boyfriend.

Gerald however, hurriedly replied, "I'm just her god brother! And please, handsome? Have you even looked at how casual the clothes I'm wearing are?"

"Haha! You're hilarious Gerald!"

The two girls couldn't help but to feel slightly embarrassed.

God brother? D*mn it! And here they were thinking Queta had a boyfriend!

However, this didn't move Queta's position in their hearts. After all, she had a rich and powerful person backing her up.

“Say Queta, Gerald’s bought you so many clothes. And he’s even said that you could give some of them to your closer colleagues! So... Do you remember that time I smiled at you on your first day of work at the kindergarten?” asked one of the girls with a smile.

“Also Queta, I remember clearly that I was the one who had pointed out where the cafeteria was to you when you first arrived,” said the other.

“I remember both those moments, yes!” replied Queta as she nodded.

“Pfft. Oh, Queta! I really hadn’t expected you to have such a rich god brother! If he’s that willing to buy so much for you, you should just appreciate it! But anyway, I was the one who was interested in that dress first. If you’re giving out clothes to your colleagues you’d better give that one to me!” said Kaitlyn, her voice filled with jealousy.

“Oh? Kaitlyn how shameless! You’re the one who bullies Queta the most and you’re still expecting her to give you something? Who do you think you are?” scolded both girls at the same time.

“F*ck! Whose side are you two on anyway?” cursed Kaitlyn, her eyes widened in anger.

“Alright, settle down,” said Gerald as he glanced at Kaitlyn. He smiled before looking away and continuing what he wanted to say.

“Queta, since these two colleagues treated you well before, feel free to give them some of the clothes. I trust that if anything happens in the future, all three of you will continue looking out for one another. Now let’s go, I’ll send you back to the school!”

“Ahh! Thank you, Gerald! We’ll definitely continue to help each other in the future, right Queta?” said the two colleagues gleefully.

When they finally left the shop and arrived at the parking lot, the two girls were surprised once again when they saw Gerald and Queta getting into his car.

“Queta... that’s... That’s a Mercedes Benz G500! Oh my god, your brother drives a Mercedes Benz G500?!”

Kaitlyn was already fuming at that point and Gerald knew that he had taught that arrogant girl a lesson.

Later that afternoon, once Gerald and Queta had parted ways, Gerald bid farewell to Giya who was still in the hospital.

His next stop was Serene County. Gerald made sure he had Queta’s jade pendant with him before he started driving. He decided that once he reached Serene County, he would ask Zack to help him look into the matter.

However, upon entering the county, Gerald found that the main road had been blocked and the border had been pulled up.

Several police, workers, and leaders were there.

Taking off his sunglasses, Gerald rolled down his car window to have a look at what the commotion was about. Noticing some workers nearby, he handed them some cigarettes before asking them what was going on.

Seeing how polite Gerald was, they willingly explained the situation to him.

“Young man, I’m afraid you can’t go any further. Something big has happened ahead!”

Chapter 467

“Well, what exactly happened?” asked Gerald, confused.

“See, this place was originally a construction project. The Weston Merchants Holdings were hired to oversee the job about a year ago. Apparently, the developers used less than appropriate quality materials and because of that, there’s been a collapse around the project area. More than a hundred people were injured because of this, sixty of whom were workers! Thankfully, no lives were lost this time around!”

“Yep. I heard that the developers ran for the hills last night! Those from Weston Merchants Holdings are definitely in hot water now. About a dozen people, including Mr. Jung, have been dismissed from their positions, or so I’ve heard! They’re waiting to be dealt with at this very moment!” replied the workers.

As Gerald recalled, Mr. Jung was the director of Weston Merchants Holdings. He had been dismissed as well?

After thinking about it for a while, Gerald asked, “Why would the developers need to run away? Since no lives were lost, compensation would’ve been enough, no? What more, the main responsibility doesn’t fall on the investors, right?”

“The thing is, I’ve heard that the developers ran out of money quite a while ago. According to rumors, six months ago to be exact. But that’s beside the point. Right now, we’re just wondering who to look for! We just want our salary!”

“As for Weston Merchants Holdings, well, someone has to take responsibility for the matter. All this is happening during such a critical moment too. If you haven’t heard, a large group has been planning to develop and reconstruct Serene County. Due to such an unfortunate event happening now, the leaders must be furious. The impact of this accident is truly terrible!”

After hearing the whole story, Gerald finally understood the general situation.

However, he couldn’t do anything to help with the matter, though he still sympathized with all those involved in it.

Gerald then turned his car around and drove off after thanking the workers.

Along his journey, Gerald received a text message from Zack. It was the same story about the building’s collapse which the workers had told Gerald about earlier. What a disaster!

Seeing that Zack had messaged him, Gerald took the opportunity to ask him to look for a master specializing in jade.

Gerald knew that Zack knew way more people than he did.

Once Gerald got back to the hotel, he took a shower. As he was about to leave for a quick dinner, he received a phone call. It was from his father.

“Dad?”

“Son, you’ve made an investment in our hometown right? I heard that a building collapsed there. Such a catastrophe...”

“That’s right, though my group isn’t involved in that matter.”

Gerald thought to himself that his father was very well-informed.

“Oh, I know it isn’t. However, I just wanted to say that your Uncle Jung has been dismissed from his position. Could you go over and help their family out?”

“Dad, I’ve already told you. Uncle Jung has already forgotten all about his friendship with you a long time ago. Why are you still asking me to help him?” replied Gerald in a puzzled voice.

Gerald’s father was really something else. The same topic always popped up whenever his father called him.

Gerald was constantly reminded to offer the Jung family help if they faced any difficulties.

Why else would Gerald continue to help Leila even though she despised and looked down on him?

However, Gerald had been disappointed with the Jung family since the last time he had gone to their house. He had also explained to his father about the situation back then.

That left a sour taste in Gerald's mouth and even though he knew that the Jung family was in hot water this time, he didn't really care.

After all, just as Uncle Jung had said, Gerald was not to go to his house to look for him unless there was something truly important.

Gerald really couldn't be bothered with their family.

"Well, some things can't be explained easily. Anyway, have you met up with your Aunt Leia yet?" asked his father, suddenly changing the topic.

Gerald frowned slightly before saying, "Yes, I've met her. Why?"

"To tell you the truth, I've let your Uncle Jung down before this. I can't help but blame myself for what happened. Just... no matter how they may treat us, please help them whenever you can..." replied Gerald's father as he sighed.

"...What? What did you do?"

Gerald was shocked.

Could his father and Aunt Leia be having an affair?

Was that the reason why Uncle Jung was always so cold toward Gerald's family?

"Dad? Explain yourself. Also, what exactly is going on with that woman you asked me to look for? That Xara Machamer. Is she and Aunt Leia both your women?"

Gerald couldn't help but ask out of frustration.

Chapter 468

Upon hearing that claim, Gerald's father immediately coughed aloud.

“You... you rascal! What nonsense are you spouting? Just know that my relationship with both of them isn’t how you’re imagining it! Ignoring that, your Aunt Leia is part of the Jung family as well, and they really need your help now. Just help them if you can. Think of it as though you’re helping me repay a debt to them! Don’t forget to look for Xara too! Your mother is here! That’s it for now!”

After saying all that, his father hung up immediately.

Gerald held on to his cell phone, frozen for quite some time before finally coming back to his senses.

...What?

Gerald was tempted to call his mother at that moment to tell her about all this. After all, he had been helping his father lie to her and he couldn’t help but feel guilty about it.

After giving it some thought, he sighed. He would trust his father for the time being.

Rubbing his forehead, he looked at his phone and saw that it was only 5.30 p.m.

Scratching the back of his head, he sighed again. So be it. Having lost his appetite, he left his room and began driving to the Jung family’s house.

Upon arriving, Gerald saw that many people were already there.

Inside the house, Uncle Jung was lying on his sofa. He was on a drip and feeling faint from all the things happening to him. Since he had to take responsibility for the event and was even dismissed from his position in Weston Merchants Holdings, the sudden wave of anxiety had hit like a truck, causing him to feel ill.

Accompanying him, were some guests who chatted occasionally with the man.

“It’s going to be fine, Willie. No use crying over spilled milk. Since the impact of the accident was so sudden and huge, the county leaders may have just dismissed you out of pure anger! Who knows, they may even reinstate you once things have calmed down!”

“He’s right you know. Besides, Leia’s working in a bank now, right? There should be no problems for you, financially!”

“Thank you, Lucas, Zayne... Why don’t you stay over for dinner tonight?” replied Willie weakly.

“Oh, there’s no need for that. We only came to pay you a visit. We’ll be taking our leave soon!” said both of them as they stood up.

“Lucas, Zayne, is there really nothing more that you can do to help Willie? Both of you have several good connections if I recall correctly. There must be some way you can further help him!”

Hearing that, both of them simply shook their heads. They had done what they could and the people who saw their reactions understood.

“Don’t worry, Aunt Leia. I’ve had a talk with my dad about Uncle Jung’s situation before coming here today...” said Douglas.

Naturally, he was there too.

Hearing this, both Willie and Leia turned to look at him.

Douglas couldn’t help but think highly of himself. They were all looking at him so expectantly, knowing that he would be able to help them when they were at their lowest.

“So... how did your father respond?” asked Willie as he continued looking at Douglas.

“He said that the situation wasn’t that serious. The only reason it sounds so terrible is because you’re making a mountain out of a molehill. After all, you shouldn’t be the one shouldering all this responsibility in the first place!”

“My dad added that as long as you can recruit new developers to fill in the vacancies and achieve a settlement with the injured workers, everything else should be easily resolved,” replied Douglas with a smile.

To simplify, he just needed to find new funds to take over and support the development of the project.

“But this is already such a messy project! Worst come to worst, we may even have to demolish the real estates that have already been built! I can’t see why anyone would take up this kind of real estate or project after hearing about this disaster. What more, the county would be responsible for some of the compensation funds. How could our county possibly have that much money? We simply can’t afford it!” said Willie as he shook his head slowly.

He had already considered that approach before.

Ding dong!

At that moment, the doorbell suddenly rang.

Thinking it was just going to be another one of his colleagues or maybe even a leader who had come to pay him a visit, he told Leila to help him get up. “Thank you. Please welcome our guest, Leila!”

His wife simply nodded before heading toward the door. The moment she opened it, Leila was taken aback.

“Gerald?”

‘Why... Why is he here?’ Leila couldn’t help but think to herself, disappointed.

Hearing his name, Willie shook his head as well, frustrated.

When Leia returned to his side, he told her to help him lie down again.

To think that he had thought that it could have been a leader or colleague who would be able to help with the situation. The gap between his expectations and finding out that it was just Gerald was simply too wide.

Chapter 469

“Uncle Jung, Aunt Leia, I’ve come to visit!” said Gerald with a smile on his face as he carried a bag of gifts into their house.

Leia simply looked at him without saying anything else as he placed the bag down.

Willie himself was already on the sofa again, looking toward the ceiling without even caring to reply to Gerald’s greeting.

Leila felt embarrassed seeing Gerald get ignored like this since she knew that Gerald was probably doing very well in Mayberry City.

After all, he had been the one who had sent her to the station the other day in a big Mercedes Benz G500!

In all honesty, Leila was slightly grateful toward Gerald.

However, she hadn’t had the time to tell her father about this yet. By the time Leila got home yesterday, this series of unfortunate events had already kicked off.

Even then, her father was already on the verge of collapsing from all the pressure. How could she ever tell him about how much fun she had had?

Sensing the awkwardness, Leila walked over to Gerald before setting the bag he had brought on the table.

“Thank you for coming over to visit, Gerald!” said Leila with a smile.

Douglas simply narrowed his eyes at Gerald when he heard his daughter greeting him.

Gerald didn't really have anything to say so he simply nodded and took a seat on one of the couches. He had anticipated Willie's poor attitude. Thus, before arriving, he had made sure to fortify his mind psychologically.

“Oh, funding! Where on earth am I supposed to get such a huge sum of money to take over this real estate project!” said Willie out of the blue in a saddened tone.

“Uncle Jung, what about the Dream Investment Group in Mayberry City? They're going to invest and spend one and a half billion dollars to develop Serene County. Have you asked for their help in this project?”

“Of course I have. To be honest, I know a few of the managers working for the Dream Investment Group. Though we used to share a good relationship, I don't think it would be appropriate for me to look for them now. After all, what company would want to take on this project anymore!” replied Willie as he shook his head miserably.

“They're the only hope you have left now, Uncle Jung. Besides, we're talking about the Dream Investment Group. This is just a small sum of money for them! As long as you can get them to take on this project, the matter can be easily resolved! My dad told me this as well!”

Knowing that Willie was obviously relying on him to deal with the issue, Douglas spoke every word confidently.

“Douglas, you've helped us ask your father to put in some effort to deal with our situation... Your Aunt Leila, and I will remember this favor for as long as we live!”

“Worry not, Uncle Jung! My father will definitely try to get the Dream Investment Group to help in this matter!”

Though he said all that, Douglas was thinking otherwise in his mind.

Pfft. As if my father would ever worry about this.

If I weren't after Leila, I wouldn't even have bothered wasting my time coming here.

Despite thinking so, Douglas still knew that he had to say all that to save his face.

"Alright then... I feel much more relieved after hearing you say all that... Douglas, why not stay for dinner tonight? You know what, all of Leila's friends and classmates are invited to join as well! Aunt Leila will be preparing dinner for all of you right now!" said Willie, some color finally returning to his face.

"Alright, I'll go clean up first! But wait! I don't think we have enough vegetables for all of us here! And I can't leave to get any since I still have to prepare the meat!" said Leila anxiously.

At that moment, she noticed Gerald drinking a glass of water. He had been sitting quietly on the same couch ever since he entered.

Suddenly feeling irritated, she said, "Since you're clearly free, why don't you get the ingredients, Gerald? I'll write you a list of things to get and you can run over to the supermarket just outside the community to get them for me!"

"Me?" asked Gerald, startled. Wasn't he just being treated like a servant then?

Thinking about it, however, it would still be more awkward for him to stay here since he would have to continue looking at Willie's disgusted face.

What more, if he left now, he could give Zack a call to tell him to take over the real estate project.

In a way, that would mean that he had fulfilled the task that his father had entrusted to him.

Nodding to himself as he got up, he agreed to Leila's request.

He was rather glad to be able to leave, honestly. He was only here because his father kept insisting that he helped them after all!

He didn't need to be in their good books and he knew it.

"I'll go with you, Gerald!" said Leila as she saw him leave with the ingredient list and a basket that he had been given.

"Leila! Can't you differentiate between who's more important? Hurry up and pour a glass of water for Douglas!"

When he had heard Leila's words, Willie started getting anxious again.

Even Leila could feel that something was wrong.

What was going on with their daughter? From the moment Gerald had entered, Leila's tone toward him seemed to be completely different compared to how she used to talk to him.

The Crawford family weren't good people after all!

Chapter 470

Leila told Leila to remain home as well to accompany Douglas.

As for Gerald, he immediately called Zack as soon as he got out of the house.

Once Zack had been updated on the matter, Gerald knew that the situation would be dealt with swiftly. This was Zack after all.

As Zack immediately set out to start making the appropriate arrangements, Gerald headed to the supermarket to get all the items on Leia's list.

Once he had everything, he returned to the Jung family's house.

When he set foot into the house again, however, a massive change had apparently taken place.

"Congratulations, Uncle Jung!"

"Thank you! I really hadn't expected the Dream Investment Group to actually take over the real estate project! To decide to take over the entire project... I'm honestly stunned!"

Willie didn't need his drip anymore. His initial paleness was all gone and in his raised hand, was his cell phone.

"Gather round, everyone! All of you need to enjoy a good drink with me today! Especially you, Douglas!" shouted Willie joyfully.

To him, he felt that Douglas's father's help was crucial in the Dream Investment Group's final decision. His own connections may have also played a part in that.

To simplify, the leader had called Willie just a while ago to tell him that his position in Weston Merchants Holding had been reinstated. He was also to take charge of this project in the future.

They would then collect a donation and the matter would be completely resolved.

How could he stay depressed after hearing all that?

Willie then looked at both Douglas and Leila. He had an idea in his mind.

"Leila, let me tell you..."

“Gerald, have some food!”

Just as he was about to say something, Willie saw Leila serving some dishes to Gerald.

He was utterly shocked. “Leila! What are you doing? Gerald still has both his hands, doesn’t he? Let him get his own food!”

Leila turned to look at him before replying, “Dad, actually, Gerald...”

“Uncle Jung, Gerald’s no longer who he used to be!” shouted Douglas as he glared fiercely at Gerald before Leila could finish her sentence.

If Leila was just going to relay the same information, he would be the one to say it!

“What’s so different about him now?” asked Aunt Leia as she served another dish on the table.

“See, Gerald here won the lottery! With the money, he bought himself a Mercedes Benz G500! That’s the reason why Leila’s treating him so well now!” replied Douglas enviously.

“Oh my god...”

Everyone seated around the dinner table was shocked.

“How much money did you win?” asked Aunt Leia as she subconsciously gulped.

Gerald didn’t know what to say.

He had lied to Leila and told her that he had won the lottery just so he could conceal his identity back then. Apparently, now he had to lie to an entire group of people.

"I just used most of the money to buy a Mercedes Benz G500!" replied Gerald.

"You used the money to buy that? You won more than three hundred thousand dollars through the lottery?"

Everyone was shocked silent. Gerald remained quiet as well.

All of a sudden, Willie slammed his chopsticks against the table, staring at Gerald with a cold gaze.

"What a fool!"

"Gerald, other people are free to show off, but don't you even realize how poor your own living conditions are? Why are you even trying to show off? Wasting your money to buy a Mercedes Benz... Do you even know how much you could have done with that three hundred thousand dollars?" yelled Willie as he shook his head.

Douglas was satisfied. He smiled as he said, "That's true, Uncle Jung. If he had only used one hundred and fifty thousand dollars as a donation for your fundraiser, you could have arranged a position for Gerald in the labor dispatching department! Ha! But all Gerald knows how to do is try to compete with other rich heirs!"

"See? Douglas is clearly more knowledgeable! Gerald, let me ask you. Have you bought a house for yourself in Serene County?"

Gerald simply shook his head, knowing where this was going.

"Have you found a job?"

Gerald sighed as he shook his head again.

“Oh, I haven’t seen anyone as brainless as you are! Why are you spending so extravagantly? Get a decent job first then start working to make an honest living for yourself! Tell you what, sell the car again immediately. If you’re lucky, you’ll be able to get at least two hundred and seventy thousand dollars back. With that money, you can buy yourself a house. Once that’s done, I can arrange a job for you with social insurance and housing funds.”

“What else, what else... Ah yes, there’s one more thing,” said Willie as he sipped some wine before looking at Gerald again.

Chapter 471

“...Actually scratch that, I guess I can accept you, even if you don’t fulfill all the standard conditions. All you need to do now is sell the car and buy yourself a house. If you can at least do that right, you’ll get a job as a clerk in the public office. You’ll have social insurance and housing funds then. That way, you’ll be able to have a stable life in the future!”

“You know, I used to have a subordinate who had a sister just three years older than you. She’s still unmarried. Once you’ve settled down, I can be your matchmaker and help you get a wife as well!” said Willie.

Gerald was dumbfounded. So, as long as he was willing to donate money to him, Willie was going to give him such good treatment?

Leila, however, was shocked. “Dad... Isn’t that secretary’s sister... You know... Intellectually slow...?”

“So what if she is? It’s not easy for anyone to get a wife these days. Look at Gerald’s qualifications! I can’t even guarantee that the other party would be willing to marry someone like him!”

“Um... Uncle Jung, you don’t have to worry about me!”

Gerald was trying hard not to burst in anger, his face alternating between red and pale.

He could only endure it by thinking about what his father had said.

Unfortunately, Willie wasn’t done yet.

Once dinner was over, Willie immediately contacted a second-hand car dealer without even waiting for Gerald to step in. After all, he wanted Gerald to donate part of that money to him before using the remaining money to buy a house for himself. This was an excellent opportunity to arrange a contractual job for Gerald as well.

At the very least, he would belong partially to the organization then!

Gerald, naturally, was unwilling to do any of this.

He was very, very close to revealing his identity at that moment just so that he could slap all their faces.

However, he clenched his fist behind his back while thinking of his father's words to keep himself calm. After all, his father had said that he had done things with Aunt Leia to let Uncle Jung down.

Since he didn't know what his father had done with her yet, he remained silent.

He simply wanted to put an end to this matter quickly. Once that was done, he didn't want any part of them in his life anymore.

The car didn't matter to him anyway, so Gerald simply agreed.

"Alright, let Douglas accompany you when you sell your car off later. At least he knows more than you do. That way, you won't get tricked without even realizing it!" said Willie without filtering his words in the slightest.

If Douglas hadn't raised the idea of using Gerald to donate and raise some money for him, Willie would never have dreamed of landing Gerald a job. He wouldn't even have done so even if it was just a contractual job!

Thinking about it now, once he received the donation money, he could just randomly arrange for Gerald to work as a clerk in any department. That way, Gerald would be able to earn at least two thousand dollars a month! Willie felt that he would already have done Gerald a huge favor!

Naturally, Douglas agreed to go with Gerald.

His intentions were obvious. He wanted Willie to take all of Gerald's money and even his car away. Let's see Gerald try to show off in front of him again in the future!

Unexpectedly, Gerald was rather willing to agree to all this just for the sake of getting a job! Haha!

Of course, Gerald already knew what was running through the minds of Douglas and Uncle Jung.

He was simply doing this to draw a clear distinction line between them in the future.

That way, he would have a good reason to refuse and turn down any of his father's future requests if he ever asked him to help this family again.

Leila and a few of her close friends followed Douglas and Gerald to the second-hand car shop.

"Boss! We're here to sell a car!"

A young man came running out of the shop as soon as he heard people calling for him.

"Coming! Oh wow! A Mercedes Benz G500?!"

When Douglas saw the boss of the place, he quickly walked up to him. He was going to be the one to talk to him in this transaction.

His goal was to get the boss to lower the price of the car as much as he possibly could for Gerald.

When Douglas turned to peek at Gerald's reaction to this, he was surprised to see that Gerald was instead, smiling.

“Xeno?”

Hearing his name, the boss looked up and he was stunned when he saw Gerald.

He smiled wide and patted his thigh twice. “Well f*ck me! Gerald? Is that really you?”

Xeno walked toward Gerald with a surprised look on his face.

The boss there was actually Gerald’s childhood neighbor whom Gerald also considered to be his best friend. Xeno was only six months older than Gerald and the two had played together a lot as children. Xeno had always been kind to him.

Back when they were younger, both of them were top of the class academically. However, due to some reasons, Xeno stopped studying before he could finish junior high school.

From that point on, he learned how to fix and repair cars. Unexpectedly, a few years later, Xeno would be doing well. He was even the owner of a second-hand car shop now!

Ever since Gerald had left his hometown to attend university in another city, he hadn’t come home for a long time. As a result, both of them had rarely contacted each other in the past two years.

Chapter 472

Despite that, they were still close childhood friends. Even if they hadn’t met each other in a decade, the same childlike feelings of joy that they shared would still remain.

“You f*cker! When did you come back? Why didn’t you give me a call, huh?” asked Xeno as he playfully smacked Gerald’s back a few times.

“Ow, ow! I just came back some time ago! It’s been a long time since I’ve returned, so I’m staying in Serene County for the time being!” replied Gerald as he smiled happily.

“Xeno, that’s a customer! Be professional!” shouted a woman as she came out of the shop.

She was dressed fashionably and she looked to be around the same age as Gerald.

Of course, Gerald knew who she was too. She was from his junior high school and back then, she was in a relationship with Xeno.

Her family owned a supermarket in town and they were pretty well to do.

It seemed that both of them were still maintaining their relationship even after so many years!

“Heh, don’t tell me you forgot about Sienna?” said Xeno as he smiled.

“She’s my fiancée now... Both of us got engaged just three months ago!”

“Oh? Oh, it’s Gerald? And here I was wondering who it was. Hurry up and greet the customers!”

When Sienna saw Gerald, she simply looked at him coldly before turning around to leave.

She didn’t really despise or look down on him, but Gerald could still sense a slight resentment through the way she looked at him.

Gerald simply smiled awkwardly after hearing that.

“Boss, are you done? We’ve been standing here for a while! Are both of you done chatting?” asked Douglas as he tapped his foot.

Douglas was feeling slightly irked. To think that the owner of this second-hand car shop was actually Gerald’s close friend! There was no way he was going to be able to make Gerald suffer a loss now!

“Oh? Who’s the seller? Are you the one?” said Xeno as he smiled while looking at Douglas.

“Oh, I’m not the one you’re looking for. I’m just helping Gerald sell his Mercedes Benz G500! He’s been driving it for a while now so... I’d say one hundred and fifty thousand dollars should do the trick!” Douglas replied.

He then immediately looked at Gerald before saying, “Gerald, this is your buddy right? Don’t you feel bad selling your car to him at such a high price? After all, it would already be great if you could make some profit!”

He wasn’t even going to wait for Gerald to reply.

Xeno on the other hand, was taken aback. “Gerald... this is your car?”

“I’ll explain it all to you one day. For now, just know that I’m glad that you’re the one I’m selling the car to,” replied Gerald as he smiled.

Xeno simply nodded before slowly walking around the car as he inspected it. He then opened the hood of the car to have a look at it from the inside. “This car costs three hundred thousand dollars. It doesn’t seem like you’ve driven it for more than a month. Gerald, honestly, why are you even selling this car? What more, you’re planning on selling it for only a hundred and fifty thousand dollars? And who’s this kid anyway?” asked Xeno as he looked at Douglas.

He knew Douglas was up to no good the moment he mentioned selling the car for just one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

“He’s in a hurry to sell the car because he wants to get himself a house, a wife, and also a job. With that amount, Uncle Jung and I can make all the necessary arrangements for him! He’ll have a stable job that he’ll never lose in his lifetime! Haha!” replied Douglas smugly.

“Oh? Is he telling the truth? This Uncle Jung guy can really secure a stable job for you as well as a wife?”

Xeno looked at Gerald with a pleased expression on his face. If Gerald could get all that just from selling the car, then this transaction would be very much worth it.

He couldn't help but feel happy for Gerald, his dear buddy.

Gerald could only reply with a wry smile on his face.

He couldn't just tell him that he was just doing all this to help his father repay a favor!

"I'd love to buy it off you right now, but I don't have that much money on hand. Also, do you smoke? I'll have to trouble you to take care of my brother's affairs!" said Xeno as he took out a cigarette and passed it toward Douglas's direction.

Douglas however, didn't take the cigarette. He instead took out his own and lighted it.

"Oh? So you don't have the money to buy the car from us? Why even bother opening a second-hand car shop then? Forget it then, let's just have a look at the second-hand car shop just opposite the street! You can see it for yourself right, Gerald? Your buddy just doesn't have the cash to buy this car!" said Douglas with a grimace as he looked at both Xeno and Gerald.

"You don't need to give me a hundred and fifty thousand dollars. You know what, I'm just giving the car to you. I don't need to drive this car anymore anyway!" said Gerald calmly with a faint smile on his face.

"F*ck! Gerald, are you crazy?"

It was Leila, of all people, who shouted at Gerald's proposal. She had an astonished expression on her face as she looked at Gerald.

Chapter 473

The car was his greatest asset and he was just going to give it to his friend for free?

'Gerald, this isn't the time to be showing off!' Leila thought in her mind, frantically.

Though Leila had recently started to change her opinion of Gerald, she couldn't help but feel angry at his words.

Before this turn of events, Leila had even secretly considered Gerald to be her boyfriend. Now, she didn't even want to think about it!

From an outsider's point of view, it was almost as though she considered the car to be hers in the first place.

"I can't accept that! This is a relatively new car, brother! I can't just take it off you for free! How about this, I have about a hundred thousand dollars on hand right now. I'll buy the car at the market rate of two hundred and seventy thousand dollars. I'll pay you the rest of the money once I sell this car off! Deal?"

"If that's the case, you can just buy it from me for a hundred thousand dollars then!" replied Gerald with a wry smile on his face. He knew that Xeno wasn't going to accept the car for free no matter what he did.

However, how could Gerald's Mercedes Benz G500 make up for the incident that happened back then? Gerald shook the thought off his mind for the moment.

"Seriously, don't worry about it, Xeno. I'll explain it to you later. Just buy it for a hundred thousand dollars! Now bring us the contract, buddy!" said Gerald as he patted Xeno's shoulder.

Xeno went silent and simply complied. He had made up his mind that he would just return the money to Gerald once the car was sold.

The contract didn't really matter to him.

As Gerald signed the contract, Leila looked baffled while Douglas was secretly overjoyed.

The car was now officially sold and Gerald would give Willie seventy thousand dollars for his fundraiser.

After doing so, Gerald would only have thirty thousand dollars left.

“Douglas, Leila! My cousin sister sells houses! She’s just opened for business recently and she hasn’t gotten off work yet at this hour! Since Gerald’s buying a house, why don’t I give her a call? He can buy it from her! Do know, however, that thirty thousand dollars is barely enough for the down payment!” said one of Leila’s friends who had followed them.

“Go for it!” replied Leila as she nodded slightly.

Once the down payment was made, Gerald would officially become a pauper again. Aside from his house and the mortgage he would have to pay, he would have nothing else.

To Leila, that was the equivalent of Gerald losing all his initial charisma. Any feelings she had for him, were now six feet under.

Moving back to Gerald, the only reason why he had promised to give his car up and donate to Willie in the first place, was simply because he wanted to repay the debt on behalf of his father.

If it wasn’t because of his father, Gerald would be crazy to actually be bothered about someone as minuscule as Willie.

It turned out that the houses Leila’s friend’s cousin sister had to offer were in pretty good locations.

Gerald himself had been planning to buy some houses in Serene County so that he could arrange for housing and accommodation for some of his executives.

Though his original plan was to buy an entire building so that he could use it as a staff hostel, it wouldn’t be a problem for him to check out a house and book one of the units first.

After saying goodbye to Xeno, Gerald left with the group of people.

It was relatively easy to buy a house.

All Gerald had to do was choose from a selection of houses, pay the down payment, and sign a contract. Once that was done, he only needed to wait for the bank to approve his loan.

“Oh, cousin and handsome Douglas! Thank you so much for your support! Since it’s already so late, please stay! I’ll treat the four of you to supper! Your cousin sister’s treating all of you today!” said the girl’s cousin, happy to have made a sale.

As for Gerald, he simply stood at the side as he held onto the house purchase deed and contract. He was the one paying for the house yet the salesgirl simply left him out of the count.

Of course she would.

As soon as she saw Gerald, she could immediately tell that he was just some ignorant person who hadn’t seen much of the world yet. She didn’t even bother to flatter him at all. Once the transaction was done, she had even less reason to want to even be near him.

“There’s no way we can do that! No matter what you say, I can’t allow you to treat us to supper tonight! Rather, since Gerald bought a house today, he should be the one treating us!” said Douglas as he laughed happily.

“Yes! We’ve been running around with you from seven in the evening! It’s almost eleven now! What more, we helped you secure a house for yourself. You know, if you weren’t someone familiar, you wouldn’t even be able to buy this house at this price! You should be thankful!”

Chapter 474

The reply had come from one of Leila’s friends.

“Alright, alright, girls. Tell you what, I’ll pay for whatever we’re eating tonight! We can spend up to a thousand and five hundred dollars tonight!” said Douglas with a smile.

“But Douglas, why are you the one paying? Gerald’s clearly the one who should be treating us!”

“Well, you may not know this, but I owe Gerald that exact sum of money! If I pay that amount for supper, the IOU will be fully paid off!”

Douglas was thinking to himself then, that Gerald shouldn't even consider reclaiming his one thousand and five hundred dollars from him!

He would rather use the money to entertain everyone rather than return the money to him.

“Alright! Let's go! It's time I got off work today anyway!” said the salesgirl happily.

At that moment, Leila's cell phone began to ring.

It was Willie.

“What's this? Hadn't we agreed that he would donate at least a hundred and twenty thousand dollars so that I could find him a job? Why is there only seventy thousand dollars?”

“Dad, he sold the car for only a hundred thousand dollars since the buyer was his friend!”

“That idiot. I'll just give him an award for the seventy thousand dollars then. As for the job opportunity, I'll simply arrange it for him in the future! Pfft!” replied Willie coldly before hanging up.

“Gerald, my dad said...”

Leila felt a little embarrassed as she looked at Gerald. She didn't know how to tell him that he wouldn't be granted a job immediately.

Gerald simply smiled faintly. He had anticipated this to happen.

“It's fine, you don't need to worry about getting a job for me. As for supper, all of you go on ahead. I'm not coming along. Goodbye!”

As he spoke, he took Douglas's IOU out of his pocket before ripping it in half in front of them and tossing it into a trash can.

As he walked away, he didn't feel any rage for some reason, even though they had constantly been ridiculing him.

It took him a while, but Gerald soon realized then that it was because they weren't from the same world as he was. He didn't need to hold any grudges against ants like them.

As for the Jung family, he had already contributed enough funds to help them make a comeback. What more, he had even donated to Willie to help him raise funds. Regardless of how much his father owed Uncle Jung, this amount of money would definitely settle whatever favors Gerald's father still owed the Jung family.

There was no longer going to be any debts on his father's side. This was something Gerald was sure of.

Because of that, he wouldn't need to worry or even care about them anymore. A supper with them would be meaningless.

That night, Gerald went back to the hotel to sleep.

At seven the next day, his phone started ringing.

It was Xeno.

"Good morning, Gerald! You awake? If you're free, why not come over to my shop? I have a mighty delicious breakfast waiting for you here! Oh, and by the way, I've already sold your car! Come on over and let's celebrate that!" said Xeno over the phone.

After finding out that Gerald could be in urgent need of money, Xeno had spent most of the night contacting several of his friends and peers to find a buyer for Gerald's car.

Gerald himself missed Xeno too. Even if he hadn't called Gerald, Gerald would have gone over to pay him a visit either way.

After all, he had already thought of visiting Xeno long before returning to Serene County.

Once he was done washing up and putting on a fresh set of clothes, Gerald headed straight for Xeno's second-hand car shop.

Upon arriving at the familiar shop, Xeno immediately dragged Gerald into a room and locked the door behind him.

"Morning Gerald! You're one lucky b*stard! A buddy of mine helped us contact a buyer last night! Haha! I managed to sell your car for exactly two hundred and eighty thousand dollars! And before you say anything else, you're taking a hundred and seven thousand dollars back with you, whether you like it or not. I'll still have made ten thousand dollars' worth of profit, all thanks to you!"

After finishing his sentence, he handed a cheque over to Gerald.

Naturally, Gerald was unwilling to accept it. After all, Gerald wasn't even sure if Xeno had really earned any money from the transaction.

As the two of them continued pushing the cheque back and forth, frantic knocks suddenly began banging against the locked door.

"Xeno? Xeno! Open the door now! Have you seen my fifteen thousand dollar bank savings book?!"

The voice belonged to Sienna who had just run out from the kitchen.

Chapter 475

"What fifteen thousand dollar bank savings book?" asked Gerald, slightly taken aback.

Before Xeno could stop him, Gerald had opened the door to see a very anxious Sienna.

“Oh, don’t worry about it! I need to use the money!” said Xeno as he smiled.

“What are you using it for? And what are you holding in your hand? Oh god, what are you doing with such a big cheque?!”

The anxiety in Sienna’s voice only seemed to grow even worse.

“The money’s for Gerald! How could we possibly purchase an almost brand new car for just a hundred thousand dollars? What more, it’s a Mercedes Benz G500!” replied Xeno.

“And why would it be impossible? What’s wrong with earning some of his money? Xeno, you can’t cheat anyone else of their cash but you can definitely cheat him! Give me the cheque!” yelled Sienna as she snatched the cheque from his hand.

“Pfft, we’ve sold the car for a grand total of two hundred and seventy thousand dollars. We already gave Gerald one hundred thousand dollars and we also have to give your friend fifteen thousand dollars for introducing a buyer to us!”

Hearing this, Sienna looked at the cheque and gasped in horror at the amount written on it.

“One hundred and seventy thousand dollars...? Xeno, what’s the meaning of this? Are you telling me you used our own fifteen thousand dollars for Gerald? We would be losing fifteen thousand dollars in this huge transaction then! Have you gone mad?!”

Quivering, Sienna immediately picked up a wine bottle before tossing it toward Xeno. Though it didn’t hit anyone, it fell right in front of Gerald.

Xeno had grown anxious himself, looking at her actions. Both of them looked like they were getting ready to fight.

The truth was, the car had not been sold for two hundred and eighty thousand dollars. Xeno had spent his own money to look for a buyer. In the end, the transaction landed him zero profit. He did all this

because he could sense that Gerald was very upset the night before. Xeno had assumed that it was due to monetary issues.

Because of that, he wanted to help Gerald get some money as soon as possible. Xeno, for one, was more than willing to do so for his best friend.

Unfortunately, Sienna wasn't having any of that.

"Hand over the cheque, Sienna! I'm making sure that Gerald gets his full two hundred and seventy thousand dollars!"

"Over my dead body! Gerald owes us this much! Remember Xeno, you wouldn't have been expelled if you hadn't stabbed someone because of Gerald! I wouldn't have had to live this kind of life with you then if it wasn't because of him! You were at the top of your class back then!" replied Sienna as she started crying.

"What was that Sienna? What the f*ck are you talking about?" cursed Xeno as his face turned red in anger.

Gerald was caught between the fight and he could only try to de-escalate it.

To be honest, Gerald had felt a pang in his heart the moment Sienna brought back the memory of that incident.

Both Gerald and Xeno had come from poor families. They had grown with the same lifestyle and minuscule fortune, leading both of them to become extremely close confidants.

While both of them used to study together, Xeno, unlike Gerald, not only excelled in academic performances, but he also liked to fight.

It wasn't uncommon for Xeno to be caught fighting others, even from a young age.

He even fought for Gerald as well. Gerald had suffered much more bullying in high school compared to his time in junior high, since Xeno was still fighting off bullies for him then. That all changed when that incident occurred.

Back during their junior high school days, Gerald had a close female friend. They weren't exactly in a relationship back then. The most they did was write letters to one another.

However, another student—who was a well-known gangster—took interest in the same girl. Since he knew that Gerald shared a close relationship with her, he brought along some of his gang members to beat up Gerald after school one day.

Xeno was with Gerald that time and when he saw his best friend about to get beaten up, he helped Gerald fight back.

In his state of panic, Xeno had stabbed the gangster kid with a knife.

While it was fortunate that no one was killed that day, Xeno had to be expelled from school because of that incident.

Chapter 476

After Xeno was expelled, Gerald got beaten up several times.

Even that girl that the gangster was after left Gerald, opting instead to be with the bully.

The reason why Gerald became afraid and shy of girls whenever he saw them during his high school and university years, was directly linked to this event.

Once Xeno got expelled from school, he simply continued living his life out on the streets. He was rarely ever at home. What more, when Gerald entered high school, Xeno kept changing his phone number. It was difficult for Gerald just to be able to get in touch with him sometimes!

Since that day, Gerald had always kept Xeno's sacrifice and kindness deep in his heart.

This was because Xeno's possibly great future had been shattered by a single event, and it was directly caused by Gerald!

Sienna knew about all this and this was why she didn't like Gerald.

Sienna was actually a very nice girl. Her family owned a big supermarket in town and they were very rich. However, she never despised or looked down on Xeno. After all, she had been dating Xeno from the first year of junior high school up till this point.

Therefore, Gerald had always had a really good impression of Sienna.

Hence, no matter what Sienna said or how badly she treated him, Gerald just couldn't feel angry at her at all.

After all, Xeno seemed to be doing well with her. This made Gerald feel even happier and he wasn't about to hold anything against his best friend's fiancée.

It took some time and persuasion, but he finally managed to prevent the fight from getting too wild.

Once things calmed down a little, Sienna went to the kitchen to finish preparing the breakfast that had only been half completed before she ran out.

As they ate, Xeno and Gerald chatted about various things that had happened in the past.

Gerald also took this opportunity to tell Xeno that he had actually won the Mercedes Benz G500 at an event.

Gerald was still hesitant about whether he should tell Xeno about his true identity.

This was mainly because Gerald was afraid that if he told Xeno the truth out of the blue, then the sincere brotherhood they had shared would disappear just like that.

Naturally, since Gerald was now back in Serene County, he would definitely go all out to help Xeno as much as he could!

“Alright, what if we do this instead? I really don’t feel comfortable taking so much money from you, Gerald. I already have a stable life and I even have a fiancée now! You, however, haven’t settled down yet. You may find a girlfriend in the city and she may want to get married and live with you in the future. Think of this as an investment from me for your future happiness. I’ll just take back a small amount of money, and you take the rest. How’s that?”

Xeno was still insistent on giving Gerald some money.

However, Gerald continued to refuse. He even said that he would leave immediately if Xeno kept insisting on giving him the money.

Hearing that, Xeno scratched the back of his head before finally giving up.

“Hey Xeno, isn’t this way better? With that money, you’ll be able to expand your business! That way, Gerald can finally repay you for everything that you’ve done for him!”

Sienna was noticeably happier the moment she saw Xeno give up.

However, she could also tell that Xeno was slightly upset.

“By the way, Xeno, an old colleague of mine called the other day. She said that one of her best friends was in a hurry to get married and she’s around the same age as we are. She told me to introduce a good person to her friend but I didn’t have anyone in mind that day. Why don’t we try introducing Gerald to her? They could go on a blind date and if everything goes well, Gerald may meet his future wife, just like that! You would essentially have helped Gerald find his life partner then!”

Xeno slapped his thigh before laughing aloud. “You hear that Gerald? It’s time for a blind date, brother! Since she wants to get married quickly, with any luck, you two can get married this year! I’m sure she won’t be like the girls you met in the city. Those have overly high standards and their families? Probably even higher standards than the girls themselves! They’re just being too unrealistic!” said Xeno as he shook his head.

Gerald shook his own head, signifying that there was no need for the blind date.

“Why not? There’s nothing for you to lose if it doesn’t work out anyway. Naturally, I’m not asking you to get married immediately. If both of you get along and are suited for each other, good for you! If you’re not, nothing wrong with that! At the very least, both of you could be regular friends then!”

Xeno was really considering everything for Gerald.

It was precisely because of that that Gerald just didn’t feel good turning down his best friend’s goodwill.

What more, Gerald couldn’t just tell Xeno that he didn’t need to worry about him just because he was actually a rich heir!

Their good relationship could fall into shambles there and then!

Seeing no other option, Gerald simply smiled in resignation as he nodded. “Alright, I’ll give it a go!”

He decided to at least meet the girl once and as Xeno had said, it wasn’t a big deal anyway. At the very least, just as Xeno had said, both of them could just end up being regular friends.

“Hahaha! It’s settled then! I’ll start making the arrangements immediately! That girl lives in Serene County too. Let’s see if we can get both of you ready for lunch together today!” said Sienna happily.

After finishing their breakfast, Sienna told Gerald to go back and change into something nicer first to prepare for his blind date.

Not too long after Gerald left Xeno’s shop, he received a call from Zack.

Chapter 477

It was about the jade pendant.

Zack had managed to contact an old, well-experienced master on a jade antique street in Serene County. He was apparently very famous in the local area.

What more, he had also been told that the old master had inherited his craftsmanship from his ancestors.

This was perfect since Gerald needed an experienced person like this to help identify and appraise such an ancient jade.

Gerald decided that he would let the old master have a go at identifying and appraising the jade pendant first. If he couldn't, Gerald would simply look for other jade masters from all over the country then.

After all, if even the dean didn't know anything about Xara Machamer's identity, how else would Gerald be able to find out anything about her?

His only clue was this jade pendant, and Gerald understood that.

Originally, Zack had wanted to accompany Gerald to meet the master. However, Gerald's father had told him that the fewer people knew about Xara Machamer, the better.

In addition, Zack was also very busy now so Gerald declined his offer. After all, Gerald just so happened to know that street well too.

The antique street wasn't too big and there were just a few shops selling antique porcelain there.

Zack, being the professional that he was, had arranged Gerald's meeting with the old master. Because of that, the bespectacled old man with a long white beard was already there waiting for Gerald by the time Gerald got to his shop.

"Mr. Crawford, I assume? My name is Matthew Xiques!" said the old man as he smiled at Gerald.

“Hello, Mr. Xiques, a pleasure to meet you. Let’s get straight to business, shall we? See, I wanted to meet you today because I need you to help me identify and appraise a jade pendant. I’d like to know how old it really is and if possible, where it originated from as well. Basically, the more details you can give me, the better,” said Gerald as he presented the jade pendant to the old master carefully.

When Matthew saw the jade pendant, he was slightly surprised. Carefully picking the pendant up, he squinted his eyes as he brought it close to his face. He looked like a seasoned expert, just as Zack had said.

“I must thank you, Mr. Crawford, for allowing me to see such a rare jade with my very own eyes. In fact, it’s one of the rarest kinds of jade! It’s top quality! Mr. Crawford, if you don’t mind me asking, how did you get your hands on this jade?” asked Matthew as he looked at Gerald with great interest.

Matthew couldn’t guess for the life of him why Gerald would have such an expensive piece of jade on him.

Earlier when Gerald was addressed by Matthew by name, he had assumed that Zack had arranged the entire meeting for him. However, Zack seemed to have left out Gerald’s true identity and Gerald was thankful for that.

Gerald replied, “How I got it isn’t important, Mr. Xiques. Have you managed to identify the origins of this jade pendant...?”

“Ah, I see. Forgive me for being nosy. Also, it’s a little difficult for me to identify the origins of the jade pendant immediately. However, I do recall reading about a jade with such fine texture in one of the notebooks left behind by my ancestors. Would it be convenient for you to leave this jade pendant behind so that I can properly analyze it? Once I get the information you require, I’ll let you know immediately,” said Matthew.

Hearing that, Gerald thought about it for a moment. Since Zack had arranged for Gerald to meet the master, the master should be capable enough in Zack’s eyes.

“That’s fine, Mr. Xiques. I hope to hear from you soon!” said Gerald as he nodded.

The two of them chatted for a little while more before Gerald stepped out of the shop.

What was he going to do now? It was still a little too early for him to head out for his blind date.

After some thought, he decided to withdraw some money from the bank since the new house he had bought was also nearby. Gerald so happened to be carrying the house purchase agreement contract in his bag so he might as well clear the payment immediately.

After all, it wouldn't be possible for Gerald to take up a loan!

"Gerald?"

At that moment, Gerald heard a girl's voice calling out to him. It sounded surprised.

When Gerald turned around to look, he too was pleasantly surprised.

It was Leila's good friend, Cindy.

She had just come out from the inner courtyard. Apparently she lived here.

When Gerald had gone to Leila's house the first time that day, the very beautiful Cindy had left a deep impression on Gerald. He could tell that the girl was a very kind one.

"Do you live here, Cindy?" asked Gerald with a smile.

"Yes! The one inside is my grandfather! Speaking of which, Gerald, why did you come to our shop in the first place?" asked Cindy with a smile as she walked toward Gerald.

"Cindy! That's no way to address him! Refer to him as Mr. Crawford!" shouted Matthew who had poked his head out from his shop.

Matthew didn't know much about Gerald's background. However, he knew that the person who had arranged for Gerald and him to meet was someone who could contact both the county magistrate as well as the chairman of the National Antiquities Research Association. For someone with such an extraordinary status to work under Gerald, he knew that Gerald wasn't someone to mess with.

Why else would Matthew have acted so courteously toward Gerald earlier?

That was the reason why he was so startled at Cindy's lack of manners just a while ago.

"Oh, grandpa! This is a new friend I met recently. His name is Gerald and he's also Leila's childhood friend!" replied Cindy her smile unwavering.

"That's quite alright, Mr. Xiques. Just focus on the job I gave you first!" said Gerald as he smiled.

Chapter 478

"Job...? Also, you still haven't told me why you came to look for my grandpa today!" said Cindy, her curiosity growing.

"It's nothing serious, I just came to ask him for a favor, no big deal," replied Gerald.

"I see... Oh! Since you're already here, why not come in? I'll make some tea for you!"

"Maybe next time, I'll be back soon anyway. I'm just going to head to the bank now to withdraw some money," replied Gerald as he smiled.

"What a coincidence! I'm also going to the bank to pass my mother's cell phone over to her. Let's go together!" said Cindy as she walked out of the shop and stood beside Gerald.

Gerald could only nod awkwardly.

All he wanted to do was to leave quietly after leaving the pendant for Matthew to analyze and withdrawing his money. He really hadn't anticipated running into Cindy here today.

"So, your mother forgot to bring her cell phone out with her?" asked Gerald to break the silence as they walked to the bank.

"Well, that's sort of correct. See, my mother has several cell phones. The bank that she works with urgently needs to attract funds and capital. Since my mother is a deputy director and she needs to meet her targets, she requires several cell phones to call different customers. She's just really busy all the time!" replied Cindy.

Both of them arrived at the bank not too long later.

"Mom, I've brought your cell phone here for you!" called out Cindy to a middle-aged woman who seemed to be waiting for someone.

Hearing Cindy's voice, she turned to look at Gerald and her daughter.

"Thank you Cindy, and who might this be?" asked Cindy's mother.

"Just a friend. His name is Gerald. I think I've mentioned him to you last time! He was the one who had invited me to have French cuisine at the western restaurant. Hehe... It just so happened that we met while we were both on our way over to the bank! He's here to withdraw some money!" replied Cindy with a smile.

"Oh? So this is the young man. Not bad, quite good looking as well! Are both of you going out together later to play?" asked her mother.

Gerald didn't need to be a rocket scientist to tell that Cindy's mother must already have considered him to be Cindy's boyfriend at that moment.

"Oh, not at all! Once I withdraw some money to pay for my house I'll be on my way!"

“Oh? You’ve already bought yourself a house!” said Cindy’s mother happily.

As she said that, she recalled when her daughter had told her about everything that had happened that night. The French cuisine was apparently very expensive and this was proof that this young man was at the very least, financially capable.

He had even bought a house for himself.

“Who’s bought a house, Deputy Director Lacy?” said a cynical voice out of the blue.

At that moment, another middle-aged woman walked up to the trio.

Gerald couldn’t help but feel surprised when he finally saw who had spoken. It was Leila’s mother, Leia.

Leia was also working at the bank, and she was a leader and deputy director as well. She and Cindy’s mother were of similar rank.

“What are you doing here, Gerald?”

She certainly hadn’t expected to see him there.

“I came over to withdraw money!” said Gerald without even bothering to address her as ‘Aunt Leia’ anymore.

“Oh, I see how it is. Can’t even be bothered to greet me by my name now? Why even bother trying to show off if you’re penniless now?”

“Also, you could have started working at a labor dispatch unit by this month if you had just paid according to what was agreed. You know, there were many others who donated much more than you had. Since you only donated seventy thousand dollars to your Uncle Jung, you’ll have to wait a little longer before you get your job!”

Leia was taking every chance she could to widen the gap between Gerald's status and hers.

"Deputy Director Tolbert, what are you talking about? Penniless?" asked Cindy's mother, surprised.

"Oh, you didn't know? So that's why you were talking to him! I guess poor Cindy doesn't know about this either. Well, you see, Gerald here is now..."

And with that, Leia took the opportunity to share how Gerald's family used to be very poor. She even told them about the car he had sold to buy his new house.

Naturally, she also kept emphasizing how much of a pauper Gerald was now.

'F*ck! I almost pushed my own daughter into a lion's den!' Cindy's mother thought to herself as she shuddered.

At that moment, the sound of tires screeching could be heard as a car stopped right outside the bank. As the four people turned to look, they could see several men in suits running into the bank.

"Mom! Your cell phone's here! Come get it!"

Leila, Douglas, and the two girls from the day before entered the bank, with Leila calling out. It seemed like the group was heading out to play again.

By some wild coincidence, they were here to pass Leia's phone to her as well.

"Gerald? What are you doing here?" asked Leila as soon as she saw him.

Chapter 479

"Pfft! Do you even need to ask? He's probably here to get what little pocket money he has left in his bank account! Hahaha! All of you probably didn't notice, but he didn't even have any money in his wallet yesterday!" said Douglas as he laughed.

Leila didn't say anything else. When he was still rich, she couldn't deny that she had some feelings for him.

Now, however, she felt nothing for him after witnessing all that he had done yesterday.

"That's right! He's come to withdraw money and Cindy here came together with him!" said Leila as she too, laughed.

Leila's face scrunched slightly when she heard Cindy's name. She immediately pulled Cindy to the side and began telling her tales of how he was broke and that he may have pulled her along to cheat her of her money.

Once she heard all that, Cindy looked at Gerald with anxious eyes. "Why did you sell the car, Gerald? Also, why did you sell it for such a low price?"

She was sincerely worried about Gerald.

"I'll tell you about it if an opportunity arises in the future. For now, I'm just going to go withdraw some money. I've an appointment at noon!" replied Gerald as he smiled at Cindy.

He didn't even bother to look at anyone else as he walked to the counter.

Douglas himself brought the girls closer to the counter to observe Gerald. He wanted them to see Gerald make a fool of himself in front of the others.

"How much money would you like to withdraw, sir?" asked the clerk.

"Ninety thousand dollars, please," replied Gerald without batting an eyelid.

"Ninety- What?" said Douglas, startled.

Leila was taken aback as well.

The same went for Leila and Cindy's mother who were already heading back into their office. They froze and turned around in shock.

"Just a minute, sir!"

After Gerald entered his password and validated the transaction with his signature, the money counting machine came to life.

Douglas's smug smile disappeared in an instant.

"You... you still have money? Didn't you use all of it to buy that car?" asked Douglas in surprise.

"Did I say I used all of it?" replied Gerald, coldly.

"Then... How much did you actually win?" It was Leila's turn to ask.

Cindy's mother and Leila herself had inched closer to the group by then. All of them waited anxiously.

"I won..."

Gerald made sure to keep the suspense up for as long as he could. He deserved at least that. Once he had enough, he smiled and said, "Actually, forget it. It's not that much. There's really no need to talk about it!"

"You!" Leila could only manage a single word. She was furious.

Gerald couldn't fit all the money into his small bag so he asked one of the cleaning staff there for a black garbage bag. He stuffed the money—all ninety thousand dollars—into it and nodded to Cindy with a smile before leaving the bank with the bag.

“...So... He actually still had money!” shouted Aunt Leia, devastated.

“That Gerald! How much did he actually win from the lottery?” asked Leila anxiously.

“D*mn it all! I think he’s just doing all this on purpose! He’s just pretending to be poor in front of us!” Douglas was beyond annoyed at that point.

After all, he had just received a huge mental slap from Gerald. All his intentions of having fun were now down the drain.

As for Gerald, he soon arrived at the sales office and the salesgirl from before definitely felt the same mental slap that Douglas received when Gerald fully paid for the house in cold, hard cash.

One hundred and five thousand dollars’ worth of cash in one go.

This was a big boss.

Chapter 480

By the time Gerald was done settling the house’s payment, it was already close to noon and Xeno made sure Gerald was aware of this by constantly calling him.

After hurrying back to his hotel room to change into some better clothes, Gerald immediately headed for a restaurant called Johnsbury Bistro.

While he was on his way there, Xeno and Sienna were already at the restaurant.

Three other people were in the private room with them.

One of them was Sienna’s colleague while the other two were the girl who was going to be Gerald’s blind date today as well as her mother.

The girl had long, black hair, and her skin was very fair. She looked both delicate and beautiful. However, her looks dictated her behavior as she seemed cold and her head was lowered most of the time as she constantly looked through her WeChat.

Her mother, on the other hand, was a plump middle-aged woman with tattooed eyebrows that looked similar to caterpillars. Contrasting her daughter, she looked rather sturdy and even formidable.

“Gerald’s a very nice person, and we’re not praising him for the sake of it either. You’ll know what we mean when you meet later. What more, he graduated from a prestigious university and he’s quite handsome as well! He’s started looking for a job and I heard that he’s aiming to work for a public office. Don’t let that get your hopes down, though. He recently just bought a house in Serene County!” explained Sienna as they waited.

Though Sienna had some resentment for Gerald in recent years, she wasn’t always like that. She used to have a good relationship with him during junior high due to him constantly being around Xeno.

The slight hatred only began because of the incident that had caused Xeno to be expelled back then. However, the resentment she had for him had now dissipated after the events of this morning.

She was now sincerely worried for Gerald as well, and she wanted to do all she could to help him.

“Well, how big is the house that he bought? If it has less than three rooms, can it even be considered to be a house? There must be at least three bedrooms, two living rooms, and two bathrooms!” asked the girl as she finally raised her head.

“Well wouldn’t you know it? His new house fits your bare minimum! Haha!” replied Xeno.

“Well, what about his car? What car is he driving now?”

This time, it was her mother who asked.

“Oh, he doesn’t have a car yet. But you know, cars aren’t worth that much money in the first place!” replied Xeno.

Her mother coughed before saying, “Well, you see, having a house or a car isn’t the most important thing to us. We just hope that he’s an honest man! I won’t accept a man who only likes to brag and talk big!”

“Oh, you can be assured that that guy’s the most honest man on the planet! We grew up together so we’re more than certain about his personality,” replied Sienna.

While everyone was chatting, Gerald finally opened the door and entered the room.

“Gerald! There you are! Come over here quickly so that I can introduce you to them!” said Xeno with a smile as he began introducing the two parties to one another.

The girl’s mother scanned Gerald from head to toe and she could sense that he really did look and feel like an honest person.

She could breathe a bit easier knowing that.

The dishes arrived soon after and both parties talked to each other as they ate their lunch.

“You know, they’re really taking their sweet time to serve the last dish! I’m going to go over and ask them about it!” said Sienna’s colleague as she stood up. She secretly winked at Sienna and Xeno.

“Yeah, I think I’ll join you,” said Sienna. Xeno excused himself to go to the bathroom as well.

Before Xeno left the room with the other two, he patted Gerald on the shoulder and gave him a secret thumbs-up. He closed the door of the private room, leaving only Gerald, the girl, and her mother inside.

Seeing that everyone else had left, the middle-aged woman wiped her mouth with a paper towel.

“So, Gerald, right? We’ve heard about all the good things about you from your good friends. I personally think that you’re quite an honest person. Tell me, what do you think about my daughter?” asked the woman.

Of course he was honest. This was his first time partaking in a blind date event. What more, the woman looked extremely fierce! She also hadn’t said much since Gerald arrived.

“She’s not bad!” replied Gerald.

At that moment, the girl raised her head to look at him for a moment. After a few seconds, she pouted before lowering her head again in disdain.

‘...F*ck! What kind of expression was that?’ Gerald thought to himself. He couldn’t help but curse in his mind.

The woman cleared her throat before saying, “Let me tell you this, Gerald. My daughter is working for a company under the Dream Investment Group. She’s working for the Dencouls Production and Trading Corporation. I believe you should know about the Dream Investment Group, right? Being such a large group with superb financial strength, do you know how difficult it is for someone to get into that company?”

Dencouls Production and Trading Corporation. If Gerald remembered correctly, that was just one of the companies supported by the Dream Investment Group. After all, the Dream Investment Group was supporting several local projects and companies like this.

Did she actually just claim that her daughter was working under the Dream Investment Group because of that?

Gerald could only smile at that before nodding slightly.

He was honestly thinking to himself at that moment. The woman looked quite normal. She looked decent and her personality wasn’t too bad either. Why was she lowering her standards and going on blind dates then?

“My daughter’s interested in you because she can tell that you’re an honest man. She would love to marry an honest man. However! There are three absolute rules that you have to abide by before both of you can marry. Listen closely now!”

“I beg your pardon?”

Gerald was dumbfounded. What in f*ck’s name was going on here?

Chapter 481

Wasn’t he just here to meet this girl and become friends?

When Gerald heard those words, he immediately felt uneasy and saw that he was in a position to be obligated to get married immediately.

Unconsciously, he started breaking out in cold sweat.

“First, you have to transfer the title of your house and your car over to my daughter before she marries you. Oh, wait. You don’t have a car yet. So, you can just transfer the title of your house over to my daughter. It should be under my daughter’s name and not under both of your names. This will help ensure that you are sincere, got it?” said the woman.

“Oh... yeah, alright.”

Gerald nodded, his face sullen and numb.

“The most expensive property that I own is worth 120,000,000 dollars. Even if I am willing to give it to you, would you even dare accept it? Hah!”

“Secondly, there’s definitely a problem with your parents. You have a sister, right? I’d better give you a heads up about this. If your sister gets married in the future, you cannot reject the dowry of her fiancée. Instead, you have to accept it and deposit the proceeds into my daughter’s account. My daughter will also be in charge of the salary that you earn and the money earned by your parents. Will that be okay for you? Of course, your parents are not allowed to live with you either. Since your house is in the city,

your parents can visit the county for a couple of days if they want. But that said, they will need to source accommodation for themselves.”

The woman continued in a hostile tone.

“Did you hear me?!”

Gerald nodded repeatedly. “Yes, I heard you. You may continue.”

He also whipped out a small notebook and pen from his bag, jotting down everything she said.

This was his first time going on a blind date, but Gerald felt this experience was more than enough. F*ck! He could only dread the other conditions that this woman was going to bring up.

If it weren't for Sienna's colleague who introduced this mother-daughter pair to him, Gerald would've really doubted if they were going all out to scam him into this marriage.

When the woman saw how obedient and gullible Gerald was, she squealed with delight inside.

She continued rambling on.

“Thirdly, wedding arrangements. I won't repeat to you where my daughter works, right? Heh. When the time comes, there will be many reputable figures who will be attending your wedding. Hence, your wedding car of choice cannot be your regular runabout. Daughter, what do you think of an Audi?”

The woman could not make up her mind, asking for her daughter's opinion.

The daughter brushed her fingers through her hair, sighing, “I think a Mercedes-Benz or a BMW should be fine. But if we're going with a BMW, then it will have to be at least a 7 Series or higher.”

“Sounds good. You can choose between the two then!”

The woman turned to Gerald and commanded.

“As for the fourth...”

“There is a fourth rule? Didn’t you say that there were three rules?”

Gerald asked in surprise, his jaw-dropping slightly.

“You!”

Both the woman and her daughter raised their heads as they stared coldly at Gerald.

“Oh! I’m sorry. The fourth point, the fourth point. Please carry on. I am listening,” Gerald swallowed and replied thoughtfully.

“The fourth point is regarding the wedding gift. We don’t expect too much, but you should be paying attention to the thousands of red and green.”

“Hang on, auntie. How much money are we looking at for thousands of red and green?” Gerald asked, smiling sheepishly.

“Pfft! You’re so stingy. It’s about twenty-two thousand dollars. We want it in cash. We don’t want anything in the form of a bank card, bank book, or anything like that.

We want it all in cash. This is our house rule! Of course, this is the dowry your family should be granting ours if you want to marry my daughter. And we’ll also need to talk about something else. We’ve already spent a ton of money to get this job for our daughter, and we still need to save up for her brother’s education fees too. As such, our family will not be returning the dowry to you. Our only hope is that you both will lead a happy life as a married couple. That’s all!”

“Oh! How could we possibly enjoy a good and happy life?” Gerald quizzed sarcastically as the whole picture seemed too graphic.

“Huh? What did you say?”

The woman was startled.

“I said, alright. Please carry on!”

Gerald quickly flashed a smile.

It was definite that he would not be marrying her. But all those conditions mentioned had piqued his curiosity.

“Hmph. The fifth point is the most important. After marrying my daughter, you cannot lay a finger on her within the first three years. This is an important rule in our family and hometown. Once three years have passed, you must first get my daughter’s consent before you can touch her!”

The woman said.

F*ck!

Gerald was so stunned at her statement that his pen fell to the ground.

“C’mon, you don’t have to look so shocked. Do you know how difficult it is for someone to get a wife nowadays? Plus, my daughter is so beautiful, has such a good temperament and a good career. Think you’ll be able to find anyone else better than her? Dream on!” scoffed the woman as she concluded.

Suddenly, the girl covered her mouth as she began to gag.

“Mom, can you help me to the washroom? Ugh~!”

She continued retching as her mother propped her up all the way to the washroom.

Sweat trickled down Gerald's cheeks.

To be honest, if it weren't for Xeno, Gerald would not even have bothered to come here today.

HE simply wanted to run away, especially when put under such ridiculous circumstances.

Chapter 482

Gerald grabbed a paper towel as he wiped the sweat off his forehead. He felt the sudden urge to relieve himself and started pacing toward the washroom.

As he passed by the female's washroom, he unexpectedly heard the woman and her daughter's conversation as she repeatedly patted her back.

"What's wrong? Why the sudden nausea?"

The woman asked worriedly.

"Yeah... This naughty little boy is kicking me again!"

"Oh! I told you to be more careful! I've always told you to pay more attention to what you do! Why did you have to mess around with a foreigner?"

She frowned and scolded.

"Mom, don't say that about Jamison! Jamison isn't just any ordinary guy. He's a foreigner from M Country! He promised me that he would come back to look for me in three years!"

Gerald, who heard this from outside, was fuming with frustration.

He knew that these two women had really deceived him.

It felt too good to be true, and everything was oddly in place, but the girl seemed so anxious to get married.

So, was she just looking for a temporary replacement to become the father of someone else's child?

And if he married her, there would be an additional unwanted gift—a mixed-race baby in return!

No way! He could not afford to be fooled around by them anymore, or there would be no end to this matter.

As he gritted his teeth, he wanted to look for Xeno and the rest of them so badly, but he knew that they purposely hid themselves during such a time.

Gerald returned to his seat defeatedly as he was drowned in helplessness.

Not long after that, both the mother and her daughter came back to the room.

“Alright then, Gerald. Do you understand everything that we said just now? If you do, you may go back and decide on a suitable date. It would be best if both of you can get married by this month!”

The woman exclaimed coldly.

“Hang on, auntie. I have something to say.”

Gerald said in a slow and inarticulate manner.

“Ahh? You still have something to say? Alright then, speak up!”

The woman replied impatiently.

Gerald glanced at the girl before saying, "Can you let me take a look at you first?"

"Haven't you seen me already? What else do you want to see?" the girl rudely retorted as she frowned at Gerald.

"I am asking you to lift up your skirt so that I can have a look. I need to inspect the goods first!"

Gerald replied nonchalantly.

"What?!"

The woman and the girl's eyes widened in shock.

Good god. This was a blind date, and it wasn't just any ordinary low-class restaurant either. This young man actually had the audacity to spew such shameless gibberish amid such an occasion?

"Are you insane?!" The girl shrieked as she stood up abruptly and threw the wine glass in one swoop.

"Damn it! If I wasn't insane, there's no way I would've been able to continue talking to the both of you for so long! I had enough of your rubbish! You are nothing but a piece of trash with your crazy and ridiculous conditions!"

Gerald could not hold it in anymore and started cursing.

They simply took him for a fool. It was still fine at first. But after they visited the washroom, Gerald could no longer put up with their bullsh*t. It made him furious.

He really wanted to get even with them.

“You bast*rd!”

Slap!

The woman was even more aggressive. She was not the kind of person that anyone could mess around with. With a tight expression on her face, she immediately raised her hand to send a massive slap across Gerald’s face.

“F*ck you!!”

Slap!

Enraged, Gerald instantly returned the slap. As he was quite strong, it completely knocked the woman down to the floor.

While this was going on, Sienna, Xeno, and the matchmaker were chatting and laughing on the way back.

Xeno: “You have to help me put in a good word or two for Gerald in this matter!”

The matchmaker: “Don’t worry! C’mon, don’t you know how close I am to Sienna? Besides, I think the woman is pretty satisfied with Gerald!”

“Well, let’s go in and see what they’re up to!”

When Xeno and the others arrived, they stood outside for a bit and did not enter yet.

Just as they were about to head in, they suddenly heard a loud crashing sound of plates smashing onto the table.

All three of them froze, stunned. The doors swung open...

Chapter 483

As Xeno and the rest rushed in; they were welcomed to the scene of Gerald fighting with both women.

The three of them were utterly shocked at the sight, quickly intervening and persuading them to stop fighting, which fortunately turned out a success.

Xeno knew that if Gerald had really lost his temper, he could be really ruthless and impulsive.

No. Actually, half of the woman's face had started swelling badly after getting hit by Gerald.

Xeno and the others hurriedly dragged the two women, still yelling and cursing, away from the scene.

He had been given the responsibility to send them home.

Sienna could not help but feel a little anxious. What was going on here?

Despite feeling uneasy with the whole situation, she still got into the car with Xeno and the rest.

He informed them that he would be having dinner with Gerald tonight to get some clarity on what happened.

Gerald did not suffer other injuries aside from a stinging cheek from the woman's slap.

As for why he had to vent his anger and frustrations...

First, it was because the two of them were really extraordinarily annoying and frustrating, even planning to trick him and make a fool out of him.

Second, Gerald couldn't take the fact that the demure and pretty Weston girl had actually been taken advantage of by a foreigner. It made him very uneasy and unhappy.

With everything adding up, Gerald didn't refrain from speaking harshly. He couldn't help but retaliate immediately once the woman hit him.

After all, they were not related at all. No matter what it was, he wasn't the poor pauper he once was. How could he allow someone to just slap him that way?

Gerald stood in the lobby alone as he settled the bill. He shook his head as he saw how the table full of wine and dishes had really gone to waste.

"Eh? Gerald! Why are you here? What a coincidence!"

Gerald suddenly heard someone calling his name.

When he turned around, he saw Cindy and her mother. He did not notice their presence before this.

"Gerald, you came here for a meal too?" asked Cindy.

"I guess you could say that!" replied Gerald as he smiled awkwardly.

"Well then, have you eaten yet?"

"I guess you could say that."

"Pfft! You've got a funny way of talking!"

Cindy was really tickled by how Gerald spoke.

“Since it is such a coincidence, why don’t you join us for a meal if you haven’t eaten already? My mom was just saying that she would like to buy you a meal if she ran into you. Not forgetting how you even treated me to a delicious French meal the last time!”

“Isn’t that so, mom?” asked Cindy, smiling brightly.

Francesca smiled as she looked at Gerald. Nodding, she said, “That’s right. Anyway, I’m also treating a young man to lunch. If you have no other plans, please do join us for lunch...”

When Francesca heard what Leia said before this, she also thought Gerald was nothing but a pauper.

She initially did not want her daughter to spend any more time with him.

Seeing the bigger picture, Gerald withdrew 90,000 dollars from the bank at one go.

This really shocked them all.

The more Francesca thought about it, the more she felt something wasn’t right.

She could tell that Gerald was a very calm and composed person. Even in the face of ridicule, he could still maintain his composure and maturity. No ordinary person would have been able to take it the same way.

With such comprehensive thoughts on this matter, she decided to get to know Gerald better. Hence, the reason she got Cindy to invite Gerald for a meal.

As for lunch today, Francesca finally managed to use one of her connections to get in touch with a potential client. It was the cousin of one of her female kindergarten mates whose family was very influential.

To further attract the client, Francesca decided she would be buying lunch. The other party was not free, but his son, also a rich heir, was. Francesca thought it would be merrier and easier for her to connect

with the other party if there was another young person around. So, she decided to ask Cindy to join her for lunch too.

And then, they bumped into Gerald. How perfectly things turned out!

Everything was fated. Hehe. In fact, the director of the bank was about to retire before the end of the year. Therefore, one of the two deputy directors would be appointed as the new director of the bank.

And so, Francesca and Leia became rivals for the position.

“Look! My mom is also asking you to join us. Come join us! Let’s have a meal together.” Cindy persuaded.

Gerald rubbed his stomach. He did start to feel a little hungry after all that squabble and muscle movement earlier on.

Chapter 484

He had barely eaten anything, and his stomach grumbled with low groans.

It would also be ungracious to turn down Francesca’s kind offer; hence Gerald agreed to join them for lunch.

It was then that Gerald received a call from Xeno.

“F*ck! Gerald, I am so, so sorry for you. I totally understand now why the fight happened. Let alone you, I, too, felt like giving them a good beating. If it weren’t for Sienna, I would have already given it to them just now. Isn’t this simply equivalent to committing fraud?!”

Seemed as though Xeno found out the truth. He was enraged and fuming mad.

“Sienna and that colleague of hers have already gotten into a big argument. She wants me to apologize to you. She really trusted that colleague of hers! Who would have expected her to introduce such a piece of trash to you instead? That woman even vomited inside my car! Hmph!”

Xeno couldn't help but feel contrite.

His intentions were good—introduce a girl to his buddy to give him a helping hand. On the contrary, the outcome was terrible, and such a woman was introduced to Gerald instead. Anyone else would have also felt awful and embarrassed.

“It's okay, Xeno. So, where are the both of you now? Have you sent that woman and her mother home yet?”

“Are you kidding me? Who'd be bothered to send them home? Arghh!! Plus, that woman totally said the wrong thing in my car. She should've known her place! The moment she said it, I literally chased the both of them out. Sienna and I are going to walk around the supermarket now. Do come over and have a drink with me tonight!”

“Yeah, sure!”

After a quick chat, Gerald then hung up the phone.

Alas. How could Gerald possibly blame Xeno and Sienna for this?

He decided not to think about the matter anymore, following Cindy and her mother into the room.

“I wonder when Waylon and the others will arrive... hmm. Speaking of which, Waylon's actually a pretty decent guy. The moment he heard that his aunt was the one who introduced me to them, he was very polite and respectful towards me over the phone. He even said that he would bring a couple of friends here with him today! Regardless of whether this business deal would be successful or not, both his aunt and I would also owe him a favor today. Cindy, it would be great if you can find someone like him to become your boyfriend!”

Francesca blurted excitedly.

“Mom! What are you talking about?”

Cindy burst out as she pouted.

“Aunt Lacy?”

Suddenly, the door of the room swung wide open.

A boy walked in and greeted them with a bright smile.

There were two other young men and a woman standing behind him. They were all young people just like Gerald and Cindy.

“Yes! Are you Waylon Letts?” Francesca asked as she returned the smile.

Waylon nodded before replying, “Yes, Aunt Lacy. Sorry that we are late!”

“Haha! What are you apologizing for? We just arrived too. Your aunt often tells me how handsome you are. I had a tough time believing her as you know, there aren’t many good looking ones around anyway. But my, you are even more handsome than her compliments!”

“Aunt Lacy, you flatter me. Please allow me to introduce you to my friends. First, this is Milo Laurent. He is a high school classmate and a buddy of mine. His family owns a factory. This girl is Xella Jaquin, also a classmate from high school. This guy is Jacky Zeni, the department’s deputy manager in Xella’s company. I would especially mention that the company Xella works at is a Dream Investment Group subsidiary! Hehe!”

Waylon proudly introduced all of them, one hand stuck in his pocket.

“Gosh! All of you are so young! How can you be so amazing and capable?”

It all took Francesca by surprise, judging how they had accomplished so much at such a young age.

She was oblivious to the fact that the other three who had come with Waylon were also dumbfounded by his introduction.

“Waylon, this is my daughter, Cindy. She’s the same age as you, but haha... well certainly not quite as promising as you are!”

“And yes, this is an ordinary friend of Cindy’s that she had recently got acquainted with...”

It seemed as though Francesca was afraid that Waylon and the others would misunderstand seeing Gerald as Cindy’s boyfriend.

She wanted to justify by giving them clarity.

However, Waylon interrupted her before she could even finish speaking.

“Aunt Lacy, don’t worry, there is no need for you to introduce him to us. We know who he is. He’s Gerald, and he is our classmate too!” replied Waylon as he looked at Gerald with a sneer.

He had not settled the score after Gerald gave him a slap during their last high-school reunion.

Back then, Waylon was supposed to be the day’s protagonist, but Gerald stole the limelight. He even got beaten up until his head was bleeding!

Those few days were basically like living hell because all Waylon could think about whenever he closed his eyes was how Gerald had given him a slap across his face. It was a nightmare.

He could not help but become very uncomfortable once he saw Gerald again.

Waylon had been continually thinking of ways of where he could find the opportunity to trample all over Gerald, then destroy him in front of everyone else when their paths crossed again.

The moment he saw Gerald today, it definitely took him by surprise.

Gerald, oh, Gerald! It seemed as though a clash would be inevitable between both enemies!

As the introduction went on, Gerald smiled and looked at Xella.

“We meet again, Xella!”

Chapter 485

“Know Aunt Lacy and her family, Gerald?”

Gerald previously drove a Mercedes-Benz G500 at the hospital, and he even knew the county’s leader. It really surprised Xella.

Frankly, Gerald was quite charismatic that day.

That said, regardless of circumstance, Gerald was still inferior compared to Waylon and Jacky, who were standing next to her.

Waylon’s family owned a huge empire. He had also started his own company and became a boss at such a young age.

Although Waylon didn’t drive a car as posh as Gerald’s Mercedes Benz G500, he had higher prospects compared to Gerald.

As for Jacky, Xella suspected that he was the one who helped her the last time as the deputy manager of the personnel department.

He was a large organization manager, and he had very high standards in the public institution. He was also rewarded with a very high bonus and dividend at the end of the year.

Plus, Jacky also owned a business.

He was a handsome, eligible white-collar worker.

What about Gerald? What else did he have?

Although Gerald was one of the more capable ones from their class, Xella no longer had the kind of affection that she felt for him during high school.

“Yes, I know them! How unexpected that the guests’ Aunt Lacy invited for lunch today are you guys! Such a coincidence!” replied Gerald as he nodded.

Although some of them weren’t fans of Gerald, they all sat at the same dinner table, eating, drinking, and chatting with each other.

Gerald, who was sitting at the side, could sense that something was different this time.

It seemed as though Waylon and Xella were no longer as close as how they used to be.

To further explain, back then, Xella used to be really attached to Waylon, and Waylon had always been interested in Xella too.

But strangely, at lunch today, most of Xella’s attention was focused on Jacky.

Waylon would sometimes throw a cold stare at Gerald before stealing glances at Jacky, envy dripping all over his face.

It was apparent that he didn’t look happy, but not to the point of being too upset.

Cindy’s appearance really brightened up his day.

She was as gorgeous as Xella, but with a bonus look of innocence on her—pure and delicate.

Despite his jealousy toward Jacky, Waylon had put in a conscious effort to show his affection and favor to Cindy.

Milo was also captivated by Cindy's beauty and tried to make moves too. But upon seeing the look on Waylon's face, Milo quickly held back all of his advances.

What was even more embarrassing was the fact that Cindy seemed to be interested in Gerald. The whole time, she had been using her own chopsticks, picking up the food and leaving them on Gerald's plate.

Her gesture really upset Waylon and Milo.

Although this lunch seemed to be peaceful on the surface, many little internal battles were going on behind the scenes.

Waylon quickly glanced at Gerald before he winked at Milo. After that, both excused themselves, saying that they had to go to the washroom.

"Waylon, what's the matter? Are you interested in Cindy? She is my..."

Milo spoke up.

"Shut up. We are not going to talk about that first. I mean, look. The opportunity has finally come for me to settle things with Gerald. I want to take advantage of this opportunity to make sure that this b*tch, Xella, and that girl, Cindy, have some respect for me!"

Waylon could not hide his sullen expression as he cringed at how awkward and embarrassing the atmosphere was at the dining table earlier.

“What? Are you serious, Waylon? You’re going to deal with Gerald, like now? I mean, how?”

Milo got a little excited at the thought.

During the last fight, besides Cameron, Milo got himself involved too. Milo had also always been tagging along with Waylon ever since their high school days.

Milo’s family ran a factory and was rich, but he fought very well.

“By the way, when we went out for drinks about two days ago, was that your brother, Warrick, who does like underground dealings? Why don’t we do this then? Perhaps you could give Big War a ring later. Tell him to come over and just give these bunch a little scare. And once the matter seems unsolvable, I will ask my godbrother, Jaxon, to give him a call then. Hah! And in Serene County, everyone knows how no one in the world wouldn’t dare give face to Jaxon!”

“On second thought, tell him to not just give them a scare. It would be best if they could belittle Gerald; beat him up nicely. I want him to embarrass himself!” Waylon growled.

Milo was amazed when he heard Waylon’s suggestion.

“That is a brilliant idea!”

“Yes. Jaxon had been feeling very sorry towards me because he couldn’t help me with the matter the last time. All the more, I am his godbrother. He promised me that he would definitely help me take care of things if I ran into any difficulties in the future!”

Waylon exclaimed proudly.

“Okay, then! Let’s do that then. Let me give Big War a call now!”

Milo then hurriedly dialed on his phone.

The both of them then returned to the room casually, but deep down, they could barely contain their excitement.

Gerald, enjoying his pork trotters at the side, could not help but wonder why both of them were laughing gleefully amongst themselves.

Not long after, there was a loud commotion outside.

“What do you think you guys are doing? You cannot go in there!”

Chapter 486

A waitress yelled at the top of her lungs.

“Get lost!!”

A man cursed.

The next thing everyone knew, the room door was kicked wide open.

A group of seven or eight brawny men with buzz cuts and gold necklaces around their necks rushed into the room.

Each of them had dragon-like tattoos carved over their bodies.

They definitely gave off an intimidating vibe.

Clad in short-sleeved shirts, they slowly looked around, staring deadly at the people inside the room at this moment.

The leader of the gang had on a T-shirt and a sling pouch bag.

He took a long puff before he growled in a raspy voice, "Who was the one who booked this room? I want you to move to another room now!"

"Why should we do that? Who do you guys think you are?"

Cindy asked angrily as she stood up. She was not afraid of them at all.

"Who am I? Hah, girl. I am Warrick Yackel. If you don't know who I am, go out on the streets and ask anyone about me!"

Warrick chuckled as he threw the cigarette butt on the ground and stepped on it.

Francesca raised her brows when she heard this.

This proved that she had heard of Warrick's name before this.

"Mr. Yackel, we're not done with our meals yet. So, how can we possibly move to another room then?"

Francesca asked politely, a tight smile pressed across her face.

"How? It's simple. Each of you just pick up your own damn dish in your hands and move elsewhere!"

Warrick retorted and sniggered.

The atmosphere was tense and awkward. Even Francesca did not know what else to say.

If they were to take their dishes out to eat, Waylon would definitely lose face.

Francesca could only helplessly hold down her irritated daughter as she tried to persuade Cindy to sit down.

Waylon and Milo both just calmly observed the situation unfold with delight.

But something felt amiss, and Waylon whispered worriedly, "What's going on? Gerald's one of those who hosted today's luncheon too. So, why isn't he doing anything at all? If we're going accordingly to plan, as soon as Gerald speaks up, they would immediately start beating him up! This is f*cking annoying!"

At the same time, Gerald thought to himself:

'Waylon and Milo are usually the types who enjoy being in the limelight. During such situations, they would be already showing off and trying to handle the situation to prove their own strengths and capabilities. I don't want to rob them of their opportunity to take charge. But it seems as though both of them are not going to say anything at all. What is going on?'

Gerald decided to remain seated and continued to observe further.

"Okay! Looks like none of you are going to speak up, right? Then, don't blame me for being impolite!"

Warrick cracked his knuckles and loosened his neck.

Boom!

Suddenly, Jacky slammed his hands on the table.

"Let's see how brave you guys are then! Don't you have any respect for the law? Xella, call the police now!"

Jacky fumed as he stared coldly at the group of men, one hand in his pocket.

Xella felt her cheeks turning pink as she felt Jacky's charm exuding out of him.

She stared wishfully at Jacky, her eyes filled with admiration.

Milo could not help but feel even more worried about Waylon.

Milo looked at Waylon, as though to say: "Look! Jacky is stealing all the limelight from you!"

Waylon simply smiled wryly as he thought to himself: 'He wants to steal the limelight from me? Heh. Fine, I'll let Jacky and Gerald steal the limelight from me first. My plan will not work if no one is trying to steal the limelight from me!'

Jacky, too felt a sense of accomplishment, like a hero. He turned around and looked at Xella, as though telling her not to worry, and that he had everything under control.

Xella simply nodded and quickly whipped out her cell phone to call the police.

"F*ck! So you're really not giving me any face at all. Brothers... beat him up!"

As soon as Warrick boomed, he picked up a stool from the side and threw it directly at Jacky.

As the fight broke out, one of the gang members snatched Xella's phone and broke it.

Xella's face immediately crunched in fear as she crouched defensively behind Waylon.

Jacky was pinned to the ground as the guys severely bludgeoned him up.

"Stop! Stop hitting him! Stop hitting him! What should I do now?!"

Francesca screamed in a frenzy and looked as though she was about to burst into tears.

Waylon saw that Cindy and Xella were completely helpless and almost reached their limits. But yet Gerald still remained calm and did not take any action. Waylon cursed below his breath and vowed to have someone else beat him up next time then.

Suddenly, the sound of someone slamming their hands on the table pierced through the air.

Waylon slipped his hands in his pockets, squinting in frustration. He tilted his head as he slowly muttered in disgust.

“I want you guys to stop right now!!!”

Chapter 487

Waylon stood up and yelled.

Stunned, Warrick and his guys stopped immediately.

“Young man, are you asking for a death wish too?”

Warrick pranced towards Waylon, his face grim and black.

“Don’t mess around with him! Don’t you know who Waylon’s father is?”

Although Xella had tasted the harshest realities of the world in these few years, never had she come across anything like this before. When this incident broke out, the sense of security that she felt in Jacky was gone entirely.

Looking at how things turned out, it seemed as though Waylon was handling things better compared to Jacky.

Despite being clouded in fear, Xella felt the urge to reveal Waylon’s family background to scare off Warrick and his men.

“Pfft! Who is he?”

Before Xella could reply, Waylon grabbed her arm and motioned for her to shut up.

“Xella, I told you before that I do not want to involve my father in any of my own affairs in the future. Get behind me. It’s okay. I will solve this matter!”

Waylon replied.

“Ahh? But Waylon...”

“Just stand behind me!!”

Waylon roared at Xella.

Xella nodded timidly. Despite being yelled at, she suddenly felt a strong sense of security deep down in her heart.

She obediently stood behind him.

“Big War, my name is Waylon Letts. I started a small company of my own. I know how famous you are in the underground industry. My godbrother from Mayberry City knows who you are too.”

Waylon smiled at Warrick, trying to ease the situation.

“Oh, is that so?” Warrick raised an eyebrow, pretending to be shocked.

Francesca, who stood by the sides, started to feel a growing sense of admiration and appreciation for Waylon when he saw him dealing with things so calmly.

“Your godbrother also knows who I am? And from Mayberry City? What is his name?”

Warrick paused for a moment before asking Waylon.

“Jaxon, Sanders. He is very powerful and influential in both Mayberry City and Serene County. Everyone calls him Jaxon the Great. Have you heard of him before, Big War?”

Waylon replied, smiling politely.

“What? Jaxon the Great is your godbrother?”

Warrick asked, as his face turned pale immediately.

His act was really convincing.

“Bullsh*t! Who is Jaxon the Great? He is from Mayberry Organization. How can you possibly know someone like him?”

Warrick immediately quizzed him.

In fact, Francesca doubted his words too. She found it fishy for someone like Waylon to be so well connected.

Plus, it was such a big claim to say that Jaxon the Great was his godbrother!

“Heh. You don’t believe me, do you? If you don’t believe me, I can always drop my godbrother a call now and get him to speak to you in person then!”

Waylon replied calmly before calling Jaxon.

Of course, he had already told Jaxon about this matter beforehand and asked for his favor to put on an act and pass a message on his behalf.

His primary purpose was just to teach his enemy a lesson.

After all, since Jaxon did not manage to help Waylon the last time, hence he agreed to this favor today.

“Brother, are you busy? I ran into some trouble...oh, yes. I am at Johnsbury Bistro now. There is someone by the name of Warrick Yackel who is holding up my friends and me!”

“What? You’re near Johnsbury Bistro? So you’re coming over now?”

Waylon was in glee, unable to contain his delight.

When they spoke over the phone earlier, they had already planned for Jaxon to say a few words over the phone to Warrick. Unexpectedly, Jaxon was actually going to come here personally.

Waylon then hung up the phone excitedly.

“It really is Jaxon the Great!”

As he said this, Warrick pretended to be extremely shocked. He even acted as though he was too scared to even move.

One of Warrick’s conditions stated before he agreed to put on an act for Waylon was so that he could befriend Jaxon the Great through Waylon. After all, Warrick knew that Waylon came from compelling family background.

Otherwise, he would not have agreed to put on this act for him for no reason at all.

“Pfft! You are finally scared now?!”

Xella scoffed.

She was still feeling furious that the group of men had broken her cell phone just now.

A short while later, the door swung open again.

A young man decked in a neat suit and leather shoes stepped into the room.

Chapter 488

“Who is causing trouble?” questioned the young man.

When Warrick saw the young man, he was shocked. “It’s really you, Jaxon the Great! I am Warrick, and I was just hanging around the area. This is all a misunderstanding!”

Jaxon had been invited to sing at a karaoke bar next to Johnsbury Bistro. He initially thought that it would not be right for him not to help Waylon at all after receiving so many favors from Waylon’s family.

With that thought in mind, he decided to come over in person to take a look.

“So, what should I do now then? Waylon, you’re not injured, are you?”

Jaxon asked.

“I am not injured, brother! No worries.”

Waylon walked over to Jaxon and took out a cigarette before handing it over to Jaxon as he lit it up for him.

Just as Jaxon had a few drags of the cigarette, it fell right to the ground.

“Brother, what’s wrong?”

Waylon asked curiously.

“You... you are here?”

Jaxon asked as he looked at Gerald, who was sitting down at the table in astonishment.

He was very clear about who Gerald was. As one of those directly involved in the organization, he was certain about Gerald’s true identity.

Gerald, on the other hand, had always thought that Jaxon was a sincere and upright man. He failed to fathom how he was acquainted with someone like Waylon, who only liked to loaf around.

“Yes!”

Gerald replied as he nodded.

Milo, who was standing by the side, also wanted to be able to speak to Jaxon. He then scurried towards Jaxon as he said softly, “Jaxon the Great, that is the kid that we were going to beat up today!”

“What? Are you saying that the person that you wanted to beat up...is him?” Jaxon asked in shock.

“Yes. Brother, this kid actually offended your godbrother! And that’s equivalent to offending me too. Watch me. I am going to hit him now!”

Jaxon’s expression was difficult to read at that very moment.

Warrick started to make his way towards Gerald to beat him up.

Seeing that, Jaxon suddenly lifted his foot and tripped Warrick, who weighed more than eighty kilograms.

Warrick instantly fell to the ground with a loud thud.

“Damn it! You are so rude and disrespectful! I will put an end to you today!”

As a chauffeur, Jaxon could naturally fight very well.

This group of people actually wanted to beat Mr. Crawford up? Wouldn't that mean that he was assigned to beat Mr. Crawford up too?

What a recipe for disaster!

Waylon was taken aback too. Didn't they already agree that Jaxon would just hit Warrick lightly? Why was Jaxon really beating him up?

“Brother, why are you...”

Slap!

Jaxon raised his hand and gave Waylon a huge slap.

“D*mn it! You reckless fool!”

Jaxon roared as he raised his leg and kicked Waylon aside too.

Xella and everyone else in the room gasped, dumbfounded by the scene.

“What’s going on? Didn’t Waylon call Jaxon over here to help him? Why is he beating up the people from both sides?”

Francesca gripped Cindy’s hand tightly. She knew that they could not afford to offend anyone who was here today.

Waylon’s face was swelling badly as he quivered and asked, “Brother, why did you hit me?”

Waylon felt so aggrieved and wronged that he started crying immediately.

Everything was supposed to be really straight forward today. He simply wanted Jaxon to cooperate with Warrick so that he could show off a little. They could beat Gerald up together then.

But the tables had turned, and both Warrick and himself got beaten up instead.

Jaxon ignored Waylon completely as he stepped on his fingers, and he walked towards everyone else.

Francesca asked in a shaky voice, “Jaxon the Great, we have not offended you in any way. What are you going to do now?”

Xella was also so frightened that she retreated as far back as she possibly could.

Jaxon suddenly picked up a bottle of red wine.

He walked toward Gerald, smiling.

“So, you’re here too! Please allow me to explain myself. Things are not what you imagine it is.”

As he spoke, Jaxon quickly filled up Gerald’s wine glass for him.

Jaxon looked so nervous that it seemed as though he would kneel down in front of Gerald.

“Huh? What is happening?”

Everyone’s eyes were about to pop out in horror.

Chapter 489

Jaxon’s respectful attitude toward Gerald surprised everyone.

This was especially so for Xella, who was now looking at Gerald with a completely different expression on her face.

She had used to think that Gerald only had personal connections with average statused people. To think that he knew such a powerful and reputable individual as Jaxon!

What more, Jaxon had even taught the people who were planning to beat Gerald up a lesson. He didn’t give them any face at all!

“What a great coincidence! If it weren’t for you, I would already have been beaten up!” said Gerald with a wry smile on his face.

He had seen through Waylon’s act. If his guess was correct, then everything that had happened was orchestrated by Waylon. That was probably also the reason why both Waylon and Milo were laughing between themselves earlier.

Jaxon simply bowed slightly at Gerald’s comment.

What an awkward meal today... Gerald himself already felt full.

As for Francesca, after seeing Waylon getting beaten like that, she didn’t have the mood to continue eating anymore. With that, she decided to settle the bill first.

“Ah, Mr. Sanders, are you acquainted with Gerald? I’m the deputy director of X Bank. You seem like quite the capable man! Please don’t hesitate to contact me if any of your groups wish to use our bank for your funding and capital flow!”

Francesca wasn’t going to let the chance to befriend Jaxon slip away that easily.

After all, she knew that Jaxon had the capability to make smaller subordinate companies use X Bank for their cash flow.

Instead of discussing the matter with Francesca, he simply looked at Gerald to see his response.

Gerald simply nodded.

If Francesca hadn’t invited him to join them for lunch today, she may have been able to get through with her business negotiations with ease. Since her initial plan was disrupted because of him, Gerald thought that it would only be fair for him to help her out this time. This was the only reason why he agreed to it.

At that moment, they could hear Waylon and the group of people fighting again inside the room.

It was clear, however, that the people were beating Waylon up this time.

Though Warrick had planned to use Waylon to befriend Jaxon, he ended up unexpectedly offending him instead!

How could Warrick not be angry?

Waylon was now the group’s punching bag to release all their anger and frustration.

Gerald only sneered when he heard Waylon’s screams. In fact, he felt that they weren’t beating him hard enough.

Xella continued looking at Gerald, a complicated expression on her face.

When she saw that Gerald was only talking to Cindy and wasn't paying her any attention, deep in her heart, Xella couldn't help but feel slightly uncomfortable

And just like that, the meal was over.

Gerald went back to his hotel with Jaxon as the driver.

"Cindy, I can finally see why your grandfather told me that this young man's identity wasn't all that simple!" said Francesca after a while as she sighed.

While they were having dinner together last night, Cindy's grandfather had emphasized that Gerald wasn't as simple as he looked. She hadn't thought much about it back then, but she could now see what he meant.

"I hadn't expected him to be so powerful and well connected either! Actually, now that I think about it, mom! I finally understand what happened back when I was at the karaoke bar last time!" replied Cindy as she smacked her forehead with her palm.

Xella herself remained silent. She was waiting for the people inside to finish fighting before fishing Waylon out. She didn't dare to go in at the moment, nor did she dare to stay alone. She was terrified that Warrick and his men would also take their revenge on her.

Earlier, she had followed Gerald out quietly when she saw him leaving.

However, Gerald paid her no notice and simply left without saying another word.

Chapter 490

After Gerald left, Xella re-entered the building quietly and stood close to Francesca and her daughter.

She had been listening to the mother and daughter's conversation from the moment they started talking again.

“What happened at the karaoke bar?” asked Xella nervously before Francesca could even respond.

“Oh! See, we went to a karaoke bar a little while back to have some fun. A friend of ours provoked some people there and it led to a clash with Louie from the Lourdes Mining Group in Serene County! Back then, even Douglas was frightened to death despite being such a capable person! After all, it was Louie who we had provoked. Louie had even ordered all the girls to remain in the bar and drink with him!”

“What? Cindy! Why wasn’t I told about this earlier?”

All Francesca knew was that Gerald had invited her daughter over to enjoy a meal with him. She had just found out about this entire conflict today.

“Well, I was afraid that you would be worried! I’ll explain all of it now, though. At the time, I was crying together with Leila since we were so frightened. Douglas and the other guys had run away as well! But guess what happened next!”

“Go on,” Francesca replied worriedly.

“In the end, it was Gerald who had helped us settle everything! He was the one who had made Louie let all the girls go! If it hadn’t been for him, I don’t even want to start imagining what could have happened to us that night!”

As Cindy continued explaining, she took notice of how affectionate she was whenever she talked about him. She realized at that moment, that she now had budding feelings for Gerald.

“And? What happened after that? All of you just left Gerald alone with Louie? Would someone like Louie just let Gerald leave that easily?”

It was Xella’s turn to ask.

“Yeah, well here’s the thing. That was when things started getting even weirder! I was worried about Gerald so I told everyone to turn back to the karaoke bar. By the time we arrived, the building was

surrounded by dozens of Maybach cars! When we entered, Louie and his friends were all getting beaten up by some men dressed in black!”

“Though it was quite a spectacle, my main objective then was still to help Gerald get out. I was so anxious then. However, it turned out that not only was Gerald doing fine, he was having an expensive French meal for his dinner in a restaurant next to the karaoke bar! When he saw us, he invited us over to have dinner with him too! When I asked Gerald about the specifics of what had happened back in the karaoke bar, he kept his answers ambiguous... It really felt like he was hiding something from us back then. After tonight’s events, I think I finally understand what happened back then a little better...”

Francesca took in a deep breath before exhaling.

“...Then, if that’s the case, it’s very likely that Gerald was the one who had called the group of people to beat Louie and his friends up. He wouldn’t just help you girls resolve the matter without a backup plan. What more, he was even calmly enjoying a nice meal at the time!”

“That’s what I’m thinking too!” replied Cindy as she nodded energetically.

Xella was shocked after hearing her story.

“...You know, a while back I had a class reunion with Gerald and one of my friends, Cameron, said that Gerald seemed to have a good relationship with Louie! He even said that Gerald had kicked Louie’s butt yet Louie’s only response at the time was to smile without saying a word! This could mean that Gerald had already beaten him up once before this. Why else would he be that polite to Gerald?” explained Xella in detail.

Hearing her side of the story, both Francesca and Cindy couldn’t help but feel that Gerald’s true identity had only grown more mysterious.

“I think... I think I’ve got it! Cindy! If we’re really, really lucky, Gerald could be the young master himself! Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City!” said Francesca aloud.

“W-what?”

Hearing those words made Xella tremble in fear. She was shaking so much that her handbag even fell to the floor.

She felt as though she had just been stabbed in the heart.

“Mom! That’s... not possible, right?”

Cindy could feel her chest tighten as she pondered upon the idea.

“Pfft! I’m just pulling your leg! On a more serious note, this Gerald is definitely quite the extraordinary individual. Even Jaxon’s giving him so much face. Cindy, he’s always been good and kind to you, right? Try to get as close to him as you possibly can in the near future. From what we know, both his classmates and even the Jung family despise him. You’re one of the few people in Serene County who treats him well, so you better seize this opportunity!” said Francesca happily.

Xella felt miserable hearing her words.

If nothing else had happened, she would’ve been Gerald’s best friend in Serene County!

Not too long ago, Gerald had still been affectionate with her. Contrastingly, he was now very cold and indifferent toward her!

At that moment, Xella realized that she felt as though she had lost something...

It was some time after noon when Francesca returned to the bank to work. She had a radiant smile on her face.

“Hehe... Deputy Director Lacy, why are you so happy? Could you already have met a noble person to complete your order for you?”

Seeing Francesca’s happy face, Leia couldn’t help but feel slightly bitter.

Chapter 491

“Oh, don’t be like that, Deputy Leia. It isn’t every day that we get to see Deputy Lacy being this happy! After all, she still has to fulfill a pretty big quota that even the President may not be able to reach, and she’s just a deputy!” mocked one of the ladies closer to Leia.

Leia was pleased to hear that. “That’s right! She’s still just a deputy! As if she could have that much power!”

Lacy only smiled without saying a word.

While this was happening, a middle-aged woman suddenly burst into the office, covered head to toe in sweat.

Seeing this, the employees in the room immediately shouted in unison, “President!”

“President Khan, what’s wrong? You’re drenched in sweat!” asked Leia.

Usually, Leia would get more respect from President Khan because of her husband. This time, however, she didn’t even look at her. She simply walked over to Lacy as though she hadn’t heard a word from Leia.

“Deputy Lacy, you have accomplished a great achievement on behalf of the bank this time! I’m really not sure how to even thank you properly!” said the president excitedly.

“What happened, President Khan?” asked Lacy. She had a fair guess what this was about, but she still asked anyway.

“Haha... Well, remember the Mayberry Commercial Gro- I mean, the Dream Investment Group? The one I’ve always wanted to cooperate with? I’ve always thought that I’d never be able to work with them because of my status. I wasn’t even sure if their smallest company would even work with us!”

“However! You managed to get over thirty companies under their name. You even signed over sixty financing contracts with them and the data is still increasing! I... I’m not even sure what to do now!”

President Khan wasn't the only one shocked. Lacy was equally shocked as well.

She thought that Gerald might only be able to get a hold of one or two companies under their name but to think that he got her over thirty companies and over sixty financing contracts?

Goodness gracious!

With this turn of events, she might not just remain a director this time, right?

"Anyway, I'm here to tell you that we will be officially signing the contracts with them tomorrow. Naturally, you'll be coming with me. However, your current position doesn't suit you anymore. I've had a talk with the higher management and you're now the reserve vice president. Lennon will be retiring next month and when he does, you'll be taking his position! Since the director position will also be empty, you'll have both positions for the time being!"

"For now, just fill up the forms for both the position of director and vice president. I'll approve the applications later!"

"I- I understand, President Khan! Thank you for placing your trust in me!"

Lacy was so excited that she was almost in tears.

Once President Khan left, Lacy didn't know what to do. She was feeling an onslaught of emotions at that moment.

All of a sudden, the sound of shattering glass was heard.

Leia's cup lay broken on the floor. Her face was pale and her hand remained frozen as though she was still holding on to the cup. She was in shock.

"How... how is this possible? How is any of this possible?" mumbled Leia to herself in utter disbelief.

She couldn't believe that her competitor had finally overtaken her! Leia had been taking the lead for so long and yet, Lacy was suddenly promoted to a much higher position than her! It wasn't something that Leia could just take calmly!

"Congratulations, Director- I mean, Vice President Lacy!" said one of the workers. Everyone in the office began clapping.

Well, everyone except for Leia. Lacy looked at Leia before smiling triumphantly.

Immediately after that, she called Gerald.

"Hello? Gerald? I need to thank you face to face. Because of your friend, I'm now the vice president! I need to treat you when you're free, Gerald! You definitely have to come, alright?" Lacy said it out loud specifically so that one particular person could hear her.

"Sure, Auntie Lacy!" said Gerald as he nodded on the other end of the line.

After she hung up, she looked at Leia who was staring wide-eyed at her.

"You... who helped you? What did you say his name was?"

Leia's face was as pale as a sheet as she asked.

Chapter 492

"Oh, you know, Gerald. Actually, now that I think about it, you should know him better than I do. After all, he's the one who withdrew ninety thousand dollars in cash and is also my daughter's best friend! He treats her very well, you know?"

Everyone in the office knew each other very well, which was why Lacy spoke without the slightest hesitation.

“Wow! He must be your future son-in-law!”

Everyone had slight envy in their voices.

“...What? What are you even talking about? As if he could ever have that much power! You’re joking, right?” shouted Leia.

“Haha... Oh yes, yes, I’m definitely joking!” replied Lacy sarcastically as she smiled.

Lacy’s words pierced through Leia’s heart like spears. She was so angry that she couldn’t even say anything at that moment.

How couldn’t she be? Her competitor had won everything! She had even lost to the person she looked down on the most! That Gerald!

As the cocktail of anger, hate, and jealousy filled her mind, she couldn’t take the utter defeat and started weeping!

Meanwhile, Gerald had just arrived at his hotel when he received a phone call from Zack.

“I have two things to inform you about, Mr. Crawford!” said Zack.

“Go on.”

“Well, the first thing is regarding the jade pendant. Mr. Xiques has updated me on his findings. Though the final results will only be available within the next two days, his current prediction of where the jade originated from is somewhere from the southwest! I’ve also asked a few other masters just to double confirm with his assumptions,” explained Zack.

“Southwest... Alright, I got it. We’ll just wait for the final appraisal before making a move. What’s the other thing you mentioned about?” asked Gerald. He was pleased that there was progress on the jade pendant.

“About that... Since the investment with Serene County and Mayberry’s development is a pretty big project, those from the upper management are very concerned. They’ll be coming over to inspect later so I’ve organized an evening cocktail party. It would be great if you could attend. It’ll show how concerned we are about the upper management too!”

“Who is coming? I have time to spare later!”

“There’s Mr. Harrison, Mayberry’s vice president and president, and Serene County’s management. All of the big names will be attending!”

“Then I’d better be there early tonight!” said Gerald.

It was already close to four and Gerald knew that he should get ready soon.

Suddenly, he remembered that he was supposed to have dinner with Xeno later.

Since he couldn’t make it now, he tried giving Xeno a call to inform him about the change in plans. However, he wasn’t picking up.

Strange.

Gerald then tried calling Sienna. It took him two tries before she finally picked up.

However, he could immediately tell that something was very wrong the moment she answered his call.

It was very noisy on Xeno’s side. He could hear someone cursing in the background and Xeno was cursing as well.

When Sienna finally spoke, her voice was extremely anxious.

“Gerald!”

“What’s going on, Sienna? What’s all the noise about?”

Sienna stopped speaking for a brief moment before continuing, “It’s Xeno! Some people were destroying our shop! They’re inside now and Xeno wants to fight them!”

“What?!” Gerald immediately hopped off the couch.

“Wait for me, I’m coming over immediately!”

Chapter 493

By the time Gerald reached Xeno’s second-hand car shop, several cars were already parked outside. Even from afar, he could hear a group of people quarreling from within the shop.

When Gerald got closer, he could see that the glass door had been shattered. The familiar backs of two people could also be seen in front of the shop.

It was the mother and daughter from the blind date event!

Gerald instantly put two and two together.

No wonder she kept telling him not to come over through the phone. The people there were after him!

“F*ck! That’s him! He’s the one who beat us up!” shouted the angry woman when she saw Gerald.

As she pointed toward him, several people who looked like gangsters wielding wooden bats exited the shop. They had dragon tattoos all over their arms and they each bore fierce expressions on their faces.

Xeno himself ran out, holding a kitchen knife in each hand. Even though he was clearly outnumbered, Xeno wasn’t afraid.

All of them were outside now, and since Xeno was holding the knives, none of the gangsters dared to move forward.

Both parties were simply waiting for the other to make the first move.

“Ignore him! The b*stard who beat both of us up is over here! Beat him to death!” shouted the enraged mother.

“Lay a finger on my brother and I’ll have your head!” shouted Xeno as he jabbed his knife in the air. The gangsters were equally unwilling to move any closer to him.

As the tensions continued to rise, a clap was heard from behind the gangsters. All of them made way for a tough-looking guy. He was wearing a pair of sunglasses and as soon as he waved his hand, the men immediately stepped back. He seemed to be their leader.

“Come now, Xeno! We’ve known each other for years, and we’re both in the same industry! I know what you’re like. Honestly, if it were somebody else, I couldn’t care any less! However, my cousin and her mom were involved this time. They were both beaten up and I can’t take that lightly! Someone needs to give me a proper explanation!” shouted the man as he cracked his neck intimidatingly. This man meant business.

“This b*tch is your cousin? Quazzie, I didn’t even know you had an aunt!” scorned Xeno.

Gerald could tell that the woman was a player. He could also guess that she probably had several men ready to help her!

“Oh, you don’t need to worry about that, Xeno! Look, I know we used to have problems business-wise and that you usually received all the support from the others. I’m setting that aside for today. We have another big problem at hand now!” as Quazzie said that, he pointed at Gerald, glaring daggers at him before looking back at Xeno.

“Know that this isn’t over yet! Let’s go, guys!” yelled Quazzie as he waved his hand again. The gangsters followed behind him, occasionally looking back with intimidating glares.

“Quazzie? You’re letting them off so easily?!” said the girl, upset.

“Oh, I have other plans! They’ll play out in a bit but for now, just sit back and enjoy the show!” replied Quazzie with a smirk.

Once the group of people left, Gerald started feeling extremely guilty.

They were here for Gerald, yet Xeno had to pay the price!

“I’m so sorry, Xeno! Sienna!” said Gerald.

“Say sorry only when you’ve done wrong, Gerald! Nobody’s blaming you! That b*stard Quazzie has been quarreling with me for a while now, even before you came back to the county! We’ve always had an excuse to fight!” growled Xeno as he entered his shop again.

Once inside, he put the knives to the side before sitting on a chair and lighting a cigarette.

Sienna, on the other hand, got a broom and dustpan to clear up the shattered glass pieces.

After calming down a bit, Xeno explained to Gerald how the situation earlier came to be.

Xeno and Sienna had gone to the hypermarket to get some ingredients for dinner. When they got back, they found Quazzie, the mother, and her daughter waiting for him outside his shop.

They had obviously wanted to get their revenge on Gerald, but since they couldn’t find him, they went to Xeno. However, Xeno had refused to tell them how to contact or find Gerald.

Chapter 494

Being the hot-headed person that he was, Xeno eventually scolded the mother and daughter, saying they were extremely thick-skinned!

Eventually, Quazzie called in some reinforcements—the gangsters—and all hell broke loose when Xeno’s door was shattered. It was at that moment when Xeno ran into his kitchen to get his two kitchen knives.

That was also the reason why Xeno wasn’t picking his phone up when Gerald called earlier. He didn’t want Gerald to get involved with them.

“So, who is this Quazzie guy?” asked Gerald.

Xeno had taken the hit on behalf of Gerald and Gerald was angry about that. No matter what happened, Gerald would definitely teach Quazzie a lesson.

“Well, he’s a gangster who also owns a second-hand car shop. Last month, he accused Xeno of snatching his customers away and not following the rules! He came looking for trouble but luckily, the bosses around here stood by Xeno’s back and after some words, Quazzie left. Quazzie’s been depending on his brother-in-law for a very long time now and I’ve heard that he’s quite a powerful man!” said Sienna as she swept the floor.

“Got it,” said Gerald as he nodded. He would have a talk with Michael tonight and let him handle the rest.

For now, he had more important things to tell Xeno.

“Anyway, Xeno, you should know that the people from the Dream Investment Group are here in Serene County, right? Why don’t you arrange for a huge car carnival? I could help you out!” said Gerald.

Gerald didn’t mind forking out the funds needed for that idea. After all, he wasn’t just doing this for anyone. It was Xeno!

Sienna sighed at his proposal. “Why would anyone even invest in us?”

Xeno agreed. “Bro, you probably don’t know this, but I’m confident that they won’t invest in us, simply because we aren’t even qualified. In fact, any small and honest company in Serene County won’t be able to get into the Dream Investment Group!”

“...Huh? Why not?” Gerald was honestly confused. He really didn’t know much about the selection process.

“Well, you’ll first have to bribe the company’s employees to get them to invest. After bribing the marketing department, you’ll next have to bribe the manager. Every person involved has to be bribed, so how could the smaller companies get in with their low-profit margins? The only people who would have enough money to do so, are the rich and powerful living in Serene County! It’s not as simple as you think it is, Gerald,” said Xeno as he finally finished smoking.

Gerald finally understood why people like Waylon and his father could still get investments.

So this was the reason why.

Gerald had only started doing investments because he wanted to help the smaller and proper businesses get better. However, it would seem that things weren’t going as he had planned.

The company seemed to have some serious issues, the biggest being the quality of its management and its employees.

Even Zack hadn’t detected these issues and he could tell from people like Talon!

While Gerald was already formulating plans in his head, he still insisted that Xeno send in a proposal. Gerald would approve it himself as soon as he could.

At that moment, the tires of three cars screeched to a halt outside. Immediately after, several people wearing black suits got out and entered the shop.

“Who are you people?” asked Sienna.

“We received a call about a fight here. Was it you guys? Are you Xeno?” asked the leader as he looked at Xeno.

"I am. But if you're cuffing me, then Quazzie should be in this too! He was the one who started it!" said Xeno.

"Cut the cr*p! Bring them all back for investigation!"

Chapter 495

All three of them were then blindfolded before being driven off to somewhere. They were eventually led into a building and their phones were taken away from them too, before their blindfolds were removed.

Xeno was absolutely positive that the person who had planned for all this was none other than Quazzie's cousin, Grover.

This was definitely part of Quazzie's plan for revenge.

After all, they were here but not Quazzie and his literal gang members. It didn't require a lot of brain cells for Gerald to figure out that they were doing perfectly fine.

The trio had been locked up in a small room for a while now and none of them had been taken in for questioning.

"D*mn it all! I'll make sure I break that b*stard's back if it's the last thing I do! Just you wait!" cursed Xeno.

All Gerald could do was try to calm him down. He couldn't really call for backup without his phone. Zack would probably have solved the matter by now if Gerald still had his cell phone with him.

"What are we going to do now? What's going to happen to our shop? We've been here for more than two hours and it's probably already six in the evening! Ahhh, this is making me so anxious!"

Gerald could tell how much she loved Xeno. After all, she hadn't caused a scene even during such a stressful situation and she was still thinking about their shop!

...Wait, it was six already?

Gerald thought for a moment. Zack would probably be anxiously trying to contact him now since he still wasn't there. If Zack still couldn't contact him after several tries, a search party for Gerald would probably ensue.

"Xeno, Sienna, there's no use wasting your energy by being angry or worried. That's exactly what they want. Let's just wait for a little while longer. I think we should be able to leave in an hour or so!" said Gerald.

"An hour? That's too quick and specific, Gerald! Pretty sure we'll be in here much longer... Those b*stards are definitely up to something nasty..." replied Xeno, still glaring at the door.

Gerald simply remained quiet and calm.

While this was happening, Quazzie was handing a cigarette over to Grover in another building.

"Ahh, Grover! That guy's been getting on my nerves for a while now so this time, I'm teaching him a real nice lesson that he'll remember for life!"

"Don't worry about it. And you! Stop causing so much trouble!" said Grover.

"Mr. Grover! One of the phones keeps ringing!" said one of Grover's men as he held Gerald's phone in his hand.

In fact, that someone had been trying to call for over fifty times now.

"Oh my, the owner's using a pretty good phone! That model should cost at least a few thousand dollars, right?"

The mother and daughter were also at the scene. The angry mother was glaring at Gerald's phone.

“Yeah, it costs about three thousand dollars. It’s high-quality stuff!” said the girl, feeling slightly weirded out.

The couple being locked up didn’t look like people who would buy such expensive things. Could it be Gerald’s? Could he secretly be a wealthy person?

She held herself back from laughing at the thought. That was simply impossible!

Whoever the phone belonged to, they were probably just trying to fake being rich. Poor people usually used high quality things to try to fake being rich after all.

“If it’s really that expensive, let’s just take it! We have to get something back in return after getting beaten up after all!” said the woman angrily.

“Leave it be. I’ll help you claim your medical fees!” replied Grover.

It was truly a good phone. If anyone were to take it, it was going to be him!

“So... Mr. Grover, do we pick up the call or not? It seems urgent!” said the same man from before.

“Pick it up my ass! Just turn it off and put it aside!” scolded Grover.

“You’re getting better at this, bro! Also, I heard that you’re getting a promotion soon!” said Quazzie respectfully.

“That I am! Let me tell you something, Quazzie. The most important thing to have these days, is resources. Nothing can stop me or the people that I know! A good example would be our leader and the Merchant’s office deputy. Those are all resources you know!”

As Grover and Quazzie continued to chat, Zack looked at his phone anxiously.

“How is it, Zack? Still not picking up?”

The party had already started and all the important guests had arrived. All but one. Gerald still wasn't there yet and he couldn't even be contacted anymore. Everyone was getting anxious.

“Worse. Nobody was picking up earlier but now, I can't even get the call through anymore!” said Zack as he frowned.

Chapter 496

“Could something bad have happened to him?” said Michael Zeke warily.

“Normally, Mr. Crawford immediately hangs up my calls if he's busy. However, he's neither picking nor hanging up on me even though I've called dozens of times! If something was up, Mr. Crawford would definitely let me know beforehand!”

“Exactly, and if his phone isn't with him, who was the one who had hung up on that last call before turning the phone off?”

Both Michael and Zack had a feeling that something wasn't right.

At that moment, Leopold White—Michael's subordinate—walked in with a group of people.

Leopold walked to their side before saying, “Mr. Zeke, I went to Mr. Crawford's hotel and the hotel manager told us that he was last seen leaving the hotel this afternoon!”

“He went out?”

Michael and Zack looked at each other.

Several high-ranking VIPs at the banquet started gathering around the two of them.

The venue was divided into several large lounges, making the place quite huge. Those in the inner venue mostly consisted of VIPs. It was also where Michael and Zack currently were.

“Mr. Zeke, Mr. Lyle, is something wrong? Why isn’t Mr. Crawford here?” asked Mr. Harrison.

The VIPs had overheard them discussing the situation which led to them enquiring the two of them about the matter.

“We can’t seem to get in contact with him at the moment.”

“Mr. Lyle, I found him!” shouted Jaxon as he rushed over. He was panting and gasping for air when he finally got close.

He then went close to Zack’s side and whispered in his ear.

“...What?” Zack’s eyes widened.

Those who were aware of the situation immediately quieted down.

“Mr. Harrison, Mr. Zebriel, and Mr. Le! Mr. Crawford has been kidnapped and he was most likely set-up!” said Zack.

“Impossible!” said Mr. Le, shocked.

“Bring the witness over, Jaxon! Hurry!” ordered Zack.

Jaxon nodded and ordered one of his own men to bring her in.

Once she stood before them, she started telling them everything that she knew. About how the situation began with Xeno’s store being wrecked up to the point where Gerald and the others were ‘arrested’ by some shady looking men. She also explained the relationship between Quazzie and Grover.

Naturally, she wasn't sharing all this information for free. Jaxon had paid her a lot of money to tell the truth during his interrogation.

Several of the VIPs there felt embarrassed.

After a brief silence, the chief slammed both his hands on a table.

"Investigate the matter immediately! I want answers and results!"

"Yes sir!"

"We'll be going over as well to see if Mr. Crawford had really committed the crime!"

With that, the chief and his men immediately rushed out of the venue.

The people outside who were chatting among themselves were stunned to see such a big scene.

"What? What's happening?" asked a middle-aged man to a driver.

"Oh, Mr. Jung! Something bad has apparently happened. From what I've heard, it seems that Grover has kidnapped Mr. Crawford! I'm not sure why either, but now the chief is personally going over to investigate the matter. Please don't tell others about this!"

"Huh? Mr. Crawford was kidnapped? Grover?"

The Jung in person was Willie and he was startled by what he had heard.

After contemplating on the matter for a little while, he sent out a text message.

Grover and Quazzie were still chatting between themselves when Grover received a message on his phone.

After reading it, his face immediately turned pale.

“What’s wrong, cousin?”

“Oh god, I think I may be in big trouble!” shouted Grover as he rushed toward the building where the three were locked up in.

Chapter 497

Before they entered the room, both of them straightened their clothes and put on a calm façade.

“So, what’s it going to be, Xeno? My bros have their eyes on your store. Besides, you’re the one who messed with my brother’s cousin anyway. Why don’t you just sign the d*mn paperwork already?” said Grover as he entered before pointing at the papers on the table.

Quazzie entered next and he immediately slapped Xeno’s face.

He was lucky that Xeno’s arms had been tied together, otherwise, he would have received a swift punch to the gut!

“F*ck off you sons of b*tches! Have you no balls? Fight me one-to-one like real men, cowards!”

Xeno’s eyes were bloodshot.

This time, it was Grover’s turn to slap him. He was going to make sure that all three of them suffered for putting him in such a situation. Though to get caught, the police would still need evidence! There was no way they’d be able to find such an obscure building, right?

Quazzie himself hadn’t received any explanation on why Grover thought they were in trouble. Thus, he simply shrugged it off before thinking of calling his brothers over to gang up on Xeno.

The angry woman, on the other hand, walked toward Gerald and stared down at him with icy-cold glares. She was going to enjoy beating Gerald up.

Before she could land her first slap, however, one of Grover's men burst into the room.

"Grover! Quazzie! This is bad, we're in big trouble!"

The man was in such a panic that he fell after taking a few steps forward.

"Oh god... what is it?" asked Grover as he turned to face his fallen subordinate. He hoped what he was thinking of wasn't true.

"Armed... police... and several luxury cars... They've surrounded the entire god d*mn building!"

Grover knew that it was all over for him. He had been arrested before this. This time, however, he was aware that he was clearly in much hotter water.

Not only had he kidnapped three people, he had also posed as a fake cop. He thought these were nobodies!

Quazzie began panicking as well. He just wanted to teach Xeno a lesson and push him out of the second-hand car market! He didn't expect so many big shots to be involved!

Shaking his head, Grover rushed to the nearest window to peek out. Surely enough, there was a sea of people surrounding the building.

The headlights outside shone through the initially dark, night sky.

"F*cking! Not many people know about this rotten building! How the hell did they sniff us out so quickly?!"

By this point, Quazzie's face was probably the palest it had ever been in his entire life.

"We're done for... There's nothing we can do to clear our names off this!"

The mother and daughter were terrified as well.

The man who had fallen earlier gulped as he got up, his legs quivering.

"Grover? Quazzie? What are we to do?"

"Hell if I know!" yelled Grover as his heart thumped rapidly.

At that moment, all of them in the room could hear people barging into the building.

Several armed police were swiftly ascending the stairs.

As soon as the police saw them, they immediately raised their guns.

"Freeze! Don't move!"

By the time Gerald and the others were free from their restraints, Grover, Quazzie, and their men were already pinned on the ground.

When they got outside, Michael, Zack, and a few other VIPs rushed toward Gerald.

"Mr. Crawford, you must be terrified! Thank god we managed to track you down!"

"I'm fine! Don't worry!" replied Gerald.

What a huge commotion this had become.

As Grover and Quazzie stared wide-eyed at the scene before them, both of them began sweating profusely, their wrists now in cuffs.

All those present were big shots that could usually only be seen on television... And why were they calling Gerald Mr. Crawford?

He couldn't really be that Mr. Crawford, right? He couldn't be Mr. Crawford of Mayberry... Right?

Both of them gulped down hard at the realization of how big a mess they were in. Now that they knew better, they could safely say that their entire operation had been a suicide mission!

However, the mother and daughter were even more shocked.

"Gerald...? What the hell is going on here?" asked Xeno, confused as to why so many big shots were comforting Gerald.

"I'll... explain it to you once we get back!"

He might as well use this opportunity to tell his good brother who he really was. There was no need to hide his true identity from Xeno anymore.

Chapter 498

Due to the chaotic chain of events, there was no way that they could continue with the banquet tonight.

Gerald and Xeno both had to go make a statement. As Mr. Le had said, the matter would be investigated strictly.

Quazzie and Grover may even have to face a maximum of twenty years' worth of jail time.

“This incident has caused too big an impact on Serene County! It could affect the future of the county negatively! As a demolisher, how dare you do this to us, Grover? The only way he’ll be able to atone for this is through harsh punishment!” shouted Mr. Le furiously.

He was in his office with a large stack of documents on his table. The other employees present were thoroughly startled.

“Mr. Le, Grover is an outlaw. He’s done similar things before and he’s managed to wiggle himself out every time! Not this time though! We have sufficient evidence to convict him of kidnapping three people!”

“It’s time for him to pay for his crimes. Also, did anyone back him up? Is there anyone particularly close to him?” asked Mr. Le.

“We haven’t found anyone directly aiding Grover in this particular event, but we do know that he’s quite close to Mr. Jung from the Investment Promotion Bureau. Both of them have had dinner together several times!”

“Mr. Jung? Willie Jung?” replied Mr. Le, his eyebrows raised.

“That’s the one. However, from what we can tell, he’s clean. He’s probably dealt with these kinds of people just because of the nature of his job”

“Hmph, that won’t do. Even if Willie wasn’t directly aiding Grover, Grover still knows him and works for the Investment Promotion Bureau. Now that Grover’s stirred up such chaos, Willie Jung has to be held responsible for this disaster. Transfer him out of this department! Which department is still vacant?” huffed Mr. Le.

“The publication department seems to be lacking a deputy section chief to write materials... But, this is Willie Jung...”

“Just let him be a clerk! Didn’t they say that he’s good at writing articles? Might as well put that ability to good use!”

His decision was final and he left the office with his hands behind his back.

Moving back to Gerald's side, the matter could only be resolved after an entire night had passed.

It was close to dawn when Gerald fumbled tiredly behind Xeno to his second-hand car shop.

Both Xeno and Sienna were left bemused after learning of Gerald's true identity.

They began an onslaught of questions and Gerald replied each of them honestly.

"So... it's actually true? Gerald, you're Mr. Crawford from Mayberry?" asked Xeno, rightfully surprised. Sienna was in shock as well.

"Yep, that's me!"

"And you're also the one handling the Dream Investment Group?"

Xeno was pleasantly surprised by this turn of events.

"I meant every word I said earlier, when I told you that I was going to help you expand your business. Once things have calmed down, I'll have my people come over to help you with the handover procedures!" said Gerald, smiling.

"Really?" replied Sienna, her eyes wide open in shock and joy.

"What, you want me to lie and say I won't?" said Gerald with a grin.

Gerald had already made the arrangements with Zack the night before. It wasn't too difficult for him to handle.

This was also the reason why Gerald followed Xeno back to his shop.

After both of them chatted for a while, Gerald finally got up and returned to the hotel.

Since it was so early in the morning, there weren't any taxis around yet. He didn't have a car anymore either, so he simply got on an Ofo bicycle.

Xeno stood by the entrance as he watched Gerald leave. "Hey, buddy! You're really too humble, you know? If I had as much money as you, I'd have a fleet of Maybach cars clearing the road for me, followed by at least a dozen chicks and bodyguards wherever I went!"

"Also, while you're still here, I'm going to vow right here and right now. I'm going to make sure Quazzie's entire family regrets ever being born!" growled Xeno with resentment.

"...Hmm? What was that?" said Sienna as she raised a slight brow.

"I said I'm going to make Quazzie and his family regret ever being born!"

"No, no, a little before that."

"I think I said that I'd have at least a dozen chicks and bodyg- ah. Sienna, wait! I can expl-"

Before he could finish his sentence, Sienna was already pinching Xeno's shoulder!

Gerald simply smiled while shaking his head as he headed back for his hotel.

Upon arriving, he was just about to park his bicycle when he saw a girl limping out of a taxi that had stopped right in front of the hotel.

Gerald sighed before covering his face with his hand in an attempt to avoid looking at her. However, before he could go past the automatic doors, she called out to him.

“Gerald?”

Gerald froze and sighed before lowering his hand. Of course she had spotted him...

Chapter 499

The girl in question was Leila Jung.

Gerald honestly didn't hate her, nor was he as irritated toward her compared to her parents.

However, he really hoped that she hadn't seen him right now.

At that moment, he recalled his time as a seven or eight-year-old kid. His father had brought him out, and it was then that he had met Leila for the first time.

Back then, he thought that she was really beautiful and that he would definitely have her as his wife when he grew up.

Gerald couldn't blame his younger self for thinking that either. After all, young Leila was always clean and pretty. She wore nice clothes all the time as well.

However, the thing that hadn't changed was her arrogance. She didn't like the fact that Gerald wasn't a city dweller.

Young Gerald had tried getting closer to her on multiple occasions, but she would always turn him down.

Gerald remembered how optimistic he was to make her his wife, even though he was still a little afraid of her back then.

Fortunately, his feelings for her faded once Gerald entered middle school.

Now that they had met again, however, Gerald knew that if he ever exposed his true identity to her, Leila would be head over heels for him.

He shook his head before looking back at her.

But things were much different now.

Rather than wanting to chase after her, he was trying his hardest to avoid her. Sadly, as the saying goes, you attract what you fear!

“Were you trying to ignore me? Didn’t you clearly see me earlier? I even got off the taxi because I just so happened to see you cycling down the road!” asked Leila in an angry tone. She seemed to have broken her foot.

“Oh, Leila! Sorry, didn’t manage to see you there!” replied Gerald awkwardly.

“Well, now that you have, I was planning to take a bus to Mayberry today. Unfortunately, I broke my foot so I won’t be able to go alone!”

As she said that, she limped closer toward Gerald.

“Ah, that’s a pity! I hope your foot heals soon! I’ll be taking my leave now!” said Gerald hurriedly before trying to get past the automatic doors again.

“Hey! I’m injured here! Why are you trying so hard to leave? You aren’t showing any concern at all!” grumbled Leila. His indifference toward her situation was somewhat disappointing.

She considered the fact that Gerald could just be afraid of her at that moment. Thinking back, however, she remembered when she had first met Gerald at her home. Back then, he would obey everything that she ordered him to do, just like a dog.

She also recalled how she never used to take his words and actions seriously. That all changed when she found out that Gerald was rich.

Leila herself was now caring about the way Gerald thought of her. She was also finally willing to take his words and actions seriously.

Yet what was Gerald doing? Why was he showing indifference to her now?!

She wouldn't have batted an eye if he treated her this way in the past but not now!

Everything about their relationship was going topsy-turvy and that made Leila really displeased!

"Ah. Oh no, your foot looks hurt. Are you okay?" asked Gerald reluctantly.

"Humph! It's fine!" shouted Leila angrily.

She could remember that event clearly. That day, Gerald had withdrawn ninety thousand dollars before her very eyes. What more, Gerald had helped Auntie Lacy achieve her work target. She was even made the vice president! Leila knew about this because her mother had cried a lot over the incident. Leila was still deeply upset about the matter.

Leila herself was shocked after hearing that. She felt as though she was losing control of everything!

"Glad to hear! Well, I'll be returning to my room now. Need to get some beauty sleep after such a busy night!" Gerald replied with a yawn.

He wasn't kidding either. He really just wanted to get some rest now.

"So, this is where you've been staying?" asked Leila, startled again.

"Yep," he replied before finally making it past the automatic doors.

“Gerald you’re being so cold! I’ve injured my foot and I just want to go home! Can’t you at least give me a ride back?” yelled Leila, her eyes growing slightly red.

This person who had been pampering her all this time was now treating her like she was nothing!

“With what? A car? A car that I sold so that your dad could get some ‘donations’?”

“That... Well, I saw you park that Ofo bike! You can give me a ride on a bicycle! Also! My mom fell sick with anger last night because of what you did! This will be a prime opportunity for you to visit her!” replied Leila, frustrated.

“F*ck you and you mom! Glad that she is! Now leave me alone, both of you are none of my business!” cursed Gerald who had already lost his patience.

Chapter 500

“Fine! Alright, I’m the one wrong here! Just relax already!” shouted Leila who was so aggrieved that she was already on the brink of tears.

No one had ever scolded her like this and when she heard Gerald cursing at her, she felt as though she had done something terribly wrong. She immediately started blaming herself for it.

It didn’t take much longer for her tears to start flowing down her cheeks.

She just wasn’t used to so much self-reproach coupled with the shame of being scolded.

When Gerald saw her crying, he felt a slight pang of guilt in his heart. Maybe he had been a bit too rough on her.

After all, the main reason why he had shouted profanities at her was because Willie and Leila’s names struck a nerve in him.

He softened his tone a little before saying, "I really need some rest, I've been up all night. I can hail a taxi for you if you want!"

"I'm not leaving!" said Leila as she tried to stomp her hurt foot. Now it was her turn to start losing her temper.

She then slowly limped toward the Ofo bike that Gerald had parked before standing there with her arms crossed.

This girl...

Gerald wasn't going to get any sleep at this rate! And it was too awkward for him to scold her a second time! Gerald sighed as he considered her earlier suggestion to send her back on the bicycle.

"...Alright, fine. If you really don't mind, I'll give you a lift home with the bicycle," said Gerald as he nodded in resignation.

"Yes!" shouted Leila victoriously

She sat on the bicycle's back seat and held on to Gerald's clothes with one hand.

"I never knew that you knew how to ride a bicycle, Gerald! I still don't know how to cycle yet!" said Leila.

"Heh, weren't you the one who mocked me back then? Saying that only hillbillies rode bicycles?" said Gerald with a laugh.

"I..."

Leila blushed, remembering how Gerald used to ride a bicycle to her house when they were still kids.

Back then. It was Uncle Dylan who had brought Gerald to her house with his bicycle.

Now, it was her turn.

The funniest thing was, it was more comfortable than sitting in Douglas' Sedan. She felt so perplexed!

Seeing her reactions from the side mirrors, Gerald was reminded of a saying.

It was better to cry in a BMW than to laugh on a bicycle.

To Gerald, the vehicle itself didn't matter much. The important thing was who maneuvered it.

After chatting while cycling for a while, both of them eventually arrived at their destination.

Upon entering, Gerald was surprised that Willie Jung's house was already very crowded even though it was just nine in the morning.

Willie himself was sitting on one of the couches, his palms placed against his forehead. Something was definitely worrying him.

The expression that Leia was making only solidified Gerald's assumption.

Sitting opposite of Willie were a few middle-aged people, whom Gerald assumed were his colleagues. They seemed to be trying to advise him on something.

Even that b*stard Douglas was there. Beside him, sat a middle-aged man that resembled Douglas a lot.

When he turned to look at Leila, she looked arguably more confused than he was.

After sticking around for a little while more, Gerald heard enough to somewhat make sense of what was happening.

Apparently, Willie had gotten himself into trouble again, and he didn't even know what he had done wrong! However, the more pressing issue was that he had been transferred to another department as a clerical section chief! He was devastated.

"Um... Mom, dad, look who's here!" said Leila at that moment.

Gerald was a different person now, so she held him in high regard.

"Heh, hey dad, look over there. That's Gerald, the one I told you about before. Look how close he is to Leila! And don't let his appearance fool you, I saw him withdrawing ninety thousand dollars from the bank in cold hard cash the other day! Guess there's no reason for us to stay any longer! Not that we're able to help Mr. Jung anyway. Let's go!" said Douglas as he glared at Gerald coldly while tugging his father's sleeve.

"Alright, we'll be taking our leave. You should be able to figure all of this out on your own, Mr. Jung," said Douglas's father before getting up with a nod.

"Please don't leave, Mr. Lindt! He's no guest of ours, you are!"

Willie then turned to look at his daughter, his eyes fierce as a tiger's. He glared at her like she was a total disappointment before shouting angrily, "What were you thinking, Leila?! Why did you bring this son of a b*tch home?!"

Chapter 501

By cursing Gerald, Willie was also expressing whose side he was really on.

Gerald was so angry that his face turned pale immediately as he tried to suppress himself from shouting any profanities.

"What are you saying, dad? Gerald! Do come in and take a seat!" retorted Leila angrily.

“Why... Why have you allowed this scum into our house? He’s the kind of trash who keeps taking advantage of us while helping others in secret! Go home and help that Francesca of yours! After all, he’d rather do her a favor instead of us anyway! Not only has Francesca become the vice deputy director because of him, she’s also becoming the director as well! The Jung family hasn’t gained anything from him!” said Leia bitterly.

Leia said this aloud because she knew that the favor Gerald was giving Francesca was simply too outrageous for even him to handle. It would be impossible for him to give so many company businesses to her.

Since she couldn’t get his help, she didn’t need to give him any face anymore, right? Thus, she scolded him as harshly as she could.

“Humph! Our family has already helped you so much and your Uncle Jung was even trying to get you a job! However, you only donated seventy thousand dollars to him even though you still had ninety thousand in your bank account! You’ve already shown how capable you are! Just get lost and do whatever you want, far away from us!” shouted Leia as she signaled for him to leave immediately.

All the guests there simply looked at Gerald as though he were a joke.

Douglas stared coldly at Gerald before smiling. He then said, “That’s right! Gerald still had ninety thousand dollars with him but he only gave you seventy thousand! That clearly went against what was agreed upon! How unreasonable!”

Willie’s face was so red with anger that he began huffing before pointed toward Gerald. “You! Get out of the Jung family’s house immediately!”

A second later, he had picked up a cup of scalding hot tea on the table before throwing it toward Gerald’s direction.

The cup shattered at Gerald’s feet, splashing hot tea against his trousers.

Gerald could feel the scalding liquid burn against his flesh.

“Dad! What are you doing?! Gerald’s the one who had sent me home!” cried out Leila anxiously.

“You’re not to associate yourself with this country bumpkin anymore in the future, Leila!” scolded Willie angrily.

Gerald himself glared daggers at Willie and Leila. If they were anyone else, Gerald would have already rushed forward and trampled them to death without even bothering about the consequences.

However, he clenched his fist and swallowed down his resentment before turning around immediately and leaving.

In his mind, he kept telling himself how grand their reaction would be when they one day found out who he actually was. He’d even tell them who his father’s true identity was just to rub salt to their wounds! But today was not that day. It wasn’t time yet.

Shortly after Gerald had left in a rage, Cindy arrived in a cab. With her, was a bag full of gifts.

After hearing her mother’s side of the story, she figured that she and Aunt Leila must have been fighting each other in secret. Knowing that her Aunt Leila had suffered such a huge blow, she decided to personally come over to meet her.

As she entered, Leila smiled at her. “Cindy, you’re here!”

Even though the adults were enemies, the children were still innocent. Leila didn’t hold anything against Cindy and the same went for Lacy with Leila.

After a few steps into their house, Cindy noticed the broken teacup on the floor. She also saw that Leila was crying.

Clueless of what was happening, she simply nodded and placed the bag of gifts on a table before heading over to Leila’s side to comfort her.

“It’s going to be fine, Willie. This isn’t worth losing your temper over. Unlike the issue with the collapsed buildings before this, you were dragged into your current position! You technically didn’t do anything wrong this time to deserve this demotion!”

“I can see only one solution to this matter!” said Gary.

“What’s on your mind, Gary?” replied Willie as he slowly regained his breath.

“You’ll have to rely on the Dream Investment Group’s relations this time. For this matter, you’d be better off looking for more powerful figures, such as those who always hang around Mr. Crawford. As long as they put in a good word for you in front of him, everything should be settled in no time!”

“But how could I possibly get in touch with those people? You’re talking about extremely competent and powerful individuals such as Mr. Lyle and Mr. Zeke,” said Willie.

“Even I can’t get in touch with them. Your best hope would be to look for Jaxon, Mr. Lyle’s driver. He may be the only one who can help you solve this matter! After all, he’s also Mr. Lyle’s confidant, so whatever he says to Mr. Lyle will prove to be extremely useful. Jaxon should be much easier to contact and if everything goes according to plan, soon enough, the issue will be no more!”

Chapter 502

“Also, I’ve heard that Jaxon is quite the zealous and enthusiastic man. Since you’re from Weston Merchants Holdings, he’ll definitely be a prime person to ask for help!”

“Well, do you have his contact information then?” asked Willie.

“Sadly, I don’t yet. I’m also trying to think of a way to contact him!” replied Gary as he shook his head.

Willie then anxiously began inquiring everyone in the room if they knew how to contact Jaxon.

“Uncle Jung! I actually know someone who could help you contact this Jaxon person!” said Cindy aloud.

“...Come again? Is what you said true, Cindy?”

Willie and Gary were equally surprised.

“It’s the truth! My mother’s been getting so much business because of Jaxon! And it was a friend of mine who had told Jaxon to help her!”

As she said that, Cindy also paid close attention to Leia’s expressions.

“Then, could you please tell us who your friend is? Could you ask him out to have a meal with me so that he can lend me a hand?” asked Willie as he walked over to Cindy with a smile on his face.

“Hmm? Oh, you know him, Uncle Jung! If you ask him for help, he’ll definitely lend a hand!” said Cindy though she was honestly a little doubtful about her own claim.

“What?”

Willie was shocked. Did he know someone that powerful?

“It’s Gerald. Jaxon shares a good relationship with him. What more, all it took was a single nod from Gerald for Jaxon to immediately start helping my mother!”

“...What did you say his name was? Gerald?”

Both Willie and Leia were startled. This was especially so for Willie since he hadn’t expected Gerald to have such a strong network.

Leia herself had not expected that Gerald had helped Francesca by directly introducing her to Jaxon and Zack.

Gary and Douglas were no less dumbfounded.

“...Cindy, are you sure of what you’re saying? Gerald and Jaxon know each other?” asked Leila who was also taken aback.

“A hundred percent certain! What more, they’re not just ordinary acquaintances. Jaxon was actually very polite and respectful toward Gerald!”

Willie’s face turned pale again, this time possibly even paler than before.

“Willie! What should we do? You’ve just made Gerald extremely angry and chased him away!” cried out Leila who looked extremely distressed.

“Humph! We need to call him back!” grunted Willie unhappily.

“Who’s calling him? I was so nasty and harsh toward him earlier!” replied Leila, ashamed of herself.

“Leila, could you...?” asked her mother.

Leila simply nodded in response.

After calling for a short while, she simply shook her head. “He’s not answering any of my calls!”

“Willie, Jaxon’s one of Zack’s favorite men! If you can’t get his help, then you’re truly fighting in a losing battle!” said one of the guests there.

Willie clenched his teeth. He had never expected there to be a day where he would have to beg for Gerald’s help. What more, it was the day that he chased Gerald away!

His embarrassment at that moment was unsurpassable.

“Dad, I know where he’s been living. Why don’t we go look for him instead? If you apologize to him face to face, there’s a chance that he may still forgive you!” said Leila.

“Leila, you want me to apologize to that kind of person?” said Willie as he stared at his daughter.

Chapter 503

Though he was reluctant, Willie couldn't go against everyone's persuasion. After all, who else could help him? He had no choice but to rely on Gerald's mercy this time.

He just had to bite the bullet and he soon found himself headed for the hotel that Gerald had been staying in.

A few other people joined him. However, even after waiting for quite a long time in the hotel's lobby, there was still no sign of Gerald anywhere.

When his daughter tried to call him again, his phone line was still busy.

Gerald wasn't doing this on purpose though. He was still talking to his father through the phone after all.

“Dad, I have some news about the pendant. It originated from the southwest and has quite a long history of its own. This kind of jade is extremely valuable and precious. This Xara you're looking for. She must be a young lady from a rich family, correct?” asked Gerald as he sipped his coffee. He was sitting in a quiet café now.

His father was the one who had initiated the call, since he wanted to know about the jade pendant's progress.

“That's right! She is indeed, a young lady from a rich family!” replied his father before laughing.

“But dad, didn't you say that Xara's family was from the southeast area? Could she actually be in the southwest instead?” asked Gerald, slightly doubtful.

“Did I? I'm honestly unsure about where Xara's family is from. I don't even remember what her last name is! So please, son. You need to investigate and get to the bottom of this as soon as possible. Let me know what the results are as soon as they're available!” replied his father with a smile.

Hearing that, Gerald wondered whether he should tell his father about Queta. After all, he was pretty certain that she was Xara's daughter.

However, he refrained from doing so. Even if his father knew about her, it wouldn't really help with the situation at all.

Hence, Gerald decided to tell his father about her only when he had found more clues in the future.

"Speaking of which, Gerald, it'll be your birthday soon, right? We haven't really celebrated together as a family since you were in high school. Since this will be your first birthday after your life of poverty ended, I thought that we could reunite so that we can celebrate your birthday together again after so long!" said his father, his tone slightly apologetic.

Gerald simply laughed. "That's alright dad, I'm in Serene County now. I've been busy settling a few things but after I'm done, I'll go back to our old house for a few days. Mr. and Mrs. Winter will be there so you don't have to worry about me being lonely on my birthday!"

"Well, alright then. However, I mentioned the end of your poverty education for a reason. If you're celebrating it without us, you have to make sure you enjoy a better and livelier birthday! That doesn't mean you should go overboard like your sister though. Remember that year when she bought an entire island in the Pacific Ocean for her birthday? As if that wasn't high profile enough, she went ahead and invited celebrities from all over the world to attend it! What I'm saying is make sure you don't go too high profile, but also make sure your birthday celebration isn't a shabby one!" instructed his father.

"I got it dad, you don't have to worry about me!" said Gerald while shaking his head with a smile.

After talking a little while more about some recent business affairs, both of them hung up.

Checking his text messages, he realized that Leila had called him several times. Gerald didn't plan to call her back, however.

Willie's matters were his own to deal with. Gerald wanted no part of their family in his life anymore. Today had been the last straw!

If it hadn't been for their extreme rudeness earlier, Gerald would even have invited them to his planned birthday banquet, just to give them some face.

At that moment, a middle-aged man dressed in a suit entered the café. He held on to an envelope and he walked respectfully toward Gerald.

"Good day, Mr. Crawford. This is the entry recommendation letter that you asked for. I've already written it for you. After this, you can use this letter to join the Dream Investment Group directly!"

The man didn't even dare to sit down, and simply stood beside Gerald as he spoke.

"Thanks for all the trouble. Needless to say, nobody should know about this matter," said Gerald as he took a sip of coffee.

"Understood!"

Gerald had ordered a top-level executive to help him with the entry recommendation letter.

After his last conversation with Xeno, Gerald had learned that the internal situation in the investment group was quite chaotic.

Therefore, Gerald had planned to join and become part of the investment group to try and understand everything that was going on inside.

Gerald knew that if he were to investigate under the name of Mr. Crawford, he wouldn't be able to find out about anything at all. It'd be extremely difficult in fact.

Since Zack was already busy running between Mayberry City and Serene County while also looking into the jade pendant for Gerald, Gerald felt too embarrassed to trouble him anymore.

By joining the company himself, Gerald would also be able to see first-hand whether the situation was as bad as Xeno had described to him.

Chapter 504

Most of the original staff from Mayberry Commercial Group had stayed back to work on the project developing Yorknorth Mountain as they followed the principles of investing in Serene County.

Therefore, apart from a few other executives who were also originally from the Mayberry Commercial Group, the rest of the executives in the Dream Investment Group were recruited through the company's annexation and new recruitment.

However, the company ignored nepotism, which was probably the reason why there were so many shady dealings.

Gerald understood this, but it could wait. For now, lunch was more important.

He enjoyed a simple lunch before heading back to his room where he changed into a suit and a pair of leather boots.

He brought along a copy of his interview documents and the letter of recommendation before heading toward the Dream Investment Group to attend his interview.

"Hello, beautiful. Is the twenty-sixth floor the place I should be headed to if I'm attending an interview for the investment department?" asked Gerald to a young girl who had just exited the elevator with a pile of documents in hand.

"Um, yeah! You're here for an interview, right? The twenty-sixth floor is correct!"

She seemed to be around the same age as Gerald. She had that fresh university graduate look to her.

"Thank you!" said Gerald with a smile.

"You're very welcome- Ahh!"

As she was too focused on responding to Gerald, she accidentally dropped all her documents onto the ground.

Gerald immediately squatted down to help her pick the documents up.

“Did you apply for an internship here immediately after graduating too?” she asked with a smile as Gerald helped her pick up the documents.

“Bingo! How long have you been working here?” asked Gerald in return.

“Oh, I’ve just started working a few days ago so I don’t know much yet. Hehe... However, I do know that I’m also from the investment department! I wish you good luck with your interview later! Since we’ll most probably be colleagues in the future, I’ll go ahead and introduce myself first! My name’s Fay!” she said as she smiled again.

“Pleasure to meet you, Fay! Gerald!”

“Likewise, Gerald! Also, your elevator’s here! Good luck again for your interview!” said Fay as she made a victory pose for Gerald to see.

Gerald simply nodded with a smile before stepping into the elevator.

The young girl was quite pretty and her responses were refreshing and pleasant. Gerald thought of her as a decent, yet interesting person.

As the elevator stopped on the fifth floor, another beauty stepped in. She wore a black uniform and looked about the same age as Gerald too.

Since Gerald was here for an interview, he naturally had to greet everyone that he met. He smiled while nodding toward her.

However, she simply glanced coldly at him without even nodding back. She continued playing with her phone for a while before noticing the floor that Gerald was headed to.

She looked at him before asking casually, "New to the investment department?"

"No! I'm here for an interview!" said Gerald as he smiled.

"Hehe... So you haven't even gotten the job yet. You seem quite confident, but I'm honestly unsure if you'll actually make the cut!" replied the girl as she looked at Gerald.

"Hmm? You seem sure... Why is that?" asked Gerald, slightly puzzled by her response.

"You'll understand once you arrive upstairs. You're honestly quite unlucky that the investment department is only looking to hire one man and woman this time!"

Gerald thought about it for a while. He was well dressed today and he knew that he had enough confidence and the proper temperament to be hired. Why would he be out of luck?

Soon enough, they arrived at the twenty-sixty floor.

The moment Gerald arrived at the interview hall, he finally understood what she had meant.

Chapter 505

At least forty handsome men and beautiful women were already there, waiting to be interviewed.

As he walked toward the interview hall, he passed by an office area.

More women were working there and every time they saw a handsome man step out of the elevator, they would gasp loudly and act as though they had never seen a man in their entire lives.

Gerald could tell that there was a noticeably softer gasp when he stepped out of the elevator compared to the man who stepped out next. Did he really lack that much charm?

He couldn't help but curse slightly in his mind.

"Oh gosh, here comes the thirty-eighth person! They're only hiring two people today so why did so many of us come for the interview?!"

The voice came from one of the girls who were counting the number of people they had to compete against. It was quite depressing, honestly.

"Hey, check out that guy. He came alone! Does he really think he'll be able to get the job based on his criteria alone?"

"I know right? Aside from his slightly handsome appearance, there's nothing much else that's attractive about him! I don't even think he can be remotely compared to the handsome guy that we saw just a while ago!"

"Exactly! It'd be better for him to just leave now so that he won't waste any more of our time!"

These were what the male interviewees waiting there said when they saw Gerald.

They were honestly feeling the pressure too. Most of them had come in groups and because of all the competition, some of them couldn't help but sneer unceremoniously to keep themselves calm.

Gerald simply took in a deep breath as he listened to their insults and ridiculing.

However, he didn't react at all. After all, he knew what his purpose here today was.

At that moment, the elevator door opened and a tall girl stepped out. She looked to be at least a hundred and seventy centimeters tall.

She had long, burgundy-colored hair, and her figure was beautiful. Even her skin was extremely fair.

She gave off an extremely good image and temperament as well! What a goddess!

Similar to the others, she walked toward the interview hall with a pile of documents in hand.

When she came closer, most of the girls there immediately went silent. Most of the boys, on the other hand, stared at her with hearts in their eyes.

Even Gerald couldn't avoid looking at her. She was just that beautiful. If he were to be completely honest, her beauty was on par with Giya's.

"Well hello there, beautiful, here for the interview? It's such a great coincidence that we were able to meet! If it's not too inconvenient for you, could you add me to your WeChat? You know, my brother-in-law works in this company as the assistant recruitment manager!" said one of the more handsome interviewees as he walked toward her.

"Thanks, but there's no need for that," said the girl as she shook her head, blushing embarrassedly.

"There's no need to be afraid, you know? Since you have such a good temperament, I believe that you'll definitely fit the recruitment criteria to a tee! They're only hiring a male and a female this time around, so I'm more than certain that it'll be the two of us who will get hired in the end. So why not just add me on WeChat now so that we can get to know each other faster?" replied the boy as he continued to pester her.

Gerald could sense how confident the boy was when he said that. He couldn't help but wonder if his recommendation letter today was going to be useless.

The interviewee was obviously not the casual kind of girl, but since the boy kept pestering her in front of everyone, she had no choice but to add him on WeChat. This made all the other boys feel very jealous.

"Alright, settle down everyone. We'll now be reading your names off a name list! If you're present, please reply by saying, 'here'! After that, you may enter the interview room. First up, Jared Crockford!"

At that moment, the handsome interviewee from before and Gerald shouted 'here!' at the same time.

The atmosphere became quite awkward at that moment as both Gerald and the boy looked at each other.

"What's this? Two people sharing the same name? What's going on here?"

The female assistant then walked toward Gerald. It was clear, from her actions, that Jared Crockford knew every one of the recruitment assistants. After all, she walked past him and straight to Gerald. As she looked at Gerald's documents, she raised a brow.

"Isn't your name Gerald Crawford? Are you trying to make a fool of yourself? Why did you answer when it wasn't even your name I called out?"

Chapter 506

"Sorry, I misheard you!" said Gerald as he smiled awkwardly.

"Hah! Could it be that he thought that she was calling for Mr. Crawford?" said one of the interviewees as he cackled.

"If we were any more gullible, we would've thought that he was the actual Mr. Crawford of Mayberry!"

Everyone there then burst into laughter. Even the beautiful girl from before was smiling. Gerald remained silent, knowing that he had embarrassed himself.

Jared then stood up and entered for his interview. A few moments later, he stepped out with a smug smile on his face.

"Hey Jared, what did they ask during the interview? Care to spare us some tips?"

Several people immediately gathered around him as soon as he stepped out.

“Oh, nothing special, honestly. All I did was talk casually, and I even managed to make them laugh! They’ve even asked me when I’d be available for work! It really wasn’t anything challenging!” said Jared, his hands in his pocket.

The other males stared at Jared in jealousy. He was definitely getting the sole position reserved for the males.

One by one, they each took their turns to get interviewed.

Gerald included his referral letter in the document that he had brought. After being asked a few questions, he was dismissed as well. All that was left to do, was wait for the results to be released.

Some of them left immediately after the interview. Jared himself was busy trying to initiate a conversation with the same girl from before.

“The results are out!” exclaimed the female assistant from before as she held on to two application forms in her hand.

“Who got in?”

Several murmurs of guesses echoed in the room.

“Congratulations to Miss Bianca Snow!”

Without a doubt, Bianca was definitely the ethereal beauty in the room.

“And for the male role, congratulations to Mr. Gerald Crawford!” added the assistant.

“See, I told you!” said Jared as he smiled sweetly toward Bianca. It took him a moment to realize it, but when he did, his expression darkened immediately.

“Wait, why wasn’t I chosen?” asked Jared, stunned.

Everyone else in the room was shocked as well. They all turned to look at Gerald.

Gerald was as cool as a cucumber. He had anticipated that either he or Jared was going to be picked, and it turned out that Gerald won. He exhaled lightly while apologizing to everyone in his mind. He took his application form and, together with Bianca, entered the office to sign up for their positions.

“Nice to meet you, Gerald. Since we’ll be working together from now on, let’s get to know each other better. Where do you live?” asked Bianca, now that it was just the two of them in the office.

“Oh, I live in Touin. It’s in Serene County,” replied Gerald.

“Oh? What a coincidence! I live in Serene County as well! Specifically, Fuenti which is pretty near to Touin!” said Bianca with a smile.

The girl seemed to be quite an outgoing person despite her ethereal beauty. She was also easy to talk to.

“Fuenti, huh. That place is pretty famous for its hot springs, right? I’d like to go there one day myself!” replied Gerald as he smiled back.

“I’ll be your tour guide when that day comes!”

The two had easily become good friends.

“Are the newcomers in here?”

Both of them could hear a female voice coming from outside the office. She seemed to be talking to the HR assistant.

“They are, Manager Ava,” replied the assistant.

“Take me to them,” ordered the manager.

Gerald couldn’t help but feel as though he had heard the manager’s voice somewhere before. Though the voice seemed bright and young, it still felt oddly familiar.

Could it really be her outside this very office?

Chapter 507

When the door swung open, Gerald could finally get a good look at the manager.

She was walking behind the assistant when Gerald exclaimed, "Ava Anderson? Is that really you?"

Ava Anderson was Gerald's classmate during junior high. She was the principal's daughter and also one of the top students alongside Gerald and Xenon. All three of them had even participated in numerous competitions together.

Though they were pretty close to each other back then, they no longer shared the same class when they entered senior high.

The first few days upon entering senior high, Ava would still invite Gerald out for lunch since neither of them were familiar with their new classmates. After school, she would catch up with Gerald and they would talk about how their day had gone.

After those few days, however, Ava started having lunch with her dorm mates instead. This led to them talking less and less and as time passed, they would eventually only get to meet each other once a week. Their distance further increased in the following semester, and they would just give a simple greeting whenever they crossed paths.

By the last year of high school, both of them had reverted back to being complete strangers.

Since Ava went to a university in Yankton and Gerald went to Mayberry, it had been approximately three years since they had last crossed paths.

Ava seemed to be doing quite well on her own. She was able to get the position of manager at such a young age, after all.

"What brings you here, Gerald?" asked Ava, visibly surprised.

It was an understandable response. After all, it had been so long since they had last met. Ava knew all too well that their friendship had deteriorated since their high school days and she felt a sudden wave of awkwardness run through her veins.

“Oh, I’ve just applied for a position. I’ll be working here from now on!” replied Gerald with a smile.

“Oh really now?” She smiled as she skimmed through both of their resumes.

“Look at you Avie, you’re so cool now! You’re a manager!” said Gerald as he stared at her tag.

“Thanks, but do refrain from calling me Avie from now on... You can call me Miss Anderson,” responded Ava slightly coldly.

“Understood!” Gerald said as he nodded.

“Assistant Valen!” said Ava as she closed the files. “I know we’re short by two employees since this is, after all, a new team. However, we prefer quality over quantity so I’ll only pick one of you to help out in the team.”

At that moment, Bianca started to panic. Gerald and Ava knew each other so he was definitely getting chosen!

Contrary to how she imagined it, however, Ava glanced coldly at Gerald before turning to look at Bianca. “Miss Bianca Snow, we require another female here, so welcome to the team!”

“As for you, Gerald...” said Ava as she scanned him from head to toe. “I know that the logistics team is still hiring, so you should help them out. You’d probably need to run around each department and do errands for them!”

Gerald went silent. He didn’t know what else to say.

The assistant then interrupted, "But Manager Ava, Gerald graduated from Mayberry University..."

"I'm aware, but it just can't be helped. Our current situation only has this position to offer. What do you say, Gerald? If you accept, I'll send you over to logistics first. If you keep up the good work, I'll bring this up to the directors and have you join our team later one," said Ava with a fake smile.

In all honesty, Ava didn't care for him at all. Even from her high school days, she had come to realize that it was embarrassing to hang out with Gerald.

Chapter 508

Gerald was from a rather poor family after all. Like many others, Ava was slowly swallowed by her own pride the older she got. And just like the others, her pride reached its peak during her university years.

"Sure thing!" said Gerald as he nodded. He didn't really mind, though he was slightly taken aback at how coldly Ava had just treated him.

Immediately after completing the application process, Gerald and Bianca started working at their assigned positions.

Gerald sat in a small corner in the office and started working immediately. His job was to manage and sort files. He was rather glad since it would help his investigation greatly.

After a while, Gerald decided to head to the gents. After he was done, he was about to leave when he heard faint whispering coming from the ladies.

"Come by the office to get an interview done. You'll have to be quick though. I've saved a position for you, so you owe me one!" echoed the barely audible voice across the stalls.

"What? No more positions? Well, you're right but something unexpected happened. Our director's brother in law was supposed to be accepted, but somehow, my junior high classmate was the one who got the job!"

“Heh, don’t worry about it. I already know about his background so any job will do for him. I sent him to the logistics team and that idiot gladly accepted my offer! So listen here, you still have a chance. Don’t let this opportunity go to waste!”

All the color drained from Gerald’s face. That was definitely Ava.

It seemed that he had been set up. Gerald could recall how surprised the assistant had been a while ago. So Ava was bringing her own people into the company too.

‘This newly formed investment group seems to just be for show’ Gerald thought to himself. He now realized how much information he could gather just by being an undercover spy in the company.

Ava hadn’t spared him any mercy this time, so Gerald would be sure to return the favor when the time came. He made a mental note of the incident before returning to work.

As was expected, a full day of work in the office was definitely boring. Thankfully, it didn’t take too long before Gerald was able to get off work.

However, Gerald couldn’t leave just yet. Bianca had invited Gerald to dinner after work via text message. Gerald could sense that this was probably Bianca feeling bad since he wasn’t able to join the team.

Since she was being considerate of his feelings, he accepted her invitation. It was just a simple dinner after all.

Since the team was still having their meeting, Gerald decided to wait for her at the lobby entrance.

After waiting for about ten minutes, Gerald saw Bianca exiting the lobby. However, she wasn’t alone. Ava followed closely behind her.

“Oh, Gerald! I’m sorry! I forgot to inform you that I can’t make it for dinner tonight! Manager Ava’s told me that she has someone she wants to introduce me to over dinner!” said Bianca as she smiled apologetically.

“No worries, have fun!” replied Gerald as he smiled rather sadly.

Ava on the other hand, simply looked at him for a brief moment, acknowledging his presence before getting into her car with Bianca.

As she drove off with her, Gerald’s phone began to ring. It was a call from Zack Lyle.

Chapter 509

“Mr. Crawford, I’d just like to ask. You’ve mentioned that you’d like to provide dorms for our employees, right? I know you said you’d like to do this yourself, but I’d like to provide my assistance if you’re busy. I just came back to Serene County!” Zack said.

“Don’t worry about it. I already have an area in mind. I’ll have you do the rest when I’ve bought it. I think you should focus on the jade incident.” Gerald replied reassuringly.

“Okay then, Mr. Crawford. Oh, but one more thing, it’s rather personal, hehe. Your birthday is coming up. We’ve always been organizing a big party for you following our family tradition. So, where would you like it to be held?”

“I’d rather celebrate my birthday back where I used to live. I don’t think a party would be necessary. Let’s all just have a nice dinner together.” Gerald said as he mustered up a fake smile.

Since young, Gerald was used to not celebrating his birthday. Back then, all he did was have a nice meal on his own or with the Winters. Besides, his immediate family no longer lived with him since high school. Even if he wanted to celebrate his birthday, there was no one here to do so with him.

“Sure, anything you say, Mr. Crawford!” Zack exclaimed. Gerald then hung up right after.

Speaking of buying property for the employees’ dorms, Gerald already had an area in mind. It was where he bought the property the last time. It was pretty near the company, and the environment was decent as well. Since his dinner was ruined, Gerald then walked to the real estate center to deal with this project at hand.

In front of the real estate center, two cars pulled up at the entrance, and a group of eight exited their cars one by one.

“Hello there, are you here to find a property? I can show you around if you’d like!” A real estate agent immediately greeted them.

“These two would like to buy a house for their wedding. We’re just here to accompany them!” One of the girls exclaimed.

“Say, Morgana, your boyfriend already has a big enough house. Wouldn’t it be nice to live with his family too? Isn’t it kind of irrational to buy a new house? And this is the most expensive one in the city!” Another girl asked.

It seemed that the ones buying a new property were Morgana Lopez and her boyfriend.

“I think it’s way better to move out, it’s really inconvenient to live with parents! With a new house, you two can spend some alone time together!” Yet another girl exclaimed.

“That’s exactly what we’re thinking. We’d like to be able to spend some alone time together. By the way, Lilian, didn’t you say you found yourself a wonderful boyfriend? Why didn’t he come with us today?” Morgana asked.

Since they were all friends since high school, the group wanted to meet up again after all these years. However, they had to wait for Morgana to get off work from the hospital and choose a new house. Hence, all of them came with her to the center.

“My boyfriend... won’t be coming today!” Lilian responded awkwardly. Lilian knew that she didn’t actually have a boyfriend. Even if she did, that was just Gerald acting as her boyfriend. It wasn’t real anyway.

“What about you, Sharon? Didn’t you say your boyfriend was joining us?” Morgana then turned to Sharon and asked.

“He’ll be here in a bit!” Sharon glanced at Lilian’s direction, then turned back to Morgana.

Everyone there was aware of rumors of what happened between Sharon and Lilian. Hence, they all try to keep their thoughts to themselves on this sensitive topic.

“Let’s just go take a look at the properties, then we can go have some fun after choosing one!” Howard suggested.

All of them stepped into the center and started choosing from their various options. But the mood seemed a bit somber; hence they needed a change of topic to lighten up the mood.

Suddenly, Sharon broke the silence, “Oh yeah, why aren’t Xella and Waylon joining us today? Back then, Waylon would always join gatherings like this!”

Chapter 510

“Oh, let’s just not mention them. Waylon seems to be occupied with family matters. And Xella, I gave her a rang, and she said she wasn’t feeling well, so she’s not coming too.”

“Ah, then I guess we’ll see them next time. By the way, Morgana, you’ve never told us your secret; how are you progressing so much? You switched industries almost too quickly!” Sharon asked. Upon hearing this question, Howard’s expression turned awkward.

Morgana coughed, visibly awkward as well, “It’s because of the help of Gerald. And well, Howard helped me out a lot too!”

“Gerald?” Upon hearing his name, both Sharon and Lilian were startled. In reality, Sharon had been asking them about every single classmate, as if she was studying abroad and wanted to catch up with everyone, although she had only been in Mayberry this entire time.

Both of the girls were dying to ask if Gerald was joining them, but they ended up asking about every other classmate but him. They couldn’t help it as Gerald was a touchy topic for both of them.

“Oh yeah, you guys may not know this, but Gerald has been doing really well! He’s a completely different person now!” Morgana exclaimed gratefully.

Lilian and Sharon went silent. How could they not know he's a different man now?

"Hmph, he just has a few connections around the area, big deal!" Howard huffed. Now that Gerald took the spotlight away from him, Howard's reputation in the class was no longer at the top. During high school, he and Waylon were both the talk of the class. But it seems like. Lately, all they've been talking about was Gerald.

Suddenly, one of the girls said in a surprised tone, "Guys, look! Isn't that Gerald? Why is he here?"

"Huh?" Everyone turned to the direction she was pointing towards, and Gerald's silhouette fell into their field of vision.

"It really is him!" Lilian exclaimed. She had been texting him since she came back, but he never responded to any of her texts. She settled disappointedly that Gerald had lost all feelings towards her. His sudden appearance filled her with delight and relief.

Sharon, on the other hand, was just as excited. That excitement, however, didn't last long and was followed by slight disappointment. Although Gerald was doing quite well now, he had also been giving her the cold shoulder.

Basically, both of them were drowned in mixed emotions at this very moment.

Morgana seemed to have noticed it. "Lilian, Sharon, did anything happen between you two and Gerald back in Mayberry?"

"No, not really. Even if there was, I'd say that a certain someone is getting the cold shoulder from Gerald, though he was the nicest to her back then!" scoffed Lilian.

"It was just that one time that he picked you up, big deal! Who told you that he's giving me the cold shoulder?" Sharon pouted.

They seemed to be on the verge of initiating a fight. One of the girls then came up with an idea and suggested, "Why don't we just sit over there and see who Gerald greets first when he sees us?"

"Sure, it would be a surprise for him too. As soon as he looks over, he'd realize we're all here. That would surely give him a shock!" chuckled Morgana.

Howard was submerged in jealousy, but everyone had sat on the sofa at the side, so he had to follow them as well.

Just at that very moment, Gerald slowly made his way to the real estate center...

Chapter 511

Gerald was in a great rush. He knew that this should've been over and done with two days ago.

However, due to that hiccup with Xeno, this dorm project was delayed.

Since some of the areas were chosen explicitly by Gerald, he decided to pay a personal visit to the real estate center.

Gerald entered the center and immediately approached the front counter.

The moment the real estate agent noticed Gerald, her expression immediately darkened. She was filled with awkwardness and dejection.

She had thought that Gerald was just another poor idiot without enough money to afford a property. Hence, when he had come by under the company of Leila Jung, she insisted that Gerald take up a loan.

Her attitude towards Gerald was cold as well; she thought he wasn't worth the effort since he didn't seem to be the wealthy type.

Then the very next day, he decided not to take up a loan. Instead, he wanted to buy the property with full payment. This would mean that the agent would have earned the lowest possible commission fees.

She immediately put off her professional attitude and scowled at Gerald, "Are you an idiot? I said you should take up a loan! Are you stupid, or are you just plain dumb? Do you really think you're all that with just this bit of money?"

Those were indeed very harsh words.

Gerald, however, would have none of it, throwing a bag of cash to her feet.

"Quit wasting my time and get on with it!"

As his voice echoed through the lobby, everyone was stunned in place. All of them shot dirty looks at the real estate agent, and she was humiliated thoroughly this time around.

Seeing the very man who humiliated her in public, mixed emotions flooded the agent.

"I'd like to ask. Oh, just before that, I'd like to ask you another thing. Why wouldn't you reply to any of my texts? You wouldn't even answer my calls! What kind of customer service is this? Am I no longer your customer after I've bought the property?"

Gerald was slightly annoyed as she had been actively ignoring him for the past two days.

"Hmph, what do you want this time? Did you change your mind and would like to take up a loan now? Oops, too bad, that's not possible. Also, if you'd like to furnish the property, you'd have to wait till the grant deed is registered. Now that I'm done answering your questions, do you still need anything else? If not, I have other customers to tend to. I'm a very busy woman, after all." Agent Luna rolled her eyes at Gerald.

Other agents who were present giggled softly in the back. They seemed to be enjoying the show.

Everyone in the lobby knew that Luna Maddison was the feistiest agent out of all of them.

Of course, she would want revenge after being humiliated. With swift movements, Luna gathered all her documents and went to the other side of the counter to continue her work.

“Don’t you dare give me an attitude! I am a customer!” Gerald scowled.

“Hah, what attitude? What kind of attitude would you like me to have? All you did is buy a house, get over it! I wasn’t even able to earn much commission from you. Three hundred dollars of commission? Oh please. If you want it back that much, I literally don’t give a damn! Have it and never come back! Hmph!” Luna spat and turned away.

If he were to apply for a mortgage, she would’ve been able to earn much more than merely three hundred dollars. She would’ve even made a bonus after successfully selling the property. Without this, Luna’s salary might even be deducted.

“Where is your manager? Are you all just a bunch of animals without supervision?” Gerald didn’t expect that Luna would be giving him such a nasty attitude this time around.

The employees at the front counter just kept their heads low, ignoring Gerald as well. It was clear as day that he was being looked down on.

Suddenly, a middle-aged woman walked into the lobby, “Hey Luna, what is the meaning of this? You were the employee with the most amount of sales last year. How are you publicly arguing with others now!”

Chapter 512

All of the employees at the front counter instantly stood up at attention and greeted her politely.

“Ah, Mrs. Millers, welcome!”

“Wow, Mrs. Millers, still as beautiful as always!” everyone chimed.

Luna smiled brightly, saying, “Mrs. Millers, it was just this man over here, causing a nuisance. If my cousin hadn’t asked me to help him, I wouldn’t have even talked to him in the first place. So Mr. Millers, how many properties would you like to buy this time?” She turned to her husband and asked.

Mr. Millers, an interior designer, was the type to buy many properties and give them a whole new look.

These properties would then be rented out. Hence, he was one of the biggest customers of the company.

"I'd just like to buy just one this time, but I need it done fast!" Mr. Millers said as he hugged his wife by the waist.

The couple then shot Gerald a dirty look; it would seem that they have developed a sense of superiority. Everyone was flocking towards them but ignoring Gerald after all.

In the VIP area, all of Gerald's old classmates had witnessed the whole incident. Lilian wanted to go up to him, but it would seem that Gerald had gotten himself into an argument with the agent.

After hesitating briefly, Lilian decided to stay put. Moreover, it was way too awkward to approach him, now that he has been humiliated. If anyone were to approach him directly, his self-esteem would probably be shattered.

Luna, still seemingly angered, handed Mr. Millers a few documents.

She then turned to a petite girl behind her and handed her the remaining documents in her hands. "Hey, Nicki! You're going to have to handle this customer from now on. All you need to do is change my name to yours! Oh, and I'll transfer the three hundred dollars of commission to you later through Paypal. He's yours to deal with now. Bloody hell."

After making sure that Nicki had made the correct changes, she glared at Gerald then turned to Mr. Millers with a cheery smile plastered on her face.

On the other hand, a soft voice spoke out, "Mr. Crawford, I'll be working with you now. If you have any questions, you... erm... feel free to ask!" Nicki seemed to be very timid, and she was very young for an agent; she was at most 21 years old.

She was most likely new to the job. However, she seemed to be passionate about her job despite the hint of nervousness in her eyes.

Gerald glanced at Luna coldly, then smiled softly to Nicki, “Okay then, can you show me the layout of these two buildings? B1 and B2, please.”

“Okay, sir, I’ll give you a brief introduction!” Nicki nodded.

“Hmph, Nicki, he already bought a house. He’s probably just trying to waste your time. Why do you even bother? Tell him to leave if he doesn’t have any other business here, and get a life!” Luna scoffed upon hearing their conversation.

“Oh Luna dear, why bother conversing with him? Hah, he probably doesn’t even own more than three properties. That’s why he keeps wanting to look at different properties! It’s wishful thinking, I tell you!” Mr. Millers snickered.

“Honey, you don’t say the prices for properties in our city have inflated so much. Being able to buy a property is probably the greatest achievement for them in this economy!” Mrs. Millers added sarcastically.

Despite the ridicule, Nicki still dug out the layout for B1 and B2 and handed them to Gerald. Both of these buildings were new projects. Hence they weren’t for sale just yet.

Nicki then explained to Gerald thoroughly and patiently. Gerald nodded, closed the documents in his hands, and said, “Okay, I’ve decided to buy both of these buildings, bring me the legal documents!”

Chapter 513

“What?!”

Everyone in the lobby, including Luna, was stunned.

What followed after was a room full of laughter. Especially Luna and the Millers, they laughed so hard that tears were welling up in their eyes.

“Hahaha, holy f*ck my dude, you can’t just go around bluffing like that!” Mr. Millers laughed, holding his abdomen.

“Is he insane?”

“Yeah, two whole buildings! I thought I f*cking misheard him, hahaha!”

“Yo... do we need to call for security?”

Even the employees at the front counter seemed to be running out of breath from all the laughing.

Suddenly, the manager walked into the lobby with a stern expression.

“What happened? Where is everyone’s sense of professionalism? Just look at all of you! Ridiculous!”

Luna bit her lip to keep her composure. “No... No sir, this man over here, Gerald Crawford, he... he said he wanted two of our buildings! Hahaha!” Tears streamed down her bright red cheeks.

The manager seemed to be more professional than these agents. He took a deep breath and stared at Gerald for a brief moment before approaching him with a bland expression.

“Mr. Crawford was it...? Pfft!” Although he hadn’t said much, the manager could not help but let out a loud chuckle too.

What Gerald just said was just way too hilarious. Their principle was to always remain professional front no matter how ridiculous their customers are unless they couldn’t hold in their laughter any longer.

“You’re laughing?” Gerald said coldly as he brushed the tip of his nose. These people were getting on his nerves, but he knew just how to shut them up.

“Tell me, how much for one building, Nicki? Are you done calculating yet?” Gerald asked with a cold expression.

“Oh, I know! One building has around a hundred units, and the total for one is a million dollars. After our promotion, it will be two million for two buildings, sir!”

Nicki replied professionally. She was the only one not laughing in the room.

Gerald then thought to himself, half of these units can be used for the employees’ dorms while the other half can be rented out. This would work out just perfectly.

“Right then, I’ll have someone wire the money over now. Bring me the documents!” Gerald said as he took out his phone.

He then made a phone call and said, “Send two million over to that real estate center I’ve been to, in cash!”

Gerald leaned on the front counter after hanging up, still observing the group of people laughing hysterically. He wondered if they’d continue laughing at him later on.

“Sir, please calm down. You can’t simply just sign these documents!” The manager was able to catch his breath and advised. Gerald ignored him and looked away.

Twenty minutes later, a big truck had parked itself in front of the real estate center, and not even security could stop it.

“Huh? What’s happening?” Everyone was stunned and flooded the lobby entrance out of curiosity. Even the manager tried squeezing through the crowd, he too was curious as to what was happening.

Just at that very moment, Gerald’s phone rang. It was a call from his underlings.

“Mr. Crawford, we have arrived with the money, all in cash as you requested. Do we send someone to bring it in, or do we request someone on their side to do so?” The underling asked.

He knew that something was up when he heard Gerald speak in such an annoyed tone during the phone call. Hence, he decided to cause a scene on purpose.

“To hell with that!” Gerald said as he signed the documents. He then threw his pen to the ground, “Dump it all at the front entrance!”

“Yes, sir!” As soon as he hung up, the truck’s trunk opened up, and within it, a mountain of cash.

The compartment then slowly raised up, and stacks of cash tumbled out of the truck, right onto the pavement in front of the lobby entrance.

“Jesus Christ!!”

The manager fell to the ground in shock. The documents in Luna’s arms slipped to the ground as her arms weakened. She stood there, her face drained off all color.

Chapter 514

Everyone in the lobby fell silent. Their eyes widened in disbelief as they tried to take in the scene right in front of him.

Who even is this man? This was way too much!

Then, a man in a suit carefully made his way through the pile of money and entered the lobby.

He then approached Gerald and whispered into his ear, “I have done as you asked, Mr. Crawford.”

“Ah yes, good job. I’ll leave the rest to you guys. I had already chosen the buildings I wanted. Miss Nicki here will tell you what else we’d need.” Gerald said as he patted Nicki on her shoulder.

On the other hand, Nicki gulped and dared not to say a word. If she could have these two buildings signed, the commission fee would be out of this world!

Nicki felt as if she had ascended to heaven and found paradise.

Luna, still stunned, was now drowning in fear and regret. She didn't expect him to actually buy it. If it wasn't for her attitude, she could've been the one earning such a large amount of commission fees.

She didn't even have to work for the rest of her life after this! But unfortunately, it was just twenty minutes ago where she had already assigned Nicki to Gerald...

Luna's face, which was blushing red from laughter earlier drained of all its color, was now pale with fear.

The employees who ignored Gerald were too shocked to their core. As for the Millers, they stood frozen with their mouths wide open, staring blankly at the piles of cash.

What a shame! Gerald had wanted to keep a low profile. Even if Luna had given him a little attitude, he didn't want to humiliate her any further.

However, these people continued to treat him like dirt, and he just couldn't let it slide. If he did, they probably would've crushed the little self-esteem he had within himself.

But with everyone staring at him with such shocking expressions, Gerald felt a little embarrassed for causing a scene.

Hence, he decided that he should leave. It would be quite awkward if someone he knew noticed him now, but fate was just funny like that.

As Gerald turned around, his eyes stumbled onto a few familiar faces.

In the VIP area stood all of his old classmates, Sharon, Lilian, Morgana and Howard, and a few other girls. All of them stared at him in horror, still frozen in place.

“Gerald... y-y-you...!” Even Lilian was stuttering over her words.

They had been observing Gerald from the very beginning, especially when he said he’d buy two whole buildings and made that phone call.

Just a few moments ago, the girls had laughed at him as well. Once they saw what went down, fear rose within them.

They have never seen Gerald being this aggressive, although they’ve known him for years. It was as if they were looking at a stranger.

Clunk!

Howard’s phone fell to the ground as he lost his grasp on it. Beside him, Sharon started hyperventilating. It felt like her heart was being stung by a hive of bees. Although she had anticipated this, the most horrifying thing had just happened.

Oh Sharon, would you ever regret what you did to Gerald when he becomes very powerful? No, why would I? Most he could do is win a lottery and make new connections. How big of a deal can he be? He could never compete with Hayward! However, these were all just excuses Sharon made for herself.

All her excuses shattered into pieces like glass as if a humongous boulder had crashed down on her.

“Oh sh*t, when were you guys here?” Gerald took his hands out of his pockets immediately.

Just a few seconds ago, Gerald was at his last straw, which caused him to act the way he did. However, with Lilian and the others around, he didn’t feel the need to pretend like he was some sort of influential figure. He didn’t like acting like that anyway...

“Gerald, my man, we’ve been here since the beginning!” Howard gulped.

Chapter 515

“Gerald, we’re having a little gathering, and we were going to invite you along with us!” Lilian rushed to his side and explained.

Everyone was now staring at Gerald, waiting for a response.

It would seem that being able to even stand next to Gerald would help heighten your status. Sharon stared at him, blankly. Still being doused in mixed emotions, she fell silent once again.

“Okay, have fun then! I still have some matters to tend to, so I have to go now!” Gerald smiled.

Without hesitation, he then exited the lobby immediately.

Sharon was mildly annoyed when she saw Gerald taking off. He didn’t even glance in her direction. Dismayed, she felt like she could hear the sound of her heart-shattering.

As Gerald left the lobby, he slowly walked towards the road and decided to call a taxi.

However, another voice called out to him. “Gerald? Are you waiting for the bus?”

A Camry then stopped in front of him, with its windows down. It was Bianca, and next to her was Ava. And for the driver, it was a dashing man who looked like he was of the same age as Gerald.

Gerald then remembered that Bianca had wanted to treat him to dinner, but Ava insisted that she followed along. Ava, on the other hand, did not want to invite Gerald along, which was why he ended up at the real estate center. It appeared they had just finished dinner.

“I’m on my way home!” Gerald replied.

He peeked at Ava, who seemed to be occupied with her phone. She pretended as if she didn’t see him. Gerald didn’t want to greet her, as she was the one who didn’t like to acknowledge him in the first place.

“Oh, okay. Sorry again for today. Let’s set up a time tomorrow; I’ll treat you to something nice!” Bianca smiled apologetically.

“Yeah, that’s quite alright with me!” Gerald smiled back.

“We’ll be off now!” Bianca didn’t dare to ask Gerald to pool with them since this wasn’t her car after all.

The driver glared at Gerald and drove off immediately.

“Bianca, who was that? A friend?” The driver asked, visibly jealous.

The main reason why Ava invited Bianca to dinner was that the vice team leader had his eyes on her ever since she joined the team. He wanted to get to know her even more through the dinner.

However, the dinner didn’t go as well as they had planned, and his advances were rather weak.

Bianca had only responded to him dismissively, which was why he seemed slightly irritated.

When he saw Gerald being able to talk to Bianca so casually, Nathaniel Chandler was green with envy.

“He’s my new colleague, Mr. Chandler,” Bianca said softly.

“Hah, haven’t I mentioned him to you previously? He’s Gerald, my junior high classmate!” In a cold tone, Ava added.

“Oh, that’s him. Then why didn’t you greet him just now, Ava?” Thinking back to what Ava had spoken of Gerald, Nathaniel felt much lighter with relief.

“He’s not on our level, who cares honestly. Also, Bianca, please refrain from calling him your colleague. He’s not in the marketing department. He’s in logistics!” Ava then turned to Bianca.

“Pfft, damn! I was just going to ask which team he had joined. Logistics? Really? Haha! Bianca, you should stay away from him from now on. You two aren’t on the same level. You’re a white-collar, you know that right?” scoffed Nathaniel.

Within the investment department, also known as Dream Investment Group, employees were separated into different teams. There was the research team, the analysis team, etc.

As for Ava, she was in charge of all of the groups, making her the manager. In Ava’s point of view, the logistics team was nothing but a group of errand boys.

Chapter 516

After some small talk, the three of them then returned to their homes.

When morning came, Gerald headed to the office earlier than usual. After stepping into the elevator, Gerald realized that there was someone else in there with him. Turning to look to his side, he found out, to his annoyance, that he knew the man carrying the briefcase who was also staring back at him. It was Nathaniel, the man who had been clinging on to Bianca the day before.

Nathaniel immediately shot a dirty glare at Gerald once he knew who was standing beside him. An awkward silence ensued before Nathaniel finally said, “Hey, you’re the logistics guy, right? You’re acquainted with Bianca, huh?”

“Yeah, I befriended her yesterday,” replied Gerald dismissively. Gerald had seen how Nathaniel looked at him the day before, and he knew that the man was definitely holding something against him. However, Gerald also knew that putting up with him was only going to be a waste of time and effort.

“Heh, sure. Just keep your distance from her. She only treated you to dinner to be polite. As if she’d ever try to impress someone from as low a class as you are,” he scoffed. Nathaniel felt that Gerald needed to be put in his place since Bianca would naturally only deserve to be with men like him.

“And you should learn to mind your own business. Who do you even think you are? Talking about classes like you’re the one who gets to decide that,” snapped Gerald in return. At that moment, a ‘ping’ was heard and the elevator doors slid open. Gerald immediately walked out without even caring to look back at Nathaniel.

“Y-you motherf*cker! I’ll make sure that your life will be a living hell if it’s the last thing I do!” yelled Nathaniel, enraged. Nobody had ever talked to him like that before and he wasn’t going to allow Gerald to just get away with it so easily.

While the anger continued to seep through Nathaniel, Gerald had already made it to his desk.

“Good morning, Gerald!” greeted a female voice.

“Morning!” replied Gerald with a smile as he switched his computer on. When he looked up to see who had greeted him, he was delighted to know that it was Fay.

He remembered when he had bumped into Fay Foster on the day of his interview. He didn’t know that she was also part of the team since she was out running errands when he first joined. “Fay! So you’re here too!”

From what Gerald now knew, the logistics team consisted of three people. A somewhat chubby male, Fay, and Gerald himself.

“Hehe... Gerald, right? I knew it was you the moment I saw your name on the list! Sadly, I couldn’t welcome you yesterday since you guys had already left by the time I got back from running my errands. It seems like we’re colleagues now!” exclaimed Fay.

Before he could reply, a woman approached them. She pointed at Gerald before saying, “Hey, you there, help me out here. Take this USB and download at least 20 movies into it. I’ll need it back by noon!”

Gerald looked at the fairly pretty, but somewhat cold and reserved woman who had cut into their conversation. To his surprise, it was the same woman whom he had met briefly in the elevator the day before.

He remembered her mostly for her statement claiming that he wouldn’t even have a fighting chance to get employed.

Her name was Mina Miles, and she too was born and raised in Serene County.

While it was normal for those in the marketing department to have the logistics team run errands for them... Downloading movies? Now that was just an absurd order.

“Miss Miles, I don’t think that it’s appropriate for me to be downloading movies during work. After all, I have other work to finish up as well.”

“Pfft. Work? You call what you’re doing work? I’m just asking for a small favor and you’re already complaining? If I end up missing my movie hours, you can kiss your job goodbye!” huffed Mina before slamming her USB onto his desk and leaving.

After she left, Fay motioned for him to come closer before whispering, “Hey, Gerald! You know how there are hidden rules in every company right? Well, in this one, you should try your hardest not to get on her nerves. Do you even know who she is?”

Chapter 517

“Who exactly is she?” asked Gerald.

“Well, Miss Miles is the godsister of the vice-head of the marketing department. It’d be best if you just watched out whenever she’s around!” whispered Fay.

Gerald simply shrugged and proceeded to do as he had been told. Since he wanted to continue being undercover for as long as he could, he may as well just listen to her. With that, he began downloading some movies.

“Hey, hey you! Logistics guy, what on earth are you doing?” asked a middle-aged man in a cold tone. His arms were folded against his back. Since Gerald was seated near the lobby entrance, the man must have caught sight of Gerald’s computer screen.

Behind the man, stood another employee, but this wasn’t just any regular employee. It was the vice team leader in Ava’s group himself, Nathaniel. He seemed to be enjoying the show and he smirked as he said, “Mr. Murphy, it seems that this employee is downloading movies during office hours! Haha! How ballsy! And to think that this is just his first day at work! Atrocious, I say!”

In an instant, Mr. Murphy was now standing directly behind Gerald. Though Gerald had managed to minimize the tab, he hadn't done so quickly enough to avoid Mr. Murphy's sharp eyes!

As Mr. Murphy clicked on the tab, Gerald knew that he had no choice but to surrender this time. Mr. Murphy then proceeded to yell angrily, "Who told you that you could download movies during working hours? What do you take our company as? What's your name?"

At that moment, everyone in the lobby, including the employees of the department team, came to see what the ruckus was about. Bianca was among them and upon seeing Gerald getting lectured, she felt slightly embarrassed for him as well.

"It's not like I wanted to!" protested Gerald.

"Oh really? Then what made you do it?" asked Mr. Murphy as he pressed into the issue.

"Miss Miles was the one who told me to download them!" shouted Gerald as he pointed toward Mina.

Gerald wasn't afraid to get into trouble since his true purpose wasn't to work there anyway. Knowing this, he was definitely not going to take the blame for anyone, especially not for Mina. He also took the opportunity to observe how the superiors were going to handle the situation.

Mina, as expected, was outraged. She had not expected such a low-level employee to actually report her to the higher-ups. Her first reaction was to throw a file in Gerald's direction before yelling, "How dare you accuse me?!"

It was clear as day that she was definitely at fault this time around. However, being as arrogant as she was, she would rather die first than to admit her wrongdoings.

As Mina lunged toward Gerald as though she had gone mad, Mr. Murphy's brows immediately furrowed and he shouted, "Cease this immediately, Mina! What sort of behavior is this? Take your USB back and get back to work! If this happens again, know that I won't let you off that easily!"

He then glared at Gerald before leaving the scene.

Gerald was left shocked. She wasn't even given a warning letter even though she had clearly gone against the company's rules!

Nathaniel on the other hand, simply let out a sarcastic chuckle as he looked at Gerald. He left with a smug smile on his face as though he had just won the lottery. Once the two of them left, the racket died down as soon as it had started.

Mina now held a tremendous grudge against Gerald. From the moment Mr. Murphy left, she would take any chance she could to say passive-aggressive things to Gerald. At times, she would also simply resort to cursing at him without any good reason.

Her main goal was to make every word she threw toward Gerald sting, and though the entire department was aware of her verbal abuse, none of them dared to speak up. Everyone was clearly afraid of her.

Gerald however, just went on with his work.

After some time, Gerald began feeling bored so he got up and headed for the gents. He would use the opportunity to stretch a little as well. However, the moment he stepped into the restroom, he was greeted by the strong odor of cigarettes. It would appear that quite a few employees were smoking in there.

Chapter 518

"Heh, hey Nate! That new guy's really screwed up big time, hasn't he? Wait till his trial period ends. The department head is definitely not letting him through!" said one of the smokers cockily.

"You got that right! He dared to get on Nate's nerves. Nate's definitely going to make that guy's life a living nightmare as long as he's still here!" added another guy.

"Ballsy to say the least! I'll screw with him too then!" said a third person.

“By the way guys, I have my eyes set on Bianca, so make sure none of you dare to even make the slightest move on her!” echoed a familiar, arrogant voice.

“Wouldn’t dream of it, Nate!” said everyone else hiding in the washroom. They all then left one by one after throwing their cigarette butts away.

Gerald had been hiding in one of the stalls himself, and he had overheard their entire conversation. The Nate they were talking to was without a doubt, Nathaniel.

It was clear that Nathaniel was the one who had summoned Mr. Murphy to the office earlier. As the vice team leader, he would definitely know about Mina’s habits in the office. After seeing her hand her USB over to Gerald and knowing how much of a hot-tempered woman she was, Nathaniel had used that turn of events as a prime opportunity to humiliate him. What a cunning b*stard that man was!

Though Gerald had heard rumors of employees playing dirty within the workforce, he hadn’t anticipated facing such treatment on the very first day of work. Nathaniel clearly saw Gerald as a love rival now, and wanted him gone as soon as possible.

‘Well two can play at that game. You’re in for quite a show,’ Gerald thought to himself.

Gerald then continued with his day, despite having to deal with the added sour remarks from Mina. Sometime later after running some errands, he returned to the office to find everyone standing at the entrance.

None of them seemed to be planning on leaving. Rather, they seemed to be waiting for someone to pick them up and a few of them were even on their phones. Fay and the chubby guy from his team were waiting there as well.

“What are you guys waiting for?” asked Gerald with a smile.

“Huh? What do you mean? Didn’t you receive the text, Gerald?” asked Fay in return, clearly surprised.

“Text?”

“Well, the marketing department is hosting a welcome party for the newcomers! It’s for the two of you, you know? That’s why we’re all here. I experienced it too when I first joined, and I had a really fun time!”

“I don’t think I’ve been informed about this at all, though,” replied Gerald as he checked for any new messages in his phone.

“Let me have a look!” Taking his phone, she scrolled through his first few messages and saw that he wasn’t lying. There really weren’t any texts regarding the party.

Fay then took her own phone out and showed Gerald the message that she had received. It wrote, “Marketing Department: welcome party of the month. Fay Foster: Room 202.”

‘Well this is absolutely uncalled for! They invited everyone but me!’ Gerald thought to himself. Though he knew that he shouldn’t waste his time or energy being angry over such a trivial matter, he could still feel his blood boiling under his skin.

“Which room are you in, Gerald? Are we in the same one?” asked Bianca who was walking toward him.

“I wasn’t invited,” said Gerald in a calm tone before sighing slightly.

“What? That’s not possible. Maybe Miss Miles and Mr. Chandler simply forgot? I’ll ask them immediately!” replied Bianca. She wasn’t going to just leave him out since both of them had joined the company together. The way she saw it, there was a special bond between them because of that.

“It’s fine, really! You guys can just go on without me,” said Gerald as soon as he realized that it was both Mina and Nathaniel who were organizing the event. It was clear that they didn’t invite him on purpose. As some of his female co-workers snickered, Gerald simply walked out of the lobby with a slight hint of loneliness.

After reaching his hotel, Gerald was just about to take a long shower when he suddenly heard knocking on the door. “Mr. Crawford? Are you there? Mr. Lyle sent me here!”

Chapter 519

When he opened the door, Gerald was greeted by Zack Lyle's secretary. She was here to have him sign a few contracts. Since there were several projects in progress, the number of contracts to be signed had naturally increased as well.

"Hmm? Hold on, what's this?" called Gerald out to the secretary just as she was about to leave. He noticed an envelope that she had left on his desk. When he opened it, he saw a stack of concert tickets inside. From what he could tell, there were approximately fifty of them.

"Ah, well, Mr. Crawford, since seven different projects are in progress right now, the company decided to organize a concert. Around thirty singers have been invited, and that number doesn't include the number of bands that are participating as well!" explained the secretary with a smile.

"As Mr. Lyle said, you have several friends living here in Serene County. Thus, he told me to send a stack of tickets your way. If any more are needed, Mr. Lyle would be more than happy to send the amount desired over!"

"That won't be necessary. I don't have that many friends in the first place. This will be enough," said Gerald in a calm tone.

The secretary simply bowed before leaving. Unfortunately, though she had made sure to expose ample of her bosom as she bowed, Gerald hadn't seemed to take any notice of her efforts. With her attempt failed, she left feeling both slightly embarrassed and disappointed.

"Who should I even give these to? Heh, Zack really knows how to run a business, what a considerate guy!" said Gerald to himself as he chuckled. "Ah, I can send some over to Xeno and Sienna! I'll give some to Fay tomorrow as well!"

It had been a long day at work and Fay had been the nicest person to him in the company so far. Gerald figured that it was only fair to repay the favor.

After brushing his teeth, Gerald lay on his bed and began video chatting with Mila. It had been about two months since she had gone abroad. If things went accordingly, she would be back within another month's time.

After talking to each other for three hours straight, the call finally ended and Gerald was able to get a good night's sleep. Morning came soon enough, and Gerald was up early for work as per usual. By the time he arrived, quite a few of his colleagues were already there.

They seemed to be discussing the party last night, and their chattering echoed throughout the office.

"Haha! That was the most fun I've had in a while! You know, you guys probably missed it, but when we went for karaoke, Ethan was ready to kiss Leon! My sides still hurt thinking about it!"

"Hah! Also, remember how Greg tried to confess to Fay? That pervert tried to hug her just because she looked so gentle. Nobody expected her to smack him hard on the face as soon as his arms encircled her. It was hilarious! You should've seen the look on his face!"

A girl's hushed voice was heard next. "I heard some juicy news myself last night while I was on my way to the bathroom!"

"Spill it, girl!" said another female curiously.

"Well, you know the vice team leader of the fourth team? Nathaniel Chandler? I think he confessed to the newbie, Bianca! He even bought a big bouquet of flowers! Not only that, Ava was there too and she was acting as their wing-woman!"

"Hot d*mn! Now that's juicy! What happened next? How did Bianca react?"

Everyone's ears were perked as they awaited her answer.

"I don't know! I wanted to stick around for a little longer but their team members saw me and I was forced out of the room! My guess is that she rejected him though!" continued the girl.

"That's just your guess though."

“Well it is, but you should’ve seen how desperate Nathaniel was last night. He somehow found out that Bianca liked Ashley, the singer! He knew that Ashley, alongside several other famous singers and bands, was going to participate in a concert here soon, so he told her that he’d get a ticket for her no matter what!”

“Oh lord, really? I heard that the pricing for that concert’s tickets is crazy! You’d need at least three hundred dollars to sit in the last row! I’m telling you, even if he has the money, it’d be nearly impossible for him to land a ticket!”

Chapter 520

The more the girls discussed it, the more disappointed they became. The concert was being advertised not only on every social media platform, but also on multiple billboards. Everyone knew about it, and everyone was also aware of how the ticket prices were skyrocketing as they spoke, even for just the final row seats.

Though three hundred dollars had been the original price set by the organizers for the final row seats, some re-sellers were selling them for over nine hundred dollars! Even if you had the money, the market for the tickets was so competitive that the right connections were equally as important!

Several celebrities had been invited to the concert, including the current top-ranking boy bands. Everyone wanted to snag a ticket just to be able to see their favorite idols perform live. Most of these people, however, knew that in the end, they would only be able to watch the concert online.

“If he really manages to get his hands on some tickets, Bianca definitely needs to accept his offer, right? Oh! And you can bet that Mina will be trying to get herself a ticket too! She probably won’t even consider coming to work that day! She simply adores Kai to the point where her phone is filled with reality shows and movies with him in them! She won’t let the chance slip by her that easily!” The chattering continued to echo through the office.

Not too long after, the office started getting crowded as more and more people arrived for work. By then, Fay had arrived as well.

“Morning, Gerald!” said Fay with a weak smile. She seemed to be in a bad mood.

“Morning, Fay!” replied Gerald with his own smile. From what he had heard earlier, he knew that Fay didn’t exactly have a good time yesterday, so he refrained from asking her why she was looking blue.

“Oh, by the way, Gerald, I seem to have bought too many buns. Have you eaten? I don’t think I can finish all of these... Would you like some?” offered Fay.

“Why thank you! I actually haven’t had breakfast yet!” replied Gerald as he took a bun for himself and bit into it rather greedily.

As he watched her turn her computer on, Gerald noticed that her desktop background was that of a famous celebrity. Curious, Gerald asked, “Hey Fay, do you like that celebrity? I heard that she’s going to be performing at the concert!”

Turning to look at him, she nodded with a smile before taking a sip of soy milk. “I am! And I’m excited about the concert too! You know, back when I was still in high school, my biggest dream was to earn enough money to attend one of her concerts and hear her sing live! However, looking at the ticket prices, it doesn’t seem like I’ll be achieving that goal any time soon... Like, for real! Nine hundred dollars for a ticket? Are you kidding me? I can’t afford to go broke for a concert!” she said with a sigh, visibly disappointed.

Gerald then took another big bite into his bun and with his mouth full, he said, “I actually have a few relevant connections, so if you want, I could get you a ticket!”

Since she was a nice girl in general and she had even offered him some buns for breakfast, Gerald saw no problem with giving her a ticket. Besides, he had so many of them that it would truly be a waste if he only kept them to himself.

“...Wait, what? For real?” exclaimed Fay. Though her eyes sparkled with excitement at that moment, they soon reflected a slight skepticism. “Hey, you’re pulling my leg, aren’t you Gerald? Or is there some kind of catch?”

“I’m not kidding! Here, have it!” he replied as he took a ticket out of his bag and handed it to her. “That’s a ticket for the middle row! Since that area is slightly elevated, it shouldn’t be too crowded there and you’ll be able to take lots of nice photos! What more, you’ll be able to see your favorite singer from up there clearly!”

“...H-huh?” Fay was stunned. She hadn’t expected him to be serious.

“G-Gerald! I... T-thank you so much!” stuttered Fay as she took the ticket from him with trembling hands. She wanted to pay him back, but Gerald simply refused, insisting that she took it for free.

After finishing his breakfast, Gerald felt slightly thirsty so he decided to go to the water dispenser. Just as he was about to get up, another group of employees entered the office.

“Ugh! This is so unfair!” said an irritated female voice as she stomped all the way to her seat. She slammed her purse onto her desk the moment she got to it, and everyone there was startled.

“What’s wrong, Miss Mina?” asked an employee.

The woman causing the ruckus was of course, Mina Miles.

Chapter 521

“I tried getting tickets for the concert last night, but they were all sold out! Can you believe that? This is just so unfair!” yelled Mina almost hysterically.

At that moment, Nathaniel entered the office. Unlike Mina, however, he seemed to be in quite a good mood.

“Mr. Chandler, you were trying to get some tickets too, right? How did that go? Were you able to get your hands on any?” asked several employees as they surrounded him.

“Hehe... Luck truly was on my side this time! Though they’re just final row seats, I managed to secure two tickets!” replied Nathaniel with a smug smile on his face.

“Holy! You actually managed to get two! That’s amazing, Mr. Chandler!” exclaimed the girls there with envy in their voices. As they continued talking to him, some of the girls tried subtly making physical contact with him. Maybe by doing so, they could have a chance of being invited instead!

“Nate, since you have two tickets, do you mind selling one to me? I really want to go!” said Mina as her eyes sparkled with hope. Despite being a concert organized by the Dream Investment Group, even their

own employees had a hard time getting their hands on the tickets. After all, this wasn't some employee exclusive event! Many rich people from Mayberry would be attending the concert as well.

"Sorry, Mina, but this ticket is for Bianca. We're going to the concert together!" replied Nathaniel as he shook his head.

"Humph! She'd first have to accept your offer. You're acting pretty desperate, you know Nate?" yelled Mina in response.

"What do you mean, desperate! You don't know a thing about how I feel!" yelled Nathaniel back.

Since both Nathaniel and Mina refused to back down, they were on the verge of fighting when Ava approached them to defuse the argument. The two of them were equally short-tempered and if both of them were to continue fighting over the tickets, chaos would surely ensue.

Right then, Bianca arrived at the office. Everyone went silent when they saw her, and she was well aware that all her colleagues were staring at her. Feeling embarrassed, she hurriedly approached Gerald.

"So Gerald, you said you had a surprise for me, right? What is it?" said Bianca in a soft voice. She knew that Gerald wasn't exactly the most favorite employee in the company, so if she stood near him, maybe it would help draw the attention off her.

Besides, Gerald had texted her yesterday, mentioning that he had a surprise for her, so she wasn't going to just turn that down. Nathaniel on the other hand, was filled with rage and jealousy.

"O-oh... You want it now?" asked Gerald, slightly taken aback. He had heard the entirety of Mina and Nathaniel's argument and he wasn't sure if now was the best time to give her the ticket.

"Of course! Haha! Don't tell me you were just joking about that? Humph! And to think that someone was boasting that he had tickets to the concert for me!" said Bianca in a playful tone. Truthfully, she had figured that Gerald was just bluffing her. Then again, having an awkward conversation with him was much better than having all the attention on her.

“Hah! How hilarious! As if he could ever get his hands on a ticket! If he has even a single ticket, I’ll do anything he says!” said Nathaniel angrily. “Ignore him, Bianca! Come, look what I’ve got for you!” he continued as he pulled his final row ticket out for her to see.

Gerald was now feeling incredibly annoyed. He had wanted to keep a low profile, but after hearing Nathaniel’s taunts, Gerald wasn’t going to back down this time. “So, Mr. Chandler, you said you’d do anything I say if I managed to get my hands on a ticket, correct? Are you sure you don’t want to take that back while you can? Everyone’s watching you know?”

“Pfft. Still trying to bluff, I see. And what if you don’t manage to get one? I’ll have you walk around the company in only your underpants as punishment!” scoffed Nathaniel.

Chapter 522

“Sure thing!” said Gerald with a smile as he pulled ten tickets out of his pocket. He then handed one over to Bianca.

“...What the f*ck?” Everyone in the office was stunned.

“...Are... are those real?”

“What? Gerald’s actually managed to get so many tickets?”

“Hold on, there’s no way those could be real!” shouted the girls as they surrounded Gerald.

“...Oh god, these tickets are for the highest point of the T zone! Celebrities will greet their fans there! If you have these tickets you’ll be able to see them up close!”

Taking a closer look at the tickets, they all squealed at about the same time. “Oh my god! These tickets are the real deal!”

Mina, in disbelief, took a peek at the tickets as well. After confirming their authenticity, she was left frozen in place.

It was a natural reaction since Gerald had been on her blacklist after all. Mina had always considered him to be of a lower class than she was, so the fact that he was able to get so many good tickets instantly switched the power dynamic. Her heart felt extremely heavy, understanding that he clearly had much more power than she did at that moment.

“Ten tickets! How did you even manage to get your hands on so many?” asked one of the girls as all of them stared at him, eager to know his source.

“I have my ways. Also, now that I have proof that I do indeed have tickets... Mr. Chandler? I hope you’ll keep your word,” said Gerald as he turned to look at Nathaniel. Nathaniel bore an expression of pure fear on his face.

“W-word? What word?” stuttered Nathaniel in panic.

“Don’t you dare play dumb now! Everyone heard that you had said that you’d do anything Gerald told you to if he was able to get his hands on even a single ticket!” said another girl. The group of girls was now on Gerald’s side.

“She’s right. Man up, Nate! Or are you unable to keep to your word? What a joke!” added Mina. Everyone was against Nathaniel now.

“F-fine! What do you want?” said Nathaniel as he glared daggers at Gerald in his attempt to warn him not to try anything funny.

“What do I want? Well, you did say that you’d make me walk around the company in my underwear if I wasn’t able to get a ticket... I won’t tell you to do that though, since I’m not filthy scum like you!” replied Gerald.

“Humph! You wouldn’t dare to give that order in the first place!” huffed Nathaniel.

“Oh, I wouldn’t? Well, instead of parading in your underwear around the company, I’ll just have you do so within our department’s walls then,” continued Gerald.

“Pfft! Hahaha! Yeah, do it here!” The girls’ laughter echoed through their office.

Nathaniel’s face was now brimming with both fear and embarrassment. His entire body was frozen in place and it felt difficult to even move a muscle.

“Hmm? Hey, Mr. Chandler, don’t tell me you’re not wearing anything underneath. Is that why you’re refusing to strip?”

“Oh god, that must be the reason why! He’s not wearing any underwear, what a pervert! To think that he was also hitting on Bianca!”

“Not only that, he’s not a man of his word either! Actually, I think calling him a man now is a bit of an overstatement!”

Their words were hurting Nathaniel much more than any physical wound could. At his wit’s end, he finally shouted, “Fine, fine! I’ll strip! How dare any of you claim I’m not a man of my word! And I’m certainly no pervert! Here, I’ll show all of you!” He then angrily undid his belt before pulling his pants down to his knees.

“Say that I’m not wearing any underwear again, I dare you!” he yelled, his face flushed.

“Nathaniel Chandler! What is the meaning of this?!” shouted a ferocious voice at that moment. Everyone went deathly silent and immediately returned to their seats as soon as they saw who had shouted.

“M-Mr. Briggs!”

The middle-aged man who had yelled was the head of the marketing department.

“Pull your pants up this instant and meet me in my office! You’re the vice team leader and this sort of behavior will not be tolerated!” scolded Mr. Briggs before walking back to his office.

Nathaniel immediately pulled his pants up in defeat before glaring at Gerald who was clearly enjoying the show. He then dejectedly followed after Mr. Briggs as well.

“Gerald!”

As soon as both of them left, Mina cried out to Gerald, her cheeks flushed.

Chapter 523

“I’m so sorry, Gerald! Please forgive me!” said Mina while bowing toward Gerald as though she was deeply regretting her past actions. Gerald was surprised, to say the least, at her sudden change of attitude. He wasn’t alone either, as the entire department was staring at her in shock as well.

“Please, Gerald! I really want a ticket... Could you sell one to me?” said Mina in a soft tone as she stared into Gerald’s eyes. She was Kai’s hardcore fan, so she was willing to give anything just to be able to see him perform live.

Gerald was rightfully hesitant since he was, after all, mad at her before this. Normally, he would choose to ignore her at all costs. However, she now seemed to be truly sorry for her past actions, and seeing that softened Gerald’s heart. So be it, he would grant her, her wish.

“Just take one. I have plenty anyway!” replied Gerald as he handed her a ticket. Mina’s eyes glimmered with immense gratitude and she bowed again toward him as she took the ticket from his hand.

“U-um... Gerald, may I have one too?”

“M-me too!”

“Gerald, could you sell some to us? We’re colleagues after all, aren’t we?”

From what Gerald could see, there were about seven other girls who were hardcore fans like Mina. They surrounded him instantly, displaying big puppy dog eyes to ensure that they would each get a ticket.

More of Gerald's other colleagues started crowding around him as well, and with fangirls coming from all four teams, the total headcount easily amounted to thirty people. However, Gerald didn't have that many tickets on hand at that moment.

He had no choice but to place the stack of tickets on his desk before saying, "I won't be needing so many anyway, so take one each and have fun!"

Hearing that, all the girls gasped before rushing over to his table to grab their tickets.

Ava, on the other hand, hadn't budged from her initial spot. She was staring at Gerald with mixed emotions brewing within her. Gerald hadn't mentioned how he had gotten his hands on all those tickets, but she knew that the ticket prices were soaring high.

'How much money had he used to get his hands on so many tickets?'

'And he's giving them away so nonchalantly!'

'Could he have won the lottery?'

All these thoughts filled Ava's head and she felt as though she was being crushed by a boulder. Just the day before, Nathaniel had told her to remove Gerald from the party list. Ava had done so without the slightest hesitation since she was well aware of how Nathaniel was trying to get everyone to boycott Gerald. With any luck, Gerald would be out of sight and out of mind soon enough, but oh how the tables had turned now.

If she were to be completely honest, Ava wanted a ticket herself. However, she dismissed the thought and immediately returned to her work. She simply couldn't bring herself to beg someone—especially a person whom she looked down on—for something she wanted.

Moving back to Nathaniel, he had reached rock bottom with his luck. Not only did he fail to ask Bianca out, he had also been relieved of his position as the vice team leader. Under Mr. Briggs's orders, he was now under probation as well.

When lunchtime came, the employee's canteen filled up quickly as usual. The girls from the marketing department sat at their usual table and gossiped as they had their lunch.

"Hey girls, do you think that Gerald's secretly a billionaire? Like, those low-profile ones? Maybe he's just here to experience the working life of an average Joe in our company!" exclaimed a girl as she held on to her ticket.

"Huh? That's a bold claim... Do you have anything to back that up with?" asked another female employee as the group of girls huddled closer together.

"Well, just think about it! How much would all those tickets have cost? And they're not just any regular tickets either. Gerald was able to secure twenty T zone tickets when we were all struggling to even get ones for the last row! What more, he simply gave them out to us like they didn't even matter to him. I bet he still has many more on him!"

"You're right! Who do you think he really is? I bet he's just trying to humble himself down, don't you think, girls?" asked yet another colleague.

"I believe so too! He must be quite a powerful person! He's definitely far from what someone had described him to be like during the party! Hah, imagine thinking for a second that Gerald was actually broke as a joke!" added a fifth girl as she looked toward Ava.

Ava had been sitting within listening distance and she had been visibly annoyed throughout their conversation about Gerald.

"I know right? Half of the party was just her bad-mouthing Gerald. The audacity of some people!" This time, it was Mina who spoke. Ava Anderson knew clear as day that they were all referring to her.

Chapter 524

"As if he could ever be a billionaire. Who knows how he got all those tickets? Big deal! I'm leaving!" said Ava aloud as she slammed her chopsticks on her bowl.

None of the girls even bothered to respond to her taunt. They were all more focused on trying to figure out what they could do to return the favor to Gerald. They soon thought of something and by the time evening came, a mountain of snacks was on Gerald's desk.

“Hey babes, I’m back!” said a voice out of the blue.

A dashing young man then entered the office as he announced his arrival with arms spread out as though he were anticipating a welcome hug. However, all he heard was, “Hey, Gerald! Please tell us how you got those tickets. Come one, tell us!”

Everyone else was still focused on Gerald, and nobody welcomed the young man. Well, aside from one person.

“Oh? Stuart, you’re finally back!” said Ava as she stood up and welcomed him warmly.

Who exactly was Stuart?

Stuart was the team leader for the second team, and he had been sent to Mayberry for training. During his training, he had gone to different cities to check how well the company was doing in the other areas.

As for his physical traits, he was very good looking and only seemed to be slightly older than Gerald.

He was the one who had led Ava when she first joined the company, and she had the biggest crush on him. This was no secret either, as everyone in the company knew how much she adored him. Stuart, however, was a lone wolf. A wild man. Though Ava had made multiple attempts to woo him, he had managed to deflect every single one of them. Despite that, he still treated both her and his good friend, Nathaniel, rather nicely.

“Hmm? Who’s that, Ava? A new face?” asked Stuart, rather irritated that his spotlight had been stolen by a small fry.

“Humph. He’s just my high school classmate. His name is Gerald Crawford, but don’t worry, Stuart. My heart will always belong to you!” replied Ava.

“Gerald huh? He’s new to the company, yet he’s already fooling around with his co-workers and not doing his work as he should? How dare he?” said Stuart as he nodded to himself. He looked as though he was planning to do something.

Gerald was finally able to have some peace of mind when his shift came close to ending.

Just as he was thinking so, he was startled by the sound of a mug being slammed on his desk.

“Hey newbie, get me some hot water as soon as the water boils!” ordered Stuart.

“I don’t think that getting water involves my field of work,” replied Gerald calmly. Gerald was no pushover, so he wasn’t going to back down easily.

“You’re just a newbie, so get to it!” said Stuart, his voice even colder this time.

“Oh, Gerald, it should be an honor for you to run errands for Stuart. Just do as you’re told! Who do you think you are, some kind of billionaire?” said Ava as she walked over and stood next to Stuart. She seemed to be even more annoyed than Stuart himself when she heard Gerald talking back to him.

“Give me one good reason why I should do so.” Gerald simply refused to give in.

“Stuart’s the king of business here, but you probably didn’t know that, right? About sixty percent of our investments were all thanks to Stuart! How’s that for a reason?” scoffed Ava.

“Also, you probably don’t even know how powerful his family truly is! Haha, I bet you really thought that you were someone special for a second there, didn’t you?” she added before shooting a dirty look toward Gerald. She seemed to be extremely proud of herself whenever she mentioned anything about Stuart.

Just as Mina and the others were about to stand up for Gerald, Stuart’s phone began to ring and he immediately picked up the call.

“Yes, this is Stuart... Wait, what? How did this happen? That’s impossible! Could you repeat that?” yelled Stuart into his phone as the color on his face slowly drained away.

Chapter 525

“What’s wrong, Stuart?” asked Ava, looking visibly worried.

“It’s ruined!” said Stuart, his face pale as a sheet. He then ran down the stairs immediately and Ava followed close behind. She waited for him to be done with his phone call before slowly approaching him.

“Stuart...? What’s wrong? Please don’t scare me!” asked Ava, repeating her question. She was getting increasingly worried with every passing second.

Stuart wasn’t a man who only had his looks. He had properties within Mayberry and his parents were fairly successful people as well. Essentially, he had the whole package. He just seemed to naturally outshine all of Ava’s other colleagues in the company, which was one of the reasons why she liked him so much in the first place.

Ava had always dreamed of marrying Stuart in Mayberry one day. If she was lucky, she’d love to be able to work there as well. Due to her father being the principal of her high school, she had been both prideful and cynical from a young age. All her crushes she had had up to this point were on men who had powerful backgrounds and were very rich.

“This is bad, Ava. Remember that company that we invested in with Mr. Wilson? Something’s gone wrong!” said Stuart in a panicked voice.

Ava immediately knew what he was talking about. The investment in that company had been ordered by one of the directors. Stuart, as well as Mr. Wilson, were involved in the process. Since the company wanted to earn more through investing, it was natural for everyone in the company to want more of that money too. Money was money, after all.

Thus, they decided to invest in a company as well. They would operate on their own and report back to the main branch so that they’d provide funds for investment purposes. This particular company had already been given funds of over eighty million dollars, but only those involved knew about the company.

Everything seemed to be sailing so smoothly. The main branch had already approved of their funding requests, and they thought that with all the investments going around, they would never be found out. Besides, the company had provided double insurances since they were using the name of another local business. Nothing should've gone wrong.

"I have no idea what the higher-ups were smoking, but they've just decided to check in on our company! What more, they seemed to know what they were checking for! Since they weren't able to balance the financial statements, they had suspected that someone was committing fraud!"

Stuart was having a panic attack. He knew that this was it.

"It's weird though! The business isn't that big and we didn't provide that much funding either! We even made sure to use another business' name too! There's no way they could have detected this that easily!"

"I have no idea how either but that's the least of my problems! The higher-ups are now investigating both the director and Mr. Wilson. I'm most likely going to go down with them too! Oh god, what should I do? If the company decides to report us, we'll be sentenced to jail!"

Seeing how panicked he was, Ava began panicking herself. However, she suddenly had an idea. Patting herself on the head, she explained, "Wait, there may be a solution to this! Why don't you use a scapegoat? They can take the full blame for you then all your problems should be solved, right?"

"Who though? This is serious business!"

Ava thought for a while before snapping her fingers. "I think I have a plan!"

While all this was happening, Gerald was calmly filing documents for the company.

Fay simply smiled when she saw him working. "You're so hardworking Gerald! You just keep on going, company after company!"

Gerald simply smiled back before replying, “Well, I have to make sure that everything’s been checked. Besides, I quite enjoy doing this and I’ve learned a lot too!”

The main reason the company was being investigated on was because Ava had been boasting so much about Stuart’s achievements. When Gerald found out that Nathaniel and Stuart were very close, he immediately checked on the projects that they had proposed.

After some investigating, he was able to detect multiple errors in their documents. One of the companies that Stuart had proposed was even under the name of Waylon’s father’s business.

It wasn’t really that big of a deal at first, but how would a fairly successful company not branch out?

Chapter 526

Gerald was familiar with Waylon’s family. Since when had they opened a company that was completely unrelated to their family’s business?

After some thorough investigation, Gerald found that there was a problem and he immediately sent a message to Zack to have him double-check for him.

“Come on, tell me. What did you find?” said Fay with a smile. It was just a background check after all. Why did Gerald make it sound so grand?

“You wouldn’t get it, but just know that I’ve found something big!” said Gerald before chuckling.

At that moment, Gerald received a call from Ava which surprised him slightly.

“Gerald? Are you doing anything after work tonight?” asked Ava as soon as he picked up.

“Why? What do you need?” asked Gerald rather coldly.

Though Gerald used to treat Ava kindly, her constant cold behavior toward him made him want to treat her equally as coldly.

“Well, I was thinking of treating you to dinner. You’ve joined the company for two days now and I still haven’t treated you to a meal. So... care to have dinner with me tonight?” asked Ava with a smile on the other side of the line.

“Who else will be there?” asked Gerald in return. He knew that Ava was definitely up to something. However, since Ava and Stuart were so close to each other, he felt that this would be a prime opportunity to get to know more about them.

“It’ll just be the both of us! Nobody else!” replied Ava.

Shortly after, both of them agreed on a meeting time and place before she hung up.

Ava didn’t return to her desk for the rest of the day. Once Gerald clocked out, he headed for the agreed meeting place. It was just a small restaurant that wasn’t too far off from the office.

As he entered a small, private dining area, he saw Ava. He was surprised, to say the least. She had been true to her word, as she was the only one waiting for him there.

“Over here, Gerald! Come, have a seat! What do you think of this place? It’s pretty good, right?” said Ava with a smile as she opened a bottle of red wine and poured some out for Gerald.

“It’s definitely a pretty nice place. What’s the special occasion though? I wouldn’t have minded going somewhere cheaper!” replied Gerald with a slightly wry smile.

“How could I ever treat you to something cheap? Also, just so you know, I’ve constantly wanted to have a personal conversation with you in the past two days. However, the office just didn’t seem to be a convenient place to talk! Now that we’re alone, it’s about time we both got caught up with the good old days!” said Ava as she inched closer to Gerald, her elbow gently nudging his.

What exactly was this girl up to? Gerald had not the slightest clue.

However, he did notice how flirty Ava was being with him. She had even tried to figure out how he got those tickets earlier along with his other colleagues. 'Catching up on the good old days' was definitely not her true intention.

After drinking and talking for quite a bit, Gerald's face began turning red as he grew tipsy.

"Ava, I think I've had enough. We've been drinking way too much!" said Gerald as he shook his head.

"Alright then, shall we get going? Ah, could you send me back, Gerald?"

"Sure!"

After Ava settled the bill, Gerald accompanied her back to her place.

He hadn't been able to find out what she was up to since she kept avoiding answering his questions.

After Ava arrived home safely, Gerald was just about to leave when she grabbed his arm.

"Gerald, don't leave!"

Chapter 527

After grabbing on to his arm, she began looking at Gerald flirtatiously.

Though her eyes were indeed, very attractive, Gerald was still shocked.

"Ava, are you alright?"

"No... No, I'm not. Could you please accompany me?" she asked as she pulled him deeper into her house. Eventually, Gerald ended up being pushed onto her bed.

She then began taking her dress off seductively.

Gerald could only gulp.

Ava was really beautiful, after all. She had fair skin and a great figure. As she pressed her body against his, Gerald felt heat rushing through his body.

His throat felt dry as Ava continued undressing. Her upper body was now mostly exposed.

All of a sudden, the door was kicked open and two people rushed in!

Ava immediately rolled off the bed and covered herself with some clothes as she screamed, "Hurry! Get the d*mn pictures!"

One of the two men who had entered was Nathaniel while the other was of course, Stuart. Nathaniel seemed to be recording as Ava started crying.

"Stuart! Save me please!" she cried out.

"Don't worry, Ava! We're here now so this b*stard can't do anything! I can't believe him! This Gerald seemed like such an honest guy but to think he was this sleazy! How dare he set up a trap for his own ex-classmate!"

"I didn't know he was such a person either! I just wanted to treat him to dinner! He then offered to send me back but... but... He ended up assaulting me! Thank god you guys are here now!" wailed Ava.

"No worries Ava, we've caught everything on tape! Let's go report him immediately!" sneered Nathaniel.

He knew that Gerald was now as good as dead.

Gerald on the other hand, had sobered up and he now realized that he had been set up.

He knew that something was wrong the moment Ava started undressing. What more, she had been exceptionally nice to him all evening!

Gerald just couldn't believe that his own ex-classmate would treat him like this.

Though, what reason did she have to set him up?

'We've been friends for at least seven years, Ava. What the hell?' Gerald thought to himself, a wry smile on his face.

"So, what should we do with you now, Gerald?" said Stuart coldly.

"I don't know, it's up to you guys, isn't it? What do you even want me to do?" replied Gerald with a grim smile.

"Well look at you! You sound decisive!" said Nathaniel with a chuckle.

"It's simple, really. Just sign this contract and you'll be the legal owner of it. Isn't that easy?" said Stuart as he took a contract out for Gerald to see.

When he saw the name of the company on the contract, Gerald was finally able to put two and two together.

The name of the company was the exact one that he had told Zack to investigate into.

It seemed that his predictions had been right. Stuart was definitely a suspicious individual and there were several problems with his and Waylon's business.

Since the matter had been revealed, they were now obviously trying to find a scapegoat.

This was a matter of life and death! If he signed the papers, he would be deemed the traitor and should Zack find out about it, the person ending up in jail would most definitely be Gerald!

At that moment, Stuart had no idea who he was truly going up against!

Chapter 528

Gerald smiled.

The trio before him would never be able to remotely even come close to anticipating that he was the actual owner of the company.

He then looked toward Ava before saying, “High school friends, huh? Why are you doing all this to me? Since when have you become this way, Ava?”

“Don’t even think about playing the friendship card, you b*stard! After laying your dirty hands on me, don’t even dream that I’ll let you off easily! Since you’re talking about friendship now, why didn’t you save a ticket for me earlier this afternoon then?”

“The most hilarious thing is that you lack even the most basic of common sense! Did you really think that I’d ever fall for or even make out with you? Keep fantasizing about it, that’s all you’ll ever get!”

Since they weren’t filming anymore, Ava found no further reason to filter her words.

She knew Gerald well. All Gerald was, was a poor and powerless pauper. Knowing the difference in power between them allowed Ava to execute her plan without the slightest hesitation. She wasn’t even remotely afraid, to be completely honest.

“Oh, I see how it is now. It seems that I’ve really thought too much!” replied Gerald with a chuckle.

“I don’t really want to believe this, honestly. I truly trusted that you wanted to treat me to dinner because of our past friendship. If you had just been sincere, I would definitely have been willing to help you in the future should you get into any trouble!” replied Gerald.

Though Gerald had anticipated that Ava had some ploy when she called him out for dinner, he had truly felt touched while they reminisced about their old days back at the restaurant. That was the reason why he had decided to accompany her back home in the first place.

Before they entered Ava's house, Gerald had already made up his mind that he would continue to help her out, even if they weren't as close to each other as they were before.

After all this had happened however, he was now completely disappointed in her.

"You? Help me? Who do you even think you are? Look, we're letting you off easy. Think about it, you just have to sign these papers and the company will be yours!"

"Oh I'll sign them, but you'll just have to wait for tomorrow. My identification card isn't with me now and I can't remember my identification number!" said Gerald as he thought of that excuse on the spot.

"The hell? You don't even remember your own identification number?" cursed Stuart.

However, he wasn't too worried since they still had the recordings now. Gerald couldn't run from them and Stuart knew it.

Tomorrow it was then.

"So be it. You'll sign these papers the moment you arrive at the office tomorrow. And don't you dare tell anyone about this or I'll call the police immediately! You'll definitely be charged for attempted r*pe if the recording gets out!" said Stuart.

"Tomorrow it is!" replied Gerald.

He was then let off. Once Gerald left the building, he immediately contacted Zack and told him everything that had happened.

He was feeling very upset since despite being disappointed in her, he still felt sorry for Ava.

He had initially gone undercover to try gathering information from the culprits he found. To think that his ex-classmate would be this involved with the matter.

When the next day came, Gerald entered the office and was just about to take a seat when both Stuart and Ava walked up to him.

“Gerald, please come to my office now!” said Stuart as he looked at Gerald. He also motioned for Gerald to remember to bring along his identification card.

“Sure thing!” replied Gerald as he followed both of them. Nathaniel was already waiting in Stuart’s office for them.

The office doubled as a printing room, and not many people usually went there.

“Alright, sign this quickly. We still have other formalities to go through. Hurry up!” said Stuart as he took the contract from the night before out.

However, Gerald simply sat there with his legs crossed. He had clearly no intention of signing it.

“What the hell are you waiting for? Hurry up and sign it already!” warned Stuart with a slightly raised voice.

Gerald’s response was to simply look at his watch before saying, “Just wait for a little while more. I’ll sign it when everyone else has arrived. That’ll save you the time to look for the right person to process your formalities!”

“Huh? What do you mean by that?”

Chapter 529

“Oh, you’ll see what I mean in a little while,” said Gerald with a smile.

At that moment, a few cars arrived at the entrance of the building.

When their doors were opened, out stepped Spencer—Waylon’s father—, Jarvan Wilson—the current deputy minister—and Norman Lay—the investment company’s assistant manager. All of them bore serious expressions on their faces.

Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke were present as well, both looking equally upset.

If Gerald hadn’t sent Zack a message telling him that there were problems with the company, neither Zack nor Michael would have ever found out that all this was happening under their noses.

As it turned out, the profit of the company and the departments within it were all involved just because of a few people.

After hearing what Gerald had found the night before, Zack called everyone relevant back to the office before interrogating them thoroughly throughout the entire night.

Under Gerald’s order, he was to bring them to the office now. As the group approached the building’s main entrance, they saw a man and woman waiting outside.

“Why did you even tell me to come over, Waylon? How should I know where your father is? I didn’t even know that the company was in trouble!” said the woman, her tone slightly irritated.

“Xella, could you please not be like this? You have to help me... D*mn it! My dad’s here!” replied Waylon as he looked up.

Waylon’s father hadn’t been home the entire night. Mostly clueless about what was happening, all Waylon knew was that his father was going to the office early the next day.

He decided to wait for his father at the office to try and get a better understanding of his father’s situation. Since he knew that Xella had been to the company’s headquarters quite a few times, he called her over to accompany him.

As Spencer came closer, Waylon ran over to him and realized that his father's face looked awful.

"Dad, what's wrong?"

"Son, just go home first. This is none of your business. Mr. Crawford's here to see us!" said Spencer unhappily.

"...Huh? Mr. Crawford? He's here in Serene County?" asked both Waylon and Xella, the two of them equally shocked.

"You heard me," replied Spencer as he nodded.

"Let's go. Mr. Crawford shouldn't wait for us a second longer!" said Zack.

"Yes, Mr. Lyle..."

It wasn't just Spencer's face that looked awful. Everyone else being escorted into the building bore equally terrible expressions.

After the group went into the building, Waylon said, "There must be something terribly wrong. I've never seen my dad like that! I have to see what happened for myself!"

As for Xella, since the time Cindy's mother had treated them to a meal last time, she hadn't wanted to talk to Waylon anymore. However, she really wanted to know what Mr. Crawford looked like. That was the main reason why she had agreed to accompany Waylon.

Meanwhile in the investment marketing department, the mood had been rather lively.

Most of the employees were standing up to look at all the people walking up and down the hallway.

The people in question included higher management people from the headquarters and also some very important individuals.

Nobody could tell what was going on and nobody dared to ask what was happening. It was a shocking scene, to say the least.

As the elevator doors opened, Zack stepped out before leading the small group to the printing room.

“...Hey, that’s the general manager, Zack Lyle and beside him is Michael Zeke! Both of them are the company’s right-hand men!”

“And look who’s following behind them. Isn’t that Mr. Wilson and Mr. Lay? What on earth is going on? Oh my god, the one behind them looks like Spencer Letts from HouseLand Enterprise!”

“Is the company in some kind of trouble? All the higher management people and even the boss is here!”

“Most probably. I wonder what’s gotten us into such hot water!”

Everyone who saw the group of people discussed the situation.

Mina herself was sipping a cup of tea as she watched them.

Much to her surprise, she saw a few familiar faces coming out of the lift. She immediately waved her right arm while shouting, “Xella! Over here!”

“Mina!” replied Xella as both she and Waylon walked toward her.

“What are you doing here? Do you have any idea what’s going on? Actually, hold on. Xella, is this your boyfriend?” asked Mina as she chuckled when she noticed Waylon.

“He’s not, but moving on, I was about to ask you the same thing. The headquarters called the higher management for a meeting and we have no clue what’s going on!”

“Well, guess all we can do is wait!” replied Mina as she shook her head.

Chapter 530

A knock was heard on the door and Gerald looked toward it.

His legs were still crossed when he shouted, “Come in!”

Zack and Michael then led Spencer and the rest into the room.

“...H-huh? What?” said Stuart, stunned.

Everyone in the room was involved in the matter.

Even Spencer Letts was here and the ones taking the lead were Mr. Zeke, Mr. Lyle, and Mr. Wilson!

“This...” That was the only thing the trio managed to mutter. Stuart, Nathaniel, and Ava were dumbfounded.

When they finally came to their senses, the trio shouted, “Mr. Zeke! Mr. Lyle!”

“Mr. Crawford, they’re all here!” said Zack as he ignored the three people.

“...Huh? Mr. Crawford?”

“...That’s a joke right? The f*ck? He’s Mr. Crawford?”

Everyone was shocked. This was especially so for Stuart and Ava.

“M-M-Mr. Crawford...?” Ava felt like she could hardly breathe.

“Well, since everyone is finally here now, let’s begin. So, Mr. Ferguston, tell me about the papers again. Where do I need to sign?” said Gerald as he smiled.

“...I...” Stuart’s mind had gone blank and he could only gulp.

Stuart had initially thought that he would be able to wiggle out of this mess, scot-free. His plan was perfect, after all. Now that this had happened, the amount of trouble he was in had skyrocketed.

Never could he have dreamt that he would fall right into Gerald’s trap.

Who the f*ck could have even anticipated that Gerald was the actual Mr. Crawford?

Though Stuart turned to look at Ava, she couldn’t be bothered about him this time. Instead, she shouted, “Mr. Lyle, what did you call Gerald? Is he... Is he really Mr. Crawford...?”

“Step aside and don’t be a nuisance!” sneered Zack in response.

“Mr. Crawford, should we really proceed with this here? The printing room is too small to hold a meeting!” said Michael as he took a step forward.

“That’s true. Bring them to the meeting room. We’re getting to the bottom of this, today!” said Gerald.

Zack nodded before leading the group of people out with him.

Even as she walked out the door, Ava was still peeking at Gerald. Her eyes reflected her sheer confusion. She just couldn’t believe it.

Gerald simply ignored her and headed out himself.

“Here they come!” shouted an employee and everyone went silent.

Mina and the others were shocked when they saw Gerald coming out of the room behind the group.

“Psst! Gerald! Over here!” said Mina in a soft voice as she motioned for him to come over. Ever since he had given her the ticket, she had considered him to be a friend.

As Gerald walked over, he was surprised to see that both Xella and Waylon were there too.

“Gerald? Why are you here?” asked Xella, shocked.

“Eh? You guys know each other? He’s new here and he’s also my colleague!” said Mina as she smiled.

“So this is where you’re working!”

Xella was undoubtedly surprised to see him here. Other complicated emotions were also brewing deep inside her.

Waylon, on the other hand, was exceptionally upset when he heard that.

“Well, you should treat Gerald nicely then, Mina. He’s our ex high school classmate after all, and he definitely has potential!” said Waylon though there were hints of jealousy in his voice.

“Not bad. Also, he really is very skilled! Haha!”

“Hey, hey Gerald! Do you know what’s happening? What’s wrong with Stuart and the others?” asked a group of girls who quickly surrounded Gerald.

“Also, I heard from Xella that Mr. Crawford is here today! I don’t think we’ve seen him... Which one of them is Mr. Crawford?” asked Mina next.

Everyone was curious about that as well.

“Mr. Crawford, everyone’s headed to the meeting room now. Are you coming?”

At that moment, Zack’s voice could be heard from behind Gerald.

Chapter 531

“Gerald?”

Xella Jaquin and Waylon Letts were both startled.

The entire marketing department was confused.

“Alright, I’m coming!”

Gerald shouted back.

“Gerald, you...you...you are Mr. Crawford?” Xella stuttered. She was clearly in shock.

Though Cindy’s mom joked around once, saying how Gerald could actually be Mr. Crawford from Mayberry the last time they had dinner at their place.

Xella was just flabbergasted back then when she heard of the joke.

But when she gave it a second thought, she was quite close to Gerald, so how could he be the super-rich Mr. Crawford?

But then, just a moment ago, when Mr. Lyle had called out his name, Xella's mind completely went blank.

Gosh, could Gerald be Mr. Crawford?!

Gerald turned to Xella and nodded, "Yep!"

He then left as the crowd stared at him in astonishment.

Waylon, initially brought in by Xella to visit her father, was dumbfounded as he fumbled around for a chair to sit.

"F*ck! Gerald is a rich heir, and he's our CEO! No wonder he had so many tickets! Just like what I told you, Gerald had a sophisticated identity, but... oh my god, never would I have thought that he's our chairman!"

The moment Gerald had left, the entire marketing department went crazy!

"Luckily, we didn't offend the chairman!" Some girls were both relieved and scared.

In short, the entire atmosphere was just in a frenzy.

Everyone was way too overwhelmed and shocked.

Regarding Stuart's matter, the problem was handled with ease.

At that moment, they did not only confess what they had done but also exposed several other department managers who were previously not mentioned.

Most of the culprits were residents from Serene County, Mayberry.

The outcome was simple. They were all handed over to the police.

When they were being arrested, Ava threw Gerald a pitiful gaze, pleading for his help, but he turned a blind eye.

He had already given her a chance before.

Since she played the emotion card to deceive him, Gerald was not going to fall for it again!

Eventually, the matter had come to an end.

“Mr. Crawford, your birthday is in four days; any plans? Your dad gave me a call and told me it’s your first birthday since the end of your poverty-stricken life, so let’s celebrate and have a good time, shall we!” Mr. Lyle smiled excitedly.

“What else is there to plan? I’d usually celebrate my birthday with Mr. and Mrs. Winters, and this year is no exception. I’ll still go back to my hometown, but this time around, all of you are free to tag along! With more than twenty people, it’s going to be a blast, hehe!”

Gerald returned a bright smile.

Other than Xeno, who had been a good friend to Gerald since he was a kid, Gerald did not have many close friends.

After all, if you had no money or influence, who would want to play with a poor loser like you?

Hence why Gerald did not invite that many to his birthday party.

Those that he planned on inviting were Zack Lyle and Michael Zeke, probably Aiden Baker, Elena Larson, Xeno Lane, and Sienna.

He mingled well and had fun with those people, so he figured their company would be alright.

Gerald was not willing to make it too public.

After that, Gerald packed up his things as he prepared to go to town.

Michael, on the other hand, looked pale.

Zack had already noticed it, so he asked, "Michael, is there something you haven't told Gerald?"

Michael scratched his head, anxiously, "I kinda told everyone that Mr. Crawford's birthday is in four days. But he said to keep it low-key?"

"What?! You leaked that information out?" Zack froze, stunned.

At five in the afternoon, Gerald took a cab and headed back to town.

Gerald could now head back freely without causing any trouble. It was not a problem for the fleet to send him off.

However, the fact that he was Mr. Crawford was still unclear to Mr. Winters and his family.

If he returned like this, it would be too much extravagance, and Gerald did not like this feeling.

The next thing on the list for Gerald was to come clean with Mr. Winters and his family regarding the hospital bill settlement and his identity. After all, there was nothing for him to hide from the old couple.

While on his way back to his hometown, Gerald felt it was better to keep a low profile.

Seeing the roads being paved along the road, Gerald knew that his town would soon undergo some significant development.

Chapter 532

“Young man, is your house in this town?”

The driver was a middle-aged man. He asked warmly and flashed a smile.

Gerald nodded.

“Well, congrats, kiddo, your town is about to undergo quite a significant development, and no piece of land here will be left unattended! Not only will they provide housing fees, but also demolition fees and many job opportunities too! You look like a college student, so when you’re back home, you should make good use of this opportunity!”

“Yeah, that would be nice!”

As they chatted along the way, they eventually arrived at Gerald’s hometown.

It was a town, but Gerald’s home was in a small village in the middle of the city—a town village.

There were many families in the village that run mills. They ran businesses like milling flour and such.

Back then, the best part about the village was the fantastic fragrance of freshly milled flour in the air.

But this trip back to his village, it was apparent that the fragrance of milled flour which Gerald missed was significantly lesser now.

“Woohoo, the college student is back!”

“Why didn’t you bring your girlfriend back?”

“Gerald, have you found a job? I’m sure such a bright college student like you can find a good job, right?”

As soon as he entered the village, the villagers flocked around him and started questioning.

“Not yet!”

Gerald smiled.

“Hmph, then you went to college for nothing? It’s no different than the others who dropped out of school early to work!” A woman taunted with disdain.

The village folks’ words were dreadful and judgemental, but Gerald did not bother much.

Instead, he turned away from their remarks and finally reached the door of his home.

When he took out his keys to unlock the door, he realized that the door lock was changed some time ago, and he could not open it.

“What’s the matter?”

Gerald wondered for a moment.

“Oh, Gerald, you’re back!” A woman came out of the house next to Mr. Winters’s. She was Mr. Winters’s second daughter-in-law, Sandrilla Sutton.

She approached Gerald while munching on some peanuts.

“Sandrilla, how come the house locks were changed?”

Gerald asked as he smiled wryly.

He had met Sandrilla before back when they were at the hospital.

She was very greedy for money and would take advantage of every situation, and she did not like losses.

“Oh, I changed it; what’s wrong?”

“Then what about the keys to my house?” Gerald asked.

“Huh, what do you mean by your house? Gerald, do you even know who this house belongs to now? I know why you’re back. You heard that the house was about to be demolished, and you wanted to come back to get your fair share of the money. Let me tell you this once, don’t even think about it! This is my house and written black and white on the estate license!”

Sandrilla’s tone changed.

Gerald immediately understood what she meant.

Mr. Winters had two houses when Gerald’s parents moved here. One was for their own family, and the other one was this.

His parents paid for the house.

To be frank, there was no such thing as a real estate license in the countryside twenty years ago.

They only signed a simple contract, and it was the same contract that his dad had signed with Mr. Winters while they were drinking.

That was a long time ago, and Gerald had no idea where his father had kept the contract.

During that time, they would not even have thought that Mr. Winters' family would forcefully evict them to get the house back.

And it was because of this matter.

Sandrilla, too, heard about the demolition project and tried to get her hands on the house. She could make tens of thousands of dollars from it.

"Gerald, you're back! Don't listen to her nonsense; this house belongs to your family, and no one can take it away from you!"

Suddenly, Mr. Winters came out and exclaimed firmly.

Chapter 533

"What do you mean by that, old man? What do you mean it's theirs? I'm warning you, I've consulted with a lawyer, and if we bring this to court, the contract you signed will not be counted! The real estate certificate is ours anyway!" Sandrilla said frantically.

'Seems like they've been quarreling about the matter for quite some time now.'

Gerald thought to himself.

Earlier, when he called Mr. Winters, he sensed that Mr. Winters was in a bad mood.

It turned out that they had been quarreling.

Even if the housing estate belonged to the Crawfords, why would Gerald even fight with them for it?

"Besides, didn't Gerald win the lottery? Why would he still care about this house anyway! And I don't know where I lost the house key for the lock!" Sandrilla continued, fuming.

“Hmph!” Mr. Winters grunted as he picked up a large rock from the ground.

“Excuse me, what do you think you’re doing?” Sandrilla asked as she stepped back in anxiousness.

Mr. Winters then stormed towards the door and smashed the lock with the rock.

He then whipped out a new lock from his pocket.

“Gerald, with this lock, the three of them wouldn’t dare to take turns to change the lock to your house. Enough with this mess. Let’s go inside and clean-up later. Come over to my house for dinner; your aunt is cooking up a feast for you.” Mr. Winters said.

“Alright then!”

Gerald took the lock and forced a smile. Turns out, the second sister-in-law was not the first person to lock his house door. The first and third sister-in-law were also involved.

Gerald looked at how grim and hopeless the circumstances were and could only force a grin.

Sandrilla’s face turned scarlet. She cried as she ran back home to make a phone call.

After Gerald had tidied up his house, he headed to Mr. Winter’s for dinner.

He was greeted by a few shiny, brand new cars parked in front of Mr. Winters’s house. The best looking one among the bunch was a black Passat.

They were all newly bought.

It looked like all the brothers, from the oldest to the third, were all there.

In previous years, they usually held many big feasts and occasions as such, but this year, things were different.

As Gerald stepped into the house, he heard someone banging on the table loudly.

“Why?! That was our house, and by what authority should we give it to them?”

“Yeah, mom, I heard that this time they’re going to demolish several houses, and to reimburse them for the demolition, each household will be receiving tens of thousands of dollars. They’re starting to repair the roads, and since our house is by the mountainside, they might even turn this place into a tourist attraction, or even a movie base! After this, our houses will be worth a lot of money! Money!” Francis Winters exclaimed excitedly.

“Yep, yep! Mom, a friend of mine, had invested in the tourism sector in her town. After her house was demolished, she was able to afford two houses!” Queeny Winters said.

“That too! Gerald’s family has taken so much advantage over us; besides, he won hundreds of thousands of dollars worth of lottery already!”

The eldest brother banged his fists angrily on the table and scowled.

“Let’s wait until tomorrow. I’ll find someone to get the house back.”

“Big brother, what makes you think that only you can do that? It’s not like I’ve got no connections at all!”

“I know, right! I’ve connections too, you know! Plus, if you get back the house, wouldn’t that mean the house would be under your name afterward?”

The entire family started falling into a chaotic squabble.

At this point, Gerald could not stand by the sidelines and eavesdrop any longer, so he walked in.

“Everyone, stop fighting! If you want this house that much, take it!” Gerald said.

“Gerald, this has nothing to do with you, so stop the nonsense. It doesn’t matter who you want to hand the house over to; the house still belongs to your family!” Mr. Winters said coldly.

Gerald, on the other hand, was fed up with the drama.

“Hmph, since Gerald said it himself, you don’t have to worry about it, old man!”

The sister-in-law chimed in haughtily.

As for Queenie, Francis, and the others...

Chapter 534

They threw death stares at Gerald.

Gerald had unintentionally embarrassed them previously at the hospital.

Because of that incident, any word that came out of his mouth at the moment seemed to be just infuriating.

“Okay, that’s enough. It has been a while since Gerald came back, so let’s eat first.”

The eldest brother gestured everyone to the dining table after hearing what Gerald had said.

Upon the eldest brother’s persistence, only then did the family get seated at the dinner table.

Regarding the housing matter and seeing the angered expression on their father’s face, he was afraid that he would fall sick once again from the stress and tension.

Hence, for the time being, no one touched on the topic.

“Gerald, have you finished your internship? Have you found a job already?” The third brother quizzed.

“Hah, seems like he hasn’t found any job yet, though. It’s difficult to look for a job these days, and if it wasn’t for our third bro pulling some strings, even Francis wouldn’t have found a job. But look at him now, he works in an office for an insurance company, isn’t that great?” The third sister-in-law boasted proudly.

“Queenie’s job is even better! Although her job is quite laborious, it holds the infinite potential for future developments! Francis is still young for his age; being able to live so comfortably is not a good thing!” The second sister-in-law scoffed and replied.

“I’m not looking for a job,” Gerald said, cutting the conversation.

“You can’t afford to not get a job! Are you planning to get by your days with just your lottery money and do nothing? You’ll starve to death sooner or later, and besides, without a decent job, who’s going to look up to you?” The second sister-in-law sneered.

“Yeah, I’m afraid it’s quite difficult for someone like Gerald to find a good job, but hey, our company is short of a toilet cleaner. I remembered last time Aunt Lacy, who cleaned the hallways, said their cleaning company was short of cleaners, so she told us to help her find one. Although the job seems pretty shabby, it is still a job nonetheless!”

Queenie spoke up; her voice was cynical.

“Hmmm, Queenie is right. Gerald, if you want to find a job, I can persuade Aunt Lacy with some gifts to get you the position!” The second sister-in-law nodded in agreement.

“Yeah, that won’t be a problem!” Francis chuckled as he, too, agreed.

When they first met a while back, Francis and Queenie were still on probation.

After Gerald had embarrassed them with tens of thousands of dollars, their pride was hurt. But now, after entering the working world, their knowledge had widened. To them, Gerald was still a nobody who had just won a small lottery.

They continued to take turns to throw jabs at Gerald.

Gerald lowered his head as he ate his food.

After a while, he finally spoke up, "My birthday is in another three or four days. I've invited my friends to come over, and I'm treating them to dinner; all of you should join us too." Gerald extended the invitation in a low voice.

"Huh, okay... Well, Gerald, it's not like we like to ridicule you or anything; you may have some money, but why even bother holding a birthday celebration? It's not like you can compare with others anyway!"

"We'll see when the time comes; we'll go if we're free."

"Yeah, we're all kind of busy at the moment; we don't have time for your birthday!"

"Oh right, during my meeting today, my leader told us there will be a major event happening in just a few days. It's said that all the leaders from the province will be attending this event, so we've got many things to handle. I'm sorry, but I have no time to spare." Francis said.

Queenie, too was busy with something else.

Gerald caught on to their intentions immediately. None of them would spare even a minute for his birthday.

"Yeah, no problem, if you're not busy, you can come over. Just saying. That's all." Gerald replied.

Everyone stopped talking at that instant.

“Gerald, you can ask your friends to come over. We’ll still celebrate with you, and I’ll even prepare a big feast!” Mr. and Mrs. Winters said in unison.

Upon hearing their words, Gerald’s heart warmed up, “Okay, I’ll let them have a taste of your cooking Mrs. Winters! I’ll get the groceries!”

They then continued briefing chatting.

Once dinner was over, the brothers drove home.

Everyone was ready to go to bed. Suddenly, Mr. Winters called out to Gerald.

“Gerald, wait a minute! I’ve something important that I must tell you!”

Chapter 535

“Hmm? What is it, Mr. Winters?”

Mr. Winters tugged at Gerald’s sleeve and sat him down.

“Of course, it’s something good! When you called earlier today, I told you about it, but I figured it’s better to tell you in person. It’s not the wisest to talk about it with my sons around.”

“Ohh, please go ahead then, Mr. Winters!”

“I used to work in the mines and befriended this guy. After all these years of moving around, when I went to town some time ago, I just happened to run into him, and we chatted for a bit, you know, to catch up. He told me that his granddaughter is almost the same age as you, around the same age group as you and Francis!”

“She graduated from college a year earlier than you, and now her family seems anxious to find her a boyfriend. Her family is well-off and rich, so there aren’t any particular criteria needed. I just thought of

introducing her to you, as the family has two daughters, and she's the eldest!" Mr. Winters explained excitedly.

"So, I wanted to discuss with you about arranging a date between the two of you for tomorrow! I'm not going to let Francis know about this matter, and you shouldn't tell him either!"

Gerald could see what Mr. Winters had in mind. Seeing that Gerald had difficulty looking for jobs, Mr. Winters wanted to help Gerald matchmake.

He did all these for Gerald, and his intentions were pure and honest.

It was just like the last time with Xeno.

But Gerald already had Mila Smith, and the previous dates that were matchmade to him did not go well at all. Gerald was traumatized by the girls, so he really repulsed the idea of it.

"Mr. Winters, there's no need for that, but thank you for your kind consideration! Now, if you'll excuse me..."

"What's there to be afraid of? You can mind your own business later, but I think you should meet up with her! It doesn't matter if it will work out, at least get to know her!" Mr. Winters wondered in bewilderment.

This scenario felt almost identical to the last time with Xeno.

Under this particular circumstance, Gerald could not tell Mr. Winters that he was actually well-off, and there was no need to help him find a partner.

He could neither accept nor reject that offer, and neither could he upset Mr. Winters.

"Alright, fine, I'll meet up with her tomorrow." Gerald nodded.

“Great, I’ll give her a call then!”

Mr. Winters eagerly grabbed his phone to make the call. He then returned minutes later in high spirits.

“Okay, luckily, my friend’s daughter is available tomorrow! I told him that both of you will be meeting and none of us will be tagging along. This is her number, give her a call tomorrow. Wherever you guys are going to meet, that’s up to you. Try to sweet-talk her, okay? Her name is Michelle Waxham, just call her Elle. Her mom is a teacher, so she is a sweet one with good manners.” Mr. Winters said excitedly.

“Alright then, I’ll give her a call later!”

After chatting with Mr. Winters, Gerald went home.

He pondered for a bit before he decided to make the phone call.

“Hello, who are you looking for?”

A lady’s voice was heard from the other end.

“Hi, I’m Gerald; you must be Elle? It was Mr. Winters who suggested that I should give you a call!”

It was Gerald’s first time to call someone this way. He tried to act a little cheerful and generous, but he still sounded a little restrained.

“Oh, oh, yes, I know,” Elle replied politely. She then waited for Gerald to continue speaking.

“Are you busy?” Gerald asked.

“I’m good, no worries, you may continue!”

“Which middle school did you attend before? Was it the First, middle school or Second middle school?”
Gerald tried to create conversations with random topics.

“I attended Second middle school; what about you?”

“I attended the First! So, are you free tomorrow? There’s a new Domino’s that just opened in town; why don’t we meet there and hang out?”

Gerald did not know what else to talk about anymore, so he went straight to the point.

“Sure!”

“Well, you get some rest early!”

“Mhmm, you too!”

Chapter 536

The both of them then hung up the phone.

Gerald felt a slight pang of guilt. He felt sorry for Mila.

But on second thought, he knew that this was not for real. They were just going to meet each other for a while, and that was not a big deal.

On the other hand, in the room.

Michelle hung up the phone and began removing her makeup.

Her younger sister, Xabrina was eavesdropping on their conversation while lying on the bed.

She then chuckled. "Sister, so you're going to meet each other tomorrow. By the way, what's his name? Do you know him?"

"He's Gerald Crawford. He studied in First Middle School before. Hmm... but why do I feel that his name is so strangely familiar? Seems like I've heard it somewhere before." Michelle said as she continued removing her makeup.

Both sisters had quite a charm to themselves.

Xabrina scoffed and laughed, "Geez, how much dumber can you get? Sister, he's one year younger than you, and he studied in First Middle School. You can simply just get somebody to inquire about him from your juniors in the school. Then you'll know more about him, right?"

"You're right. I'll inquire about it then!" Michelle jumped up and immediately started making phone calls.

She called a few female juniors to inquire about Gerald.

The moment she was done, her face turned pale.

"D*mn it! How dare grandpa introduce such a person to me?" Michelle voiced out anxiously.

"Eh? Sister, what's wrong?"

"Sister, you don't know about this. Gerald is an infamous poor student back in First Middle School. His family is so poor, so much so that his parents and elder sister are out there doing manual labor. Besides, when he was studying in middle school, he was always bullied by the others. No wonder he couldn't find a job even after he graduated from university. His family is so poor. Certainly he couldn't find a good job!"

Michelle cried out.

“D*mn! What are you gonna do then? You’ve promised him. Besides, it’s not like you’re able to bypass grandpa either!”

Her sister replied, feeling equally exasperated.

“I don’t care. Even if I can’t find myself a boyfriend, I’ll definitely never get together with someone as such. Oh my goodness! If my classmates or best friends knew that I’m dating this infamous poor student, we would definitely be a laughing stock in no time!”

Michelle said in a worried tone.

Since she was just a girl, she would certainly care about what the others’ opinions were.

Everyone wanted to find themselves the kind of boyfriend who would be the talk of the town, in a good way. The more people praised their boyfriends, the happier the girls would feel.

“But Gerald turned out to be like this... Ahh! I don’t want to think about it anymore! I need to go and tell mother all about it.”

Desperate and lost, Michelle called her mother.

She then told her mother all about Gerald.

Her mother was being put in a difficult position too.

“Oh dear, that won’t do. Dating him is as good as telling the rest that my daughter couldn’t find herself a boyfriend and just picked some random guy. How could this be?! No way! It’s better to reject him firmly!” Her mother said.

“But mom, you do know how grandpa’s temper is. He likes to keep his reputation. If he’s being humiliated in front of his friends, he might not be able to eat or sleep well. Then Dad will be angry with you too, right?”

Xabrina asked worriedly.

Her mother let out a loud sigh. "Then what should we do? Okay, how about this. Elle, just go and meet him tomorrow. Immediately reject him and come home!"

Her mother suggested.

"But I'm afraid that I'll bump into my classmates!" Michelle said.

The thought never occurred to Michelle previously. But now, Michelle cared about that a lot.

"What if my friends or classmates see us?" She cried out.

Her mother felt anxious too. "What can we do now, though? It seems like you don't want to go!"

"Hey, mom, I have a solution. Why not, let's ask our little sister to go then. She's two years younger than him. Besides, she's quite cheerful. It'll be easier for her to reject him!"

Her mother said, "That'll do too. Xabrina, just go there on behalf of your sister. After all, you're more eloquent than I am!"

Xabrina nodded slowly and replied, "I can do that. But sister, after the university term reopens and I become a junior, please give me more pocket money!"

"No problem!"

The entire family smiled as they were happy with their decision.

Xabrina sneered. She then thought to herself:

'How could a man like him ever dream of marrying a pretty girl? I'll humiliate him to the core tomorrow. Otherwise, I'm not ever Xabrina!'

Chapter 537

The next day arrived.

It was the day of the blind date, which was arranged by Mr. Winters.

Although Gerald did not know what to expect of the outcome, he still took the effort to do some preparations since he had given his promise to Mr. Winters. He decided to head to Domino's earlier.

But something happened unexpectedly.

He spotted a girl sitting alone and drinking coke. There were chicken wings and French fries on her table. At that moment, she was swinging her fair legs, and it seemed like she was waiting for someone.

'Could it be her?'

Gerald thought to himself.

The girl then put down her fries. She was munching while typing on the phone.

Just at that moment, Gerald received a text message too. It was from Michelle.

"Are you here yet?"

Again, Gerald thought to himself: 'As expected, it is that girl.'

On first impressions, she was quite pretty.

So Gerald went ahead and slid into the seat opposite her.

“What... are you doing?” That girl was clearly shocked.

She looked at Gerald in a daze.

“Are you here for a blind date?” Gerald asked her.

“What blind date? Are you out of your mind?” The girl stared at Gerald, her eyes frozen with fear.

“Eh? Wait, you’re not Michelle? But didn’t you send a text message to me just now?” Gerald was stupefied.

“I don’t know who Michelle is. I was sending a Line message to my boyfriend. Do you understand?” The girl replied in a shrill tone.

“Oh, I’m so sorry. I made a mistake!”

Gerald stood up in awkwardness.

‘D*mn it! If I knew earlier, I would have called first.’ He cringed.

As he was about to call Michelle, suddenly someone tapped him on his shoulders lightly.

He turned around and was stunned to see another gorgeous girl in front of him.

She blinked her large eyes and looked right into Gerald’s.

“Are you Gerald? Are you here to meet someone?” The girl carefully asked.

“Yes, I am. And you are...?”

“Xabrina!”

“Eh?”

“I’m Xabrina’s elder sister—Michelle!” Xabrina quickly concealed the blunder.

She then sneered. “Did you mistake someone else as me just now?” Xabrina asked him in a slight contemptuous tone.

Well, that was the plain truth.

The moment she entered Domino’s, she was just in time to witness the whole scene unfold.

It was too awkward.

Hence, Xabrina just stood aside and watched from afar. She did not go over to greet him as she felt extremely awkward.

She even concluded to herself that Gerald was indeed strange.

But Xabrina decided to hurry up since she needed only less than five minutes to send him away and wrap up this issue for her sister.

Gerald sat across from Xabrina.

Gerald only needed to take a few glances at Xabrina to know that she was probably an empty flower pot—pretty on the outside, but nothing more than that.

On the other hand, Xabrina locked her gaze on Gerald and sized him up.

She had some inner thoughts as she stared at him:

'Gerald is actually quite good-looking, to be honest. If only his family background were better, it would have been excellent for him to be my brother-in-law.'

'But unfortunately, he's so poor. How would my sister ever fall in love with him?

'In fact, if it weren't for grandpa forcing my sister to get married so soon, certainly my sister would not be so anxious about looking for a boyfriend.'

'Plus, there are indeed so many bees trying to gain my sister's attention, just that she doesn't fancy any of them!'

"So, I've heard about your condition. You still haven't found a job, right? That means that you don't have any salary. Besides, I heard that you'd bought a house in Serene County. But I've been transferred to work in Mayberry, so it means that I'll be working in Mayberry soon. What are your plans in terms of living arrangements?"

Xabrina asked him.

She thought that it would be better to get straight to the point.

"Is that so? If you're talking about Mayberry, I do have a house there."

"What? You own a house in Mayberry? How large is it?"

Xabrina asked curiously.

"I'm not too sure about the details. Besides, I never stay there!" Gerald chuckled.

Chapter 538

Gerald realized after a while that her intention of the meet up wasn't for the blind date.

Besides, Gerald himself was unwilling to attend the blind date too.

So he decided to tease her, thinking that he might be able to get it over and done with.

"What are you pretending here? If you really have a house there, why don't you go and stay there?" Xabrina sneered.

"I do own a house there. It's just that I don't have the luxury of time to go and stay. Besides, it's on top of the mountain. I can't get used to it if I stay there alone. That's a place for my future wife and me!"

Gerald smiled and replied.

"Oh, gosh! It's on top of the mountain. Are you guarding the forest for anybody? Did they buy you a small house there?"

Xabrina chuckled cynically, her voice dripping with contempt.

"Then do you own a car? Let me tell you if I go to work in Mayberry, I won't ride any car which costs less than forty-five thousand dollars." She continued haughtily.

"I have a car too, but I park it at the foot of the mountain."

"At the foot of the mountain. What kind of car is that?"

"A Lamborghini!" Gerald replied.

Xabrina scoffed. "D*mn it, oh my god. Are you out of your mind?! Gerald!"

She could not put up with it anymore.

At first, she thought that Gerald might have owned a house and a car in Mayberry.

It turns out that he seemed to be only boasting about himself.

'I'm afraid that he doesn't know that my sister and I'm rather aware of his family background and condition.' She thought to herself.

"I'm telling the truth. It's not a lie at all. I can't do anything anyways if you choose not to believe me."

Gerald shrugged his shoulders in resignation.

He felt that he took the blind date quite seriously. At least if Mr. Winters asked him about it in the future, he would be able to give him a proper answer.

"Look, let me just get straight to the point. My family won't ever be in the liking of people like you. You know, I gave you the benefit of the doubt and thought that you might be an honest man since you're poor. So I thought it'll be fine to give you a chance to prove yourself. But now, let's just forget about it. You s*umbag!"

Xabrina spat.

At that moment, she wanted to get up and leave immediately.

But she froze and suddenly thought:

'F*ck! I came here early, and I even put my makeup on. But if I don't even get to drink anything and just leave like that just because I got annoyed by him, that's a real loss.'

'The most important thing is that I need to carry out this task for my sister correctly.

'If Grandpa knows that I left early after listening to him only for such a short while, he'll certainly be extremely angry. Besides, Grandpa still doesn't know that I replaced my sister for her.'

She was afraid that Gerald would make irresponsible remarks with Mr. Winters once he returned home.

Hence, she decided to let Gerald retreat on his account in the face of such difficult circumstances.

"Aren't you leaving?" Seeing that she sat down again, Gerald asked her in shock.

"Who said that I'm leaving? I haven't eaten anything yet since early morning. I want to have a meal. Besides, we met each other for the first time today. Shouldn't you be giving me a treat?"

Xabrina crossed her arms around her chest and said.

"Oh! Yeah, sure, no problem!"

Gerald lowered his head and began thinking: 'Why is she such a pain to deal with?'

"I want a hamburger, French fries, chicken wings, some fried chicken, and a pizza. I want to eat all of these!" Xabrina pressed her lips proudly and ordered.

"Can you eat that much?" Gerald was shocked.

"Hey, look, just say it whether you're giving me a treat or not."

"Fine! Yes, it's my treat!"

Gerald then went over to the counter to order the food and brought them in a tray.

He just stared at her as she ate her food.

Gerald was thinking of a way to make her hate him so that she would just leave immediately.

In that case, he would be able to explain himself.

Both Gerald and Xabrina had their thoughts and plans in mind.

At that very moment.

“Hey! It’s really you! We were looking for the outside just now. It really seems to be you!”

Two men and two women entered the restaurant. They tapped on Xabrina’s shoulders as she was gobbling down the hamburger.

It startled Xabrina.

“You... Why are you here?”

Xabrina blushed as she quickly responded.

Chapter 539

“It’s just a coincidence that we decided to come here for our meals too. Bree, who is this?”

Suddenly, one of the men looked at Gerald and asked.

“Oh! He’s my friend. No worries, if you’re busy, just go ahead and get your meals first!”

Hearing that they had addressed her with her actual name, she grew too nervous.

They were not just any strangers but her classmates from her middle school. Besides, they were currently studying at the same university. It was beyond her expectations that she would have bumped into them today since she was quite afraid of a situation like that might happen.

“C’mon, don’t be like this, Bree. Hurry up and introduce him to us. What kind of a friend is this? Besides, he ordered so much delicious food for you. We must know who he is!”

They pleaded excitedly.

“Bree? Isn’t your name Michelle?” Gerald asked in confusion.

“Michelle? That’s Bree’s elder sister. Eh? What’s happening? Wait, you don’t know Xabrina? Then what are you doing here?”

They asked, looking astounded.

“Gerald, just shut up!” Xabrina quickly stood up nervously.

She then dragged the others aside.

It seemed like she wanted to explain the situation to them.

But, Gerald seemed to realize something afterward.

He vaguely remembered how Mr. Winters had mentioned that Michelle had a younger sister who was around three years younger.

Could it be that she’s Michelle’s younger sister—Xabrina?

'So does it mean that Michelle didn't come for the blind date today? But instead, she asked her sister to take her place?'

'D*mn it! No wonder she didn't even show the slightest bit of sincerity in today's blind date. She even dared to ask me tricky questions about houses and cars rudely.'

A moment later, Xabrina returned with the others. Her facial expression looked tight and worsened.

"Yes, that's right. I'm Xabrina. Michelle is my elder sister. But do you know why my sister asked me to come? She told me to be here to sound you out. My sister took this matter seriously when Grandpa told her about this, but what you did today is indeed very disappointing. I even told my friends about what you just told me, and even they could prove that you're just indeed boasting white lies about yourself!"

"Besides, your family's situation is even worse than we imagine. Am I right, you tell me." Xabrina rambled on and blamed Gerald.

"That's true. It turns out to be a blind date. Hey, bro, do you know how beautiful Michelle is? How could you even afford to want to be with Michelle, given the kind of person you are?"

A man taunted coldly.

Someone else sneered. "Michelle was the beauty of our school back when we were studying in Second Middle School. How about you? You're just a laughing stock from First Middle School. Hah, how well you planned it out, eh! You sucked up to the older generation and got them to be the matchmakers for you. But have you ever thought about it? If Michelle gets together with you, how are you going to support her?"

Another woman said something else too, "Let's not forget about this too. Just look at the bag I'm carrying now. It's worth a few hundred dollars. Certainly, Michelle wants something better. How can you ever afford that?"

The women started to condemn him.

“Darling, I like the watch you wear better. This type of watch costs more than a thousand dollars. You’ll feel quite dignified if you wear that when you go out!”

A woman locked her arms in another man’s arm intimately.

She then purposely revealed the watch around his wrist.

After that, she looked at Gerald and said, “Gerald, don’t you wear a watch when you go out? Don’t you know that wearing a watch is a sign of maturity for men? Even though you’re unable to afford a good watch like this, I’m sure you’re able to buy a watch which costs only a couple of dollars, right?”

“That’s true! How dare you come out for a blind date with Michelle like this?”

It seemed as though they had discussed well amongst themselves on how to ridicule Gerald. He was their primary target.

Everything that they said sounded overwhelmingly vain and materialistic.

They were just a bunch of rich, young people who were ignorant and mischievous. Gerald had seen much of such show-offs and empty talks when the others showed off their wealth.

Despite knowing that, he still chose not to humiliate them and kept silent.

Whatever had happened was precisely what he wanted since they did not want him to be dating Michelle anyway.

Gerald just wanted to get away and forget about the entire ordeal.

But at that moment.

Chapter 540

As they were mocking Gerald, they suddenly stopped talking. They then looked outside in shock.

Two Yamaha motorcycles were parked at the restaurant. There were three men and a woman who got down from the motorcycles.

It seemed like they were going to have their meals in Domino's too.

"D*mn! Xabrina, look! It's that b*tch, Lily!"

"F*ck! When we were studying in middle school, you had a bad relationship with her. And what a coincidence that the both of you even went to the same university after. You even beat her up a while back. What are you going to do if she sees you later?"

"Oh, god. That tall dude is her boyfriend, and he's a thug. He has quite the influence around here. Bree, hurry up and hide from her!"

Their state of arrogance immediately changed to anxiousness.

Xabrina sneered. "Why should I hide from her? I don't have to be afraid of her. I don't think that she'll dare to do anything to me!"

At that moment, Xabrina did not have the time to bother about Gerald anymore. She crossed her arms around her chest, arrogantly, and glared at Lily, who had just entered the place.

"Does Xabrina bear some grudges against that girl?"

'Ooh... it looks like they're about to get into a fight. What am I even doing lingering here... this feels so awkward.' Gerald wanted to leave.

"D*mn! Well, well. It seems like enemies are surely bound to bump into each other. Xabrina, fancy seeing you here too!"

At first glance, Lily immediately spotted Sabrina and called out smugly.

“Franklin, this is the girl I told you about. Wanna know what happened in the university? Just because there was a man who liked her and was on her side, she slapped me when I got into a fight with her!”

Lily blurted the details of that past incident on the spot.

Xabrina did not give in either. The moment she saw Lily, her fury just grew.

It wasn't long before they were already at each other's throats.

Gerald merely listened to their quarrel from the sides.

He gathered from the rough observation that they had quite a good relationship with each other in middle school. However, they fell in love with the same guy at the same time, who was their classmate back then.

It all happened during their middle school, and everyone was in the phase of rebellion. If they were to compete for a boyfriend, the girls were much fiercer.

Xabrina was the teacher's daughter. Hence she was quite famous at that time. She was not the typical miss goody two shoes, so she redeemed herself by having many friends she treated like her own brothers and sisters.

At the same time, Lily also knew a lot of senior girls from the society.

So the best friends ultimately turned against each other, and they even made an appointment to fight live on a broadcast platform on the internet.

Since then, they held deep resentment toward each other.

It lasted until they went to university. There was a rather powerful and influential rich heir who was trying to gain Xabrina's affections at that time.

Xabrina started finding fault with Lily and beat her up. She always bullied Lily.

They then returned home during the summer break. Lily wanted to take revenge on Xabrina.

“Don’t worry, Lily. Is she the girl you’ve been talking about right? Go ahead and slap her now. I just want to see who dares to make a move! I’m Franklin Lockwood. I’m sure you’ve heard of me. Don’t you?”

Franklin flashed a smile filled with menace.

The three gangsters were around three years younger than Gerald. Besides, their hairstyles and the way they dressed stood out quite a bit. To put it simply, they looked as though they weren’t part of the societal norms.

But they were so slim.

Gerald did not bother meddling in such affairs which concerned those bunch of ignorant youth.

So he was about to leave soon.

“Let me tell you. I’ll definitely call Jimmy over if you dare to beat me up!”

Xabrina shrieked.

She noticed that Gerald was about to leave and cursed again.

“D*mn it, Gerald. You never fail to impress me. I’m not afraid even though I’m a girl. What are you afraid of? They want to beat me up, not you. What a coward!” She scowled and mocked him.

“I’ve got some other business to deal with. I don’t have time to play along with you. Who’s the coward here? I just choose not to bother about this.” He retorted and continued walking away.

“Fine! Go ahead and call him over so that I can take a good look at him. Let me tell you, my elder brother is a big gangster in Mayberry too. His name is Yale. Come at us if you dare. I’m not afraid of you! Besides, if it doesn’t concern the lot of you, get the hell out of here!” Franklin smiled coldly and replied.

Gerald had now reached the door. The moment he heard the name, he stopped right in his tracks and froze, stunned.

He then put one of his hands in his pocket and walked back over to them.

He tapped Franklin’s shoulders slightly. “Bro, you mentioned just now. Who’s your elder brother?”

Chapter 541

“My elder brother is Yale Lockwood, and he studied at First Middle School before. What’s wrong? Are you afraid? Hah. If you are, hurry up and get lost from my sight. Or you’re all dead meat when he has returned!”

Franklin stretched his neck and replied, his voice booming with dominance.

“Well, go f*ck yourself!”

Gerald’s eyes became bloodshot. He then raised his leg and threw a powerful kick right at Franklin’s stomach. He immediately fell to the floor at the blow, wailing in pain.

Although Gerald might seem frail on the outside, he was actually quite strong. Back then, he used to be quite a good fighter when he fought the others with Xeno.

Xeno got into more fights than him. Gerald only fought once for Xeno’s sake.

Basically, both his arms and legs were really quite strong.

When he heard that Franklin's brother was Yale, he became instantly infuriated.

Besides, Gerald was not afraid of anything now.

He then picked up a tool, stormed over toward the other two, and smashed them with it.

The three others were extremely skinny, and it was inevitable that they would have been beaten into a pulp by Gerald.

Xabrina was stunned when the scene unfolded before her eyes.

At that spur of the moment, witnessing how masculine and heroic Gerald was, she found him to be rather charming.

"Gerald, help me give them a good beating!" Xabrina shouted.

On the other hand, when Lily saw them getting into a fight, she took her chance, grabbed a vase beside her, and threw it at Xabrina.

Both girls started getting into a fight too.

Gerald totally transformed into someone violent and fierce.

His eyes turned bloodshot.

Who was Yale?

He was as good as a demon in Gerald's heart. Because of him, Gerald was unable to get rid of self-reproach feeling after all those years.

That was true. Yale was the culprit who got a gang of people to block off Gerald by surrounding him before beating him up into a pulp back in middle school. Yale went to such drastic measures all for a girl he liked.

He acted recklessly just because his family was wealthy and influential. Besides, his family had a lot of subordinates too.

It was after school when they bashed Gerald up. But luckily, that afternoon, Xeno came to his rescue as the both of them took on a dozen men.

That group of men was holding stools during the entire fight. They cornered Gerald and started beating him up, and Xeno appeared at that very instance with a knife in his hand.

Gerald would not be filled with so much hatred if that incident ended there and then.

Not long after, Xeno's family was destroyed by Yale's father and his subordinates. Xeno's father was a truck driver, but he acted rashly during that incident when his family was being trashed. Yale's men broke his legs, and just like that, as the breadwinner of the family, his life was completely ruined.

After the dust had settled, Xeno went to a vocational school. Despite being in a different school, Yale and his subordinates still found a way to drag Xeno out regularly to wallop him.

Fortunately, Xeno knew a friend from a society he treated as his brother, and he learnt how to repair cars through him. It was how Xeno got past his days and that was how things turned out in the end.

This unfortunate event on Xeno's family was also one reason why Gerald became extremely wrathful.

'Hah, so this guy even claims that he's going to call up Yale to come and beat us up. Well bring it on, I want to meet this motherf*cker too!'

Gerald growled below his breath as an unfamiliar sense of fury boiled within him. He did not bother about anything else anymore.

“Oh! My leg!” Suddenly, Xabrina screamed in pain.

It turned out that she had accidentally kicked the damaged vase, which fell on the floor, and her calf was cut.

The entire ruckus had become quite a huge mess, and the manager of Domino’s had immediately reported the incident to the police.

Upon realizing that, Lily did not dare to do anything anymore.

She quickly dragged Franklin, who was still clutching his stomach in pain, and dashed out of the restaurant in a blink of an eye.

On the other hand, Xabrina’s classmates, who were there previously, had long disappeared, clearing themselves out of trouble.

“Gerald, come and give me a hand. Bring me to the hospital to bandage my wound. If there’s a scar, it’ll be over for me!” Xabrina winced but could only ask for help from Gerald.

After all, she still had lingering thoughts that Gerald might have fought on her behalf just now.

‘You’re indeed such a handful!’ Gerald cursed, leaving the thought to himself.

Despite his reluctance, he helped Xabrina up and gently took her to the clinic just beside to get her wound bandaged.

Luckily, her wound was not too serious, and it was just a minor cut.

Xabrina was propped up against the hospital bed. She leaned backward as she smiled and looked at Gerald curiously.

She suddenly let out a soft chuckle.

“What are you laughing at?” Gerald asked frowning.

Chapter 542

“I really got a wrong impression of you today. I looked into you before coming here today. You seemed to be always bullied back when you were in middle school. Besides, when I first met you, I felt as though you were the type of person who was honest but just ignorant and gullible. Did you know that?”

“But it never occurred to me, the extent of your strength when you get triggered. The three of them didn’t even have the chance to counterattack. You don’t even know how fierce you were just now. You were so manly!”

Xabrina used her leg to nudge Gerald gingerly.

It was true. Xabrina indeed saw Gerald in a different light now. She even felt slightly touched too.

Generally, girls liked masculine men, especially those who exuded that to protect their girls.

Gerald indeed had just that vibe.

“Nah, you don’t know anything. I’m not usually like this.” Gerald said, shaking his head.

“I know that. I can see that too!”

Xabrina pursed her lips slightly.

“That’s enough. If you’re okay, you can go home on your own. I still need to return to that place.”

Gerald turned around and was about to leave.

“Why are you going back there?” Xabrina immediately questioned.

“I ruined too much furniture there. It’s only the right that I should compensate for that!” Gerald replied.

“Hey, wait a moment, Gerald. I still have something I want to say.”

“Is there anything else?”

“I just wanted to say that you’re quite a good person, Gerald.” Xabrina tone was low and serious for once.

Gerald chuckled at the remark.

He bitterly laughed it off and quickly left.

‘When I first met him, I didn’t feel such a thing. But now, why do I feel like he’s quite a catch?’

Xabrina muttered to herself as she observed his strong, well-developed back.

But as soon as she thought about how Gerald fought the others for her sake just now, she smiled sweetly again.

It was almost noon when Xabrina reached home. Luckily, her parents were not at home. Only her sister was there.

“What took you so long? I called you, but your phone was switched off. Didn’t you tell me that you would resolve it in twenty minutes?”

Michelle asked impatiently.

Suddenly, Michelle realized that her sister was limping and her calf was bandaged. She immediately gaped, stunned.

“Sister, what happened to you?! Did you get into a fight with someone?”

“Yes, sister. I fought with Lily. She brought the others to get back at me!” Xabrina whimpered.

Michelle spat and rolled her eyes in disbelief.

“That b*tch! What she has to be so smug about? How about that extremely poor loser? Have you met him?”

Michelle’s thoughts immediately went back to Gerald.

“Sister, why address him that way? You haven’t even gotten to meet him in person yet. Why do you talk about him in such a mean way?” Xabrina felt quite uneasy listening to her sister ridicule such harsh words.

She felt quite upset if anyone, even including her sister, condemned him since she discovered how nice Gerald was.

“D*mn! What’s wrong with you? Have you met him? What does he look like? Is he handsome? Is he vulgar? Don’t tell me that he’s ugly.” Michelle quizzed.

“I don’t know. I’m tired, and I want to go and rest in my bedroom now. Besides, I’m no longer helping you with this issue in the future.”

Xabrina was feeling down and limped away to her bedroom quietly.

‘What’s wrong with her, man?’

Seeing her sister's attitude, Michelle felt confused.

On the other hand, Gerald had returned to Domino's to settle the mess.

At that moment, he received a call from Mr. Winters, asking him about the blind date.

Gerald claimed that he would tell him all about it when he returned home. After sorting things out at the restaurant, he immediately headed back to Mr. Winter's place.

But when he reached the porch, he saw Queenie standing by the door. It seemed as though she was waiting for someone.

The moment she saw Gerald, she quickly walked toward him.

"Oh my god! I've been waiting for you for sooo long!! And you're finally back now. Come here. I need to tell you something..."

Chapter 543

"What's wrong?" Gerald asked her, taken aback.

Queenie said, "Are you free tomorrow?"

"Why? I may have to go and buy some ingredients tomorrow."

The day after tomorrow was his birthday. Mrs. Winters was going to cook a meal, so he could not afford to let her go out there by herself and use her own money to buy the ingredients. He wanted to make sure that he bought the ingredients himself.

Queenie sneered.

“You’ve been eating what my grandpa and grandma have been eating for these past few days. Why the sudden need to go and buy the ingredients? By the way, your birthday is the day after tomorrow, isn’t it? So anyways, buying ingredients shouldn’t be that much of a hassle. Now, I have something good awaiting you. Just put all other things aside.”

“Wow, you’ve actually got something good in store for me?” Gerald chuckled bitterly and sarcastically.

Although he grew up with Queenie, she had always been unfriendly toward Gerald since they were kids, even until now as grown-ups. Her siblings always bullied him.

Gerald greatly resented them when he was young. But as years passed, he just took it with a pinch of salt and would only be slightly angry if Queeny condemned him.

Usually, he would not bear grudges against her. It was all for the sake of Mr. and Mrs. Winters.

Queenie smirked.

“What do you mean by that? You don’t even know how nice I’m to you. We’re going to the hot springs in Fuenti tomorrow to enjoy ourselves. We want to bring you along. We haven’t even gotten a chance to bring you out for any fun ever since you got back. Now Fuenti has been developed for tourism. That place is rather nice now!”

“Wow, you’re actually being so nice and taking me out to have fun?” Gerald raised his eyebrows.

Fuenti was the town where Bianca was at. That quaint little town was beside mountains and rivers.

Those were some of the reasons for the development.

Gerald wanted to go there too to just take some time to have fun.

But he was rather puzzled as he was being invited by Queenie all of a sudden.

“Nonsense! So are you coming or what? I’ll even treat you to a meal.”

Queenie hugged her shoulders and exclaimed smugly.

Gerald shook his head. “Forget it. Thank you! I’m not going!”

“Huh? What?” It did not occur to Queenie that Gerald would reject her.

‘Shouldn’t he feel scared but honored, given his personality?’ She wondered, her brows crunched up in displeasure.

“Queenie, is Gerald here? Eh? Why are you guys standing outside when you’re home? Hurry up! Lunch is ready. Come in and have lunch now. We can talk about the progress of that incident too.”

At that same time, Mr. Winters had walked out of the house and beckoned for both Gerald and Queeny to enter.

But Queenie looked cold, and she did not budge.

“What’s wrong, Queenie? Who offended you again, since you’re such an arrogant and young woman?” Mr. Winters smiled bitterly.

She sneered. “Who else could it be? It’s Gerald!”

“Nonsense! Why would Gerald offend you?”

“But it’s true! I tried to be nice to him; I invited him to have some fun in Fuentin. But looks like he’s unwilling to accept my kind offer. He said that he wouldn’t go!”

Queenie replied.

“Gerald, if that’s true, why not just go and have some fun with Queenie. She may just want to have a good time with you. The scenery at the hot springs is rather nice. If you’re not occupied or busy, just go.”

Mr. Winters did not think that there was anything wrong with that. He felt that his granddaughter had finally come to her senses.

Seeing how Gerald and Queenie were getting along with each other well, Mr. Winters was undoubtedly more than happy.

“Ahh... fine. I’ll go tomorrow then.”

Hearing how Mr. Winters had put it, Gerald did not say anything more and simply agreed.

“Hmph!”

Queenie rolled her eyes at Gerald before entering the house.

He might not be able to go and get the ingredients the next day since he was to go out with Queenie, so Gerald went to the local supermarket that afternoon itself to buy them instead.

The next day.

It was early in the morning, and Queenie took Gerald along to their said destination.

She drove a Passat, and it was his father’s car.

She then took Gerald along and started their journey toward Fuentin.

Gerald definitely did not want to take the seat beside the driver.

He felt that it was rather stuffy in the car.

Chapter 544

Hence, he rolled down the window since he wanted to get some fresh air.

But much to his surprise, the window was rolled up again the moment he rolled it down.

He then turned to look at it and realized that it was Queenie who rolled the window up.

'D*mn! That b*tch!'

Gerald cursed under his breath. He tried to only roll down the window slightly, but Queenie immediately rolled it up again.

"What are you doing?"

Gerald asked exasperatedly, feeling frustrated.

"Huh! I'm about to ask you that. I've already rolled down the car windows in front. Why did you have to open all of them? What if there's dust coming into the car? Have you ever even sat in a car before?"

Queenie scoffed back, her tone full of contempt.

Right at that moment, her phone rang.

"Okay fine, Yolanda. I'll go and pick you up right away. Just wait for me. Yes. Didn't I tell you about it last night? I've got someone with me. Later, we'll let him help us carry our bags when we climb up the mountain later. You can just focus your entire attention on trying to gain Jarvis's affection. You totally forget about your friends when it comes to somebody you like!

“Sure! We’ll meet each other later. My boyfriend? He has his car. He’s driving his car and going there now. Don’t worry, we’ll certainly help the two of you get together, okay? See you later! Love you!” Queeny then hung up.

Gerald finally understood what was up with Queenie.

“You said that you wanted to bring me out for some fun. And by that, you’re making me carry bags for you? D*mn you, Queenie!”

Gerald yelled in anger.

“Hey, hey, chill man. Why are you so angry? So what if you carry our bags for us? It’s not a big deal. Besides, I’m going to buy you meals today. What are you afraid of? My best friend is trying to do her best to impress her crush today. You better behave yourself. We’re not the important ones today. Both my best friend and Jarvis.”

Queenie warned.

If it was not for the fact that he had already gotten into the car, and Mr. Winters was the one who saw them off, Gerald really wanted just to get off there and then.

But since he had given his promise, it would not look good if he did not uphold his promise.

So he remained silent.

Queenie peeked at Gerald from the rearview mirror and smiled smugly to herself.

She then said, “Gerald, you seem to be angry. Back then you wouldn’t get angry no matter how many things I’ve asked you to carry for me. I know why you feel angry and anxious now. Since primary school, I’ve told you that it’s impossible between the two of us. You’d better not be thinking about that!”

During primary school, both Francis and Queenie went to school in their hometown.

They only went to the county during middle school.

They were quite young at that moment. As such, Gerald too went to school with Xeno and Queenie.

Queenie was a beauty back then, and all the boys idolized her. Whenever they placed 'house,' all of them competed with each other just to be Queenie's husband.

For that matter, Xeno had always fought with Gerald because of Queenie.

But all of those things happened when they were very young. They were just immature kids who didn't know anything at all.

It was evident that Queenie still thought that Gerald had always been in love with her.

She assumed he was feeling quite upset, given that she claimed that she had found herself a boyfriend now.

She thought that she understood Gerald's temperament, given what a loser he was.

But much to her surprise, Gerald had turned away, looking out of the window. He did not even bother talking to her anymore.

Queenie soon went to pick up her best friend—Yolanda.

Yolanda was quite pretty herself too.

He seemed to have met her before when they were in primary school.

It did not occur to him that she would become so beautiful after not meeting her for such a long time.

She was tall and slim, and she had a good body figure.

The minute she got into the car, she glanced at Gerald. She found him to be really familiar looking.

But instead, she did not greet him and just handed her bag to Gerald.

“Hey you, I’ve got sunscreen, my makeup, and some other things in there. I need them all the time. Please carry the bag for me properly later when we’re having fun!”

“Alright!” Gerald nodded impatiently.

He listened quietly as Queenie and Yolanda chatted chirpily with each other throughout the ride.

They discussed in excitement about how Yolanda was trying to gain Jarvis’s affections.

Soon, they reached the entrance of the hot springs.

There were already two handsome guys waiting for them there.

“Queenie, Yolanda, over here!”

Chapter 545

Two men greeted them.

Both Queenie and Yolanda then led Gerald there, who was carrying a large and small bag.

“Why did you arrive so late? Oh, hey, you indeed found someone. That’s good. It seems like we can enjoy ourselves fully today. Bro, thank you for your help.”

A man walked over and held Queenie's waist. He looked at Gerald, smiled, and thanked him.

Another man then took out a pack of Marlboro's and attempted to offer a stick to Gerald.

"Jarvis, are you seriously giving him a cigarette? He's not a smoker. Besides, even if he is, it's not like he can afford such a good one!" Queenie scoffed.

"His name is Gerald, and he's the guy I've told you about. He's going to help us to carry our bags today. We'll only need to buy him a meal this afternoon."

Queenie then held the man's hand and said, "Gerald, this person who just offered you a cigarette is called Jarvis Fish. His parents are working in Water Utilities in the county. This is my boyfriend—Hugo Wayman. His family owns factories."

As Queenie introduced Hugo to Gerald, she carefully observed Gerald's facial expression and reaction.

She was eager to see what kind of response he would have given that she had found herself such a capable boyfriend.

But much to her dismay, Gerald just nodded nonchalantly, unfazed.

Both Hugo and Jarvis were only pretending to be nice to Gerald. In actual fact, they were quite arrogant men who loved extravagance.

How could one tell?

It was because they just handed Gerald a backpack before they went to buy drinks.

In the end, they only bought four bottles of drinks. They did not bother about Gerald.

But after thinking about it, Gerald decided just to let it go. He would just treat it like he was there having fun by himself. He would act as if they did not exist.

Besides, Queenie was there. What more could he do?

“Eh? Hugo, why are there so many people here in the hot springs? There are lanterns and lights everywhere. What are they going to do?”

Queenie asked curiously.

“I was discussing this with Jarvis just now. There are a lot of people here today. The staff looks really busy too. From the way things look, it seems like they will hold a big event, probably at the Hot Spring Hotel. I asked the security guard about it just now. I heard that the hotel has been reserved by a few influential bosses from Mayberry, and they’re going to have a huge, important function here tomorrow! A lot of big shots will be there! Why? Didn’t you hear about it since Touin is so close to Fuentin?”

Hugo said.

“No, we didn’t hear about it. Hmm, but let’s not be bothered. Come! Let’s go and have fun now!”

“Yes, sounds good! Let’s go!”

They then went ahead to buy the tickets.

The price of the tickets in a village town as such was not that expensive. It was only around seven dollars per ticket.

When they reached the ticketing booth, they saw a few people arguing there.

It seemed as though they were quarreling with the ticket seller.

“Why aren’t you selling the tickets today? The five of us purposely came all the way here today! Why can’t you sell us the tickets?”

A girl who seemed to be the leader of the gang asked coldly.

There were three women and two men in that group.

“Yeah! You’ve only posted the news on your official website now. But we’ve already come all the way here!”

“I’m so sorry. We also received a last-minute notice just fifteen minutes ago. Our tourism spot won’t be opened to any tourists. It’s because we need to decorate the venues for many important functions.”

The staff explained the situation patiently.

“But how about the tourists who entered the place just now? I didn’t see you asking them to leave. I don’t care. It was just fifteen minutes ago. You have to let us in!”

“We’re truly sorry...”

That fueled their impatience and anger.

“D*mn! The tourism spot just got closed! F*ck! If I knew earlier, I would’ve bought the tickets with Jarvis just now!”

“Then, Hugo, what should we do now?”

Queenie asked in disappointment.

“How about this? Let me call my dad and ask him to use his connections and give it a try!”

Hugo then whipped out his phone.

Jarvis also said, "I'll call up my dad too. He knows the vice manager here!"

"Alright. Jarvis, I believe in you!"

The guys proceeded to make the phone calls.

Queenie then took some tissue paper and helped to dab away the sweat on Hugo's forehead.

"Hey you, come here, give me my bag!"

Seeing Queenie, Yolanda quickly rushed Gerald over to get her bag.

"D*mn! Hurry up! How could you be so slow?"

Gerald then put the big bag down and started looking for her small bag.

Yolanda immediately scolded him.

"Hurry up and give it to me! You're so slow!"

"Found it!"

Chapter 546

Just as Gerald took the tissues out, Yolanda snatched them out of his hands before rushing toward Jarvis. She wanted to help wipe the sweat off Jarvis's forehead too.

'The audacity of some people!' Gerald thought to himself, irritated.

Yolanda seemed to be quite fond of Jarvis, which was why she had invited Queeny along. Queeny would act as her wingwoman so that she could get closer to Jarvis.

Yolanda knew what she wanted. It was as though anyone other than Jarvis didn't deserve her attention. Even though Gerald had just met her, he was already fairly annoyed with her attitude.

"So, what did your dad say, Hugo?" The question came from Queeny.

"Well, he said that he can't help us... He said he wasn't able to contact anyone here. What about you, Jarvis?" asked Hugo.

As Hugo turned to look at him, Jarvis seemed to have just ended his phone call as well.

"Any luck?" asked Queeny. She was now willing to pay for a ticket since they were no longer for sale. After all, getting a ticket would still be a great honor.

"My dad told me to wait for a bit... He's going to contact the vice manager!" replied Jarvis.

Gerald had been standing at the side and he was beginning to panic as well. Though the springs had been built by his company, he didn't know anyone here. It would appear that they only hired locals, along with the older employees back in Wayfair Mountain.

If it wasn't for the strong security system that had been implemented, Gerald wouldn't be just standing in place doing nothing. However, the sun was blazing and he was carrying a lot of things as well.

Annoyed, Gerald said, "Hey! Are we going in or aren't we? I've been standing under this heat for hours!"

"F*ck you! Jarvis is already contacting some people so just be useful and shut up!" replied Queeny, slightly embarrassed.

Ten more minutes passed and Gerald was beginning to feel extremely dehydrated. There wasn't any shade nearby and Queeny had refused to let him wait in the car as well.

What a pain! Now at his wits' end, Gerald resorted to texting a message to Zack. He told him to have someone escort them. Waiting any longer would just be a waste of time and energy.

Zack replied immediately. "Yes sir! I'll have someone escort you right away!"

Jarvis on the other hand, had just hung up on yet another call.

"So what did he say?" asked Hugo.

"My dad's contacted Mr. Dean, the vice manager here. Both managers are out of town now, so everything depends on Mr. Dean! If he can't help us, nobody can!" replied Jarvis.

The other group was now staring at Jarvis as well. The employee then said, "You guys should just come back next time. The weather's been really hot so getting a heat stroke isn't out of the question if you continue waiting. I can assure you that you won't be able to--"

At that moment, the phone in the ticket counter began to ring, interrupting the employee. "Hello? Ah, I see. Understood!"

After ending the call, she turned to look at the group with a polite smile before saying, "Dear sirs, the manager just called and informed us that you're all welcome inside. All your fees for today will also be covered!"

The employee had honestly not expected this herself. Did their calls really get them in? That Jarvis and Hugo did say that they were going to contact someone in power. She hadn't anticipated their so-called 'connections' to be real. After all, it was the manager himself who had told her to let them in!

"Wow! You actually managed to get the manager to let us in!" exclaimed Queeny and Yolanda excitedly.

Yolanda was especially excited. It was as if her admiration for Jarvis was never-ending.

At that moment, the leader of the other group approached Jarvis. “Hey there handsome, think you could let us in too? We’d gladly pay for the tickets!” said the leader, her admiration for Jarvis clearly reflected in her eyes

“Sure darling! Go right on ahead!” Jarvis was overjoyed. He never knew that his father held so much power. He was able to contact the vice manager and the manager as well! His ego immediately inflated immensely. The two groups then walked into the building cheerily.

Once they were gone, a female escort approached the employee before asking, “What happened? Did the manager really speak up for them?”

“Well, the manager said that one of our VIPs had arrived and we weren’t giving them access. He also told us to be on our best behavior! It would be unwise to disappoint this VIP after all!”

“Understood!”

Chapter 547

Gerald was speechless as he followed behind them. Someone else had taken the credit for what he had done. He had thought that scenarios like these wouldn’t happen to him again.

Jarvis himself looked like he was clearly out of his mind. It was as though he had lost all his common sense. Why would the manager speak up for him when the one he had contacted was only the vice manager?

Then again, Gerald knew that this was partly his fault for acting so low-key with everything he did. However, he didn’t really want to expose his true identity now, especially not in front of these pricks. The entire experience was just slightly disappointing.

As they entered further into the building, the two groups slowly merged into a single, large one. After Jarvis’s ‘help’, the girls from the other group were feeling grateful toward him. Some of them even started idolizing him, and this made Yolanda green with envy, birthing a strong sense of rivalry in her soul.

The girls flirting with him were very pretty as well. Naturally, this only served to further fuel Yolanda's jealousy and annoyance at the girls. However, all she could do was roll her eyes at them.

"Put my bag away for me!" said Yolanda as she tossed her bag at Gerald before walking toward Jarvis, visibly unhappy.

"Say Jarvis, where are we going later? Didn't you say that you'd take me to the springs and treat me to some good food?" asked Yolanda as she pouted her lips and clung to Jarvis's arm.

She was going on the attack now. If she didn't act fast, her man might get stolen away by one of these girls! Both Hugo and Queeny had been helping her get closer to him these days. Adding that to Yolanda's good looks, Jarvis and her were now at the stage where they could openly flirt with each other. She was already so close.

"Of course I will!" said Jarvis as he smiled.

"Oh? Is she your girlfriend, Jarvis?" asked one of the girls.

"She's so pretty!" complimented another as she smiled.

Yolanda simply remained silent as her ears perked, waiting for Jarvis's response.

Jarvis then put on a fake smile as he said, "Nah, she's just a really close friend!"

"Speaking of which, miss, I haven't had the pleasure of knowing your name," continued Jarvis. The girl he was speaking to was indeed, very beautiful and elegant.

"Michelle Waxham, but you can call me Elle. Thanks for today. Do you want to be friends?" asked Michelle as she smiled sweetly.

"Of course!" replied Jarvis as he fished his phone out. While the two exchanged numbers, Yolanda's pouting only worsened.

Gerald on the other hand, had been quietly observing the entire incident. He realized earlier that the girl looked somewhat like Xabrina. Once he heard her name, he immediately understood why. Queeny herself seemed to be stunned. She then asked rather hesitantly, "Um... Are you by any chance related to Brook Waxham?"

"Oh? He's my grandpa!" replied Michelle.

"Well then! What a coincidence! My grandpa is Theodore Winters! Does that name ring a bell?" exclaimed Queeny.

Michelle simply chuckled. How could she not know who that was? After all, he was the one who had set her up with that weirdo, Gerald Crawford.

"Of course I do! Actually, you're Queeny Winters, aren't you? Mr. Winters's granddaughter! I remember meeting you a few times when we were young!" said Michelle. She seemed to be warming up to them.

Gerald felt slightly awkward with this turn of events. It was just way too coincidental. However, he was lucky that Mr. Winters had not mentioned anything about the blind date when they had their lunch together yesterday.

Queeny was already on the way home when Mr. Winters asked Gerald out for lunch. It was clear that he wanted to ask about the blind date, but it was inconvenient to do so since Queeny was around. Gerald himself didn't want to talk about it. He had wanted to wait till lunch before bringing it up with Mr. Winters.

Besides, it was best that Queeny didn't know about the blind date. She would definitely tell Francis about it, which in turn would only cause more conflict between them. The best thing to do was to keep it to themselves.

D*mn it. Gerald's original blind date was here and she was Xabrina's sister! However, she was truly very elegant and even Gerald couldn't help but sneak a few stares at her.

Michelle, on the other hand, was very curious about Jarvis. Her curiosity began when she saw him do what he did at the ticket counter just a while ago. When she realized that she was already acquainted with Queeny, the two of them immediately clicked and kept their conversation going.

As for Yolanda, she was fuming with jealousy. She even made a few passive-aggressive remarks whenever she could.

Chapter 548

Since Jarvis didn't try to stop her, Yolanda continued making rude remarks from time to time. Gerald on the other hand, was being treated as though he didn't exist.

After two long hours of shopping without stopping to rest, it was already close to eleven at night. Since there were several restaurants in the building, Jarvis suggested for them to find a place to have supper. They would be able to talk more while seated anyway.

Naturally, Michelle and her friends accepted the offer and they soon found a nearby restaurant. Finally able to take a seat, Gerald put their bags down and sat at one of the tables as well.

"And who said that you could sit here?!" screamed a voice just as Gerald sat down.

"Aren't we eating? Is it wrong for me to take a seat?" asked Gerald, clearly annoyed.

The voice had belonged to Yolanda and she was at her limit. Her jealousy had overpowered her rationality since she had to watch Michelle talk to Jarvis this entire time. Since she wasn't being noticed enough, she decided to cause a scene and simply yelled at Gerald.

"Just look at you! Who do you even think you are to sit with us? As if you could ever be at our level! Save yourself the embarrassment and stay in your own lane!" screamed Yolanda again. She was clearly referring to someone else at the same time.

"Now what do you even mean by that?" snapped Gerald.

“Gerald Crawford, why are you even fighting her? Just leave her be, plus, she’s telling the truth anyway! Seriously, fighting with a girl. What kind of man are you?” said Queeny. She knew Yolanda was upset so she ended up scolding Gerald as well.

“Gerald Crawford?” At that moment, Michelle turned to look at Gerald. Wasn’t that the name of her blind date? Was this person before her really her supposed blind date?

“Oh, you probably have no idea who he is. He’s my grandpa’s neighbor and he’s rented our unit. I invited him over so that he could carry our bags! I’ll treat him to lunch later on as thanks,” said Queeny. She was afraid that Yolanda would end up fighting with Michelle, so she quickly tried to change the topic.

“Ah, I see!” replied Michelle as her cheeks flushed in slight embarrassment. She took another glance at Gerald and felt extremely awkward.

She had imagined what Gerald looked like before, and she thought that he’d at least look decent and have a great personality even though he came from a humble background. However, here he was, carrying bags for a mere meal. He looked rather decent, but didn’t his actions mean that he was just some lowly pushover?

She then turned to look at Queeny who didn’t seem to know anything about the blind date. If neither Queeny nor Gerald brought the topic up, Michelle preferred taking that knowledge with her to her grave.

“Excuse me, miss! This is quite hot!”

The voice came from a waitress whose path was being blocked by Yolanda. As Yolanda turned around, her arm hit the corner of the tray and the waitress almost lost her grip. Thankfully, she was able to hold on to it. However, a bit of soup ended up getting spilled onto Yolanda’s elbow.

“I’m terribly sorry, miss! Are you alright?” apologized the waitress immediately.

Her apology, however, was only replied with a tight slap on the cheek from Yolanda.

“Why don’t you watch where you’re f*cking going? How dare you spill soup onto me!” Yolanda’s rationality had long set sail, and only anger resided within her now. She had been humiliated in front of Jarvis for far too long, thus she directed all her anger toward the waitress.

The waitress herself seemed quite young. She bore the look of someone who had just finished high school. The slap stunned her, and she was now only staring at Yolanda in disbelief. Gerald and the others were stunned as well. Nobody had expected Yolanda to actually hit someone.

“Natalie? Natalie, what happened? Who hurt you?”

At that moment, the manager of the restaurant ran out to help. Following him were a few other waiters and waitresses. As they helped her up, the few who followed the manager out and even the manager himself looked terrified.

“She did!” shouted Natalie as she pointed at Yolanda. Her other hand was cupping her now swollen cheek.

“How dare you! Do you even know who she is?” scowled the manager as he glared at Yolanda.

Chapter 549

“As if I care! She’s the one who spilled soup on me! I’ve done nothing wrong! She’s a mere waitress anyway, big deal!” huffed Yolanda. She wasn’t afraid of the consequences since she knew that Jarvis was definitely the most powerful man in the room at that moment. Nobody would dare to defy him and in extension, her.

Besides, her spotlight had been stolen by Michelle and she was already having a pretty bad day. Not only did they not apologize for the soup on her clothes, but the manager was here scolding her! This was ridiculous...

The more she thought about it, the more Yolanda looked as though she would explode in anger.

“Don’t cry, Nat... I’ll have someone call Mr. Wadford for you. Your dad will definitely be able to handle this!” comforted the manager.

Natalie Wadford was the daughter of Blake Wadford, the manager of this entire tourist attraction. Her father was also one of the main organizers of the new projects around the area. Blake had been assigned from the main branch in Mayberry, and he had absolute power within this area.

Since Natalie was bored during her summer holidays, she came here since she wanted to gain some experience doing a part-time job. However, it was just her first day of work and she had already received a slap to her face! Though she had begged her father for the longest time to allow her to take the job and have some fun, her efforts ended up being the worst experience she had had throughout her time here.

“Humph! Call whoever you want to! We have Jarvis here! As if we’d be afraid of you guys!” scoffed Yolanda as she clung to Jarvis’s arm. Everyone then turned to look at Jarvis. Being the egoistic man he was, he knew that Yolanda was using his power to do as she pleased, and this stoked his ego to new heights.

He then stood up before coldly saying, “How amusing. Fine, let’s see who you’re calling over! Don’t worry Yolanda, I have my connections!”

As Yolanda continued yelling hysterically, the manager made a phone call. A few seconds after his call ended, three Audi A6 cars screeched to a halt at the restaurant’s entrance.

“Who the f*ck dared to slap my daughter? Do you have a death wish?!”

The furious voice came from a middle-aged man donning a suit. As he got out of his car, eight other bodyguards followed closely behind. Nobody dared to mess with them since they were clearly men with power.

Yolanda now looked slightly terrified and she turned to Jarvis for help.

“Mr. Wadford! She did it! She’s the one who slapped Natalie on the face!” exclaimed the manager as he pointed toward Yolanda.

“Oh? This b*tch? You sure have some guts, I’ll give you that much. Grab her!” shouted Blake as he signaled his bodyguards to do so.

Jarvis immediately stood in front of Yolanda as if he knew what he was doing. “Heh, Mr. Wadford, was it? There must be some kind of misunderstanding! Should I give a call to Mr. Dean? Since it was the manager who had let us in, starting a fight here won’t be any good now, would it?”

It was clear that Jarvis thought that he held the most power in the room. After bringing up his superior connections, all he needed to do now, was to wait for Blake to back down.

“For real? Those nobodies? Are you seriously trying to threaten me with them? You need a reality check, brat! F*ck off!” yelled Blake as he slapped Jarvis on the face. Blake’s had swung his hand hard, and Jarvis was almost knocked down from that one slap alone.

“J-Jarvis!” Both Michelle and Yolanda rushed toward him after seeing that happen.

“Humph! And here I was wondering why this brat was being so stubborn! Listen, kid, do you really think Mr. Dean and Mr. Will rule this area? Hah! Both of them still have to take orders from Mr. Wadford!” scoffed the restaurant manager.

“...What?” Upon hearing that, Jarvis immediately froze. He had wanted to fight back but after finding out that Blake was even more powerful than Mr. Dean, he didn’t dare to move another muscle.

Yolanda’s screams suddenly echoed through the restaurant. Two of Blake’s bodyguards were pulling her hair and another was slapping her face. Chaos had befallen the group.

“Listen up, brats! You hurt my daughter so each and every one of you will pay for this! Don’t even think about escaping!” roared Blake, his eyes red. He seemed to love his daughter very much.

None of them had expected their supper to end this way. Queeny and the others were struck with fear the moment they heard what he said.

“M-Mr. Wadford, please! We didn’t even do anything!” pleaded Hugo immediately.

Chapter 550

The bodyguards showed no mercy. Though Michelle was slightly older than the others, she too was terrified as she watched the chaos unfold before her eyes.

Gerald on the other hand, simply sat there quietly. He was no saint and he wasn't obligated to help everyone with everything. He knew that Blake Wadford sounded familiar and if he wanted to, he could even talk him out of it. But Gerald didn't want to. He had no obligations to help Yolanda and Jarvis. Both of them were mere strangers to him.

Besides, Yolanda had constantly looked down on him. She deserved to be beaten up like this for always being so stubborn and reckless. It would seem that Queeny and the others were going to be involved in this as well.

All of a sudden, a team of employees rushed into the restaurant.

"M-Mr. Wadford! Stop! Please stop!" pleaded what seemed to be the team's leader. More employees rushed in behind her.

The leader of the team was the girl at the ticket counter earlier. She was apparently also responsible for this area.

"Huh? Oh, it's you Becky. What's wrong? Why shouldn't I beat them up?" scowled Blake.

Becky immediately stood beside him before whispering into his ear. In an instant, Blake's face turned pale.

'...What? They were let in by Mr. Lyle?' Blake thought to himself.

"The security team informed me that they had caused a fight here so I came running as soon as I could, Mr. Wadford!" explained Becky.

Blake went silent for a moment before he took in a deep breath. He now knew who these people were. They weren't even supposed to be here in the first place. However, it would seem that this Jarvis guy gave his father a call which eventually got them in.

Becky hadn't wanted to grant them access, but the manager had told her to let them in and treat them like VIPs. Mr. Lyle had been the one to authorize their entrance. One of his relatives gave Mr. Will a call, which led to the current situation. Even the two managers—who were supposed to be purchasing stocks—were now rushing back here.

Blake was now sweating bullets. He couldn't believe what he was hearing. He immediately turned to look at Jarvis—who was still lying on the ground— with apologetic eyes.

"Ah, good sir, why didn't you mention that you were let in by Mr. Lyle? Indeed, this really was a misunderstanding!" said Blake in cold sweat. The difference in power between Mr. Dean and Mr. Lyle was colossal. Of course Blake would feel terrified!

The bodyguards understood the situation immediately and each of them nervously took a step back. It was as though they had just undergone a one-eighty degree flip, attitude-wise. This only made Michelle even more impressed.

"D*mn! Honestly, who is he? How can one person hold that much power?" said Michelle as she stared at Jarvis, her eyes filled with admiration.

Yolanda on the other hand, was glaring at them. She then laughed hysterically before shouting, "Hahaha! You dumba*ses! I'll make sure all of you are dead by dawn for slapping me!"

More slaps echoed through the restaurant as Yolanda continued to slap each bodyguard several times. Though she was being beaten up just seconds ago, her ego had reached new heights now that she could fight back without any repercussions. She knew that Jarvis wouldn't let her down.

"Mr. Jarvis... May I know who your father is?" asked Blake timidly.

"Heh, my dad is Thomas Fish. Both my parents are in Serene Org, and even Mr. Edward here knows them!" said Jarvis smugly.

'Thomas Fish...? I know several of Mr. Lyle's connections but not him... Mr. Lyle intervened for him? That... doesn't sound quite right...?' Blake thought to himself.

"Humph! Know your place, old man! I'll slap you twice as much as your bodyguards did to me!" said Yolanda as she walked up to Blake, cockily.

"Blake! Long time no see, huh!" said Gerald with a smile out of the blue. He then got up from his seat and stood there, hands in his pockets.

Chapter 551

Gerald had intervened because he couldn't stand watching Jarvis and Yolanda continue to abuse his power. Besides, Gerald finally remembered who Blake Wadford was. He was the one who had organized a birthday party for Elena Larson.

Gerald had been occupied with Lilian during the party, so he was only able to have a short talk with Blake back then. They were acquainted at most. However, Jarvis and Yolanda were clearly crossing the line, all because he wanted to keep a low profile.

If they were his close friends, he would've just let it slide. However, these two were complete nobodies.

'Why should I remain quiet and let these idiots have their way with my men?' Gerald thought to himself.

"M-Mr. Crawford? You were here this entire time?" Blake knew that he was screwed the moment he saw Gerald. It was as though his heart had just dropped all the way down into his stomach.

He had been angry after hearing that his beloved daughter had been hurt. Since all his attention had been focused on Yolanda and Jarvis, Blake hadn't really paid much attention to anyone else. However, seeing Gerald before him now, he instantly knew that there was a major misunderstanding.

'F*ck, everything makes sense now!' Blake thought.

Blake had been very confused as he had never heard of Thomas Fish before. So it turned out that the VIP in question was Gerald after all. Since Mr. Lyle hadn't wanted to expose Gerald's true identity, he didn't explain much to the managers, which led to this misunderstanding.

"Yeah, I'm just here to take a break!" said Gerald with a smile as he nodded. Michelle and the others were stunned.

What was happening? This man knew Gerald?

"Hey! Are you done talking? Come back here and let me slap you!"

Yolanda was clearly still very angry.

As she lunged toward him, Blake simply slapped Yolanda with full force, sending her falling to the ground.

"Beat these brats up!" ordered Blake without hesitation. With Gerald around, he knew that he had nothing to be worried about anymore. Blake turned to look at Gerald's expression, but Gerald simply avoided his gaze. This meant that he wouldn't intervene with whatever Blake was going to do to the two.

The employees were all panicking at the sight of this. Blake, however, simply approached Gerald respectfully before saying, "Mr. Crawford, if I had known that you were coming, I would've gladly escorted you! You didn't have to waste such effort and ask Mr. Lyle for help!"

"That's quite alright, it was just an impulsive decision. This group didn't seem to be giving up and I didn't want to stand under the sun for any longer. I just pulled a few strings here and there and that's how we got in," explained Gerald. Now everyone knew what the true story was.

"...What? Gerald, you were the one who got us in?" asked Queeny in disbelief. Michelle couldn't believe it either. There was just no way that was true!

However, just from his conversation with Blake, everyone there was now sure that Gerald had his fair share of connections as well. After all, the barbarian of a man had bowed down to Gerald and was even talking to him respectfully.

At that moment, all the girls' opinions on Gerald changed instantly. Though nobody had acknowledged his presence previously, he was the actual person who had gotten all of them in.

It was a plausible explanation as well. After all, Jarvis had only contacted Mr. Edward. How on earth could he have made the managers rush in to welcome their arrival?

"Mr. Crawford..." Gerald noticed that Blake had something to say.

"Ah, can we talk about this in the office? I'll be there in a bit, Mr. Wadford," interrupted Gerald with a nod.

"Of course, Mr. Crawford!" said Blake as he led his bodyguards out of the restaurant.

Gerald had an idea of what Blake wanted to talk to him about. He finally understood why Sunny Springs seemed much grander than usual.

A big event tomorrow?

There was a high possibility that Zack had ordered Blake to organize a party for his birthday.

Gerald had wanted to clear his doubts by questioning Blake. However, it was a private matter, he didn't want Queeny and the others to know about this.

After glaring at Jarvis, who was still a total mess, Gerald left the restaurant.

Chapter 552

"Hold it Gerald! Explain yourself!" said Queeny as she rushed toward him. Her face was deathly pale and she seemed very shaken up.

Just like all the others, she didn't know how Gerald had been able to turn the tables so easily. She had always looked down on him. The moment Gerald had successfully intervened, Queeny felt as though she had just been crushed by a boulder. In her mind, she was continually wishing that it was someone else who was holding on to that much power. Anyone would do. Anyone but Gerald.

'Why did he refer to Gerald as Mr. Crawford?'

'Wasn't he merely some lowlife? Why, oh why...'

These were the thoughts flooding Queeny's mind. She felt extremely upset.

"What do you want?" asked Gerald dismissively.

'If it wasn't for Mr. Winters, I wouldn't even be wasting my time fooling around with you people,' Gerald thought to himself.

"Explain yourself right this instant! Why was that guy so respectful toward you? He even seemed scared of you! What's your relation with him?" asked Queenie.

"Don't ask things you're not supposed to. Have fun with the rest of your trip. Don't worry, I'll be sure to tell them to leave you guys alone," replied Gerald before exiting the restaurant.

As he walked past Michelle, she stared at him with mixed emotions. She hadn't expected him to be such a powerful individual. She wasn't able to tell at all.

With her cheeks burning up, Michelle was feeling no different from Queeny. In fact, she was arguably more upset than Queenie was.

At that moment, her only concern was Gerald's actual background. Who was this man?

“No... There’s just no way! It couldn’t have been that lowlife who got us in! It was Jarvis! It must have been!” yelled Yolanda in denial.

Jarvis simply clenched his teeth as he gave his father a call. It turned out that Mr. Edward hadn’t even given them a proper response!

“What the f*ck! Who is Gerald, really?” Queeny was now immensely curious. She wasn’t interested in talking to anyone else but Gerald now. She immediately rushed out of the restaurant, hoping to catch up to Gerald.

Meanwhile, Blake handed Gerald a cup of water before saying, “Mr. Crawford, don’t you remember? Tomorrow’s your birthday! And Mr. Lyle told us to organize something for you!”

‘So they were going to throw me a party’ Gerald thought.

Gerald knew Zack very well. He must have just wanted to give Gerald a nice birthday. However, Gerald would very much have preferred simply inviting a few people over to dinner. That alone would still be as meaningful to him. Still, the decorating process had already begun, so Gerald didn’t plan to interfere since all that effort had already been done.

As both of them entered Blake’s office, Gerald felt instantly relieved. The inside of the room was cold, and Gerald was finally able to take a rest. He breathed a sigh of relief the moment he sat down on a chair.

Blake, on the other hand, stood next to him politely. He didn’t dare utter a single word unless Gerald questioned him about anything.

All of a sudden, the office door slammed open.

“Gerald! I need to hear the truth! Please tell me what happened back there!”

A girl had burst into the office, and it wasn’t just any girl. It was Queeny Winters. She had been observing them from the window.

She could see that Gerald was sitting on the chair at the desk while the big man from before simply stood beside him politely. Queeny felt like she was going insane.

Chapter 553

“Holy! Queeny? I already gave you an answer!” shouted Gerald with a jump. He definitely hadn’t expected her to chase after him.

“What is with you? I’m just... concerned! Look, you may have won the lottery or something, and though I’m not sure how much you won, aren’t you acting a little too naively? Society’s going to eat you up! No matter how much you’ve won, be careful and don’t get tricked or you’ll end up in the streets later on!”

‘Yeah... That made much more sense. Gerald must have invested in the attraction with the lottery money.’ This was the only reasonable conclusion that she could come up with at that moment. Her emotions were in disarray and she was feeling extremely upset by the sudden change in power dynamic. After saying what she needed to to calm herself down, Queenie immediately left the office, her cheeks puffed up.

“Hah. This girl... If she ever found out about my true identity, I’d never hear the end of it!” said Gerald before chuckling.

As Blake went off to run his errands, Gerald decided to get some shut-eye before leaving the attraction and getting some proper rest.

He definitely didn’t want to join Queenie and her friends. Queenie didn’t want him around anymore either. After some time passed, knocking could be heard on the door.

“Mr. Edward? I’ve brought the newcomer over to report to you!” It was a soft female voice and Gerald was slightly taken aback when he heard it.

“Come in!” said Gerald.

The door then slowly opened and a girl in a uniform entered the office. She had long hair and a nice figure. In her hands was a document and behind her was another beautiful girl.

“Mr. Edward, I’m...” The girl’s voice slowly trailed off. She was about to introduce herself, but her words just wouldn’t form the moment she saw who was sitting in the office.

Gerald was speechless as well. He simply stared at the two girls as the awkwardness in the office grew.

“M-Mr. Crawford! It’s you! I... I didn’t know you’d be here!” said the girl as she immediately lowered her head in embarrassment. She didn’t dare to make eye contact.

“...Xella? Sharon? What are you two doing here in Fuenti? Aren’t you supposed to be in Serene County?” asked Gerald as he continued staring at the two.

When Gerald was investigating his company, Xella had learned of his true identity. As for Sharon, she knew too since she was present during the incident at the real estate center. This was why the situation felt so awkward for all three of them.

Though he remembered what Xella and Sharon had done to him in recent memory, he was still good friends with the two girls back in high school. Xella had even fought against Waylon for bullying Gerald.

He didn’t exactly have the time of his life in high school, but with the two girls around, his high school days still ended up being pretty nice. Even back then, a lot of people looked down on him but not these two. They really treated him like a good friend.

This was the sole reason why Gerald still felt reserved when it came to the two of them. Even though their friendship was no longer the same, Gerald still felt obligated to treat them kindly.

“Mr. Crawford, I’ll be going to the human resources department now. Sharon’s just joined the company. Oh, and since tomorrow is your birthday, the company’s assigned a few good looking girls to be escorts.”

‘Ah, so they still remember my birthday. Well this is a little weird...’ He thought to himself.

“Ah, I see... Well, Blake’s now busy decorating the place!” said Gerald as he stood up. The situation was still extremely awkward.

Chapter 554

“...Oh yeah. So Sharon, why are you looking for a job now? What about Hayward?” asked Gerald. Though he used to have a crush on her, he no longer had any feelings for her.

“Ah, well, after Hayward found out that you’re Mr. Crawford, he was so shocked that he refused to leave his house for days. Besides, he knew about our past relationship, so...”

Sharon stopped there and simply left her sentence hanging.

‘...Ah, so Sharon’s looking for a job partially because of me!’ Gerald thought to himself.

Gerald then flashed an awkward smile before saying, “But you know, I’m still truly flattered, haha! Remember back in high school? The best birthday I’ve ever had then was in the canteen!”

Hearing that, both Sharon and Xella began reminiscing. During high school, almost everyone refused to hang out with Gerald, and his birthday didn’t change that fact.

His birthday that year had been on result day, and everyone had to go back to high school during the holidays to get their certificates. It was Xella and Sharon who had suggested that they celebrate Gerald’s birthday in the canteen. They wanted to celebrate it with him before he joined the military.

The two girls, along with Lilian, had bought a large cake for Gerald back then. Lilian was there since she was close to Sharon and though she was slightly hesitant at first, she still ended up celebrating his birthday with him anyway.

That was the first time Gerald ever had cake, and he felt extremely touched. That was the moment when he decided to stay friends with them for eternity.

Now, however, he realized how one-sided that decision had been

When university started, he continued staying in touch with both Xella and Sharon. Eventually, however, both of them started ghosting him. They didn’t bother to even reply to any of his texts.

Two years later, Gerald was excited when he bumped into Sharon in Mayberry. Sharon had to admit that since he was still so friendly and talkative, he clearly valued their friendship very much even after so much time had passed.

However, Sharon had felt embarrassed being around him, so she avoided him at all costs. She even insulted him multiple times! There were times when she went overboard as well, resulting in him getting physically hurt.

Despite all that, Gerald continued to help her on multiple occasions and he didn't even hold any grudges against her. She had taken advantage of that, which led to Gerald getting hurt even more. This was why Gerald eventually started giving her the cold shoulder.

As for Xella, she had looked down on him from the moment they bumped into each other again after so many years. She had been slightly embarrassed when they met, so she only had a polite conversation with him, even cracking a few light jokes here and there.

However, Gerald still thought that she valued their friendship just as much as he did back then. They were even supposed to go to the class reunion together! However, she went with Waylon instead which resulted in her feeling uncomfortable for most of that day.

Waylon had bullied Gerald a lot back in high school. Gerald simply never stood up for himself. There was even a time when Waylon threw a chair at Gerald which sent him flying to the back of the class. He was without a doubt, Gerald's arch enemy.

Despite being aware of that, Xella still ended up getting close to him. Gerald had been incredibly hurt after finding out about that.

Now that the two girls realized that Gerald was the actual Mr. Crawford from Mayberry, they couldn't help but regret their actions. Both of them thought that he was no longer the Gerald they knew, when in reality, Gerald had never changed. They were the ones who had changed.

Chapter 555

"I'm sorry, Gerald..." said both of them simultaneously. The two girls bore expressions filled with embarrassment and regret.

“That’s quite alright!” replied Gerald as he gave a gentle smile. Though he was still being nice to them, all three of them knew that their friendship could never truly properly be mended. What’s done was done, and they could never go back to the way things had originally been. Gerald would only treat them as acquaintances now. Nothing more.

Both Sharon and Xella understood what Gerald was implying. The two knew that they couldn’t just rewind time to fix all their mistakes, and simply understanding that made them feel like their hearts were being pierced by thousands of needles. If only they were still friends, this reunion could have gone so much better.

Not wanting to prolong the awkwardness any further, Gerald decided to head back since it was getting late anyway. For all he knew, that psycho Queenie had probably gone home. Gerald really didn’t have the energy to walk all the way back, so he simply used one of the company’s Audi A6 cars to drive home.

Just as he got to the entrance, Gerald bumped into yet another acquaintance. She was holding on to her purse and it seemed like she was waiting for a cab.

It was Michelle. Since Gerald hadn’t bothered to wind the car’s window up, Michelle managed to catch a glimpse of him as he was about to drive out.

“Gerald?” called Michelle out to him.

Gerald didn’t like ignoring people, but he really wished he could just leave at that moment.

He wasn’t really fond of this person. After all, she had openly expressed her dislike toward him. She even had her own sister substitute her for her blind date with him! He treated this as a direct insult, which was why Gerald didn’t intend to speak to her this entire time.

“What do you want?” asked Gerald coldly as Michelle came closer to the car.

“Ah, well, I just wanted to thank you for today! If it wasn’t for you, we may not have gotten out of that situation unharmed! The other girls that came with me were my colleagues and some of them have

already gone home,” replied Michelle. Gerald noticed another shorter girl standing beside her as she said that.

“There’s no need to thank me. If I were to have any say in this, I wouldn’t have let any of you in in the first place. It was Jarvis who did!” said Gerald coldly again.

‘It’s unnecessary at this point to show her any kindness.’ Gerald thought to himself.

His words were so blunt that her face instantly turned red with embarrassment.

She knew that the blind date incident had ruined their relationship before it even had a chance to start. She understood very well that she had crossed the line, but she wasn’t willing to just leave it at that.

Michelle had initially not wanted to go through this embarrassment.

After all, it was fine to just remain as strangers and never speak to each other again. Wasn’t that what she had preferred all along?

However, after that incident in the restaurant, she couldn’t just leave it at that. Just like everyone else, she just couldn’t bear seeing him make such an immense comeback.

‘You’re nothing more but of the many guys that I’ve rejected.’ This was what she thought.

If Gerald had remained the way she had initially thought of him, she wouldn’t have had such a big reaction. To think that this ‘optional’ man turned out to be this powerful! This made her extremely upset, especially when he didn’t even seem to want to talk to her. He just went straight for the entrance with his Audi!

“I’d... I’d like to apologize for... You know.... Alright, I know I was wrong for flaking on you!” said Michelle as she bit down hard on her lower lip.

“There’s no need for an apology. To be frank, I only see you as an acquaintance, so if there’s nothing else, I’ll be heading off now!” said Gerald dismissively as he immediately drove off.

Michelle was now terribly upset and angry. This was the first time she had ever been ignored by a guy. She felt her eyes start to water. Not only did he turn out to be extremely powerful, but he barely batted an eyelid when he ignored her and just drove away.

It wasn’t long before Gerald passed both Toiun and Fuenti.

Chapter 556

As he drove on, Gerald noticed something weird. There seemed to be a sudden increase in luxury cars in town. Most of them were parked outside hotels.

Though it was rather strange, Gerald didn’t think too much about it.

At that moment, Gerald’s phone began to ring. He saw that it was a call from Mrs. Winters.

“What’s the matter, Mrs. Winters?” asked Gerald with a smile after picking the call up.

“Gerald? Where are you? I saw that Queeny had driven home by herself earlier. She looked slightly upset. Did both of you get into some kind of argument? Did she leave you there alone?” asked Mrs. Winters, her voice filled with concern.

“Don’t worry, I’m driving back now in a friend’s car!” Gerald had no choice but to say that so that Mrs. Winters wouldn’t overthink the situation.

“I see! That’s good to hear... By the way Gerald, could you get a bag of rice in town on your way back? That way your uncle won’t have to go out anymore!”

“No problem!”

Gerald then found a supermarket nearby and bought two bags of rice, a bottle of peanut oil, and a few other items.

As Gerald moved the items into the car, he remembered that back when he had just returned to Serene County, Mr. Winters had refused to take any money from Gerald. Gerald had promised himself then, that since they wouldn't accept his money, he would just use the money to get necessities for them.

Realizing that he had almost forgotten his own promise to himself, he rushed back into the supermarket. After a few trips in and out to make sure he could carry everything, Gerald ended up buying a few boxes of milk, good wine, and an array of herbs and spices as well.

As he opened his almost filled to the brim car trunk again, he heard a surprised voice call out to him.

"Gerald?"

Gerald was holding a pressure cooker in his arms when he turned to see who had called him. It was a girl standing at the entrance of a hotel that was right next to the supermarket.

"F*ck! Leila? What are you doing in this town?"

The girl standing at the hotel's entrance was definitely Leila, and that left Gerald equally as surprised as she was. After all, he had never thought he would see anyone from the Jung family again after that incident.

Gerald had just been too disappointed and heartbroken with them. Even after Willie encountered further problems, Gerald completely ignored them despite his father's constant reminders to look after them on his behalf.

He hadn't answered any of Leila's calls either. This made their current situation more awkward than it should have been.

"Well, we've just arrived and I was about to go buy something from the supermarket. I really hadn't expected to see you here!"

Leila was still very kind and polite toward Gerald. She then began walking over to him. It was obvious that she wanted to continue chatting.

“We? Who else did you come with?” asked Gerald.

“My parents and my dad’s colleagues... They’re here to enjoy themselves!” replied Leila in a soft tone.

“I see!” said Gerald as he nodded.

Was there anything interesting in Touin? Why had so many people specifically come here to have fun? However, Gerald didn’t really want to continue talking to Leila anymore. Therefore, he didn’t bother to ask her for further details.

“Speaking of which, Gerald, are you still living in your house?” asked Leila.

“Of course. Where else would I be living at?”

“I see! I don’t think I’ve ever been to your house before... After all, you were the one who always came to mine when we were still kids!” replied Leila as she smiled.

“Well alright then, if there isn’t anything else, I’ll be taking my leave first! I have to hurry back home to cook!” said Gerald, immediately changing the topic.

Leila was aware that Gerald didn’t want to talk to her. However, the more Gerald ignored her, the more she wanted to chat with him!

After all, she was Leila Jung! Was she really that undeserving of his time and attention?

“By the way, Gerald, you only bought one cable for your pressure cooker. Don’t you plan on getting a spare one? After all, the voltage in villages can get pretty unstable and cables are prone to get burnt out easily!”

“Ah. I didn’t really think of that. Thank you!” replied Gerald with a slight smile. If she had only been this kind toward him in the past, things could have been perfect.

After placing the pressure cooker into his car, he turned to re-enter the supermarket again to get another spare cable.

“Hehe... You know, since I’m going in anyway, you can just leave that to me!”

Before he could stop her, Leila had already ran into the supermarket. Shortly after, she returned with a spare cable in hand. Just as she handed it over to Gerald, a middle-aged man’s voice could be heard from the entrance of the hotel.

“Leila, what are you doing?”

Chapter 557

At that moment, two couples and a young man exited the hotel. All of them happened to see Leila talking to Gerald.

The middle-aged man who had called out to them coldly just seconds ago, was now walking toward the two. He seemed to be the leader of the group, and he was naturally none other than Willie himself

“What are you doing here, dad? I was just helping Gerald buy something!” grumbled Leila.

“What? You’re still buying things for him? Humph! I’ll never give anything to him! Even if I have to throw it away!”

Immediately after he said that, he snatched the cable from Gerald’s hand before throwing it onto the ground.

Before this, Willie had been very dissatisfied as he was prepared to beg Gerald to use his connections to help him. However, in the end, Gerald had simply ignored him.

That made Willie extremely angry and frustrated.

“Didn’t I tell you not to have anything to do with him anymore, Leila? Why can’t you remember such a simple thing?”

Leia, who had previously been walking over, now stood beside Willie. She simply looked at Gerald with eyes filled with contempt.

“Uncle Jung, who is this person?” asked the young man from before who had also walked over.

“He’s just the son of someone I used to know in the past. He lives in Touin!”

“Why does it seem as though you have some kind of misunderstanding with this young man?” This time, the other middle-aged man was the one asking.

The reason why this group of people had gathered wasn’t just to have fun together. Their secondary purpose, at least for the two couples, was to get their children to meet.

Leila currently seemed to have a pretty good relationship with the young man. Since his son was also concerned about the matter, the other middle-aged man couldn’t help but pose his own question.

“Heh. Mr. Westwick, it’s not just a simple misunderstanding! This person right here isn’t well-mannered in the least! When Willie went to look for him last time, we couldn’t find him anywhere! We couldn’t even get a hold of him! The entire trip there was a complete waste of time!” replied Leia angrily.

“Humph! Let’s go, Leila. If I ever catch you talking to this kind of lowly person again, don’t blame me for teaching you a lesson!” yelled Willie coldly before stepping on the cable that Leila had bought earlier.

“Mr. Jung!” shouted Gerald. Naturally, Gerald wasn’t going to refer to the man as his uncle anymore.

“Pfft. What do you want?” asked Willie coldly.

“No matter what you say, I donated seventy thousand dollars to you last time. You could even say that I’ve done you a huge favor back then. If you continue talking to me like this, I’m afraid it’ll be no good for your own face if word about this matter gets out to the public.”

“Also, Aunt Leia talked about a wasted trip because you couldn’t find me last time. Could you perhaps have forgotten that time when I was in high school? When my father and I waited for you outside your house for up to four hours just to meet you? I remember clearly that when we finally got to meet, you immediately sent us off, saying you weren’t free. So I suppose I’m still the wrong one just because you made a wasted trip?” said Gerald.

“Pfft. What do you even mean? Willie’s a very busy man. Why would we ever have the time to entertain someone like you or your father? Thinking about it now, he did the absolute right thing by ignoring both of you back then! After all, you’re useless to us!” replied Leia angrily.

“Ah, I see there really is a pretty big misunderstanding. I had initially thought that we could ask this country boy to take us around this place. He could’ve been our tour guide or something. Looks like we’ll have to scratch that idea!” said the young man with a contemptuous smile.

“A tour guide? Consider our status! If we need a tour guide, we should look for one with at least a good reputation and relationship with us!”

The other woman was now chiming in as well. Leia and Willie’s hatred toward Gerald made her feel equally disgusted with him.

However, Gerald wasn’t angry. He simply smiled faintly at their retorts.

“Fine then. We’ll cross the bridge when we get there, Mr. Jung. See you again in the future!” said Gerald before getting into his car and driving off immediately.

After finding out that the Audi A6 belonged to Gerald, the young man was dumbfounded.

“D*mn! He’s actually driving such a good car?”

He hadn't expected that. He had backed his uncle up by insulting Gerald earlier, but even he couldn't afford to buy himself an Audi.

"What's so great about that? It's obviously a second-hand car. He probably can't even afford to buy a new car anyway! Seeing him really ruined our good mood!" grumbled Leia.

Chapter 558

"Humph! Don't even talk about him anymore!" snorted Willie coldly.

Meanwhile, Gerald had already arrived back home. His anger toward Willie had made the trip feel much shorter.

There seemed to be several cars parked in front of Mr. Winters's house. Squinting his eyes, Gerald realized that they belonged to the eldest, second, and third son.

With that, Gerald pressed on his car horn with the intention of getting some help to move some of the groceries.

A few people were standing in the courtyard at that time. When they heard and saw the Audi parked in front of the house, they couldn't help but curiously come out to have a look. Mr. and Mrs. Winters followed them out as well.

When Gerald opened the car door and stepped out, everyone present was surprised.

"Gerald? You're driving an Audi?" asked the eldest son's wife, clearly taken aback. If this was the car Gerald was driving, then he was much more capable compared to her own son!

"Humph! Don't be fooled. This Audi clearly looks like a second-hand car!" replied Francis.

Francis bore an ugly expression as he said that. After all, he was driving a car that only cost thirty thousand dollars. Since Gerald's Audi A6 probably cost much more, it was inevitable that his inferiority complex would fire up.

With a depressed look, Francis then walked over to the Audi and kicked its tires lightly. “There’s no need to make such a big fuss over this. Second-hand refurbished cars like these are commonplace. If the seller was an acquaintance, he could probably get it for about fifteen thousand dollars. You know, my friend once tried to persuade me to get a second-hand Audi as well. I refused his offer, though. Heh. After all, the poorer you are, the more you want to drive a good car to show off!”

“He’s right. Only rich bosses should drive Audi cars!” replied another young man.

The young man in question was Jasper Winters. It seemed that he had come home this time.

“All of you seem to be misunderstanding something. This isn’t my car. The car belongs to someone else. I’m just lending it for a few days!” said Gerald with a faint smile.

“Oh! And here I thought you suddenly got rich and bought yourself a car! It turns out it’s not even yours in the first place!”

The few sisters-in-law present felt a wave of relief wash over them before they continued smiling contemptuously toward Gerald.

Looking around, Gerald couldn’t see Queeny anywhere. It felt odd that she wasn’t here, but he didn’t question anyone about it.

Turning to look at Mr. Winters, he said, “Mr. Winters, I bought some things for you! Let’s move them into the house first!”

“Oh! Young kid, why are you spending so much money again? You bought so many things!” replied Mrs. Winters in mock anger. She just didn’t want Gerald to spend so much on them.

“It’s fine. After all, all of these are basic necessities anyway. They didn’t cost too much either. I got you a pressure cooker, so if you buy some bones and ribs, you can make some soup! That’ll be great for your health!” said Gerald as he smiled.

His goal was to get the items to Mr. and Mrs. Winters so Gerald simply ignored the ridicules from the other people.

“Oh my, this pressure cooker is actually branded! How much did it cost you?” asked the second sister-in-law, jealousy reflected in her eyes.

“It wasn’t that expensive. Just a little over seventy-five dollars!” replied Gerald.

“Heh. Then this pressure cooker can’t be compared to the one given to us for free by Francis’s unit. You get free stuff like this occasionally when you work for a public institution, and you know what they say, free things are always the best to use!” bragged the third sister-in-law.

“Queeny isn’t doing too bad herself. She usually gets some peanut oil, canned tuna, and other canned food from her company once every two months! We can’t even finish all of it so the cans are just piling at home! We barely have to spend any money on food at all!”

Not wanting to be outdone, the second sister-in-law continued saying, “Oh, and did you know? One of Queeny’s colleagues asked her out for dinner tonight. She gets invited out for dinner almost every night, so there’s barely a need for me to cook dinner for her at all. We really have so much free food...”

As the group continued bragging among themselves, none of them even considered to help Gerald move the things inside at all.

In the end, it was Mr. and Mrs. Winters who helped him move everything inside.

After everyone entered the house again, Gerald suddenly remembered that he had something to tell them. “Oh, that’s right...”

Chapter 559

“You know, tomorrow’s my birthday and I won’t be celebrating it at home this time. I’ve already booked a hotel for it. Will any of you have the time to attend?” asked Gerald.

In the previous years, Mr. and Mrs. Winters had always been the ones celebrating Gerald’s birthday with him. This year would be no exception.

However, since everyone was already here, Gerald naturally felt obligated to invite all of them over to his birthday banquet as well.

The third sister-in-law coughed before saying, "As if we'd have the time to go there. Francis and the rest will be working tomorrow. We don't have time to celebrate your birthday with you."

"That's right. What more, if you're celebrating your birthday, shouldn't you just be eating at home? Why did you have to book a hotel? Have you forgotten your roots just because you have some money now?" said the second sister-in-law coldly.

Since Gerald was initially very poor, everyone was used to looking down on him. The fact that he suddenly became rich from winning the lottery caused the power dynamic to flip, resulting in their increased dissatisfaction. This was the main reason why they were speaking to him even more coldly compared to how they used to.

"Well, it seems that we're all busy. Looks like you'll have to celebrate your birthday alone!" said the eldest son next.

Just as his sentence ended, his phone began ringing.

"Hello? Mr. Walts! How are you? What's that? Congratulations! Oh, I'll definitely be coming with my family the day after tomorrow! No, no, I'm free! I'll definitely be free once I'm done with everything that I need to finish tomorrow! Haha!"

After that, the eldest son hung up. He looked somewhat excited.

"What's the matter?" asked the eldest sister-in-law.

"It's Mr. Walts's son's eighth birthday the day after tomorrow. We've been invited to attend his birthday celebration so of course I agreed!"

“Hmm? Didn’t you say that you had an important chamber of commerce meeting to attend on that day?”

“Humph! Mr. Walts’s son’s birthday has a higher priority! I’ll just cancel my participation in the chamber of commerce meeting!” lamented the eldest Son.

“Uncle, second uncle, I think we should start eating now. I still have a lot of important things to do tomorrow. I need to get back and rest as soon as possible! Actually no, I still have to make some plans once I get home since I’ll be meeting up with Mr. Jung tomorrow!” said Francis.

Naturally, he too would be busy tomorrow.

“Isn’t Mr. Jung already here? I said that I’d treat him to dinner tonight. Just ignore the fact that he’s only a department chief now. After all, since he was a pretty reputable figure in the past, he still has several relationships and connections in Serene County!” replied the third son in a prideful tone.

“It’s really a pity that he wasn’t free tonight. It seems that his schedule is already fully packed!”

As everyone began to chime in one after another, Gerald simply listened. He could only conclude that the Mr. Jung they were talking about was most definitely Willie.

However, he remained silent.

Since everyone said that they wouldn’t be free tomorrow, Gerald didn’t try to insist for them to attend his birthday celebration anymore.

Not that it mattered to him. Everyone had their own things to do.

After eating a simple meal at Mr. Winters’s house, Gerald went back home.

Not too long after, he received a call from Mila.

“Happy birthday, Gerald!” shouted Mila.

“It’s not my birthday yet, why are you wishing me happy birthday so soon?!” said Gerald before laughing as he lay on his bed.

“What’s stopping me from wishing you twice? I’ll wish you happy birthday again at midnight! Not like I can take back my earlier wish anyway. By the way, Gerald, could you come over to look for me in two days’ time? Once you’re done settling your own matters of course. I’m at the television station now. I’ve just transferred to become an intern reporter today. I can finally do something that I’ve always wanted to do now!” said Mila happily.

Mila had told Gerald about this some time ago. She would take an examination to apply to become an intern reporter.

She managed to pass and she was now officially an intern reporter. Gerald was equally happy for her.

“Sure thing! I’ll come look for you in two days’ time. We’ll have a big celebration together for you then!” replied Gerald as he smiled.

“Alright! Ah, do note that that date may not be fixed. I may have a short holiday in a few days’ time so we may need to discuss it again then. Speaking of celebrations, how do you plan to celebrate your birthday tomorrow?”

After the two talked about his birthday plans for a short while, Mila eventually said that she needed to take a bath, so they both ended the call.

Just as Gerald was about to put his phone down, his phone started ringing again.

Chapter 560

This time, it was a call from Giya.

“It’s your birthday tomorrow right, Gerald?” asked Giya as soon as he picked up.

“Hmm...”

“Humph! Why didn’t you invite me over to celebrate with you then? I was waiting all day for you to call me today! It’s already this late yet you still haven’t invited me... Could it be that you’ve already forgotten about me?”

“Not at all. It’s just that since I’m back in my hometown, I was just planning to have a simple birthday celebration!” explained Gerald.

To be completely honest, Gerald really hadn’t planned to invite Giya at all.

Though she was very nice to him, Gerald simply wanted to be together with Mila now. He didn’t want to get too close to other girls. Therefore, he summarized that continuing to have such a complicated relationship with Giya just wouldn’t do.

What more, Giya had gotten into trouble when she was here with him the last time. Gerald felt embarrassed to even invite her to come over again.

“Whether you’re inviting me or not, I’m coming over to your house to look for you tomorrow. Unless... you don’t regard me as your friend at all...?”

Giya leaned her head against the bed’s headboard as she spoke through the landline. She was currently in a room in a villa.

Over the line, Gerald could only agree helplessly as he nodded. Immediately after that, he came up with an excuse saying that he was busy and ended the call.

“Humph! You b*stard! You’re really heartless toward me!” said Giya with a desolate expression on her face before hanging up as well.

She had initially expected Gerald to take the initiative to invite her over to celebrate his birthday with him. On the contrary, she now felt that if she hadn’t called him, he definitely wouldn’t have invited her over at all.

What more, since that major incident, whenever she tried looking for Gerald just to have a simple chat with him, he'd always reply indifferently. At most, it was common for him to reply with just a few words.

This made Giya slightly uncomfortable. The more uncomfortable she felt, the more she couldn't help but overthink the matter.

At that moment, knocking could be heard on her bedroom door.

"Giya? Are you asleep? Your father and I have some things to discuss with you!" said Giya's mother from behind the door.

"Dad, mom, I'm not asleep yet! You can come in!"

Both her parents then entered her bedroom. Giya could see that her father had a very sad expression on his face.

"Giya, I know that you don't want to hear this, but the Quarrington family in Yanken is giving us the orders this time. They want you to get engaged with the third young master from the Long family in Yanken. There's really nothing else that we can do about the matter."

"Mr. Crawford has already helped us settle our family's economic problems last time. However, the Quarrington family is still pressuring us even now. We really can't do anything about it and we can't always rely on Mr. Crawford to help us. So tell us Giya, what do you think about a marriage contract with the Long family?" asked Giya's father.

Giya's mother sighed before saying, "Though we've already ended our relationship with the Quarrington family, the influence and power they hold over us is simply too great. Please don't blame your father, he's done everything he's could. You have to consider how this is putting the company's interests at stake here. In extension, it's also going to affect your uncles and all the other employees working for our family as well!"

"Is there really no other way? You know, we can still beg Gerald to help us! He'll definitely help me!" replied Giya, her eyes tearing up.

“Giya, though Mr. Crawford is very capable, the Mayberry Commercial Group is only influential in Mayberry City. The Quarrington and Long family, on the other hand, have even bigger groups and corporations in Yanken!” said her father with a sigh.

“What more, the third young master of the Long family may even come over to pay us a visit tomorrow. You’ll have to stay home and prepare to meet up with him. If he leaves a really bad impression on you, we may still have some time to think of a solution then!” added Giya’s father.

“No! I’m not free tomorrow! It’s Gerald’s birthday and I’m going to celebrate it with him!” replied Giya angrily.

“You are not to go anywhere tomorrow. You shouldn’t bother Mr. Crawford about our issues anymore. You’re just a young girl who doesn’t understand anything at all!”

As soon as he finished his sentence, Giya’s father pulled her mother out of her bedroom immediately.

Giya was so anxious about the whole thing that she was ready to burst into tears.

Moving back to Gerald, he woke up at six in the morning the next day.

Gerald had a call with Zack last night. He wanted to welcome his 22nd birthday.

Since the guests could arrive early, Gerald decided to tidy up the place a little first.

At that moment, a girl suddenly entered through the front door.

“Gerald! I heard from my mother that you had come back, but I’ve tried looking for you a few times and you were never home!”

Chapter 561

“Lolita?” said Gerald as he couldn’t help but smile.

He treated the girl like a younger sister. Lolita grew up with both Gerald and Xeno. She was also somewhat related to Xeno's family.

Unlike Gerald and Xeno, Lolita had a pretty good family background. Her family owned a shop in town, specializing in making cakes and snacks. Because of that, she usually lived in town, rarely ever coming home.

Since Gerald and Xeno were still paupers who couldn't even afford any good clothes back then, Lolita rarely played with both of them.

She didn't talk to them much either, even though they were all classmates from the same elementary school. In short, there wasn't much interaction between the two boys and her at all. One could say that it was similar to Gerald's relationship with Queeny.

Unlike Queeny, however, they started interacting and forming a friendship late in junior high school.

In their first and second grade, Lolita coincidentally continued to share the same class with Gerald and Xeno. Even then, both parties still rarely interacted.

Things changed, however, when they were in their third grade.

Lolita had gotten into a fight with another girl then, and it was a huge one.

After school that day, Lolita's way home was blocked by several ruffians from the same grade. The girl had ordered them to give Lolita some trouble to teach her a lesson.

However, Gerald and Xeno had seen what they were up to, and they led Lolita away from them.

Though Gerald was still a nobody back then, Xeno was famous for his fights at school.

When the group of ruffians saw him, they didn't dare to do anything to the trio. In short, they had saved Lolita from a world of trouble that day.

From that day onwards, Lolita treated both Gerald and Xeno nicely, and they became friends just like that.

She would always secretly buy cigarettes for Xeno. As for Gerald, she would bring him cakes and pastries.

When they reached the age of high school, Lolita found that she had been admitted into the Third High School. It was considered to be the worst high school in the county.

Since none of them had cell phones when they were in high school, they couldn't keep in constant contact with each other. They would only get a chance to get together and chat during New Year.

"When did you get back? Why didn't you send me a text message or something?" complained Lolita.

"I've just been back for a few days! I've been wandering around town and the county. To be honest, I was just about to ask Xeno for your phone number!" replied Gerald as he smiled.

He wasn't lying about that either. After all, he was planning to invite her over to celebrate his birthday with him too.

"Humph! Well at least you haven't forgotten about me yet! By the way, aren't you up to date with the messages in our junior high school class group chat? ...Actually, wait. I don't think you're in it. But either way, today's Chase's birthday! He's said that he wanted all our old classmates to get together since we haven't met each other in such a long time."

"Since he was going to host a birthday celebration anyway, he decided to make it a class gathering as well to kill two birds with one stone! Even our junior high school class teacher and English teacher will be attending today. Will you join us?" asked Lolita.

“Mr. Weiss will be attending as well? Hasn’t he already retired this year?” asked Gerald as he tried to recall who Chase was.

Though he had trouble remembering who the classmate was, Gerald could easily remember his class teacher, Mr. Carson Weiss. In fact, the memory of his teacher was very clear.

Mr. Weiss had been a particularly kind teacher who taught him the Weston dialect.

Back then, Gerald had a very difficult time at home and he couldn’t even afford to pay for his own textbooks. Mr. Weiss had always been there to help him, even going so far as to pay for Gerald’s textbook with his own money.

Gerald could still remember those scenes clearly in his mind.

In his first two years of university, Gerald would live a frugal lifestyle just so that he could save up some money. When he returned to his hometown for the New Year’s, regardless of how expensive it was, he would always bring some gifts with him whenever he visited Mr. Weiss. In the past two years, however, Gerald found it hard to even afford to pay for his own tuition fees. He was in such a destitute state back then that he couldn’t even visit Mr. Weiss at all.

“I heard that Mr. Weiss fell critically ill last year... Is he doing alright now?” asked Gerald.

“He’s recovered from that a long time ago. How else could he possibly have agreed to attend Chase’s birthday celebration today?”

“Actually, stop asking so many questions! You’ll be able to ask him personally when you meet him face to face later! He’s always thought very highly of you and Xenos, even from back then! He’ll definitely be very pleased to see you today. Though we’ve arranged to meet up at eight, you can bet that Mr. Weiss will definitely come earlier than that just so that he can chat more with us!”

“That’s great to hear! However, I don’t think I’ll be able to participate in the gathering,” said Gerald somewhat embarrassedly.

Chapter 562

“Oh? Are you busy or something? Oh! Don’t worry, it’ll be Chase’s treat today! Even if we have to settle our own bills, I’ll back you up, alright?” said Lolita as she assumed Gerald’s worries.

Naturally, it wasn’t about monetary issues. It was just that Gerald still had to celebrate his own birthday today!

Even if Gerald turned her invitation down, it wouldn’t matter much to Lolita. However, since he now knew that Mr. Weiss would be attending as well, he couldn’t help but feel like he would be letting his ex-teacher down if he didn’t join the gathering.

“No, it’s not about the money... In all honesty, I was originally planning to invite you to celebrate my birthday with me today! But since you’ve mentioned Mr. Weiss, how about this? I’ll just go along with you to have a brief chat with him. After that, I’ll return and get back to my own celebration!” replied Gerald.

“...Oh? It’s your birthday today? Well this is embarrassing! Alright, I think your plan sounds good. We’ll go there, have a chat with Mr. Weiss and the rest of our classmates, then we’ll leave together and celebrate your birthday! What about Xeno? Have you already invited him?” asked Lolita.

“I have, but he’s told me that he can only come over at noon. His business is still new after all, and he hasn’t had the time to hire more employees yet. He has to deal with so many things!”

“Alright! And yeah, he’s really impressive now! Though my dad used to look down on his family, he personally brought some gifts over to them yesterday!” replied Lolita, slightly enviously.

Gerald simply nodded without adding anything to that.

By the time their plans were finalized, it was nearing eight o’clock.

Both of them then rushed to the designated restaurant in town. Since Gerald lived in the main village, the main street in town was within walking distance.

Meanwhile, several of their former junior high classmates were already at the restaurant's entrance.

They were all gathered together as they chatted among themselves. After all, wasn't this the purpose of all class reunions? Meetings like these would always be very cordial.

The contents of their conversations mostly regarded their current status quos as well as ample reminiscing of their shared pasts.

"Look there! Lolita's here!" said a few classmates as they pointed toward her and Gerald.

"...Huh? That's Gerald right? Well d*mn! I didn't think that he'd be here today!"

"Hahaha! I know right? I thought he had already disappeared off the face of the earth. Nobody would have expected to see him here today!"

"You know, I heard some news that Gerald lived a miserable life in university. He was even struggling to pay for his own tuition fees! Another friend of mine told me that when he was having a meal with his own friend in Mayberry City, he saw Gerald washing the dishes in the kitchen! It was too embarrassing for him to even go up to Gerald and say hello!"

"Heh, he's always been poor after all. He doesn't really have a choice but to take on any jobs he can find!"

When everyone saw Gerald, he immediately became the main topic of their conversations and they simply laughed.

Within the group, one of the girls clearly stood out among her other classmates due to her outstanding temperament. She was just chatting with her friends when she heard Gerald's name being mentioned.

She immediately felt goosebumps on her skin as she blushed and turned to look at Gerald who was still walking over.

“Hehe... You used to be in a relationship with Gerald, right Sherry? Don’t even try to deny that both of you used to date!” said one of the girls as she covered her mouth with a hand, trying not to laugh.

“Don’t go spouting nonsense! When were we ever in a relationship?” replied Sherry as her cheeks became as red as tomatoes.

“Both of you were definitely in a relationship at one point. I can still remember you exchanging letters with him! You used to be very close to Gerald!” added the same girl from before.

“That’s not true...!” replied Sherry in a softer tone.

“Sherry, don’t you remember why Xeno beat someone up...? Hehe... Anyway, let’s forget about that. Let’s just talk about something else!”

Realizing that she had almost stepped on a landmine, the girl quickly tried to change the topic as she stuck her tongue out rather awkwardly.

“By the way, are you still seeing the guy who tried to beat Gerald up back then?” asked another girl.

“We’ve stopped seeing each other a long time ago...” replied Sherry as she blushed.

After saying that, she turned to look at Gerald again. She hadn’t met him for the past six years.

Chapter 563

When Gerald was finally close enough, he started greeting the classmates who came over to say hello to him.

He also saw Sherry, and Gerald couldn’t help but feel slightly embarrassed as well.

After all, both of them had dated before in the past. Though they technically hadn’t truly dated, the relationship they shared back then was similar enough to dating.

In short, it had been quite an ambiguous relationship.

Sherry had also been the reason why Yale, the school bully, set his eyes on Gerald in the first place.

Everyone knew what happened next. In the end, Sherry got together with Yale.

Gerald had earlier wondered whether she would be here at the gathering as well.

It would be extremely awkward and embarrassing to meet her today. After all, he hated her. He hated her a lot.

Though Xeno and Gerald had done everything because of her, she still decided to be with their rival instead.

Xeno lost his opportunity to continue studying. And it was all because of her.

How couldn't it be awkward for Gerald? He wasn't even sure what kind of attitude he should show toward her at this point!

Even though they had been quite close to each other before that incident, both of them completely stopped talking to each other after it happened.

Should Gerald strive to take revenge on her?

After giving it some thought, he realized that it was her own choice to be with him in the end. That had nothing to do with Gerald.

If he really wanted to settle the score, he should look for Yale.

Making his mind up, he simply decided to ignore her.

“Hehe... He’s quite ruthless. Gerald didn’t even bother to come over and say hello to you at all! By the way, Sherry, doesn’t Gerald seem to have a pretty good temperament now? What more, he’s dressed so well now! He’s actually quite handsome!” said one of the girls as she laughed.

Sherry found herself fixing her own hair. She couldn’t help but feel slightly uncomfortable when she heard someone else praising Gerald. It felt as though someone had just landed a mental slap to her face.

After all, she had been the one who had dumped him. If he was truly living a better life now, of course she would feel uncomfortable!

“Yeah, he is pretty handsome!” replied Sherry casually.

“Hey! Our class teacher and Miss Yahn are here!” shouted a voice.

At that moment, a car stopped by the restaurant’s entrance. As the back door opened, an old man in his sixties stepped out. It was Mr. Weiss in the flesh.

The one driving was a rather young lady who looked to be around the age of twenty-seven. She was equally mature, sexy, and beautiful. Bearing a very good temperament herself, the woman in question was Kristen Yang, their old English teacher from third grade.

Back when she taught them, she had just graduated from university at the age of twenty-two. She was a replacement teacher for Gerald’s class.

Due to her beauty and youth, she got along easily with her students.

However, Gerald simply gave a simple glance toward her. He didn’t have any intentions of greeting her.

When he saw Mr. Weiss however, he immediately ran over to help him out of the car.

“Gerald? It’s you! Why didn’t you come visit me in the past two years?”

When Mr. Weiss saw Gerald, his wrinkled face was immediately filled with joy. As he spoke, he held on to Gerald's hand excitedly.

Mr. Weiss had taken really good care of both Gerald and Xeno in the past, and Gerald had never forgotten all the kindness he had received.

Gerald then quickly explained why he hadn't been visiting.

"Pfft. Why are you here, Gerald? Just look at you. What are you even working as now? Why're you dressed so pretentiously?" said Kirsten as she skimmed a glance at Gerald. She had a satirical expression on her face.

Xeno once had a conflict with Kristen in the past. Ever since that day, she had hated both him and Gerald. Though Gerald hadn't been directly involved with it, the friend of her enemy was also her enemy.

It was his own fault for being such good friends with Xeno.

Back then, she would consistently make things difficult for both Xeno and Gerald who were simply paupers in her class. How dare they go against her?

This was also the reason why Gerald hadn't planned to greet her earlier. After hearing her remark, he simply looked at her without saying another word.

Mr. Weiss broke the silence by saying, "Gerald, you're an adult now so you can drink alcohol! Why don't we use this opportunity? Accompany me and let's have a drink!"

"Mr. Weiss, wait..."

Chapter 564

Just as Gerald was about to say something, he was promptly cut off by another person talking loudly. It was Chase.

“Wow! So many of our classmates are here today! All of you are really giving me a lot of face for attending! I’ve already made all the necessary arrangements today so why not enter first before continuing to chat?”

As he scanned through the crowd, he saw Mr. Weiss and Kristen. With a smile on his face, he walked over to both of them before saying, “Mr. Weiss! Miss Yahn! Welcome, let’s go in and have a seat first! Eh? You’re here too Gerald? Well Alright then! Let’s go in together!”

Chase was slightly surprised to see Gerald so he simply greeted him casually.

“Hey Sherry, come over here. Can’t you see that our class teacher is already here?” called out Chase when he saw her.

As soon as she stood beside him, Chase immediately interlocked his fingers with hers.

Most of their classmates were taken aback when they saw this, and this included Gerald.

Sherry was apparently in a relationship with Chase!

Gerald immediately knew that it was only going to get more awkward the longer he stayed at the gathering.

However, he couldn’t just leave now because Mr. Weiss was still holding on to his hand.

‘I can tell Mr. Weiss about it then,’ Gerald thought to himself.

Once everyone had entered the room, the classmates continued chatting among themselves.

The common topic shared by most of the conversations, was regarding the classmates’ current situations.

Chase naturally seemed to be the one who was doing best.

After all, he had started working even before he finished high school. He had learned about the ins and outs of big trucks from his uncle.

Chase had used his family's wealth to buy himself two big trucks. Now, he's started his own small-scale logistics company.

Compared to the rest of his peers in the county, he was definitely doing very well. It was no wonder why Sherry chose to be with Chase.

"Heh, what a blessing for Sherry to be able to be together with Chase now. She must be enjoying the life of a lady boss now! Hahaha!"

"I know right? She's so beautiful. I guess that's why she's so lucky!"

Several of the classmates were talking about her enviously.

"By the way, Gerald, what are you doing now?" asked Chase out of the blue.

Though both Chase and Gerald didn't have many notable interactions back in junior high, Chase was well aware of Gerald's past with Sherry.

It was natural for a boyfriend to express hate toward his girlfriend's ex, and this was exactly what Chase was feeling at that moment.

What more, Gerald was dressed even better than he was! Seeing how well dressed Gerald was made Chase ask his tentative question.

Mr. Weiss was looking at Gerald as well.

"I'm just doing my own business!" replied Gerald.

"Hahaha! Oh god, Gerald's actually started his own business?"

At that moment, a few female classmates immediately burst out laughing.

"What kind of business are you running? Are you selling socks at the night market?"

"Hahaha! Really now, are you just starting a business because everyone else is doing the same? Gerald, it's not like we're trying to put you down, but you should be more self-aware of yourself! Wouldn't it be easier for someone like you to just look for a job somewhere?"

Kristen had been the one who asked that question. She then sneered before adding, "I'm not trying to pick a bone with you or Xeno, but even though both of you have really good grades, the two of you are at the bottom of society! Do you know why? It's because both of you have no connections. You even lack a proper family background! I heard that Xeno's fixing cars for people right now, right? What future is there in doing something like that?!"

She ended her sentence as she smiled contemptuously.

"That's not right, Miss Yahn. On the contrary, Xeno's doing very well now. He's opened his own large automobile trading company, or at least that's what I heard!"

"Yeah, I heard the same thing. He was really lucky since the Dream Investment Group decided to invest in his company!"

When Kristen heard this, she couldn't help but feel slightly disappointed.

"So what? It won't be long before those people will decide to withdraw their capital and investment! When that time comes, Xeno will just have to go back to repairing cars then!"

“Alright, alright, that’s enough. Speaking of which, Chase, didn’t you inform Xeno about the gathering today?” asked Mr. Weiss quickly to change the subject, sensing the awkwardness in the atmosphere.

“Oh! No I didn’t! I don’t really keep in touch with him,” replied Chase as he put his teacup down before sneering.

“I actually contacted him! Also, while I have all your attention now, Chase! You’re actually not the only one celebrating your birthday today! You share the same birthday with another of our classmates!” said one of the girls out of the blue.

Chapter 565

“Oh? Another classmate is celebrating their birthday today too?” asked Chase as he smiled with a slightly raised brow.

“That’s right! Today is Kirk’s birthday as well! Going back to Xeno, when I told him about the celebration, Xeno told me that he wasn’t free to attend today!”

Kirk was another of their junior high classmates. Though he was a pretty honest and straightforward person, academic-wise, he was always at the bottom of the class.

His family owned a cement factory and since he realized he wasn’t cut out for studying, he immediately started working for his family after graduating from junior high school.

Everyone was now looking at Kirk.

“Well d*mn! Why didn’t you tell us it was your birthday today too, Kirk? Well this is embarrassing! Hahaha!” said Chase.

“So it’s your birthday today too! Everyone, let’s add Kirk on WeChat so that we can each give him a red envelope for his birthday!”

Hearing the suggestion from one of their classmates, the crowd cheered in agreement.

Mr. Weiss simply smiled before saying, "Why don't you young people give gifts as birthday presents anymore? When I was your age, I had to prepare my own gifts to give to other people! Now that we have WeChat, things have become much more convenient!"

"They really have, Mr. Weiss! We can just send red envelopes to settle everything! From birthdays, to wedding celebrations!" replied the girls as they laughed.

"I've already added you on WeChat, Kirk! Remember to accept the red envelope!"

"Alright, alright! Thank you so much, everyone! I really hadn't expected my birthday to be on the same day as Chase's!"

Seeing how well he was being treated by all his classmates, Kirk was feeling extremely flattered. He kept thanking them over and over again.

"What a coincidence! While Kirk and Chase share the same birth date, someone else does as well! Have you all already forgotten who else used to celebrate his birthday on the same day as Chase back in junior high?" said Lolita hurriedly when she saw everyone sending money over to Kirk for his birthday.

"Who? Nobody really comes to mind!"

Several of the classmates seemed very puzzled.

"Humph! If you really can't guess, it's Gerald! His birthday is today too! He's always celebrated his birthday on the same day as Chase. Three of our classmates are celebrating their birthdays today!" said Lolita.

"Oh, so it's Gerald!"

The classmates then nodded to acknowledge that they now knew. However, nobody said anything else.

“Speaking of which, Chase, I heard that there’s going to be some activities in Fuenti later in the afternoon. Let’s go over there and have some fun! My dad said that it’s really lively over there!” said one of the girls cheerfully to break the silence.

“Yeah, that’s what I heard too! Why don’t we all go there to enjoy ourselves later?”

Everyone there seemed to agree with the suggestion.

“I’m fine with that. How many cars do we have here? Oh, and Miss Yahn! You should come with us later in the afternoon too! Now let’s see if we have enough space to carpool everyone to save on cab fares!” suggested Chase.

After he said that, a headcount was done and there were just enough cars to accommodate everyone.

However, upon doing a second headcount, they found that one extra person wouldn’t be able to join the carpool.

“Well this is awkward! There’s one person left and it really isn’t worth renting a cab just for a single person!” said one of the girls.

One of the guys coughed before saying, “If that’s the case, then Gerald shouldn’t join us. He has his business to attend to anyway, so if he comes along, we’ll only be stopping him from doing his work!” He then laughed.

“That’s right. I think Gerald shouldn’t come along either! Hahaha!”

“I won’t be going anyway. All of you go have your fun. Mr. Weiss, the only reason why I came here today was to meet you. I was originally planning to invite you over to my own birthday banquet today, but it seems that that idea would be inconvenient now. I’ll come meet you in the next two days. I’ll be taking my leave first to attend to some things!” said Gerald as he explained his plans to Mr. Weiss.

“That’s fine then, Gerald. Go on now if you’re busy!” said Mr. Weiss who knew that everyone was ridiculing and making fun of Gerald. He was aware that it would only continue to become more difficult for Gerald the longer he stayed here.

Chapter 566

After that, Gerald looked at Lolita and she nodded before bidding farewell to Mr. Weiss as well.

“What? They’re actually leaving? Did they really just come here to visit Mr. Weiss? What a load of bullshit! What about us? Don’t we exist?” exclaimed a few of the girls, visibly upset.

“Right? Are you holding a grudge against us just because we didn’t wish you a happy birthday?”

“Gerald, I’ll be frank. It’s not that I don’t want to wish you a happy birthday through Line, but I really don’t want your number on my phone in the first place! Hahaha!”

“D*mn! Roasted!”

Immediately after that, everyone began laughing. Laughing at him seemed to be their favorite form of amusement after all.

Gerald simply remained silent. He knew that it wouldn’t be difficult to make them eat their own words. However, he decided to be the bigger person and just left with Lolita. Having a major reaction to his classmates’ mockery would be pretty petty of him after all.

Sherry on the other hand, shook her head as she watched them leave. Throughout the gathering, she had been watching Gerald the entire time. She felt that Gerald was nothing compared to Chase and she was glad that she didn’t end up with him.

“Well that was infuriating! Did you hear what they said? Even Miss Yahn is still on to you! If I wasn’t this close to them I would’ve started a fight for you!” huffed Lolita.

“Don’t waste your energy on them!” said Gerald as he continued pulling Lolita’s hand.

Around twenty minutes later, both of them reached their hometown.

“So Gerald, are you celebrating your birthday at home? Do you want me to cook for you? Just so you know, I’m pretty good at making noodles!” said Lolita.

She seemed to be worried that Gerald’s self-esteem was now in shambles. She took the blame personally since she was the one who had invited him to the gathering. She then continued, “Let’s just forget about them. Actually, since Xeno’s doing pretty well now, we could work under him and stick together! Just like in the old days!”

“Just like the old days indeed!” replied Gerald with a smile. “However, I won’t be celebrating my birthday at home. We’ll be celebrating it in Fuenti instead. I booked a spot at Sunny Springs.”

“...Huh? Sunny Springs? Real funny, Gerald. Someone’s already reserved the entire place! And I don’t just mean just the hotel!” said Lolita in a slight panic just thinking about it. “How could you even have managed to make a reservation there?”

Honestly, Gerald didn’t understand why Zack reserved the entire place either. From what Gerald had expected, there wouldn’t be any more than thirty people attending his birthday celebration. However, Zack could have added some of his own plans, thus Gerald didn’t question him about it.

Gerald then gave a gentle smile before replying, “You’ll understand later. Now let’s go, it’s already eight! We have to hurry since there are others I have to pick up!”

“Wait, you’re being serious? But how will we get there? Fuenti’s quite far away from here!” asked Lolita as she tilted her head. Gerald was acting quite strange and this made Lolita increasingly confused.

“By car. Our ride’s in that alley over there. I’ll drive it out and then we can go pick up the Winters!” said Gerald as he shook his car keys before her to see.

When they arrived at the alley, Lolita was left utterly shocked when she saw their ride.

“A-An Audi A6? Is this your car, Gerald?” asked Lolita, frozen in place.

“Nope. It’s a company car. You’ll be able to see mine in the hotel when we get there!” replied Gerald with a smile. He then turned to look at the shocked-frozen girl before saying, “Come on now. Get in while I give Mr. Winters a call...”

Chapter 567

After picking everyone up, there were four people in the car as they headed for Fuenti. It took roughly around twenty minutes for them to arrive at Sunny Springs.

Gerald really hadn’t expected to see such a huge crowd. Luxury cars continued to enter, one after another, and several hawkers had congregated at Sunny Springs’s entrance. After all, this was their prime opportunity to make a profit off the ever-growing crowd. Rather than a birthday celebration, it looked like an entire festival.

‘How lively!’ Gerald thought to himself.

A red carpet had been laid out from the entrance all the way to the hotel, and dozens of employees were rushing around, busy welcoming any honored guests they could see.

If it weren’t for Zack, Gerald really wouldn’t have thought of hosting something on such a grand scale. It didn’t even feel like the event was to celebrate his birthday anymore.

“Christ, there’s so many people here! How did you even manage to make a reservation, Gerald? It’s impossible for me to even imagine!” asked Lolita, still very puzzled.

“She’s right, sonny! Let’s just find a nice little diner to celebrate. Better yet, your momma could cook for us! It’s just so crowded here and the food is so expensive!” exclaimed Mr. Winters.

“Don’t worry about any of that, we’ll still be celebrating here!” said Gerald with a chuckle.

Gerald knew that there was nothing to hide anymore. The celebration was made for him, and him alone. Just as Gerald was about to explain himself, Francis and a few of his friends approached them.

“Grandpa? Grandma? What are you doing here?” asked Francis when he saw them.

“Ah, Francis! You didn’t tell us that your grandparents were coming! We could’ve told the employees to let them in. We only got in because of our leader too!” said one of his friends.

Francis coughed before saying, “Just as you said, we’re only here because of our leader. It’s not like we’re here for work, but could we even ask for something like that? Since my parents weren’t invited either, even they can only hang out around this area!”

“Well, we’re here to celebrate Gerald’s birthday. Speaking of which, where are your parents now?” asked Mr. Winters as he explained.

“Pfft! Gerald’s birthday? Then why are all of you even here? This entire place is reserved!” said Francis as he glared at Gerald.

Francis knew how good-tempered his grandparents were. To him, Gerald had brought the two of them—who were both obviously clueless—over despite knowing full well that the place had been fully reserved. It was as though Gerald only wanted to embarrass him in front of his colleagues.

“Dad? Mom? What brings you two here?” asked Boss, his annoyance reflected in his tone. All of a sudden, the entire family seemed to have gathered over to talk to them.

The other Winters had attended the event, knowing that it was a celebration for some powerful figure. Not only was the celebration being hosted in the exquisite Sunny Springs, several celebrities had also been invited over. This was a prime chance for them to have some fun.

Aside from that, it was also the perfect opportunity for them to expand their network. This was the gist of why the entire family was here.

“Humph, why else? Gerald brought them here!” huffed Francis as he explained the situation to the rest of his family.

“Hah! What a joke! Have a good look around you! As if someone like you could ever celebrate your birthday here!” said Sandrilla as she chuckled, her arms crossed.

She thought that it was impossible for Gerald to reserve a table here. After all, if he had indeed managed to do so, that would mean that he was even more powerful than her own daughter! There was just no way that that could ever be true!

“Indeed! I thought that you’d just find some diner downtown to celebrate! Who would’ve thought that you would instead come over to Fuenti? If we knew your plans, we would’ve brought mom and dad over ourselves! Who do you even think you are?” added the third sister in law.

Chapter 568

“Settle down now, today’s Gerald’s birthday and he said that he’d treat us to dinner. Since all of you don’t seem to have anything better to do, let’s just celebrate his birthday together! Show us to the restaurant, Gerald!” suggested Mr. Winters.

“What? We’re busy dad. You know, we’re going to have dinner with some of Boss’s friends. Why don’t you come with us instead?” asked the first sister in law.

She then turned to look at Francis before saying, “Fran, Jazz, both of you can run along now. You don’t have to waste any more time here, and remember to be on your best behavior when your leader arrives!”

Francis and his colleagues nodded immediately. They knew how important the event was. After glaring at Gerald one final time, Francis left with his colleagues.

As for Queeny, she had been quietly observing Gerald the entire time.

Just a while ago, everyone was making fun of Gerald. Some were even openly insulting him. However, Queeny knew better since she was already aware that Gerald had quite a bit of influence in the attraction. Back in the day, Gerald would’ve just lowered his head in embarrassment. Now, however, he was smiling. He had been smiling the entire time.

‘How is he so confident now? Where did all this confidence even come from?’

‘Could Gerald really be a powerful figure now?’

These were the thoughts swimming in Queeny's mind. Queeny had been very uneasy since the day she last met Gerald. She just couldn't put her finger on why. She was simply afraid of hearing any more about Gerald, thus she hadn't told her parents anything regarding the incident.

However, after hearing Gerald say that he was celebrating his birthday here, she was now growing more and more worried by the second.

"Hmm? Mr. Winters? It really is you!" called out an old, husky voice from behind them. Gerald turned to see who had spoken, and he saw an old man. Behind him, followed a family of four.

"Waxham! I didn't expect to see you here!" exclaimed Mr. Winters excitedly.

Waxham's family members greeted them politely as well. As Gerald scanned through the family, he froze when he saw the two girls standing behind the middle-aged couple. They were Michelle and Xabrina Waxham.

"So, how did the blind date go? I tried asking Elle, but she just wouldn't tell me anything! I just want to know how it went. Oh Gerald, is our darling Elle really not to your liking?"

"Dad, stop talking about him! Maybe he just backed off because he knew he was too poor to be able to date our dear little Elle!" said Michelle's mother.

They hadn't expected the old man to ask about the blind date right off the bat.

Though honestly, what else was there to ask about?

She had rejected him before they even met. Did the old man really think that no one would marry his granddaughter?

Mr. Winters then coughed before saying, "Well, Waxham, this here is Gerald. I'm equally as confused as to what happened that day as well!"

“What? He’s Gerald?” blurted Michelle’s mother. She was now too embarrassed to speak another word. She simply gave a few more peeks at Gerald.

Xabrina on the other hand, immediately started jumping for joy. “Gerald! We meet again!”

Gerald simply gave a gentle smile at her. Michelle on the other hand, awkwardly took a few steps backward. It was clear that Gerald favored her sister much more than her.

“Mom! Dad! Look there, isn’t that Gerald?” shouted a feminine voice. A girl had pointed at Gerald and she was now approaching them.

“Humph! He’s probably just here to check out what the deal is with this crowd. Who cares if it even is Gerald?” scoffed a middle-aged man.

Chapter 569

It was the Jungs.

Willie had been very excited about the event. However, as soon as he saw Gerald, his expression immediately darkened.

Gerald himself dreaded seeing them as well. In the past, he would’ve still greeted them out of politeness. Now, however, such courtesy was no longer necessary.

“Oh my god, look! There are so many luxury cars!”

“Really? Where? Oh god, you’re right!”

Scream after scream could be heard from within the crowd as the cars made their way through. The crowd made sure to split accordingly to allow the cars to pass. As they did so, the employees readied themselves to welcome their new guests.

A middle-aged couple stepped out of the first vehicle, hand in hand.

“A warm welcome to Mr. Samuel Edwards and Mrs. Jennifer Edwards!” As soon as the employees saw the couple, all of them immediately bowed.

“Oh my god, it’s the Edwards! Mr. Edward is the top philanthropist in Sunnysdale! He used to be the richest man there too! I didn’t expect him to come here!”

“I know right? The Edwards retired early and have been traveling around the world since! I can’t believe they’re actually here right now!”

“Even television crews have trouble catching them on tape!”

Everyone was either gossiping or taking photos of Mr. Edward and his wife using their phones.

“Dad, gramps, this is exciting, isn’t it? Mr. Edward used to be the richest man in Sunnysdale!” explained Francis and Jasper smugly as they approached Gerald and his group of three.

This was the first time Mr. Winters had ever seen such a famous figure so close up. He could barely hide his shock and excitement, and the same went for the Waxhams as well.

From the next vehicle, another middle-aged couple stepped out and behind them, their son followed.

“My, my! It’s Mr. Novelzada! He owns quite a few film companies both in Hong Kong and in Mayberry!”

“What brings them here?”

“Oh! This is so exciting! Could they perhaps be planning to build a film company here in Fuentis?”

“Humph! You know, they really are planning on building a film company here! They were planning this when I was in office!” said Francis cockily as he heard the chattering from the speculating crowd.

At that moment, the crowd began cheering wildly again. Everyone was looking at the new guest that had just made his entrance.

“Holy! That’s Mr. Steven Russell! He’s the richest man in Mondale!”

The people in the crowd all stared at him in awe as he walked past.

“What are all these famous people doing here, dad? What’s the occasion?” asked Leila, still in shock.

Since Francis was working with the company, he had an idea of what was actually going on.

“Heh, who else would be this powerful to invite all these people? It’s definitely an event for Mr. Crawford! Though the specifics of how powerful he really is in this area is currently unknown, it’s safe to say that he definitely has quite the network!” explained Francis again with an extremely smug look on his face.

“What? Mr. Crawford? So he’s the one celebrating his birthday?” asked Leila.

The information caught on quickly and began spreading like wildfire among those in the crowd.

Everyone was exclaiming, “Oh, so that’s why! It’s Mr. Crawford’s birthday! Who else would come to a small town like Fuenti?”

“Speaking of which, why hasn’t there been any news about Mr. Crawford on the internet?” asked a curious person in the crowd.

“Why else? Mr. Crawford just likes keeping a low profile!”

“That’s right! Only a select few in the world know what Mr. Crawford actually looks like!”

A loud discussion had now begun among the people in the crowd.

“So it really is Mr. Crawford’s birthday today! I was right!”

Chapter 570

It was then that the rest of the Winters realized that the celebration was being held for such a powerful figure.

Gerald, on the other hand, was being squeezed within the crowd, feeling slightly stunned. He hadn’t expected Zack to go all out with the celebration, nor had he imagined that so many famous celebrities would be invited over.

He had estimated for only thirty people to participate at most, and this was clearly way more than that!

“Wait! Guys, look! Isn’t that Mr. Zebriel from Sunnydale?”

“Oh f*ck, it is! Even Mr. Zebriel’s here!”

The crowd had been continuously shocked by the main guests of the event.

“Say mom, I’m going to go take some photos, could you guys take care of my stuff? Okay guys, let’s go!” said Francis in a serious tone as he rushed off while holding his camera.

With celebrities arriving at the scene one after another, nothing could make the crowd shut up.

Mr. Winters himself was delighted. After all, he had only been able to see all these people on television before. Many famous actors and actresses were present for the celebration as well.

At that moment, several luxury sports cars arrived at the entrance and out stepped the many rich heirs of Mayberry.

“Oh god, there are so many cute guys! And they’re all rich heirs too!” squealed several girls.

“That’s Yoel Holden, Mr. Crawford’s godbrother! I’ve seen photos of him online! Though he’s a little on the chubbier side, he still manages to pull the look off! He’s so cute, I love him so much!”

“And that’s Aiden Baker! He’s the best looking one among them all! He’s so tall and handsome! You know, I heard that he looks pretty similar to Mr. Crawford! I’d be able to die without regrets if he just gave me a tiny kiss!”

“Oh! Oh! And that guy there is…”

As the list went on, many of the girls gathered upfront, making sure to capture as many photos as they possibly could.

“Gosh, these boys are just so good looking, and they’re filthy rich as well! Now, I don’t really hope for too much from you girls, but if you find someone even half as good as they are, I’d be so much prouder of you!” exclaimed Michelle’s mother.

She had high hopes for her daughters. If they could someday successfully marry one of those rich heirs, her life would become so much better.

With hands in their pockets, Yoel and Aiden slowly walked toward the entrance. Since they had sunglasses on, the constant flashes from the cameras didn’t bother them at all. They had been told by the organizers that they would be taking a group photo in the plaza.

As he continued watching the employees greet the famous figures, Willie only grew more and more envious. His cheeks were a bright red due to all his pent up anger.

“See that guy? If it weren’t for him, I’d be the one welcoming the guests!” huffed Willie, green with envy.

Only experienced employees were allowed to enter the building to greet the famous people. Since Willie was only able to watch from the crowd, it was obvious why he was feeling so upset.

“Look at that. The attraction’s employees brought their families and relatives along with them! Why don’t we have someone with such benefits?” said Sandrilla before sighing, her words filled with jealousy.

She then turned to Queeny before saying, “Darling, do your best and work harder, alright? Next time you’ll definitely be able to bring me along during similar large events!”

Though Queeny nodded, her eyes were staring into space. Her mind was completely blank. She wasn’t even sure what to feel about such a big event.

‘Of course any sane person would want to walk on that red carpet. Who would ever settle for simply being part of the audience?’ Queeny thought to herself.

“Excuse me, passing through!”

Gerald had decided at that moment that it was high time for him to enter the building himself. After all, almost everyone had arrived.

There was no way they could start the party without him. While he was thinking about this, he ended up being pushed back by the crowd.

“F*ck off! Stop pushing us, you freak!”

“Yeah, why are you rushing over? Ugh!”

The many girls gathered in the front row took turns rolling their eyes at Gerald, visibly disgusted.

Chapter 571

“Humph! Just look at you. Trying to squeeze in front like that!” scoffed Sandrilla as she watched Gerald get pushed to the back again.

‘D*mn it all!’ Gerald thought to himself. He couldn’t progress forward at all!

“Hey Gerald? Maybe you should just watch from here. I mean look at all the celebrities!” suggested Lolita.

As she said that, the last guest arrived at the celebration.

In the conference hall, Zack himself was already on the stage, giving thanks to all the present guests. All of a sudden, Zack’s phone began to ring and everyone went silent.

Despite the fact that there were so many people in the outdoor conference hall, it was so quiet that one could hear a pin drop.

“It’s been hours... Which one of them is Mr. Crawford? Why haven’t we seen him yet?”

“Maybe he didn’t come? But that’s impossible, right?”

“Or maybe he’s already inside! Perhaps he just didn’t want to expose what he looks like?”

“Huh? Does that mean we won’t be able to meet him?” said a few of the girls in disappointment.

The girls had been eager to see what the billionaire looked like, much more so than simply seeing Aiden and Yoel. Knowing what Mr. Crawford looked like had been their main objective from the moment they knew who the celebration was being hosted for.

“Darn it, why isn’t Mr. Crawford showing himself yet?” asked Leia rather impatiently.

“Maybe he just doesn’t want to be seen!” responded Willie.

Meanwhile in the conference hall, the atmosphere was getting gloomier by the minute. Zack had picked up on the clear change in mood, but even he was slightly confused.

It was almost eleven and according to what was promised, Gerald should have already arrived after picking the Winters up.

Zack then smiled before saying, "Apologies, everyone! I'll give Mr. Crawford a call immediately. He might be held up by something!"

After saying that, he pulled his phone out from his pocket and dialed Gerald's number.

"Oh, did you hear that? He really is coming! Mr. Crawford's just a little late!"

"Yeah! That means we'll get to eventually see him, right?" cheered the girls.

At that moment, Gerald's phone began to ring. Since the crowd was already so silent, the source of the ringing was extremely apparent.

Everyone was now looking at Gerald in shock. After all, after Zack dialed that number, Gerald's phone immediately started ringing. It was just some coincidence, right?

"Hahaha! If we didn't know any better, we'd have mistaken him for Mr. Crawford!" said someone in the crowd before laughing.

"Hey, Mr. Lyle. I'm already here but I'm being held up by the huge crowd. I'll be over in a minute," said Gerald after answering the call.

"My god, that person must be out of his mind! As if he could ever be Mr. Crawford! What a good actor!"

"I know right? What a funny guy!" Everyone then started making fun of Gerald.

After hanging up, Gerald began walking to the front. This time, none of the girls tried to stop him. Instead, they simply stared at him in shock.

“Gerald? What are you doing? Come back!” called out Lolita. She thought that Gerald was clearly out of his mind as well.

As Gerald walked to the middle of the red carpet, everyone just continued staring at him with puzzled expressions on their faces. When they saw him, all the honored guests walked out of the building, led by none other than Zack.

“Cr*p, cr*p, cr*p, cr*p! He’s caught their attention!” said Lolita under her breath in a panic.

At that moment, all the honored guests simultaneously greeted, “Mr. Crawford!” Their voices were so in sync, that the greeting echoed through the hall like an avalanche.

“M-Mr. Crawford? What?”

Chills were sent down everyone’s spines when they heard the intense, loud greeting.

Willie and Leia’s eyes widened, clearly in shock.

‘He’s Mr. Crawford...? How could that even be possible?’

Chapter 572

Willie had always thought that Gerald was nothing more than a mere acquaintance. He had never thought that Gerald would ever make it this far. Due to that, he had always looked down upon him. In the past, Willie had even tried his best to avoid him, just to prevent Gerald from asking him for help.

Now however, all these famous figures were calling him Mr. Crawford. The mysterious Mr. Crawford of Mayberry turned out to be Gerald this entire time!

This fact was...

Willie gulped hard. His mind was blank and the realization of the situation was akin to a massive slap to his face. He was so shocked that the corner of his mouth was even twitching.

Leila herself was covering her mouth with both her hands, equally as shocked as her father.

It wasn't any different for the Winters who all looked shocked to their cores.

However, it was Waxham's two daughters who had it the worst. It had never occurred to them that Gerald would ever be the actual Mr. Crawford.

No wonder he was so rich! What was the meaning of all this?!

"A-ah! Mr. Crawford! You're so good looking!" yelled a few girls toward him.

Gerald simply ignored the shouts of flattery before turning to Lolita, Mr., and Mrs. Winters who were still stunned at the revelation. With a smile on his face, he then said, "I told you I had a table reserved for us. Now let's go!"

After that, he pulled Lolita by the hand and slowly guided the two Winters forward with his other arm. The four of them then walked out of the crowd together. Lolita found herself gulping once again, still within her state of utter shock.

When they got closer, Yoel, Aiden, and several other rich heirs came forward to welcome them.

"I'll lead the way, mister!" said Aiden with a smile as he held Mr. Winters by the arm. Gerald simply followed behind them.

As Michelle watched Gerald walk past her, she was instantly reminded of the blind date event just a few days ago.

"Sis, I don't want to meet up with that poor freak! Could you go in my place and reject him?" said Michelle.

“Yeah, my baby wouldn’t marry him even if he was the last man alive! Who does he think he is? Does he really think he can provide for my little Elle? Think again, freak!”

This time it was Michelle’s mother who spoke, for she too was reminded of the blind date.

Despite saying that, the truth was that the two were now engulfed by both regret and embarrassment.

The same applied for the rest of the Winters, who were equally as embarrassed.

“Hey guys, tomorrow’s my birthday! If you’re free, would you like to have dinner with me? There won’t be a lot of people!” At that moment, all of the Winters were replaying Gerald’s invitation to them in their minds. He had even invited them with a welcoming smile the day before. But what had they said?

“We’re busy. Who has the time to celebrate your birthday?”

“I know right? Don’t go copying others and hosting birthday parties! Just look at you, can you even afford a birthday celebration?”

“We don’t have the time and energy to go to your pity party. Fran has work to do too!”

“...”

Gerald had tried to invite them twice, and now, all of them had mixed emotions brewing within them.

At that moment, Queeny’s phone dropped to the ground. She had constantly been worried that Gerald would eventually become better than her. Now, her worst nightmare had come to life before her very eyes.

No wonder Gerald was able to have everyone here cling to him. Even that Wadford guy from the day before had treated him with utmost respect! And it was now clear why Gerald had invited her grandparents to specifically celebrate his birthday here. Gerald was Mr. Crawford this entire time!

Willie himself was staring at him with hope in his eyes as Gerald walked past. Maybe there would still be a chance that Gerald would acknowledge his presence. Maybe Gerald would even wave at him.

All these years, both the Winters and Gerald had been the nicest to him. He had always wondered why the Dream Investment Group funded him when his project was facing difficulties. As it turned out, Gerald had always been looking out for him.

He had used to call him Uncle Jung as well, back when they were still a bit closer. Willie knew that it was his own fault for slowly distancing himself from Gerald. He was now regretting everything that he had done, and he wished that he could rewind time to start fresh with Gerald. However, he knew that that wasn't going to happen, so all he could do was look toward the floor, filled with embarrassment.

“Holy! Look over there! What car is that?”

At that moment, a number of girls screamed as they pointed toward the entrance. They were secretly hoping that their voices would catch Gerald's attention as well.

As Gerald turned to see what they were pointing at, everyone was already in total shock. An extremely luxurious looking sports car was slowly heading toward the entrance!

Chapter 573

“Holy cr*p! That's a Lamborghini Reventón! That thing costs more than 200 million!”

Everyone was exclaiming in awe.

At that moment, Sienna and Xeno stepped out of the car. Xeno then tossed the car keys over to Gerald before saying, “Here you go, brother! I brought it here, just like you told me to!”

Gerald had asked Xeno for a favor two days ago. Since he didn't have a car in this area and he still needed some form of transportation, he had told Xeno to bring his car over.

Gerald smiled as he patted Xeno on the shoulder. They then entered the conference hall together.

“So that car belongs to Mr. Crawford!” said everyone with envy in their voices.

After taking loads of pictures, the birthday celebration finally started. According to Zack, this celebration was way less grand compared to what Gerald’s sister had hosted back then.

Gerald didn’t have any trouble accepting that fact. After all, his sister had rented an entire island for her birthday party! That was just way too over the top, even if it was for her birthday!

The party continued till about three in the afternoon.

Though Giya had promised that she would come to the party, in the end, she didn’t. After Gerald tried calling her several times, she finally picked up. Her excuse was that she wasn’t feeling well so she couldn’t make it.

Slightly worried, Gerald asked her if she was okay, but she immediately hung up on him.

He decided not to question her any further after that. After all, it wasn’t obligatory for her to attend his birthday party. After drinking a few shots, Gerald decided to rest in one of the waiting rooms.

“Hey, who are you people? No outsiders allowed in here!” said a bodyguard outside.

“I’m Mr. Crawford’s relative! I’m Mr. Jung!” replied the voice of a middle-aged man.

Of course it was Willie Jung. He had begged his colleagues to let him in, and after entering the hall, he immediately headed over to see Gerald.

He had two reasons to be this desperate.

Firstly, he knew that the rumors of him insulting Gerald would spread as quickly as a disease would. Due to that, he may end up losing even his current position. He was well aware that he had crossed the line back then.

Secondly, if he tossed his ego aside and begged for Gerald's forgiveness, he may even have the chance to get promoted back to his original position! For Willie, now was the time to go all out.

It was terribly upsetting for him after finding out that Gerald had such a massive network. He cursed himself for insulting Gerald. If he hadn't, his life could have been so much better now.

He had several questions about the Crawford family swimming in his mind. One of them was how he became so powerful in such a short amount of time. However, Willie knew better to keep those thoughts to himself at least for now. All that mattered at that moment, was for him to meet Gerald.

"Please, I'd like to see Mr. Crawford! Could you please tell him that his Uncle Jung is here?" pleaded Willie as Leila and Leia waited behind him.

The bodyguard was rightfully unsure. He knew better than to mess with anyone related to Gerald. Hence, he entered the room and informed Gerald about Mr. Jung immediately.

After a while, the guard came out again, shooting Willie a dirty look as he said, "Mr. Crawford is resting now. If you'd like to meet him, you'll have to wait!"

"Yes, of course!" replied Willie as he nodded profusely.

With that, half an hour passed...

Another hour soon followed after.

After five long hours of waiting, night had already crept in. However, Willie was still waiting outside the room, his legs sore from standing for so long.

"Mr. Crawford is currently having his dinner. He told you to come back another day, and he'll consider meeting you then," said the bodyguard after he came out of the room again.

The corner of Willie's mouth couldn't help but twitch again when he heard that.

Chapter 574

Willie knew that Gerald had purposely made him wait for that long. After all, he had made Gerald go through a similarly long wait in the past.

While this was happening, a Rolls-Royce Phantom was speeding down the roads of Yanken. It seemed to be heading toward Mayberry.

Sitting at the back of the car was a stylish and young, rich woman. To be frank, 'woman' would be an overstatement since she looked more like a young lady who had freshly graduated from university.

"Are we there yet?" asked the lady as she opened her eyes slowly. She was focused on the scenery outside the car's window.

"We're almost in Mayberry City, miss!" replied the chauffeur.

"Tell the cars behind us to catch up!" ordered the lady after hearing that.

The chauffeur then did as she ordered by relaying the order through a walkie-talkie. Behind the Phantom, around twenty Maybach cars followed closely. Any other cars on the road had to make way for this group of expensive-looking cars.

"Mayberry City and its Mayberry University... These were the two forsaken places where I had to endure all those insults and humiliation... Heh, I'm finally back," said the lady as she reminisced while clenching her fists.

She clenched so hard that her long nails almost dug into her skin.

"Miss, your sister is going to be studying at that university, isn't she? Heh, if that's the case, she's going to be your junior!" said the chauffeur. "I've also heard that the seniors are going to organize a debate competition. Will you be participating in that?"

"Just shut up!" scolded the lady as she closed her eyes again.

The only sound left after that, was the revving of the car's engine and it wasn't long before they arrived at Mayberry.

Moving back to Gerald, he woke up fairly early the next morning. Since he was done with most of the projects at hand, he decided that it was high time for him to return to university.

The three months of summer holiday had passed by extremely quickly. In just two days, the debate competition would be held. Hence, Gerald had decided to return to Mayberry and it was also why he had told Xeno to transfer his car over.

After bidding farewell to the Winters, Gerald was sent off by his sisters-in-law. They held onto his hands right up to the moment he got to his car. They even went so far as to chase after the car till they reached the town's entrance. Only after seeing his car disappear on the horizon, did they return with reluctant looks on their faces.

"Look at Gerald now. He's doing so well! Like I've always said even from when he was still a child, I always knew that he'd become someone whom everyone would look up to, right guys?" said Sandrilla every time she saw a friend.

While he was driving, Gerald received a phone call. It was from Harper Sullivan, the head of their dorm.

"When are you coming back to Mayberry, Gerald?"

"I'm actually on my way right now!" replied Gerald.

"Haha! Well, Benjamin and I are already here in the dorms!"

"D*mn! Are you guys pumped for the exams or something? Won't your girlfriend nag you to spend more time with her?" asked Gerald with a chuckle.

"My baby's gone back to her own university to prepare for her exams as well! Besides, our university's debate competition is earlier than theirs! What more, my cousin's going to start studying in our

university, so I just came along with her! Funnily enough, Benji's cousin is also studying here so he's already here as well!" explained Harper.

"Alright, alright, I'll be at the university by today, so we'll talk then!" said Gerald before hanging up and stepping slightly harder on the car's pedal.

After their third year, some of the fourth year students had gone for their internships while the others chose to remain in the university for their post-graduation. Those from a select few majors however, still had three months left in their semesters.

During the holidays, Gerald barely had any time to revise at all. He had also missed seeing Harper and Benjamin after being separated for so long.

It was past nine when Gerald finally arrived at the campus. Just as he had anticipated, it would seem that it was the first day for many of the new students, which explained the hordes of unfamiliar faces.

"Oh wow, though I've heard rumors that Mayberry University was filled with rich heirs, just look at that! What kind of sports car even is that?" gossiped several girls as soon as Gerald's car arrived at the entrance.

Chapter 575

"Could that be Uriah's car?" By then, quite a large crowd had gathered at the entrance.

Even though Gerald had decided not to keep his identity a secret anymore, he still felt embarrassed to have so many eyes on him. It was difficult, to say the least, for Gerald to adapt to all the sudden attention he was receiving. After giving the situation some thought, he decided not to drive into the campus.

Instead, he turned the car around and parked it in a little forest nearby, just as he had back then. He then began walking over to his campus.

"Gerald?"

At that moment, Gerald heard his name being called out and he was shocked when he noticed the petite uniformed girl who had called out to him.

The girl was equally as shocked when she saw Gerald as well.

After a moment, she smirked before saying, "Heh, what a coincidence that we bumped into each other here!"

"You were able to pass the Mayberry University entrance exams?" asked Gerald in return. He really hadn't expected to meet her here.

"Of course I did! What, you thought someone with grades like me can't get into this university? Haha!" joked the girl as she continued looking at Gerald.

The girl was none other than Xavia's sister, Natasha Yorke. Since he was Xavia's ex-boyfriend, he had been acquainted with Natasha in the past.

His initial impression of her was that she was quite the party animal. During her high school years, she would frequently skip her classes to go to pubs. She even got herself a tattoo on her arm and picked up smoking. She was basically a rebel and her grades back then weren't the prettiest either.

Back when she had first come to visit Xavia in Mayberry, both Xavia and Gerald didn't have much money. To ensure that Natasha would have a good time, both of them had applied for part-time jobs. It came to a point where Xavia even asked Gerald to help Natasha with her homework.

However, the first thing that Natasha said when she first met Gerald was, 'Hey sis, why did you find yourself such a poor boyfriend? He's not rich, nor does he have a strong network. What an utter joke!'

Gerald had decided not to go against her that time since he wanted to be the bigger person.

From that day on, Natasha had constantly looked down on Gerald. Since she would usually visit Xavia during the holidays, both Natasha and Gerald were fairly acquainted due to them occasionally bumping into each other during such occasions.

Gerald hadn't expected to see her as a freshman in the university!

"Yeah, it truly is a coincidence," said Gerald with a soft chuckle.

"Hey Nattie, who's this?" asked a feminine voice. A group of girls who seemed to be her friend was now standing close to Natasha.

"Heh, he's my sister's ex! He's an utter joke!" responded Natasha.

It was quite obvious that Xavia hadn't told Natasha much about Gerald. Gerald himself didn't want to prolong the conversation with Natasha any longer than he needed to. As he turned around to leave, he suddenly stopped in his tracks.

Raising his head slightly, he asked, "Your sister... Xavia. How's she been?"

Back then, Xavia wasn't able to bear the humiliation and she ended up dropping out of university. In all honesty, however, she was the one who had asked for it. After all, she had crossed Gerald's boundaries multiple times.

Despite that, Gerald still felt slightly guilty for ruining her future. What he had done seemed to be too harsh of a punishment, now when he looked back at it.

Still, everyone had a choice. Who was he to force her to choose him? This was the main reason why Gerald still felt guilty for what he did to her.

"Well listen here, you jerk! My sister's doing very, very well! Just you wait and see, you'll definitely be hit by karma for dumping my sister!" said Natasha as she raised a fist toward him. She seemed to be even feistier than she used to be.

"Ah, alright then!" said Gerald before smiling softly and leaving.

As she watched him walk away, Natasha's smile grew even cockier than it had initially been.

"Say Nattie, is that the Gerald you were talking about?" whispered one of her friends into her ear.

"He is, though I'm not the one looking for him. My sister is. I have no idea how much he hurt her, but he's definitely done for this time!" said Natasha with a cold smirk on her face.

She then took her phone out and began dialing a number.

Chapter 576

By then, Gerald had already returned to the dormitory.

When Harper and Benjamin saw him, they immediately rushed over to give him a big hug.

"Welcome back, Gerald!"

He was very pleased to see them as well. In no time at all, the three of them started chatting and catching up with one another.

Gerald had returned to the campus first just to see Harper and Benjamin. He would later still have to head to his company.

As the trio continued chatting with one another, the dormitory door suddenly creaked open.

Gerald was startled when he saw an unfamiliar girl standing at the door.

"Brother!" shouted the girl happily as she looked at Harper.

"Hello, Benjamin! And you must be Gerald, right?"

"That I am. Nice to meet you! Are you Harper's younger sister?" asked Gerald.

"I am! My name's Roseanne! You're so handsome, Gerald!" replied Roseanne with a smile.

"Speaking of which, my brother told me that he's bringing me out for lunch with my new roommates later. Are you coming along with us too, Gerald?" asked Roseanne this time.

It seemed to Gerald that Harper had mentioned him quite often to his sister.

"I'd love to have lunch together, but I don't think I'll have the time to, since I still have to return to the office for a short while. How about this, you guys can go have lunch together first and I'll make some other arrangements for us later in the evening. I'll treat you all to a nice meal later!" suggested Gerald as he smiled.

"I see! That's not good... Alright, Gerald! You should attend to your things first..." said Roseanne, her voice slightly upset. Her eyes reflected her slight disappointment as well.

However, they quickly lit up again as she asked, "Actually, what time will you be done, Gerald? You'll still have to have lunch, right? If you're only going to your office for a short while, you can still join us! We'll just have our lunch a little later than usual!"

"That's true. If I have nothing else going on later, I'll definitely join all of you for lunch! Well, I better get going now so that I can finish up what I need to do faster!"

Gerald felt like he couldn't turn her down a second time.

"Alright, let's go down together! My brother's going to be bringing me around anyway and my friends are already waiting for me downstairs!" suggested Roseanne.

The four of them then headed downstairs together and after exiting, they saw a few girls standing right outside the dormitory.

It was only the first day of orientation but almost everyone's faces looked a little bored. Despite that, having bored expressions didn't change the fact that a few of the girls still looked very beautiful.

After greeting them, Gerald accompanied the group and walked with them for a while before leaving the university and returning to the company.

“Hey, hey! That senior’s really handsome!”

The moment Gerald left, a few of the girls immediately started talking about him.

It was natural since the common topic of discussion for female freshmen was usually about guys. They’d talk about which guy in class was most and least handsome, which senior they walked past looked the most flawless and so forth.

This was usually the case for the boys too though in the reverse gender.

“I know right? He’s kind of gentle and he has quite a good temperament as well!”

Several other girls were now chiming in as well.

“Does Gerald have a girlfriend, Harper?” asked one of the girls.

He simply smiled before replying, “Of course he does. Actually, do you girls know who he really is? I don’t think I’ve even told Roseanne about his true identity yet.”

“Oh? Who is he really?” asked Roseanne curiously.

“Well, have you girls heard about the mysterious Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City?” asked Harper in a suspenseful tone.

“What? Isn’t he that amazingly rich heir from Mayberry City? Aside from him being wealthy, I’ve also read a post on some forum stating that more than half of the big and reputable figures in the Sunnydale Province attended Mr. Crawford’s birthday banquet!”

The girls were surprised to hear Mr. Crawford being brought up. They obviously knew who he was.

“Well, that’s him! Gerald’s Mr. Crawford in the flesh!”

The girls all immediately began either screaming or squealing.

Chapter 577

“Oh my god! That was him? We were actually walking together with Mr. Crawford of Mayberry City?!”

“Harper, you’re not pulling our legs, are you?” asked several of the girls in unison.

“What would I gain from lying to you? Gerald’s always been low-key and we honestly just found out about his real identity quite recently!” replied Harper as he smiled.

“No wonder I kept feeling that Gerald was a little too attractive while we were walking together earlier! So he really is the one and only Mr. Crawford!”

Everyone continued laughing and chatting about Gerald after that. He was now their main topic of conversation.

Harper had planned to take his sister and the other girls around campus to show them where places like the library and swimming pool were. After that, they would be taken to the campus’s cultural exhibition center.

It wasn’t long before a few of the girls couldn’t walk any further. After all, Mayberry University was quite enormous.

“Stop! I can’t go on anymore! I need to take a short rest and I’m thirsty!”

One after another, the girls cried out.

“You should’ve mentioned it earlier if you were thirsty! I’ll go get you girls some drinks!” replied Harper.

“I’m coming along as well!” said Benjamin. He figured that it would be awkward for him to stay with the group of girls by himself so he decided to follow Harper.

The nearest supermarket was about eight minutes away and once they got there, Harper bought six bottles of black tea.

As the duo left the building, they saw two Maybach cars parked at the entrance of the supermarket.

Eight young men wearing sunglasses were standing attentively in front of the two cars. All of them were staring at Harper and Benjamin.

When both of them tried to leave, all eight men stepped forward to block their path.

“What are you trying to do?” asked Harper.

“Follow us!” said the person who seemed to be the leader as he pointed at the fence behind the supermarket. His tone was frigidly cold and he had long hair. Though he looked like a woman, his cold temperament would make anyone shudder in fear.

“Why should we when we don’t even know who you are?” asked Benjamin in return.

Immediately after he spoke, he tried to leave with Harper. However, his attempt was thwarted when the leader instantly grabbed Benjamin’s shoulder.

The rest of the young men acted swiftly as well, and they all grabbed both Benjamin and Harper. The duo was then forced toward the fence behind the supermarket.

By then, several people in the supermarket had noticed the scene and they were all equally stunned.

After all, there were two Maybach cars parked at the entrance and it was obvious that the eight young men weren't ordinary people.

About ten minutes later, the group of people returned, cracking their necks and wrists as they left the fenced area.

The leader wiped what seemed to be blood off his hands with a piece of tissue before tossing it to the side.

They were now walking toward the supermarket.

A girl was waiting for them there and she giggled as she licked her ice-cream.

"Miss Natasha, it's done!" replied the long-haired leader.

His voice was apparently cold no matter who he was talking to.

"Haha... Thanks for the hard work, Dante. It's such a pity that my informant came back to report early. That's why you didn't get to capture Gerald too. D*mn it! This is so unsatisfying!"

Though Natasha had just arrived at the university for a day, she already had many followers of her own.

She was also acting rampantly so nobody dared to provoke her.

What more, she had arrived at the university in a very-high-profile convoy on the very first day of school. This made everyone afraid of her.

"It wasn't hard work at all. I'm always honored to do anything for Miss Natasha and Miss Xavia!"

"Alright then, you can return for now. Be ready for my next call as it could be at any time!" said Natasha as she waved her hand to send the men away before licking her ice-cream again.

Meanwhile, the girls back at campus couldn't help but feel like something was off.

"It's been quite long... Why aren't Harper and Benjamin back yet?"

"It's been about twenty minutes already... Why don't we go over instead to try looking for them?"

"Let's go!"

Before they could leave, a girl who seemed to be their classmate from the neighboring dormitory suddenly ran toward Roseanne and the others.

"R-Roseanne! Something bad has happened! When I went to the supermarket earlier, I saw your brother getting stopped by several men before getting beaten up!"

Chapter 578

"W-what? Where is he now?" replied Roseanne as she trembled in shock.

"Follow me!"

The group of girls then ran after her immediately. When they arrived at the scene, Roseanne saw both Harper and Benjamin bleeding profusely on the ground.

"Brother!"

"Roseanne! I'm fine but those people... They were ruthless!"

Though Harper was used to fighting, he couldn't help but feel a lingering fear as he replayed the scene from earlier in his mind.

When the group of men started beating them up, the duo had naturally tried to fight back. However, Dante was able to lift them with just one hand.

After receiving a swift kick from Dante, Harper felt his world turn black. The same went for Benjamin. Neither of them ever stood a fighting chance, and both of them ended up being beaten up badly.

“Who’s responsible for this? I’m calling the police right now!” cried out Roseanne.

Before she could do so, Harper grabbed her hand first. “Call Gerald, I think those people were after him instead!”

“I- I will!” replied Roseanne.

Meanwhile, a conversation was happening in the underground parking lot of a restaurant.

“Jane- wait, no, I believe I should be calling you Miss Zara now! Haha! Congratulations, you’re now the boss of the newly developed bar at Yorknorth Mountain!”

The comment had come from Flynn who had just exited a restaurant together with Jane after sharing a meal.

Jane’s status had been rapidly rising due to her relationship with Gerald. One could say that her status was equal to Flynn’s now. After all, she was now a boss herself!

There had been several great changes in Mayberry City for the past two months. Some of the shops in Yorknorth Mountain had even already been booked in advance.

“Miss Zara? Come on Mr. Flynn, you can just call me Jane!” replied Jane as she smiled.

“Larry, go get the car so that you can send Miss Zara back!” instructed Flynn as he looked toward the six bodyguards dressed in black following closely behind them.

Larry complied as soon as he heard Flynn's orders.

However, even after waiting for up to six minutes, Larry hadn't returned with the car.

"What on earth is happening?" asked Flynn.

As two of the bodyguards walked over to the corner to investigate, one of them immediately let out a sharp scream.

This caught Flynn's attention and he immediately rushed over.

At that moment, several Maybach cars started moving quickly. Both the entrance and exit of the underground parking were now blocked.

Flynn and Jane found themselves being sandwiched between several men wearing sunglasses. Of the many men who had stepped out of the Maybach cars, one of them had long hair and his face was as pale as a corpse. He seemed to be the leader of the group.

"Well this is f*cking interesting! Nobody in Mayberry City would dare to treat me like this. I can see that all of you are new faces. Where do you come from?" said Flynn calmly as he lit a cigarette.

He was, after all, Zack's top thug and bodyguard. Situations like these weren't alien to Flynn.

The long-haired man simply pointed at Jane before asking, "You're Jane, correct? Come with us!"

Flynn could see that the young man was being awfully cocky, even choosing to completely disregard Flynn's question. As a result, he immediately gestured at his own two men.

The two guards immediately rushed forward but before they could even get in front of the leader, the men standing behind Dante had already rushed forward and kicked them to the ground.

Startled for a second, Flynn then threw his cigarette to the ground.

“You’re pretty skillful. However, if it’s Jane you want, then you’ll have to go through me first!” said Flynn as he immediately began rushing forward.

His aim was Dante’s face.

At that moment, a loud sound was heard.

Flynn had stopped moving forward and after a brief moment, Jane saw Flynn’s legs go weak as he slowly started kneeling.

As Flynn’s body lowered, Dante’s fist was revealed.

Everything was now a blur before Flynn, and he could already feel blood flowing out of his mouth. He was in utter disbelief.

Despite that, he mustered up all his strength to grab Dante by the collar.

His action caused Dante’s shirt button to open, and it revealed a tattooed word on his chest.

‘Dragon.’

Chapter 579

While this was happening, Gerald had just found out about Harper and Benjamin’s situation from Roseanne. After hearing the news, he immediately rushed to the hospital.

“What happened?” asked Gerald anxiously as soon as he saw the duo. Both of them had been severely beaten up.

“We don’t know much either! We were beaten up by a group of men that we’ve never met before. They seem to be coming for you, so be careful!” replied Harper.

Gerald was surprised to hear that. Coming for him?

“Who could possibly want to beat me up?”

“Brother Gerald, one of our classmates informed us that the one who had instructed the men to beat Harper and Benjamin up was a girl from our department! Her name is apparently Natasha and she’s very domineering!”

“What?! Natasha?!” Gerald was now even more surprised.

Based on what Harper and Benjamin had told him, the group of men wasn’t ordinary gangsters or thugs. Not only were they skillful in fighting, they had also arrived in Maybach cars! All this hinted at them being very well-trained bodyguards working for a wealthy and prestigious family.

But... Natasha?

How could that possibly be? Gerald knew Xavia’s family background like the back of his hand. There was no way they would be able to hire such powerful bodyguards, right?

Though there was confusion, one thing was for certain. Natasha was definitely targeting him.

At that moment, he recalled the triumphant look that Natasha had on her face the last time they had met on campus. So she had already been planning to get her revenge on him even from then.

Then again, it wasn’t Natasha who was holding grudges against him. She didn’t even have any feud with him.

No, the person who wanted to exact her revenge on him, was none other than Xavia.

After all, Felicity had already told Gerald about this back then. That when she went to Yanken, she had met up with Xavia and she seemed to be a completely different person from who she used to be.

What more, before Xavia left the university because she couldn't stand all the humiliation, she had specifically warned Gerald that she would one day return to exact her revenge on him!

In all honesty, Gerald had always felt ashamed of himself for causing Xavia to drop out of school due to his poor handling of that particular matter. However, he was her target. Why would she retaliate against Harper and Benjamin as well?

Gerald's phone started ringing at that moment. It was a call from Zack.

"...What?!" Gerald was taken aback once again as soon as he heard the news from Zack.

After ending the call, he looked at both Harper and Benjamin before saying, "I'll come back to visit you guys later. Jane and Mr. Flynn have also met with an accident. I'll go there immediately to see what on earth is going on!"

After saying that, Gerald rushed to another hospital. When Gerald got there, Zack and Michael were already present.

Flynn wasn't looking too good. His nose was broken.

Jane on the other hand, was also injured. Thankfully, it wasn't anything as severe as Flynn's injuries. Only her cheeks were hurt though both sides were terribly swollen.

Gerald was now certain that the mastermind behind all this was definitely Xavia.

If he recalled correctly, Jane had slapped Xavia on her face before in the past. It was clear that that specific grudge had caused Jane's injuries today. What on earth had Xavia gone through?

When they saw him, Zack and Michael immediately went over to greet him. "Mr. Crawford!"

Gerald was still in shock as they said that. After all, he was now staring at an extremely haggard-looking Flynn.

How couldn't he be?

Flynn was an exceptionally good fighter and he had several men under him. The fact that he was actually beaten up to the point of hospitalization was bewildering.

Since it was inconvenient for Flynn to explain himself, Zack took the liberty of doing so, detailing everything that had happened while Gerald listened.

"Mr. Crawford, I'm almost certain that this was done by the Long family from Yanke!" said Zack.

"The Long family?"

Gerald had heard of them before. If he remembered correctly, Giya had told him that the person who had forced her to get betrothed was from that exact family.

However, how was the Long family related to Xavia and her sister?

"Have you sent anyone over to ask them what they want?" asked Gerald.

Chapter 580

"We've already approached them about the matter. However, they refused to admit to having any part of this!" replied Zack.

Whatever the case was, Gerald knew that the top priority now was for him to personally meet up with Xavia so that they could talk things over clearly.

"Take good care of them and keep an eye on my two buddies as well. I'll handle the rest immediately!" replied Gerald. Since all this was happening because of him, he needed to deal with it personally.

He wasn't really afraid of the Long family.

To be honest, if the matter was truly urgent, he could just mobilize and use his family's biggest weapon. Even if the Long family from Yanken was very powerful, Gerald would be able to take them down indiscriminately.

However, no matter what the case was, Gerald had already summarized that Xavia only became this heartless and distorted since he had treated her the same way in the past.

There was no use crying over spilled milk.

In order to proceed, he would first have to look for her!

As Gerald descended the stairs, he called Felicity to ask her for Xavia's phone number.

"What? I don't have her phone number. Why are you asking for it anyway? I thought-"

Before she could finish her sentence, Gerald had already hung up. If she didn't have her phone number, only one other person would.

Gerald would have to confront Natasha.

He immediately drove back to the university. After asking the auntie in charge of the girls' dormitory, he easily found out which room Natasha was staying in and he rushed up to the third floor.

Though the auntie had initially thought of stopping him, she knew that Gerald was a person with an extraordinary background as soon as she saw the car that he was driving. She didn't even dare to try to stop him from ascending the stairs after that.

A loud sound was heard as Gerald kicked the girls' dormitory room door open.

“What- Ahh!”

A girl who was standing in the corridor screamed as several of Natasha’s roommates did the same while covering their chests. They were all terrified.

“F*cking pervert! Get out of here!” shouted the scared girls as they gathered together.

Natasha was smoking on the balcony at that moment, and when she saw Gerald approaching her angrily, she had a fair guess as to why he was here.

She simply continued smoking as she stared at Gerald.

“Where is your sister?” he asked.

“And why should I tell you?”

“I want to see her if she’s back!”

“Why would she even want to meet you? My sister’s told me that she doesn’t want to see you at all!” replied Natasha.

“Then stop pushing me into a dead-end! Were you the one who had sent those men to beat my friends up?” asked Gerald as he grabbed Natasha’s wrists.

The sudden pain made her grimace in pain.

“You- You listen to me first!” shouted Natasha as she tried desperately to get away from him.

She then shook her head before saying, “I know that you must be feeling quite puzzled about a lot of things now. You must surely be wondering when my sister and I gained this much influence and power right?”

“Alright then, since you’re already this furious to the point where you even rushed into the girls’ dormitory, there is one thing that I can tell you. Come with me and we’ll talk downstairs!” replied Natasha.

She then led him to a small park nearby. After arriving there, they simply stopped walking and stood there.

“So Gerald, or should I call you Mr. Crawford? I just learned of your true identity yesterday. It’s amazing to think that you’re actually Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City in the flesh. It’s no wonder why you hurt my sister so deeply. However, don’t you think you were way crueler toward her compared to how I treated your friends? You’re already this upset after we taught your friends a lesson. But do you realize what you did to my sister?”

“Do you even know that you nearly killed her and left me sister-less?”

“Me? I nearly killed her?” responded Gerald who was both taken aback and in disbelief at her statement.

Chapter 581

Though Gerald was aware that the incident had a huge impact on Xavia, he never once thought that it would almost end her life.

“That was the worst and darkest day in my sister’s entire life. And it’s all because of you, the infamous peasant! You’re well aware, I’m sure, that everyone looked down on you and nobody would even talk to you back then. Nobody except for my sister. She would hold your hand in school, go shopping together, and even dine out with you! But did you ever consider that doing all that with you would affect how everyone looked at her?”

“Hey, hey! Everyone, look! It’s Xavia Yorke! The girlfriend of our school’s biggest peasant!”

“That was what everyone was calling her back then. Despite that, she persevered and ignored the mockery just because she wanted to be with you. However, every girl has their self-esteem and one day my sister just couldn’t take it anymore. She felt that she was being treated unjustly and yes, it was the day she broke up with you!”

“But look at you now, still daring to claim that my sister is at fault!”

Gerald remained silent. He knew very well that Xavia wasn't at fault since everyone had their own right to choose their own partner. Even so, the way Xavia ended up becoming after that event was a surprise even to Gerald.

“Do you remember how my sister begged you that day?” asked Natasha, her eyes baleful.

“Do you remember how you ignored her? As a result, she became so overwhelmingly embarrassed to face you and her classmates that she quit studying completely! That's the reason why she dropped out! There were only a few more months to go before you guys would graduate but you ruined her at that very last stretch. Ten whole years of studying, gone, just like that!”

“After she left, she made up her mind to avoid you as much as possible which led her to move to Yanken since nobody knew you there. She was going to try to find a job there.”

“However, upon arriving there, her purse was stolen! Nobody can survive in Yanken without money so what could she do? Thankfully, she found a bar looking to hire which allowed her to finally settle down. Not that she had much of a choice at that moment since she was already penniless.”

“Her luck, however, eventually turned to misfortune since one of the bosses there had molested her due to her being so pretty. She slapped him out of anger and because of that, she almost lost her life! The one she had slapped was a very powerful person!”

“After getting on his bad side, it became even harder for her to find a proper job there. The boss wasn't allowing her to leave Yanken either. She couldn't even get train tickets to go home, and they continued to force my sister to obey every word they said!”

“Do you even remotely understand how scary it is for a girl to live in fear like that every day?”

“In the end, she ended up washing plates in a regular restaurant. She wasn't paid in cash, but instead with meals and a place to stay in. All was not well though, since the lady boss kept bullying and even hitting her!”

“At her lowest when she was about to end herself, a miracle presented itself before her. The Long family’s butler coincidentally saw her and since they were short of maids to serve their second young master, Fred, he approached her asking if she would like to work for them. It was a blessing and she instantly agreed. What more, the second young master ended up falling in love with my sister and they’re now engaged!”

“Can you believe it, Gerald? The first half of my sister’s life was as terrible as what an arse like you would probably have wanted her to experience. I’m sure you would never have imagined that she would finally have her time to shine! Let me tell you this, my now brother-in-law is very obedient to my sister! Everyone that used to bully her is now bankrupt and the same goes for the boss that had made my sister’s life a living nightmare. He’s living in complete misery now, though that’s beside the point. What I’m getting at here, is that her biggest enemy is still you!” said Natasha with a cold-blooded face.

Gerald would never have imagined that so much had happened to Xavia after she left, nor would he have thought that she almost died because of him. However, the more surprising thing now, was that Xavia was now engaged to Fred. So that’s how Xavia and her sister got so powerful. The puzzle pieces were starting to fit together.

“I see. So why don’t you tell me where she is now?” asked Gerald.

“Not a problem. Come with me if you would like to see her!” said Natasha as she motioned a finger before turning around and walking off.

Frowning slightly, Gerald simply followed her.

Eventually, both of them reached a bar and the duo entered a room. Gerald could clearly see that nobody was in there.

“Where is Xavia?” asked Gerald again.

“You really wish to see her, don’t you? Sure thing, I’ll let you meet her right this instant!” said Natasha as she clapped her hands.

At that moment, the sound of several footsteps could be heard outside. The second the door opened, at least ten security guards dressed in black rushed in before immediately surrounding Gerald.

“Hahaha! Did you really think that I’d bring you to her, Gerald? She despises you! Why would she ever want to see you, idiot! You knew I was going to hurt you eventually, yet you came along anyway!”

Chapter 582

“Humph! That’s enough talk, get him!” ordered Natasha.

As soon as they received the order, the men in black immediately obeyed and held on tightly to both of Gerald’s arms.

“When will the revenge end?” asked Gerald calmly.

“Honestly, I don’t even know when we’ll ever stop but that’s beside the point. Don’t even dream of leaving this room tonight!” sneered Natasha.

“Is that so? Actually, Natasha, did your sister ever tell you that this street used to be called Mayberry Commercial Street? And that the bosses of these shops all know who I am?”

“Of course she has! But did you know that my sister’s bought this bar? The bar’s boss is just my little b*tch now! Bet you didn’t think that far ahead, did you?” replied Natasha proudly before walking toward him and giving him a tight slap on the face.

“That’s for my sister. You’ve made her suffer for far too long. Today, I’m letting you have a taste of what she experienced after all this time!” Natasha was going to look for him even if he hadn’t come on his own accord today.

“Unfortunately, I’m afraid you won’t be able to torture me today,” Gerald replied.

“What do you mean by that, you little rascal?” asked one of the security guards in return.

Just as his question ended, however, he immediately let out a scream before falling to the floor. His hands were pressed against his neck and his whole body trembled.

“What’s the meaning of this?” asked Natasha, visibly shocked.

She didn’t know what was happening. She could only feel—but not see—the presence of a shadowy figure in the room.

As she continued trying to make sense of the situation, her neck was suddenly locked by two firm arms.

At that moment, she realized that two men had entered the room without her realizing.

The other man was holding on to a long, silver needles. A second later, it was gone from his hand and the remaining man holding on to Gerald dropped to the ground. The other fallen guard was already foaming by then.

“Apologies for being late, Mr. Crawford!” said both men respectfully as they stood before Gerald. They were none other than Drake and Tyson.

Gerald simply responded with a nod.

He had been well aware that he needed to be cautious around Natasha. Both she and her sister were no longer the same people he used to know.

Gerald would never have allowed himself to follow her without some kind of backup plan. Thus, before he came here, he had contacted Drake and Tyson through his family’s specially made communication device so that they would know Gerald’s location at all times from that moment.

Since Natasha was being held hostage, the rest of her underlings didn’t dare to move an inch.

“Now tell me where Xavia is... Or do you want to end up foaming on the ground like that guard over there?” said Gerald as he looked at her, his eyes deadly serious.

Chapter 583

“I-I don’t know where she is! She only came to the school to visit me once. Other than that, we’ve only communicated through the phone!” cried out Natasha.

“Call her then!” ordered Gerald.

He had to meet up and deal with Xavia as soon as he could. Gerald couldn’t have her troubling him all the time.

‘If I’ve done anything wrong to you, take your revenge on me! Your mistake was hurting those close to me,’ Gerald thought to himself. He just couldn’t stand people like that.

As Natasha reached for her phone, she kept signaling to her subordinates—using her eyes—to take down Gerald and the duo. However, none of the guards even dared to move. They all knew how strong Gerald’s people were so they didn’t do anything. Only people like Scorpion would be able to deal with Tyson and Drake.

Understanding that they weren’t going to act, Natasha could only hand over her phone to Gerald in defeat.

Gerald quickly found Xavia’s number and called her. He soon found out, however, that Xavia’s phone had been turned off.

“Why is her phone turned off?”

“H-how should I know?”

“If you aren’t going to be honest with me, maybe this will make you more willing to comply. Tyson!”

“Yes, Mr. Crawford!” He then pulled out another silver needle and brought it close to her neck.

“W-wait!” At that moment, Natasha began crying before she said, “I-I’m telling the truth! That really is my sister’s number!” replied Natasha between wails.

No matter how much Tyson threatened to bring the needle closer to her, she kept repeating the same thing.

Tyson looked at Gerald. Gerald frowned before waving his hand. Tyson then immediately let go of her after seeing the gesture.

Gerald was just trying to scare her into telling the truth, but apparently she hadn’t lied in the first place. Even if he really wanted to beat Natasha up, he knew he could never bring himself to actually do it.

After all, he was the reason why Xavia dropped out. It was the only reason why he had taken the slap earlier. He saw it as returning a favor to Xavia.

Knowing that it was no use staying here, Gerald continued to frown as he walked out of the room.

“Mr. Crawford, what should we do with these people?” asked Drake as he pointed at the bodies lying on the ground.

Gerald simply nodded before leaving.

A second later, horrible shrieks could be heard coming from inside the room. Those guards had no right to be begging for their lives.

Walking over to the bar, Gerald ordered a beer. He was deep in thought, wondering how he should deal with Xavia.

When Gerald turned to look to his side, he was surprised. Sitting beside him was a girl, sipping on her champagne.

He considered talking to her, but eventually chose not to.

However, his curiosity got the better of him and he ended up looking at her again, just to check if she was really the person he thought she was. Much to her annoyance, the girl noticed his second glance and turned to look at him as well.

This resulted in both of them staring at each other in shock.

“...Gerald?”

“Maia?”

At that moment, both of them simultaneously called out each other’s names.

“Why are you here?” asked Maia.

“I just came for a drink. What a coincidence!” replied Gerald, still feeling surprised.

Maia was Gerald’s acquaintance from high school. However, the two of them never shared the same class, so how did they end up getting to know each other?

Well, since Gerald’s grades had always been extraordinary during his high school days, he had often gone for competitions with a team representing the school.

Back then, Gerald was always happy when he got a chance to participate in competitions since he would be able to somewhat gain a sense of honor. Aside from that, he would also be able to eat good food and stay in fancy places.

The team consisted of 24 people, with twelve being male and the other twelve female. Maia was on the team as well, and her main role was the team captain.

Chapter 584

Back then, Gerald knew little about Maia aside from the fact that she was the team captain.

The only other things he knew was that she was very close to her grandfather and her parents were in politics. This resulted in her growing up in a rather lavish environment.

He also knew that while she and her family were locals, after the final examination, all of them moved to Mayberry.

Though Gerald was excellent in his studies, he was never good enough for Maia. She would only talk to him as the captain whenever they were representing the school in a competition. Outside that, they weren't close at all.

Gerald on the other hand, had a very good impression of her since she was both hardworking and capable. To top it off, she was also very pretty and she had good tastes too.

In short, she was a goddess to his past self.

Many guys had tried to befriend her but she would only befriend those who had their own 'specialties'. Such 'specialties' included either being rich or having a powerful family with a great background.

Normal people would never get the chance to even get close to her. This caused the past Gerald to be satisfied to just be able to momentarily talk with her.

Gerald hadn't forgotten that feeling, so he was rather nervous now that she was in front of him again.

"It's been pretty long, hasn't it? I heard you went to police school. Are you still practicing?" asked Gerald.

Maia simply nodded and continued looking at him for a while before saying, "So, why are you at this bar? Shouldn't you be working?"

Though she was the one who had initiated the conversation, she wasn't really paying attention to him. Her eyes were clearly looking elsewhere.

“I haven’t found a job yet. Also, what are you looking at?” asked Gerald as he turned to look where her eyes were gazing at.

“Don’t look. I see, so you have time to talk to me then!” commanded Maia in a strict tone, just like she used to back in high school.

Gerald had no idea what was going on so he simply nodded.

She then took another sip of her champagne before looking at Gerald with a smile, immediately causing him to blush. At that moment, something caught Maia’s eye and she instantly grabbed her walkie-talkie before shouting, “Action!”

Maia then rushed out of the bar, running toward a young man. Gerald saw a few other young people running over as well, and in no time at all, the young man had been surrounded. It looked just like a movie scene.

The young man who had been drinking was stunned as he was pressed against the ground by a few people. A few bystanders witnessing the scene screamed as one of the young people shouted, “Don’t move! Police!” The person on the ground was then cuffed up.

Well d*mn! So she already was a cop and she was even on duty!

So that’s why she was talking to Gerald. She had even smiled at him! It was all just for show, and Gerald smiled bitterly as he came to realize that.

At that moment, Gerald remembered that Drake and Tyson were still inside beating up the guards from before. They wouldn’t let themselves be caught by Maia, right? If it somehow came to that, then things would become extremely awkward.

“We’ve finally caught the little rascal after so many days! Good work, Maia. Let’s go for a drink later!” said a tall, good-looking guy as he smiled at Maia.

As the suspect was taken away, a few other female cops came over and said, "Wow, Warren, we want drinks too! Why don't we get invited over for drinks?" asked the girls rather enviously.

"I'll get drinks for all of you! Let's head to another bar right now!" replied Warren.

"Oh, by the way, Maia, did you know that guy? I saw you talking to him earlier!" said one of the girls as she pointed toward Gerald who was still sitting in the bar.

"Yeah, he's one of my high school acquaintances. Back then, I was the competition team captain while he was one of the members!"

"I see! I thought your relationship would be something like that! Haha! Why not ask him to join us? He's quite good looking! Also, what does he do?" asked the other girls.

"I'm not too sure about that and I was just about to ask him if he'd like to come along!" said Maia as she shook her head with a smile.

She then looked toward Gerald before saying, "Hey Gerald, come over here!"

Chapter 585

She gestured with a finger for him to come closer.

Gerald really didn't want to go over to them after being ordered like that. After all, he was no longer the same person he used to be. He didn't need to listen to her orders anymore.

He remembered snippets where she would order him to do things like this in the past.

"Gerald, have you moved those boxes of mineral water?"

"Gerald, go help everyone else with their luggage!"

...Maybe that was why Maia was so used to ordering him around.

Eventually, though he was left speechless, he found himself walking toward the group.

“Haha! So it really is true! Gerald really listens to you!”

“As if he would dare not to! Not only was she his team captain in high school, she’s now a cop too! He has to listen or he’ll be locked up!” joked another girl.

“Anyway, say Gerald, I heard that you’re still pretty poor. How did you afford to drink at this bar? Did you get rich or something?” asked Maia. She had been curious about this from the moment they met.

“Huh? Gerald’s poor?” The girls looked surprised when they heard that.

“Yeah. You know, back in high school, Gerald was well known for being broke. He used to only eat one meal a day and sometimes, he couldn’t even pay for his school fees! He was exceptionally poor!” replied Maia.

Though she said that, she hadn’t meant to be mean about it. It was just the personality she had grown up with. Regardless of how Gerald would feel, she was just the kind of straightforward person to say anything that was on her mind.

It was the same in high school as well. No matter how embarrassing it would cause others to feel, Maia would always speak her mind without filtering any words.

Though being poor may not have been a big deal for Maia, the other girls were now looking at Gerald differently. They were all sympathizing with him since they had initially thought that he was some rich heir.

“I see... Well, you should definitely start putting more thought into both, furthering your studies and finding a better job!”

“Yep! You know, I had a middle school classmate who suffered from some brain injuries due to a high fever. Though he ended up dropping out of school, he started working and he now owns a shop! With a little more effort, you can definitely be like him, Gerald!”

Before Gerald could even reply, the girls were already talking non-stop, so he just remained silent while nodding, a bitter smile on his face.

“Alright, I think that’s quite enough, Maia. Now let’s go get those drinks!” said Warren as he took a cigarette out of his pocket. He was far too arrogant to talk to Gerald.

“Alright! Are you coming along, Gerald?” asked the girls.

“What could he even do if he followed? He won’t understand most of what we’ll be talking about!” said Maia.

She knew that her colleagues were just being nice, but if Gerald ended up taking it seriously, it could spell trouble for her. What more, she didn’t really feel comfortable with the idea of Gerald following them around.

With a smile on her face, she then waved at Gerald one final time before leaving together with the others.

When Gerald turned to look at the bar again, he saw Drake and Tyson leaning against the bar’s wall while smoking. It was clear that they had been watching over him for a while.

“Is it done? Where’s Natasha?” asked Gerald.

“She’s still crying inside!” said Drake with a chuckle.

Gerald simply shook his head with a smile. The three of them then left the area.

“Were those your classmates, Mr. Crawford?” asked Drake as they walked further away.

Chapter 586

“One of them definitely seemed to be his high school classmate. Why?” asked Tyson.

“Well, from the looks of it, they either graduated from the police academy or they’ve undergone some military training,” said Drake as he took a few puffs of his cigarette.

“Both of you are really something... It’s amazing how much you can find out about a person just by looking at them. Her name is Maia and she graduated from the police academy. She’s now part of the police force’s criminal department and she’s pretty good at her job!”

“Well, since she’s your classmate, we’ll just say this, Gerald. This friend of yours, along with her colleagues. They may be in for some trouble tonight!” replied Tyson after getting the clarification that he needed.

“...Huh?” Gerald was stunned.

“When they rushed out earlier, I saw two people following them. Both of them had a weapon strapped to their sides, and they exuded equal amounts of murderous auras. I’m pretty sure that the duo following your classmate has undergone military training before. Worst come to worst, there’s a possibility that they’re both experienced killers well!” said Tyson.

Gerald wouldn’t have believed such a claim if it wasn’t Tyson telling him about it.

Earlier, Gerald himself had watched Maia and the others rush out but he hadn’t noticed anything out of the ordinary. .

‘Still, who am I to compare myself to Tyson regarding such things’ Gerald thought to himself.

Either way, Gerald was at least sure that the two people mentioned weren’t here to play any games.

It was true that Gerald wasn’t really all that close to Maia. After all, they were barely friends back in high school. However, no matter what the case was, they were still ex-classmates.

How could he rest easy if he didn't save her after knowing that something bad would happen to her?

However, Gerald was certain at that moment that he didn't want to expose his identity yet. After all, keeping it a secret would allow him to do a lot more things in the future!

He now had a plan in mind. After discussing the plan with Tyson and Drake, Gerald immediately rushed toward the bar where Maia had gone to.

By the time he arrived, Maia and the others had already started drinking. They were now seated in front of a poker table.

"Maia, look! Why is Gerald here?" said one of the girls as she spat out a mouthful of wine in surprise while pointing at him.

The moment he spotted the group, he instantly started approaching their table.

"Why are you here?" asked Maia with a frown on her face.

Earlier, she had only invited him to join them for a drink as a mere gesture of friendliness. She hadn't expected him to actually join them.

"I only came here to warn you. Don't stay out too late! It's dangerous! I saw someone spying on you earlier!" said Gerald.

For now, this was all he could say to give Maia a heads up of what was to come.

"Huh? Someone's watching us? Who the hell could be doing that? I didn't notice anything at all! Actually, who are you to say that someone is spying on us? If anything, you're the only one doing that!"

If it was the leader who was warning them, Maia and the others would definitely take the warning seriously.

If it was a warning from a close friend, she'd definitely feel grateful.

However, since the warning was coming from Gerald, Maia felt like it was a direct insult to her career. It was similar to prey telling a predator what to do even though the predator would naturally know better.

It was infuriating to say the least.

However, Gerald had been prepared for such a response before he even entered the bar. After hearing her reply, he simply nodded before leaving.

"God, I hate him so much! Who does he even think he is? What a show-off!"

"I know right? Was he the most hated guy in high school, Maia?"

The other girls didn't like Gerald either since he was being so nosy.

"I don't really want to talk about him... Why are we even talking about him in the first place? Anyway, Maddy, Tina, follow me to the toilet will you!" said Maia.

Chapter 587

The trio then headed for the ladies.

As Maia was washing her hands, through the mirror, her eyes caught sight of two women with long, curly hair walking toward her. Their eyes were equally cold and stern.

As she continued looking at them through the mirror, she immediately felt that something was wrong.

"What are you guys doing?" asked Maia and the other two girls in unison.

It took her a moment, but Tina suddenly exclaimed, "Huh? Aren't both of you men dressed up as women? Maia, look! They have Adam's apples on their throats!"

"Heh, you're pretty smart! It's too late for that though! We're here to kill you!" sneered the two men as they each pulled out a pistol with silencers attached to them.

They were both aiming at Maia.

"Ahh!"

Since the other two girls were only newly-recruited police officers, both of them were scared witless in this life-and-death situation.

Maia herself was drenched in cold sweat.

It was at that moment when she remembered Gerald warning her earlier about her being spied on. If only she had been more aware of her surroundings, this turn of events wouldn't have happened!

"Humph! This is for arresting so many of our brothers! Let's kill them now!"

Both men then immediately pulled their triggers and Maia shut her eyes to brace for impact.

Two bangs were then heard.

All of a sudden, the two men started holding on to their necks. Their bodies took turns convulsing and stiffening before eventually, both of them dropped to the ground, motionless.

"...Huh? What the hell just happened?"

The two terrified girls from before were both delighted and surprised simultaneously.

Maia then nervously looked outside to see if anyone was there. As soon as she poked her head outside, she found that there was quite a commotion going on.

Rapid footsteps echoed outside the bathroom and soon, Warren and a few dozen police officers were standing in the toilet.

“Maia, are you guys alright? D*mn it, that poor kid was right! Something was definitely wrong! I’ve just received a call from the Alpha Squad. They informed us that international hitmen are lurking around us and their sole mission is to kill us!”

As he looked down, he instantly noticed the two guys lying on the ground. He was utterly shocked.

The captain and his squad arrived at that moment and he, too, saw the two hitmen lying motionless on the ground.

After inspecting the two bodies, the captain said, “It’s them! Both of them are Class-A International Most Wanted Criminals!”

“Who was the one who subdued them, Maia?” asked the captain, curious.

“I.. I have no idea either. Earlier, the two were about to shoot us, but they suddenly held on to their necks, froze in place, and eventually collapsed to the ground!”

Maia’s mind was blank. The way the two men had been taken down was simply too comical to register.

“Amazing! This is the Silver Needle Vessel Technique, thought to have been lost in the mists of time!” said the captain who was surprised after further inspecting the two hitmen covering their necks.

“Silver Needle Vessel Technique? Was it an expert who had saved Maia and the others?” asked Warren.

“When I was in the army as a special forces soldier, I once heard an instructor say that the Weston military had produced two superior fighters who eventually became well-known in the west. The duo was best known for their Silver Needle Vessel Technique!”

“In the west, they were known as the Drake and Tyson Duo,” said the captain, his admiration apparent in his eyes.

“After the war, the Drake and Tyson Duo disappeared somewhere in the West, or so I’ve heard. It wasn’t until two years ago when news broke out that they were—and currently still are—serving a mysterious family. By the looks of how the two criminals were apprehended, I can safely say that it feels very much like their techniques! God, I wonder why they’re both here in Mayberry?” said the captain.

After hearing what he had to say, the rest of the team were left in disbelief.

Chapter 588

When Maia heard Drake and Tyson’s name, her face instantly beamed with excitement.

“Maia, have you come across anyone that could hold that much power to help you? We were initially surprised when we received the 911 call, but it seems that someone knew that this event was going to happen ahead of time. They had stepped in to save you!” said the captain.

“Huh? I... don’t think I’ve contacted anyone that would fit that bill... I’ve only contacted Gerald...?”

But that wasn’t possible, right? Why would Gerald even know such powerful people?

Thinking back, however, Gerald had been aware of the threat. After all, he had even warned her about them in advance!

‘Gerald must know something!’ Maia thought to herself.

Moving back to Gerald...

While Tyson had subdued the two criminals, Gerald himself wasn’t present at the rescue scene.

After all, this was just a minor incident. He wouldn't just meet Maia again by chance, would he? For now, he would focus more on worrying about Xavia Yorke.

By noon, Gerald reached the university and just as he arrived at the entrance, he saw someone familiar.

It was Giya Quarrington. Unlike her usual self however, she looked both pale and dispirited. However, when she walked past Gerald and noticed that he was there, she immediately tried to compose herself.

"Gerald? When did you come back?" asked Giya with a surprised look on her face.

"I just got back today!" replied Gerald as he laughed.

"I'm very sorry, Gerald. Though I had promised to attend your birthday celebration, something came up so I couldn't make it there!"

Giya still treated Gerald the same as always. After all, she knew that he was a good person. She also seemed like she had a lot of things to tell him at that moment.

Gerald could sense that, so he readied himself to avoid her.

Though he wanted to just walk away, after giving it some thought, he felt that it would be a bit too cold-hearted for him to do so which led him to ask, "Is there something wrong?"

"I'm fine. Also, Gerald, could you take a walk with me? If that's alright with you," replied Giya as she looked at him.

"Sure," said Gerald.

While this was happening, a rich young man dressed in expensive clothing was seated at the back of a Maybach car parked on the other side of the road from where the two were standing.

As Gerald and Giya started walking side-by-side, he glared at the two, anger and resentment flashing in his eyes.

“Mr. Long, that’s the person Giya previously escaped with! She had even hidden in his house! His name is Gerald, and he’s the actual Mr. Crawford of Mayberry!” said the driver.

“That’s the Gerald my sister-in-law had to deal with, right? What a b*stard. Not only did he mess with my sister-in-law, he even laid hands on my girl! I’m much more ruthless than she is, so let’s see how I’m going to deal with this kid,” replied Mr. Long.

Mr. Long wasn’t a fool, and he had already thoroughly investigated everything there was to know about Giya’s case.

“Apologies Mr. Long, but though the Long family is powerful, Gerald and his sister are the tyrants of Mayberry! We can’t go overboard this time, can we?” said the driver, slightly hesitantly.

“F*ck you, I don’t care if he’s the ruler of Mayberry! In the eyes of the Long family, they’re all scum!” said Mr. Long as he smacked his driver.

“Worry not, Mr. Long. I’ll take care of him for you right this instant!”

The icy cold voice came from a man with long hair and a deathly pale face who was seated next to the driver.

“There’s no need for that, Scorpion. You don’t have to do anything for now. Mr. Lennon’s right. His sister, Jessica Crawford, is way too powerful in Mayberry. It would be foolish to get him out in the open. Fear not, however, for I have a plan!” sneered Mr. Long.

Chapter 589

While Gerald was walking next to Giya, his phone started to ring. It was a call from Zack.

“Gerald, there’s a celebrity banquet tonight and I hope that you’ll attend. Since a master treasure appraiser from the South will be attending, you can have him appraise the jade pendant when you meet him. A few other celebrities from Mayberry will be attending as well.”

Zack was still helping Gerald track down Xavia.

He had brought up the celebrity banquet a few days ago as well. The celebrity banquet was a yearly event and celebrities from all walks of life usually turned up. Since it wouldn’t look good on Gerald’s part if he refused to attend, Gerald simply agreed to go.

When evening came, Gerald arrived—together with Yoel and Aiden—at the banquet which was being held at Mountainview Manor. As was expected, the venue was packed.

The large manor was usually used for gathering events, second only to Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

The owner of Mountainview Manor, was Wallace Quinnens, a middle-aged man in his forties whom Gerald had met on several occasions. Due to Wallace’s slick personality, Gerald didn’t really have a good impression of him.

“Well look who’s here? It’s Mr. Crawford!” said Wallace as he hurriedly trotted over when he saw Gerald, Yoel, and the rest.

Many other wealthy businessmen began approaching Gerald’s group as well, and the parties all greeted each other.

“Hello, Mr. Quinnens!” greeted Gerald as he forced a smile. A greeting was good enough.

Yoel then headed to a familiar round table in the manor and took a seat. The moment he sat down, Wallace immediately jogged over and said, “Hey, Yoel, Aiden! You can’t sit here today!”

“Huh? What do you mean by that, Wallace?” asked Yoel, dumbfounded.

He had attended similar celebrity banquets like this in the past. This seat in particular was always taken by his godsister, Jessica Crawford. As Jessica's godbrother, he naturally sat together with her.

Now that Gerald—his godbrother—was the richest man in Mayberry, Jessica's seat was Gerald's to take. This of course, meant that both Aiden and Yoel should continue to sit where they usually did.

"There's nothing inherently wrong, but though you've sat here in the past, this year, some things have changed so you can't sit here anymore," sneered Wallace.

The attendees for this year's banquet were celebrities from all over the city. Seeing what had just happened, the big bosses and rich businessmen surrounding Gerald began walking over.

"Humph, if we can't sit here, then we won't! It's not like we want to see your face anyway. Let's find another seat, Aiden. You stay here, Gerald!"

Naturally, Yoel had to think about his godbrother first. Just as Gerald was about to sit down, Wallace shouted again. "Hold it!"

"What now?" By then, even Zack and Michael had come over to see what the commotion was about.

"I'm afraid that Mr. Crawford can't sit here this year either," said Wallace with a laugh.

"Are you out of your mind, Wallace? What did you say? Say it again if you dare!" shouted Yoel as he grabbed Wallace by his collar.

This son of a b*tch was seriously getting on his nerves.

"No need to be so aggressive, Yoel! I'll just repeat the statement one final time, this seat isn't for Mr. Crawford this year!" said Wallace with a smirk.

"Explain yourself," ordered the rich men standing by Gerald's side.

“We just have an even more important guest coming today, and this seat is reserved for him!” explained Wallace as he shook Yoel’s hands off him.

Chapter 590

By then, several celebrities had already noticed that the main seat was still empty, and hearing Wallace’s words shocked them even further.

“What’s going on?”

“Well, Mr. Crawford was about to take the main seat, but Wallace didn’t allow him to!”

“What? How dare he do that? That seat had always belonged to Ms. Crawford in the previous years since she was the CEO. As her younger brother, Mr. Crawford should rightfully inherit her estates. Why the hell is Wallace acting so boldly?”

“Humph, who knows? Mr. Crawford must be feeling embarrassed by now!”

As the crowd continued gossiping, something else was happening outside.

Eight Rolls-Royce Phantoms had arrived at the manor’s entrance, and immediately after they stopped, more than a dozen bodyguards wearing black suits got out of the cars before quickly forming two rows.

The grand entrance soon attracted the attention of the crowd, and even Gerald was compelled to look out the manor. The main car’s driver got out and respectfully opened the Rolls-Royce Phantom’s door.

Out stepped a rich, young man dressed in a suit with both hands in his pockets. When they saw him, his bodyguards instantly bowed.

“Who is he? This is such a grand entrance!”

Most of the crowd was astonished by the scene.

Wallace on the other hand, quickly rushed toward the young man to greet him. “Mr. Long, thank you for attending! Your presence here makes Mountainview Manor shine!” said Wallace excitedly before bowing as well.

“What? Mr. Long? He’s the rich heir of the Long family! Their family has centuries’ worth of history!”

“F*ck! No wonder Wallace was being so bold today!”

“So it was Mr. Long who was giving him this much confidence!”

The crowd continued whispering among themselves until eventually, all of them looked at Mr. Long before simultaneously saying, “It’s a pleasure to meet you, Mr. Long!”

“Greetings, uncles, and elders! Hahaha! You’re all being way too formal toward me! This is my first time officially being here in Mayberry. With that said, it’s also my first time attending a celebrity banquet here! I’d never have imagined that all you people would be so nice to me!” said Mr. Long with a smile.

“It’s an honor to have you here, Mr. Long. Please, have a seat!”

“Indeed, Mr. Long. You’re more than worthy to take the main seat!”

By then, most of the wealthy businessmen and higher-ups—including the ones from Mayberry—had started showing their true colors as they shared their sentiments.

Though there were some families in Mayberry who had big names and long histories comparable to the Lourdes and Walt family, none of them could hold a candle to the Long family.

After all, it was said that the Long family had a very strong position in America since they were one of the first few people to settle there. Their power and influence had only grown stronger since then.

“Ah, everyone’s being so nice to me, but today, I’m not the main star of the banquet. I’m just here to accompany my sister-in-law and have a good time! Hahaha!” replied Mr. Long as he laughed.

“Sister-in-law? Could you possibly mean Fred Long’s fiancée? I heard some time ago that Fred Long found himself a fiancée and they’re already set to marry!” said Wallace as he rushed forward with a smile on his face.

“You’re absolutely right, Mr. Quinnens!” responded Mr. Long with a wry smile as Mr. Quinnens moved out of the way.

From the car behind him, its driver got out and opened the door to the passenger’s seat.

A noblewoman dressed in an expensive-looking dress then stepped out. In her arms, was a cute little dog and her two maids immediately stood next to her.

“Sister-in-law, join us, please!” said Mr. Long, his face beaming.

The woman then walked toward the main street as the crowd stared in awe. Aiden and the other simply stared at her, their eyes widened, before looking back at Gerald.

Gerald himself couldn’t believe who he was seeing before him.

The girl with the dog in hand was none other than Xavia Yorke, the person he had been searching for all this time.

Chapter 591

Gerald had been searching for her for two whole days now. During that time, he had constantly thought about what Xavia had become.

While Gerald was angry that she did all those excessive and terrible things to him, he just couldn’t bring himself to hate her.

To counter that, he kept reminding himself that the current Xavia was no longer the same girl that he used to know during his freshman and sophomore years. She was a completely changed person.

He also told himself that with all the power and wealth he had now, it would be easy for him to retaliate against the two sisters. He knew that if he had really wanted to teach Natasha a lesson earlier, he could've just ordered for her to be crippled on the spot.

Gerald knew very well that he didn't need to hold back or even be polite to Xavia any longer.

Despite all that, whenever he tried to be cruel toward her, he just couldn't. His mind would wander back to the times when they were both still together. After all, Xavia hadn't hated him at all back then, even though he was so poor.

When Xavia saw Gerald, she simply sneered before looking away. Led by Wallace, she slowly walked toward the main seat.

"Why do all of you seem to be in a daze? Your seats are over here! Oh, and of course, if you wish to sit there, Mr. Crawford, it's not like I can stop you! Haha!" sneered Wallace as he looked at Gerald while pointing toward the seat right next to the main seat.

While it would be a great honor for anyone else to be able to sit there, Wallace's proposal carried a different meaning for Gerald.

It clearly meant that Wallace no longer saw Gerald as an important person. This made everyone who came here with Gerald very eager to get into action.

The other wealthy businessmen and reputable figures simply sneered as they watched the scene unfold.

Gerald, for one, wasn't stupid. It was now clear why everything had happened the way they did today.

Many of the people there had clearly chosen to go against him, opting instead to seek refuge under the Longs.

As it turned out, the people who had greeted him warmly and with respect earlier were simply setting up the scene for this exact moment!

By then, both Xavia and Yunus had already taken their seats. Xavia was smiling the entire time as she stared at Gerald. Pairing the expression on her face with the look in her eyes, it seemed almost as though she was asking whether it felt good being humiliated.

“You better watch it, Wallace Quinnens!” said Yoel angrily. He was so mad that his face had turned pale. He was prepared to fight at any moment.

However, Gerald stopped him. He didn’t want to deal with today’s affairs too rashly. Instead, he started making his way toward the side table.

“Pfft! You’re still thinking of hitting me? Some people can be so thick-skinned!” sneered Wallace.

However, this person really was very thick-skinned.

Looking toward Gerald, he said, “Come this way, Mr. Crawford! I’ll accompany you over!”

Once they got to the side table, Gerald was just about to take his seat before Wallace shouted, “Oh, apologies Mr. Crawford! That seat is reserved for another wealthy businessman! You can’t sit there!”

Hearing that, some of the wealthier businessmen burst into laughter.

Gerald simply took in a deep breath before moving to sit on the chair next to that seat. Before he could, however, Wallace simply said, “Sorry, Mr. Crawford! That seat’s for yet another businessman!”

Gerald then glared at Wallace with a fierce expression before proceeding to move to yet another seat.

“Oh sorry Mr. Crawford, but-”

Wallace’s sentence was cut short.

Gerald had just given him a tight slap to the face. He used so much of his strength in that slap that Gerald could feel a burning sensation on his palm.

Wallace cupped his hurt cheek as he sat on the ground. This was proof of how hard Gerald had slapped him. Naturally, the slapping sound drew everyone's attention.

"You... You dare hit me?"

Chapter 592

Wallace had an incredulous look on his face as he held on to his now swollen cheek. After all, he was someone who had Mr. Long to back him up!

"Oh, sorry Mr. Quinnens! My hands felt a little itchy today so I couldn't help myself from hitting you!" sneered Gerald.

As soon as Wallace heard this, he immediately stood up again. The nerve of this person! Wallace got into position, seemingly ready to hit Gerald back.

However, Gerald simply continued glaring at Wallace with one hand in his pocket. He didn't move an inch.

It was at that moment when Wallace suddenly came to his senses.

He realized that regardless of who was backing him up, he was still dealing with Gerald right now, the richest man in Mayberry City! And his sister was even more amazing than he was! Putting their family background aside, the Crawford family wasn't too far off in terms of wealth and power compared to the Longs.

If Wallace actually hit Gerald now, the Long family would probably be unable, or rather, unwilling to protect him! After all, why would the Longs start a war with the Crawfords just for his sake?

Wallace shuddered as he thought about it.

Today, he had already assumed some unwarranted authority to embarrass Gerald. Since he had already done that, he knew he shouldn't push his luck.

Wallace was now well aware that he shouldn't provoke Gerald any further.

"I'll sit here then, Mr. Quinnes, or is there going to be another problem?" sneered Gerald as he slowly shook his slightly swollen hand. Before Wallace could reply, Gerald had already sat on one of the previous seats he had earlier been denied.

"That won't be a problem at all, Mr. Crawford. Feel free to sit there!" said Wallace, his tone much more decent now.

As for Xavia, she could only stare at Gerald in surprise. She had initially thought that Gerald would still be as conscientious and low-profile as before, but he had changed! He was now completely different from how he used to be in the past.

The slap he gave Wallace really surprised her earlier.

Regardless of her slight shock, it still wouldn't affect anything!

After that scene, the banquet simply resumed. It was as if nothing had ever happened. Many of the guests—who had most probably been bribed by Yunus—gathered around the man to give toasts to him. All of them neglected Gerald on purpose.

"Say, Yoel, Aiden, I'm going to the gents. Accompany me, will you?" said Gerald with a wry smile on his face.

The three of them then headed to the gents together.

"For f*ck's sake! I'm so angry right now! Everyone's trying their hardest to flatter that Long family guy! Mr. Crawford, I think Yunus and your ex, Xavia, are deliberately trying their hardest to go against you!" said Aiden angrily as he punched the wall.

“He’s right! I can still remember when my godsister was here in the past. As long as she was present, nobody would even dare to breathe loudly. In one of the past celebrity banquets, Wallace accidentally knocked over a cup in front of her. You should have seen him! He was so frightened that he immediately knelt and kowtowed in front of her! You’re simply too nice toward everyone, Mr. Crawford!” said Yoel.

Both Yoel and Aiden were aware of how kind-hearted Gerald was. It was the reason why they were always worried and concerned about him wherever he went. After all, Gerald treated both of them very well.

Although he grew up with his sister, the two siblings had completely different personalities.

“Just forget about it. We’ll talk about this later, I just want to-”

Gerald was wiping his hands with a tissue paper as he spoke. However, his sentence ended prematurely when he saw the girl standing near the gent’s entrance. Her arms were crossed and she was leaning against the wall.

All three of them had no idea how long she had been watching and listening in to them.

The girl simply sneered at them as she stared at Gerald.

Gerald had initially wanted to say that he wanted to settle the matter regarding Xavia first.

To his surprise, Xavia was already waiting for him outside the bathroom.

Seeing Xavia, Yoel and Aiden looked at Gerald before saying, “We’ll wait for you outside, Mr. Crawford.”

After saying that, both of them left.

Chapter 593

“Well this is perfect! I’ve been looking for an opportunity to have a good chat with you!” said Gerald as he felt himself blush slightly. Gerald was feeling an onslaught of complicated emotions at that moment.

“Oh? What exactly do you want to talk about?” asked Xavia with a smug and arrogant look on her face.

She then started walking toward him before saying, “You know, I’m curious about something. I’m sure you’re well aware that I’m no longer the same Xavia you used to know. Before this, I could only ever dream about living a life as luxurious as you wealthy people do. To think that that dream would one day become true! I’m now part of a wealthy and influential family, Gerald. You may have humiliated me in the past, but I’m on equal footing with you now. Tell me, Gerald! How do you feel about that?”

“I don’t mind it at all. I simply want to make things clear to you. If you think that I’ve let you down and you hold grudges against me, attack me, and only me! Don’t take your revenge out on the people around me!” replied Gerald.

“Hahaha! ‘If I think’? So you aren’t even certain if you’ve completely let me down? Don’t you think that the way you treated me before this was a bit too much?” said Xavia, her eyes growing red.

Xavia herself had reflected on her own behavior in the past. It was true that she too had mistreated Gerald a bit too much when she got together with Yuri back then. However, she had only done so to relieve herself from all the grief, poverty, and humiliation she had to suffer for being in a relationship with Gerald for those two years.

At the time, the more Xavia thought about it, the more she felt that life was extremely unfair to her. It made her feel very useless.

She knew she was quite beautiful, so why couldn’t she have the things that other girls had? The other girls had boys who took them out and bought them bags, branded cosmetics, and even iPhones! They would get to eat good food and experience a wide array of entertainment!

But not her. On the contrary, she was the one who had been spending money on him for two entire years. Where did she go wrong?

She simply didn’t want to continue living like this anymore. In the past, she would willingly endure all this out of love.

Eventually, however, was it really that wrong of her to want to be a bit more realistic?

Was it wrong of her to want to relieve herself from all her suffering? To satisfy her own vanity?

What she never anticipated, however, was that Gerald would suddenly become rich the moment they broke up.

And not just rich. He was filthy rich.

How couldn't she have regretted her actions back then? Justice had finally been served and she was finally able to see the light at the end of the tunnel. However both of them had already parted ways.

It was impossible for her not to regret it.

After that, she waited. She waited for Gerald to come look for her so that both of them could reconcile. In fact, as long as Gerald mentioned it, she would definitely return to his side and commit herself to him wholeheartedly.

But he never did that. Instead, he started flirting with other girls.

Xavia was filled with hatred when she came to know about that! This resulted in her taking even more drastic and extreme actions.

In the end, his true identity was exposed. Gerald was actually Mayberry City's reputable Mr. Crawford!

On that day, she was faced with feelings of great joy, but also agony.

She felt as though she had suffered a great disadvantage. After being together with him for almost three years, she could have finally gotten a chance to experience riches, honor, and glory! Alas, he had already fallen in love with another girl!

That day, she completely disregarded her own self-esteem and dignity as she pleaded Gerald to give her another chance. All she got, however, was a view of his back leaving her.

After that, she could only leave Wayfair Mountain Entertainment like a dog that had been cast aside. She didn't even have the face to continue staying in the university anymore.

Who could understand and guide her through all the confusion that she had to face for the future? And all the hardships that she had to endure in society after leaving university?

She hated it. She hated all of it!

All this happened because of Gerald. Her sole motivation was to make him suffer as much as she had.

She wanted him to regret everything he had done to her. To be filled with remorse when he saw how well she was doing now.

However, even now, he hadn't even bothered to apologize to her.

Chapter 594

To think that he had even waited for her to come to him instead of the other way around!

At that moment, Xavia raised her hand and gave Gerald a tight slap.

Gerald didn't retaliate. Instead, he simply said, "If this can help you vent and release all that pent up anger, then go ahead and continue hitting me! Once you're done, I hope that both of us can call it quits and have nothing to owe each other anymore!"

"Fine by me!" shouted Xavia as she raised her hand again.

However, before she could slap him, she paused. She then slowly put her hand down again.

“You think I’ll let you call it quits that easily? Don’t even dream about it. Do you really think that a few slaps to the face can resolve everything when you’ve hurt me so badly in the past?” said Xavia as she took a deep breath before returning to her cold and indifferent expression.

“What do you want then?” asked Gerald.

“Oh, nothing much. Speaking of which, Gerald, I heard that you’ve gotten quite a number of female friends since we broke up. One of them is called Queta, right?” sneered Xavia as she crossed her arms.

Gerald immediately raised his head and said, “What do you plan on doing to her? If you lay a finger on her, Xavia, I won’t let you off that easily!”

In response, she took in a deep breath before frowning and saying, “Hahaha! The truth is, Gerald, I don’t care about anything anymore!”

After saying that, she took her cell phone out and began playing a video for Gerald to see.

He could see Queta sending some children home from kindergarten. Someone was constantly keeping tabs on her and Queta didn’t even seem to realize that she was being observed.

“You no longer have to try to scare me! I’m not afraid of you. I can afford to do anything I want to, and I don’t even mind losing everything now. Gerald, do you believe that I can end Queta’s life in just ten seconds? Do you believe that I have the ability to do so?” asked Xavia maliciously.

“And don’t even think about going there to save her or informing her about this! Doing that will only push me to want to fight you to the death even sooner!”

“Then what exactly do you want? As long as you promise not to harm any of those around me, I’ll definitely agree to most of your conditions!”

As soon as he said that, Xavia immediately gave him another slap.

“Well that’s just perfect! You’re being extremely sentimental and affectionate now! So why in god’s name were you so heartless and ruthless to me in the past?!” said Xavia, trying very hard to hold back her emotions.

“There’s a way for you to get me to stop harming those people! It’s simple, really. You just need to do a few things for me. Once you’re done with them, both of us can call it quits! Worry not, I won’t be asking you to murder someone or commit arson!”

“Deal!”

“Very well! Then the first thing I want you to do, is to give me a toast in front of everyone else later!”

Gerald simply nodded before saying, “That won’t be an issue.”

“We’ll do that first then!” said Xavia rather smugly as she took a step out of the washroom.

However, she immediately turned around again.

“I know that you’re probably thinking that I’m just some filthy woman who would casually sleep around with others for money. However, you should know that from the very beginning, I was never the woman you imagined me to be. Even though I’m already engaged to someone, I can proudly say that I’m still a virgin!”

After saying that, she left the bathroom.

Gerald was startled by her statement. He really hadn’t expected her to say that at all.

Complicated emotions brewed in his heart. He didn’t really know whether he should be feeling grateful or touched.

To think that Xavia was actually still a virgin.

The thought made Gerald feel slightly guilty now about how he had treated her in the past.

Despite that, there was nothing he could do about that now. Xavia was no longer the same person she used to be. While a person should refrain from hurting others, they should also remain vigilant so that they themselves won't get harmed!

As Gerald left the washroom, he pondered about Xavia's request. What exactly was her goal of asking him to propose a toast to her in front of everyone else?

Chapter 595

Gerald soon arrived at his seat. Even as he sat down, a few of the wealthy businessmen were still not done proposing their toasts to Yunus.

At that moment, Xavia looked at Gerald, hinting with her eyes for him to take action.

"Just look at what they're doing! Just wait till my godsister comes back!" said Yoel, dissatisfied.

Gerald simply took in a deep breath before picking his wine glass up and walking toward Xavia.

"...Bother? What are you doing?" asked Yoel.

"Don't interfere. Mr. Crawford definitely knows what he's doing!" said Zack though he too was quite surprised when he saw Gerald heading toward her. However, he knew Gerald well enough to know that he wouldn't be doing this without a purpose.

"Ah, Mr. Crawford, you came here to propose a toast as well?"

As soon as the businessmen there saw him, they immediately made way for him.

They were all the same as Wallace. Regardless of whether they had the Long family backing them up or not, they couldn't afford to offend Gerald.

After they hurriedly stood to the side, Gerald stood in front of Xavia.

Yunus was also there, and he sneered at Gerald while staring at him, his hand in his pocket.

“I’d like to propose a toast to you, Xavia!” said Gerald as he raised his wine glass.

While Xavia should have stood up to accept the toast, she simply remained seated while slowly shaking the red wine in her own glass.

Without the slightest warning, she then splashed the red wine all over his face!

“I accept! This glass of red wine is to repay you for how much you hurt me in the past!” sneered Xavia.

“Also, don’t you dare call me Xavia anymore! You don’t have the right to use my name! Pay more attention to that in the future!”

“...What?”

Seeing her splash the wine all over Gerald’s face left many, if not all, of the businessmen stunned.

F*ck! This wasn’t as simple a slap to the face anymore!

“Presumptuous!” shouted Zack as he and a few others immediately stood up. A conflict was imminent.

However, Gerald simply wiped the wine off his face as he signaled for the others to leave it be.

“Very well then, Miss Yorke. It should be fine for it to be done now, right?” asked Gerald as he raised his wine glass again.

“Indeed!” replied Xavia as she laughed slightly. However, after raising her second glass of red wine, she poured its contents all over Gerald’s head!

“This one’s for my personal revenge!”

Everyone was simply dumbfounded by the scene.

She finally drank a glass of red wine after Gerald’s third toast to her.

So it turned out that Xavia had personally been waiting to deal with him there and then. Gerald couldn’t help but feel a slight bitterness in his heart as he returned to his seat.

In all honesty, he wasn’t afraid of her at all. However, he was already at wit’s end. He just didn’t know how else to deal with her anymore.

Knowing that she was still a virgin made it even harder for him. The whole situation just made Gerald feel very confused and conflicted.

After the banquet ended, Zack went to look for Zayden, the master appraiser who had come all the way from Northbay.

Gerald on the other hand, went to look for Xavia.

She knew that he would definitely come looking for her, so she was already waiting for him outside the manor.

“I’ve done as you asked, Miss Yorke. I hope that you’ll order your men to leave Queta alone now! You’ve already achieved your goal of humiliating me today anyway!” said Gerald.

“Haha! Rest assured, I only hold a grudge against you. I don’t have a reason to hurt her. However, do remember that you still have to do two things for me!” replied Xavia.

Gerald sighed before saying, "Go on."

"These two things are actually relatively simple for you to accomplish. Firstly, you'll have to let me live in your Mountain Top Villa for a few days! And don't worry, I won't blackmail you into giving the entire building to me! You just have to let me live in it for a few days. That shouldn't be too difficult, right?" asked Xavia.

"Not a problem!" replied Gerald as he nodded.

Chapter 596

"As for my final request, it too, is quite simple. All you need to do is to teach a certain person a good lesson by forcing him to close down his shop permanently. Besides, he's quite a terrible person so you're not exactly being placed in a difficult situation either!" said Xavia.

"And who exactly is this person?" asked Gerald.

"He goes by the name of Hugh Lynch. He's from the same village as my parents and he used to be my father's best friend in the past. However, to start a business in Mayberry, he borrowed tens of thousands of dollars from my family. After eventually becoming successful, Hugh never once considered paying off the debts he owed us. And that's not the worst thing about him either! Do you remember when I told you about what happened after I took a leave to go home during sophomore year? It turns out that it was Hugh who had hired the people to beat my father up!" replied Xavia as she slowly quieted down after explaining the situation.

She was talking about their past after all. That would naturally make her feel uneasy.

"I remember, but why are you asking me for help? You clearly have the means of teaching him a lesson yourself now!" said Gerald, genuinely confused.

Xavia simply sneered as she replied, "If I were the one who did it, he may not remember about the incident in the years to come. Besides, it would be inconvenient for me to use the Long's people but that's beside the point. The main reason I'm asking for your help, is because you're famous in Mayberry. Having you do it instead of me will definitely leave a lasting impact on him!"

“Well, that person is definitely wicked enough for me to deal with. I remember when he even ordered someone to ambush you at the university. Is he the same person who founded the bar?” asked Gerald as he recalled their past together.

“That’s him alright! You know, he’s even abducted a few young girls from my village and all of them are ruined now. Even my younger sister almost suffered the same fate... Don’t you think he deserves the worst of punishments?”

“Fine. I’ll help you deal with him, on one condition. Don’t ever target my friends again!”

“Agreed! I’ll order my subordinates to leave, right this instant!”

After saying that, Xavia immediately turned around and re-entered her car. The driver then drove her away.

Upon seeing the car leave, both Aiden and Yoel rushed toward Gerald.

“Mr. Crawford, what did you say to that woman? Don’t you think you showed her a little too much respect today?”

“That’s right!” said Aiden, angry for Gerald’s sake when he heard Yoel’s comment.

“I get where you’re coming from, but just know that I’m not exactly afraid of her. I just don’t want anything more to do with her. With any luck, once all her anger has been vented, she won’t create further messes for me to deal with and we won’t have anything to do with each other after that!” replied Gerald calmly.

“Also, I need to go back and get a change of clothes. After that, both of you will have to follow me somewhere. In the meantime, get our men ready! We’re going to go do something together!” ordered Gerald to both Aiden and Yoel.

“Will do, Mr. Crawford! We’ll start preparing immediately!”

Though they didn't exactly know what the incident was about, they swiftly began to make a few phone calls without questioning Gerald any further.

Gerald himself returned to Mountain Top Villa to change his clothes.

Once all three of them were done, Aiden drove them straight to a small bar in Mayberry under Gerald's orders.

"Mr. Crawford, what exactly are we going to do here?" asked Yoel after the three of them got out of the car.

Puffing his freshly lit cigarette, Aiden smiled as he said, "I heard that this place is quite unsanctioned."

"You heard right. We're here because some illegal things are happening in this tiny bar," replied Gerald with a bitter laugh.

"For real? Don't tell me you came here to have some s*x?" asked Yoel, shocked.

"Nonsense! Today, we're here to..."

Gerald then started whispering to both Yoel and Aiden. By the end of his explanation, both of their eyes sparkled with excitement. With the plan made clear, all three of them then strode into the bar.

Upon entering the large hall, they chose a random booth and sat in it. Immediately after, Gerald began scanning the place.

It wasn't long before a bald, middle-aged man with tiger tattoos all over his body caught Gerald's attention. The man was talking to a few people from the community near the bar, with his hands in his pockets.

Gerald definitely knew who the man was. He was the one who owed Xavia's father money.

When that man had tried giving trouble to Xavia in the past, Gerald had also been beaten up by his subordinates. If it wasn't for Xavia bringing up the incident again, Gerald wouldn't have remembered that it happened in the first place.

However, rather than to have personal revenge, Gerald was only here to settle the score for Xavia since he had promised to help her. Otherwise, he wouldn't even have bothered coming here in the first place.

"Can I take your order, sirs?" asked a young woman who was dressed up gorgeously as she stood in front of them.

Gerald, who was now lying on the sofa with both of his legs on the table, simply closed his eyes as he said, "I'm not interested in ordering anything."

"Is... Is that so? But sirs, we offer all sorts of-"

"F*ck off! Don't you understand English? He said he isn't interested in ordering anything!" shouted Aiden as he stood up and kicked the table to the side.

Chapter 597

Aiden's action caused quite a racket, and several of the present people turned to look at Gerald's booth. This included the middle-aged man from earlier, though he didn't say anything.

Bosses who founded both regular or karaoke bars here, usually had some sort of background or great influence backing them up. It wasn't uncommon for people to try creating messes in these places, which explained why the middle-aged man wasn't too bothered about the trio.

While all this was happening, a girl sitting in a booth on the other side of the bar asked, "Eh, isn't that the guy from before?"

Having heard the commotion that had just taken place, the girl had peeked to see what was going on, and she was shocked when she saw Gerald.

"Huh? You know one of those people, Tina?" asked another girl sharing the booth.

There were nine other young men and women sitting in the same booth, and the group had come to the bar to have some fun.

"I do!" replied Tina as she nodded.

One of the males in the group coughed before rather jealously saying, "Since Tina is now working in the police force, she's definitely in touch with a much wider range of people. Tell us Tina, what exactly is that group's leader's background? He seems rather full of himself!"

His jealousy was warranted since everyone in the bar had gone there to have fun. In a place filled with handsome men and beautiful women like this, literally everyone wanted to be the center of attention and be able to act smugly in front of the others. Despite that being the case, not many people could actually pull that off properly.

Now however, a rare reckless individual had appeared, so all the attention was naturally on him. The male who had spoken before was socially obliged to ask about him.

"I'm not actually that close to him... I only came to know about him this morning while I was handling a case. He's a high school classmate of one of my colleagues," replied Tina.

The colleague in question was of course, Maia. Tina even remembered teasing Gerald that morning, asking whether he had a girlfriend. Naturally, she had been just fooling around then.

However, their meeting this morning seemed so distant now.

There were a lot of mysteries surrounding Gerald, and both Tina and Maia were curious about his actual background.

After all, Gerald had been the one who had warned them about the hitmen, even though they didn't take him seriously at all at the time.

Eventually however, they came to learn that the threat he had warned about was the real deal. Though they faced a life-or-death situation for not taking his words seriously, all three girls present in the

bathroom made it out unscathed that morning. They had been saved by an exceptionally powerful person.

However, they had no clue who had saved them. Hence, Maia and Tina were keen on cracking the mystery behind the mysterious, powerful individual.

Their best guess was that Gerald's warning had been entrusted to him by the exceptional individual. From what Maia could assume, Gerald was just doing the powerful person a favor.

Tina on the other hand, wasn't scratching off the possibility that Gerald was secretly the powerful person in question. After all, he was Maia's high school classmate and he even knew about the hitmen before they even showed themselves! He was definitely the most suspicious person.

Maia didn't buy that theory at all. She claimed that it was impossible since she was sure that Gerald didn't have such great capabilities.

Though she had initially wanted to call Gerald over to talk about the case, her superiors had transferred the case to another party, so both of them weren't allowed to investigate any further into the case.

As for the celebration party that had been interrupted that morning, it was agreed upon that it would be resumed the next day. During both her trips to the bar, Tina hadn't been able to have a great time. Since her other friends invited her out to a bar tonight, she had taken the opportunity to finally be able to get a quiet drink.

Meeting Gerald here was quite unexpected. What more, he seemed like he was about to create a messy scene here. Seeing all this unfold before her eyes made Tina even more curious than she was before.

"But then why is he acting so smugly? There are only three of them yet they seem like they want to cause trouble here! Didn't you ask your colleague about his background?" asked another girl.

"I know about his background. In high school, he was apparently extremely poor and it doesn't seem like anything's changed since then. When I met him today, he was drinking alone in the bar. To think that he would come again at night! I initially thought that he was quite an honest man, but upon closer

inspection, he seems to just be some kind of ruffian! Humph! He doesn't have any good prospects, that's for sure!" replied Tina.

"Well d*mn! How bold of him to come here and act all arrogant despite being such a poor guy. The boss, Hugh, is definitely going to ruin him! He's quite powerful and influential along this entire street!" said one of the men in the booth.

"He's right. Someone else came to the bar about three months ago to cause a big mess. He was then promptly ruined terribly by Hugh," added another man.

Chapter 598

It was clear that they enjoyed watching the misfortune of others.

Tina herself was thinking that both parties involved weren't nice men. She didn't need to directly involve herself with them since they were just fighting among their own kind. However, she was ready to call the police if things got too messy.

At that moment, a loud crash was heard. Gerald had apparently knocked down a vase.

The shrill sound of shattering glass further attracted the attention of everyone in the bar.

"Good sirs, you've clearly done it now! Not only did you refuse to order anything, you even smashed one of the vases here!" sneered the woman as she crossed her arms. She knew that the trio before her didn't mean well.

"F*cking hell! It's just a vase! We'll just compensate for it!" shouted Yoel in return.

"I'm glad you're willing to do so! But I first need to ask my boss regarding the exact price you'll have to compensate!" replied the woman as she looked toward the spot where Hugh was standing earlier. Hugh however, had already started walking toward the group.

"What's the meaning of all this?"

“Boss! These three refused to order anything and they even broke one of our vases! They’re definitely here to create trouble! They have agreed on compensating for the vase, though,” explained the woman.

As he took a cigarette out, Hugh simply sneered before saying, “It’s good that you’re at least willing to compensate! Acting all bold and audacious before me, how dare you even offend me! However, I’m a nice person, so you’ll only need to give me five hundred thousand dollars!”

He then puffed his cigarette as he continued glaring at Gerald’s group.

Everyone’s eyes were glued on the scene happening before them now. After all, who wouldn’t want to watch others get hit by misfortune? Even the DJ had turned off the stereo system.

At that moment, a few men who had their hair dyed in multiple different colors began surrounding Gerald’s group. They seemed to be people who frequented the bar to have fun.

“What’s wrong, Hugh?” asked one of the men.

“Oh, it’s nothing much. He just broke a vase so I told him to compensate for it,” replied Hugh with a smile.

“See these people? If you fail to pay up the five hundred thousand dollars, I’m afraid you won’t be able to leave this place tonight!”

After Hugh said that, the ruffians started cracking their necks intimidatingly. They seemed to be ready to attack at any moment.

However, Gerald only smiled faintly before saying, “Hugh, Hugh, Hugh... I really didn’t expect you to still be this reckless and arrogant. Five hundred thousand dollars for a mere vase? You dare say that to my face? Do you even remember who I am?”

“Huh? Have we met before?” asked Hugh, slightly stunned by Gerald’s retort.

Squinting his eyes slightly, Hugh finally realized who Gerald was.

“So that’s why you looked so familiar! You’re the boyfriend of that Yorkes lady! F*ck! And here I was thinking who you were! You audacious, b*stard! Didn’t I teach you a lesson before? It seems like I wasn’t harsh enough!”

“Tell you what, if you’re able to compensate for that five hundred thousand dollar vase, then the issue will be resolved. If you aren’t, then you’d better start thinking about the consequences!”

As Gerald gave a subtle smile, Aiden stood up and said, “I’ll go get the money then! Wait for my return!”

“Boss, he could be trying to call someone over!” said one of Hugh’s subordinates.

“Leave him be. I want to see who he’ll even be able to call over!” replied Hugh as he smiled contemptuously.

“Hot d*mn! What a great mess this has become! That guy actually dared to challenge Hugh! Doesn’t he know that Tiago owns Hugh’s bar too? Do these guys even want to continue staying in Mayberry?” asked a few of the guys sitting at Tina’s booth excitedly.

“Say Tina, didn’t you say that he’s your colleague’s ex-classmate? Don’t you want to help him out?” asked a girl from the same booth.

“Humph! And why should I? He’s already so weak but he doesn’t even have any self-awareness! Hugh may be bad news, but Gerald should already know that he can’t afford to offend people like him!” said Tina as she crossed her arms again.

A short while later, someone in the bar suddenly shouted, “Hey, look! Isn’t that Tiago? Tiago’s here!”

Chapter 599

“...Wait, someone’s walking in front of Tiago... Holy cr*p! Isn’t that the guy who went out earlier?”

“He is! He went out to call someone, but to think that the person he had in mind was Tiago! Actually, is that really the case?”

Some of the people present inside the bar began discussing the situation through whispers. Others simply stared at the scene, wide-eyed. The only constant was that everyone was currently filled with disbelief.

Not long after, a loud rumble could be heard and several loud footsteps soon followed. A large group of bodyguards dressed in black suits entered the bar. Among them, there were also several young men dressed like rich heirs.

It was nothing short of an impressive scene.

Hugh himself was feeling stunned. The men in black had different dispositions compared to the ones he was used to seeing. Even the group of rich youths seemed like people he would never dare to offend.

“Mr. Crawford, the guy I’ve brought here goes by the name of Tiago. He’s Hugh’s backer!” said Aiden as he walked forward before sitting beside Gerald again.

“M-Mr. Crawford! I’m not a sensible and insightful person so please forgive me for trusting the wrong guy! I cooperated with the wrong person so please, please accept my apology!”

Tiago looked like he was more than forty years old, yet at the time, he was sweating profusely in between hasty bows while he continued to repeat his apologies anxiously.

He clearly seemed to know what was at stake here.

“Tiago? Why are you being so cordial toward this guy?” asked Hugh in confusion.

As soon as Tiago heard those words, he immediately slapped Hugh. “You f*cker! Do you realize what you’ve done?! If you dare to offend Mr. Crawford you’ll suffer terribly! I’ll personally ruin you later!”

“What’s happening? Did anyone else see that? Tiago seems to be bowing to Gerald!” said a man standing beside Tina.

“Yeah, what’s happening? Also, did anyone hear what Tiago called Gerald earlier? It’s too noisy, I can’t hear a lot of things clearly!” said another girl.

“I couldn’t catch that either. What on earth is going on?!”

Tina herself was having trouble listening in to the conversation. However, she was able to see Gerald smacking the back of Hugh’s head who was now lying on the floor. Hugh didn’t try to fight back, clearly confused as to what was happening. He seemed frightened to death. After that, Gerald slipped a hand into his pocket and immediately left the bar, leading the large group of people out with him.

Even Tiago ran after Gerald, just to see him off.

Seeing this, many of the customers then got on their feet and began rushing out the bar’s entrance. All of them wanted to observe how the rest of the situation would play out. After all, nobody could have ever anticipated the plot twist that had just taken place before their very eyes.

They all needed to know who the influential and powerful boss actually was.

“Tina, why don’t we go have a look ourselves? Can you hear the uproar outside? I wonder what’s even happening!”

The girls were so eager that they just couldn’t hold themselves back any longer. After a short pause, Tina agreed to join them. The scene from earlier had made her jaw drop and she was now immensely curious as well.

Her first impression of Gerald had been that of a poor loser who she would never be able to take seriously.

She was now, however, aware that he was actually an extremely powerful and influential person! Any girl would be shocked after finding out about that! This was especially true for Tina since she was now able to tie this situation to the previous one. It was impossible for her to hold herself back now.

With that, Tina and her group ran out of the bar as well.

Upon exiting the building, they finally understood why the others were screaming outside. Before she was even able to cover her mouth, Tina found herself screaming as well.

There were several dazzling Ferrari sports cars and even more Maybach luxury cars parked right outside the bar.

There were just so many expensive cars! Not many people could resist the temptation to awe at them.

Being graced by so many of them at the same time made for an absolutely magnificent scene.

Chapter 600

Tina's face was flushed in astonishment. When she came to her senses again, she immediately started looking for Gerald within the huge crowd.

The most luxurious car at the scene was a Lamborghini, and Tina saw Gerald standing right beside it. After a bodyguard opened the door for him, Gerald entered the car and left the scene in it.

"...Tina, did you lie to us? What on earth did we just witness? Didn't you say that he was just some poor loser? What we all saw was the complete opposite of that!" said a few of her friends as they gulped, still astonished at what they had just experienced.

"I... I didn't lie to you... He really is..."

Tina was unable to finish her sentence. At that moment, she was equally nervous and didn't know what to say anymore.

She then tried to recall what her real first impression of Gerald really was on the day she first met him.

'...I... think I first thought that he was quite handsome and classy the first time I met him... I even asked if he had a girlfriend...'

'Wasn't I thinking about getting to know him better since I don't have a boyfriend and knowing a handsome man would be a treat...?'

'When exactly did my impression of him change so drastically?'

'Oh, right. It was when Maia introduced him to us. I started feeling slightly disgusted by him then since I became aware that he was poor and incapable. Even so, he still went to the bar...'

At that moment, Tina's train of thought stopped. She now had one specific detail about Gerald on her mind.

From the very beginning, Gerald didn't seem to say much at all. The only exception to this, was when he found out that they were in danger. Gerald had gone over to the other bar just to tell them about it. Despite that, they only ridiculed him so he left after that.

After they got attacked and saved however, the captain mentioned something about how powerful people had been involved in their rescue. It wouldn't be a stretch now to imagine Gerald ordering those people to save them back then.

There was no need to question it anymore. She knew that her assumptions were definitely true.

Gerald wasn't how Maia had pictured him to be. In fact, it was quite the opposite. He was definitely extremely powerful and influential.

"Who are you exactly, Gerald...?" asked Tina anxiously to herself.

At that moment, she was ready to tell Maia all about her great discovery.

Before she hit the call button however, she stopped and put her cell phone down again. It was better if Maia didn't know about it. After all, a person's sense of maturity was dependent on their ability to keep some secrets to themselves.

Why did she have to reveal everything that she knew to Maia?

Moving back to Gerald, he was now standing before Xavia.

"Here's the key to Mountain Top Villa. You can stay there for a month. I've helped you deal with Hugh so once I give you the key, let bygones be bygones. I hope that you understand that if I ever choose to be serious, you won't be able to threaten me," said Gerald as he threw the key to her. He then immediately turned around to leave.

"Humph! And what do you mean by that! Do you really hate me that much? You aren't even the slightest interested in speaking with me, are you?" replied Xavia, her tone anxious.

"I'm not!"

"I'm aware that you have a new girlfriend now. I've heard about the incident between you and Giya as well! You seem to be quite close to her, but since I'm your ex, I can't help but want to advise you about one thing. For your own good, don't meddle further into any affairs regarding Giya!"

"Let me tell you Gerald, you don't know the full story about the Long's background. You don't even know what kind of person Yunus really is. Though your Mayberry Organization is powerful, if the Longs wanted to destroy you, they could do so extremely easily. Do you understand?" said Xavia as she took the key.

"I don't plan to meddle any further into any affairs regarding Giya anyway. However, do know that even though that is so, I'm not afraid of the Longs either. You don't have to try to scare me!" replied Gerald.

"Humph! I was simply trying to be kind to you! How ungrateful! Just stay away from Giya in the future or you'll come to regret it!" said Xavia as she peeked at Gerald one final time before leaving.

It was true that Gerald didn't want to meddle with Giya's affairs anymore. He wasn't her boyfriend, so he wasn't obligated to help her that much. What more, the affair involving both the Longs and Giya was a proper one.

What more could he even do?

At that moment, his phone started to ring.

Chapter 601

It was a call from Zack.

"Mr. Crawford, we have some leads regarding the jade pendant!" said Zack the moment Gerald picked the phone up.

"Oh? Where are you right now?" asked Gerald in return.

The expert treasure appraiser from Northway went by the name of Mr. Zayden Weyham. Gerald had met him before during the celebrity party, and they even toasted each other on that day.

Since he had some issues to deal with back then, Gerald had told Zack to bring Mr. Xiques along to meet Mr. Weyham. Mr. Xiques himself could only discern that the jade pendant was produced southwest of the Salford Province.

However, details about its origins had still been vague up to this point. Zack's call was a sign that they were finally able to find something.

"I'm in Mr. Weyham's manor with Mr. Xiques now. Would you like to come over now, Mr. Crawford?"

"I'll be there soon!"

After hanging up, he told Yoel and the others about his plan before heading straight for Mr. Weyham's manor.

Mr. Weyham and his family had a lot of influence as well as a good reputation. While they were well known for their business in Northbay, Mr. Weyham's business actually began in Mayberry. Since Mr. Weyham's hometown was also in Mayberry, it only made sense for him to return to his homeland now that he was much older.

During the celebrity party, the Weyhams were seen as a considerably famous and influential family.

Gerald would definitely refrain from treating such a family coldly.

In no time at all, Gerald arrived at Weyham's manor. He found Mr. Weyham having tea with both Zack and Mr. Xiques.

"Mr. Crawford!" said both Zack and Mr. Xiques respectfully as they stood up.

After nodding toward them, he turned to look at Mr. Weyham before saying, "Thank you so much for this, Mr. Weyham."

"No need to be so cordial, Mr. Crawford. Please, have a seat."

After a brief greeting, Mr. Weyham immediately cut to the chase.

"Mr. Crawford, this pendant comes from a family from Wendall City in the Salford Province. Though this kind of jade is extremely rare, I was lucky enough to go to Wendall City with my master about fifty years ago. Back when I first saw it, a young man local to that city was wearing it. It should be the symbol of their family!" explained Mr. Weyham.

"And what family is that?" asked Gerald rather anxiously.

In all honesty, Gerald wasn't really interested in helping his father look for that Xara woman. However, Queta was almost the same as Xara, the woman his father had been looking for all this time. This was what made Gerald curious.

'Is Queta my stepsister who shares the same father with me but has a different mother...?'

'Why do I feel so close to Queta every time I meet her?'

Something was definitely fishy with the incident. Since his father wouldn't tell him the truth no matter how much Gerald asked him, Gerald would investigate the matter himself.

Weyham shook his head slightly as he said, "I was just discussing this with both Mr. Xiques and Mr. Lyle earlier. I was still pretty young then, and I only managed to glance at the young man who wore that pendant once. Make no mistake, I distinctly remember seeing that pendant then, but I really don't know which family in Wendall City he belongs to. I was even looking through a few large families in Wendal City with Mr. Lyle just now, but none of those large families have this kind of tradition!" said Mr. Weyham.

"I see... Well, since we know it comes from Wendall City, I'm sure it won't be too difficult to investigate into it!" replied Gerald as he smiled faintly.

As they began talking about other things, Mr. Xiques suddenly stood up and walked over to a pendulum clock. Staring at it curiously, he asked, "If I'm not mistaken, this pendulum clock is from the 1900s... Am I correct, Mr. Weyham?"

Mr. Weyham nodded before replying, "Indeed, it is! It was made in M country and back then, it was even placed in the president's office!"

"How did you even manage to get your hands on such a thing?" asked Mr. Xiques, astonished.

"It was a birthday gift from the Longs of Yanken!" replied Mr. Weyham with a chuckle.

Since Mr. Weyham mentioned the Long family so casually, it was obvious that Mr. Weyham wasn't aware of the conflict between Gerald and the Longs.

Chapter 602

Gerald only smiled faintly as he took a sip of tea.

"It's rather late now, grandpa... There are so many guests today..."

At that moment, a girl wearing pajamas slowly descended the stairs as she stared at Gerald and the others curiously.

"Ah, Lissa. Come over here and greet Mr. Crawford. Weren't you quite curious about him before this?" said Mr. Weyham as he smiled.

"He's Mr. Gerald Crawford?" asked Lissa as she made it to the final step.

When she got to him, she scanned him from head to toe before frowning slightly. Immediately after, she chuckled before saying, "It's nice to meet you, Mr. Crawford. I'm Melissa Weyham but you can just call me Lissa."

"A pleasure to meet you too, Lissa. You can just call me Gerald!" replied Gerald as he extended his hand out to shake her hand.

Lissa was considerably beautiful and after talking to her for a while, he found that she was quite generous to others as well.

Gerald's first impression of her wasn't bad, to say the least.

What more, she was a pretty nice talker too. She talked about all kinds of things with Gerald.

"So you're Mr. Crawford, huh. What kind of entertainment do you usually partake in?" asked Melissa.

"I don't usually attend many activities, to be quite honest," replied Gerald as he shook his head.

"Humph! I refuse to believe that! I'm sure you always enjoy yourself to your heart's content!" As she said that, Lissa laughed heartily.

After a while, she seemed to remember something. This prompted her to ask, "Speaking of which, I got to know a few friends here in Mayberry. We're going to have a gathering tomorrow afternoon and I'll be treating them to a meal! If you're free, would you like to come along, Gerald?"

Gerald remained silent at her proposal.

"How rude, Lissa! Why on earth would Mr. Crawford want to fool around with you and your mischievous friends?" replied Mr. Weyham with a bitter smile.

"Well fine then!" said Melissa as she pouted slightly.

Since Mr. Weyham had done him a favor, Gerald knew that rejecting his granddaughter would eventually make him feel awkward for doing so. In the end, Gerald nodded slightly with a smile before saying, "It's fine. Tomorrow was it? I'll be there."

"He said it, not me!" said Melissa with a smile.

A short while later, Gerald left the manor together with Zack and Mr. Xiques.

Though he initially wanted to return to Mountain Top Villa to have a rest, he suddenly recalled that he had lent the villa to Xavia.

Due to that, he told Zack to arrange a room in a hotel that he owned. He would stay there for the moment.

When Gerald arrived at the hotel's entrance, he saw and heard a few security guards shouting, "Lousy beggar! Get lost already!"

They were busy trying to push away a dirt-covered old man who had extremely messy hair.

"What beggar? I'm no beggar! I just need to borrow a shower!" said the old man.

“To hell with that! Do you even know what place this is?” sneered the security guard.

“Humph! Let me tell you, I’m not any mere person! I’m Mr. Crawford’s grandfather! Your boss is my grandson! Now hurry up and let me in!”

“This old b*stard! How bold!”

By then, the guards were ready to beat him up.

Gerald didn’t really want to get involved in the mess. He didn’t care about what the old man said and the guards were there to take care of him anyway.

However, when Gerald took a closer look at the beggar, he was stunned.

“Stop,” said Gerald.

Chapter 603

Gerald realized that the old man was the same one who had blackmailed him when he was still looking for Giya back then. Gerald would never have dreamed that the old man would actually come looking for him again.

“How come it’s you again,” said Gerald as he frowned slightly.

“Ah! My grandson! It’s wonderful that you’re here now! Humph! These guards won’t let me in! Tell them to let me in!” said the old man with his hands on his waist.

“Why do you want to go in there? What do you need this time? I’ve already helped you before and I even cured your injured leg! Stop pestering me, do you really think that I’m a nice man without any temper?” replied Gerald rather impatiently.

Gerald didn't really mind helping people if they looked as pitiful as the beggar did. However, he had already helped him once. If the old man continued to abuse Gerald's pity, he would definitely be crossing the line.

"Why would you say that, grandson? What do you mean I'm pestering you? You just resemble my lost grandson a lot! If he isn't dead, he should be around the same age as you are this year!" said the old man, his tone suddenly grievous as he lowered his head.

"What nonsense are you spouting? That's it, I'm beating you up!"

Just as they were about to hit him, Gerald took pity after hearing the old man's tale and he raised his hand slightly.

"Yes, Mr. Crawford!" shouted both guards as soon as they saw his gesture. Both of them then returned to their initial positions.

Seeing that, the old man sat on the porch with a sad expression on his face.

Gerald just couldn't bear looking at the beggar's poor state so he fished out a hundred dollar note from his wallet.

"I get it, you want money too, right? But I warn you, this is the last time I'm giving any to you. Now leave!"

He was aware that it would become a bad habit of the old man to depend on him if Gerald kept giving him money.

Still, it wasn't like Gerald could stop himself from doing it. The old man was rather old and he couldn't just turn a blind eye and let others beat him up.

"It's not money that I want, my grandson! I just want to go in and have a bath! Just look at how shabby my clothes are!" said the old man with a chuckle.

Gerald then pointed at the old man before saying, "I'm warning you now. Don't address me as your grandson ever again! If it's just a bath you need, there's a bathroom nearby. Go ahead and take your shower there!"

After saying that, Gerald handed some money to the guards before turning away to leave.

The guards instantly understood what he meant, and said, "D*mn old man! Mr. Crawford is so kind! He's allowing you to take your bath there, so come along already!"

He then began dragging the old man away.

"Thank you, my grandson!"

"I told you to stop f*cking calling me that!"

The incident wasn't really a big issue for Gerald so he simply headed to his hotel room to take a shower and retire for the night.

Not long after his shower however, he heard a knock on the door. Upon opening it, he was shocked beyond words.

It was the old man again!

"D*mn it, what are you doing here? Actually, how did you get in here?" asked Gerald, slightly stupefied.

In order to use the elevator in this hotel, one would first need to have a hotel room access card. What more, Gerald was staying on the VIP floor. To get to this specific floor, the person would also have to pass through a security door.

Not only did the old man get past all that, he was also able to find the exact room Gerald was staying in!

The old man simply chuckled before saying, "I came to look for you, my grandson. Could you arrange a place for me to stay?"

"Also, I hope you haven't forgotten that I've helped you before. I was the one who had given you the clues to look for that girl back then," added the old man as he chuckled again.

"Now I just want to know how you got here," replied Gerald as he scratched the back of his head in resignation.

While the old man certainly did look cleaner now, whenever he grinned, Gerald could sense that he was no nice man.

"If you're talking about those glass doors, they were easy to get past. I just gently poked them with my finger. All of those machines out there are out of order as well, so that's how I got up here!"

As soon as the old man was done with his explanation, a loud noise was heard.

Chapter 604

The door swung open and in rushed ten security guards, each armed with an electric baton. They had finally managed to track down the old man with the help of the surveillance footage.

"You old b*stard! There you are!"

The guards then immediately surrounded him.

"Apologies Mr. Crawford! This old man sneaked into the lobby after his bath when we weren't paying attention to him! He apparently heard your room number from the female receptionist then he ruined all the machines needed to get up here! Apologies again, Mr. Crawford! We'll beat him up then kick him out, right this instant!"

Gerald didn't know how to respond at that moment. Everything about that old man just made him feel uneasy.

At that moment, Gerald's phone began to ring. It was a call from Queta.

Gerald had earlier sent a Line message to her regarding all the new things he had discovered. She must have just read it.

Glancing at the old man again, Gerald then answered the call.

"I assume you've read the message, Queta?"

"I have... What should I do now, Gerald? Will I... Will I really be able to find my mother?" asked Queta anxiously.

"Yes, and don't worry. I'm looking for her too. Just wait for a few more days for me to resolve all the things I currently have on hand. Once I'm done, I'll go there with you! I'd honestly be worried if you went to the Salford Province alone!" replied Gerald with a faint smile.

"Sounds good! I'm feeling much more assured now!"

After a brief chat, Gerald hung up. Seeing that he had ended his call, the guards were just about to drag the old man out when the old man suddenly began shouting, "Salford Province? My grandson, I want to go there too! That's my hometown! Bring me along, my grandson!"

With a little struggling, the old man managed to break himself free from the grasps of the security guards. He then rushed toward Gerald before begging again.

"That's my hometown! My grandson, could you take me home?"

Gerald scanned the man from head to toe after hearing his pleas. The old man looked like he was quite eager to go there. He seemed to be quite agitated as well.

As Gerald thought about it, he realized that he didn't really have too bad an impression of that old man. He was just annoyed by how shameful and dastardly he was.

“Fine, I’ll get someone to send you there!”

“I heard what you said through the phone earlier. It seems like you and another young girl want to look for someone in the Salford Province! I’m quite familiar with the place, so I can definitely help you find that person! You’ve already helped me so much so I’ll definitely lend a hand in this!” said the old man.

Hearing this, Gerald felt as though the old man had finally said something sensible for once.

“As if Mr. Crawford would ever need your help! Get lost!” roared one of the security guards.

“Humph! Just ask him about my information reliability! If I didn’t tell him where that young lass was, do you think he would be able to find her that soon?”

“You!-”

“That’s enough. Just take him away... Get a room and some food for him. And find someone to send him back to the Salford Province tomorrow!” said Gerald as he shook his head in resignation.

Though the old man had claimed that he wanted to help Gerald, Gerald couldn’t help but laugh bitterly at the thought.

After that, he retired for the night.

A quiet and peaceful sleep later, Gerald received another call when morning came. It was Mr. Weyham’s granddaughter, Melissa.

It was then when Gerald remembered Melissa’s invitation to the gathering that she had organized.

Since he wasn’t that close with Melissa, he immediately tried thinking up an excuse to reject her.

“Hello, Gerald! From the moment you agreed to attend my gathering, my grandpa’s been quite happy! He’s even told me to serve you well!” said Melissa through the phone.

It was now getting increasingly awkward for Gerald. Mr. Weyham had been there when he agreed so of course he knew about it. What more, Melissa was quite a sincere girl which made it even harder for him to reject her.

He eventually gave up and said that he would come soon.

Not too long after, he arrived at the gathering place in his car. He had made up his mind that he would leave after staying for just a short while.

The venue in question was the Mayberry Grand Hotel.

When he got to the door, Melissa was already there waiting for him.

Beside her stood a mature and rather sexy lady who seemed to be in her thirties. Her hair reached all the way down to her waist and she seemed to be quite slim as well. Overall, she looked like a woman with a good disposition.

Chapter 605

Her skin was quite fair as well.

When he saw her, Gerald simply nodded with a smile.

Melissa chuckled when she saw him do that. She then said, “She’s my cousin, Gerald. She’s a looker, isn’t she? She came over to have some fun with me.”

Gerald replied with a simple nod.

“But just so you know, she’s already married! She was a beauty even during her school years and though so many years have passed since then, she’s still as gorgeous as ever!” said Melissa in a teasing tone as she laughed.

“From her reaction, I’m now sure that you’re Mr. Crawford. It’s a pleasure to meet you! I’m Rosalie Owens but since I’m older than both of you, you can just call me Sister Owens!” said Rosalie with a smile.

“By the way, Mr. Crawford, I’m sure you already know that my cousin’s family is quite powerful in Northbay! She’s even teaching in a university there too!” added Melissa.

Gerald nodded again as he greeted, “It’s a pleasure to meet you as well, Sister Owens!”

The three of them then entered.

Not long after, a luxury car that looked to be at least a hundred and fifty thousand dollars arrived at the entrance of the hotel.

The car’s driver got out and respectfully opened the door of the passenger seat right next to the driver’s. Out stepped a rich young man in a suit holding an expensive looking pocket watch.

“Mr. Long!” said the driver respectfully.

The person who had stepped out was Yunus Long, and he had a wicked smile on his face as he looked at the hotel.

He then moved to open the backseat door before saying, “We’re here now Giya. Come on out now.”

Giya simply got out without saying a word. She had only put on some light makeup, but she still looked very beautiful.

When Yunus saw her, his eyes immediately brightened.

The first time he met her, he felt that she was different from the other women. He could safely say this since he had indeed met a lot of different women.

Giya was in another league since she was the first woman he had met with such a good disposition. Because of that, he tried to woo her numerous times.

Since he was the third young master of the Long family in Yanken, as long as he approved of it, an endless number of girls would happily throw themselves onto him. At the time, he was even the one making a move on her. It was only logical for her to fall for him, or at least that's what he thought.

Giya however, hadn't even paid him any attention.

After some investigating, he came to learn that she had fallen for someone else. That was the moment when Mr. Long started pressuring the Quarringtons.

Eventually, he was able to force Giya to have a meal with him.

"Oh, don't be so unhappy, Giya! Though I'm a bit of a dandy, I'm still a rather good guy! You know, there are many people out there who appear nice but they're honestly just hiding their true colors! There aren't many people out there as straightforward and honest as I am!"

"Thank you but I'll be the judge of that!" said Giya coldly.

"Whatever you say. Now come on, let's go!" replied Yunus with a smile.

After saying that, he stretched his hand out and tried to hug Giya's waist but she immediately dodged away before glaring at him.

"Can't I even slightly touch you? You're my fiancée!" said Yunus.

"And who made that decision? I didn't agree to be engaged with you. Behave yourself, Mr. Long!" Giya said that rather tensely.

Aside from disgust, she had no other feelings for him.

Since her family was facing a crisis, her parents had advised her to be with him for their sake. She had honestly tried compromising with the Longs so that she could slowly, but eventually come to accept Yunus.

In the end, however, she knew she had failed. She only felt disgust toward him, and there was zero chance for any other feelings to develop.

Chapter 606

She was so disgusted by him that she had already begun filling her head with rather extreme ideas.

Giya had only attended the meal because her father had persuaded her to go that day. Thinking back, she wasn't even sure if she should have taken that first step.

"Well, it doesn't really matter. The engagement will happen sooner or later! Let's not talk about that now. Come, let's just go in already!" said Yunus as he brought her into the hotel.

Meanwhile, Gerald had just entered a private room. Melissa had invited quite a lot of people that day and aside from her cousin, Rosalie, most of the others were young people who looked to be around the same age.

Some of them seemed to be from Mayberry while the others came from elsewhere. The only constant was that they all treated Gerald extremely respectfully and cordially.

This was especially so for Melissa who had constantly been serving him food as she sat beside him.

Melissa had even invited Gerald to have fun with them that night, since there was another group of friends who would be attending then.

Though Gerald had initially planned to leave after sitting there for just a while, not long after they entered the room, Melissa ordered for the food to be served. As a result, he couldn't help but stay and continue having a few more drinks with them.

The group of people was rather good at drinking.

As everyone drank and chatted with one another, at some point, one of the guests started getting a little drunk.

It was Melissa's cousin, Rosalie.

"I don't think I can take anymore... I'm getting a bit dizzy so I'll just retreat to the car for now and get a nap. You guys go on ahead and continue drinking," said Rosalie.

"Huh? I thought you were a good drinker! Also why the car? There are rooms in this hotel. Let me just get one for you to take a rest in. Ah, I also have a bottle of soda with me. Here, drink some of it to make yourself more comfortable!" said Melissa as she opened the bottle and handed it over to Rosalie.

Rosalie simply nodded slightly. She really looked like she couldn't take anymore.

As Melissa told a waiter to prepare a room, Rosalie could barely stand properly. It was apparent that she was really bad at drinking.

"Hey Melissa, let me help you get Sister Owens upstairs!" volunteered one of the young men in the room.

While Melissa was beautiful, Rosalie's looks surpassed even hers. Despite the fact that she was much older, she exuded a special charm.

Adding that to her good disposition, it was almost certain for every man who locked their eyes on her to eventually be charmed.

"Oh, get lost! Don't assume I don't know what you're thinking! Let me tell you, my sister is an Owens and she comes from Northbay! She's not someone you can simply take advantage of!" said Melissa, in an annoyed tone.

Though she said that, she definitely looked like she needed help. It would be both difficult and tiring for her to get Rosalie upstairs all by herself.

She then looked at Gerald before saying, "I trust you, Mr. Crawford. Could you help me get my cousin upstairs?"

"Sure thing," said Gerald while nodding slightly.

Though it was rather inconvenient for him to do so, he couldn't just reject Melissa's plea. He wasn't thinking of any wicked thoughts either so he simply obliged.

Eventually, both of them managed to get Rosalie into a room on the seventh floor.

With the back of her hand placed against her forehead, Rosalie quickly fell asleep as soon as she got to her bed.

Melissa sighed before saying, "Let her take a rest for now... I didn't think she was this bad at drinking. On the contrary, you're quite good at that, aren't you Mr. Crawford?"

"I'm not too bad at it."

As he said that, the sound of retching could be heard. Rosalie was vomiting terribly and she looked extremely unwell.

"Oh god, are you alright cousin? I'll go get some medicine to help you sober up. Could I trouble you to help look after my cousin for a while, Mr. Crawford? I'll be right back!" said Melissa as she rushed out of the room.

Gerald however, didn't know how to look after her.

After vomiting for a while, Rosalie eventually fell asleep again in a daze.

Feeling it would be imprudent of him to remain in the room, he took the room's access card and stood by the door. Gerald would wait for Melissa to come back there.

Not long after, he heard Rosalie's voice from inside the room. However, her voice suggested that she was struggling. It was almost like she was being constricted by something.

Gerald didn't pay much attention to the sounds at first. He thought that it was just her being drunk.

However, the more he listened, the stranger the noises got. There seemed to be other noises coming from within the room as well.

Chapter 607

The more he pondered about the noises, the stranger the situation felt. Eventually, he decided to open the door to see what was going on. What he saw made his eyes widen in astonishment.

A strange man was trying to undress Rosalie in the room! Rosalie seemed to have been struggling for quite a while and tears were already in her eyes.

When the man saw Gerald, he simply smiled coldly before jumping off the bed and diving out the window.

But this was the seventh floor.

Gerald immediately rushed toward the window and looked down. However, there was no trace of the man at all.

'Where the hell did he go?' Gerald thought to himself, stunned.

Turning around to check on Rosalie, Gerald found himself blushing deeply. As he was just about to cover her up with some blankets, he heard footsteps coming from outside.

"For heaven's sake, why are you so annoying? Gerald's already looking after my cousin, there's no need for you to come along! You aren't getting anything by doing this!" said Melissa's voice a little down the hallway.

It would appear that the group he had been drinking with earlier had followed Melissa as well. From her tone, it was clear that they had insisted on coming along, possibly because they saw her leaving to get medicine earlier.

'D*mn it! What should I even do now?'

Gerald was stupefied. What kind of misunderstandings would arise if they saw him in a room with a half-undressed Rosalie?

What more, when he attempted to help put her clothes on, Rosalie simply looked at him with teary eyes and told him not to come any closer. To make matters worse, she started calling for help with a faint voice!

'D*mn it all!'

At that moment, knocking could be heard at the door.

"Gerald? Are you in there? Could you open the door- ...Wait, cousin? Is that you? What's wrong?" shouted Melissa from behind the door. She had clearly heard her cousin's voice calling for help by now.

"Gerald? Mr. Crawford? Are you in there?" asked Melissa in her shocked state.

"Yes, I'm still in here!" replied Gerald as he immediately went to open the door.

"What took you so long to open the door? Could you have been- Ah!"

Though she had initially meant to tease him, when she saw the scene before her, she immediately let out a scream.

Hearing that, the other people who came with Melissa peeked in and some of them began screaming as well.

Everyone there was now looking at Gerald in disbelief. Though Mr. Crawford looked like a gentleman, to think that he was actually such a cunning and dirty person!

“What... What did you do to my cousin, Mr. Crawford?!” shouted Melissa.

“I... You’re misunderstanding the situation! I didn’t do anything!”

“If it wasn’t you, then why would my cousin do something like that to herself?” retorted Melissa.

“Someone else was in here! When he saw me after I came back in to check on her, he leaped out the room’s window!”

Gerald was definitely having a hard time defending himself and explaining the situation properly.

“We’re on the seventh floor!”

A few of the men rushed toward the window before shouting, “Holy, it’s so high up here! If anyone jumps from this height, they’ll be crippled for life if they don’t die!”

As Melissa covered Rosalie with some blankets, she said, “I trusted you, Mr. Crawford... To think that you were so dirty and wicket... I can’t believe my grandpa actually praised you for having good conduct! You’re as disgusting as they come!”

“She’s right! It never once occurred to me that Mr. Crawford was actually someone like this! He hid his true colors so well! At least the other rich heirs act straightforwardly!” said a girl disdainfully.

“I swear to god, I wasn’t involved in this! It’s all a huge misunderstanding! Go look at the surveillance footage! I was standing outside this entire time!” replied Gerald.

Someone then immediately went off to notify the manager. It wasn’t long before the manager arrived.

“Fetch me the surveillance footage for this floor right this instant!” ordered Gerald.

“Surveillance footage? Apologies, Mr. Crawford, but our surveillance system went out of order yesterday! I’m rather anxious about it since we still haven’t managed to repair it yet!” replied the manager.

“How do you know who I am?”

Chapter 608

This was the question Gerald posed as he looked at the manager.

The manager simply smiled apologetically before saying, “I’ve met you once at the chamber of commerce, Mr. Crawford. Also, your elder sister, CEO Jessica Crawford, has given me a lot of attention in the past! It would be impossible for me not to know who you are!”

“Humph! Stop trying to put up a show here, Gerald! Literally everyone in Mayberry involved in the business field needs to pay at least some respect to you! We know both of you are on the same side! Why’s the surveillance system broken now? Don’t you think it’s a bit too coincidental?” said Melissa rather angrily in a loud voice.

By then, several other people who were staying the night had walked out of their rooms to see what the commotion was about. It wasn’t long before the floor’s hallways became crowded. Soon after, the gossiping started as well.

“What’s going on?”

“It appears that some rich heir saw a drunk girl and dragged her into a room. Thankfully the girl’s cousin managed to stop him before he could r*pe her! But really though, what a wicked b*stard he is!”

“Oh lord, and here I thought I’d only be able to witness such things on television! I can’t believe it happened in real life too! Disgusting!”

As the discussions went on, some nosy person even contacted the news hotline.

While all that was happening, Yunus was having a meal with Giya on the hotel's third floor. Mayberry Grand Hotel was a hotel that prided itself in its entertainment, leisure, and dining experiences.

The two were currently seated in a very grand looking restaurant. Despite that, Giya had only taken a few bites of her food.

At that moment, a group of customers entered the restaurant. After sitting down on the table beside the duo, they began discussing what had happened upstairs.

"Hey, have you heard? Something big is happening on the seventh floor!"

After listening in to snippets of what they had to say, Yunus sipped his red wine before saying, "Why are there so many wicked and dirty people in the world..." He then proceeded to smile subtly.

Giya on the other hand, frowned slightly.

"So what happened after that? Are they still arguing about that? Actually hold on, who's the rich man in question?"

"I heard that he's someone extremely influential and powerful! I'm not too sure, but some have said that it's Mr. Crawford himself!" said one of the seated people.

"What? Mr. Crawford? That's impossible, isn't it?"

"Well of course it is! Why would he even do such a thing?" shouted Giya out of the blue as she looked at the people sitting next to them.

"...Huh? Why are you being angry with us? We're just talking about what we heard. If you want to be sure, just go upstairs and check for yourself!" replied another man.

"Anyway, what does Mr. Crawford look like? Is he handsome? He's particularly mysterious, isn't he?"

“He’s rather handsome, but still, he did something so imprudent! I heard a few of them addressing him as Gerald or something. I say he’s definitely Mr. Crawford!”

When she heard Gerald’s name, Giya’s body trembled slightly.

“What... What did you say? What was his name?” asked Giya as she stood up.

“G-Gerald!” replied the person beside her, slightly intimidated.

“...That’s impossible. It’s definitely impossible!” said Giya in utter disbelief.

When she saw a few people heading upstairs, presumably to catch a glimpse of the scene, Giya ran to the seventh floor as well.

Yunus only smiled bitterly as he watched her leave. As he took another sip of red wine, he took his phone out and made a call. “You can come upstairs now!”

After that, he too began ascending the building.

“Move aside, please! We’re reporters!”

At that moment, the seventh floor was getting increasingly noisy.

The ones who had shouted were reporters from Mayberry News, and they were currently rushing toward the scene. With any luck, the incident would be the headline for the following day’s newspaper.

Gerald himself was surrounded by several people. He had neither the means to defend himself nor any logical way to explain the situation.

Giya on the other hand, had just arrived at the scene and she took a step back in disbelief the moment she saw Gerald.

“That’s... That’s impossible! It’s preposterous! Gerald isn’t someone like that!” murmured Giya softly to herself.

“Impossible? He’s right there! Caught red-handed! He had tried to do something improper to a drunk girl and even the victim is saying that he’s the perpetrator!” retorted one of the guests who had heard Giya’s comment.

“Lissa? Why are you here? What happened?”

The voice had come from Yunus who saw Melissa as he approached the scene. Behind him, was a group of bodyguards.

“...Eh? Yunus? I’m so glad that you’re here! It’s Sister Owens! Something has happened to her!”

Chapter 609

“What? Sister Owens is the victim?” asked Yunus, stunned.

“She is!” replied Melissa before explaining everything she knew about the incident. Rosalie was slowly sobering up by then.

Despite her dizziness, she still glared at Gerald with resentment. Though she had been very drunk earlier, she was aware enough to know that it was Gerald and her cousin who had helped her into the room.

While she was still dazed, someone forcefully tried to take her clothes off! Who else could have done so if not Gerald? Thinking about it made Rosalie’s eyes water.

“How bold of you! I hope that you realize that the Longs have had a good relationship with the Owens for generations! How dare you do something so improper to Sister Owens! Audacious! The Longs of Yanken will definitely make you pay a heavy price for this, regardless of how powerful you are!” said Yunus coldly.

“Huh? The Longs of Yanken? Holy cr*p it’s Mr. Long! This has become a much bigger deal now! Not only are the Owens involved, but also the Longs!”

“My god, though Mr. Crawford is quite powerful, how would he ever be able to endure the wrath from both Mr. Long and the Owens? This situation is really getting...”

The group of people there started whispering among themselves after hearing all that.

“Yunus, please seek justice on my cousin’s behalf! She was nearly humiliated by this b*stard!” shouted Melissa.

“Oh don’t worry, I plan to do exactly that!” replied Yunus as he smiled wickedly.

After saying that, he immediately sent a swift kick toward Gerald.

“Beat him up real good! I don’t care how f*cking rich he is! He’s bold enough to humiliate an Owens, is he? Beat him up without any mercy!” shouted Yunus.

Hearing his command, a few of his bodyguards immediately rushed forward and surrounded Gerald. The young men and women present were no longer afraid of Gerald either since Yunus was on their side.

Just as they were about to attack, Giya suddenly shouted, “Stop!”

She was in tears as she shouted.

“Giya? Why are you here?” asked Gerald, stunned when he saw her.

Though she didn’t verbally reply, she turned to look at Gerald. Her utter disappointment was apparent in her eyes.

She then said to Yunus, “Mr. Long, please let him off. I’m begging you...”

“Let him go? Humph! Giya, it’s not like I don’t want to help you, but this person is too wicked to be let off without being taught a lesson! I won’t be able to face Mr. Owens and the others if I don’t do anything now! Don’t meddle in this!” replied Yunus coldly.

“I’m begging you! Just let him go!” pleaded Giya.

Giya was in despair because of the unexpected incident. To think the person that she was in love with turned out to be such a disgusting man. She just couldn’t accept it.

However, it was even more difficult for her to just watch Gerald getting beaten up right before her eyes. She could feel herself ready to burst into tears at any moment.

Seeing her reaction, Yunus gave a faint smile.

“Alright then, Giya. Since you begged so hard, I won’t personally teach him a lesson. However, since he’s created so much trouble, the others are still free to do so!”

After saying that, he waved his hand at his subordinates and they immediately retreated from the scene.

“Giya! I didn’t do any of this! You need to believe me!”

Gerald was now starting to realize something.

‘Too many coincidences have occurred tonight. Why was that person in that room?’

‘And how could Yunus just so happen to be here at this very moment?’

These thoughts swirled in Gerald’s mind as he came to the conclusion that he was being set up. A specific target to be brought down.

Despite his realization, under these circumstances, he still wouldn't be able to explain himself well.

"I'm not hearing any of it!" shouted Giya as she glared at Gerald one final time before pushing the others aside and rushing downstairs.

"Giya!"

Before he left with his bodyguards to catch up with Giya, Yunus motioned his eyes toward Gerald as he passed by a man dressed in black. The long-haired man with an extremely pale face had been standing in a corner this entire time.

"You're not allowed to leave, Gerald! You owe my cousin an explanation regarding what happened today!" shouted Melissa.

A group of people actively prevented Gerald from leaving the scene.

Chapter 610

Just as Gerald felt like he had already hit rock bottom, he felt a chill run down his spine as a hand was placed on his shoulder.

When he turned around, he saw a man with hair as long as a woman's standing right behind him. Gerald felt almost pressured by the man's immense intimidation alone.

"Step aside! What are all of you doing here?" shouted an old voice out of the blue.

"What are we doing here? What are you doing here old man? Stop shoving others around!"

The crowd then began scolding the person who had first shouted.

"I'm here to look for my grandson! You're all just standing in the way!" sneered the owner of the old voice as he squeezed himself into the room.

Seeing how shabbily he was dressed, the people in the room hurriedly opened a path for him as they tried to avoid him like the plague.

The long-haired man on the other hand, simply glared coldly at the old man as he retracted his hand.

“What are you doing? Let go of my grandson!” growled the old man as he stepped forward and shoved Melissa to the side.

Gerald could hardly believe his eyes. It was the old beggar that kept pestering him.

“He’s your grandson?” asked Melissa, stunned.

“Humph! What, don’t we look alike? My grandson, I went looking for you today but that group of people said that you weren’t there! I thought you had abandoned me and headed for the Salford Province alone! I’m glad you’re still here, now let’s go!”

The old man wasn’t even going to bother asking about the details of the incident Gerald had found himself in. He simply grabbed Gerald’s arm and began to pull him out of the room.

“Who said you could leave!” growled the long-haired man, his eyes both frigid and ferocious as he immediately tried to grab Gerald’s other arm.

His attempt, however, was blocked when the old man grabbed onto his wrist. After the old man lifted his hand away from Gerald’s arm, the long-haired man instantly retreated backward, his back hitting the wall.

At that moment, the long-haired youth started sweating profusely. All he could do was stare at the old man in shock.

Gerald knew that his only way of escaping at that moment, was by relying on that old man. Thus, he simply remained silent as the old man led him to the exit.

“Are you alright, my grandson?” asked the old man with a smile. They were now standing beside a riverbank in a park.

“I’m fine. Thank you, sir,” replied Gerald, his voice filled with gratitude.

If the old man hadn’t appeared earlier, Gerald would probably still be there trying to explain himself. It was pretty clear that he wasn’t going to be able to leave easily.

Despite feeling grateful, Gerald was feeling equally as confused.

‘How is this old man always able to casually appear whenever I’m facing difficulties? He’s also always indirectly helping me...’

‘That’s not all, how did he even know where to look for me today in that hotel?’

As Gerald thought about it, he looked toward the old man before asking, “Sir, how exactly were you able to find me today? Were you stalking me this entire time?”

As soon as Gerald asked that, the old man seemed somewhat embarrassed.

“In all honesty, I was. You’ve helped me before, remember. Since I knew you were in trouble, I couldn’t just turn a blind eye! I knew I had to help no matter what!”

He then smiled before continuing, “You allowed me to take that bath and even treated me to a meal yesterday. I suppose you could say we’re both even now.”

“You mentioned me being in trouble... How exactly did you find out about that?”

The old man suddenly seemed much more mysterious than Gerald had initially thought.

“Well you see, I was sleeping in the garage last night and I just so happened to hear a few people discussing how to frame you today! After I heard their plan, I immediately ran looking for you. As was expected, you fell right into their trap!” explained the old man.

The old man then elaborated a bit more.

While he was looking for a place to rest in the underground garage, he had heard Yunus making a call. It turned out that Yunus had conspired with Melissa to frame Gerald today!

All the puzzle pieces were coming together now. Both love and resentment had played a part in this event. No wonder Melissa had tried her best to invite him over to the so-called gathering she had organized. It was all just a giant scheme she had conspired with Yunus!

Every step had been meticulously plotted out.

Even before the old man told him about this, Gerald had already thought about this possibility. There were simply too many coincidences happening in one night for the incident to seem natural.

Now however, Gerald was being faced with a dilemma.

‘Why on earth would Melissa want to frame me? We don’t even hold any grudges toward each other!’

“Humph. Silly boy... You’re so much wealthier than they are but you’re too kind. They don’t need a valid reason to plot against you,” said the old man with a smile as he shook his head.

“Also, this incident is much more serious than how you’re imagining it to be. If I hadn’t dragged you away, your tendons would have been ruined by now. He was aiming to do it on purpose of course. And he would definitely have repeated the tendon injuring process many more times had I not saved you!” said the man based on what he could earlier see.

After hearing that, Gerald was filled with great fear.

Previously, the bulk of the troubles he faced were mostly related to interests. He was unwilling to make it difficult for others, so that he wouldn't be seen as cruel or ruthless.

Now however, Gerald finally understood what his sister had meant. If a person wasn't cruel enough, they wouldn't be able to stand firm.

Even if the person was an influential and powerful heir, they could still easily be ruined if they didn't project a ruthless and strong enough aura.

After heaving a long sigh, Gerald's eyes slowly turned icy cold.

Chapter 611

While that was happening...

"Mr. Long, I apologize but I've failed!"

"What? How did you manage to fail, Scorpion? Can't you take down a mere person like Gerald?" said Yunus through the phone, dumbfounded. He was in the washroom when he received the call from Scorpion.

"I apologize, but an expert helped him escape! If I hadn't retracted my arm in time it would've been broken by now!" replied Scorpion as he held the phone with his good hand. He was making the call from inside a car.

Scorpion's arm—which had been placed on a flat surface—was now pulsing, his tendons all protruding and red. It almost seemed like fresh worms had covered his entire arm. At the moment, he couldn't even move it.

His forehead was covered with cold sweat and he felt rather weak.

"D*mn it all! That b*stard's really f*cking lucky! But either way, we already have a good start! Once the headline goes public tomorrow, he'll definitely become extremely infamous! The Owens won't let him off easily and my family will just help them then! It's only a matter of them before we ruin him completely! Also, go get some rest for now, Scorpion!" said Yunus before hanging up the call.

As soon as the call ended, Yunus saw that Melissa was calling him now.

“Hey Yunus? Wasn’t there too much of a commotion today? You just told me to trick him and get him into the room right? I distinctly remember that you said that my cousin wouldn’t suffer any losses in this. Why did you end up doing that?” asked Melissa rather anxiously.

“What losses? Rosalie didn’t go through any of that. She wasn’t even humiliated! The most important thing is that we got the results we wanted. Isn’t that what matters the most?” replied Yunus in a persuasive tone.

“Humph! How could you say she wasn’t humiliated under those circumstances? She was half naked in the end! Don’t forget she’s an Owens! We need to settle this affair quickly or it’s going to be difficult to explain all this to our families!” said Melissa before sighing.

“I really regret helping you now... You have no idea how much trouble I’ve gone through. I’ve been accompanying and entertaining Gerald since last night you know! I was so afraid that he would refuse to attend my gathering. If he really did end up doing that, I would’ve had to think of another way to get him to go there!”

“Also I hope that you realize that I’ve officially offended a rich heir in Mayberry because of you. He and his sister’s wealth isn’t too far off from what the Longs have! I missed a great opportunity to befriend a rich youth because of you!”

Yunus then burst into laughter before saying, “What exactly are you regretting about? You have the Longs of Yanken backing you up now! It’s like you’ve just gained the most powerful and influential people on your side! Regardless of where you are in Weston, everywhere there is under the influence of my family! I hope you realize that Gerald only has influence here in Mayberry! Alright, since you helped me get Giya this time, I promise to grant you a wish too!” replied Yunus as he smiled bitterly in resignation.

Only after saying that was he able to slowly coax and pacify Melissa.

Meanwhile, Gerald had just returned to his hotel. However, there was a distinct difference now. The entire hotel had been enclosed.

Zack, Michael, and the Drake & Tyson duo were already waiting for him inside.

They had received some news regarding the incident today, which led them to pay most of their attention on it.

Initially, they had thought that the Longs would be hesitant and not daring enough to actually make a move on Gerald. It turned out, however, that everyone's judgment had clearly been wrong.

"We've caught the news director, Mr. Crawford! The f*cker was already arranging for the news headline for tomorrow at home!" said both Drake and Tyson as they rushed into the private room.

"Bring him in!" said Gerald in a cold voice as he sat down on the boss's chair.

He couldn't help it. Since Yunus had spent so much effort to frame him, he needed to tackle the news issue first. Yunus's slander on Gerald could not be exposed under any circumstances.

"What are you all doing? Unhand me!" shouted a middle-aged man who was soon dragged into the room by a few bodyguards.

The man in question was the news director who had been bribed by Yunus. He went by the name of Leach.

"Nice to meet you Mr. Leach. I'm sure you already know why I brought you here today. Where are the things that your subordinates captured today?" asked Gerald.

"I have no clue what you're hinting at, Mr. Crawford. Also if I may, you'd better reconsider what you're doing right now! It's only fair, right, and proper for my subordinates to take photographs! I'll never hand over any photographs they take regardless of what you do to me!"

Chapter 612

Mr. Leach's tone was icy as he said that.

“Fair, right, and proper you say? As if! From what we’ve found, your subordinates had been lying in wait in their cars for at least two hours before the event even took place! Are you saying that they were able to foresee tonight’s incident that early on?”

“While the surveillance system in the hotel was conveniently out of order today, they’re still working just fine in other places! Let’s just cut to the chase, Mr. Leach. I’m sure you know a lot more about today’s incident than me, am I right?” interrogated Gerald.

This was the first time Gerald had ever been framed.

His sister had previously told him that doing business would be both a test, and a chance for him to gain experience. Gerald hadn’t felt the weight of her words before this, but he realized just how true her statement was now.

Despite hearing Gerald’s words, Mr. Leach refused to talk and simply averted his gaze.

To him, regardless of how powerful Gerald was, it was only a matter of fame. Sure, Gerald and his sister were famous, but the Longs from Yanken were different. They were an entire family.

Mr. Leach would much rather offend Mr. Crawford alone rather than Mr. Long and the rest of his family.

“Since you’re remaining quiet, I’m certain now that you’ve been trying to deliberately ruin me. It seems like I don’t need to play the nice guy anymore!” said Gerald.

“Humph. I know what you’re trying to do. I anticipated that something like this would happen so I’ve already informed my subordinates to expose the entire incident if I don’t return in an hour. While they’re at it, they’ll make a police report as well!” replied Mr. Leach.

“Oh, is that so? Mr. Leach you’re overthinking it. I only called you over to ask you a few questions. I’ve no intention of doing anything to you. You may leave now...” said Gerald with a faint smile.

After he said that, Mr. Leach was allowed to leave. Confused, he slowly got up to head for the exit but then he saw Gerald taking his phone out.

Gerald then began playing a video on his phone.

“Daddy! H-help! Save me!” screamed a girl’s voice in fear through Gerald’s phone.

When Mr. Leach heard her voice, he immediately rushed back in before anxiously saying, “What are you doing? Is that my daughter’s voice?”

“Humph! You don’t have to worry about her. Your daughter’s now in your village hometown. You know, our company’s film and television department have gone there to shoot a video about safety education. It was only natural for us to invite your daughter for the shooting since she’s so beautiful! Her role is of a young girl who’s been kidnapped and if her father isn’t able to meet a compromise with the kidnappers, she’ll be killed!” said Zack with a smile before taking the phone from Gerald’s hand and showing it to Mr. Leach.

When he watched the video, he found that what Zack had said was indeed true.

Mr. Leach gulped slightly at that moment. Their implicit message to him was clear as day.

Mr. Long had indeed arranged for the entire incident to happen, just to slander Mr. Crawford. Mr. Leach knew full well that he was the one who was wrong here.

Even if someone wanted to take revenge on Mr. Leach, he knew he couldn’t say anything.

However, his daughter was safe now and she was even having fun with Mr. Crawford’s staff. Mr. Crawford had given him a great deal of respect and he couldn’t just keep his act up.

“...Mr. Crawford, when they claimed that you r*ped that girl at first, I certainly didn’t believe that. I felt like there was some kind of misunderstanding, and I now know that it’s a terribly, terribly huge misunderstanding!” said Mr. Leach, his face pale.

“You’re not the one at fault here, Mr. Leach. Also, we aren’t scummy enough to freely blackmail others like Yunus. Tell us how we should resolve this. Understand that if you do deliberately try to ruin me, I’ll definitely not be willing and happy about it!” said Gerald.

“Alright, I’ll tell all of you the truth now. Yunus told us to modify the photographs in order to slander you. His goal is to get the Owens to become your enemies! I, for one, believe that you would never do such a dirty and wicked thing, Mr. Crawford!” explained Mr. Leach, his entire body covered in cold sweat.

Now that Mr. Leach had told them the truth, Gerald looked toward Zack and nodded slightly. Zack then showed Mr. Leach another video.

As he watched the video, his eyes widened in disbelief. Mr. Leach was soon so angry that his entire face turned pale.

Chapter 613

“Are those... Mr. Long’s subordinates?”

The video displayed a house in the village, and in it, five men in black suits were simultaneously being tied and beaten up. All their faces were swollen by the time Gerald’s subordinates stopped and began standing guard over the captives.

There was no doubt about it. Those tied up men could only be Mr. Long’s subordinates.

“Mr. Leach, Yunus is an extremely wicked man. Since he was afraid that you’d go back on your words, he ordered for some of his subordinates to capture your daughter this afternoon! You’re lucky that our men got there first!” replied Zack with a smile.

After hearing his explanation, Mr. Leach was now able to piece together the entire incident.

“That Yunus! How wicked that man is! I was almost fooled by him! Mr. Crawford, I’ve severely wronged you this time!” said Mr. Leach as he apologetically bowed repeatedly in front of Gerald.

His apology was sincere. After all, it was Gerald's indirect involvement that saved his daughter. Mr. Leach knew now that Yunus was the kind of person who would use all kinds of underhanded schemes and means just to achieve his goals.

If Yunus had actually been able to capture his daughter, bad things would definitely have happened to her if Mr. Leach had chosen to go against him.

Thinking about it alone made Mr. Leach shiver with both regret and fear. Simultaneously, he was also feeling guilty and thankful toward Mr. Crawford.

After a while, he lowered his voice before saying, "...Mr. Crawford, I have a recording here with me that I'm certain you'll be extremely interested in!"

Hearing that, Gerald and Zack looked at each other silently for a moment. Gerald then nodded his head and Mr. Leach slid out a recording.

It seemed that Gerald no longer needed to worry about the news issue anymore. Mr. Leach himself seemed to know what he needed to do to handle the rest of the mess.

All that was left to do, was for Gerald to properly deal with Yunus.

At that moment, Gerald's phone suddenly started ringing. To his surprise, it was a call from Tammy. As he thought about it, he realized that he hadn't met her in a while, even though she was Giya's best friend.

He guessed that she must be calling because of what had happened today between him and Giya. Giya had definitely misunderstood the situation.

As soon as he picked the phone up, he could immediately hear Tammy's dissatisfied voice saying, "What is the meaning of this, Gerald?"

"What did you do to Giya? She's been crying endlessly from the moment she got home just now! Today was supposed to be an extremely joyous day for her since she got first place for this semester! She had

even been entitled the most outstanding student of recommendation to be admitted to the university! We had initially planned to host a celebratory party for her! How did things end up like this?"

"There's been some misunderstandings and I wasn't able to explain anything to her in time!" replied Gerald.

At first, Gerald cared quite a bit about how Giya viewed him since she was, after all, his friend.

Even before Tammy called, he had already thought about giving her a well-deserved explanation. With the current turn of events, it wouldn't be too difficult for him to do so anymore.

However, Gerald was unable to simply shake off the fact that Giya had been sharing a meal with his enemy. The more he thought about it, the more angry and resentful toward her he became.

He had treated her as his friend, but she ended up being together with Yunus.

'What more is there for me to explain?' Gerald thought to himself.

"Misunderstanding? What misunderstanding? I've asked her but she was unwilling to tell me anything. You're being vague as well, so if it really is just some misunderstanding, just come over quickly and explain the whole story to her. We're at Giya's home now!"

Tammy was well aware of the relationship between Gerald, Mila, and Giya. However, the one causing Giya to have such excruciating pain was still Gerald. As Giya's best friend, Tammy just couldn't bear to see her suffering like that.

That was the reason why she snuck out to give Gerald a call in the first place.

"I refuse to go," said Gerald in a soft voice.

'There's no need for me to get further entangled within this mess. I've already stood against the Longs for Xavia's sake. Now there's Giya.'

Gerald felt uneasy being in the midst of this issue, mostly because Giya was involved in the equation

“What do you mean you’re not coming? Look, I know you have Mila, but please! Even if you don’t want to continue being her friend, you need to explain the situation to her properly! After all, all of this started because of misunderstandings, no? She had fallen in love with you back then because you randomly gave her that jade bracelet! I know now that you’re Mr. Crawford and that you’re amazing and all, but don’t you think it’s a bit imprudent for you to just play with a girl’s heart like that?” replied Tammy, her voice anxious.

“I didn’t play with anyone’s heart!” said Gerald.

However, what Tammy said was enough to make Gerald reconsider. It was true that his entire relationship with Giya has started just because of some misunderstandings.

Nothing he had done at the time was on purpose.

Chapter 614

Gerald sighed to himself.

‘I’ll just go and explain it to her... I’ll reveal to her what kind of person Yunus really is!’

“Fine, I’ll head over now!” said Gerald.

It was now already six in the evening and this time, Gerald didn’t go alone. The Drake & Tyson duo followed him all the way to Giya’s home.

When they arrived at the front gates, the duo waited outside as Gerald entered.

“There, there, Giya... Please don’t be sad anymore... Though I’m not quite sure what happened between the two of you, today’s still the day you received the title of most outstanding student of recommendation to be admitted to the university... It’s a day for celebration, isn’t it?” persuaded Tammy.

“Besides, maybe one day Gerald will come to realize just how good you are!”

Giya simply sneered when she heard that.

“Stop trying to persuade me, Tammy. The thing that happened between me and Gerald isn’t as simple... Actually, forget about it. I don’t want to talk about it anymore. Whenever I think of him now, I just feel disgusted!” said Giya as she took a deep breath.

At the moment, Giya was feeling rather frightened of all men in general. After all, she had earlier seen with her very own eyes that no matter how nice a man looked, he would eventually just turn out to be some sc*mbag in secret.

If she hadn’t witnessed the scene for herself, she wouldn’t ever have believed that Gerald had done such a thing. To think that the person she used to like was no different from all the other men.

“Alright, alright, I won’t talk about it anymore... However, that doesn’t change the fact that you should be happy today! I’ve even prepared a surprise for you!” said Tammy as she sipped some red wine.

Just as everyone became curious as to what the surprise Tammy had prepared was, the doorbell was rung.

“The surprise is here! Coming!” said Tammy excitedly as she headed toward the door.

Feeling that she shouldn’t show any further negative emotions, Giya broke into a faint smile as she looked at the door.

However, when she saw Gerald standing at the door, her smile gradually faded.

Tammy laughed out loud before saying, “As they say, the person who starts it must end it! I called him over so that you two can talk it out! You can settle any unhappy misunderstandings with each other now!” said Tammy.

“Why did you come?” asked Giya. Her usually charming face was now as cold as ice.

“I came to explain about what happened today. It’s all just one big misunderstanding,” said Gerald.

“I don’t want to hear it so you don’t have to explain anything. If there isn’t anything else, Mr. Crawford, then please leave. Seeing such a despicable person standing before me hurts my eyes!” replied Giya, her words icy cold.

Gerald took a deep breath before saying, “Look, I just want to sort out the misunderstandings...”

“I really don’t think that’s necessary, Mr. Crawford. It’s not a big deal whether you explain it to me or not anyway. Also, it’s already night time. It’s improper of you to be here since there are only girls here. I also don’t want Yunus to think that I’m still contacting you! So if there’s nothing else just leave already!” said Giya, colder than ever.

After hearing that, it was crystal clear to Gerald.

‘Now that I think about it, it is rather ridiculous. It was unnecessary for me to come here to try to explain myself in the first place.’

‘What more, she’s already addressing him as Yunus now instead of Mr. Long. I guess she’s finally found her true love.’

“Very well! I won’t bother you anymore!” said Gerald with a bitter smile before turning to leave.

“Hold it!” shouted Giya as Gerald stopped.

“There’s something I want to return to you.”

Chapter 615

The object in question was the jade bracelet that Gerald had given to her before.

“From this moment onward, we’ll cease to have a relationship! Humph! To think that I kept this jade bracelet with me till now... At first, I thought that it would be a nice memento to keep with me since we would never be able to be with each other! However, mementos aren’t necessary anymore! You can have it back!” said Giya coldly as she handed the bracelet over to him.

“Fine by me!”

“Also, Gerald, I hope that you’ll delete my contact number after this. You stick with your Mila and I’ll stick with Yunus. We’ll have no reason to see or even talk to each other again after that!”

“Will do!”

Gerald didn’t really have much else to say. After taking the bracelet, he simply greeted Tammy and the other girls with a silent nod before immediately leaving the premise.

“...What? Why... Why did he let you go so easily, Giya? What exactly happened between you two?” asked Tammy, her confusion apparent in her voice.

“It’s nothing, just stop asking about it. By the way, Yunus gave me a rather luxurious gift to me this afternoon. I’ll bring it over for all of you to see. Wait here while I go get it!” said Giya as she wiped her tears away and forced on a smile.

Seeing how hard Giya was forcing herself to smile, her friends just couldn’t bring themselves to eat, drink, or enjoy themselves.

“Giya, could you please not be like this? Look, if you don’t want to talk about it, that’s fine, but could you please refrain from torturing yourself? We all know that you don’t like Yunus. You clearly like Gerald so why are you lying to yourself like this?” said Tammy.

“I’m not torturing myself at all! You’re all just overthinking this. You know, I think I finally understand now. I’ve never really liked Gerald the way a woman likes a man. Now that I think about it, all those feelings I had for him were probably just out of pity and compassion! I never loved him in the first place!”

“Regardless, I’m already quite happy and relaxed now. I no longer have to worry about or miss him anymore! I can be together with Mr. Long and the Long’s daughter-in-law! Humph! To be frank, aren’t you all jealous of me?” said Giya with a smile.

Tammy and the others could only look at each other helplessly. Nobody knew what to say so they remained silent.

Gerald on the other hand, knew that everything between him and Giya had finally ended. He couldn’t really put a name to the emotion he was feeling.

It was neither joy, nor sorrow. To put simply, the feelings he felt were complicated.

When he got back to the hotel with the Drake & Tyson Duo, Gerald received a call from Zack regarding the search for the person who had leaped from the hotel’s seventh floor window.

Though Zack had implemented several tactics—some more forceful than others—to find that person, he was unable to find the perpetrator.

From what they could speculate, the person they were looking for had to be a skilled climber. It would also be natural to assume that he was very cunning as well.

While Gerald was fine with not getting instant results—since they had already received the needed clarification from Mr. Leach earlier that Gerald was indeed being slandered—the person who had leaped out the window still needed to be caught eventually.

Noticing that Zack was blaming himself, Gerald simply advised him not to be too anxious.

The night was peaceful for Gerald and he headed to bed early.

However, more chaotic things were happening amidst the peace.

As an unknown person sat beside a river, he slyly said, "I've done what you wanted, Mr. Long. But I've yet to see the money that I've been promised."

"Humph! Have patience! Your main goal is still to find a proper place to hide in. Worry not, the pay isn't going anywhere!" sneered a cold voice on the other end of the line.

Chapter 616

"The thing is, I don't feel easy about this at all, Mr. Long. I hope that you're aware that because of you, I ended up not only offending Mr. Crawford, but also the Owens family. You know, Mr. Crawford's men were looking for me all over Mayberry City yesterday. If Miss Rosalie actually decides to look into the case in future, then I'll surely be done for!"

The speaker, then added, "I've already given up everything just to help you this time, so fork out the cash as soon as possible. The sooner I leave this godforsaken place, the better. It isn't a stretch to say that the Owens family will eventually find out who really laid their hands on Miss Rosalie. Should that happen, chaos will surely ensue. After all, the Longs and the Owens have had so many business dealings together!"

"D*mn it, Harry! Are you threatening me?" replied Yunus as he snorted coldly.

Yunus had indeed been the one who had set up both Rosalie and Gerald back in the hotel. It was part of his plan to gather capable allies in order to finally bring Gerald down. After all, the Owens and the Longs held almost equal amounts of power. With the two great forces combined, Yunus would definitely be able to finally defeat Gerald.

If everything went according to plan, not only would he have saved the damsel in distress, but he would also have helped the Long family regain their power and industries in Mayberry City.

The Longs would finally get their chance to take revenge after Jessica drove them out of Mayberry City's commercial industry in the past.

Once that happened, it would pave the way for Yunus to inherit a greater share of his family's succession in the future.

Naturally, Harry was also aware of the grudge between the Crawfords and the Longs.

He knew how Yunus had easily gathered so many supporters and helpers in Mayberry City within such a short amount of time. The Long family had, after all, been part of Mayberry City in the past, and the connections and relations that they had built back then still stood to this very day.

“Look, I don’t really like threatening you either, but I don’t really have a choice here. If I don’t get the money soon, I might not even survive long enough to get it! Just so you know, Gerald’s sister isn’t back yet. What do you think is going to happen to me when she returns and finds out that I had colluded with you to frame her brother? Have you forgotten what she did to the Long family back then? Do you need me to refresh you on what exactly happened?” said Harry.

“Alright, alright... Where are you? I’ll send someone over to hand you the money now. Make sure you keep your mouth zipped tight and leave as soon as you receive the money!” replied Yunus coldly.

After hearing that, Harry immediately shared his location with Yunus. It didn’t take long for two Maybach cars to appear before Harry.

Out stepped an old man followed by a few bodyguards dressed entirely in black.

The moment all of them stood in front of Harry, he began chuckling before saying, “Now this is how it should be! Setting up others to take the blame is my forte. All of you have certainly made the right choice in hiring me! I assure you that they won’t be able to obtain a single strand of evidence at all! Haha! Regardless, let me count the money first!”

Harry then took the money and started counting, a smile on his face.

“It certainly was a wise decision to hire you. You’re definitely skillful, we’ll give you that. However, you talk a bit too much. Since both the Crawfords and the Owens are involved in this matter, my young master is slightly worried that you won’t be able to keep your mouth shut in the long run!” sneered the old man who looked quite similar to a steward.

“Worry not! My lips are sealed!” replied Harry as he continued smiling.

At that moment, the old man looked at his subordinates. Among them, was the long-haired Scorpion.

Seeing their cue, all of them immediately pounced on Harry, subduing him in seconds!

“The f*ck? Are you guys seriously trying to silence me for good? D*mn it all!”

“Hahaha... Apologies, Harry. On the bright side, your sacrifice here today will ensure that the Owens and the Longs will work together just fine. We’ll finally be able to take down the Crawford family! Also, while we’re at it, you should never have threatened Mr. Long in the first place! End him!”

As soon as his sentence ended, Scorpion—whose hands were bandaged—began strangling Harry.

“F-f*ck all of you!”

In his attempt to escape with his life intact, Harry managed to kick Scorpion away. With his neck now momentarily freed from Scorpion’s grasps, Harry then immediately dived into the river, securing his temporary escape.

“D*mn it all! How could all of you be this careless?! That person can’t be trusted at all! If we don’t get our hands on him today, we may never have another opportunity like this again!” yelled the steward at his subordinates.

As for Harry, he remained in the water for a long time before finally crawling ashore.

Once he was sure that the coast was clear, he started cursing fiercely.

“That d*mned Yunus Long! What a b*stard he is! To think I nearly died because of him today! Fine then! Since I can’t make money off of you, then there’s no need for any further hesitation! You dare lay your hands on me? I’ll be laying mine on your woman then! Just you wait!”

Chapter 617

While all this was happening, Giya’s friends were still with her in the Quarrington family villa.

The girls were drinking and singing together, seemingly having a lot of fun. In truth, they were all trying very hard to cheer Giya up so that she could forget all of her sadness regarding Gerald.

Since Giya's parents had earlier left for Yanken, Tammy and the other girls had agreed on staying the night to accompany her.

"Say Tammy, I need to use the bathroom... Will you accompany me?" asked Giya.

"Sure thing!"

Both of them then headed to the bathroom upstairs together.

However, not too long after, a scream could be heard coming from upstairs!

Shocked, everyone immediately rushed toward the source of the scream. However, once they got to the bathroom, Tammy and Giya were nowhere to be seen.

"Tammy? Giya?! S-stop messing around with us! Where are you two?"

The girls began shouting as they searched around the villa. After quite a bit of time had passed, they concluded that their disappearance was no prank. They had really vanished without a trace!

At that point, most of them were so anxious that they were already on the verge of bursting into tears.

"W-what should we do now...?"

"What else can we do? We need to call someone!"

Moving back to Giya and Tammy, they awoke sometime after in what seemed to be an abandoned house in the middle of nowhere.

All they remembered was that a shadowy figure had appeared before them as they were about to enter the bathroom. The last thing they could recall before passing out, was feeling a sharp pain behind them.

“L-let us go! Who are you?!” yelled Giya fearfully.

“Yeah, let us go this instant! We’re warning you, Giya’s well connected with several rich and influential people! If you still refuse to let us go, then you’ll definitely be done for!” added Tammy, her voice quivering slightly.

“Hahaha! Oh no... I’m so scared... Please, I know who you are, Miss Giya. I’m well aware that you’re Mr. Long’s fiancée. To tell you the truth, that’s the main reason why you’ve been kidnapped in the first place! I’ll cut straight to the chase, Miss Giya. I need you to force that b*stard Yunus to fork out the money he owes me! As soon as I get my money, I’ll leave immediately without even touching a single strand of hair on your head, Miss Giya!”

Of course, the kidnapper in question was none other than Harry.

After all, he was the kind of person who lived for money, and he would do anything to get his hands on more. Even now, he was only threatening and blackmailing Yunus to get the cash he had been promised.

He wasn’t really trying to ruin their relationship. That was why he had yet to reveal the truth about the set up for both Gerald and Rosalie that Yunus had orchestrated together with him.

Aside from that, Harry was also aware that if word got out about his involvement in the case, he would simultaneously be offending the Crawfords, the Longs, and the Owens. He would definitely suffer a horrible death should that day ever come.

Harry was smart enough not to act based on his emotions, which led him to eventually come up with his current idea instead.

“Hehe... You truly are beautiful, Miss Giya. I’m certain that Mr. Long will give me any amount of money in exchange for his beautiful fiancée’s safety!” said Harry as he gently squeezed Giya’s cheeks.

“Pfft! Mr. Long isn’t the only person who’ll be coming after your neck! There’s another equally rich and influential heir who’s close to Giya! And his name is Mr. Gerald Crawford from Mayberry City!” exclaimed Tammy.

“What? Gerald?!” replied Harry, a stunned expression on his face.

If it wasn’t because of Gerald, he wouldn’t have been reduced to his current state where he had to constantly hide in the wilderness.

Harry was well aware that the Crawford family should not be underestimated under any circumstances.

“Stop it, Tammy! I told you, I have nothing more to do with that person anymore! We are no longer connected in any way! Why on earth would he possibly help me now?” said Giya as she looked at Tammy.

“Humph! I doubt that! Even if you’re no longer friends, I believe that Gerald will still save you in the end!”

Chapter 618

Tammy sounded confident with her words.

“It’s not like I want to see that s*umbag ever again anyway!” replied Giya.

“Hey, hey! Are you two done talking yet? If you aren’t aware, you’re being held hostage! Are you pretending that I don’t exist now? Huh?!” said Harry angrily.

Hearing that, Tammy was so frightened that she immediately went silent.

Rubbing the bridge of his nose, Harry then took Giya’s cell phone from her.

“Look, I don’t care which rich heir you’re talking about, I just want my god d*mn money!” grumbled Harry as he looked through Giya’s contacts to find Yunus.

“Giya? Why are you calling me out of the blue?” asked Yunus in an affectionate and doting tone as soon as he picked up Harry’s call.

“Cut the cr*p already! Giya’s in my hands now. If you don’t want your precious Giya to encounter any ‘accidents’, I propose that you hand the money you owe me right this instant! I’ll free them after that!” cursed Harry through the phone.

“What?! Harry?! You’re brave, I’ll give you that! But to think that you’d actually kidnap her when I just spared your life!” replied Yunus, his voice cold as ice.

“Spared my life? Hahaha! Let me tell you something, Yunus. I’m going to settle both the old and new accounts with you today! I also want triple the amount of the original sum of money that you still owe me! Consider it to be compensation for the emotional and psychological damage that you’ve done to me! If you’re having second thoughts, I also have all the footage of you doing all your bad deeds in the past! If you want me to hand those recordings over to you, deliver the money to me. Personally! Both of us can settle the score between us after that, once and for all!” sneered Harry as he explained his terms.

Now that Harry had seen Yunus’s true colors, he wasn’t going to fall into the same trap twice in a row.

While Yunus’s men were quite powerful, would they really be able to capture him? Haha!

Harry was sure that Yunus understood what was at stake now.

“I won’t be going there personally. However, I will be sending someone over to hand you the money! Where are you?”

“As I said before, you have to hand it to me personally! There are still some things that I need to talk to you about, face to face. I assure you that if you don’t come alone, you’ll definitely regret it in the future! Also, it seems I forgot to mention this earlier! You come alone!”

“Say what you want, I told you I’m not going. My decision is final! If you want, you can come over instead to deal with me!” replied Yunus as he laughed.

“D*mn it! Are you seriously not planning to come over?! If you’re persistent with your decision, then I guess I’ll forgo the money... However! Do you truly believe that I won’t take out my dissatisfaction on your fiancée? She’s quite the beauty, you know!”

“Four hundred and fifty thousand dollars. That is all I will give, and when you receive it, I expect both my fiancée and the recordings to be handed over! There is no further room for discussion! Also while we’re at it, you should take the time to consider your own eventual fate as well!”

After saying that, Yunus immediately hung up.

“Hello? Hello?! D*mn it! What a brute! He doesn’t even care about his own woman at all!” shouted Harry, his face red from anger.

Giya herself had heard the entire conversation. Though she had never liked Yunus in the first place, she still felt a chill in her heart after listening to their call.

Sure enough, regardless of how good a sc*mbag pretended to be, they would still be a sc*mbag in the end. It was usually during moments of crisis when their true natures would finally be exposed.

“Hahaha! I’ll just tell you now that Yunus and I were never on good terms! If you’re still planning on using me as a hostage to threaten him, dream on!” said Giya as she smiled wryly.

“What else can I do? I can’t just leave empty-handed! I’ve simultaneously offended three wealthy and influential families! Four hundred and fifty thousand dollars isn’t going to cut it!” replied Harry as he anxiously scratched the back of his head.

All of a sudden, he started patting his thighs. It seemed like he had arrived at a sudden realization.

“F*ck! I almost forgot! If all else fails, then I should just try to make a fortune off Mr. Crawford! If the Long family is willing to hand me four hundred and fifty thousand dollars, then Mr. Crawford should

definitely be willing to pay even more! After all, he's richer than they are! If I'm lucky, I could even rack the numbers up to seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars! Now that would be a worthy transaction! What more, I already have all the information that he wants anyway! Hahaha!" said Harry aloud as he smiled.

He then walked toward Giya before saying, "Miss Giya, please give me Mr. Crawford's contact number."

"I hate to disappoint you, but I don't have anything to do with that man anymore. In other words, I don't have his number with me! Also, don't you think it's a bit ridiculous to use me as a hostage to threaten him?" sneered Giya coldly.

"Haha! And what's so ridiculous about that? Well, even if he doesn't come for you, he'll definitely want the valuable information I have on hand. After all, he's probably still struggling to clear his name after Mr. Long and I set him up for that attempted rape case involving Rosalie back then! He'll definitely come anxiously looking for me once he realizes that I have all the information he needs!"

Since Harry was planning to leave the country anyway once he succeeded with his plans, he no longer had to worry about keeping any secrets. At this point, offending others was the least of his worries.

As soon as Giya heard this, she immediately raised her head before saying, "...What... what did you say?"

Chapter 619

"Well... I guess there's no harm in telling you the truth at this point. After all, it'd be better for you to know what kind of person Mr. Long really is since you're marrying him soon. I have to say though, Mr. Crawford really is too careless. He barely ever has guards escorting him wherever he goes! Mr. Long was aware of this so he one day approached me, saying that he had something to discuss..."

By the time Harry's story ended, Giya's heart was beating extremely rapidly.

"So he was innocent after all! You did this! Why did you have to set him up?!" shouted Giya, her eyes bloodshot.

She was experiencing a great surge of emotions in her heart.

How could she have been so stupid?

She had known Gerald for quite a while now. How could he ever be the kind of person Yunus had framed him to be?

Gerald had even tried to defend himself, saying that he wasn't the one who had committed the act. He must have only tried to prove his innocence to her because he considered her to be a good friend. What more, he even specifically went over to find her, but what did she do?

She didn't even give him a chance to explain himself. What more, she even called him a disgusting jerk! He must have felt extremely disappointed back then!

She was his only friend yet she refused to believe him...

Why... Why had she driven him away back then? Why did she refuse to let him explain himself?

"Gerald... I've misunderstood you... I'm... I'm so sorry...!" said Giya as tears started running down her cheeks.

"Alright, that's enough! I don't care about your misunderstanding with him! I just want my money already! Once I get my hands on it, no one will be able to find me. You can continue your squabble with him all you want after that! Now hurry up and give me his phone number!" ordered Harry.

"I don't have it! Even if I did, I wouldn't give it to you! I'm not letting you hurt him!"

"For f*ck's sake, were you even listening? I'm not going to hurt him! Rather, I'm giving him a chance to prove his innocence! Just give me the d*mn number already! Don't blame me if I stop being gentlemanly! Do you believe that I'll take care of your friend first if you plan to delay this any longer?" said Harry as he unbuckled his belt.

"W-wait! No! No! No!" yelled Tammy in fright.

“G-Giya, it really seems like he doesn’t have any other intentions aside from getting money! Why don’t you just give him Gerald’s number so that he can come save us?” said Tammy, almost in tears.

“Haha... Tammy, even if I tell him that we’re in danger, Gerald won’t come to save us... I broke his heart too badly this time... We can’t even be friends anymore!” replied Giya, her eyes red.

“Even if he does come, it’ll just be because he wants to clear his name of this huge mess!”

“Oh, for the love of god! Just give me the number so that I can take the money and leave! It’s that simple!” said Harry, his voice growing wearier by the minute.

“I... I have his number! You can have it!” said Tammy, finally giving in.

A little while later, Gerald picked his phone up before asking, “Hello? What’s wrong, Tammy?”

“Heh... Hello, Mr. Crawford, it’s me, Harry! How are you?”

“Harry?”

“Have you forgotten about me already? We met briefly at noon in the hotel!”

“It’s you!” shouted Gerald as he immediately sat up on his bed.

“That’s right! I’m aware that you’ve been searching all over Mayberry City for me, so after giving it some thought, I’m hoping that you’ll be willing to negotiate and strike a deal with me! Also, Miss Giya and Miss Tammy are with me now. Just thought you’d like to know about that,” replied Harry.

“You dare to even kidnap Giya? What’s your motive?” replied Gerald coldly.

“Alright, so here’s the thing. Since Miss Crawford had looked out for me so much before, let’s just say that I’d feel slightly guilty just leaving things as they are. Why don’t we do this? See, I’ve taped the entire

incident and I'm willing to hand over all the evidence as long as you're willing to provide me with a sum of money! Once I get that money, you'll be able to prove your own innocence!"

"I'll ask you again. Why did you kidnap Miss Giya!" repeated Gerald.

"Oh, don't worry about her. I assure you that she's completely fine. However, you'll need to hand the money over to me. Personally. I won't accept any bank transfers and you're not allowed to have any bodyguards around. I know how powerful Drake and Tyson are!"

As she listened to their conversation, Giya could only bite her lower lip softly.

"Fine. I'll be heading over now, but you better release them immediately after!" replied Gerald without the slightest hesitation.

Though Gerald was still feeling slightly disappointed with Giya, he knew he would never be able to forgive himself if Giya were to end up facing misfortune because of his lack of action.

Chapter 620

While it was true that Gerald felt that Giya shouldn't have distrusted him since he had already helped her so much in the past, he didn't really feel any enmity toward her.

In fact, he honestly didn't want to cause any further harm to her.

The way he saw it, since he no longer had anything to do with her anymore, she would no longer need to suffer because of him.

"That's what I like to hear! You know, now I feel a little guilty for setting you up like that... Regardless, I'm currently at..."

After Harry relayed his location and detailed a few more things, both of them hung up.

Giya now had tears trickling down her cheeks.

“He... He doesn’t hate me at all! He’s still willing to put himself in danger because of me!” said Giya to herself as she felt her heart melt.

Moving back to Gerald, he notified Drake and Tyson about some things before personally driving to the location he had been given. It wasn’t long before he arrived with a bag of money in hand.

As Gerald stepped out of his car and stood in the middle of the wilderness, Harry was already observing his every move through a pair of binoculars.

“Heh, I see you, Mr. Crawford... True to your word, you didn’t bring anyone else with you!”

Once he was sure that Gerald was truly alone, he sent Gerald another location and ordered him to immediately rush over there next.

D*mn it! This guy really knew how to scheme! Gerald could only helplessly obey his orders.

Eventually, he finally stood face to face with Harry. Harry himself bore a wretched expression on his face.

“A pleasure to meet you, Mr. Crawford!” said Harry as he bowed slightly before Gerald.

“Cut the cr*p. Release them immediately! Also, where’s that recording that you promised?” asked Gerald as he threw the bag of money over to Harry.

“Relax, everything’s here! You’ll definitely be able to prove your innocence with this!” replied Harry as he smiled.

After hearing that, Gerald then walked over to Giya and Tammy to loosen the ropes that Harry had used to tie them up.

He also helped them remove the tape covering their mouths. Harry had earlier attached them to the duo in fear that the two girls would start screaming at any moment.

“Gerald!” shouted Giya the moment she was freed from her restraints. She clung on to him and started sobbing immediately while saying, “I’m sorry! I’m so, so sorry! I should have believed you! I even pretended that I was in love with Yunus just to make you angry! I’m so sorry...”

Both of Gerald’s arms were raised from the elbow. He was momentarily unsure of how to even react to Giya’s actions. However, he knew better not to return her hug.

Eventually, Gerald gently pushed her away with a subtle smile on his face before saying, “As long as both of you are safe, it’s fine. For now, let’s leave this place!”

“Wait! There’s one more condition I’d like to add, Mr. Crawford!”

“What else do you need?” asked Gerald, a frown on his face.

“While I may escape today, should the eldest young lady ask about this in future, under no circumstances should you reveal that I was the one who had orchestrated all this. My identity should remain strictly secret. While you may be kind and generous, Miss Crawford bears a completely different personality. If she ever finds out that I did all this, I’ll definitely be torn to shreds with no less than a thousand blades! I beg of you, Mr. Crawford. I truly have no other ill intentions, so I hope that you’ll keep my involvement a secret in order to spare my life. You can direct her to the Long family if you need a culprit! After all, I’m only doing all this because they hired me to!” said Harry as he ended his explanation with a gulp.

Gerald simply nodded slightly before leading the two girls out of the abandoned house.

From a window, Harry continued spying on them through his binoculars. He was clearly afraid that Gerald would secretly send someone after him.

After taking a few steps out of the house, Gerald smiled faintly before shouting, “You’re only looking left and right, Harry! You’re going to miss key details if you’re only limited to that field of vision!”

“...The f*ck? What do you mean by that, Mr. Crawford?”

After hearing that, Harry had a gut feeling that something was terribly wrong.

It was also at that moment when he heard a slight droning sound from atop the house. Harry was dumbfounded when finally turned to look at the sky.

Chapter 621

About thirty helicopters were encircling the abandoned house!

Tammy was equally as dumbfounded as Harry, and she immediately covered her mouth with both her hands the moment she saw the helicopters.

Dear lord! Though Tammy had grown up in the city, even she hadn't personally witnessed such a magnificent scene like this!

“You... You went back on your word!” shouted Harry, terrified.

D*mn it! His plan to escape after receiving the money was now down the drain!

As he said that, several bodyguards were already using rope ladders to descend the helicopters. In no time at all, Harry was completely surrounded.

“It really is you, Harry! And here I thought you wouldn't dare return after going missing for such a long time! I have to say, I would never have expected you to go this low! You even set Mr. Crawford up! Aren't you terrified at all that Miss Crawford will find out about this?” asked Zack with a sneer as he walked closer to Harry. Drake and Tyson followed closely behind him.

It was obvious that Zack and Harry were acquainted with each other.

Harry himself knew that there was zero chance of him escaping the situation the moment he saw Drake, Tyson, and Zack together.

He knew it was far too late for him to try to explain himself. If Zack informed Jessica about the matter, she definitely wouldn't let him off that easily. In fact, Harry had no trouble imagining a scenario where he ended up dead with several missing body parts.

To him, he felt that the only possible way to avoid that outcome was to allow himself to be captured without any resistance.

"Heh. I'm only doing all this to survive after the eldest young lady banished me. Regardless, while I was part of the elaborate plan to set Mr. Crawford up, I assure you, Mr. Lyle, that I've granted him a lot of mercy. Just so you know, not only did Mr. Long order me to set him up, but he also told me to knock him unconscious so that I could make his situation even worse! However, I turned that suggestion down immediately! As you can clearly see now, I've also taken the initiative to hand Mr. Crawford the evidence needed to prove his innocence!" explained Harry hurriedly, a smile on his face.

"Also, Mr. Lyle, weren't we once brothers working for the eldest young lady? I remember saving you once in the past. Can't you spare me this time? In case you think I haven't changed, I was only a kid back then. I'm all grown up now!"

"Oh? So you still remember the time when you were still her subordinate! I assumed that you had already forgotten all about those days! Regardless, as for how we're going to deal with you, Mr. Crawford will have the final say in this matter!"

At that moment, Zack and the others were standing by Gerald's side.

"Harry used to work for my sister?" asked Gerald in surprise. No wonder he seemed so afraid of her.

"That is correct, Mr. Crawford. Michael, Harry, and I worked under her when the eldest young lady was still in Mayberry City. Back then, Harry was still in his early twenties. Disaster struck when he got one of our female employees pregnant while he was drunk. The eldest young lady was so enraged by that that she immediately told him to get lost the moment she found out about it!" replied Zack as he continued looking at Harry, a cold smile on his face.

"So that's the whole story! Well, since he's already handed the evidence over to me, I won't pursue the matter or hold anything against him anymore!"

To be completely honest, Gerald had really wanted to find the person who had set him just to give them a tight slap on their face.

Now that Harry was staring while smiling at him in person, however, Gerald simply didn't want to continue talking to such a shameless man anymore.

"Humph! You're lucky today! Leave with the money and get lost already! Your life will be spared this time!"

Though Zack was angry, he was simultaneously feeling slightly relieved. After all, both of them had worked together before and Harry wasn't wrong either. He had indeed saved Zack's life before.

The truth was that Zack had secretly been afraid that Gerald would cruelly order him to kill Harry there and then.

"I... I'm not leaving!" replied Harry.

"What more do you want?"

"Mr. Crawford, as you can clearly see, I have nowhere else to go now. Please allow me to work by your side. I promise that I won't make any more mistakes in future. I beg of you, Mr. Crawford! Please let me work for you!"

Harry was being dead serious when he said that.

Even when he had first met Gerald in the hotel, he could already tell that Gerald was a generous person with a rather benevolent personality.

That was the reason why he had secretly disobeyed the order to harm Gerald, despite agreeing with Yunus to do it. He just couldn't bring himself to hurt such a person.

Chapter 622

What more, he was terrified of what Jessica would do to him if she ever found out that he had hurt her brother!

However, he also didn't do it because Jessica had treated him kindly before.

Regardless, he hadn't initially dared to return before this chain of events took place. He truly only wanted to get his money and leave this godforsaken place.

He had previously made sure to keep a record of everything that happened while he was dealing with Yunus. He had predicted that if everything went smoothly, Gerald would continue being misunderstood for about a week. If things had gone according to plan, he would have eventually handed the recordings over to Zack anyway once he had successfully hidden himself.

It was just his luck to end up in his current situation. Since there wasn't going to be an easy way out of this anyway, he knew there was nothing to lose in asking Gerald to take him in.

"You?" replied Gerald as he couldn't help but smile wryly.

"Forget it. Just leave while you can! Worry not, I'll forgive you today and I'll tell my sister not to hold you accountable for your actions as well."

Since Harry's face looked naturally wretched, Gerald found it hard to tell whether he truly meant what he said or if he was simply fooling around.

"Wait! As a form of courtesy, I'll also present you with another big gift, Mr. Crawford! I'm certain that you'll like it!"

Hearing that, Gerald and Zack exchanged glances. Eventually, Gerald nodded before saying, "Fine. My final decision depends on what the gift is!"

After saying that, he turned around to look at Giya and Tammy.

“Mr. Lyle, please get a car to send the girls home first!” said Gerald, his voice slightly cold and indifferent.

While Giya had hoped to talk more with Gerald, expecting him to show at least a little more concern, he didn't say a word to her.

Soon after, a car drove over to them. Gerald then entered and left immediately.

Of course, he was doing all of this on purpose. After all, he felt that it would be best for him to continue displaying this attitude so that he would be able to avoid any further misunderstandings in the future.

Giya could feel her heart aching slightly as she watched the car drive off. Was this the future of her relationship with Gerald? Was he going to continue being this cold and indifferent toward her?

Had he lost any affection he had for her as a friend as well?

Haha... That was probably the case.

Gerald had simply arrived to retrieve the evidence that he needed. He was only saving her because she just so happened to be there. Why was she even overthinking it?

Who was she anyway? Did she honestly think that Gerald was going to risk his life for her? Was she really feeling touched because of this?

'Giya you stupid girl... Gerald only has Mila in his heart... It's obvious that he's using the situation to his advantage to put some distance between you and him...'

She could only bitterly remind herself of the reality of the situation.

To think that she had thought that there really existed a person who was willing to sacrifice their life for her. It was all just a bunch of deceptive lies!

After returning home safely, Giya found herself tossing and turning in bed for most of the night. She was only able to fall asleep nearing dawn.

However, she was woken abruptly by a loud noise outside at around nine in the morning.

“You have to figure out a solution to this matter, Walton! After all, we followed you and left the Quarrington family together in the past! You’re responsible for all of us! If you fail to do that, we won’t be able to sustain our family any longer!”

Giya’s parents had returned, and together with a few of her aunts and uncles, they all seemed to be having a discussion with Walton regarding how they should deal with the issue between the Longs and Quarringtons in Yanken.

In the past, Walton had led this particular group of people away from the Quarrington family out of rage regarding some matters. However, they were now in a situation where they could no longer sustain the company that they had co-founded together.

Since he was the one who had led them away from the rest of the Quarringtons back then, he naturally had to take responsibility over everyone who was currently present.

“There doesn’t seem to be any results in Giya and the third young master of the Long family’s relationship! We simply can’t allow this to go on! Yunus’s birthday banquet is going to be held at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment today and he’s already invited Giya to accompany him there! He’s obviously still waiting for Giya to accept his marriage proposal!”

Everyone was discussing the same thing.

“Alright, that’s quite enough. All of you are already aware that Giya had run into some trouble last night. While she made it out safely and is currently resting in her room, it saddens me to say that Mr. Long didn’t even do anything to help my daughter at all! It’s beyond upsetting!”

Walton and the others had rushed home early that morning the moment they found out that Giya had been involved in a kidnapping incident.

Before anyone could even begin discussing the kidnapping, the door creaked open.

Giya then stepped into the room with a bitter expression on her face.

“Mom? Dad? You don’t have to worry. I’ll attend his birthday banquet today.”

Chapter 623

“Giya? Why aren’t you resting in your room? Why did you come out?” asked Walton, his voice clearly distressed.

Seeing her, some of her extended family members coughed before saying, “You know, Giya really is a good girl. She’s well aware that we can’t afford to offend the Long family. What more, hadn’t Mr. Long spent millions of dollars to save you when you were kidnapped? He definitely loves you a lot!”

In the room, Walton was the only one who knew the reality of the situation. Since he was worried sick, Giya had detailed the events that had taken place the night before to him. The others were completely oblivious to the truth of what had really happened.

Hearing the comments from her uncles and aunts, Giya only laughed as she expressed a wry smile. She understood what they were trying to tell her.

Despite that, Giya wasn’t angry at them at all. She was aware that the pressure from the Long and the main Quarrington family was really suffocating both her own, and her extended family.

What more, she knew that her uncles and aunts still needed to support their own families. That was the gist as to why she wasn’t holding anything against them.

Besides, she just couldn’t care any less about her situation anymore. What else could she do?

Gerald didn’t seem to care about her anymore. After all, he already had his beloved Mila.

While she had initially thought that there would still be a chance for her and Gerald to be together in the past, she didn't even want to think about it anymore.

The way she saw it, the only way she could possibly be of any use in this situation was to sacrifice herself. At least then she would finally be able to help her family attain peace!

After taking a deep breath, Giya smiled before saying, "Dad, mom, I'll go get ready first so that we can attend Yunus's birthday banquet later!"

She then returned to her room.

Seeing his daughter like that, Walton couldn't help but feel slightly depressed.

Meanwhile, Harry was together with Gerald and in his hand was a USB flash drive.

"Hehe... This is my gift to you, Mr. Crawford. I'm sure you'll be very interested in it," said Harry as he slid the USB into a laptop and began playing a video.

After watching the entire thing, Gerald couldn't help but sneer before asking, "Did you record this last night?"

"Heh, I did! I may not have many skills, but if it's regarding despicable or sneaky acts, no one can compare to me!" replied Harry as he patted his own chest twice.

"That's quite enough. There's no need to brag about that!" replied Zack as he smiled wryly.

"Either way, we now have enough evidence on hand. Together with the footage, we should finally be set to beat him in his own game!"

"Indeed!" said Gerald as he smiled while nodding.

At that moment, Gerald's phone began to ring. It was a call from his godbrother, Yoel.

"What's wrong, Yoel?"

"Brother! We got beaten up! Aiden got beaten up the worst!"

"What?! How bold! Who did it?" asked Gerald angrily.

"Who else could it have been? It's that b*stard Yunus of course! He's hosting a big birthday banquet today and almost every influential and powerful individual in Mayberry City has been invited over! The only people he specifically excluded from the event were people associated with the Crawford family! Because of that, Aiden and I brought some men over to cause some trouble for him..."

Yoel then quickly explained everything that had happened to Gerald.

Essentially, both Yoel and Aiden had been dissatisfied since Yunus was clearly targeting the Crawford family through the event.

The Long family was powerful after all, yet Yunus still chose to host his banquet in Mayberry City. What more, he was even hosting it at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment! The place Jessica used to run!

It was clear as day that Yunus was deliberately targeting Gerald.

Still, Aiden and Yoel had gone there looking for trouble without even telling Gerald beforehand. Since it was being hosted by Yunus, it was to be expected that many Long family members would also be present. That obviously contributed to the huge loss they ended up suffering.

"For now, both of you should come back and look for me first!" replied Gerald.

He wasn't going to just let this slide. After all, he treated both of them like his own brothers.

“We’re already downstairs! I’m supporting Aiden right now!” replied Yoel.

“I’m coming down now!” replied Gerald as he led Harry and the others downstairs.

True to Yoel’s word, both of them had been terribly beaten up. Aiden’s face was very badly bruised and most of it was already swollen. Even Yoel had a few bruises on his face.

“I’m so sorry, Mr. Crawford! I’ve embarrassed you today!”

Chapter 624

Aiden’s voice was dispirited, almost as though he had just lost a great battle.

“It’s fine. Just hurry up and get inside first!” replied Gerald as he patted both their shoulders before heading inside with everyone else.

“Gerald! Gerald!”

However, before he managed to get far, he heard a female’s voice calling out for him.

Turning back to see who it was, he was surprised to see Felicity standing there.

Though he hadn’t met her in quite a while, he was still slightly taken aback at how much her beauty had increased within that period of time.

“Felicity? What are you doing here?” asked Gerald.

He wasn’t sure how she had managed to find him. Thinking back, however, it was probably because his home address was no big secret.

“Humph! Since I hadn’t managed to catch you at all after returning to school, I decided to personally come over to see you!”

For a period of time, Felicity had struggled with herself when she found out about Gerald's true identity. Though it took her a while, she eventually had a complete change of heart and attitude toward Gerald.

Back when she was still unsure whether Gerald was truly Mr. Crawford, she had constantly been confused as to whether she was truly in love with Gerald or not.

However, that changed the day she saw all those people bowing before Gerald in that small neighborhood. It was at that moment when she no longer felt conflicted about her feelings.

"Well now you've seen me! You've achieved your goal!" replied Gerald with a wry smile on his face.

"Pfft! Since when have you become this way? I know, you must have several girls by your side now so you've forgotten all about your classmates! Regardless, there's actually another reason I came looking for you today!"

Gerald simply nodded, signaling for her to go on.

"So here's the thing. I recently started a celebrity company and I'm an anchor now. Since my company is under yours, I thought that we could go to Yorknorth Mountain to try attracting more attention and customers! However, the people there told us that we weren't allowed to enter!" replied Felicity.

"I can help with that. From now on, you're all free to enter!" said Gerald with a smile.

Felicity pursed her lips slightly when she saw how kind he was treating her.

While she was filled with joy, her heart bore equal amounts of sorrow.

She was naturally happy because Gerald wasn't blaming her for being so rude and mean to him in the past. He was still treating her as a classmate and friend.

However, she was also sad because she couldn't help but recall the time when they were just starting university. Back then, Gerald would constantly sneak peeks at her. As a girl, she definitely understood what that meant.

Gerald was interested in her.

At the time, however, how could she possibly have been interested in someone like him? Looking back at it now, she was filled with regrets.

It would've been great if she had gotten together with Gerald back then!

"Speaking of which, could you do me a favor as well?" asked Gerald out of the blue while Felicity was still reminiscing in her head.

"...Huh? A favor? Is there anything I can help you with?" asked Felicity, visibly surprised.

"Yes. Why don't you come in first? We can further discuss the matter inside!" replied Gerald with a smile.

While this was happening, a crowd had already formed in Wayfair Mountain Entertainment, and the banquet was getting livelier by the minute.

Ever since Jessica disbanded and auctioned off the initially named Mayberry Commercial Street so that Gerald could focus on starting his own business, Wayfair Mountain Entertainment had been auctioned off as well for management purposes.

Since Yunus had inexplicably decided to host his birthday banquet here of all places, everyone attending naturally knew what this meant.

To put bluntly, the Long family was going to plant their flag here again in the future! They were going to rise again from where they once fell in the past!

“Ah, Mr. Long! So many people came over today! They’re all certainly giving you a lot of face!” praised a servant as he looked at how festive the banquet was.

“Haha! But of course! Also, have Giya and her family arrived?” asked Yunus.

“I’ve asked about them and it seems that they’re all on their way here. Looks like she’ll finally be yours, Mr. Long!”

“Humph! I treat her so well and I’m even willing to lower myself in front of her. To think that she was in love with Gerald before this! If I hadn’t pressured her, she would’ve just continued treating me as though I didn’t exist! Yet the more she acts that way, the more I want her to be mine! D*mn it! I’m only getting angrier by talking about this! I don’t want to talk about it anymore!”

“Oh no-!”

At that moment, a waitress had been trying to refill Yunus’s wine glass. However, she accidentally knocked the wine glass over!

“D*mn it! Don’t you have any-”

While Yunus was already prepared to launch an onslaught of curses, the moment he saw how beautiful the waitress was, he immediately stopped.

Chapter 625

“Well hello there, beautiful. How did I miss you earlier?” asked Yunus.

“O-oh... Well you did seem busy just now... What more, some people were causing a scene earlier... I can understand why you didn’t have the time to pay attention to me!” replied the girl as she smiled slightly. She looked even more beautiful when she smiled.

As the girl was about to continue pouring wine for Yunus, he grabbed hold of her hand before saying, “Hold on a minute, look here! You spilled some red wine on me earlier! Such a simple apology simply won’t cut it! If you want my anger to be subdued, you’ll have to find another way to please me!”

“Um... Then, what else can I do to make you happy, Mr. Long?” asked the girl shyly.

“Hahaha! That’s what I like to hear... Come to the back with me!”

Since there was still more than an hour left before the birthday banquet would officially begin, Yunus had made up his mind that he would have some fun with this girl first.

“Now, Mr. Long?” asked the butler, clearly aware of the time.

“Don’t worry, I’ll keep my eye on the time. I’ll be back soon!” replied Yunus as he began leading the girl to a room further back.

At that moment, a woman abruptly stood in front of Yunus before saying, “What are you doing, Yunus?”

“Ah, sister-in-law! I have something to attend to now. Worry not, I’ll be back soon! Haha!”

The woman in question was none other than Xavia. Behind her, stood Natasha—her younger sister—along with several of Natasha’s classmates.

Xavia’s eyes reflected her feelings of contempt. She naturally knew what Yunus was about to do with that girl.

To make matters worse, she had gotten into an argument with Yunus last night. The cause of it was because she had planned to invite Gerald to his birthday banquet today.

Her intention was simple. She simply wanted to show off to Gerald, and in order to do that, he first needed to be present.

The location was perfect for her plan as well. This was Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. The place where she had suffered her darkest and deepest sorrows!

It was the best place for her to give Gerald a slap to his face!

Quite honestly, she knew she wouldn't be satisfied just slapping him once or twice. She wanted to completely embarrass him. To make him awe at her when she was at her peak so that he would come to regret everything that he had done to her!

'See Gerald? So what if you left me? I'm leading an extremely glorious life now! Are you regretting all your actions now, Gerald?!

Revenge was the only thing on her mind.

However, Yunus had other things on his mind. He had held his birthday banquet here because he specifically wanted to target Gerald.

This was the gist of why they ended up quarreling the night before. Naturally, Xavia wasn't able to outtalk Yunus.

Because of that, she simply left together with her sister. At the time, she really couldn't be bothered with him.

"U-um... Mr. Long? What exactly are we doing here in the guest room? Don't you have a lot of guests waiting to meet you outside?" asked the girl.

"Hehehe... Don't tell me you don't know why we're here! Now get in!" said Yunus as he grinned. Upon saying that, he shoved her into the guest room.

"W-what are you trying to do?!" shouted the girl in horror.

"S-someone! Save me, please!"

"Heh! I've already booked the entire venue today! Who would actually dare to-"

At that moment, the door was suddenly kicked open! Five men then rushed in immediately.

“Sister?! D*mn it! How dare you touch her! Are all of you recording this? You must be tired of living, huh?!” shouted one of the men viciously as he walked up to Yunus.

As he said that, the other men were busy taking their cell phones out to record the scene happening before them.

“B-brother! You’re here! I was so scared just now!”

Chapter 626

The girl then hurriedly ran to her brother’s side.

Yunus himself had been taken aback after seeing so many things happening at once. When he finally turned to look at the angry man’s face, he was shocked beyond words.

“H-Harry?! Why are you here? How did you even get it?” asked Yunus as he started breaking out in cold sweat.

“Oh? What a pleasant coincidence! So you’re the culprit, Mr. Long! So you dared to insult my beloved sister, huh? I’m going to f*cking kill you right here and now!” roared Harry as he kicked Yunus directly in the chest.

Yunus found himself flying to the other end of the bed. When he finally landed, he immediately clutched on to his chest. He felt as though he would start vomiting blood at any second.

“Hold him down!” ordered Harry as several of his men immediately pinned down Yunus’s arms and legs.

Yunus’s face was pale with fright. He then started yelling, “Guards! Guards, get in here right now!”

He yelled so hard that even his voice started sounding hoarse.

“Scream on! Scream as loud as you want! As long as you’re in this room, nobody’s going to hear you! Not only did you send your men after my head, you almost took advantage of my sister as well! You’re an unforgivable piece of sc*m, Yunus Long!” shouted Harry as he slapped Yunus’s cheek.

“I-I was wrong, Harry! Also since when have you had a sister? I didn’t know about her at all!”

At that moment, Yunus couldn’t afford to retain his usual dominant personality anymore.

In reply, Harry gave Yunus another hard slap before saying, “Questioning me now? After treating my sister like this? You’re truly done for today!”

“L-like I said, I was wrong, Harry! Harry, listen to me, both of us have had our fair shares of grudges and grievances. While you may want to take your revenge against me, I know that deep in your heart, all you’re really after is more money, right? I can give you all the money you want! Also, it’s my birthday today and the elders of the Long family are present as well! Why don’t we discuss things civilly?”

Yunus was well aware that he had been set up. He had walked straight into their trap so that they could frame him.

He was currently filled with regrets for not holding back his lust earlier.

“Also, Harry! You know who I am, right? I’m sure you’re aware that it won’t do you any good to offend me... What more, Wayfair Mountain Entertainment has security cameras everywhere. It won’t be long before my men realize what’s going on! When they finally get here, things won’t end well for you! So how about it? Why not just take the money and leave now?!” explained Yunus hurriedly.

“Thank you for your concern, Mr. Long. I have to say, it’s amusing how you’re still trying to scare me right now. First of all, we came in through the back door. Secondly, I don’t think you’re aware of who supervised the installation process of all the security cameras in the building,” replied Harry before sneering coldly.

“...Y-you don’t mean...”

“That’s right! It was me!” shouted Harry as he landed yet another slap on Yunus’s face.

“W-what do you want then?” asked Yunus as he gulped.

“Oh, I only need you to do something very simple! See, you’ve insulted my sister today and I’ve caught you red-handed! I don’t need your god d*mn money! I need you to kneel in front of me and call me master three times in a row! Actually hold on, master would be too easy. Let’s go with grandpa instead to make things more interesting! While we’re at it, you’ll also need to say how much of a brute you are at the end of each of those three sentences. I’ll forgive you once you’ve done that. How about it?” sneered Harry.

“In your dreams!”

Immediately after he said that, Yunus received his fourth slap of the day.

“Do you think I’m playing around? I’m going all out today, Yunus! In the worst-case scenario, I’ll just perish together with you! I know very well that a b*stard like you won’t let me off easily anyway!” said Harry as he took a knife out.

When he saw the look on Harry’s face, Yunus realized just how serious the situation had become. At this point, Harry looked like he was willing to do anything.

“A-alright! I’ll do as you ask, Harry! I’ll do it!” shouted Yunus as he knelt down in fright.

“...Grandpa, I’m a brute!”

As he repeated the sentence thrice, the other men continued recording every pathetic second of it.

However, nearing the end of his last sentence, Yunus suddenly raised his head and threw the bedsheets at Harry!

While the others were momentarily stunned, he got up, opened a window, and then jumped out!

“D*mn it! Don’t let him get away!” yelled Harry after recovering from his shock. He and the others then immediately began chasing after Yunus.

However, Yunus had already started shouting the moment he made his escape. All the noise naturally caught the attention of the bodyguards in front.

“Mr. Long!”

The shout had come from Dante who had a large group of bodyguards together with him.

Chapter 627

“Harry! The guards are here!” said one of Harry’s men.

“D*mn it! We’ll definitely be outnumbered! We’ll have to retreat first!” ordered Harry. Together with the girl, the group then swiftly made their way out of Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

“After them! Hunt them down and kill them all!” shouted Yunus angrily.

This was the first time Yunus had ever been treated this way. The immense humiliation was near unbearable for him.

As his guards chased after Harry and his group, Yunus’s butler approached him before asking in a worried tone, “Are you alright, Mr. Long?”

“How the f*ck could I possibly be fine? You were the one who had chosen this crappy place to host my birthday banquet in! If it wasn’t for this venue, Harry and his men wouldn’t have possibly been able to sneak in this easily! Do you even know I almost died?!”

Despite the fact that his butler looked to be almost sixty, Yunus still slapped him hard on the face.

Feeling embarrassed, the butler then immediately said, "I-It's all my fault! I've clearly wronged you, Mr. Long!"

"...If I may, it's still your birthday today, Mr. Long, and several wealthy and influential figures are waiting inside to meet you... Why don't we go back in first?" suggested the butler.

Hearing that, Yunus grumbled angrily before walking back into the building while adjusting his necktie.

"Hey, hey! Look there! That's Mr. Long's fiancée, right? Miss Giya?"

"Indeed! You know, I've heard rumors of her extraordinary beauty and excellent temperament. Now that I've seen her in person, I can certainly agree with what I've heard!"

Several of the businessmen and celebrities at the venue were looking at, and discussing Giya and her family who had naturally also been invited to the birthday banquet.

"Speaking of which, have all of you heard? Miss Giya seems to have a rather close relationship with Mr. Crawford! Their relationship is quite ambiguous and from what I've been told, she almost became Mr. Crawford's girlfriend!"

"'Almost'? I heard that she's already Mr. Crawford's woman! A more extreme rumor is that she's already pregnant with his child! The two of them possibly being a couple is no big secret anymore!"

"What?! Is that really true?!"

"Hey, quiet down! What'll happen if Mr. Long's men hear any of that! Even I've heard some rumors about Miss Giya and Mr. Crawford being together! However, regardless of what we've heard, Miss Giya is still obviously Mr. Long's woman now! "

The crowd then continued discussing the matter in low voices.

Giya herself was currently walking around with Tammy and her other friends. No matter where she went, she could hear snippets of their discussions about the relationship between her and Gerald.

Had it not been for the occasion, she would have already cursed everyone who was bad-mouthing her. All she could do was blush in silence.

Even Xavia had overheard the discussions running rampant among the crowd.

Hearing all that only served to make her angry.

She was supposed to be the protagonist today! However, with Giya here, it was clear that she wasn't going to be in the spotlight. The realization of this only made her even gloomier.

What more, they were all saying that Gerald and Giya had a close relationship! Xavia's discomfort grew even worse from that.

After all, to everyone, Giya was better than her in every aspect. And that wasn't the worst part. Despite being so capable, Giya was actually on good terms with her ex-boyfriend!

All this irritation made Xavia extremely frustrated. She couldn't help but glare daggers at Giya whenever she saw her.

It was at that moment when Yunus re-entered the scene.

When he saw Giya, he couldn't help but feel slightly resentful.

Regardless of how much he pursued her, she always retained her cold and indifferent expression when she was together with him. Despite her knowing that Yunus was celebrating his birthday today, the event did little to change her attitude toward him.

Yunus was also irritated by the fact that he had earlier been terribly insulted and humiliated.

As he sat down on the main seat in frustration, a few members of the Quarrington family walked over to greet him.

However, he only continued sitting in silence, not even bothering to reply to any of them.

At that moment, Xavia walked over to him before saying in an envious voice, “You know, Yunus, it’s your birthday today, but it seems like your fiancée is a little unhappy. Also, do you know what everyone was saying earlier?”

“Go on.”

“Almost everyone was insisting that Giya actually likes Gerald! Some of them were even saying that you forced Giya to be together with you! I’ve even heard some news saying that you were the one who had caused Gerald and Giya to break up!”

Chapter 628

“What utter bullsh*t! Who said that?! I’m killing all of them!” growled Yunus angrily as he slammed both his hands on the table.

Everyone was shocked and nobody dared to say another word.

His reaction made everyone remember why they had attended his birthday banquet in the first place. Their true goal was to get into Yunus’s good books after all.

Seeing that everyone had ceased their gossiping, Yunus then looked at Giya before saying coldly, “Come over here and sit next to me, Giya! I want these people to know that you’re my woman! You’re Yunus Long’s woman I say!”

Giya frowned when she heard him say that. Rather than obeying his orders, she simply turned to face the other way.

When they saw her reaction, many of the guests began smiling in excitement.

Giya had clearly given Yunus a mental slap to the face! She wasn't giving him any respect at all!

Yunus had already been very unhappy today.

Not only had his annoyance grown after hearing what Xavia had relayed to him, Giya had just given him the cold shoulder!

To top it off, he was now feeling even more pressure since everyone was intensely staring at him!

His rage at that moment knew no bounds.

"I told you to come over here! Didn't you hear what I said?!" yelled Yunus as he got up and walked over to Giya. The moment he was in front of her, he grabbed her by the arm and violently began tugging her toward his seat again.

"What are you doing?! What are you behaving this way?" shouted Tammy as she and the other girls glared angrily at Yunus.

They had initially thought that since it would be impossible for Giya and Gerald to be together anymore, being together with the young master from the Long family would be the second-best thing, as long as he was a good person.

They could clearly see now how much of a sc*mbag Yunus really was.

"She's my god d*mn fiancée! She has to do whatever the f*ck I tell her to! And now, I want her to sit beside me to pour me some f*cking wine! F*ck Gerald! Gerald's nothing but trash in my eyes!" roared Yunus as he continued tugging her arm.

All of the Quarrington family members had ugly expressions on their faces. However, as was expected, nobody dared to speak up.

Xavia smiled triumphantly as she watched the scene before her play out.

Once they arrived at the main seat, Giya sat on the chair next to it while holding on to her wrist. Yunus had clearly grabbed on to it too roughly.

“It’s my birthday today! Could you stop being so cold to me for once?! Smile, god d*mn it! Smile as you pour my god d*mn wine!”

Nobody could understand why he was suddenly losing his cool. However, nobody was complaining either. After all, they were all enjoying their front row seats to this drama!

The bitterness in Giya’s heart peaked at that moment. However, she knew that she didn’t really have a choice in the matter.

Forcing on a faint smile, she then began pouring some wine for Yunus.

“Fantastic!” cheered and applauded the people from within the crowd.

Xavia herself smiled subtly as she said, “Haha... My sister-in-law is too good for someone like Gerald. Why would anyone say that she loves him? From what I can see, it’s clear that she’s head over heels for Yunus! If none of you are buying that, why not Giya and Yunus kiss in front of everyone then? Haha! That’ll be the biggest birthday present for Yunus!”

After hearing what she said, everyone started cheering and applauding again.

“She’s right! Go on! Kiss! Kiss! Kiss!”

“Humph! If it’s a kissing scene all of you want, then a kissing scene you’ll get!” sneered Yunus as he attempted to hug Giya so that she would be forced to kiss him.

However, Giya immediately avoided him before shouting, “What do you think you’re doing? Have you gone mad?!”

She just couldn't stand him anymore.

"Oh? What's happening here?" said Xavia as she faked her surprise.

On the contrary, everyone else truly was surprised.

"My word, what is wrong with you, sister-in-law? You're not giving Yunus any face at all, despite the fact that he's celebrating his birthday today! Humph! Does your heart truly still belong to Gerald?" added Xavia.

Hearing her statement, Yunus's anger rose even more as he glared at Giya.

Chapter 629

"How dare you try to avoid me?! You're to obey everything that I say! If you can't do even that, I'll make sure that the Quarringtons cease to exist in Mayberry City!" roared Yunus furiously as he yanked on Giya's hair out of anger.

He then pulled her into his arms, forcefully positioning her into a hug. Giya however, wasn't having any of that.

"Release me you lunatic!"

As Giya struggled desperately to free herself, she began subconsciously raising her hand...

And a moment later, a slap could be heard.

Giya had just slapped Yunus's face.

"...You... You hit me? You actually dare to hit me?"

Yunus was so shocked and angry that he could almost feel himself ready to spurt out blood.

Everyone else could only stare wide-eyed at what they had just witnessed.

“Are you alright, Giya?!”

It was Tammy and the other girls who had broken the silence as they pulled Giya away from Yunus in their effort to protect her.

“...Kneel... Kneel before me immediately! Otherwise you’ll definitely regret it!” growled Yunus, his anger limitless as he cupped a hand on his hurt cheek.

As he said that, the other members of the Long family had also gotten up, slowly gathering around them.

After all, Giya had just slapped Yunus in public. It was equivalent to her slapping the faces of all the other Longs as well!

“I’m terribly sorry, Mr. Long! Giya was rude and disrespectful to you! I’m so sorry, Mr. Long!” said Walton as he immediately rushed forward to apologize to Yunus.

He had gritted his teeth while also clenching both his fists as he said that. After all, no father would be able to tolerate seeing their daughter being treated like this.

As for the other members of the Quarrington family, all of them were extremely afraid that things were just going to continue getting worse.

At that moment, Giya’s third uncle began walking toward Yunus with a smile on his face, clearly trying to de-escalate the situation.

However, before he could even say a word, Yunus punched him out of the blue!

“Get lost!” roared Yunus as Giya’s third uncle fell to the floor.

“Third uncle!” cried out Giya.

The other Quarringtons were now beyond terrified.

Turning to look at Giya, Yunus then began slowly walking toward her.

Suddenly, he felt something hit him on the forehead!

“F*ck!” shouted Yunus as he placed a palm over his forehead. Looking at the floor, he realized that he had been shot with a plastic pellet!

“Who the f*ck did that?!” cursed Yunus aloud.

In response, another plastic pellet was shot! This one hit Yunus’s forehead as well.

Now knowing which direction the pellets had been shot from, Yunus looked toward the venue’s main entrance.

He saw a few men standing there, their possible leader holding on to a toy gun which was still pointed toward Yunus. When the hell had they come in?

“Haha! Bullseyes for both shots!”

Said the person who had shot the pellets as he threw the toy gun aside before starting to laugh.

“D*mn it, it’s you again? Are you sick of living or something?”

Yunus recognized their faces. They had earlier come to cause trouble, after all. However, they had been promptly beaten up by his men before they managed to escape.

Of course, the group standing at the building's main entrance was Yoel and the rest of his men.

After hearing Yunus say that, Yoel began walking toward him with both hands in his pockets. His group of men followed closely behind him.

"I'm glad you noticed! I'm feeling quite uncomfortable now, you know? Come on! Beat up again, please!" replied Yoel as he sneered.

"Why you... Men, get them-"

Before Yunus was able to order his men to beat them up, his butler hurriedly ran over to stop him.

"Mr. Long, please don't act recklessly. Let's see what he's up to first!" whispered the butler.

"Yunus Long! If you know what's good for you, then you better release my sister-in-law! Otherwise, you'll be done for today!" shouted Yoel as he pointed toward Giya.

"What?!"

Everyone present was shocked.

"Oh dear, Mr. Long has really gotten himself in a very messy situation this time!"

"I agree! The Long family is really going to embarrass themselves this time!"

Just like before, the crowd had already started discussing the current situation among themselves.

As for Aiden, who had previously been injured, he nudged his shoulder against Yoel's before giving him a look. It was his way of reminding Yoel to pay attention to what he said, even if they were here to cause a scene today.

The entire operation was a very big deal.

“So it seems that the rumors are true! Is the young master of the Long family really interested in other peoples' leftovers?”

The discussions were going more rampant than ever in the crowd.

At that moment, Giya looked at Yoel before saying, “Sister-in-law...? What are you talking about?”

“Heh... Well, it doesn't really matter! Regardless, since we're all already here, I definitely won't allow you to get hurt any further!” replied Yoel.

Yoel was so angry that his face was now beet red.

“I see... No wonder Yoel and his men came over to cause a scene earlier! They were trying to take Miss Giya away! The young masters must've been angry! After all, Yoel is Mr. Crawford's godbrother!”

“Indeed!”

However, before they were able to continue discussing any further, a woman suddenly said, “Hah! How brave of you to come all the way here just to create a ruckus! But why isn't Gerald here? Why's he only sending his men? Get him to come personally if he wants trouble! Also, don't simply refer to others as your sister-in-law!”

Chapter 630

The woman in question was Xavia.

She didn't know why, but she felt extremely uncomfortable when she heard Yoel referring to Giya as his sister-in-law!

“F*cking hell! They’re really tired of living, aren’t they?! This is the second time you’ve tried to cause a scene at my birthday banquet! I’m beating all of you to death if it’s the last thing I do!” yelled Yunus angrily.

By then, all of the present Long family bodyguards had surrounded Yoel and his men. There seemed to be at least a hundred of them.

This was such a huge scene that all the businessmen and celebrities there were taken aback.

“Oh dear lord! You have so many men with you! I’m terrified! Pop quiz time! Do you know which family has more men with them in Mayberry City?” said Yoel with a laugh, his hands in his pocket.

As soon as his sentence ended, a whistle was blown.

Following that, a large group of men began rushing in from the main entrance without warning!

An estimated five to six hundred men had also surrounded the building’s exterior, all of them working for the Crawford family.

With countless men suddenly standing behind Yoel, Yunus was left completely taken aback.

Even Xavia shut up when she saw all the men that Yoel had suddenly summoned.

Based on the current situation, it was visibly clear that it would be impossible for the Longs to win this battle.

‘All these men belong to Gerald... Since when has he become like this?’ Xavia thought to herself.

By then, several of the Long family’s seniors were looking around them anxiously.

“Third young master, please don’t act impulsively! They’re deliberately trying to provoke you now! If you make the first move, they’ll have a reason to start fighting back!” said one of the senior members hurriedly.

“Please be patient, Yunus... I’d like to see what they’re planning on doing next...” said another Long family member anxiously.

“Mr. Lyle is here!” shouted someone from the crowd at that moment.

As soon as they heard his name, the crowd automatically began making way for him to pass through.

Zack and Michael could be seen standing at the end of the newly cleared path.

“Mr. Lyle! Mr. Zeke!” greeted a few of the businessmen there as they, too, stood aside to ensure that there was an open path in front of the two men.

All of the Long family’s members were now aware that Zack was present as well.

Among the Longs, a middle-aged man suddenly stood up and quickly walked over to him.

“It’s been a while since I’ve last met with you, Mr. Lyle. It’s the Long family’s third young master’s birthday today you know? What exactly do you mean by this current scene?”

It was obvious that some of the senior members there knew Zack.

“Oh, it doesn’t mean anything. And yes, I’m aware that Yunus is celebrating his birthday today so I just came along to have some fun! Happy birthday, Yunus!” replied Zack with a smile.

“Then how would you explain all the guards here?” asked the same man again.

“Oh, them? Well, all of them used to work in Mayberry Commercial Street. They were all equally excited to hear that the Long family’s third young master was celebrating his birthday at Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. After all, this used to be our old home! That’s the only reason why we’re all here today. Don’t you think you’re being a little too sensitive, Mr. Long?”

“Regardless, since we’re already here to celebrate his birthday, don’t you think you should invite all of us in for at least a drink?” replied Zack.

Yunus could barely hold his anger back when he heard this. However, he wasn’t a fool. He knew well enough not to make a move against Zack.

He could only turn his head to the side in anger.

“But of course! The Long family has always been hospitable to our guests! Please, come with me, Mr. Lyle!” said the Long family senior hurriedly.

Not too long after, Zack, Yoel, and a few others found themselves sitting at a table next to Yunus’s.

Yunus was feeling extremely depressed at that moment. Just as he was about to take a sip of red wine, a loud smacking sound was heard.

Something had hit Yunus’s cheek!

When he looked up, he saw Yoel and Aiden aiming peanuts at him!

“D*mn it!” growled Yunus as he glared at both of them with a vicious expression on his face. All he could do was clench his fists tightly while taking deep breaths, hoping that it would allow him to control his temper.

However, moments later, a piece of braised pork hit Yunus directly on his forehead!

“You f*ckers!” yelled Yunus as he immediately stood up in anger.

“Yunus! Calm yourself!” said another senior member of the Long family as he placed his hand on Yunus’s shoulder to prevent him from doing anything rash.

Chapter 631

While the other Longs were also furious at Yoel’s provocations, they knew better not to say anything in their current situation.

“There’s no need for that, Mr. Lyle. Please restrain your people!” said one of the Long family’s seniors.

Zack smiled before adding, “Yeah, Yoel. Stop being so rude!”

Yoel only kept quiet once he was told to do so.

Meanwhile, Gerald was standing at the corner of the large golf course behind his hotel. He seemed to be waiting for someone.

“Are the helicopters on their way?” asked Gerald through his phone.

“We’ll be arriving soon!” replied both Drake and Tyson simultaneously.

Gerald hadn’t really wanted to take the helicopter today, but Zack had insisted that he do so. He needed to appear powerful in order to deter the Longs. Hence, he needed to be high profile.

Since he was going to confront the Long family anyway, Gerald simply agreed. He couldn’t care less anymore about retaining a low profile.

As he awaited his ride, Gerald looked around the golf course. Several groups of people were scattered across the course, enjoying their individual games of golf.

“Our sincerest apologies, good sirs, but we have to clear up the golf course soon. Could you please leave for the time being? We’re truly sorry for the inconvenience.”

This was what a few employees had set out to relay to those currently playing in the course.

“Huh? Leave? We just started!”

“That’s right! You can’t expect us to just be alright with that! I’m still with my client! Give me your manager’s contact number! I want to speak to your manager!”

“Yeah! We’ve paid so much to enter the club and we don’t even have the right to stay? I’m definitely not leaving!”

The customers were furious.

“We finally got to play with Ms. Karen you know? And now you’re making us leave? That’s preposterous!” said one of the girls rather unwillingly.

“Chase, Sherry, what do both of you think?”

“Yeah, we aren’t done playing yet. Since the others haven’t left either, we should continue as well!” replied Chase.

This particular group consisted of four people, with three females and a male.

“Still, your husband is so great, Ms. Karen! I would’ve never dreamt of coming to such an amazing golf course if he hadn’t brought us here!” said another girl.

“Haha, well, my husband had to accompany an important client here today. Since they were going to play golf and we weren’t doing anything, I just thought it would be nice for all of us to come here together. Even though you were all just my students in junior high school, we’ve been in touch for so many years that I now treat all of you like my own siblings!” replied Karen.

Seeing that they couldn't make the customers leave, the employees simply left. Their task wasn't to force the people to leave. They simply had to reduce the number of people on the golf course by informing them that they were clearing up the course soon.

If they were really going to clear up the entire golf course, the task wouldn't be handed over to simple employees.

"Gone at last! What nuisances! Either way, both of you are getting married soon, right? Chase, Sherry? You could consider taking your wedding photographs here. The course is so beautiful that even I feel better just by looking at this scenery!" said one of the girls excitedly as she took her phone out and snapped a picture of the surrounding area.

"I'm going to take more pictures of the scenery! Like... Here! And here! And there as well!" said the girl with every photo that she took.

"Woah!" said the girl out of the blue. Frozen in place, she squinted at one of the pictures she had just taken.

"What's wrong, Lucille?" asked Karen, Sherry, and Chase as they turned to look at her.

With a shocked expression, Lucille then pointed toward a direction before saying, "Ms. Karen... All of you, look! That person standing in the distance... Doesn't he look a bit like Gerald?"

"What? Gerald?"

Shocked, everyone then turned to look at where Lucille was pointing at.

It was true. The person standing at the corner of the golf course with his hands in his pockets, was indeed, Gerald.

"Is that really him? What is he even doing here?" asked Lucille curiously.

Chapter 632

“Who knows? I heard that he knows quite a lot of people! If I were to guess, he’s probably here... to pick golf balls for them? Haha!” said Karen.

“That does sound logical. I remember he said that he was doing his own business when we last met at our class gathering! Ridiculous!” sneered Lucille.

When Gerald was still in junior high school, three of the people in the group were his classmates and the fourth was one of his teachers. They had met him the last time Gerald went back to his old house to celebrate his birthday.

The day they met was coincidentally also Chase’s birthday, and the day Gerald found out that the girl he had liked in high school—Sherry—was now together with Chase.

Gerald had left the gathering early back then since there weren’t a lot of common topics to talk about. What more, Gerald was rushing to celebrate his own birthday as well.

After he left, Chase and the others planned to visit Sunny Springs. However, after having their dinner and arriving there, they found that there wasn’t much to look at anymore.

It was then when Karen had told them to wait for the day her husband needed to accompany his client again. She would be able to bring them along to a five-star golf course then.

All that led to the current events.

“So, Ms. Karen, do you think we should greet him?” asked Lucille.

“Why not? Look over there guys! He’s really picking golf balls for others!” said Karen as she pointed and laughed.

“Hey you! Could you bring that golf ball to us?”

Just as Gerald hung up, a ball rolled up to his foot. Apparently a girl who was practicing her golf club swings accidentally swung it there.

A guy then pointed toward Gerald. He clearly wanted Gerald to bring the ball over to him, so Gerald simply followed his orders.

“The hell? What kind of worker even is that!” said the same guy as he rolled his eyes toward Gerald.

“Oh, honey! Don’t be mad, you’ll scare him off!”

“You’ll have to constantly make use of people like him! If he isn’t disciplined enough, he’ll be cutting slack every day!”

Gerald simply smiled bitterly as he heard them talking. He didn’t really want to start an argument with them.

As he was making his way back to his initial spot to enjoy a moment of silence, Lucille and the others came up to him.

“Haha! What a coincidence, Gerald!”

All of them were watching when Gerald was scolded after picking the golf ball up.

They had initially thought that Gerald was doing well with his business, but once they saw that scene, all of them became equally excited.

“Oh? It’s you guys?” said Gerald, slightly surprised.

Not only were his high school mates here, but also Sherry, the girl he used to like.

“What? Are you afraid that we saw what you were doing? I thought you were doing your own business! Is this the business you were talking about? Picking up golf balls for people?” said Karen as she continued mocking him.

Sherry on the other hand, simply looked at him and shook her head. People without a future certainly wouldn't change much!

“Ah, Karen! Here you all are! I've been looking for all of you!” said a young man wearing a suit as he walked over to the group.

“What is it, hubby?”

“Well, we're short of a ball picker over on our side. Could you help me get one from the front desk?” replied the man.

“Haha! There's one here right now! This person here used to be my student and now he's picking up golf balls for a living! Just take him...”

“Him? Alright then, come along with me!” said the man as he nodded toward Gerald.

Gerald simply shook his head before saying, “Sorry, I don't have the time...”

He was speechless.

Chapter 633

After ending his sentence, Gerald simply stood aside with a bitter smile on his face. While several misunderstandings were at play, he didn't feel the need to explain everything to them.

“What's his problem?” asked Karen's husband, clearly upset.

“Oh, don't bother about him! He's just being a jerk again!” replied Karen, equally as upset.

All of a sudden, someone shouted, "Hot d*mn! That's a lot of helicopters!"

"Huh? Where?"

"Holy! There's at least thirty-six of them up there and they're all forming a formation!"

Everyone there was stunned. Though this place was mostly reserved for wealthy people, those present there today were generally younger, which explained their shock.

Even Karen and the others' attention was drawn toward the helicopters.

"Aren't those helicopters used by the military, Hubby?" asked Karen, her voice clearly indicating her shock.

Her other students were simply too stunned to say anything.

"Of course not. While they surely are military grade helicopters, citizens can use them too. Still, I wonder who could have brought so many helicopters into Weston..."

Though Karen's husband was knowledgeable, even he was surprised.

"I really want to know who those helicopters are for... The kind of formation they're making could only be reserved for the richest of the rich!" said Lucille as she jumped up and down excitedly.

She even took out her phone to capture pictures of them. What an exciting day!

"Honey, look! The helicopters are about to land on the golf course!" said the lady who had misdirected her swing earlier.

"No wonder the workers told us to leave earlier. Someone powerful must be here today! I'm glad we didn't leave. I have to know this person!" replied her husband, shocked.

Though they were indeed rich, they weren't that rich! How could a person even have that much money!

"Good day, sir! Might you have any idea of who's here today?" asked Karen's husband as he walked over to the couple. He had overheard them discussing the helicopters as well.

He could tell that they were rich just from how they were dressed, which led to his assumption that they would probably know more about the situation.

Karen and the others simply followed behind him.

"I can't really tell!" replied the man with a smile.

Karen's husband then started making some small talk with the man about the wealthy people living in Weston.

Chase and the others could only look at them with admiration. This was a conversation between successful people. They could create a conversation out of the simplest of things.

It was the true power of having connections.

After all, Chase wouldn't be able to be at such a high-class place if he wasn't close to Ms. Karen.

Even Lucille was proud of being there.

Eventually, the helicopters managed to get in formation and they all landed on the golf course.

Everyone on the golf course was filled with excitement. Even those staying inside the hotel came out to watch.

“Look there! Some people are coming out of a helicopter!”

It was Drake and Tyson. Both of them were leading a row of bodyguards out of one of the helicopters.

“Oh my god! They’re all so cool and handsome!” shouted Lucille excitedly.

Even Sherry was swooned at the sight of the bodyguards.

Drake and Tyson however, simply ignored them. After putting on some sunglasses, they walked toward Gerald.

“...What?”

Karen and the others were utterly confused.

“Mr. Crawford!” shouted Drake, Tyson, and all the other bodyguards in unison.

“Glad to see you’re all here!” replied Gerald as he nodded.

“Mr... Mr. Crawford?!”

Chapter 634

Karen and the others were beyond shocked when they heard the name being shouted out.

What was going on? Why did they address Gerald as Mr. Crawford?

Were those helicopters really here to pick Gerald up?

All of them had pained expressions on their faces, and this was especially so for the girls in the group. The pain they felt was excruciating. After all, all three of them had constantly looked down on Gerald. They just couldn’t believe that he was actually such a powerful person!

“Impossible... How is any of this possible?!” said Lucille.

Gerald didn't even bother looking at them. He was already prepared to leave.

“Gerald!” shouted Lucille, desperation in her voice.

“Yes?” replied Gerald as he turned to face her.

“You... These helicopters... They came to pick you up?” asked Lucille in a nervous tone.

“Yep!” said Gerald while nodding slightly. He then glanced at Sherry and Karen but he didn't say anything else. Slipping his hands into his pockets, he finally walked toward the helicopter, greeted by a row of bodyguards.

As for the young couple from earlier, both of them were equally shocked and scared. They had ordered a big boss to pick their golf ball up for them!

However, Gerald was simply too lazy to even bother with their reactions anymore. He was no longer as troubled as he used to be when it came to him showing off his wealth.

As Sherry and Karen continued to stare in confusion, the helicopters soon took off again.

Moving back to Yunus's birthday party, Yunus was still extremely upset after hearing everything that Yoel and Aiden had said.

Adding on to what Harry had said earlier, Yunus could feel that something wasn't right. This was because while Gerald's people looked like they were ready to cause trouble, Gerald himself had yet to arrive.

“I think Mr. Crawford is definitely coming over to snatch the bride away! He'll definitely be coming for Ms. Giya!”

“That’s right! She’s so pretty... Plus, the Crawfords and the Longs have resented each other for a long time. No wonder Mr. Crawford is so upset!”

At that moment, almost everyone there was gossiping.

“What should we do, Yunus...?”

The question had come from Melissa who had just approached him. After all, Yunus wasn’t the only one who had turned his back against Gerald. Melissa had done so as well.

She was getting increasingly worried after seeing what had happened earlier on.

Gerald used to treat her well. He had even gone to the event she had organized just to save her some face.

While she felt guilty about it, she still opted to help Yunus in the end since Gerald didn’t have a background like the Long family did.

The situation there was extremely awkward now. Nobody dared to speak until one of the seniors of the Long family, Jerry Len, spoke up.

“Everyone! Today is young master Long’s birthday! It’s a wonderful sight, seeing all of you here today. Even Mr. Lyle is here to celebrate this wonderful occasion with us! Hence, I’m happy to announce that we’re officially buying Wayfair Mountain Entertainment as our primary investment project! Next, I’ll be showing all of you our following business plans for Mayberry!” said Jerry as he looked at Zack.

“What!”

Everyone there was starting to realize that the Longs were serious about taking their revenge after being forced by Jessica to leave Mayberry in the past.

They were also aware that Jerry had only spoken because the Long family had something up their sleeves to show all of them. But what could it be?

Seeing that everyone was curious, Jerry immediately clapped his hands. A brief moment later, the droning of helicopters could be heard coming from the mountains.

It wasn't long before the crowd was able to see six helicopters hovering above Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. A roll of red satin hung under each helicopter and each roll held an individual word. When placed in order, they would form the name of the Long family's project. The rolls of satin also made it look as though six red dragons were flying in the sky.

"Holy! That's Master Long's helicopter squad, the Flying Dragon Fleet! He rarely uses any of them and only brings out all six on big occasions! Each helicopter is worth a lot!"

"The Long family has such great power..."

Chapter 635

"Woah!"

While Melissa had been afraid at first, she was shocked out of her fear when she saw the helicopters flying in the sky.

Looking at everyone's expressions, the Long family seemed to have finally managed to save themselves some face. This made Jerry smile happily.

However, much to everyone's disappointment, before the helicopters could properly display the words on the red satin rolls, all of them landed immediately instead.

"Huh? What's happening?" asked someone, shocked.

"The hell? Quick! Go check out what's wrong!" shouted another person from the side.

It was at that moment when a shocking sight could be seen from afar. A speck of black seemed to have formed in the sky, and it was slowly getting bigger as it swiftly approached Wayfair Mountain Entertainment.

That speck in question was actually Gerald's thirty-six helicopters! While none of the helicopters looked as grand as the ones owned by the Long family, in the end, thirty-six helicopters were still much grander than just six.

"What... What on earth is happening? Whose helicopters are those?"

Everyone was brimming with curiosity as they stood up. No wonder the six helicopters landed immediately.

As Jerry turned to look at Yunus, utterly confused, he could see that Yunus's own face had already turned as white as a sheet. The same went for Xavia.

"What the hell?" said Xavia as she, too, got up from her seat.

In Yanken, the Long family was both wealthy and powerful, which was why they could afford those six luxurious helicopters in the first place. The helicopters they owned weren't regular ones by any means. They couldn't just be bought off the market.

Not even everyone from the family could sit in them, but Xavia was lucky enough to have boarded one of them once.

Despite all that, they still lost in number. Who could have thought that there was someone even more powerful than them!

"Who is it?"

Everyone was still flabbergasted by the scene. Everyone except for Giya. She knew for a fact that it was Gerald orchestrating the entire scene.

One of the helicopters descended slowly, before finally landing right outside the function hall's entrance.

Once the helicopter was on the ground, Gerald stepped out of it slowly. Together with him, was Drake, Tyson, and Harry.

"Mr. Crawford! Oh my god it's really him!" shouted some of the people excitedly.

Gerald only smiled subtly. While the Long family's bodyguards were still trying to stop Gerald's people before this, the moment they saw him, the bodyguards immediately stepped aside.

"Mr. Crawford! Mr. Crawford!"

On the other hand, several of the wealthy businessmen there were already shouting his name.

Giya herself called out his name in a gentle tone, "Gerald!"

Gerald was quite surprised when he saw her. Since he was only there to create trouble for Yunus, he wasn't really expecting to see Giya there.

"Mm!" said Gerald as he nodded his head slightly before walking toward her.

The entire hall went silent.

Today was the day the Crawfords showed their true power, and they were indeed, very powerful.

"Allow me to say a few words, Yunus!" said Gerald.

While Yunus was supposed to be the spotlight of the day, Gerald simply patted him on the shoulder before signaling for him to move aside.

Yunus could only glare angrily at him. He had never been treated like this before. The nerve Gerald had to tell him to stand aside! It was extremely clear that Gerald was humiliating him.

However, Jerry simply grabbed Yunus by the arm and pulled him aside.

It was evident, at least for now, that the Longs weren't going to be able to win a fight against Gerald and his people.

Gerald then turned to look at Melissa whose face was drained of all color.

He smiled at her before saying, "Everyone! It's Yunus's birthday today and I mean no harm! I've only come to give him a few presents! Naturally, the presents are also for the Owens family who has had a major misunderstanding with me!"

"...Huh? Present?"

Everyone was extremely curious.

The Owens themselves—Rosalie included—were seated right beside him.

Chapter 636

While the Owens hadn't said a thing from the very beginning, Rosalie had been glaring at Gerald with eyes filled with hostility from the moment he appeared.

If the Crawfords wanted to cause trouble now, the Owens couldn't really do much about it.

"I believe that some of you may have already heard about the misunderstanding between me and the Owens, and I'm sure that everyone wants to know what exactly happened. Ladies and gentlemen, I present to you, the truth!" said Gerald with a laugh.

The moment he said that, Gerald's men took that as their cue to start playing a video. It was projected on the big screen located in front of the venue.

In the video, a car could be seen parked on a bridge. It was night time and both Yunus Long and Melissa Wayham were present. Moments later, a car drove toward them and out stepped the director of Mayberry News.

"Lissa, I'll leave the matter regarding Rosalie to you. Your job is just to get her and Gerald together in a room. As for you, Mr. Leach, your job is to expose them when they're together! You don't need to worry about the rest, I'll take care of that. I guarantee that there's no way that Gerald will be able to clear his name off this!"

"No problem, Mr. Long!"

As they started talking about other things in the video, Rosalie and the other Owens had already stood up in anger.

Rosalie even glared daggers at Lissa, her eyes burning with hatred.

While Lissa's face was red as a tomato, Yunus's was deathly pale.

That rendezvous was supposed to be a secret. How on earth was Gerald able to capture footage of that scene in advance? It was impossible!

Yunus then scanned the crowd before eventually resting his gaze on Mr. Leach. He was standing among the group of people who had arrived with Gerald.

"How could you, Mr. Leach?!"

"How could I what? You animal! No, you're worse than an animal! You know, from the very moment I met you, I knew that you weren't a good person!" sneered Mr. Leach in response.

Mr. Leach was a cunning person who often worked with two strings to his bow. This was the only reason why he had managed to work with someone like Yunus Long.

“Jerry Len, Yunus Long, and Melissa Weyham! All three of you have almost tarnished the Owens family’s name with this humiliating act! Our family will never allow you to get away with this! We apologize sincerely for our misunderstanding with you, Mr. Crawford! Now, if you’ll excuse us, we’ll be leaving immediately!”

One by one, the members of the Owens family—including Rosalie—stood up and left in a rage.

“By god! Yunus Long is such a sc*mbag!”

Several celebrities and businessmen were also already gossiping about him.

“You... You son of a b*tch! How dare you!” roared Yunus as he dashed toward Gerald, furious.

However, before he could even touch Gerald, he was greeted by a mighty kick. It was so powerful that Yunus could feel blood in his mouth.

Looking up, Yunus realized that the silhouette he saw before being kicked turned out to be Drake.

“Speaking of which, I have another gift for the rest of you businesspeople as well!” said Gerald with a smile.

As soon as they heard him say that, everyone’s eyes became glued to the screen, all of them filled with anticipation.

The next segment seemed to have been secretly filmed through a window at night. The contents of the video were extremely inappropriate, to say the least.

One of the wealthier attendees was particularly infuriated as the video played on. He turned to look at the beautiful young mistress who had been standing next to him before slapping her on the cheek.

“Shame on you!” roared the same man.

The contents of the video didn’t really need much further explanation.

Essentially, today, all the attendees were being shown every single dirty little thing that Yunus had done before.

Even Jerry and the other heads of the Long family were disgusted by what they had seen. Their faces were boiling red. Today, their family’s name had been completely tarnished.

Many people had already lost their respect for the Long family, and it was all because of Yunus Long.

“Even if I die today, I demand a thorough explanation from the Long family!” yelled one of the businessmen furiously.

Disgust and hatred could be seen in the eyes of all the other wealthy attendees.

“U-uncle Len! You have to help me! I’m being set up here! It’s all an elaborate setup!” shouted Yunus in fear.

“And here I thought you were the smartest among the three siblings. Never would I have imagined that you’d be the ultimate let-down! I’m reporting this matter to grandpa immediately, Yunus!” said Jerry as the corner of his lips twitched.

“Alright, alright, settle down people. By the way, there’s another video that I wish to show specifically to the Long family! The video’s quite recent so I’m sure your grandpa will be even happier when he sees this!” said Harry.

The moment his sentence ended, the next video began playing.

“...Grandpa, I’m a brute! Grandpa, I’m a brute!”

In the video, Yunus could be seen seemingly shouting for his grandfather three times in a row as he knelt.

Jerry looked like he was ready to explode in anger. He then pointed toward Yunus, his finger trembling in rage.

“You... You...!”

Chapter 637

Xavia hadn't expected things to go this way.

She had only wanted to use this opportunity to widen her social circle with the attendees.

If Gerald hadn't attended the event, her plan would've gone smoothly.

Nobody could have ever anticipated that the event would end up in such a tense situation.

“Humph! You're such a disgrace to the Long Family, Yunus Long! I can't believe you would do such a thing!” said Xavia in disgust as she spat at him.

Her response was an immediate slap to the face from Yunus.

Yunus's eyes were bloodshot as Xavia, overwhelmed by the force of his slap, fell atop one of the tables.

“You f*cking b*tch! Keep your mouth shut! All you do is ramble on and on! I'm sick of all that! Who do you even think you are to lecture me like that? I'm only saying this once. You're my sister-in-law merely because I acknowledged you as part of our family! If I hadn't brought you in, you'd just be another stray b*tch trying to claw your way in!”

“You... You dare hit me?” said Xavia as she held onto her bruised cheek in disbelief. The corner of Xavia's lips had already begun bleeding as well.

Jerry didn't even bother saying anything after witnessing this.

The Long family was very big. Being a family with three grandsons to be future heirs, the distribution of wealth and power was rather complicated.

While Jerry himself wasn't one of the three young heirs of the Long family, they had sent him over this time to oversee things.

After seeing how Yunus was behaving, Jerry was boiling mad at him for tarnishing the Long family's name.

Then again, if Yunus was to lose favor among the other family members, there could still be hope for Jerry.

Since Jerry didn't have any relation with Xavia, he didn't really care about her.

At the time, the video from before was still playing on screen.

Gerald himself was watching the situation unfold before his very eyes in an indifferent manner.

He and Xavia were no longer in a relationship. He had also stopped blaming himself for being the cause of their breakup. There was really no need for him to feel guilty for a woman like her anymore.

Gerald could only hope that she wouldn't step foot into his world again. It would be much better for them to go their separate ways.

What a complicated situation.

"F*ck you! The Long family fed and clothed you! Things wouldn't have gone this way if you had only listened to me! This is entirely your fault, you b*tch!" yelled Yunus as he slapped her again.

Nobody stepped in to help her, not even her younger sister who was standing right beside her. She was paralyzed in fear.

As Xavia continued cupping her cheeks, she looked toward Gerald.

Gerald simply avoided making eye contact with her.

It was at that moment when she understood that nobody was coming to help her. She simply nodded before running out of the hall while bawling her eyes out.

As soon as she left, a wine bottle came smashing down against Yunus's head.

One of the businessmen had stepped in to fight Yunus.

Seeing this, Zack and Gerald simply looked at each other with a smile. Both of them then shook their heads before moving to the side to watch the fight further unfold.

"Thank you for what happened today!" said Giya as she approached Gerald.

"What are you thanking me for?" asked Gerald as he smiled subtly.

"For helping me out!"

"I think you've misunderstood something, Giya. I wasn't particularly aiming to help you. I just came here to clear my name!" replied Gerald with a smile.

He then began leading his men away from the scene.

Gerald was fully aware that this was only the beginning of his feud with the Long family. Zack had already told him about the previous disputes the Crawfords had with them.

Now that his sister wasn't around, the Long family was definitely going to continue trying to get their revenge for what had happened in the past.

From buying Wayfair Mountain Entertainment to Yunus trying to frame him. All of these were just signs of the many things to come.

Chapter 638

Gerald's main purpose of attending the event was just to intimidate them.

He wanted the Longs to know that they were messing with the wrong person, and that they should re-evaluate their decision of pursuing their revenge against him.

Now that he had completed what he had set out to do, Gerald was ready to leave.

Sometime after getting into his car, he noticed that someone was tailing him.

Looking into his rear-view mirror, he realized who was in the car, so he simply paid the vehicle no further attention.

Once he arrived at the hotel's entrance, Gerald was just about to enter when a girl's voice called out to him.

"Are you planning to just ignore me forever, Gerald?!"

Of course, the person in the car earlier was Giya.

"There's no reason for us to maintain our relationship anymore. Yunus should no longer pester you either, so isn't that good enough?" replied Gerald.

“Can’t we even just be friends anymore?” replied Giya.

She was discontent with the way Gerald was currently treating her.

Pausing for a moment, Gerald eventually turned around and simply walked away from her without saying another word.

The truth was, Gerald was feeling quite upset about the entire thing. After all, Giya was a nice person and she even treated him well.

This was the exact reason why he had to be firm with his decision. He could no longer afford to be the obsequious person he had been before.

“S-stop right there you son of a b*tch!” shouted Tammy as she huffed and puffed while running toward Gerald.

“You’re such a bad person, Gerald! How could you do this to Giya? Do you know how much she always mentions your name in front of us? While it’s true that you’ve had some trouble with Giya misunderstanding you, you should also know how terribly sad Giya was! She had even gone to find Rosalie in hopes that she would forgive you and not pursue the matter any further! Though the Owens hadn’t promised her that they would forgive you, that still doesn’t mean you can treat her like this!” shouted Tammy.

This was true as the day that incident happened, Giya had personally met up with Rosalie. Despite her efforts, the Owens had been reluctant to let go of the matter that easily.

“Aside from that, there’ve been rumors in Mayberry that Giya is your girlfriend! They all thought that the reason you attended Yunus’s birthday ceremony was to make a scene for Giya’s sake! While I know that the rumors don’t affect you, have you actually thought about what Giya will be going through now? How the Long family now thinks of her? What do you even suppose Giya should do now?”

“That’s quite enough, Tammy! I already know why Gerald is ignoring me!” said Giya as she wiped her tears.

Staring straight at him, Giya then added, "I... I know I was being selfish. However, I have one final request from you, Gerald. Remember that time I was hospitalized after being kidnapped? You told me that you would do one thing for me as long as you could manage it. Tell me Gerald, does that statement still stand?"

"It does," replied Gerald with a nod.

Gerald also remembered that Giya had gone over to look for him back then to escape her marriage. Once she arrived in Mayberry, she had been kidnapped because he hadn't paid any attention to her.

He had blamed himself for the entire situation back then, which was why he had told her that she could make a single request which he would then try to fulfill.

At the time, Giya had playfully said that since Gerald had been the one who suggested it, he wasn't allowed to take back what he had said.

Gerald however, knew that he had meant every word that he said.

While that promise had laid dormant all this time, it had finally resurfaced again.

"Tell me what you want. As long as I can do it, I'll help you with it!" said Gerald.

After all, a promise was a promise. In addition, Gerald just couldn't bear breaking her heart any further. He didn't even know how to refuse her anymore.

"That's good to know... Rest assured, once you fulfill that favor, I'll never pester you again. I'll disappear from your life for good!"

"So... What exactly is the favor?"

"I want you to marry me!"

“...Come again? Marry?”

Despite having mentally prepared himself for whatever she was going to throw at him, Gerald still ended up being shocked when he heard those words.

“Ah, there’s no need to be afraid. I don’t mean an actual marriage. I just need you to fake a marriage with me in front of the Owens and Long family. Will you be able to do that for me?” asked Giya.

Chapter 639

To Giya, her request was fairly simple.

She understood that she wasn’t perfect, but was she so bad that Gerald didn’t even want to look at her for one final time?

Still, it made her feel a little better since he was still willing to consider her favor.

From her point of view as a girl, though fulfilling the request wouldn’t entirely grant her contentment, it was the only way for her to completely end her relationship with Gerald.

She wasn’t really trying to conspire anything bad at all.

Giya simply wanted Gerald to do something for her. To prove that he still cared for her. With any luck, she hoped that that would finally be able to satisfy her.

That was the gist of why she had made that request.

However, Gerald was visibly hesitant about agreeing to it.

While he had pretended to be other peoples’ boyfriends before in the past, those favors weren’t too hard for him to handle. It was the least he could do to help out his friends.

However, faking a marriage was a completely different thing. It would be something actually difficult for Gerald to pull off.

While he could choose to refuse her request, he acknowledged that he had indeed promised to fulfill a single request from her before this.

What more, he held no grudges against Giya. Gerald himself was honestly still holding on to both his feelings of gratitude and regret toward her.

“Really though, it’s just a fake marriage! I won’t ask for anything more after that. I’ll need about a day to get ready for it, but before that, tell me. Are you willing to fulfill my request? Again, I repeat my promise that as long as you do this for me this time, I won’t bother you ever again in the future!” said Giya as her eyes began to water.

“..Mmm... Um...”

After a long, agonizing pause, Gerald finally nodded in agreement.

“...However, I have one condition!” Added Gerald.

“Go on!” replied Giya as she bit her lower lip.

After considering his words for a while, Gerald finally said, “Apart from the Long and Owens family, nobody else should know about the fake marriage!”

“I agree with your term!”

After saying that, she took in a deep breath before putting on a somber expression on her face.

“...Alright then, Mr. Crawford. I won’t take any more of your time today. It will be held tomorrow and don’t worry about the arrangements. I’ll handle the rest myself!”

Upon ending her sentence, Giya and Tammy then left.

Gerald on the other hand, laid down on his bed as soon as he got back to his hotel room. He was dead tired and wanted to at least get a short rest.

Sometime while he was resting, he heard a knock on the door. When he opened it, he was greeted by the old man.

“Grandson!”

“Mr. Quick! Why are you here?” asked Gerald as he subtly smiled.

The old man standing before him was no ordinary person. In fact, he was no longer a beggar either.

Since Mr. Quick had helped him back then, in return, Gerald had treated him extremely well.

Not only did Gerald promise to take him back to his hometown in Salford, he even gave him money and ordered his men to take good care of him.

After getting to know him a little better, he also received the old man’s name. His full name was Finnley Quick, a name that sounded quite imposing.

Perhaps it was Mr. Quick’s old age that made Gerald feel like he was quite muddle-headed. Gerald found it hard at times to distinguish which of what Mr. Quick said was true or false.

Gerald pitied him very much.

Regardless, he was surprised that Mr. Quick hadn’t gone back yet. The old man was quite mysterious. He could precisely locate Gerald wherever he was every time!

“You said we were going back together!” replied Mr. Quick with a smile.

"I... Well yes, I'll be going to Salford, but only tomorrow or the day after!"

"That's quite fine by me. I'll wait for you! Also, if you don't mind me being a burden, I could even help you!" The smile on Mr. Quick's face remained as he said that.

"Alright, alright, I understand, Mr. Quick... For now, you should probably get some rest first. I'll pay for your meals from the past few days soon!" said Gerald as he shook his head with a slightly bitter smile.

"I'll be waiting for you then! Remember, either tomorrow or the day after!" replied Mr. Quick as he left the room enthusiastically.

Naturally, Gerald wasn't going to allow the old man to go searching by himself.

After all, Mr. Quick had already helped him a few times, and Gerald was truly grateful for his help.

He remembered the time when he was surrounded in the hotel. Had Mr. Quick not rushed over to save him, who knows what would have become of him?

Chapter 640

However, due to his old age and muddle-headedness, it would be quite a bit of trouble if Gerald was to follow him around. Gerald wasn't trying to be rude, but he just couldn't bear the thought of letting him suffer!

Early the next morning, Gerald received a call from Tammy. She had of course, called to discuss the fake marriage.

To keep the marriage a secret from the public, Gerald had told neither Zack nor Michael about it.

Gerald understood the reasoning behind Giya's request. The main purpose of the fake marriage was to let the Longs and Owens know that they were engaged.

“I’ll be picking you up, Gerald! Wait downstairs!” said Tammy.

“Alright, alright, I’ll be down in a minute!” replied Gerald as he smiled bitterly.

The entire plan was quite simple. They were just going to have a banquet in a hotel so that Giya’s family could finally settle down.

By the time he got downstairs, Tammy was already there waiting for him. They were ready to depart.

As they were about to leave, Gerald noticed someone standing in front of a car that had been parked at the hotel’s entrance.

It was Natasha Yorke.

As soon as she saw him, Natasha jogged over to Gerald.

“Gerald! I came over to look for you but your bodyguards wouldn’t allow me to enter! Humph!” said Natasha.

Gerald’s bodyguards were well aware that Natasha was Xavia’s sister. Regardless of whatever reason she gave them, they persistently denied her from entering.

They didn’t even bother informing Gerald about her arrival.

“What is it?”

“Quick! You have to save my sister! She’s going to take some cyanide in an attempt to commit suicide! We fought last night yet I still failed to persuade her! You’re the only person who can stop her!” said Natasha, her voice anxious.

“Then let her do it. Do you really think I can stop her?” replied Gerald as he smiled bitterly.

“How could you be so heartless...? Do you have any idea why my sister’s taking things this far? She wants you to take her seriously! What more, didn’t you see how Yunus beat her up at the banquet yesterday?”

“Yunus wanted my sister to lure you out so that he could do bad things to you! But my sister refused to do it! Look at you now! You’re all fine and dandy while my sister’s in deep trouble! Are you still going to turn your back against her now?”

“As I said, she has nothing to do with me. If you’re willing, pass this message from me to her. If she wants trouble, that’s fine by me. However, never stir up trouble in my villa ever again!” sneered Gerald as he walked away.

“You... You b*tard! You’re a monster, Gerald! You’re on your way to marry someone when my sister’s about to commit suicide!” screamed Natasha at him.

“Huh? Who told you that I’m getting betrothed?”

“Stop pretending! The Long family already knows all about it! I can’t believe that you’re lying straight to my face!” bellowed Natasha.

“I don’t care if you know, honestly, now stop wasting my time!”

Xavia had indeed been humiliated yesterday after being beaten up by Yunus in front of the crowd. In the past, Gerald might still have felt pitiful and sorry for her.

But not anymore.

He then left the hotel with Tammy as Natasha stomped her foot in anger before finally leaving.

A little while later at Mountain Top Villa, a housemaid informed “Madam, your sister has arrived!”

“Huh? Did Gerald come with her?” asked Xavia.

“Only your sister, madam! Gerald isn’t present.”

“Im... Impossible!” screamed Xavia angrily as she pushed the maid aside and walked to the door to see for herself. True to the maid’s word, only Natasha could be seen ascending the stairs. There was no sign of Gerald at all!

“That... That son of a b*tch! When did he become this heartless...?” said Xavia, her face filled with dismay.

Chapter 641

Xavia had already planned everything out.

She knew that the moment Gerald found out that she was in danger, he would definitely come running over to save her. Xavia had no doubts about it given how well she knew his personality in the past.

Once he arrived, she would begin crying and throwing tantrums before threatening to commit suicide. After seeing that, he would definitely be saddened and try to console her!

After that, she would finally have her chance to be together with Gerald again.

While Xavia seemed like she utterly hated Gerald at first glance, her main and only aim was to make Gerald regret leaving her.

Though she had managed to corner Gerald up in the bar that day, she had never planned to order her subordinates to beat him up. The most she had wanted to do back then was to mock him slightly before asking him how it felt to have fallen right into her hands.

She wanted Gerald to be filled with grief.

To her surprise, Gerald hadn’t even bothered checking in on her today! Not even after hearing about her suicide attempt!

“Ahh! I’m so god d*mn angry!”

Though the Longs were powerful, Xavia knew in her heart that the Longs were no match against Gerald.

“Sister, I said everything you told me to, to a T! However, it really seemed like he was getting ready to be engaged!” said Natasha.

“Humph! I’m not buying it! As if he would ever get engaged to Giya! It doesn’t make any sense!”

Though she said that, Xavia was quite anxious as well. In fact, she had been nervous from the moment she learned of the news last night.

After all, the news had been specifically spread around to the Quarringtons and the Longs. Since the Long family knew about it, it didn’t take long for the information to reach Xavia.

Without warning, Xavia suddenly picked up a vase before smashing it on the floor!

She then sat on a sofa, speechless in her despair.

While this was happening, a roar of laughter could be heard at Mayberry Airport.

“Wow! Mayberry is so beautiful! Much more beautiful than Hong Kong!”

“Indeed. We chose to come here for a reason you know? By the way, Mila, you and your husband had better take us around to maximize our enjoyment here! Remember, we only managed to get a few days off! However, we really wanted to go to Mayberry with you to have a look around! We haven’t even returned home yet, so you better not disappoint us!”

The conversation had come from a few girls who were currently dragging their luggage bags out of the airport as they continued chatting excitedly among themselves.

“Speaking of which, Mila, you’ve told us before that your boyfriend is a rather exceptional person. Why didn’t you tell him to pick us up?”

The one who had asked was a cute girl who seemed to talk excitedly regardless of the situation. She had a bowl cut and her face was slightly chubby, easily making her the cutest among the six girls in the group. From the tone of her voice, she also sounded slightly naïve.

“Don’t you remember what Mila said before? Her boyfriend doesn’t really get women so he’s rather insensitive! He’s so straightforward that he doesn’t even know how to surprise her romantically! Well, it’s not a sin to be an insensitive man, but at least one of the partners in a relationship should know how to give pleasant and romantic surprises to the other! If both partners don’t know how to do that, how would the relationship even be sustained? That’s why we have our Mila here to focus on giving her Gerald surprises!” said another girl whose hair hung to around her waist. She was smiling the entire time she said that.

“Oh! I get it now! It’s like what happened a few days ago right? When Mila gave Gerald a special call on his birthday? She had told him that she would be having a short holiday in a few days, but Gerald had only said that he would meet Mila after that! I felt like smacking my forehead after hearing that! He hadn’t even taken the initiative to make any requests even though Mila had purposefully mentioned the short holiday!” said the bowl cut girl from earlier as she laughed out loud.

“That’s right! At the time, Mila hadn’t managed to hold herself back so she ended up telling Gerald about it! Personally, I think that it would’ve been better if you hadn’t told him about the holiday. You could’ve just given him a surprise from your sudden return trip! Those are the best! Then again, now that I think about it, it would be better if you guided him more since he’s already so insensitive. If you don’t, I fear that his straightforwardness will only get worse!” added yet another of the six girls.

Hearing what the other girls had to say, Mila felt like their logic was sound. Still, she hadn’t really thought about it back then.

When she had called that day, she had only mentioned the holiday because she wanted to see how Gerald would react after hearing about it.

‘Well, it’s fine. He’s just as straightforward as ever.’

Regardless, Mila had indeed wanted to return for quite a while now to give Gerald a surprise. After all, the present Gerald had changed quite a bit compared to his past self.

Mila herself wanted to be a more supportive girlfriend, so she felt like she should put in more effort in hopes that he would also learn to do the same. Once that was achieved, they would then be able to manage their relationship even better.

“Humph! Well, in my opinion, Mila’s just bragging. She may have claimed that her husband is quite powerful in Mayberry, but I couldn’t find any information about Gerald online at all!”

Chapter 642

Another girl from the group had said that, her arms crossed.

All six of them were housemates who were both learning new skills and doing their internships at Hong Kong Television Station.

However, they were now on holiday to enjoy themselves as a group.

The girl who had claimed that Mila was simply bragging was named Wanda Wabsor. Though her figure was similar to Mila’s, the same couldn’t be said about her appearance.

If they needed to select the station beauty in Hong Kong Television Station, Mila would undeniably get chosen since she was the most beautiful woman there. Wanda herself could barely hold second place in the beauty department.

Since all of them were housemates, not only did they live together, but they also had to learn and work in the same space most of the time. In short, they had to see and talk with each other a lot.

Being girls, it was quite hard for them to avoid feeling jealous among themselves.

However, it would be far-fetched to say that they resented each other. The most they did was mock each other playfully. Regardless, they were still happy being together.

“Oh, Wanda! Don’t say things like that! Mila would never brag! You can tell just by how loyal Mila is toward Gerald!”

“That’s right! Just look at the television station we work for. So many people have tried to gain Mila’s affection, but what does she do every time? She rejects them all! She only ever thinks about that insensitive man! When you look at it that way, Mila’s such a good girlfriend!”

The responses had come from two other girls from the group.

“Humph!” After hearing that, Wanda simply kept her mouth shut. This was honestly another reason why Wanda was jealous.

For girls living outside, it was quite normal for them to have at least some sort of ambiguous relationship with other guys, even if they already had a boyfriend.

Wanda herself had a long-distance relationship with her own boyfriend.

However, even she had some ambiguous relationships with a few guys. By that, it meant that she would neither reject nor accept the actions of some of her admirers who tried to gain her favor.

Mila on the other hand, was different. Regardless of how earnest and sincere her admirers were, Mila was always resolute with her response.

‘Sorry, but I already have a boyfriend!’

In a way, it made Wanda feel like Mila was simply too perfect.

“Humph! Well, it’s fine if you don’t want to continue talking about it. Anyway, how are our living arrangements?” asked Wanda.

“Well, I don’t have many bedrooms in my house... Actually, I have another place in mind. Let’s go to Gerald’s house! His house is quite spacious and he has a lot of bedrooms too!” said Mila.

A roar of laughter ensued.

“Mila, we all know you just want to meet Gerald sooner. You don’t even want to return home yet! That’s fine though, since it definitely beats just staying in the hotel with nothing to do. Let’s accompany Mila to visit Gerald!”

After that, they hailed a taxi before excitedly heading to Mountain Top Villa.

“Holy! Would you look at that! This... How could such a luxurious villa be built on top of a mountain? It almost seems like its peak is amidst the clouds! Mila, is this really Gerald’s house? Are we going to be staying here?” asked the girl with the cute face from before whose name was Molly Sabell.

Earlier while they were in the taxi, the taxi driver had mentioned that Mountain Top Villa cost around a hundred and twenty million dollars. Hearing that, they had been excited to see the villa for themselves.

They honestly hadn’t expected to be even more surprised now that they were standing in front of the real deal.

Wanda was filled with jealousy. So it turned out that Mila’s husband truly was a powerful and rich heir, just like she had claimed!

‘Why is she so lucky?’ Wanda thought to herself.

“Come on, let’s go in already!” said Mila as she held her besties’ hands before walking toward the villa’s door together.

Once they arrived at the door, Mila was giddy with excitement. After all, she hadn’t met Gerald in three months now. What if he wasn’t home?

Even though Mila had her own key, she still opted to ring the doorbell first.

When they heard footsteps from the inside rushing over to open the door, Mila's excitement grew with every passing step.

Chapter 643

"Who is it?" asked a maid just as she opened the door.

When she saw Mila, she was visibly stunned.

'What was such a beautiful girl doing here?'

"Um... Who are you looking for?" asked the maid.

"Is Gerald home? I'm looking for him!" replied Mila with a slight smile.

"Who's there, Hope?" said an impatient sounding voice from inside the villa.

"They're here to look for Gerald, Miss!" answered the maid.

"Huh?"

Hearing that, Xavia walked over to the door...

When she saw Mila, she was momentarily shocked speechless! Naturally, the same could be said for Mila when she saw Xavia.

"Mila!"

"Xavia!"

Both of them shouted each other's name in unison.

Mila for one, definitely knew who Xavia was. After all, Xavia was Gerald's ex-girlfriend. It was impossible for Xavia not to know who Mila was as well.

In fact, her knowing about Mila was exactly why she was sure that Gerald marrying Giya was nothing but a rumor. After all, Gerald already had Mila as his girlfriend.

'D*mn it all!'

What more, Xavia was aware of how much Gerald loved Mila! At least that was what she still assumed to be the case up till this point...

While finding out about the engagement had initially surprised her, if Gerald really was going through it, that would only mean that he must have broken up with Mila. After all, she knew that Gerald wasn't the kind of person to have an affair with another girl.

Far from it, in fact. Gerald was extremely serious when it came to dealing with his relationships. Otherwise, he would've never even considered the thought of getting engaged with Giya.

'But since he's broken up with Mila, why did Mila come over to look for him?'

'F*ck! Could Mila's end goal be the same as mine? Does she want to get back together with Gerald too? Doesn't that mean that I'll have another enemy to deal with who's even more powerful than Giya?'

'After all, Mila is very beautiful... While it's true that I can use my past with Gerald to my advantage, what other tactics do I even have? I'm definitely no match against the two of them!'

'This just won't do! I must make her leave at once!'

Xavia then began plotting against Mila right there and then!

“Why are you here?” asked Mila, a frown on her face.

“Why wouldn’t I be? I’ve gotten back together with Gerald! I’m pregnant too, so I’m staying here now to take care of both me and my baby!” sneered Xavia.

“Quit spouting nonsense!” yelled Mila who had gone pale from fright.

But then again, if she was just spouting nonsense, what was she doing in Gerald’s house?

“I don’t care about whatever you have to say! Oh, and I’m marrying him soon. How about you? Why did you come back to look for him? Whatever your intentions are, you’d better give up!” replied Xavia as she rolled her eyes.

“What happened Mila? Who is she?” asked Molly angrily.

“She’s Gerald’s ex-girlfriend!” wailed Mila as she burst into tears.

“F*ck! What a sc*mbag!”

At that point, the others could already piece together the situation.

“Let’s go, Mila! You shouldn’t show your tears in front of such people!” said Molly as she glared at Xavia.

“So it turns out that Gerald had been lying to you this entire time! To think that he was getting married soon to someone else while he was still constantly contacting you! It’s true that there really are no nice men in the world!” said Molly.

Chapter 644

Mila simply took in a deep breath before saying, “I’m going to call Gerald now! I want him to tell me in person what exactly happened!”

After saying that, she took out the key to Mountain Top Villa before throwing it directly at Xavia. Xavia was obviously stupefied by this.

'F*ck! Why does it now seem like Gerald hasn't broken up with her yet? In fact, they still seem to be deeply in love with each other!'

'What exactly is happening? Did Gerald really become a sc*mbag?'

As Xavia thought about that, Mila had already tried giving Gerald a few calls. However, he answered none of them.

"Why isn't he answering any of my calls? He used to always answer my calls immediately!" said Mila anxiously.

So it was as Xavia said. Gerald really was having an affair with her all this time!

Mila could only laugh bitterly in her mind.

All of a sudden, Xavia came up with a nasty plot. Just as Mila was about to leave, she shouted out, "Mila, wait!"

"What more do you want?" yelled Molly coldly in response.

Hearing that, Xavia bit her lower lip slightly before shedding some tears.

"Mila, though we've never contacted each other before, I do feel that you truly are a really nice girl. I said all that to you earlier because I couldn't bear to tell you the truth! You'd be too greatly disappointed!"

"Humph! She's just being a hypocrite while shedding crocodile tears! Pay her no attention!" replied Molly.

“Mila, while it’s true that I live in Mountain Top Villa and Gerald has given me a luxurious life, do you know how much of a sc*mbag he actually is? He refuses to get back together with me, simply because he’s already moved on! Even though I now bear his child, he won’t let me return just because I’m his ex-girlfriend!”

“Also, I have a great secret to share with you, Mila!” added Xavia.

“What is it?” asked Mila.

Mila then lowered her voice before saying, “It turns out that Gerald is actually Mr. Crawford of Mayberry! He’s filthy rich! However, he only told me about this after I got pregnant with his child, which is why I’m not sure whether you know about this yet.”

Mila then looked at Xavia for a brief moment before nodding. She was starting to slightly believe her.

After all, Gerald had initially told her that his identity should never be exposed.

However, even Xavia knew about it now. What more, she was also living in Mountain Top Villa! That fact alone clearly pointed out the issue.

“Then again, since you managed to come here, it must mean that you already know about Gerald’s true identity as well! If that’s the case, I’ll just cut to the chase. Men usually turn wild and bad once they become rich! Once I got pregnant, I thought that I could finally fulfill my wish of getting back together with him! Alas, it just isn’t possible. That’s because he’s now together with yet another girl!” said Xavia as she wailed even louder.

“Another girl...?” replied Mila, her voice now weak.

“That’s right. Now, if Gerald had truly wanted to be with another girl, I’d gladly have given up. However, he told me that he wanted me to continue being with him. He lied straight to my face while he was still together with that other girl! What more, he’s getting engaged to her today! I didn’t dare stop him in fear that he would beat me up!” said Xavia in between sobs.

Mila felt like she had just received a great blow.

“Where is the engagement being held? I’m meeting him immediately!” said Mila coldly.

“He’s at...”

Xavia then told Mila the venue where Gerald’s engagement would be held.

She had initially planned to go there to create a mess. However, after thinking about it for a while, she realized that she would only achieve the exact opposite of her desired results if she went there looking for trouble.

That was the reason why she had given up on the idea and simply went to bed.

Unexpectedly, Mila had turned up at the villa out of the blue. What great timing!

“However, you must promise me that you’ll never let him know that I told you any of this. If he ever finds out about it, I’ll be beaten to death!”

“Got it!”

After she said that, Mila and her friends immediately left for the venue.

On their way there, Mila was still filled with disbelief. She had always given her full trust to Gerald. She simply felt that she wouldn’t have had the wrong impression of him for so long.

She was definitely not going to misunderstand Gerald simply because of what Xavia said.

This was why she wanted to go there to see for herself first. She needed to know if Xavia was really telling the truth.

“Humph! How ridiculous! You cherish him so much to the point where you talk about him at least eight times a day! In the end, he doesn’t even care about you!” sneered Wanda.

“Could you please stop talking for a moment, Wanda? Mila’s already having a hard time,” replied Molly.

After a short drive, the car finally stopped in front of the hotel’s entrance.

“Mila, this should be the place!”

Chapter 645

Meanwhile, Gerald had been putting up quite a show together with Giya.

Giya herself seemed to have lied to her parents.

Knowing this, Gerald found it increasingly awkward to keep up the façade. Hence, he was now trying to find an excuse to leave already.

When she saw this, Giya held on to Gerald’s arm intimately before saying, “Mom, Dad, I’ll be seeing him off first. I can handle it so both of you can just stay here!”

After saying that, both of them then walked out of the hall together.

Once the hotel’s entrance was within sight, Gerald immediately said, “It’s high time you returned my cell phone to me!”

Earlier, Gerald had constantly looked at his phone while he was chatting with the others. To preserve the image of intimacy between him and Giya, the other Quarringtons had temporarily confiscated his phone.

They added that he shouldn’t be playing with his phone so that he could focus more on chatting properly with them.

Gerald hadn't said anything about it at the time.

After that, they continued chatting for a little while longer and having their meal, it soon led to the current situation.

"Now what kind of tone is that?" replied Giya as she placed the phone in Gerald's hand, her other arm still locked together with his.

"Why did you switch my phone off...?" said Gerald helplessly as he tried to retract his arm.

However, she refused to let him go. Her charming face clearly reflected her stubbornness and reluctance to part with him.

After all, Giya had agreed that after today, both of them would cease to have any form of relationship with each other. At best, they could only remain as friends.

How could Giya be willing to simply accept that?

Despite knowing why she wasn't letting go, Gerald didn't want to continue retaining such an ambiguous relationship with her. This was why he was being so firm and resolute with the matter.

"I don't want to let go!" said Giya.

"Gerald!"

When Gerald looked up to see who had shouted his name, he was stupefied.

"...Mila? You... When did you return?"

Gerald's heart plunged into despair at that very moment.

While he was both surprised and pleased to see Mila, the situation he was currently in made their reunion incredibly awkward.

"What... What are you doing?" said Mila as she pinched her palm hard. She was hoping that the pain would allow her to control her tears from bursting out at any moment.

Molly and her other friends on the other hand, were glaring at Gerald fiercely.

On their way there, they had persistently consoled Mila that Gerald wasn't such a person. They had even told her to have confidence in him.

After all, they had eavesdropped on Gerald and Mila's conversations before. Just from listening to the way Gerald talked back then, they could tell that he was an honest and naïve man.

They were at least certain that he wasn't the flirtatious kind of rich heir.

However, now that they had witnessed this scene, Molly and the others were simply astonished beyond words. What a sc*mbag!

"Mila! It's all just a misunderstanding!" said Gerald as he finally yanked his arm free from Giya's grasp.

"I heard that you're getting engaged with someone today... Is that true?" asked Mila.

"No! Just please listen to my explanation first!"

Gerald was feeling extremely anxious. After all, if his relationship with Mila was ruined because of such a trivial affair, Gerald knew for a fact that he would end up being filled with remorse.

"Is she Mila?" This was all Giya managed to say. After all, Mila's arrival had been extremely sudden.

Scanning Mila from head to toe, Giya could see that Mila was a natural beauty. Her disposition was very charming as well.

No wonder Gerald loved her so much.

Chapter 646

While Giya was looking at Mila, jealousy reflected in her eyes, very strong emotions were also overflowing in Mila's heart.

"You... You've let me down! You disappoint me greatly Gerald! I don't ever want to see you again!" shouted Mila as she shoved Gerald harshly before turning around.

Mila then ran away while covering her mouth as Wanda scowled, "You disgusting sc*mbag! So what if you're rich?!"

Even she couldn't help but scold Gerald in Mila's place.

After all, they were all girls. They would definitely resent sc*mbags like him!

Gerald himself had gone pale from anxiety. He simply couldn't imagine why Mila had suddenly made her appearance there and then. However, that could wait.

Gerald immediately began chasing after her.

Giya was also facing an onslaught of complicated emotions. Since she couldn't process all of it at once, she simply redirected all her feelings into anger.

With Gerald now gone, she simply turned around and re-entered the hotel.

It was sometime later when Mila and her friends were all huddled together in Mila's bedroom.

Seeing Gerald standing outside, Molly drew the curtains back slightly before saying, "Mila, please don't cry anymore... That man still has some kind of conscience. He rushed all the way here and he's now standing outside your house!"

"Just tell him to leave already! I don't ever want to see his face again!" wailed Mila as she hugged both of her knees while crying in bed.

Her friends could only look at each other. While all of them were angry, they were simultaneously thinking of how pitiful Mila was.

Mila had, after all, been thinking about Gerald this entire time. She had even wanted to meet him first above all else upon returning to Mayberry! In the end, however, she had to witness such a terrible scene with her very own eyes.

"Humph! I'll go downstairs and demand a clear explanation from him!" said Molly, her voice slightly anxious as she descended the stairs.

"Are you that sc*mbag, Gerald?" asked Molly coldly, her hands on her waist.

"I am. Is Mila alright? Everything you saw was just a misunderstanding!" said Gerald, getting straight to the point.

"Misunderstanding? All of us saw it clearly! That woman was intimately locking arms with you in the hotel earlier. How could any of that be a misunderstanding? Are you going to tell me now that your entire engagement with her is a fake?"

"Before that, are you Mila's colleague from Hong Kong? And yes, everything was faked. Could you please tell Mila that?"

"I'm not going to tell her anything. Who knows if you're telling the truth? Don't even try anything funny, I've already seen several tricks used by sc*mbags before! Regardless, you're an extremely greedy person! You already have a girlfriend yet you still yearn for other girls!"

“Quite frankly, I don’t care whether you’re telling the truth or not. I’m not sure if you’re aware of this, but do you know how well Mila treats you Gerald? There are countless people at the television station who have tried to gain her affection, you know?”

“However, she knew that she had you, and she was satisfied and grateful for that. Because of that, she was always extremely careful whenever she dealt with her admirers. Whenever anyone tried to overstep their boundaries, she would immediately reject them mercilessly!”

“I’m sure you’re aware that you’re currently in a long-distance relationship with Mila. If Mila had wanted to have an ambiguous relationship with any of the guys there without your knowledge, it’s not like you’d be able to find out. However, she stood her ground every time, making sure to be both cold and aloof toward every guy who had ever tried to woo her. Now, she doesn’t have a single male friend at our television station! Are you even aware of any of that?” explained Molly angrily.

While it was true that she could have refrained from saying those hurtful words, she found no real reason not to hold back.

She simply felt that the entire situation was unfair for Mila.

“I’m well aware!” replied Gerald as he nodded.

While he definitely already knew how committed Mila was as a girlfriend, hearing the extent of how much she valued him made him touched. Simultaneously, it also made him filled with a deep sense of self-reproach.

What Molly said was right. Mila had always treated him the same way.

Gerald on the other hand, had crossed the line a few times before during incidents that involved him helping his friends. However, when it rained, it poured, and each of those incidents always ended up with him going too far.

However, Mila could refrain from having any male friends at all, just for Gerald’s sake.

'Why can't I make less contact with girls for Mila's sake as well?'

At the end of the day, Gerald just couldn't help but feel guilty. He just hoped that he could explain himself well enough for Mila to potentially forgive him.

"...Either way, that really was a fake engagement... See, that girl from earlier? She's just a friend of mine..."

After that, Gerald then slowly detailed everything that had led to that incident to Molly.

Molly kept her gaze fixed on Gerald's eyes the entire time. By the time he was finally done explaining, she realized that he really wasn't lying.

'Could he really be telling the truth? Then again... There's one more thing that doesn't add up. Let's see how you explain yourself out of that.'

Chapter 647

"What? You're just lending that villa to that girl?" said Molly after hearing Gerald's explanation about Xavia.

Regarding Xavia being pregnant, Gerald wasn't too sure about that. However, it wasn't too hard for him to imagine her plotting up such a lie. He could deal with her later.

For now, Gerald simply wanted Mila not to misunderstand him anymore.

"Alright, I can sense that you're not lying. I'll try to advise Mila on this. You'd better not be feeding us any lies. Do you know how much Mila hates being lied to?"

Despite having only a brief conversation with him, Molly was near certain that Gerald wasn't the kind of reckless or flirtatious rich heir. On the contrary, he seemed to be quite a nice and friendly man.

If he was honestly saying the truth, then Molly was definitely willing to help him out.

Hence, as Molly returned to Mila's bedroom, Gerald remained downstairs.

A short while later however, she came down again before saying with a sigh, "I'm sorry, but I can't help you Gerald. Mila simply refuses to listen to me... She doesn't even want to see you at all. I'm afraid you've hurt her too much this time. You'd better leave for now..."

After saying that, she returned upstairs.

Gerald could only sigh in response. He was filled with grief.

He had always yearned for Mila to return. Now that she was back, they had met during such terrible timing.

At that moment, Gerald's phone began ringing. It was a call from Queta.

"What's wrong, Queta?" asked Gerald as he felt a gentle smile form on his face. After all, he had always treated her just like his younger sister.

"Mr. Crawford, I'm not Queta. I'm Lisa, her colleague. We've met before!" said the girl on the other end of the line.

However, something about her tone hinted that something urgent was up.

"I remember you. What's wrong?" asked Gerald immediately.

"It's Queta. Something's happened to her and she's now in the hospital!" explained Lisa, her voice more anxious than before.

"What?"

Gerald was shocked to hear this.

He then stared at the stairs for a brief moment. At first, he considered shouting so that Mila would know that he was leaving for something important. However, he feared that it would only annoy her more if she heard him shouting.

After all, she was still deeply resenting him now. In the end, he concluded that it would be better to first check in on Queta first

“So what exactly happened? Tell me clearly!” said Gerald as he began leaving Mila’s house.

“Well, she was fine up till noon today. It all started when Queta suddenly said that she was feeling sick while we were having our afternoon classes. I had initially gotten some hot water for her, thinking that she was just having a regular fever. Unexpectedly, she fainted not too long after! I’m now in the hospital with her and she’s already regained consciousness. However, she’s still very weak.”

“Why did the incident happen in the first place?” asked Gerald anxiously as he hailed a taxi. After learning more details, he then rushed to the hospital that Lisa and Queta were in.

“What did that sc*mbag say?” asked the other girls as Molly returned upstairs.

“He didn’t say too much, but it seems like he’ll wait there till Mila’s willing to meet him!”

“I doubt it. Is he really that loyal?” sneered Wanda as she drew the curtains open again to look outside.

The first thing she saw was Gerald getting into a taxi before leaving immediately.

“Humph! I told you! It’s only been a short while yet he’s already hailed a cab and left! Just look at that, Mila!” said Wanda as she pointed at the leaving taxi.

Mila took a peek outside the window and when she realized that what Wanda had said was true, she became so anxious that she began scratching on her bedsheets.

'Yes, I'm furious. And yes, I was the one who said that I didn't want to listen to your explanation... But how could that possibly be true?'

'Even if you hadn't wanted to explain yourself, you could've just waited downstairs for a little longer. That would've proved to me that you still felt the same for me...'

'But now you've left. What now?'

Mila was filled with excruciating pain at that moment.

While this was happening, Gerald arrived at the hospital.

Chapter 648

Queta's face was as white as a sheet when Gerald saw her in the ward. She looked terribly weak. Thankfully, just as Lisa had said, she had already regained consciousness.

"How are you feeling?" asked Gerald as he walked toward her bed.

"I'm not too sure either... At the time, without any warning, it simply felt like all the blood had been drained from my body. My vision went dark and the next thing I knew, I had already fainted," said Queta in a soft voice.

"And what did the doctor say?"

"See, that's why both of us are so anxious. While a few doctors have discussed her condition, they still haven't been able to detect the cause of her illness! At the moment, none of them even dare to continue treating her yet!" said Lisa.

Hearing that, Queta's eyes began watering slightly. After all, even she was slightly terrified.

Regardless of how strong she usually was, facing such a situation was still going to be hard on her.

"I see..." said Gerald as he nodded. He then looked at Queta, feeling sad for her.

After stepping out of the ward, he immediately contacted the Drake & Tyson duo. They were ordered to send in the professional medical team from the base.

The duo wasted no time after receiving their order and not too long after, the professional medical team arrived at the scene.

Since everyone from the team was quite famous, it was certain that the hospital would give their full cooperation with them.

After a two-hour check-up session, the medical team approached Gerald, looking rather glum.

"Mr. Crawford, it saddens us to say that we haven't encountered symptoms like the ones Miss Smith is currently experiencing before this. Even though we've used both Western and Chinese medicinal means to attempt to diagnose Miss Smith's illness, we've still failed to make any progress," said a few members of the medical team as they shook their heads.

"What? Even you've reached a dead end?" replied Gerald, feeling greatly disappointed.

"Apologies, sir. Might I suggest calling the medicinal team from your family instead? They have higher medical skills than we do!" added an experienced and rather old looking Chinese medicine practitioner in a shameful voice. He seemed to be their leader.

"Alright, I got it. You may leave now!" said Gerald as he nodded slightly.

While he hadn't been able to confirm his true relationship with Queta yet, Gerald still treated her like his younger sister. Even if she ended up not being related to him, Gerald would still consider her to be a close friend.

Now that she was in trouble, how could Gerald just sit back and do nothing?

“Please take care of Queta for the moment, Lisa. I’ll try to think of something!” said Gerald.

“I will, Mr. Crawford.”

Gerald then made his way back to his hotel. Once he got there, he started sending out orders and making arrangements for Zack and the others.

Zack was placed in charge of looking up the family’s famous doctor.

He also called his father to notify him about the incident.

However, just as Gerald was about to leave again, he was immediately greeted to the sight of someone squatting right outside his hotel room.

The old person was even holding on to a sack that seemed to contain a blanket and his luggage.

Of course, the person in question was none other than Finnley the old man.

“My grandson, what were you up to today? Didn’t you say that you’d go home today?” said Finnley as he smiled happily when he saw Gerald.

He then stood up while still holding on to his sack.

Scanning Finnley briefly from head to toe, Gerald noticed that the old man had even stolen a blanket belonging to the hotel!

“Finnley, I hate to disappoint, but I really don’t have the time to send you home now. I have too many things on my hand at the moment... How about this? If you really want to go home now, I’ll just order someone to drive you back to the Salford Province first,” said Gerald rather impatiently.

Gerald currently had a lot on his plate, and he was clearly feeling the immense pressure.

He knew that if anything were to happen to Queta, he would feel extremely uneasy when he actually looked for that woman later on.

"I refuse! You told me that you'd send me home in person!" said Finnley as he shook his head.

"Fine, but you'll have to wait for a few more days then. Something's happened to my best friend so I can't afford to go yet!" replied Gerald.

Just as Gerald was about to leave, Finnley firmly grabbed on to Gerald's shoulder out of the blue.

"Hmm? Something's not right... My grandson, who did you meet today?"

Chapter 649

"What's the matter?" asked Gerald who was caught slightly off-guard by the question.

He didn't know what was wrong with the old man. While Finnley looked both elderly and thin, his grip was surprisingly strong. After grabbing on to Gerald's shoulder, Gerald was unable to move even if he wanted to.

'How is he even this strong?'

"Just curious. Again, who did you meet today my grandson? I can smell an unusual scent from your body..." asked Finnley as he chuckled.

"Define, 'unusual scent'," replied Gerald as he looked at Finnley who suddenly appeared a lot more excited and mysterious.

'Maybe his muddle headedness is acting up again!'

"It's the scent of venom-based poison!" said Finnley in a sudden hushed tone.

“The person you met today is suffering from venom-based poison! You probably came into contact with that person which is why you have such a venomous scent on you!” added Finnley.

“D*mn it, have you been watching too many Thai movies?” said Gerald helplessly.

He simply felt like leaving at that moment. However, after giving it some thought, Gerald felt that Finnley’s strange deduction wasn’t completely unwarranted.

While the doctors from before had failed to pinpoint the cause of her illness, Finnley’s theory did in fact match with some of her symptoms.

Gerald knew about this since he had heard about venom-based poisons before sometime in the past. Essentially, it worked similar to some viruses and bacteria, only the poison was instead excreted from a parasite that made its home in the human body.

His options were running low and Finnley sounded quite confident with himself.

‘What if he really has some kind of way to cure her?’

“...Alright, since even the doctors have failed to diagnose her illness, could you please have a look at the patient?”

“Of course! I know about literally everything! As I’ve told you before, I’m not a beggar. I was quite powerful in the past!”

If it wasn’t because Gerald was running out of options, he wouldn’t be wasting his time with Finnley now. Then again, Finnley’s hometown was southwest of the Salford Province. Maybe he really did know something about the illness.

That was the other reason why he was willing to at least give Finnley a try.

When both of them arrived at Queta's ward, Gerald saw that one of the older and more experienced practitioners of Chinese medicine from his medical team had stayed back to take care of Queta.

He seemed to be performing acupuncture for her at that moment.

Several other Chinese medicine practitioners were also standing close by, respectfully observing and learning from him.

Even the Drake & Tyson duo were there.

Peeking into the ward, Finnley immediately sneered before saying, "What's the use of poking her body with those pathetic needles? What you're doing is utterly meaningless!"

After he said that, both Gerald and the old man entered the ward.

"Who are you? How could you spout such nonsense to the exceptionally skillful Dr. Hudson? Somebody, kick him out immediately!" said a person standing at the side. He seemed to be the president of the hospital and he looked quite unhappy after hearing Finnley's remark.

Dr. Hudson had been quite famous for several years now. His juniors were rightfully angry as well since they had been both delighted and grateful to be even able to witness his medical skills in action.

How could they just allow some old man to condemn him?

Dr. Hudson himself frowned slightly at Finnley's comment.

However, since Mr. Crawford had been the one who had brought him over, the doctor could only suppress his anger.

"Based on what you said, I'm assuming that you know a thing or two about medicine too, am I correct?" said Dr. Hudson as he snorted.

“Still, for an elderly man, you’re still acting quite imprudently!”

“I’m far from imprudent! Now step aside!” said Finnley as he shoved Dr. Hudson to the side.

He then immediately took out the silver needles that Dr. Hudson had earlier inserted into Queta’s arm.

“You-!” said Dr. Hudson in anger as his cheeks flushed red.

Chapter 650

“What about me? You’ve just been jabbing her with needles when she’s clearly suffering from a venom-based poison! All you’ve done is increase the speed of her blood circulation! Isn’t that just giving the parasite more chances to move around uncontrollably around her body?” replied Finnley.

“Girl, when you were around eight, did you go through something similar to what you’re experiencing now? Though you were probably mostly just dizzy back then, it happened again when you were twelve, right? Only then, you felt even more lightheaded than before. Things should have gotten worse once you got to the age of sixteen. If my deduction is correct, you should have felt extremely lightheaded while simultaneously feeling that your limbs were worryingly weak for that period of time. Since your condition’s only continued to worsen every time it shows itself again, straight out blacking out now when you’re twenty-two shouldn’t come as a surprise!” added Finnley as he turned to look at Queta.

Still lying on her hospital bed, Queta was shocked to hear Finnley’s analysis.

“How... How did you know all that?”

Gerald himself was looking at Finnley, utterly astonished.

‘How could he have managed to guess all that from just a simple glance? This mysterious old man is really something else...’

Thinking back, he remembered that Finnley hadn’t given off such an impression to him the first time they had met. Far from the powerful and smart old man Gerald now saw him as, back then, Finnley was simply a beggar with an injured leg who had forced Gerald to bring him to a doctor.

While he was starting to get curious about Finnley's true background again, he refrained from asking about it for now since it would only be an inconvenience during these critical moments.

Still, if Finnley really was really able to cure Queta, that would definitely be for the best.

"Well, since you're my grandson's best friend, I'll treat and remove the venom-based poison for you!"

"Thank you so much, sir!" said Queta gratefully.

"There's no need to thank me. Ah yes, I'll need all of you to leave for now. I'm going to be performing a different kind of acupuncture to remove the venom-based poison, so ordinary people are prohibited from observing!" added Finnley.

As soon as they heard that, everyone turned to look at Gerald. After all, if the person with the highest position trusted Finnley, so would they.

What more, Gerald had been the one who brought Finnley over and the old man made both logical and knowledgeable statements as well.

Gerald had no reason not to agree to Finnley's terms, so he simply nodded and began leaving with the others.

Dr. Hudson himself couldn't say much about the matter. He simply shook his head with a sigh before walking out of the ward.

"Wait!" shouted Finnley as he stopped Dr. Hudson from leaving.

"I could see that you were quite skillful. You can stay here to help me!"

"You need my help?" asked Dr. Hudson in slight disbelief.

Hearing that, Finnley looked at Gerald.

“Well, since he’s allowed you to help him, go for it Dr. Hudson. I’d personally breathe a bit easier knowing that two experts are doing their best to treat her,” replied Gerald.

After all, with both Finnley and Dr. Hudson working together, it would be similar to implementing double safety measures.

While Gerald left for real this time, the Drake & Tyson duo continued staring at Finnley coldly, their arms crossed.

The old man always had some kind of trick up his sleeve, and the duo had long been annoyed about that. What more, Dr. Hudson was their colleague. Seeing him being fooled and teased by that old man definitely made them even angrier.

After glaring at him for a little longer, the two finally began to leave when suddenly, they heard the old man say, “Tsk... These silver needles are useless!”

Finnley had been looking at the pack of silver needles that Dr. Hudson had with him when he said that. After discovering that they were useless, however, he simply threw them away in resignation.

“You...! That’s going way too far!” yelled Dr. Hudson, his hands shaking in rage.

“Humph! I’m telling the truth! Those needles there were all garbage! I need actual needles like the ones the brothers there have! You two, take your silver needles out now!” said Finnley as he looked at both Drake and Tyson who were still standing at the door.

Once they heard what he said, the two men looked at each other in dismay. Their expressions had changed drastically as they looked at Finnley.

“What are you looking at? Come now, don’t hide them up your sleeves anymore! I’ll return them once I’m done!” said Finnley as he moved toward them slowly.

Before they could even react, Finnley was already in front of them! He then snatched their packs of silver needles with extreme ease!

“You!”

“Brother!”

Drake’s forehead was filled with cold sweat as he stopped Tyson from making a move.

While the old man frankly seemed quite ugly and ordinary, his actions were fast and precise. They were so fast and precise, in fact, that Drake was now feeling equally scared and nervous.

Drake had never experienced such feelings before.

Glancing one last time at Finnley in disbelief, he then dragged Tyson out of the room.

Dr. Hudson himself placed his arms behind his back as he stood at the side. He simply couldn’t believe that such an old, beggar-like man like Finnley could have any sort of capabilities at all!

However, Finnley’s method of inserting the silver needles was simultaneously precise, skillful, and dazzling.

It didn’t take long before Dr. Hudson began to realize what technique Finnley was using. The moment he did, however, the doctor’s mouth began trembling slightly as he muttered, “Is... Is this Deadly Acupuncture Therapy?”

Chapter 651

After a short while of Gerald waiting anxiously outside the ward, both Finnley and Dr. Hudson exited the ward.

When Gerald saw both of them, he found it slightly odd and suspicious that Dr. Hudson now seemed much more respectful toward Finnley. Gerald had also noticed that while they were leaving the room,

the doctor had almost tried supporting Finnley's arm, though he quickly changed his mind at the last second.

"How did it go?" asked Gerald.

"She's almost cured! You can go in and pay her a visit now!" said Finnley with a chuckle.

Hearing that, he entered the ward immediately to check on Queta. She was looking much better now compared to earlier, and even the usual rosiness on her cheeks had started to return.

"You don't have to worry, Gerald. Mr. Quick has exceptional medical skills!" said Queta as soon as she saw him, clearly worried that Gerald was still concerned about her condition.

"That's good to know!" replied Gerald, breathing a long sigh of relief.

"Thank you very much, Mr. Quick!" Gerald then said as he gave Finnley a nod.

The old man had truly helped Gerald a lot. Though Gerald had been quite annoyed with him in the beginning, he was now filled with sincere gratitude toward Finnley.

"It's no big deal! My grandson, if there's nothing else, can we leave now?" asked Finnley, evidently talking about Gerald sending him back to his hometown in the Salford Province.

Finnley seemed like he really wanted to leave now, which led to Gerald's expression immediately turning somber.

After all, he still had one more issue to attend to. Though Mila had misunderstood him, she was now so angry that she wasn't willing to even listen to his explanation. What should he even do now?

"Hold on for a little while longer. We'll head there as soon as I settle this issue!"

After saying that, Gerald told Queta to take a good rest first before leaving her ward to make a call.

Even though he made several consecutive calls, Mila hung up immediately every single time.

Gerald could only sigh internally.

“Mila, why don’t you pick any of his calls up...? Maybe he’s changed his mind by now!” said Molly. Back at the Smith family’s house, Mila and her friends were seated in front of the television while eating snacks.

Seeing how Mila had hung up on every single one of Gerald’s calls, Molly couldn’t help but try to advise her.

“I refuse!” said Mila as she threw her phone aside while nibbling on a potato chip. She was clearly behaving this way out of spite.

At that moment, the doorbell rang.

Mila immediately sat up when she heard the familiar ring.

Her parents weren’t home, so the person at the door could only be Gerald, right? Though Mila was certainly angry, she wasn’t unwilling to meet Gerald.

Instead of her, however, Molly was the one who opened the door.

“Humph! So you still know that- ...Huh? Why is it you?” said Molly, her tone indicating clear disgust.

“Is Miss Smith here? I need to talk to her about something!” replied a pleasant feminine voice.

The woman at the door was none other than Giya.

“Why did you come here?”

Mila definitely didn't have a good impression of Giya. In fact, she resented her.

If Gerald had nothing to do with Giya, why was she latching on to his arm so intimately? Why had she even wanted to be engaged to Gerald in the first place?

“Miss Smith, I would like to talk to you in private, if that's alright?” said Giya.

If Giya had simply chosen to return home after all that, she knew how uneasy she would eventually feel if she didn't settle the things between her and Mila first.

Chapter 652

This was the reason why she wanted to have a nice chat with Mila first.

“What do you want to talk about? Spit it out already!” said Mila as both of them arrived at a park.

“I'll be frank with you. It'd honestly be better for me if you broke up with Gerald. I won't hide the fact that I do indeed, love him, and I've tried to gain his affection on multiple occasions!” said Giya.

Miya simply looked to the side without saying anything.

“However, it's exactly because I love him that I can see how loyal he is to you. I'm not making any of this up either. His feelings for you have remained unchanged from the very beginning. No matter how much I've tried to earn his affection, he simply ignored every one of my advances. This is just my two cents, but if you do end up breaking up just because of some misunderstanding about our relationship, he'll definitely experience extreme grief. He really is a kind man who likes helping people out, you know? Even the engagement was just him helping me out. He hasn't done anything to wrong you!” explained Giya as she looked at Mila.

After that, Giya elaborated more about what Gerald and her had been doing throughout Mila's absence.

It was honestly beyond Mila's expectations. To think that so many things had happened to Gerald during that period of time.

However, Mila was honestly slightly jealous and irked by the fact that Gerald had helped Giya so many times.

After thinking about it for a little while longer, however, she realized that Gerald really hadn't done anything wrong.

"I kind of get what you mean now. Do you mean to say that you've experienced much more with Gerald compared to what I have?" asked Mila.

"In no way had I meant to indicate that. However, since you've said it like that, why don't you look at it this way? During your time together with Gerald, what exactly have you done for him? Where were you when Gerald was facing his own difficulties?"

Giya had meant no harm with her words. She honestly just wanted to talk it out with Mila.

'What... have I done for Gerald? Where was I when Gerald was facing his own difficulties...?'

The two questions made Mila speechless.

Initially, Mila had just felt that their relationship still had a long way to go since Gerald was still pretty straightforward and insensitive romance-wise. However, she had never considered how she herself hadn't been doing anything for Gerald.

Gerald on the other hand, had constantly been helping and taking good care of her.

Not once had she given anything back to him. What more, she had even misunderstood him and was unwilling to hear his explanation despite having returned unannounced this time.

In fact, he had probably left earlier since he was still busy. She had been a mere distraction to him all this time!

After chatting for a while longer, Mila and Giya parted ways.

Back at home, Mila locked herself in her bedroom the entire afternoon, unwilling to even chat with her friends. She was feeling rather depressed by her new realization.

Her actions made Molly and the others extremely worried.

“What’s wrong with Mila...? What did that woman even say to her? They chatted for an entire hour! Something must have happened!”

“I agree! Mila’s been like that from the moment she got back!” replied Molly as she bit into a potato chip.

“Humph! I say we go ask Mila about this. If that Giya woman had really said something bad to her, let’s just go teach her a lesson!”

After hearing that, the rest of Mila’s friends made their way up to Mila’s bedroom.

“Mila, please open the door already!” said Molly in a worried voice.

Soon after, Mila unlocked the door but when the others saw her, they were all equally puzzled.

Mila had packed all her luggage up!

“Mila? What are you doing? We haven’t even been here for a full day yet!” questioned Wanda.

“I know... But I miss Hong Kong already so let’s go back now!” replied Mila.

“...Huh? Right now?”

Everyone was surprised by her rash decision.

“But Mila... What about Gerald? It wasn’t easy for you to return, and we know how much you wanted to meet up with him... Though there was a great misunderstanding, I honestly feel that Gerald’s innocent this time around!”

“I know, I know... I’m well aware that Gerald would never do any of those things... However, I’m sticking to my decision. I really want to return to Hong Kong now!” said Mila, her eyes now teary.

Mila had earlier tossed and turned in her bed for quite some time, deep in thought about her next move.

She definitely didn’t resent Gerald anymore. Honestly, she just wanted him to coax and pacify her.

Though her wish was simple, Giya’s words continued to echo in her head. What Giya had told her had simply never occurred to her before today.

She was well aware now that she couldn’t do anything for Gerald. With that thought in mind, she knew that as long as she stayed here, she would only continue being a burden to him.

That was the moment when she made up her mind to return to Hong Kong. She would work hard and enrich herself to become even stronger.

Her end goal was to one day be able to strike a balance in their relationship.

Seeing how determined she was, her friends said nothing else and quickly began packing up their luggage again for their return trip to Hong Kong.

While they did so, Molly took her phone out before secretly sending a text message to Gerald.

“Come to the airport, quick! Mila is leaving for Hong Kong soon!”

Chapter 653

Gerald had just retrieved some porridge for Queta when he received a text message from an unfamiliar number.

After reading its contents, Gerald was stunned.

‘Mila’s returning to Hong Kong? Already? I haven’t even had the time to explain myself to her yet!’

Immediately after, he began driving to the airport. On his way there, he bombarded Mila with endless calls. However, not once did she pick up.

Alas, when he finally arrived, he was just in time to see a plane slowly taking off.

Gerald was so anxious at that moment that he was ready to make some arrangements to get a helicopter to catch up with her.

However, before he could do anything rash, he received another text message.

This one came directly from Mila.

“Gerald, I’ll be returning to Hong Kong first. You don’t have to explain anything to me regarding what had happened today. I believe in you. To tell you the truth, I was acting out of spite earlier because of my jealousy. I honestly just wanted you to coax and pacify me. However, now I’m aware that I’ve never even considered your feelings before doing all that! For now, please don’t come looking for me yet. I just need some time. Forever loving you, Mila.”

After reading the message, Gerald was even more anxious now. He continued scratching the back of his head as he wondered, ‘What could this mean? Why would she say such things out of the blue?’

Gerald hit his steering wheel in his slight frustration.

'It's been such a long time since we've last met, yet she's already gone before we've even had a chance to talk to each other properly...'

When Gerald returned to the hospital, he was visibly still upset.

In the end, Gerald couldn't help but tell Queta about what had happened, hoping that she could give him some advice about the matter.

'What exactly did Mila mean by that message? Does she want to break up with me? Or is it truly something else...?'

After hearing Gerald's story, Queta simply smiled.

"She's not breaking up with you at all! Didn't you see that she specifically added the part saying she loves you forever? I'm sure she wrote that knowing for sure that you'd overthink the message. Don't worry Gerald, it's clear that she simply wants to be left alone for a while!"

Gerald simply sighed internally when he heard Queta's answer.

'In short, she's still mad with me...'

'If only I hadn't agreed to help Giya, none of this would have happened!'

'Regardless, Mila did say that she wanted to be left alone for a while... It would be best if I didn't disturb her for the time being...'

'Alright, once I find Xara in the Salford Province, I'm going over to Hong Kong to meet her.'

The very next day, Gerald, Queta, and Finnley rode together on the high-speed rail headed for the Salford Province.

Gerald's was on a mission to find someone there.

Before boarding the high-speed rail, Zack had told Gerald about a small property located in the Salford Province that Gerald's sister had invested in before.

While she seemed to have long forgotten about it, it was the reason why he now had someone in the Salford Province to help him.

Since he had relevant connections there and sufficient money, it would only take a few more days to look for said person.

"Do have some fruits, Mr. Quick! I've cut some for you!" said Queta who was still slightly weak.

However, it was obvious that she was feeling grateful to Finnley for saving her life. In fact, she had been taking good care of both Gerald and Finnley from the moment they entered the high-speed rail.

"So... Where exactly is your house, Mr. Quick?"

"I've forgotten the exact address, but I'll definitely be able to look it up again once we arrive at the Salford Province!" replied Finnley.

Gerald could only smile helplessly at that.

Just as Gerald looked out the window, seemingly deep in thought, he heard a baffled female voice saying, "...Gerald? Why are you here?"

This surprised him. To think that he would bump into an acquaintance here of all places. Turning around to see who had called him, he found out that it was Maia!

Beside her, was another person whom he had bumped into the other day. If he remembered correctly, his name was Warren.

The two were sitting just opposite of them and they seemed to be part of a group that consisted of a few other unfamiliar people.

What surprised him the most, however, was how they were dressed. In contrast to what they were wearing on the day they last met, they were now all dressed up like students.

By then, a girl from Maia's group was also looking at Gerald, following Maia's gaze.

"I'm headed to the Salford Province! Where are you going?" replied Gerald casually.

"We're going there too! But there's no need for you to know why we're going there!" said Maia calmly.

'What a serious coincidence!'

Chapter 654

'It seems that I can bump into him just about anywhere!'

'Regardless, it seems that Gerald is doing quite well. After all, instead of taking the normal train, he chose to take the rail instead!'

After the simple greeting, the two of them chatted for a while longer before Maia eventually stopped talking to him.

While Gerald was simply trying to be nice to her, she didn't seem to want to bother about him at all.

Gerald was fine with that, and he simply did the same.

After all, though it seemed like Maia was heading to the Salford Province to undergo some secret mission, Gerald wasn't interested in it in the least.

Meanwhile, Queta had just finished cutting up another fruit. She could see that Gerald and Maia seemed to know each other. What more, she was sitting just opposite them.

Sensing the opportunity, Queta smiled as she asked Maia in a kind and warm tone, "I've just cut up a fruit, Miss. Would you like some?"

"Thanks, but I don't eat fruits!" declined Maia casually.

To her, Gerald was still as lowly as ever. She naturally didn't need to show any of his friends any respect either.

It was similar to a scenario where a circle of friends would completely ignore a single person, simply because everyone else there looked down on them as well.

Since Gerald was the person her group looked down upon, any friend of his would definitely be treated the same way.

On the contrary, if the person was quite powerful within the circle of friends, any friends they introduced would definitely be respected and favored upon by the others.

Queta's initial intention was to make Gerald seem more respectful in front of his friends. Unexpectedly, the beautiful lady seemed to dislike her right off the bat.

After hearing her reply, Queta simply blushed before retracting her hand, feeling slightly bitter.

"Maia, I've brought along some tangerines over. They're from my hometown relatives and they're quite sweet! Here, let me peel one for you!" said Warren as he smiled at her.

While it was common for others to try pleasing them, given their high statuses, they weren't going to just give random people a chance to please them. That would clearly be giving them too much respect.

After hearing Warren's offer, Maia immediately nodded slightly.

"Tangerines from Mayberry are quite famous! We're from the north so we rarely get to taste them. Let us have some too!" teased a few girls who sat just behind Maia.

Their group clearly consisted of people from all over the place.

"Sure thing. Here you go!" replied Warren with a smile as he handed a few tangerines to them.

After peeling one for Maia, Warren handed the tangerine over to her and she plopped it into her mouth before saying, "You're right! It really is sweet!"

As Maia's group began chatting about family affairs next, Gerald could see that Queta was blushing awkwardly as she stared at Maia.

Gerald couldn't blame for feeling that way. After all, he was feeling slightly angry as well by Maia's behavior.

It was clear that Maia didn't respect Queta at all.

He then smiled and patted Queta on the shoulder before peeling an orange for her.

"How will we get to Wendall City, Gerald?" asked Queta as she ate her orange.

"We'll go there by car. Since we aren't dealing with anything particularly special, we won't be needing the help of the owners of the property my sister invested in in Salford City yet. We'll see how the rest plays out later!" replied Gerald.

After all, aside from him, Zack was the only other person who knew about his father's orders for him to secretly investigate the incident.

As far as the others knew, Gerald was simply going to the Salford Province for a trip.

This was why he had not informed the owners of the invested property there about his arrival yet. After all, he didn't really have any requests at the moment.

He had also heard that the property wasn't too large, much smaller in fact, compared to what he owned in Mayberry.

In the blink of an eye, four hours had passed and evening was slowly creeping in.

Around that time, more than ten luxury cars had been parked right outside Salford High Rail Station.

"Why isn't he here yet? It's tiring standing here for so long... Regardless, to think that you'd come in person, Mr. Zatyra. Who exactly are we waiting for?" said a woman.

"Shut up and stand properly! If you end up offending that person because of your ignorance and discourtesy, you'll definitely suffer terribly!" shouted Mr. Zatyra—a middle-aged man—at his subordinate.

Chapter 655

County Salford was the city center of the Salford Province. Being the city center, it was always thriving and busy.

Despite being a bustling city, the ten luxury cars parked in front of the ever-busy Salford High Rail Station were still particularly eye-catching.

At that moment, the rail finally arrived at the station.

Standing up, Gerald stretched slightly before getting off the rail together with Queta and Finnley.

When he passed by Maia and her group of friends, however, he simply walked past them without greeting them at all.

“Humph! Just look at that behavior! Who wants to bother about him anyway?”

‘How dare he not take the initiative to greet me?’ Maia thought to herself. She had never expected Gerald to end up becoming such a stubborn man.

It was evident that Maia had a superiority complex.

‘If you had only greeted me, I would’ve refrained from bothering you. However, for a person like you to ignore me, your actions are similar to destroying a beautiful object! How humiliating and upsetting!’

However, she would let it slide this time. After that, she too got off the rail together with her group.

“Didn’t you say that someone was going to pick us up once we arrived at the station, Warren?” asked Maia as a few of her friends started looking around.

Just as she asked that, the sound of a car honking could be heard. Seconds later, a large Land Rover drove over and stopped in front of the group.

The driver reeled his car window down and the group soon saw the young and handsome man driving it.

“Over here, Warren!” said the man.

“Jamier!” replied Warren while slightly waving his hand.

“Wow! It’s a Land Rover! What does your friend do for a living, Warren?” asked a few girls who were standing beside him.

“Ah, well, he used to be my classmate in the police academy. After he graduated, however, he didn’t become a police officer. That’s because his father had called him home so that he could inherit their family’s company!” answered Warren with a chuckle.

The girls couldn't help but look at Warren with admiration after hearing that.

Why were exceptional people like that? All the people they were acquainted with were somehow equally as exceptional!

"Speaking of which, Maia, didn't you say that you had several close high school classmates in County Salford? You said that they would come fetch us, right? If we leave in this car now, won't they be unable to meet up with us then?" enquired one of the girls.

"Speaking of classmates, how's that one high school classmate of yours doing now? The one whom you said established their own business? What's his deal?" asked Warren as he walked toward Jamier's car.

"Oh, that friend? We were both from our high school's competition team back then, and he's one of my many classmates who passed the test and eventually wound up in County Salford. Since our mission will be starting in a few days, I thought it would be nice to meet him to have some fun first. I have to say though, Warren, my friend's nowhere near as outstanding as Jamier!" said Maia rather sourly.

At that moment, they were all standing beside Jamier's Land Rover. While they were further introducing themselves to get to know each other better, another honk was heard.

This time, a BMW5 series parked right behind Jamier's car.

When the car's front window was lowered, a man and woman could be seen sitting side by side.

Both of them then waved as they said, "It's been a while, Maia!"

"Vincy! Lennard!" replied Maia happily.

Seeing that even Maia's classmates had arrived in a luxury car to fetch her, the two girls standing beside her became quite jealous.

After all, neither of them had that many classmates or friends to boast about. Even if they once had any, they had long ceased contact with them.

The greeting and introduction session then resumed, this time with two extra faces.

Since they were all successful people, they shared a lot of similar thoughts and perceptions.

“We haven’t met each other in so many years, Maia! I’ve missed you terribly! This is the perfect time for us to get together again!” said Vincy as she held on to both of Maia’s hands enthusiastically. Vincy herself looked quite charming.

All of a sudden, Vincy lifted her head as she stared behind Maia, looking quite stunned.

“...Huh? Isn’t that... Could that really be Gerald?” said Vincy as she observed Gerald and his odd group walking out of the station together while carrying their luggage bags.

“Humph! It’s him alright!” replied Maia.

Chapter 656

“Gerald!” shouted Vincy.

Gerald was surprised to hear his name being called out. Turning around, he saw both Vincy and Lennard.

Gerald had never really talked to both of them outside competitions, so he wasn’t too close to either of them. Between the two however, Gerald was definitely more acquainted with Vicky. After all, Lennard came from a rich family so that gave him even less reason to talk to Gerald back then. Lennard was much closer to Maia and the others.

Gerald then walked over to them with a surprised look on his face before saying, “Vincy! Lennard!”

While he wasn’t well acquainted with them, they still used to be classmates. It was the only reason why he was speaking to them in such a friendly manner.

Lennard only scanned him briefly from head to toe before unwillingly nodding in response to Gerald's greeting.

Vicky on the other hand, jumped in front of Gerald before patting him on the shoulder.

"Hey, Gerald! It's been a while! You barely even keep in contact with us anymore!"

Back in the day, Gerald and Vincy used to be partners whenever they participated in competitions. Since both of them usually managed to get decent rankings together, Gerald was starting to feel slightly nostalgic now, now that they were meeting again after so long.

"I know right? It's been such a long time!" replied Gerald.

"Speaking of which, is the duo over there your girlfriend and a family member of hers? She looks really pretty by the way! You know, Lennard could fetch you guys to wherever you want to go!" said Vincy.

"Actually, I have to meet someone later!" added Lennard as soon as he heard Vincy's suggestion.

Vincy just smiled awkwardly after hearing his reply and quickly changed the topic.

"Oh, by the way, both of you may not know it yet, but Lennard and I are getting married! I've also been pregnant for about three months now!"

"Oh wow! Congratulations!" said Maia, visibly shocked by the revelation. She then turned to look at Gerald as though she was comparing him to Lennard.

"...Hey, I just realized this, but look at all those cars over there!" said Jamier out of the blue while pointing at a corner.

"Huh? Oh wow! They're all luxury cars!" said a girl in a shocked voice after turning to look for herself.

Everyone else was equally as surprised.

“Say, doesn’t that first car belong to Barry Zatyrt? The well-known businessman in our town?” questioned Lennard who seemed to recognize the car model.

“I believe so! It’s so weird seeing a man like him waiting to pick someone up. I remember going to a business function together with my dad when I was younger. Back then, I had accidentally knocked into him and he patted my head, you know?” said Jamier rather proudly.

“I think I’ll try to go over there and greet him! One of the managers waiting with him now knows my dad!” said Jamier as he walked over.

His action both shocked and impressed everyone there.

After walking up to said manager and talking for a little while, Jamier eventually returned.

“How did it go?” asked Warren.

“I simply greeted him with a simple hello. He told me that they’re here to pick a big boss up so he didn’t have time to talk to me. Mr. Zartyr glanced at me as well, but I didn’t dare to speak with him!”

While everyone was talking excitedly, Gerald couldn’t help but feel awkward standing there. Thus, he told Vincy that he was leaving before exiting the scene.

Vincy didn’t try to stop him since she knew how awkward it was for him simply being there.

“How odd, why isn’t Mr. Crawford here yet?” said Barry as he checked the time nervously, beads of sweat flowing down his forehead.

Zack hadn't arranged for Barry to pick Gerald up since he had specifically told him not to organize anything grand for him. Because of that, Zack had only told Barry that Gerald was coming over today, and that he just had to wait for his call.

While Zack had meant every word that he said, Barry simply didn't dare to forgo a formal welcome, which explained why he was still waiting there for Gerald to arrive. However, Gerald had yet to arrive even though they had been waiting for so long.

Meanwhile, Gerald and his own group had just found a hotel to stay the night in. After settling down for a while, Gerald's phone began to ring.

Chapter 657

It was a call from Zack.

"Yes?"

"I just wanted to check if you've arrived, Mr. Crawford. I'll be sending you a number belonging to the general manager of County Salford. His name is Mr. Zartyr and just like the Crawfords, County Salford has businesses from all around the world as well. Once you've arrived, you can look for Barry Zartyr if you need anything," said Zack.

He was simply checking in on Gerald to make sure that he wasn't in any kind of trouble.

"Got it!"

"Speaking of which, Mr. Crawford, I've previously assigned Barry to look for the Jade pendant in County Salford. He apparently has some news about it already!"

"Alright! I'll be giving him a call soon!"

As soon as he hung up, Gerald lay on his bed before calling Barry next.

Barry seemed quite agitated upon receiving the call. However, he managed to calm himself almost immediately before getting straight to business.

“Yes, Mr. Crawford, I’ve searched high and low for news regarding the pendant and I finally managed to find something. While I haven’t been able to pinpoint the exact family the pendant originates from, I managed to find an old man who was willing to have a look at the pendant after I described it to him. According to him, he’ll be able to tell which family the pendant comes from just by having a look at it!”

“Alright, but it’s rather late now. I’d appreciate it if we could meet up tomorrow morning. You can take me to the old man then!”

After having a brief conversation, Gerald then hung up.

He then tried calling Mila. He was simply used to calling her every night, just to have a short talk. However, she hadn’t been picking up on any of his calls for a while now.

Meanwhile, Mila was thinking about Gerald back in her hostel as well.

There were many female students from all over the world staying in the TV station’s apartment building. While some of them were there to study, the others were there for their internships.

“Say, Mila? Could you accompany me to get some stuff?” asked Molly as she patted Mila on the shoulder.

“Sure thing!” answered Mila.

Both of them then headed downstairs before leaving for the hypermarket. When they got there, the hypermarket was crowded with people.

“Hey, hey, isn’t that Mila? Didn’t know you had the time to come out and buy stuff with that packed schedule of yours!” said a rather tall and extremely pretty girl as she looked at Mila coldly.

“It’s none of your business, Hallie! Quit being so nosy!” snapped Molly as she spoke on Mila’s behalf.

Hallie was from Modow and her results were slightly lower than Mila’s. Since both the entertainment and specialist departments had joined this time around to compete, both she and Mila were competitors. After all, they would only send their best intern to join the entertainment department.

The person who got into the entertainment department would stand a chance to become famous. Currently, the most popular candidates for that spot were Hallie and Mila. However, Hallie seemed to have connections with the entertainment department, and she was taking every chance she could to sabotage Mila’s performance on stage. It was a competition based around popularity, so it was natural for both of them to not be on good terms.

Just as Molly looked as though she was ready to start a fight, Mila immediately stopped her.

“Forget it, Molly. Let’s just go back!” said Mila as she started walking away.

“You won’t get into the entertainment department! Give up already!” sneered Hallie with her arms crossed.

When Mila got back to the hostel, someone was already waiting for her.

“Mila! You’re back! I came by earlier but you weren’t here. I just finished my script. Could you have a look at it, please?” asked the girl as she smiled.

“Of course!”

She then followed the girl to her room. After going through the script for a little while, she then made her way back into her room.

Mila had initially thought that she was just going to have another regular day. However...

Chapter 658

All of a sudden, a girl could be heard crying near Mila's room. By the time Mila got out to see what the commotion was about, a few others had already left their rooms to see what was wrong. Mila and the others simply followed behind them.

"What's wrong? What happened?" asked one of the girls present.

"I... I went out with my housemate earlier and when I got back, I realized that the diamond ring that my boyfriend got for me was missing! It's a very expensive ring and I can't find it anywhere!" said the girl with a wail.

Hallie had heard the racket from next door and she too was now present.

"Don't cry, Xyleena. You could have just misplaced it. You know how careless you can be. Maybe you accidentally left it somewhere?" suggested Hallie.

"But Hallie, I would never misplace something so important! I'm always particularly careful with that six thousand dollar ring!" cried out Xyleena.

"How odd! Well, how about this. Where have you been today and who else was in the hostel? Could it be that your door wasn't properly shut so someone who knew about the ring came in and stole it?"

"In the first place, who told you to show your ring off to everyone in broad daylight?" added Hallie.

"Well... All five of us went shopping together... Only Narissa was in the hostel... She said she needed to write her script..." said one of the housemates.

"No... It wasn't me! I didn't take the ring!" said Narissa, terrified.

"But you were the only one in the hostel at that time. Who else could it have been?" interrogated Hallie.

"Why don't you let us check your bed so that you can prove your innocence?" suggested Hallie next.

Mila was well aware that Hallie was simply directing her anger at Narissa since Narissa was close friends with her.

Understanding that, Mila then immediately defended Narissa by saying, "I can prove that Narissa didn't touch Xyleena's stuff! After all, she isn't that kind of person!"

"Prove? And how exactly are you going to do that?" said Hallie as she pointed at Mila.

"Hold on, I remember now! When I went out to get a drink earlier, I think I saw Mila and Narissa entering the hostel room together!" said a girl who was living in the room next to Mila's.

"Huh?" Everyone was now staring at Mila.

"No wonder you're helping her so much. Did both of you team up to commit this crime?" sneered Hallie.

"Quit spouting nonsense!" said Molly anxiously.

"If it wasn't either of you, then let us check your beds! If you didn't commit the crime, why are both of you getting so worked up?" replied Hallie.

"Mila... You..." said the girl who had lost her ring while staring at Mila. After all, both of them were quite close friends as well.

"Fine! Do as you wish!" said Mila.

Upon getting their approval, Hallie then proceeded to go through Narissa's belongings. However, she wasn't able to find anything.

Hallie and her sisters then entered Mila's room.

After going through her things for a while, Hallie lifted Mila's pillow before shouting in shock, "Xyleena, look! Isn't that your ring over there?"

Everyone present then watched as Xyleena walked over and picked the ring up.

"Y-yes! This ring belongs to me!"

Xyleena couldn't believe it. She simply stared blankly at Mila before saying, "...Mila? Why would you do such a thing?"

Chapter 659

Mila herself however, was equally as shocked as they were.

"H-how is this even possible? I didn't take it!"

"The evidence is here and everyone can clearly see it! How are you still trying to defend yourself? What a show!" said Hallie.

"Mila, I've always admired you but you've really disappointed me this time... If you really liked my ring, you could've just told me!" added Xyleena in disbelief.

"I... I really didn't take it! I didn't!" denied Mila as she continuously shook her head.

"She's telling the truth! Let me tell you, Hallie, Mila's boyfriend is the richest man in Mayberry! She could get anything she wanted! Why would she even need to steal someone else's ring?" said Molly.

"Hahaha! Oh no... The richest man in Mayberry... I'm so scared!" replied Hallie as she laughed hysterically.

"Who cares about any of that! What's stolen is stolen. I'll definitely be bringing this up to the director tomorrow! Let's go! I can't believe that you're actually the director's favorite! There'll be a grand event at Hong Kong TV Station tomorrow and we'll listen to your explanation then!" added Hallie as she turned around and left while dragging Xyleena along.

As for Narissa, she only looked at Mila with a confused expression on her face. Eventually, she bit her lower lip before leaving as well.

“Mila? How is any of this possible? We believe that you’d never do such a thing, but who could’ve put that ring under your pillow? We were here the entire time!”

Since Mila’s group was aware of who her boyfriend was, they knew for a fact that Mila would never steal anything. Even if they didn’t know about Gerald’s true identity, her friends would have still known her well enough to believe that Mila was innocent.

“I... I think I know who put it there... But I don’t think she did it purposely!” said Mila, her eyes tearing up.

It was impossible for her not to know what was going on.

However, Mila simply didn’t understand why Narissa would help Hallie sabotage her. After all, every time Hallie bullied her, Mila would be the first to stand up for her.

When Molly and her other friends finally realized who had committed the act, all of them—especially Molly and Wanda—were furious.

“D*mn it! I’m going to go look for her now! What an utter piece of trash!”

“Forget it, there’s no use looking for her. If they’re willing to trust Narissa to sabotage me, then Narissa will definitely never spill the truth out! This entire trap had been set up specifically for me! Even if she were to fail this time, Hallie will definitely try to set me up again the next time I participate in a competition together with her. She’ll never let me off that easily!” said Mila as she sat on her bed, depressed.

“Why don’t you give Gerald a call? Hallie’s a local and she has great connections. You won’t be able to win a fight against her without his help! I mean, just look at her! To think that she was actually able to get Narissa to listen to her! She clearly wants you out of the competition! I’m certain she would leap for joy if she managed to send you back to Mayberry in the process!” replied Molly, her tone worried.

“I know, Molly. However, all of you don’t have to worry about this anymore. She’s just targeting me. I don’t want to end up pulling the rest of you into this. I heard that someone great is coming to the station tomorrow, so all of you should get some rest and prepare while you can!” said Mila as she lay on her bed as soon as her sentence ended.

Though Mila seemed tough, she was still a girl at heart. Not only did she lack the proper connections to fend for herself, she even lacked a person who could take care of her there.

She missed Gerald terribly now. If only he was here, he would definitely be with her regardless of the situation. She only needed to tell him what had happened for him to instantly rush over to her.

At the moment, she really wanted to call Gerald and cry together with him. It wasn’t an easy feat for a girl to live outside on her own.

However, before she could do so, she remembered what Giya had told her. If she only relied on Gerald every time something happened, then what good would she be to him other than being a pretty face?

She felt that she needed to be a woman standing together with Gerald instead of just being a pretty flower for him to protect. Thus, she refrained from calling him.

This led to Mila having a sleepless night till it was almost dawn.

A grand event was going to be held at the station so they needed to prepare the function hall.

Those involved were the Hong Kong TV Station, the TV stations around the Southern Ocean, and some other television stations that collaborated under the Westons. All of them were under the same management group, and they were each equally powerful in the media industry.

Chapter 660

Rumor also had it that the television company was owned by a fairly young woman who had an astounding background. In fact, she was so influential that even the powerful television company meant nothing to her.

While the rumor had spread like wildfire, nobody actually knew if it was the truth. After all, nobody had even seen her before.

This was why the TV station was quite concerned about the event. Even all the furniture in the function hall had to be perfectly arranged. This was proof of how concerned the station was.

What more, several celebrities would also be participating. It was definitely going to be a lively event.

While everyone was preoccupied with making sure that the hall was perfectly decorated, Mr. Hill clapped his hands loudly before telling the interns and the crew members to stop for a moment.

“Gather round, everyone! I have some news for all of you!”

Hearing that, everyone did as instructed.

“Today’s VIP is a very special person indeed! All of the crew members have to be extra careful today!”

“Regarding who gets to be the prize presenter, I’ll personally pick one of the interns to do it. However, the person who gets picked will have to be even more careful since you’ll be interacting with our VIP!” said Mr. Hill who seemed equally as nervous.

“We fully support you, Hallie!” shouted a group of people from within the crowd.

All of them seemed to be popular rich heirs. They were clearly here to support Hallie since they had permission to enter the hall.

Quite a number of other guests had arrived as well, including a few big bosses from Yanken and Modow.

The corner of Mr. Hill’s lips twitched when he heard that. However, he only smiled awkwardly before saying, “I’ve discussed this with the TV station and all of us have decided to give this opportunity to Mila!”

“All the best, Mila!” said Mr. Hill. He obviously had high hopes for her.

Mila simply nodded in response.

“I disagree!” shouted Hallie, sounding incredibly upset. Only the best intern would get chosen to be the prize presenter and that was clearly her! It was obvious that she was feeling nervous since she hadn’t been selected.

“You have other responsibilities to attend to, Hallie. Why are you disagreeing?”

Mr. Hill was well aware of Hallie’s background, which was why he was careful with his tone and words.

“I’m not saying that I want the post, but anyone else other than this thief can have the role! Choosing her would be an insult to the VIP!” replied Hallie.

“Thief? What do you mean by that?” asked Mr. Hill, his tone much stricter than before.

“Well, I was going to report the incident to you last night but I wasn’t able to. See, Mila stole Xyleena’s diamond ring which was a gift from her boyfriend! All of us present at the time saw that the ring was under her pillow!” explained Hallie as the other girls nodded.

Nobody would’ve believed her if they hadn’t seen the ring there with their own eyes.

“Because of that, Mila shouldn’t be qualified to be on stage!”

“That’s right! How could someone like her be allowed to go on stage?”

“Might as well just throw her out! She’s just a disgraceful thief after all!”

“Yeah! She’s just dishonoring us interns!”

The ones who were shouting those comments were all interns who were evidently jealous of Mila.

“But I really didn’t steal it... I didn’t...” said Mila as she faced all their accusations and disdain.

Chapter 661

“What’s going on here, Mila?”

Though Mr. Hill admired Mila a lot, he still had to be impartial, especially when so many people were involved with the uproar.

“Explain it to the director yourself, Xyleena!” said Hallie as she dragged Xyleena into the spotlight.

Xyleena, for one, had been unwilling to speak in the first place. She could only stammer, reluctant to tell the truth. After all, she and Mila were on good terms. Mila was also usually a very nice person.

However, after finding out that the culprit was Mina, there was nothing more that Xyleena could say. For the sake of Mila’s dignity, she honestly just wanted to remain silent and let it all slide.

“Explain yourself, Xyleena!” demanded Mr. Hill as he frowned.

Seeing that she had no other choice, Xyleena detailed everything that had happened the day before. She couldn’t lie about it either since there had been so many witnesses around when it happened.

After hearing her explanation, Mr. Hill found it difficult to believe what she had said. Quite honestly, he didn’t buy her story at all.

However, if he tried to gloss things over or refuse to make a fair decision after hearing all that, he knew he would have to eventually deal with Hallie who could most definitely report the case to the police.

What more, Hallie had brought along many of her college classmates to support her. They would definitely not let the case rest easily if he persisted with picking Mila.

“Mila, I can’t do much regarding this matter. If that’s what really happened, then I’m afraid I can’t give the spot to you!” said Mr. Hill.

“You definitely shouldn’t!” said Hallie as she crossed her arms.

Narissa simply stood in a corner as she looked at Mila. She seemed like she wanted to say something. However, before she could even make a move, she spotted a warning gaze from Hallie.

Seeing that, Narissa could only helplessly clench her fists and lower her head. She felt shameless.

There was nothing Mila could say to defend herself. As a result, she had no choice but to watch her opportunity get taken away by someone else.

She was simply in a helpless position since nobody dared to go against Hallie.

“Mila!” said Molly as she and the others approached her.

“Don’t worry, Molly. I’m fine. I just need to use the restroom!” replied Mila as she turned around to leave.

After washing her hands, Mila was just about to leave the ladies when Hallie and a few of her good friends blocked Mila’s path.

“What else do you want? Aren’t you done yet?” said Mila as she glared at Hallie icily.

“Oh, but of course I’m not! I know what these people will think of me. Actually, maybe they already think that I deliberately planted the evidence there to frame you, but it doesn’t really matter anymore. While the opportunity is now mine and you’ve clearly lost, I’m definitely not done with you yet!” replied Hallie as she glared back, her eyes reddened.

Ever since she was a child, Hallie had always wanted to be first in everything. Regardless of where she went or whatever organization she was participating in, she wanted to be the leader. The 'Big Sister' of everything.

There was nobody who dared not to call her that.

Since she had come to the TV station to study and learn, she had also taken advantage of the people and platform there, resulting in almost everyone referring to her as the 'Big Sister'.

Despite that, she was still lacking behind Mila in almost every aspect.

What more, she thought that Mila was simply faking her friendliness, and that she had fooled everyone into liking her.

From the poor Narissa, to the extremely wealthy Xyleena whose boyfriend was equally as rich, all of them treated Mila well.

In the past, Xyleena had been one of Hallie's best friends. Now however, she was extremely close to Mila as well.

'Do you really think I haven't figured it out yet?' Hallie thought to herself.

If someone else or even Hallie had stolen Xyleena's valuables, Hallie knew that Xyleena wouldn't have easily forgiven any of them, not even her. Rather, Xyleena would probably not let the thief get away without a fight!

However, not only did Xyleena not pursue the matter when Mila had been framed as the thief, but she had even convinced the others not to spread the news around as it could have an unfavorable effect on Mila!

Why...?

Just why did everyone like Mila Smith so much?!

Chapter 662

“I don’t care if you hold any grudges against me. It’s not like I can even fight you!” sneered Mila.

“Oh, it’s not about that. I just don’t understand why everyone likes you but hates me. Even though everyone knows that you’re the one who stole the ring, I’m sure that they’re all still going to think about your wellbeing first! In fact, I’m certain they’ll start saying that I’m the one who framed you!”

“I don’t want to hear it. However, I believe that the truth will prevail in the end!” said Mila as she tried to leave.

“Stop right there! I’m the ‘Big Sister’ here! You can’t just ignore me like that!” shouted Hallie as she grabbed Mila’s arm and forcefully pulled her back.

A second later, Mila could feel a burning sensation on her cheek. Hallie had just slapped her!

“I’m going to go ahead and say it now. I’ve been meaning to teach you a lesson for the longest time! I’ve held myself back every time others praised you, but there’s no need for me to put up with your bullsh*t anymore!” said Hallie as she raised her hand, preparing to land another slap.

“Stop right there! What on earth are you doing, Hallie?” shouted Xyleena.

At that moment, several girls rushed toward the scene. Among them was Xyleena and several of Mila’s dorm mates.

Xyleena had early sensed that something was amiss when she saw Hallie walking together with her gang of friends.

“Who do you think you are to hit Mila?”

“So what if I hit her? What’re you going to do about it? I’m the ‘Big Sister here! I’ll teach her a god d*mn lesson whenever I feel like it!” retorted Hallie.

She then pointed at Mila before saying, "If you want to remain here next time, just be honest!"

After saying that, she led her gang away.

"Are you alright, Mila?" asked Xyleena in a worried tone.

"I'm fine!"

"D*mn it, that Hallie's being such a b*tch! That field spot was supposed to be yours, but after her meddling, you now only get to greet the attendees at the entrance! I can't stand that b*tch and her hateful a*s anymore! Let's beat her up!" said Molly furiously.

"Don't even think about it. If you even touch her in the slightest, it's definitely going to be much more difficult for you girls to gain a foothold here, especially if you're doing it for my sake. Leave it be, there's nothing else we can do since she's the boss around here!" said Mila, her tone grateful.

Mila personally didn't mind being an entrance hostess. After all, she would rather do that than drag Molly and the other girls into the matter.

At that moment, Narissa walked over to Mila's side before saying, "Mila, we have to greet the guests now... Many wealthy businessmen and celebrities are already coming over. Let's head over first..."

However, when their eyes met, Narissa accidentally let out a squeak.

"Humph! I don't see you getting a promotion for being a bootlicker!" sneered Molly as she stared at Narissa.

Everyone else there gave her an equal look of contempt before leaving to get the rest of their things done.

Mila simply looked at Narissa before saying, "Sure, let's go!"

Once they arrived at the entrance, they saw that the big square was crowded. Many VVIPs were also already present at the venue.

Unlike Hallie, she was now able to walk amongst the group of big celebrities.

“M-Mila... I’m... I’m so sorry!” said Narissa out of the blue. She was looking at Mila as she said that and her cheeks were burning red.

She simply couldn’t hold it in any longer and she soon burst into tears.

For Narissa, it had always been difficult for her to study outside. It was Mila who had constantly treated her well. Even when she faced hardships financial wise, Mila had always been the one who had used her own money to help her.

It was near unbearable for Narissa to see how much trouble she had caused Mila.

“Mila... You have to understand... I was forced to... Otherwise, I would’ve gotten into trouble...” said Narissa in between sobs.

Chapter 663

Narissa then explained the entire plan that Hallie had set up to frame Mila.

Basically, since the opportunity to work with the TV station was extremely important to Narissa, Hallie had threatened her by saying that she wouldn’t let Narissa intern there if she didn’t go along with the plan!

Because of that, Narissa had no choice but to cooperate with her.

While Mila had indeed been somewhat angry with Narissa, after hearing her side of the story, she just couldn’t hold any grudges against her anymore.

After all, she couldn't just put the blame on Narissa.

If Mila lost this position, sure, it would affect her job later on. However, she could still return to Mayberry where she still had her family and Gerald.

However, if Narissa lost the position, she would have nothing left.

'If I were in her shoes, I would probably do the same thing, right?' Mila thought to herself.

In the end, the true culprit of this entire fiasco was Hallie Yates. If she needed to hate someone, it should definitely be Hallie.

"I'm thinking of standing my ground against Hallie, Mila. I don't want her to continue treating you like this!" huffed Narissa.

"Please don't. It's fine, I don't blame you at all. I know that you're having a hard time, but this matter is between Hallie and me. I won't blame anyone else but her!" said Mila.

"Humph! How dare both of you talk nonsense! Stand still already!" said Hallie as she walked over to them, a smug smile on her face.

"Molly! Wanda! Stand here as well! We need more people handling the guests so I requested for two more hostesses!"

Hallie then glanced at Molly and Wanda as she stood by the entrance. By then, the VIPs had already begun showing up and they were all ready to greet them.

"William Rye, President of Yanken, has arrived!"

Following that announcement, a young man walked over like a superstar, surrounded by lots of people.

As he walked on, a flag representing the VIP was raised.

Every VIP who attended was prepared to show something off to present their identity and business.

After all, this was a prime opportunity for them to advertise and make themselves known since people from all over the world—all the attendees being wealthy businessmen—were flooding the grand scene.

“The President of Modow has arrived!”

One after another, the number of VIPs steadily increased.

Hallie herself had the honor of standing at the very end to welcome and shake hands with each of the VIPs.

By then, the red carpet had already been stepped on by what seemed like hundreds of wealthy businessmen and celebrities.

For some odd reason, the longer she stood there, the more excited Mila felt. However these were just bigshots from Sunnydale.

‘Why the hell am I even feeling excited?’

All of a sudden, she wondered if he too would be one of the VIPs...

Outside the venue, paparazzi and reporters were swarming the red carpet area. After all, aside from their charming faces, the VIPs were also flaunting their expensive luxury cars to show how powerful and wealthy they each were.

“Mila! Mila!” said Molly as she ran to her side.

Since Molly was now here, it wasn't hard for Mila to imagine Hallie kicking her other friends out as well as part of her revenge.

"Do you think Gerald will come? If he does, we can make a fool out of Hallie! Even if all her contacts banded up together, they'd still be no match for him!" said Molly excitedly.

"I... I don't know!" replied Mila as she shook her head.

"Oh for the love of god! I can't believe you're this stubborn! If I had a rich boyfriend like yours, I would've followed him around the world! It's all because of how stubborn you are to prove yourself as a strong and independent woman! What's so bad about being called a trophy wife? For me, as long as my husband is rich, that's all that matters!"

While Molly had previously supported Mila in her quest to become an independent woman, getting into trouble with Hallie had changed her mind.

Deep in her heart, Molly thought that if Gerald was her boyfriend, she would've used him to embarrass Hallie for bullying her. That way, Hallie wouldn't ever dare to mess with her again.

While Wanda hadn't said a thing, she was also standing together with them, looking forward to Gerald's arrival.

Chapter 664

After all, even she would be able to show off slightly if he truly came.

"What are you guys talking about?" said Hallie with a snicker as she approached Mila and Molly who had been whispering to each other for a while now.

"Nothing much. Also, Hallie, while it's true that you've been freely toying around with us, don't ever try to cross the line. Consider this to be a fair warning if you wish to live to see another day! I've already told you that Mila's boyfriend is Mr. Crawford from Mayberry, an extremely powerful man! He may even come today, and if he does, well... You'll just have to wait to find out!" replied Molly.

“Hahaha! Oh no... I’m terrified... Please, I’ve heard of several rich people in my life, but never have I heard of... What’s his name again? Crawford from Mayberry? Haha!” sneered Hallie sarcastically.

“Oh, you just wait and see, Hallie! You just wait and see!” said Molly in response.

As soon as her sentence ended, the crowd’s excitement seemed to suddenly escalate as ten dazzling sports cars, unlike any of the previous ones, arrived at the scene.

It was surprising to see such expensive cars here, to say the least.

Even Hallie was shocked speechless. While she had seen many expensive sports cars before in her life, this was the first time she was seeing a convoy of this many luxury cars together.

Before the cars had even stopped, a few staff members dressed in suits were already rushing toward the greeting hostess’s side while shouting, “Mr. Crawford, the director of Dream Investment Group has arrived!”

Those who heard that felt chills run down their spines.

“Hurry! Mr. Crawford’s already here!”

“What? He’s arrived early!”

The entire group still seemed to be in utter shock as the hosts and hostesses began running downstairs to greet him.

After all, though there were many other VIPs, Mr. Crawford was still the most important person today.

Even several of the businessmen and heirs that had earlier entered exited again, just to greet him after hearing word about his arrival.

“...What? Mr. Crawford exists?!”

At that moment, Hallie’s face was the palest anyone had ever seen. It was as though her heart almost stopped beating.

After seeing the commotion happening before her eyes, she no longer doubted that Mr. Crawford was indeed, the most important person of the day.

It didn’t take long for her to snap out of it, and once she did, she immediately threw jealous glances at Mila as she said incredulously, “You said Mr. Crawford’s your boyfriend? How could that even be possible?”

Could it really be that she was never actually a match for Mila Smith to begin with?

How was she always this lucky? To be even able to have such a powerful and wealthy boyfriend?

“Hah! You look star-struck! Every word we said was true! Mila here is Mr. Crawford’s girlfriend!” replied Molly excitedly.

She wanted to see how Hallie would react after being beaten in her own game.

Mila on the other hand, had her eyes peeled on the convoy before her.

She wasn’t really expecting any help from Gerald. Rather, she was thinking about how she hadn’t even had the chance to talk to him properly despite having returned to Mayberry briefly that day.

Saying that she didn’t regret resenting Gerald was a big fat lie.

“Holy f*ck! This should be the most luxurious convoy we’ll be able to see tonight, right?” exclaimed someone from within the crowd.

“I’d assume so! Each of the ten cars in there costs at least three million dollars! That’s like thirty million dollars in total!”

As many from within the crowd gasped in surprise after hearing that, the cars finally stopped moving forward.

“Mr. Crawford’s here!” shouted a man.

Following that announcement, fireworks were set off on the television building’s top floor, and the night sky was instantly painted with beautiful bursts of colors.

Simultaneously, water was also shot out from the water fountains on both sides of the pond while the staff carefully began raising a massive flag.

Mila herself had her head lifted, nervously looking out for Gerald.

Chapter 665

When the main car’s door was finally opened, the crowd was stunned.

A fair-skinned and rather chubby guy with eyes as small as pumpkin seeds stepped out as he waved at the crowd in his gorgeous suit.

“Is he Mr. Crawford?”

“Really?”

“Of course not! I recognize who he is! He’s Yoel Holden! The son of the richest man in the county state!”

“Is that so? I guess by the looks of it, Yoel’s attending in place of Mr. Crawford, right?”

While the crowd was busy discussing among themselves again, the stage manager looked visibly disappointed when he saw Yoel instead of Gerald.

However, he still had to take Yoel seriously. After all, Yoel Holden was also one of the VIPs.

Mila on the other hand, wasn't familiar with Yoel. This made her slightly surprised and disappointed when she saw him.

'Why didn't Gerald come...?'

Even if Gerald had made his appearance, she would've hidden in a corner so that he couldn't spot her. Regardless, it was no lie that she had at least hoped to have been able to see him.

While Mila wasn't the kind of girl who liked to show off, any girl's heart would throb like crazy if they ever saw their boyfriend making such a grand entrance.

Sadly, it wasn't her boyfriend in the car. It didn't seem like Yoel knew who she was either.

As Yoel was led up the stairs by the guide, Hallie—who had earlier been scared witless—said, “Well, well, well. What have we here? Why didn't your boyfriend come over to greet you?”

She was clearly trying to rub it into Mila's face.

“D*rn it! It wasn't Mr. Crawford after all! Why isn't he here?” said Molly rather regretfully. She was certain of how utterly pleased Hallie must have been feeling at that moment.

“The f*ck were you trying to pull off, b*tch? Weren't you talking about how great your boyfriend was earlier? Embarrassing! It seems that I didn't slap you hard enough earlier!” mocked Hallie, a hint of anger in her voice.

Before she could say another word, another burst of excitement could be heard.

“Oh god! Oh god, oh god, oh god!” shouted someone hysterically.

“What kind of cars even are those?”

“Hot d*mn! Aren’t those exclusive Lamborghini models? Designed only for the company’s top customers? I think it was around three years ago when they revealed online that each car costs about ten million dollars! The cars are each equipped with a superior artificial intelligence system and their bodies are said to be even stronger than that of bulletproof cars! I don’t think I need to say anything more about their stunning designs!”

“You’re kidding right? Ten million dollars for a car... There’s like... Five, ten... Twenty of them!”

“Holy sh*t! You’re telling me that what we’re seeing now is a convoy worth two hundred million dollars?!”

It wasn’t just the youngsters at the entrance who were waiting in anticipation this time. Even the businessmen were giddy with excitement.

While most of the wealthy people there had gone through several hardships to earn what they had today, the VIP that would soon be making their appearance had a convoy worth two hundred million dollars!

Most, if not all, of the people in the crowd had gone pale, clearly overly excited by this unprecedented grand entrance.

As the person leading the hosts shifted his gaze to the stage manager, he could see that the stage manager himself was taking several deep breaths to calm himself.

“This is the main VIP for today, right stage manager?” asked someone excitedly.

“Yeah, that’s her! Tell everyone to start paying attention immediately! Don’t make any mistakes or you’ll be dealt with accordingly!” said the manager, his voice quivering slightly.

After the cars stopped in front of the entrance, the stage manager began walking briskly toward them to greet the main VIP.

Molly, Hallie, and the other girls were frozen in anticipation as well. All of them were too shocked at the scene to even remember that they were fighting.

Even Mila could hardly believe any of what she was seeing.

She knew how rich Gerald was. To think that there were still people way richer than he was. After all, the main VIP was a person who owned a two hundred million dollar convoy!

What kind of house did she even live in? Gosh, everything was just so extravagant to the point where this entire scene seemed unbelievable!

By the time the car's door was opened, the stage manager and several other VIPs had formed two uniform rows outside it, standing ready and alert to greet their grandest guest yet.

Chapter 666

As soon as they saw the young woman step out, everyone in the two rows immediately bowed deeply.

The woman with snow-white skin—who looked to be around twenty-seven years old—had a pair of branded sunglasses on. She also wore extremely expensive-looking clothes, complemented by the blazer draped over her shoulders.

As she continued chewing on her gum, she tilted her shoulders slightly, allowing her blazer to seamlessly fall off her shoulders. One of her bodyguards caught on to it before it even managed to touch the ground.

Even from afar, everyone could see that all the bodyguards surrounding her had equally fierce gazes in their eyes. They also seemed to be extremely capable and strong. These were the kinds of bodyguards who would most definitely be prepared to tackle any sort of situation that they had to face.

While she was extremely charming, the woman had an extremely strong aura as well, pressuring a lot of the present people to not even dare to take a breath.

As she scanned through the crowd, her gaze fell on the large flag placed right outside the scene. It was Gerald's flag. She then smiled slightly before pointing at it and shouting, "Raise that flag higher!"

"Very well!" said the head of the broadcasting station who had not dared to even straighten his body yet.

With a wave of his hand, he immediately ordered his subordinates to do as she said.

As he did that, the rest of the businessmen at the entrance held on to their breaths as they remained bowed down. It almost felt like they were participating in a queen's arrival.

Even those who appeared to be over fifty didn't dare to do anything. They were simply too terrified to say a word, most of their legs quivering as though they had just been struck by lightning.

They all watched as Gerald's flag was slowly lifted to the highest point it could reach.

Seeing that, the woman's smile deepened.

She then walked forward and handed her handbag over to Mila, who just so happened to be the first in line among the others who were also tasked with receiving the guests.

At the time however, Mila was still looking at Gerald's flag curiously.

'Why did the president only want Gerald's flag to be raised higher? What exactly is her relationship to him?'

Mila knew that even though Gerald had several female friends, he was still loyal to her. However, after seeing all this, she was starting to feel slightly nervous.

After all, the woman seemed extremely powerful and frightening.

“Hmm?” said the woman as she frowned slightly.

It was at that moment when Mila broke from her daze and finally realized that the woman had been handing out her handbag to her!

The head of the broadcasting station was so terrified at that moment that his eyes were bloodshot as he growled, “Mila! What the hell are you doing?”

He had constantly reminded them not to make any mistakes when the grand VIP arrived. Yet here Mila was, making a mistake as soon as she arrived!

“Are you new here?” said the woman as she continued chewing on her gum calmly.

“H-huh? I-I’m sorry! I’m terribly, terribly sorry!” answered Mila. She was so frightened that her face has lost all its color,

“I-I’ll dismiss her immediately! I’ll even be sure to punish her and her entire family!” said the head of the broadcasting station nervously.

It hadn’t occurred to Mila that just because of her slightly slow reaction, even her family would be brought into this!

‘She’s simply too overbearing!’

At that moment, Mila was more frightened than ever. After all, the woman standing before her now—who was exerting an immensely powerful aura—had every right to do as she pleased to her.

“Did I say I wanted you to dismiss her? Cease your nonsense!” retorted the woman as she rolled her eyes at the head of the broadcasting station.

“I’ve been saying nonsense, yes! I apologize for not watching my mouth!” shouted the head as he harshly slapped himself thrice.

Once he was done, his mouth was stained with blood.

Hallie on the other hand, lowered her head at that moment. She was filled with glee.

It was definitely going to be all over for Mila now!

Chapter 667

“Tell me, why were you staring at that flag earlier?” asked the woman, her voice crystal clear.

Mila simply lowered her head, unsure of even what to say.

As Mila continued remaining silent, the woman noticed the slap mark on Mila’s cheek. She then stretched her hand out and lifted Mila’s chin gently.

“You’re so beautiful yet you were slapped. Such a pity... Where are you from?” asked the woman, her tone sounding genuinely regretful.

“M-Mayberry!” replied Mila.

She hadn’t answered the woman’s earlier question since she didn’t want her to know that she was honestly thinking about Gerald!

After all, Mila was still unsure of that woman’s true identity and status.

“She’s an intern student who was chosen and sent here from Mayberry University! Her academic results are outstanding!” replied the head of the broadcasting station.

Raising an eyebrow, the woman said nothing as she took a few sneaky glances at Mila before turning to enter the main area.

However, before she entered through the door, she turned around and pointed at Mila before saying, "You there! Follow me!"

After saying that, she entered without saying another word.

"Mila! Why are you still standing there in a daze? Go follow the president already!" said the head of the broadcasting station immediately.

"G-got it!"

Mila was still in deep shock. However, she simply followed the president inside.

Hallie on the other hand, was left stupefied.

'Why?' She thought to herself.

'Why was the president taking particularly good care of Mila? Was it because she heard that Mila was from Mayberry University? She didn't even tell Mila to take responsibility for her rudeness earlier!'

Hallie was filled with jealousy.

It was when the event was about to begin when Mila finally realized that the president's surname was Crawford. She had found out about this when she heard others addressing the woman as President Crawford while following her.

So she bore the surname of Crawford as well.

Since President Crawford had requested for Mila to follow her, Mila was placed within the group of assistants assigned to help her out. Because of that, both Hallie and Mila had to work together on stage at the same time.

Now blinded by jealousy, Hallie looked at Mila with murderous eyes whenever she could.

A little while later—when she saw that Mila was busy refilling tea for the guests—a nasty plot formed in her mind!

As Hallie walked past Mila, she gave her an extremely brief but cold glare before nudging her slightly.

Due to her actions, the cup Mila was holding nearly toppled to the floor! Thankfully, Mila was able to catch it in time! While the cup was safe, its contents were splashed all over the person in front of Mila...

And that person was none other than Yoel!

“F*ck! Look at what you’ve done!” said Yoel as he glared at Mila angrily, a frown already forming on his face.

“I-I’m terribly sorry!” apologized Mila immediately.

As she said that, a burning hatred for Hallie had bloomed within Mila. It was obvious that Hallie’s jealousy had driven her to continue creating trouble for Mila, even now!

Regardless, though Yoel was currently only here in place of Gerald, Mila had been meaning to find out what his true relationship was with Gerald. She was also interested in finding out who he was to President Crawford.

After all, even a fool would have realized by now that Mr. Yoel Holden had been addressing President Crawford as his sister. It was also obvious that the president clearly liked him a lot.

What kind of relationships did Gerald have with both of them?

Though she had earlier thought about asking them about it, after giving it some thought, she refrained from doing so. After all, she was only part of the staff there. They, on the other hand, were very important guests.

If she simply acted rashly and asked such a personal question, what would they think of her?

“Sorry? Do you honestly think that everything will be over with just a simple apology?” said Yoel as he immediately got up and shoved Mila with his right hand.

The force from Yoel’s push was strong enough to send Mila falling to the floor.

During the process, her phone fell to the ground as well.

While it seemed like President Crawford was the main guest today, Yoel was clearly the actual one in control here.

After all, Yoel had been given the role of Gerald’s direct substitute.

Similar to past events, whenever Gerald was busy or unable to attend any grand functions, either Yoel—who was Gerald’s godbrother—or Aiden would be sent to take his place.

Since Mr. Crawford was already busy when the event invitation was received, Zack hadn’t bothered informing him about it. Instead, Zack simply went through the usual process of electing Yoel to take Gerald’s place, since Aiden wasn’t available.

While Yoel was usually obedient and nice in front of Gerald, both he and Aiden were truthfully quite reckless and arrogant when they were on their own.

Because of that, it would certainly not be him if he didn’t get angry after being drenched in water by a rude assisting staff member!

Chapter 668

Almost everyone present at the scene was stunned speechless.

While Molly was equally terrified and sad for Mila as she watched her good friend get shoved to the floor, Hallie was contrastingly sneering like there was no tomorrow.

President Crawford herself, who was getting a massage at that moment, pretended like she had seen nothing.

“Humph! How bold of you to offend Mr. Crawford! If I don’t personally teach you a lesson now, you’ll never learn!” shouted Yoel as he raised his arm, seemingly ready to beat Mila up.

However, before he could launch his first blow, he paused right in the nick of time.

He had noticed just in time, that the lock screen on Mila’s phone—which had earlier fallen to the side—contained Mr. Crawford’s photograph!

“...Hmm? What?!” said Yoel, startled.

“Do you know Mr. Crawford?” asked Yoel, clearly surprised to see his godbrother’s photo in some assisting staff member’s phone.

He then picked her phone up, trying hard to figure out who she really was. Since he wasn’t able to come up with any logical conclusions yet, he refrained from beating her up just yet.

“Return my phone to me!” said Mila as she snatched her phone from Yoel’s hands.

“I’m asking you now. Why do you have Mr. Crawford’s photograph as your lock screen photo?” asked Yoel again, his voice filled with confusion.

While her eyes were closed at that moment, even President Crawford had heard his question. She then gestured for the person massaging her to leave before glancing suspiciously at Mila, even scanning her from head to toe.

“That’s a personal question!” replied Mila, holding on to her phone carefully.

“Then what’s your name?” asked Yoel as he scratched the back of his head. He seemed to have just remembered something important, which was what prompted the question.

“Mila Smith!”

Hearing that, Yoel’s eyes widened slightly.

‘Mila Smith... Why does that name sound so familiar...? Where have I heard it before...?’

‘Hold on... Aiden told me that Mr. Crawford’s girlfriend was doing her internship in Northbay...’

“...Are you from Mayberry University?” asked Yoel, slightly astonished by his own conclusion.

“I am!” replied Mila with a slight nod.

“F*ck!” Yoel was even more surprised now that his deduction was actually correct!

“Then you definitely know my brother, right? Gerald? You even have his photo in your phone! Could it really be that you’re his girlfriend? Do you know who Aiden and Zack are?”

“I know them, yes!” replied Mila, giving another nod.

Yoel almost jumped in place after hearing her reply.

‘Sh*t, she really is my sister-in-law! What have I done? How could I nearly have beaten her up?’

‘I’m screwed for sure this time!’ Yoel thought to himself as he turned to look at President Crawford meekly.

Seeing his reaction, she immediately stood up.

She had naturally overheard their entire conversation, and she too was surprised by the revelation as she walked toward Mila.

“Are you really Gerald’s girlfriend?” asked the president.

“Yes, she is! She’s Gerald’s girlfriend, Mila!” shouted Molly—who had taken a step forward at that moment—out of the blue.

Seeing that she could no longer deny it, Mila simply bit her lower lip slightly before nodding in agreement.

Mila had been extremely reluctant to admit it since she wanted to be more independent instead of solely relying on Gerald. It was the reason why she had endured all her hardships alone. She simply didn’t want to only be known as eye candy for Gerald if she was to continue being his girlfriend.

Because of her lack of reliance on Gerald’s name in her workspace however, the truth only served to amplify how stunned the people there were.

“H-hot d*mn! Is she really Mr. Crawford’s girlfriend?”

“I guess so! While she really is beautiful, I wonder why she’s working as a receptionist here...?”

As the others began discussing the current situation, Mila noticed that President Crawford was staring at her.

“P-President Crawford, I-”

“You don’t have to call me President Crawford anymore. After all, if you’re Gerald’s girlfriend, you should be addressing me as your sister!” replied Jessica, a faint smile on her face.

“Sister... Are... Are you Jessica? Gerald’s elder sister?”

At last, Mila finally knew who President Crawford really was.

Chapter 669

“That I am. He’s told you about me, hasn’t he?” replied Jessica with a faint smile on her face.

Mila was too astonished to immediately respond to her.

Gerald had indeed mentioned her before. He had told her that his sister treated him extremely well. What more, Jessica had been the one responsible for establishing the Mayberry Commercial Group in the past!

While Mila was aware that his sister was very rich, she hadn’t expected her to be this rich and influential!

At this point, Jessica could almost be considered to be a person of royalty! This made Mila even more nervous than she already was.

She had initially not felt the pressure of the Crawford family’s true wealth and influence since she never had her eyes set on Gerald’s money from the very beginning.

After all, it didn’t matter to her whether Gerald was rich or poor. All that mattered to her was that both of them retained a good relationship.

Due to that way of thinking, even though she knew Gerald’s true identity, she never really realized that there was this large a gap between them.

Now that Jessica was standing before her, however, the sudden realization of how different she actually was from the Crawfords was definitely stressing her out.

“Y-yes! He did mention you... He told me that you were in North Africa!”

“I was, I actually just returned a few days ago!” replied Jessica, still smiling.

After saying that, she turned to look at Yoel before smacking him behind the head once.

“Sister-in-law! I’ve clearly wronged you! I sincerely apologize!” shouted Yoel. He was so frightened that his face was deathly pale as he apologized.

Once that was done, Jessica then turned to look at the slap mark which was still visible on Mila’s face.

“Speaking of which, who slapped you? Now that I know that you’re my younger brother’s girlfriend, I won’t allow for such actions to go unpunished while I’m here!” said Jessica aloud, her voice suddenly turning cold.

“I-I’m the one responsible for that!” replied Hallie at that moment, her entire body trembling in fear.

Knowing Mila's background, Hallie had initially thought that Mila’s family was just doing some kind of business in Mayberry.

It was the reason why Hallie dared to bully Mila so unscrupulously.

However, it was beyond her wildest dreams to ever expect Mila to actually be Jessica’s sister-in-law! What more, it turns out that Mr. Crawford really was Mila’s boyfriend!

With the cat now out of the bag, Hallie was terror-stricken.

“You?” replied Jessica, glaring icy daggers at Hallie.

“How exactly did she slap you Mila? Return the slaps to her the same way she did to you!”

Mila could only bite her lower lip slightly. After all, she wasn't an aggressive person. However, given her current situation, she really didn't have a choice.

Regardless, it was true that Hallie had constantly been targeting Mila, getting even more daring after each of her consecutive plots against her.

Mila was well aware that since Hallie hadn't treated her kindly, she didn't need to either.

With that in mind, Mila slowly raised her hand before slapping Hallie right in the cheek.

Once the impact hit, Hallie immediately covered her now hurt cheek before bursting into tears.

On the contrary, Jessica couldn't help but have a much better impression of Mila now after seeing that.

Jessica then looked at Hallie before saying, "How insensible of you to lay hands on my brother's girlfriend... I definitely have to teach you a personal lesson! Hmm... How about this? You'll need to drink in order to compensate for slapping her!"

"H-huh? Thank you for letting me off easy!" replied Hallie immediately.

"Oh, don't thank me yet. Listen to the rest first! Here are ten bottles of whiskey... You have to finish all of them in a single gulp!" smiled Jessica icily.

Her subordinates then began dragging Hallie away.

Seeing this, Mila felt her right eyelid twitch slightly. If the issue wasn't handled well, Hallie's life could very well be in danger.

Though Mila agreed that Hallie needed to be taught a lesson, what Jessica had proposed was simply too cruel for her.

Even if she was to advise Jessica against it, she felt that Jessica's decision would still be indisputable.

It was also at that moment when she realized that Jessica was the complete opposite of Gerald. While Jessica was arrogant, reckless, and extremely domineering, Gerald on the other hand, was gentle, reserved, and humble.

At this point, it almost seemed as though Jessica felt that bullying others like that was simply the natural thing to do.

"Once the function is over, I'd like you to come along with me, Mila. I have something to discuss with you. Ah, also, don't let Gerald know that we've already met each other!" said Jessica calmly as she continued chewing on her gum.

"Alright, sister!"

After hearing that, Mila started feeling equally worried and scared though she simply couldn't tell why.

Moving back to Gerald...

Chapter 670

Early the next morning, Gerald—accompanied by Barry and Queta—went looking for the master that Barry had mentioned the previous night. The master lived in a scenic spot atop a mountain.

Since a bit more time was needed before they were going to get the final results, both Barry and Queta continued waiting there.

Gerald himself walked quite a distance away from the place to make a call to his sister. It was only last night when Gerald found out that she had finally returned from abroad.

He had always thought that he would be among the first to meet his sister as soon as she returned. After all, he missed her dearly since both of them hadn't met for so long.

During the call, Jessica told him that she was attending some kind of grand function. She also mentioned that she wanted to meet Gerald there.

However, after Gerald explained that he was busy doing something for their father, she didn't have much else to say.

A while later, Gerald ended the call and was just about to head back when he heard someone call out to him.

"Gerald?"

Turning around to see who had called him, he was stunned when he saw the familiar faces.

The group of young people—whom Gerald had seen—seemed to be playing and laughing around with each other, save for the one who had just called out to him. They had all clearly come here in search for amusement.

Of the five people in the group, Maia and Warren were among them. Jamier was there too, along with Gerald's old high school competition teammates, Vincy and Lennard.

"Humph! It really is him! What a coincidence! We really can bump into him just about anywhere we go!" said Maia as she couldn't help but smile rather bitterly.

They were here because Jamier had told them that this scenic spot was quite famous. What more, it was mostly reserved for the well-off since the prices of things here were particularly expensive.

Aside from that, there was also another place called the Summer Resort which was located near the peak of the mountain. All sorts of high-end entertainment centers could apparently be found there.

One usually needed to have a certain level of influence and wealth in County Salford to even be able to go there to have fun.

Quite frankly, the scenery at the foot of the mountain was nothing compared to what one would be able to experience once they arrived at the Summer Resort.

Since Jamier wanted to prove his capabilities and have some fun at the same time, he had begged his father to allow all five of them up there to have a good time together.

After some difficulty, he finally managed to convince his father, which was why they were all ascending the mountain now. It was also why they had managed to bump into Gerald again while they were enjoying the scenery.

“I had initially wanted to invite you out to have fun with us, but I didn’t know whether you had anything going on since you came all the way out here to County Salford!” said Vincy with a chuckle.

While she wasn’t exactly too close to Gerald, both Vincy and Gerald retained an ex-classmate kind of friendship. Compared to the rest, she was in fact, quite nice to Gerald.

“I appreciate the thought, Vincy. I don’t really have much going on now. I’m just looking around!” replied Gerald quite cordially.

“Humph! I have to say that you’re not too bad yourself since you know about this famous scenic spot! However, I should remind you that you’re currently only looking at the scenery from the foot of the mountain!” said Maia as she smiled.

It was her usual straightforward style of speaking.

In her mind, she had already estimated—based on her knowledge of Gerald’s economic status—that he would only go to places that didn’t require entry fees whenever he went on trips.

After all, to enter such high-end places, one would first need to have at least some sort of connections or money like her, right?

Hearing her comment, Gerald could only shake his head with a bitter smile on his face.

'As if there are places that you can go to that I can't...'

Though he was clearly being looked down upon by Maia, Gerald didn't want to say much. He simply couldn't be bothered by her.

Other than Vincy, who had stopped to talk with Gerald for a brief moment, nobody else spoke to him.

Eventually, it was Lennard who tugged Vinvy away from Gerald, telling her not to continue speaking with him.

It wasn't long before the group of five arrived at the scenic spot's entertainment center.

"Pleased to meet you, ladies and gentlemen! Please present your VIP cards," said a staff member standing at the entrance. A few other staff members were also standing there, each awaiting other customers to serve.

"Here you go! All of us came here together!" said Jamier as he took a card out and showed it to the waiter.

"Alright! This way please," said the staff member respectfully.

This entertainment center had been established specifically to target rich businessmen and famous people, which explained why the VIP card was required. However, the target audience aside, the center was also open to sightseeing tours, which meant that not everyone needed a VIP card to enter.

Upon entering the place, Maia soon found herself being charmed by the magnificent scenery.

"Wow! Everything's so beautiful!" said Maia rather excitedly.

The moment she turned around however, she became instantly stunned.

“What the hell? Did he actually enter this place together with us?”

Chapter 671

This was what Maia said as soon as she saw that Gerald had also entered the high-end entertainment center.

Gerald himself had simply been walking around, minding his own business before turning to look at Maia after hearing her shout. Contrary to Maia, he was as calm as a cucumber.

Maia however, wasn't having any of this. To her, Gerald could only possibly have entered due to him following them closely while Jamier was showing the staff his VIP card earlier. The staff must have allowed him in then, thinking that he was part of their group!

Seeing Gerald in such a place simply made Maia feel uncomfortable.

“Hey, Gerald! Why are you here as well? Who even allowed you in here?” said Maia rather angrily.

Hearing Maia's interrogative question, Gerald felt stunned.

‘Who allowed me in? I can come and leave as I please since the staff have been notified that I came together with Barry.’

‘I naturally have free access to this place!’

In all honesty, Gerald was only passing through the entertainment center because he needed to. After all, it was the only way for him to get to the small manors at the peak of the mountain—above the entertainment center—where both Barry and Queta were still waiting.

“D*mn it, have you no shame at all? Don't you know that unless you're following a tour, you need a VIP card to enter this place? Not just anybody can enter as they want!” added Maia, her voice clearly filled with contempt.

“I am aware of that!” replied Gerald with a nod.

“F*cking hell! Since you already know about that, how could you just follow us in here after Jamier showed his VIP card? You can’t just sneak into this place with us!” replied Maia.

While she hadn’t really hated Gerald in the past, Maia still utterly looked down on him. After today’s events, however, she was starting to hate him slightly.

‘Jamier didn’t even invite you! Only Warren, Vincy, Lennard, and I were supposed to come here to enjoy ourselves!’

‘How dare you even consider sneaking in with us? What’ll Jamier think about this?’

‘After all, he knows that Vincy, Lennard, and I are your high school classmates! How utterly embarrassing!’

‘If you had snuck into someplace else with us without Jamier being present, I wouldn’t have cared this much! Hell, I’d probably have approved of it as long as you were willing to expand your horizons!’

‘But this is different. What’ll Jamier think about Vincy and I now?’

All these thoughts made Maia even more embarrassed than before.

“I didn’t even sneak into this place!” replied Gerald helplessly.

He knew how much Maia had looked down upon him in the past. To think that it could actually get even worse!

However, he wasn’t lying either. He really hadn’t snuck in.

“How could you even say that at this point...? If you didn’t sneak in, do you have a VIP card?!” said Maia furiously.

“Well... No,” replied Gerald. After all, he didn’t really need one to enter.

“Then why are you still lying? You snuck into this place yet you still don’t want to admit it! I’m honestly speechless right now!” shouted Maia, so angry that she was even stomping her foot now.

If it wasn’t because of how aware she was of her status as a police officer, she would’ve already kicked Gerald at least twice by now!

What more, several other respectable-looking people—who were also walking around in the entertainment center at the time—seemed to be finding the scene rather hilarious.

Realizing this made Maia and the others feel deeply embarrassed.

Trying to deescalate the situation, Vincy then said, “It’s fine, Maia. Don’t talk to Gerald that way... Remember, we still used to be classmates! Also, Jamier? I hope you don’t think too much about it. Gerald must have just entered with us to have some fun!”

“I don’t really mind!” replied Jamier as he shook his head while laughing slightly bitterly.

“Humph! You’re lucky Jamier’s so generous! Otherwise, we would’ve kicked you out of here immediately! God, I feel so annoyed seeing him like this!” growled Maia as she stomped her foot a few more times before finally turning around to walk away.

Vincy could only look at Gerald rather pitifully.

After all, all of what Maia had said to him was equally unpleasant and hurtful.

Chapter 672

“I’m sure you know how straightforward a person Maia is, Gerald... After all, she’s been like that even from when she was still our captain! It’s just the way she is, so please don’t take what she said to heart!” consoled Vincy.

“Well, alright!” replied Gerald, peeking at Maia once before nodding at Vincy.

Since Vincy had been the only one treating him well, he chose to follow her advice.

Besides, if he really wanted to embarrass Maia, he could do so any time he pleased. However, he felt that that would be slightly childish of him, so he simply refrained from doing so.

Gerald wouldn't usually have disputes with girls like her anyway.

“I hope you mean what you say... Speaking of which, if you're not too busy, let's hang out for a short while and catch up with each other! After graduating from high school, I asked about you and found out that you had been accepted into Mayberry University! I told you that you'd be able to do it back then!” said Vincy.

Back in high school, though she never actually said it, Vincy admired Gerald quite a bit. After all, Gerald was always studying and as a result, his results were top notch. What more, she also knew that he was the kind of person who would always persevere to the very end, regardless of the task at hand.

Once, the two of them—who were competing together as a small team—ended up becoming champion in one of the many competitions they participated in. Back then, Vincy had been extremely excited since she got to hold Gerald's hand while receiving the award.

After all, she quite frankly had slight feelings for Gerald back then.

She honestly wanted to see Gerald finally get his moment and rise above everyone else.

However, that moment simply never came. As a result, her feelings for him were also short-lived.

In the end, Gerald was simply too poor. Although she continued treating Gerald well, she no longer tried to gain his affection.

It wasn't as though she looked down on him or anything. She simply still retained a rather immature mindset. Putting it frankly, she wanted a more heroic person to be her life partner.

Gerald however, was rather unwilling to join her, simply because he didn't want to deal with Maia any more than he needed to.

While he honestly wanted to refuse Vincy's suggestion right there and then, Vincy seemed to have wanted to have a nice long chat with him from the very moment they had met again the day before.

He couldn't really deny that he wanted to chat with Vincy as well. After all, it had been so long since they last met.

Thinking about this made it much harder for Gerald to decline her invitation.

Since the results of the jade pendant wouldn't be out till a bit longer, Gerald eventually nodded slightly in response, not wanting to disappoint Vincy.

"Vincy! You-!"

At that moment, Maia and the others were sitting beside a hot spring while taking photographs.

Seeing that Vincy had brought Gerald along, Maia was stunned speechless. She found it weird that Vincy would even want someone like Gerald around.

"Well, since he's already here anyway, let's just have a chat together! This is as good a chance as any to catch up with each other!" replied Vincy immediately.

Hearing that, Maia fumed slightly before turning to look the other side.

Jamier himself wasn't going to argue with Gerald. Instead, he turned to look at both Warren and Maia before saying, "What do you think? Isn't the scenery here fantastic?"

“It’s definitely something!” replied Maia.

“Thanks for today, Jamier. You know, next time when you come over to Mayberry, I’ll get my dad to use his connections to allow us to enter Wayfair Mountain Entertainment to have some fun! Just the few of us together!” said Warren.

“Are you talking about the one in Mayberry? That’s the most luxurious place there! Take my word that you’ll definitely be satisfied if you go there, Jamier. Honestly, even as a person from Mayberry, I’ve never actually set foot into Wayfair Mountain Entertainment. However, I’ve heard lots about it! It’s not easy to enter if you’re just some random nobody!” added Maia as she let out a heavy sigh.

The way he worded it earlier, Warren’s father clearly had some kinds of connections. After hearing what Maia said, Warren simply patted his own chest twice before saying, “Not to worry, you’ll definitely be coming along as well when we eventually go there to have some fun! It’ll be just the five of us! You, me, Jamier, Vincy, and Lennard!”

It was obvious why he had deliberately mentioned those five names.

“Oh? Well now I definitely have to see Wayfair Mountain Entertainment for myself then!”

“Of course you do! Also, anyone who wishes to enter that place needs an admission ticket. You can’t just sneak in all willy-nilly!”

As she said that, Maia rolled her eyes slightly at Gerald’s direction.

It was clear as day that she was mocking him.

‘What else can I say to that? Little do they know that I used to be the owner of that place!’

“...Hmm? Look over there, doesn’t that girl look familiar...? Oh god. Vincy, hurry! Look there!” said Maia out of the blue as she started pointing excitedly at a girl standing next to the hot spring.

Chapter 673

“Isn’t she the famous celebrity, Yuna Yames? D*mn! To think that we’d actually bump into her here!” exclaimed Maia, clearly surprised.

“While I was aware that this scenic spot was occasionally visited by some celebrities who wanted to have some fun after attending functions in County Salford, never would I have imagined seeing such high profile artists like Yuna here!” said Vincy, equally as surprised.

Her surprise was warranted. After all, she had studied and even established her own business in County Salford. There was little about the place that she didn’t already know.

A burst of laughter soon followed.

“If I remember correctly, you’ve never really been the type to idolize celebrities, right Maia? The only exception to that rule was Yuna! You admired her so much during high school that you even pasted posters of Yuna by your bedside!”

Hearing that, Maia nodded in agreement before saying, “That’s right! I like her because of her self-discipline! I’ve seen all of her work and I even discipline myself according to how she does it!”

“Well, then what are you waiting for? Look, several people are already approaching her to get her signature! Let’s hurry over there and get one for ourselves...”

“Yeah, let’s go get her autograph together!” said Vincy. Judging from her tone alone, it was evident that Vincy really liked Yuna as well.

Jamier, Lennard, and Warren themselves weren’t going to object to Vincy’s proposal any time soon. After all, Yuna was akin to a goddess in the public’s eyes.

While lots of girls liked her, even more men saw her as the love of their dreams.

Gerald himself was a fan of Yuna’s.

After all, the celebrity was very beautiful and had an extremely charming disposition. However, the thing that attracted her fans most, was how down to earth and friendly she was.

If he remembered correctly, Yuna worked under one of Gerald's sister's film and television companies in Yanken.

"Come along now, Gerald! Let's go snap some photographs together with her! It's not every day we get to do this!" called out Vincy.

Gerald simply nodded silently, a smile on his face.

He was well aware that if he really wanted to have a photograph with Yuna, he simply needed to call her over. There wasn't really a need for Gerald to rush over to get such a chance.

Vincy herself immediately started jogging over to Yuna after calling out to Gerald.

Seeing that her attention was no longer on him, it was now or never for Gerald to finally be able to slip away.

However, the moment he turned around, he saw a few extremely well-dressed girls walking out of the entertainment center. Surrounding them were several bodyguards.

While the girls were all equally beautiful, they didn't seem to be celebrities themselves. From what Gerald could assume, they were simply a few run-of-the-mill rich young ladies.

Despite that, several of the men who had initially wanted to take photographs with Yuna froze in place once they noticed the girls. Some of them were even close to drooling.

Even Gerald seemed to be momentarily stunned. However, it wasn't because of their beauty. Instead, it was because Gerald had nearly mistaken the leader of the group—or at least he assumed she was the leader—to be Queta.

If he had to score how closely that girl resembled Queta, Gerald would've given a solid seven out of ten.

As the girls passed by Gerald, the Queta clone seemed to notice Gerald staring at her. In response, give him a look of disgust before leaving with her group.

'Both of them look so alike!' Gerald thought to himself.

Following that thought, he immediately started walking toward a viewing point at the side of the mountain. Though he managed to catch sight of the group of girls before they left, Gerald was astonished once again when he saw what sort of cars they were riding.

To descend the mountain, a large group of Rolls-Royce Phantom Extended cars had been prepared for the girls. Together, the cars looked simply amazing.

"Those girls are definitely equally powerful and rich! I've earned a hefty amount today! Wouldn't it be great if more ladies such as themselves came here in future!" said a voice at that moment before chuckling.

Looking to his side, Gerald saw that the voice had come from a plump, middle-aged man who was also looking at the leaving group of cars while simultaneously counting the stack of money in his hand happily.

Seeing how the man had earned at least a few thousand dollars from the girls, Gerald assumed that he was some kind of unlicensed tour guide.

"Sir, do you know which family that rich young lady comes from?" asked Gerald as he got straight to the point.

Noticing how well-dressed Gerald was, the man then scanned him from head to toe before saying, "Ahem! How am I supposed to know? I just know that their leader is rich and influential!"

As he said that, the plump man continued counting his money.

It was obvious what he was implying to Gerald.

Gerald then took three hundred dollars out from his pocket before handing it to the man while saying, "Maybe you know a little more about them now?"

The man happily took the money off Gerald's hand before saying, "Just so we're clear, I never asked for any money from you. You gave this to me willingly! Either way, if you're talking about the richest young lady in the group, she's come here twice before. Despite being a pro at being slick in County Salford, I'm saddened to say that even I don't know which family she's from. All I know is that she's filthy rich and extremely influential. Information about her isn't going to come easily, even if you directly enquire her about it!"

As soon as his sentence ended, the man then swiftly ran away!

Chapter 674

'...F*ck.'

Gerald was left speechless after seeing that.

He knew for a fact that the middle-aged man was lying. The man definitely knew more about the girl.

'Still, that girl really resembled Queta... Could she be the key to one of the clues...?'

Just as Gerald was about to run after the plump man to further enquire him about it, a sudden uproar could be heard coming somewhere near the hot spring area.

"Move out of the way! Mr. Linton is here! Step aside, all of you!"

Hearing that, Gerald turned around to see a few bodyguards clearing the crowd who were still trying to take photographs together with Yuna. It wasn't long before a rich heir entered the spotlight next, walking toward Yuna with both his hands in his pockets.

When the locals saw who had arrived, they immediately retreated to the side.

Maia herself—who had waited quite a long time just to take a photo with Yuna—was just about to snap a picture with her when a bodyguard knocked into her, sending Maia’s phone dropping to the ground.

“What on earth do you think you’re doing?” asked Maia anxiously.

“What are we doing? What are you doing? Mr. Linton wants to discuss something with Yuna! Now scram!” retorted the bodyguard angrily.

“Maia! Maia, over here! Quick!” called out Jamier who had been standing aside together with the main crowd, his face currently pale as a sheet.

While he had only gotten to know Maia for a short time, he knew very well that Maia was a person with a short fuse. To avoid her from doing anything stupid, he immediately rushed over to drag her to the side as well.

“What’s the big idea?” asked Maia, her expression cold.

“That man over there! That’s Mr. Linton, otherwise also known as Yoav Linton! He’s the young master of one of the most powerful families in County Salford! There seems to be some kind of beef between Yuna and him, so it’d be best for us not to meddle in their affairs!” answered Jamier hurriedly.

Gerald, who had just arrived at the scene, overheard what Jamier had to say. So it would seem that this Yoav person seemed to be a rather arrogant and ruthless man.

“What do you plan on doing?” said a man—who seemed to be Yuna’s agent—as he stepped forward the moment he saw the ruckus Yoav’s guards were creating.

From what Gerald could gather after hearing their discussion for a while, Yoav’s company had invited Yuna to be a spokesperson for them in the past. However, she had refused their offer back then.

Since Yuna was currently the spokesperson of his rival company, it would seem that Yoav had grown quite anxious about that.

The incident's complications didn't end there, however.

While Yuna was on her way to County Salford this time around, her path had been blocked by multiple cars. Essentially, Yoav's men were trying to force her to step down from being a spokesperson for their rival.

However, Yuna was adamant with her final decision.

All this eventually led to the events of today.

Yoav himself was evidently as powerful and influential as Jamier had described. After all, even though a large group of people was currently observing the situation, none of them had even dared to take photographs of the scene.

"I've said it once, and I'll say it again! I won't do it!" replied Yuna stubbornly.

"You f*cking bitch! Don't blame me for being ungentlemanly then!"

Upon saying that, a few of the bodyguards began intimidatingly pushing Yuna around.

Seeing this, Yuna's own bodyguards stepped forward to protect her. It didn't take long for conflict to break out, resulting in the bodyguards from both parties fighting each other!

As a few of the girls started screaming in fear, Maia simply said, "What savages...!"

It was at that moment when she saw Yoav reaching out to grab Yuna's hair. Seeing that, Maia immediately made a dash for it, hurriedly pulling Yuna to the side.

As a result, Yoav—who had initially planned on tugging on Yuna’s hair to maintain his balance—soon found himself falling directly toward the concrete floor.

Being the arrogant man that he was, he had assumed that he only needed one hand to yank Yuna toward him, which was why he had his left hand in his pocket.

That proved to be a clear mistake, since he wasn’t able to break his fall with only one free hand!

Yoav’s head began bleeding the moment his forehead hit the ground.

“M-Mr. Linton!” shouted all of his guards simultaneously, all of them sounding equally terrified.

Chapter 675

Yoav had earlier been blinded by rage. To assert his dominance, he had slid a hand into his pocket, just to prove to Yuna that he could teach her a lesson without even needing to use both his hands.

To his surprise, not only had Yuna escaped his grasp unscathed, it was him at that moment who was bleeding out of his forehead.

His bodyguards were all paralyzed in fear when they saw this, and even Yuna’s guards froze in place.

Yuna herself had gone fully pale.

What a bloody scene this had become. And they were at County Salford too! It was definitely hard to say what would even happen next.

“Don’t let that woman escape! She was the one who had beaten Mr. Linton up!” shouted a bodyguard as he pointed at Maia.

“I... I didn’t beat him up!” replied Maia, her voice quivering slightly.

Maia was stupefied. She had only wanted to dissuade the situation from getting any worse. It was clear, however, that Yoav's bodyguards all had their eyes set on her now.

Meanwhile, the area's staff members had finally arrived after hearing complaints about the conflict. Their first action was naturally to break the crowd up.

Simultaneously, a few of the area's medical staff were also dispatched to treat and bandage Yoav's wounds.

Even the scenic spot's managers had stepped forward to deal with the aftermath.

By the end of it, not many people remained in that area. Gerald and the five others, however, naturally had to stay there.

"Mr. Linton, please allow us to send you to this area's private ward to continue bandaging your wounds," said one of the medical staff.

"Fine, but these few people here aren't allowed to leave!" growled Yoav in a wrathful voice as he held on to his lightly bandaged head before being transported away in a stretcher.

"I didn't even beat him up! Why can't I leave?" retorted Maia angrily.

'What an overbearing person that Yoav is!'

Just as Maia was about to turn around to leave, she was immediately stopped.

"Miss, you and the others need to wait here for a little while longer. Please understand that if you simply leave like this, we won't be able to give a proper explanation to the Lintons. For now, just remain here and we'll see how things will be resolved once Mr. Linton returns."

"I can prove it. She didn't beat him up. She had simply pulled me to the side," explained Yuna as she looked at Maia before nodding slightly, gratitude briefly reflected in her eyes.

“Miss Yames, please try to understand our situation. While we’ll definitely step in to prevent more fights from happening, we’ll first have to see how the Lintons react before the issue can be resolved!” replied the manager in resignation.

While it was true that the event had taken place in the scenic spot, even the manager wasn’t capable of dealing with such an issue.

Jamier himself had been breaking out in cold sweat this entire time.

‘If I remember correctly, Yoav has never suffered any losses before, not even when he was a child...’

‘Now that his head has been injured and he firmly believes that Maia was the one who caused it, since I’m together with Maia now, I’ll certainly be targeted as well!’

Jamier was extremely sure that his family was nothing compared to the Lintons. There was no way they would ever be able to recover if Yoav actually took offense to Jamier. Fearing the worst, he then immediately called his father, stammering nervously the entire time.

As for Vincy, she had never found herself facing such a predicament. She was now so frightened that without any warning, she burst into tears!

However, her reaction was understandable. After all, she was a girl who had just graduated and started doing her own business. She had never gotten in touch with big shots such as the Lintons, which further fuelled her fear.

Even Lennard was terrified to the point of almost crying. Holding back his tears, he too called his father to ask for his advice.

“All of you don’t have to be afraid! After all, you really didn’t do anything! I’ll help you take the blame!” said Yuna, seeing how frightened they were.

The celebrity had noticed that all of them were in their twenties and assumed that most of them had just graduated from university.

Despite knowing that she was dealing with a big shot, Maia had still stepped in to prevent Yuna from getting hurt. How could Yuna simply bear to see her and her group take the blame for her?

It was only natural for her to want to calm them down.

While it was true that Yuna knew that Maia had done nothing wrong, her calm exterior was contrasted by the slowly growing fear in her mind at that moment. She too was honestly slightly afraid as she continued pondering how to deal with the situation.

A short while later, Yuna contacted her company before detailing everything that had happened to them.

“...Ah, I see! Very well!”

After talking for a while, Yuna’s expression turned somber.

“How is it, Yuna?” asked Maia in a slightly worried tone.

Chapter 676

Maia’s group then immediately surrounded Yuna.

Yuna herself shook her head as she rather anxiously explained, “Even the people at my company are quite anxious now. At the moment, they’re still thinking of ways to resolve the issue. They’ve even contacted Mr. Zaty. However, since Yoav sustained actual injuries this time, my company’s quite worried that even Mr. Zaty won’t be able to handle the situation all that well. What more, I’m just a simple celebrity, so he definitely won’t have a fall out with the Lintons just because of me. While it’s true that Yoav was the one who stirred the conflict up first, the fact that he’s the only one who got hurt complicates everything!”

If only Yoav hadn’t gotten hurt, Barry could’ve easily tackled the issue! Everything was so complicated now because of the injury he sustained.

They couldn't tell Barry to trouble the Crawfords either since that was pretty much equivalent to them resigning their jobs right there and then.

There was simply no one foolish enough to try taking the blame for such a major issue, especially since it only involved a single celebrity and a few of her fans.

"Then... What should we do?" asked Vincy, still in tears.

"Let's stay calm for now. I'll try using my own connections to help with the situation. Who should I ask for help from, Lila?"

Yuna's agent turned to look at her after hearing her name being called.

After a short pause, Lila then said, "Let's forget about the entertainment center for now. At the moment, I have a single person in mind. As long as we're able to get him to help us, we should probably be fine in the end. What more, all he needs to do is say a few things on our behalf!"

"Go on... Who is it?" asked Yuna.

"Remember when someone asked you for your contact information during your show the other day? Mr. Yoel Holden? If I recall correctly, back when he organized a grand party which you attended, didn't he say that you could ask him for help should anything happen?"

"Yoel Holden? That super rich person from Surgis City? That Yoel?"

It was clear that Maia and the others had heard about Yoel before. While they were surprised as they looked at each other, they were simultaneously overjoyed. If Mr. Holden really did lend them a hand in this, the entire situation would become so much easier to deal with.

"That's the only option we have that I can see for now. You know, Mr. Holden knows quite a number of rich heirs. Even that grand party— that I mentioned earlier—was hosted by Mr. Holden for a mysterious

rich heir. I can safely say that he has his fair share of tricks and connections up his sleeve. If we do manage to get him to help us, I predict that the situation can be resolved with just a simple phone call!”

“Alright, I’ll give it a try!” replied Yuna, nodding slightly as she began dialing Yoel’s number.

After a brief moment, Yoel picked the phone up.

While she was surprised that he had picked her call up so quickly, she wasted no time detailing the ins and outs of the incident.

A while later, Yuna ended the call with a smile on her face.

“Everything’s fine now. Mr. Holden told me that he’ll use his connections to help us resolve this issue!”

Hearing that, Maia and the others were delighted. This was especially so for Maia since her main reason for being in County Salford was still to undergo a secret mission.

She had been worried that all sorts of issues would arise to hinder her mission before Mr. Holden agreed to step in.

While they awaited Mr. Holden’s next call, Maia and the others stood around Yuna who was describing the events of the party that Mr. Holden had previously hosted.

Since it was their first time talking so much with a celebrity whom they all idolized, it was natural for all of them to be excited.

Gerald on the other hand, was feeling quite uneasy just being there.

He had earlier been prepared to lend Maia and the others a hand if they were really at a dead end. After all, Yuna was technically his subordinate as well.

Even if Yuna wasn't present in the equation, he wouldn't have just stood there doing nothing if he knew they were in trouble.

After hearing that Yoel was willing to help them, Gerald knew that he no longer needed to make a move.

However, it wasn't long after Yuna's call ended when Gerald received a Line message from Yoel.

"Haha! I need your help with something, brother!"

Upon reading his message, Gerald couldn't help but smile bitterly. He could very well guess what that something was. However, he pretended not to know anything about the situation and proceeded to ask Yoel about what kind of help he needed.

As was expected, Yoel wanted Gerald to contact Zack so that Zack could, in turn, use his own connections to handle the Lintons.

Yoel himself liked asking help from Zack since he didn't usually prefer asking his father for assistance whenever he came face to face with trouble.

However, after asking for Zack's aid on numerous occasions, even Yoel became embarrassed to seek him out for help.

This was why Yoel was now asking Gerald for help instead.

"So be it!" replied Gerald, his smile still bitter.

Before long, he detailed the entire incident to Zack and Zack started working on it immediately.

Around half an hour later, Yuna was so anxious that she was almost about to send a message to Yoel to enquire him about the situation.

Before she was able to hit the send button, all of them saw the area's manager running toward them.

"Miss Yames, Mr. Linton just notified us that the entire issue has been resolved! He'll forget about what happened today, so you may all leave now!" relayed the manager.

"Alright then. Thank you, manager," replied Yuna before heaving a long sigh of relief.

Maia and the others on the other hand, simply looked at each other excitedly.

How impressive Mr. Holden was!

Chapter 677

"Thank you so much for dealing with the situation, Yuna! You really know lots of people!" said Maia excitedly.

"Why are you even thanking me? I should be the one thanking all of you! While I do want to at least treat you and your friends to a proper meal for helping me out, it pains me to say that I have to rush back to the company immediately first. How about this? Here's my number. If you run into any trouble in future, don't hesitate to ring me up!"

It was clear that Yuna was still feeling grateful to Maia for stepping in to save her earlier.

Since she also knew that Maia was a sincere fan of hers, it made sense for Yuna to be particularly concerned over her.

After leaving her contact information with Maia, she left the scene.

"I'm super envious of you Maia! To think that you'd actually manage to get into Yuna's good books!" said Vincy as soon as Yuna left.

“It’s not that amazing... Either way, let’s leave for now! It’ll be embarrassing if we accidentally bump into those people again later!”

While Maia didn’t explicitly show it, she was beyond happy.

However, since it was true that none of the others were in the mood to enjoy themselves anymore, the decision to leave was unanimous.

Before leaving, however, Maia turned to look at Gerald.

“You guys leave first. I’ll be staying here!” said Gerald, thinking that Maia was indicating for him to leave with them.

“Humph! Did you honestly just assume that I wanted you to leave together with us? No, Gerald, I simply turned to look at you to tell you something! In the past, you had nothing else going for you aside from your above average academic results! Even then, you at least still had that! Now however, I truly have a reason to completely look down on you. After all, you’re the kind of scum who’ll only appear if good things are present! But when bad things happen, you’ll just silently stand at the side! You truly disgust me, you know?” sneered Maia with zero filter to her words.

“Don’t say such things to Gerald! Everyone was scared witless earlier!” replied Vincy.

“Indeed, I won’t deny that, but how come he was able to act so quickly when he first followed us in earlier? Ignoring that, maybe the rest of you didn’t realize it, but I saw Gerald sneakily moving to the side earlier. That son of a gun was definitely trying to sneak away if things didn’t go smoothly! I saw it with my very own eyes, you know? Don’t you simply find that frustrating?” growled Maia angrily.

What Maia had said couldn’t have been further from the truth. What she had assumed to be him trying to sneak away, was simply him moving to the side to send Zack that Line message earlier.

It was clear as day that Maia had misunderstood him. However, Gerald simply remained silent. He didn’t need to explain anything to her.

“Let’s just go have a meal somewhere, Maia. Don’t waste your energy trying to talk to him,” said Jamier at that moment.

Hearing that, Lennard simply began dragging Vincy away. In no time at all, Gerald was alone again.

Gerald could only sigh in his mind before laughing bitterly.

Looking at his cell phone, he then thought to himself, ‘Well this is just wonderful! To think that a scolding was my reward for helping her!’

However, he quickly let it slide. After all, he had more important things to deal with. He was still more worried about the incident regarding Queta.

With that, he hurriedly began ascending the rest of the mountain.

“Mr. Crawford!” called out the old man from earlier with a smile as he saw Gerald approaching.

The old man went by the name of Wace, and he was a master of calligraphy and antique collecting in the southwest of the Salford Province.

“So, have you managed to identify the origins of the jade piece, Mr. Wace?” asked Gerald.

Hearing his question, Mr. Wace then nodded before saying, “I have indeed! While it’s true that I recognized the pendant when I first saw it, I still needed some time to properly analyze it to be completely sure. Now, I’m certain without a doubt that this specific kind of jade pendant can only belong to the Fenderson family in County Salford. I know for certain since each descendent of the Fenderson family owns a similar jade pendant. Another interesting thing about this kind of jade pendant, is that it’s divided into three levels. Since this particular pendant is top-rated, I can only assume that its rightful owner is Xara Fenderson, a direct descendant of the Fenderson family!”

“The Fenderson family? While I’ve investigated several large families here, not once have I come across the name, ‘Fenderson.’” said Gerald as he nodded.

Mr. Wace simply chuckled when he heard that.

“I wouldn’t blame you for not knowing about them, Mr. Crawford. After all, The Fenderson family has been lying low for more than a few decades now. They’re so good at doing it that there’s barely any news about the family available to the public at all! In the past, the family was considered to be quite powerful and influential not only in County Salford, but also the rest of Weston. However, in just one night, all news about the family simply ceased to exist! Because of the lack of news from the Fendersons, nobody talks about their family anymore.”

Chapter 678

“...Ah, is that so?”

Hearing that, both Gerald and Queta were slightly disappointed.

Barry himself frowned while saying, “You mentioned that despite them being a powerful family, all news regarding them disappeared in a single night, correct? I wonder what drastic changes happened back then... Could the Fendersons have simply gone bankrupt?”

“That’s quite impossible. If they had truly gone bankrupt, how could they have silenced the reporters from reporting about the incident?” replied Gerald as he shook his head.

Mr. Wace smiled after hearing what Gerald had to say.

“Mr. Crawford’s right. For those from the older generation like me, we believe that the Fenderson family didn’t actually fall into bankruptcy. Instead, we think that they underwent the exact opposite of that. Rather than going bankrupt, the family instead amplified in power, or at least that’s what we assume. Regardless, the family never left the Salford Province, and they still reside here to this very day. Some have even theorized that many of the properties belonging to the large families in the Salford Province are dependent on the Fendersons. However, no matter how much they investigated it, they still failed to find out anything relevant to the theory!”

‘How odd... Why would the Fendersons keep such a low profile for no good reason? However, based on the various clues I’ve come across, those from the Fenderson family have shown themselves before in a few events, or so Zack says. Mr. Weyham himself had met a rather exceptional youth wearing a similar jade pendant in Wendall City before...’ Gerald thought to himself.

As he thought about it, the girl from earlier crossed Gerald's mind again. She simply resembled Queta too much for it to be a coincidence. Aside from that, she also seemed to have a very strong family background.

'Tsk... Could it be that she's actually a Fenderson...?'

Gerald could feel that he was close to the truth.

After that, he thanked Mr. Wace before leaving together with Queta.

Before parting ways with Barry, however, Gerald told him to enquire about the Fenderson family. Naturally, Gerald's intent was to get him to investigate that girl though he didn't go into detail about her.

"My grandson, how goes your investigation? Why are you only back now?" asked Finnley the moment they returned to the villa which Barry had arranged for them.

As soon as he saw Finnley, Gerald thought to himself, 'The Salford Province is Finnley's hometown. He's also quite a capable person... I wonder if he knows anything about this.'

"It's going well. Also, Mr. Quick, have you heard about the Fenderson family in the Salford Province before?" asked Gerald as he bit into an apple that Queta had just handed to him.

"What? The Fenderson family? Are you looking for someone within that family?" asked Mr. Quick in a shocked tone, his eyes widened.

"We are. Do you know anything about them?"

"Please tell us if you do know anything about them, Mr. Quick. It's very important to us!" added Queta as she handed an apple to Finnley as well.

“Hm... I... I’ve never heard about them! Despite living in the Salford Province for so many years, I’ve never heard about the Fendersons!” replied Finnley as he shook his head, looking quite perplexed.

Seeing this, Gerald and Queta simply looked at each other.

“Do you really not know anything about them?”

“I say only the truth!” replied Finnley, biting into his apple.

Hearing that, Gerald felt that the only remaining clue that they had about the family was also their biggest one. They needed to find out more about that girl, particularly her origins.

Sensing that he needed to be more specific, Gerald then told Barry to try identifying that girl.

Sometime later however, Barry was still unable to gather any information about her, even after using various methods.

Slightly disheartened, Queta then turned to look at Gerald before asking, “What should we do now, Gerald?”

In her mind, she kept thinking about the same things.

‘Who was the one who abandoned me in the past? And what drove them to do such a thing...?’

Gerald himself wanted to find out who exactly that woman was to his father. He also wanted to know whether Queta was truly his younger sister.

It was at that moment when Gerald paused for a moment before his eyes lit up.

“Worry not, Queta! We may still have another chance!”

Chapter 679

“A chance?” asked Queta in surprise.

In his mind, Gerald thought, ‘That unlicensed tour guide I met with earlier might be our next best shot.’

‘Come to think of it, that slick plump man cheated me of three hundred dollars!’

Gerald recalled the moment when he had heard the uproar near the hot spring area just as he was about to give that man a piece of his mind. Because of that, Gerald had failed to get him to share more information about the girl.

However, Gerald was certain that that man definitely knew more about her. After all, the middle-aged man had said himself that the girl had been there twice.

After making up his mind, it wasn’t difficult for Gerald to locate where the man lived.

It was around noon when Gerald and his men drove to the unlicensed tour guide’s house.

Upon arriving, the tour guide—who was thankfully at home—recognized Gerald and instantly became nervous.

After all, he had only cheated the three hundred dollars off Gerald knowing full well that Gerald wasn’t a local.

Unfortunately, local or not, Gerald was now at his home with a group of black-suited bodyguards standing behind him.

“Um... Good day sir... What exactly are you planning to do?” asked the middle-aged man as he chuckled nervously.

“Oh, I don’t plan to do anything. I just came here to meet you!” replied Gerald as he slid his left hand into his pocket before casually entering the man’s house without even waiting to be invited in.

Once he was inside, Gerald immediately sat on the man's couch as his subordinates entered as well. Each of his subordinates looked like men who shouldn't be trifled with.

Finding the television remote, Gerald then began flipping through the channels. He was deliberately acting like he owned the place, not even bothering to say a word to the middle-aged man.

Seeing that, the man gulped, uncertain of what to do since he had no idea what Gerald had in plan for him.

Not knowing what else to do, he went toward Gerald before saying, "Um... Sir, I really don't think I need that three hundred dollars anymore... If you look around, you'll notice that my family's condition isn't all that optimal. In addition, there are both old and young ones living in this house... I'll get straight to the point. I'm in quite dire need of money and I admit to cheating you of three hundred dollars... However! I've not touched a single penny of that money, and I'll gladly return all of it to you!"

The plump man was obviously experienced in his craft. He knew how to read the situation well, and with Gerald here, the slick man knew that he couldn't afford to displease him.

Hearing that, Gerald simply pinched the bridge of his nose before smiling slightly.

"Oh, don't get me wrong. I'm not here to retrieve that money. On the contrary, if you're willing to cooperate and tell me a little more about something, I'll hand you even more cash!"

Hearing that, the plump man then forced a smile before saying, "Is this about that rich young lady from before? Why are you so interested in her, sir?"

"Hmm?"

Without even waiting for Gerald to say another word, a bodyguard standing beside him instantly glared at the middle-aged man.

“Ah, I understand. I shouldn’t ask what isn’t appropriate. I get it now. Regardless, I’ve truly only met her once. While I know that she’s both rich and influential, I’m honestly clueless about her origins. However, I do know something else. She’s about your age and she studies in the same school as my son! He even knows her!” replied the man as honestly as possible, knowing very well that he couldn’t mess around with Gerald.

He then stood up and shouted, “Come over here, Marven! These people aren’t here looking for trouble!”

“Oh? I see! Coming!”

Soon after, the door to what seemed like a bedroom creaked open and out stepped a plump young man. His body’s shape was almost identical to his father’s.

Still, it was rather ridiculous how the middle-aged man had made it sound like people coming over to cause trouble for him was nothing new.

“Hurry up and tell this fine gentleman about the rich young lady from your school!”

“Well... She’s equally as mysterious, powerful, and influential in our school. While she studies in the class beside mine, we have our union class together. However, she never says a word to us! All of us are quite frankly terrified of her and nobody really dares to take the initiative to speak with her, not even the teachers! Though who can really blame us when she’s always surrounded by so many powerful bodyguards!” replied Marven with a chuckle.

“I do, however, sit in the row beside her at times to eavesdrop on her conversations with her friends. Due to that, I came to realize that they enjoyed traveling all over the place! It’s also the reason why my dad was able to act as their tour guide at the scenic spot!”

So the plump young man was equally as witty as his father. It was clear that everything that he did served to help his father gain more business.

Regardless, after hearing what Marven had to say, Gerald became much more intrigued by the girl. What a mysterious person she was.

Chapter 680

By linking the new information with the clues he had previously discovered, Gerald could sense that it was just as Mr. Wace had said. The Fendersons were still powerful, yet they seemed like they were hiding from something.

Gerald also felt that he could inadvertently alert the enemy if he acted rashly by directly inquiring the girl about it. If that were to happen, he would only gain the complete opposite of what he desired.

As he came up with something in his mind, Gerald then asked, "Does she go to school daily and attend all her lessons on time?"

"Well she doesn't really go to school daily. However, when there's a lesson in her schedule, she'll be sure to attend alongside at least one of her friends. Are you looking for her? I'll warn you ahead of time that she's extremely unpleasant to be around with. It's near impossible for anyone to even make a move on her. You know, in the past, several rich heirs who felt like they were rich and powerful enough tried to gain her affection. For some reason, however, all of them eventually ended up refraining from trying to woo her! Due to their strange actions, everyone now avoids her. She truly is a cold and aloof beauty!"

"I see. What's her name? And is her surname Fenderson?" asked Gerald again.

Marven simply shook his head before saying, "None of the teachers ever mention her name. As a result, none of us actually know what she's called! However, on rare occasions, I've heard her friends addressing her as Jasmine before. Regarding her surname, I really can't help you with that!"

"Well, alright then!" replied Gerald as he shook his head in resignation.

Quite frankly, Gerald wasn't really afraid of that girl's family's influence and power.

Honestly, he felt it would actually be quite lucky for him to actually be able to meet her again.

His mind was busy brimming with ideas at that moment.

“Which class are you in?” inquired Gerald.

Once Marven notified him about his course and year, Gerald gestured at his subordinates to hand them some money for their compliance.

With that done, he finally left the house.

Since he was trying not to alert the enemy, he needed to act as indirectly as he could. Once he managed to enter the school, he would then use that chance to get in touch with Jasmine.

As long as he kept his eyes on her, he would finally be able to track Xara down. This was his plan for now.

After returning to the villa, he immediately told Barry to make some arrangements. Gerald wanted Barry to use his connections to create a chance for him to get in touch with Jasmine.

Barry himself found no issue with that plan.

While all this was happening, the function at the television station in Hong Kong had just ended.

Before leaving, Gerald’s sister had told Mila to meet her at a seaport in the evening.

Since Jessica was only going to remain there for a little while longer, Mila knew better than to be late for their meeting.

Nearing evening, Mila hailed a taxi to the promised location. When she arrived, she met a subordinate of Jessica’s who had been ordered to wait there for Mila.

No ships were present and the only thing there aside from them was the vast ocean.

All of a sudden, a roar of laughter could be heard.

“Let’s just wait here. You may not know about this, but Mr. Yan’s pulled no small amount of strings in order to receive us this time around!”

It was at that moment when Mila saw a group of five girls talking happily among themselves. Each of them looked equally excited and they seemed to be walking in her direction.

When she finally recognized who one of the girls was, Mila was stunned.

The girl in question noticed Mila around that time as well. It was then when she stopped walking and her expression became quite interesting.

Chapter 681

“It’s you?”

“It’s you?”

Mila and the girl spoke in unison. The both of us obviously did not expect to run into each other.

“Alice, who is she? Why does she look so familiar?”

One of the girls asked curiously.

The leader of the girls was none other than Alice.

“Oh! She is Mila, the only student from our university who managed to secure an internship in the Hong Kong Television Station!” Alice replied a little enviously.

All of them were from the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting in Mayberry University. Therefore, Alice naturally had the opportunity to come and learn here too.

However, a team of thirty people would be assigned to television stations and also several newspaper departments based on a certain percentage. Only those with the best scores and results would be given the best learning opportunities.

“Oh! I know, Alice! Is she your ex-boyfriend’s current girlfriend?”

Several girls who were standing aside suddenly began looking at Mila with a different expression in their eyes.

After all, best friends would always be best friends. They would always side with their own best friends.

Since the ex-girlfriend and current girlfriend were both a little confused at this time, the situation was actually a little awkward.

Alice had nothing to hide from her best friends.

Didn’t the girls already talk about this when they first arrived in Hong Kong anyway? Of course, they talked about boys more than anything else. Moreover, they even started comparing their own boyfriends.

To be honest, compared to her friends, the first person that she dated, who was none other than Quinton was nothing worthy at all.

In fact, after some time, Alice had also begun to deny the fact that she had ever been in a relationship with Quinton.

After all, the only reason why she got together with Quinton was because she thought that he was the one who had helped her. Unexpectedly, the person who had helped her was actually none other than Gerald.

Moreover, who could possibly be even more outstanding compared to Gerald?

After all, Gerald was always so calm and restrained. Alice really liked his temperament too.

Therefore, even though the both of them were only together for one day, Alice was still very proud to tell everyone that Gerald was her ex-boyfriend. She even told everyone that he was her one and only ex-boyfriend.

Of course, when she revealed the fact that Gerald's identity was none other than the great Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City, her roommates were all in shock. They could only cry out and lament at the fact that it was a pity they broke up.

Haha!

Alice's heart started hurting when she thought about Gerald.

If nothing else happened back then, she would have already been married into a very wealthy and influential family now.

But...alas!

The word Gerald seemed to be like a haze after that and it made Alice live in the shadow all the time.

This was also the reason why she had chosen to come to Hong Kong. It was because she wanted to avoid any memories that she had of Gerald.

Therefore, Alice had an indescribable feeling when she saw Mila at this moment.

However, that kind of feeling was obviously less intense now compared to the past.

"Are you and Gerald still doing well?"

Alice asked with a touch of pride and arrogance on her face.

“Yes! We are doing pretty good!”

Mila also could not help but feel a little jealous when she saw Alice. After all, Gerald had once confessed his love for her at the corridor because of a misunderstanding.

Even though Mila knew that nothing happened at all between the both of them, she could not help but feel uncomfortable when she thought about it.

Therefore, Mila felt that there was no need for her to tell Alice that she had gotten into an argument with Gerald.

“That’s great then. I wish the best for the both of you!”

Alice replied as she smiled, with a seemingly indifferent attitude.

That’s right. If it were one month ago, Alice would certainly feel very uncomfortable and even jealous when she saw Mila.

She would feel very jealous and envious of Mila because she had stolen her boyfriend from her.

She had robbed her of the glory and wealth that she should have had. After all, she was the person that Gerald had been initially interested in from the very beginning.

“Hmph! So, you simply have a rich boyfriend in Mayberry City, right? Alice is not doing that bad either. She is favored by Mr. Yan from Hong Kong now. Both Mr. Yan and Mr. Crawford come from the same wealthy and influential family backgrounds. So, they are not that different anyway. Furthermore, Mr. Yan is from Harvard!”

The girls who were standing aside could not help but compare Gerald to Mr. Yan.

They wanted to win back some face for Alice.

“Oh!” Mila simply nodded slightly.

This was the reason why Alice had changed a little.

Yes, she used to think that Gerald was really superb and impressive. However, she could not get together with him because she was the one who had constantly despised and looked down on him from the very beginning. This was the reason why her love story ended so hastily.

Remorse was the best word to describe how she felt.

Chapter 682

However, Alice only came to a realization after she came out of the circle in Mayberry City.

It turned out that the world was really very big.

Gerald was not the only person in this world who had that kind of worth and value.

Therefore, Alice’s feelings for Gerald began to fade and she no longer had such strong feelings for him anymore.

“Ahhh! A cruise ship!”

At this time, one of Alice’s friends who was standing beside her suddenly spoke as she started jumping excitedly.

“That is Mr. Yan’s cruise ship! Alice, Mr. Yan is driving his luxury cruise ship to pick us up!”

There was a very luxurious cruise ship on the sea at this moment.

A young man dressed in a bathrobe was holding a glass of red wine in his hand as he stood aboard the cruise ship.

This should be the Mr. Yan that the girls were talking about.

“Mr. Yan is really handsome!”

“That’s right! Alice is really very blessed! It was originally a very simple tea party, but Alice actually got acquainted with Mr. Yan there. Alice, I think that you should just accept Mr. Yan’s pursuit!”

Alice’s friends cried out in excitement.

Alice remained silent and she simply stared at Mr. Yan who was approaching them with a smile on his face.

The cruise ship arrived very soon.

Mr. Yan quickly came down from the cruise ship.

“Alice, sorry for being late!”

Mr. Yan said as he looked at Alice with a smile on his face.

“It’s alright!”

Alice gently smoothen her hair as she tucked it behind her ears.

“Mr. Yan, when will our cruise party start?”

The other girls asked excitedly.

“We can start immediately...okay?”

After Mr. Yan was done speaking, he was suddenly taken aback.

He looked at Mila who was standing aside at this time. She was obviously more beautiful and had an even better temperament compared to Alice.

“Alice, is this your friend too?”

Mr. Yan asked in surprise as he took off his sunglasses.

“No. I guess she is just here by the beach to walk around and relax!”

Alice replied with some dissatisfaction.

“Oh! Then, beauty, why don't you get on my cruise ship together with us then? We can have a cruise dinner party together!”

Mr. Yan suddenly bowed slightly before Mila as he extended a very gentlemanly invitation to her.

“No thanks!”

Mila only responded coldly with two words when she was faced with Mr. Yan's enthusiastic invitation.

This made the expression on Mr. Yan's face turn very ugly in an instant.

No girl had ever rejected him ever since he was a child.

Moreover, he was getting rejected publicly at this time.

“Beauty, I am afraid that you still do not know who I am, right?”

Mr. Yan could not help but shook his head as he smiled wryly.

He did not extend his invitation to her again.

“Mr. Yan, she already has a boyfriend. Her boyfriend is none other than Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City!”

One of the girls who was standing aside suddenly spoke up.

“Oh! It’s no wonder then!”

Mr. Yan smiled bitterly before he said, “However, even though he is a wealthy and influential man in Mayberry City, his influence and presence is only known there. Since you refuse to join us, I am sorry then! Alice, let’s go. I will bring all of you out to enjoy the sea breeze at night!”

Mr. Yan said as he looked at Alice.

At this moment, Alice smiled as she nodded.

On one hand, she was looking at Mila with a somewhat arrogant expression on her face.

It seemed as though she was trying to say, “So what if the man who abandoned me is finally a very capable and influential man? I can always find a man with even better qualities and abilities to pursue me!”

And you, Mila, would always lose out to me even though you are a goddess that even girls would always admire.

“Ahhh! Alice, look at that...that...what is that?”

At this time, the girls suddenly squealed again. However, this time, it was no longer out of excitement, but shock instead!

Chapter 683

The group of people was all surprised by the sound. When they looked up, they saw about a dozen of the top and most luxurious cruise ships appearing on the surface of the sea in the dim night.

Why was it the top and most luxurious?

This was because when they saw Mr. Yan’s cruise ship, they already thought that it was the most luxurious cruise ship that they had ever seen. However, looking at the dozens of cruise ships on the sea now, it seemed as though those cruise ships were all as dazzling and incredible as a galaxy battleship!

It was an extraordinary scene.

“Oh my god! How much would one of those cruise ships cost?”

The girls could not help but squeal in excitement.

Even Mila was taken aback at this time.

Mr. Yan was even more shocked and stunned. He was in a complete daze.

“Mr. Yan, are all of those cruise ships for the Cruise Ship Festival tonight? We are really very excited now!”

The girl asked Mr. Yan as she grabbed his arm excitedly.

That's right. After all, only those really wealthy and influential businessmen and celebrities would usually be eligible to participate in the Cruise Ship Festival.

Any ordinary person could only watch this kind of event on television.

However, these girls really did not expect to see this kind of big scene when they were simply participating in the Cruise Ship Festival for the first time.

Alice also turned pale in excitement.

"No...no, these cruise ships were all designed by the world's top experts and professionals. These cruise ships must be from Tiescol Island. Each and every single one of these cruise ships is priceless!" Mr. Yan replied enthusiastically.

After all, even though Mr. Yan was very knowledgeable and had already seen much of the world, this was the first time that he was actually witnessing a scene like this.

"Ahhh? Mr. Yan, what is this Tiescol Island that you are talking about?"

The girls asked as they have never heard of it before.

"Tiescol Island is a small island on the sea. I only heard this from my dad. There is an absolutely wealthy and world-class person who bought the entire island. That person built up the entire island and turned it into a place that seemed like a majestic palace on the sea. In short, the entire island was simply very luxurious and grand!"

"Ahhh? We have never heard of that before! Is there really such a big and grand house? What does it look like? Mr. Yan, can you bring us there to take a look at it?"

All the girls asked in anticipation.

Mr. Yan shook his head before he said, "I am afraid that would be impossible. To be honest, my dad was lucky enough to have seen it once. However, he could only stay on the island for less than a few minutes. He was not even allowed to take any pictures of it at all. However, my dad said that this short few minutes on that island was totally worth it in this lifetime. Therefore, I am also very surprised. After all, what is my dad's identity? He was actually seriously in awe and he was filled with praise for that place!"

After Mr. Yan said that, everyone was filled with even more exhilaration and expectations.

Alice even thought to herself that it would simply be perfect if they could be lucky enough to see that island for themselves.

It was a pity.

"But don't be so discouraged. Girls, I will try to bring you there later so that we can take a look at the scenery of the island. However, we can only look at it from a far distance!" Mr. Yan said with a wry smile on his face.

"That's great!"

The girls were all very excited.

At this time, the top and most luxurious cruise ships had already arrived.

Mr. Yan, Alice, and the rest of the girls did not dare to continue speaking loudly anymore and they simply stepped to the side.

"Oh my god! Just take a look at the staff working on the Tiescol Island cruise ships! All of them are wearing extremely expensive clothes!"

"Of course, their clothes are expensive!"

“Damn it! I would be willing to just work as an employee on one of those cruise ships too!”

One of the girls could not help but say.

“Sure enough, there will always be people who are even greater and better than us in this world. Before this, I thought that Gerald was the best and most outstanding person. I only realized that I was wrong when I met Mr. Yan and I opened my eyes to a brand-new world. Now, I have encountered an even greater and more outstanding world today!”

Alice secretly thought the same with a very envious look in her eyes.

As for Mila, she was also clearly in shock. She also took a step backward as she stood at the side.

The cruise ship soon arrived.

There were more than twenty waitresses who came down from the cruise ship successively. They stood on both sides of the port. These waitresses were all dressed in a manner and style that were somewhat similar to those of the European aristocrats in the last century.

After that, a middle-aged man walked out of the cruise ship.

“Ahhh? They seem to be walking towards us!” The girls screamed in delight.

Alice on the other hand, also held her breath at this moment.

Chapter 684

After that, the middle-aged man walked past them directly.

After that, he came before the surprised Mila in a very respectful manner.

“Miss Mila, the eldest young lady sent me here to pick you up!”

The middle-aged man bowed very deeply and he was very polite to Mila. He naturally knew how Mila looked like and where she was waiting at this time.

“Pick...pick me up?”

Mila looked at the dozens of cruise ships that were docking and she was seriously stunned.

Gerald’s sister Jessica, was really rich!

“Of course, Miss Mila. We came here to specially pick you up today. I am really sorry to keep you waiting for a long time!”

As soon as she heard the steward’s words, the girl who was mocking Mila before this was so stunned that her mouth was hanging wide open!

She had been mocking her and making fun of her just now. As a result, she simply did not care about the Cruise Ship Festival at all.

Mr. Yan finally understood that it was no wonder why Mila was so cold and indifferent towards him earlier. He instantly understood the gap between him and Mr. Crawford at this time. He could not help but feel a little foolish for even attempting to show off in front of Mila just now.

As for Alice, she was naturally in disbelief.

“You...why are you picking her up and why are you using such a luxurious entourage to pick her up?”

Alice was really feeling very anxious at this time.

Regardless of whether Mila was her love rival or just an imaginary enemy, no one would ever want their enemy to be so much stronger compared to themselves.

Furthermore, at this time, Mila was so strong to the point that it was already completely incomparable.

This would affect a person's mood directly. This was exactly what Alice was feeling at this moment.

Who was Mila? She was her own love rival, and she was her ex-boyfriend's current girlfriend.

However, she was actually receiving this kind of exclusive treatment now.

She was obviously feeling very jealous and envious.

Therefore, she could not help but asked the steward this question directly.

"Haha! This is our young master, Mr. Crawford's girlfriend. So, we naturally have to give her the best and most extraordinary treatment!"

As for the steward, he only answered Alice's questions because he thought that they were all Mila's friends.

Boom!

Alice was in shock and her face turned pale in an instant.

The thing that she really did not want to hear and the thing that she feared the most finally happened.

She did not even feel so anxious or excited just now.

The reason why she was so eager to confirm these facts with the steward was because she had been wondering whether Mila was receiving this kind of treatment because of Gerald.

After all, Mila's family was not that incredible.

However, what should she do if it was really because of Gerald then? What should she do then? Ahhh!

Alice felt as though she was going insane.

"Is the Mr. Crawford that you are talking about, Gerald Crawford? You are all so powerful, so why are you giving that Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City so much face? Why?!"

Alice was acting a little hysterically at this time.

"That's right, miss. Mr. Crawford is none other than our young master, Mr. Gerald Crawford. This island was bought by Mr. Crawford's elder sister as a place for her to take a short break and vacation!"

The steward replied once again.

"Ahhh! What?"

"Gerald's elder sister is that very powerful world class person?! Does that mean that Gerald can also live on that island if he wanted to then?"

Alice asked and her eyes were red at this time.

"That's right. However, if Mr. Crawford really wanted to live on an island, he could just buy another island of his own. Anyway, that small amount of money would not even be worth a single penny to Mr. Crawford!"

"What?!!!"

At this time, the five girls who were standing in a row had their mouths wide open in shock.

As for Alice, she felt as though she was already out of breath. She felt that she would only be able to completely rid herself of this feeling by jumping into the sea and drowning herself to death.

It turned out that Gerald's identity was not simply Mr. Crawford from Mayberry City...

Chapter 685

They watched Mila leave.

The girls had already stopped talking. Aside from feeling very envious, there was also a hint of jealousy in their eyes.

Only Alice had a very complicated mood at this time.

If only she had just focused on a person's character from the very beginning.

If that was the case, she would have chosen to get into a relationship with Gerald back then.

After all, she had never been in love before at that time. She wanted to get into a relationship. That was the reason why she had asked Naomi to introduce a guy to her.

Naomi even called her the night before her birthday just to talk to her about Gerald.

"Alice, just meet him. He will also come for my birthday party tomorrow. How do I put this? He is a very dedicated and loyal person. He is also very handsome. After all, this will be your first time falling in love. Therefore, you should look for an honest and good man so that you can keep him under control! If that is the case, then Gerald will certainly be the best candidate! He will definitely treat you very well!"

"Pfft! Alright then. Since you already said such good things about him, then I will just meet him tomorrow then! Hehe!"

At this time, Alice was actually looking forward to it. In fact, she even felt that it would not be an issue if Gerald were poor.

However, after meeting them and after hearing all the embarrassing things that Danny had been saying about Gerald, Alice could not stop herself from despising and looking down on Gerald.

She felt that even if she had to find a boyfriend, it would probably be better for her to find a wealthier boyfriend then.

Alice's view and perception of love began to change a little from that moment.

Therefore, she really could have gotten together with Gerald back then.

And everything that belonged to Mila now would have been hers then.

Money would just be a set of numbers to her in future. It would have lost all meaning. She would not even need to save up any money to be able to buy any luxury goods in future.

But...it was a pity that there were no buts!

It was already too late.

Alice clenched her fists tightly and she felt very dissatisfied deep inside.

"Alice, they have already left. So, why don't we leave now too?"

The few girls have already lost their interest to get on the cruise ship.

Otherwise, should they really get on the cruise ship, just so that they could see what other people's island looked like?

Hahaha! That was Gerald's elder sister's island but she could only look at it from the sidelines.

She could not help but feel a little useless as she thought about it.

"I will not resign to fate!"

Alice looked at the cruise ships that were disappearing into the night as she reminded herself secretly.

At this time, Mila had already landed on the island.

The entire island was just as luxurious and grand as Mr. Yan made it out to be. It looked like an extremely large and luxurious palace.

It was so beautiful and shocking!

She had already entered the estate but she would need to need to ride on a special car to get to where Jessica was.

It took about a thirty minutes ride before Mila finally arrived at a villa in the estate.

After that, she stepped out of the car.

"Hurry up and let me have a look! I want to see what my sister-in-law looks like! I want to see her!"

"What's the hurry? She will already be coming here soon."

When Mila stepped out of the car, she saw a girl fighting with a boy.

The girl was trying to snatch a cell phone from the boy.

That boy was a chubby person and Mila had already met him before. He was none other than Yoel.

“Oh! Sister-in-law is here!”

When Yoel saw Mila, he hurriedly ran over to her.

After all, everything that happened during the day had really scared Yoel to death.

“Mm! Yes!”

Chapter 686

Mila hurriedly nodded.

“Ahhh? She is Mila? Godbrother’s girlfriend?”

That girl also ran over to Mila immediately.

She was biting her lip out of curiosity as she looked Mila up and down.

She looked like she was about eighteen years old. She was very adorable and she was also quite beautiful.

“My name is Melinda. Hello, Mila!”

Melinda said as she shook hands with Mila.

It seemed as though the both of them had a pretty good impression of each other.

Jessica was obviously looking for Mila for some reason. So, Melinda and Yoel did not say much and Mila went in directly.

“The eldest young lady took Melinda and Yoel in as her godsister and godbrother. Yoel is in a much better situation compared to Melinda, who is a little more pitiful. She was abandoned when she was three years old and Miss Crawford adopted her and brought her back with her. She loved her and doted on her very much. Melinda is usually very naughty but she actually has a very kind heart!”

The steward hurriedly explained as he led Mila in.

After that, they came to a very luxurious study room.

The steward knocked on the door.

“Come in!”

Mila walked into the room alone.

She saw Jessica lying on a recliner on an open-air rooftop, with a glass of red wine in her hand as she looked out.

“Hello, Jessica!” Mila greeted as she nodded.

“Mila, you don’t need to be so polite with me. I understand your situation too. You can just treat me as your own elder sister. So, why don’t we chat a little then? Besides that, you are my brother’s girlfriend. Don’t you think that I am obligated to entertain you because of your relationship to my brother? Sit down!”

Jessica put down her wine glass before she stood up.

After that, she smiled slightly as she looked at Mila.

“Sis, what do you want to talk about?” Mila asked.

“Well, although I have already gotten some intel, I think that it is still better for you to tell me everything in person. So, why don’t we talk about how you and Gerald met then?” Jessica replied.

Mila could not understand Jessica’s intentions and what she meant.

So, she simply told Jessica about how she met Gerald and also the details of their experiences together.

After listening to Mila, Jessica simply nodded and said, “So, you mean to say that the both of you have never experienced or gone through anything unforgettable together then. The both of you simply met just like that?”

“Yes, but sis, I think that the most important thing is for two people to be in love when they are together. Why do they have to experience or go through some unforgettable things together? In contrast, I feel that every moment with Gerald is unforgettable because of how he loves me and because of the way he treats me!”

When Mila heard Jessica’s question, she could not help but feel a little insecure deep in her heart.

This was because Jessica’s words pierced directly through her heart.

“Then, let me ask you another question. You are in a relationship with Gerald. So, have you ever thought of getting married to Gerald in future? If that is the case, are you thinking about it now or have you already thought about it before this and feel that both you and Gerald were destined to be together from the very beginning?” Jessica asked.

Mila immediately understood the meaning behind Jessica’s words.

If she were just together with Gerald to be in a relationship with him, then Jessica would not put too much thought into this matter.

However, if Mila wanted to get married to Gerald and subsequently become a member of the Crawford family, then things would not be that simple anymore. Moreover, Jessica was also afraid that Mila was only in a relationship with Gerald because of his money.

“You are also a very intelligent girl, Mila. So, I believe that you understand what I mean. You should also know very well that Gerald can actually be very silly and gullible when it comes to the relationship between a man and a woman. Gerald had been missing out on a lot of love and affection when he was younger because of certain rules and regulations in our family. So, he would feel exceptionally touched whenever a girl treated him well, even if it was just a very simple gesture!”

“I actually want to find out whether Gerald really loves you and I also want to find out what you like about Gerald. Of course, that would depend on whether you have any intentions to get married to Gerald. I will not ask any further questions if the both of you do not have any intentions of getting married. However, if you have the intention of marrying Gerald, then I will have to ask you a lot of questions then. This is because there are really a lot of rules and regulations in the Crawford family. These rules are also very strict! Therefore, sometimes, I think that it is better to experience short-term pain rather than long-term pain!” Jessica replied.

“Sis, do you mean to say that Gerald and I will not end up getting married in the end? Do you believe that I only got in a relationship with Gerald because of money?” Mila asked.

Jessica smiled wryly before she said, “To be honest, yes. At the very least, based on some of the information that I obtained, that seems to be the case. Of course, I also know that you have an outstanding personality and character and you will not lie to Gerald. However, I am afraid that my parents will never allow you to get married to Gerald. After all, you have only witnessed the tip of the iceberg of the Crawford family’s strength and power. Therefore, you can already imagine how powerful and influential the Crawford family is. So, the Crawford family naturally have their own way of doing things and their own set of rules!”

Chapter 687

Mila could clearly understand what Jessica was trying to tell her now.

Jessica had also given her a very clear hint.

Mila could not help but feel that her heart was really in a lot of pain at this moment.

She originally thought that things would be very simple and that she would end up getting married to Gerald and that they would be able spend the rest of their lives together then.

However, looking at the way it was, it seemed as though this was completely impossible.

Gerald did not tell her everything in the past. Therefore, Mila only thought that he was just a very wealthy and influential person in Mayberry City.

But how would any ordinary person possibly know anything about his true identity and background?

“So, Mila, I hope that you will put some thoughts into this matter when you go back. You should think about how you are going to carry on your relationship with Gerald and which direction you would want to take in this relationship.”

Jessica patted Mila on her shoulder before she said, “You can stay here on this island tonight. I will bring someone to send you home tomorrow. Besides that, you can come to my Tiescol Island whenever you want to in future. However, Mila, there is something that you have to promise me. It is regarding the thing that I have mentioned to you before. I hope that you will not tell Gerald that the both of us have met up with one another today!”

Mila naturally nodded in response.

It was obvious that Jessica actually really liked Mila. However, Jessica was also helpless when it came to certain matters. The specific end result would depend entirely on Mila and Gerald’s reaction and decision.

Jessica was only telling them about this matter in advance because she loved and cared about them.

That night, Mila could not fall asleep at all.

She had thought of calling Gerald several times. However, she could not help but think of the fact that Gerald was always helping her from the very beginning.

After all, from the beginning to the end, she had not been able to do anything for Gerald at all. Instead, Gerald was the one who had been doing everything for her all this while!

It was the same case now. Mila had required Jessica's help even when she was in Hong Kong. Otherwise, she would not even have been able to deal with someone like Hallie on her own.

If she really wanted to be together with Gerald and spend the rest of her life with him, then she would have to learn how to be independent. That way, she would be able to share Gerald's worries and help him in future instead of adding to his burden.

Mila could only silently remind herself...

At the same time, Gerald had just gotten into his bed.

He picked up his cell phone and he was going to call Mila, as it has already become a habit for him to do so.

The both of them have not contacted each other for two to three days now. He would be lying if he said that he did not miss her at all.

However, after thinking about it, Gerald decided to forget it. After all, Mila might still be angry. He would only explain things to her in person when he headed to Hong Kong in a few days.

He would also stay with Mila in Hong Kong for a few days then.

However, Gerald still took the initiative to send a text message to Mila to tell her to rest earlier and so forth.

Ugh!

The matter had already been settled and Gerald would get into Salford University tomorrow as a transfer student. He would then use his identity as a transfer student to find out more information about that girl.

The university also paid a lot of attention to this matter after finding out about Gerald's identity. Of course, Gerald told the university to maintain a low profile and he did not want the university to publicize this matter. After all, he was not really a transfer student.

As for the class? Gerald was assigned to the same class as Marven.

Marven was the illegal tour guide's son. He was a chubby and intelligent young man.

Gerald made an appointment with Marven early in the morning the next day and they headed out together.

"Hey! Young master, this is our university! Let me show you around our university today!"

"I am not a young master. You can just call me Gerald..." Gerald replied with a wry smile on his face.

"Alright then, Young Master Gerald!"

Gerald was speechless.

After that, the both of them headed to their classroom together.

At this time, there were already many people inside the classroom.

As soon as they saw Marven leading Gerald into the classroom, everyone immediately knew that this was the transfer student that the teacher had mentioned would be officially joining their class today.

The teacher was also waiting inside the classroom since early in the morning.

“Ger...Gerald, your seat has already been arranged in advance. You can take a seat first!” The teacher said.

Chapter 688

In fact, Gerald had already mentioned that he would not need any special attention or care from the university. After all, he was simply coming here under the pretext of a transfer student for a few days.

However, Gerald was obviously receiving preferential treatment.

He was sitting at the spot that was directly at the front of the classroom.

“Teacher, that seat does not belong to him! It belongs to Fabian. Why do you have to give him Fabian’s seat?!”

At this time, a girl suddenly stood up and asked disgruntledly as she pointed at Gerald.

“Isabelle, Gerald has just transferred here. How can you speak in that manner? Gerald can just sit here first. I will arrange another seat for Fabian when he comes back from his competition.”

The teacher replied helplessly with a wry smile on her face.

“Why?!”

Isabelle continued asking anxiously as she stared at Gerald with anger and disgust.

“Isabelle, you are the class representative. So, why are you speaking in that manner? Alright then, it is already decided!”

After the teacher was done speaking, she smiled at Gerald before walking out of the classroom.

After that, the class was filled with the classmates' whispering amongst themselves.

Most of them were talking about the fact that it seemed as though Gerald would not have a good time here and so forth, since he had already offended the class representative.

After all, people generally tend to bully strangers.

This was true no matter whether it was in school or at the workplace.

So, everyone instinctively displayed an inexplicably hostile attitude towards Gerald, who was the new transfer student, as though they were afraid that Gerald would try and snatch things from them after coming here.

However, Gerald did not care too much about all this.

After all, Gerald was very clear about his purpose for coming here. Therefore, he naturally would not pay any attention to this kind of trivial matter.

Isabelle said many horrible and offensive things to Gerald after he sat down. Gerald could not be bothered about it.

When class was over, Isabelle whispered some things to some of her friends. After glancing at Gerald, Isabelle and her friends headed to the washroom together.

As for the other students in the class, none of them were willing to talk to Gerald at all.

"Mr. Craw...umm I mean Gerald!"

Amongst all of the classmates, Marven was the only one who knew that Gerald had a very strong and powerful background. If it weren't because of Gerald's refusal to reveal his true identity, Marven would have already stood up and fought back for Gerald when Isabelle was attacking him just now.

“You don’t have to take the class representative’s words too seriously. There is something wrong with her! In fact, there is something seriously wrong with her!” Marven said,

“Hahaha. It’s okay. By the way. What is wrong with the class representative, Isabelle?” Gerald asked as he smiled wryly.

“Cough. Cough. Well, how should I put this? If I were to say that she is snobbish and would stand up for what is right, that would not be right. However, it would also not be right to say that she is selfless and treats everyone equally. She would only stand up for just one person, and she would only treat one person very well! However, she does not attach any importance to anyone else at all. Take me for instance. She has never paid any attention to me or any of the other boys in our class!” Marven replied.

“Oh? Don’t tell me that the only person that she cares about in her heart is that guy called Fabian?”

Gerald replied with a smile on his face as he shook his head helplessly.

After all, Gerald could see that he had incurred Isabelle’s hatred and dissatisfaction because it seemed as though he had taken the seat of this person called Fabian. That was the reason why Isabelle had begun targeting him.

“That’s right. It’s none other than Fabian. Oh my. I don’t know what is wrong with Isabelle. She has been completely smitten by Fabian and she is absolutely in love with him just because Fabian’s family is a little rich and likes showing off. Hence, Isabelle has already been interested in Fabian ever since her freshman year and she had been pursuing him until her senior year! All that she cares about is Fabian. Not to mention you, there was one time when Isabelle slapped one of her good friends who had grown up together with her, just because she said that Fabian was not a good person. This greatly stunned her friend! So, you can just imagine how obsessed Isabelle is over Fabian then. This is the only reason why she is treating you like this now!”

“Well, it seems as though I should avoid her in future then!” Gerald replied with a wry smile on his face.

After all, Gerald was here to look for someone and he did not want to cause any trouble while he was here.

As he was still talking to Marvin, Isabelle and her friends returned to the classroom...

Chapter 689

Isabelle walked towards Gerald angrily as her girlfriends tagged along.

Gerald had placed his backpack on the table at this time.

After that, one of the girls walked over to him with her arms crossed in front of her chest. She pretended as though nothing was happening as she pulled Gerald's backpack and dropped it to the ground.

At the same time, one of the other girls hurriedly and obviously deliberately, stepped on Gerald's backpack.

"Oh! I am so sorry, Gerald. I accidentally stepped on your backpack. It is dirty now. Should I wash it for you?"

The girl asked as she looked at Gerald with an apologetic expression on her face.

Gerald obviously knew that the girls were doing this intentionally. He could only think that he was really unlucky to have offended a group of girls on his first day here.

Gerald could fight them back easily.

However, Gerald did not come here to show off. Therefore, Gerald could not really be bothered with these girls.

He only shook his head with a wry smile on his face as he said, "Thanks, but you don't have to do that!"

After he was done speaking, Gerald stretched out his hand as he tried to grab his backpack!

"Don't have to? How can we do that? Isabelle, what do you think we should do then?"

The girl with the long hair asked as she looked at Isabelle.

“That’s easy!”

After she was done speaking, Isabelle took a water bottle before she poured water directly on Gerald’s backpack.

Many of their classmates watched this scene unfolding before them in delight. This was a very cruel way for Isabelle to display her power and authority in this class.

“Hmph. Stella’s family is very powerful in Salford. Stella is also good friends with Isabelle. It is obvious that Stella is trying to get justice for Isabelle!”

“That’s right. This guy is really unfortunate. This is simply great. He did not only offend Isabelle, but he also offended Stella too! There will be good shows for us to watch in future!”

The classmates discussed this matter amongst themselves in a low voice.

After that, Stella cast a look at Isabelle, as though she was trying to prove her point.

Look, Isabelle! He does not even have the guts to fight back.

After that, the girls returned to their own respective seats.

“Gerald, Stella has a rather strong family background but I think that they do not have as much money as you do. Moreover, it seems as though they were all bullying you on purpose!” Marven told Gerald in a low voice.

Gerald smiled before he shook his head and said, “It’s okay!”

After he was done speaking, Gerald picked up his wet backpack before placing it on the windowsill to dry it.

After that, he asked Marven to accompany him to the washroom.

“Damn it! He is not even angry after we did that to him!”

One of the girls was completely at a loss for words after seeing that Gerald was not angry, and he did not even feel humiliated at all even after what they did. Instead, he could still smile as though nothing was wrong.

Stella and Isabelle were also feeling a little anxious.

At this time, their joint classes were about to begin. After the short farce, everyone headed to the classroom immediately.

Gerald also pretended to head to the joint classroom to keep up with his act. He did not even bring any books along with him.

When everyone was walking towards the joint classroom together, they were all chatting enthusiastically amongst themselves. However, as soon as they entered the joint classroom, everyone suddenly closed their mouths and they were all completely silent as though they had already arranged to do so in advance.

Even Stella and Isabelle were also completely silent at this time.

Gerald had also been chatting with Marven as he walked into the joint classroom.

When he took a look at the front of the classroom, he saw that the teacher had not arrived in the classroom yet.

But why was everyone so quiet and well-behaved then?

However, Gerald quietly understood the reason when he looked at the first row of the joint classroom.

There were two girls sitting in the front row of the joint classroom.

They were both exceptionally beautiful.

In fact, Stella and Isabelle could also be considered as very beautiful girls.

However, they would fall behind if they were to be compared to these two girls.

At this time, the two girls had also obviously noticed Gerald's gaze.

Chapter 690

When the girl who was more beautiful raised her head and saw Gerald, she looked away in a cold and nonchalant manner.

The other girl was a little surprised when she saw Gerald.

Marven nudged Gerald, to give him a hint that this was it.

How could Gerald possibly not recognize them?

These two girls were not just any ordinary passers-by to him. These were the capable and powerful girls that he met up on the mountain that day. That was the girl who looked a little like Queta.

However, Gerald did not continue staring at them.

Instead, acted nonchalantly as he quickly withdrew his gaze.

Gerald sat one row behind the two girls together with Marven.

Could she really be from the Fenderson family?

The more he looked at her, the more Gerald felt that the girl really looked like Queta. The girl named Jasmine was really very cold and arrogant. Gerald noticed that even though she was really beautiful, she did not seem to portray much emotions or expression on her face at all.

However, her companion seemed to be much more active and approachable.

Marven enjoyed doing funny things and making jokes to draw other people's attention to him when they were in class.

That girl laughed a couple of times because of Marven's jokes and silly acts.

Very soon, the first two classes ended just like that.

University classes generally ended really quickly.

The two girls also left immediately.

"Jasmine, do you think that guy is interested in you? Hehehe. When we ran into him the last time, he was also staring directly at you! When he saw you in the classroom just now, he was also staring at you and he had his gaze fixed on you! I can guarantee that he is definitely in love with you, just like all the other boys!"

The two girls continued chatting amongst themselves as they walked towards the upper floor of the campus.

"I think that he is looking at you instead!"

Jasmine blushed in embarrassment. It was obvious that she was very sensitive and shy when it came to this kind of topic.

“Pfft! You might not know this but I was actually glancing at the guy from the corner of my eye during class just now. I realize that Chubby Wadley and that guy were both observing you and secretly looking at you! That Chubby Wadley used to hide at the back to peek at us in class in the past. This is simply perfect now! He has a companion do the same thing as him now!”

The girls knew Marven’s name but they were already used to calling him Chubby Wadley. If Marven knew that the two goddesses would always make fun of him when they were free, he would certainly be feeling very ecstatic.

“I am not worried about Chubby Wadley at all. After all, the reason why he tried to get closer to the both of us in the past was simply because he was a little curious about us. After that, when he found out that we enjoy having fun, he simply wants to get some business for his father who is working as a tour guide. After all, it is not that easy for their family to make a living. So, Chubby Wadley is actually a very filial child!” Jasmine replied.

“So, you speak louder on purpose sometimes just because you think that he is a very filial kid?” The girl asked.

Jasmine nodded.

“Actually, I am a little worried about that guy next to Chubby Wadley. I don’t know why but he gives me a very different vibe and feeling from the very first time I saw him. I don’t know how to explain what kind of feeling I have. Mindy, do you feel the same way too?”

“Ahhh? Me? How do I put this? Perhaps maybe just a little. However, it is obviously not as serious as you make it out to be! I just think that he should be a pretty interesting person!”

Mindy replied as she grinned.

“I think that we should be more careful. We should not think of causing any harm to others, but we should also attach more importance to defending ourselves. It is so difficult for us to finally have this opportunity to come out and study. Therefore, we should be more careful and alert!” The girl said.

“Alright then, I...ehh? Jasmine, look! It seems as though Chubby Wadley and that guy are behind us!”

Mindy said in a lower voice.

“We don’t have to care about them. Come, let’s go and get a drink!”

After Jasmine was done speaking, the two girls walked into a café together.

“Ehh! Gerald, look! Isn’t that the goddess? It seems like they are going to grab some coffee!”

Marven and Gerald did not notice the two beautiful girls just now. Gerald only noticed the two girls when Marven mentioned this matter to him.

“Hehe! Why don’t we follow them into the café so that we can eavesdrop on their conversation then?” Marven asked.

“I don’t think that is such a good idea. What if they notice that the both of us are following them on purpose? That will not be good then!”

Gerald replied as he smiled wryly.

“Don’t worry, Gerald. As long as I am around, they will not find out or notice that the both of us are following them on purpose! I used to eavesdrop on their conversation in the past and they do not even know that I was doing that. Hahaha! My dad was able to earn a lot of money from them because of that! So, you don’t have to worry about anything at all! Come, let’s go!”

Marven said as he patted his chest.

Chapter 691

Not sure what else to say, Gerald simply followed Marven into the café.

“F*ck! They’re really tailing us!” whispered the cold and unapproachable Mindy as she saw Marven and his friend enter the café through the corner of her eye.

“Looks like I’ll need to investigate that man’s background as well!” whispered Jasmine—who was sitting across the table—in return.

“There’s no need for that, I think. Judging by his looks alone, he seems to be the honest kind of guy. You know, the type of person who’ll immediately spill the truth out when he’s enquired about it? If you ask me, I say you’re just being overly sensitive about this.”

“You’ll definitely scare the cr*p out of him, just like you do to all other men. I mean let’s be honest, how many men haven’t fled for the hills after meeting you? And I’m not even talking about those trying to woo you! I’m referring to those who’ve had an interest in me!”

“And while it’s true that we can now come out to study and get a degree and all, is there really a difference between us and the other women who just stay at home?” replied Mindy sounding slightly displeased.

“I can’t believe you actually said that! If grandpa heard that, he’d definitely yell at you without a doubt! In fact, it wouldn’t be farfetched to assume that he’d even stop paying for your tuition fees! Remember what he said! We have enemies lurking behind every corner, so you better watch out!” reminded Jasmine.

“I get it, I get it... I guess you’re right...”

After that, Mindy simply stopped talking.

Meanwhile, Gerald and Marven had just taken a seat at the table next to theirs. Quite honestly, Gerald wasn’t looking forward to any of this.

Deep down, he had a feeling that something set him apart from these people. In fact, his gut was telling him that that would be the eventual cause of their imminent quarrel.

However, Marven's confidence alone made it extremely difficult for Gerald to turn his offer down.

While his ears were perked, Marven was disappointed when he realized that the girls weren't chatting at all.

At long last, however, he was finally able to hear them say a single phrase.

"Let's go!"

As soon as he heard that, Marven watched as both of the girls finished the rest of their coffee before getting up and leaving the café. As per usual, Jasmine's face was stone-cold.

This time, however, Gerald received a scornful glare from Mindy before the two girls left for good.

"Wow! She was totally checking you out, Gerald!" said Marven sounding genuinely impressed.

"What a pity though... We didn't even get a chance to hear them speak at all! It hardly makes any sense! Why did they choose to whisper to each other this time around? I swear I could hear them speaking normally the last time I tailed them!" added Marven with a sigh. What a let-down.

Gerald simply patted his friend on the shoulder while shaking his head in sympathy.

Regardless, if his hunch was correct, then their plan had already been uncovered by the girls! Sadly, Marven truly seemed to be completely oblivious to this.

After parting ways with him, Gerald didn't even bother attending his afternoon lectures, opting instead to return home.

It was around then when he realized that he really had to find a chance to have a chat with Jasmine.

As he thought about it, his phone started ringing.

To his surprise, the caller ID displayed a special number. It was a call from the Drake & Tyson duo. Since they rarely called him unless there was truly an emergency, Gerald immediately picked the call up.

“What is it?”

“Mr. Crawford! You need to return home right this instant! A few people have been tailing you and I can only assume that they’ve found out about your real identity!” replied Drake, sounding rather urgent.

“...Huh?”

After hearing that, Gerald slowly tried to look behind him without making it too obvious. However, all he could see was a crowded street. He was still on campus after all, so sights like this were common.

The Drake & Tyson duo had been able to tell that he was being tailed through the use of the highly-sophisticated safety device which Gerald always carried around. Through it, they were able to constantly monitor his movements and alert him to any peculiarities they detected.

“I’ve sent some men over, Mr. Crawford! Please refrain from lingering around outside any longer!”

“Roger!” replied Gerald before hanging up. He then immediately hailed a taxi to head home.

He had been careful not to reveal his identity to anyone, right? Who on earth could be tailing him?

“Big brother! That kid’s slipped away!”

Chapter 692

The voice had come from a young man who was part of a group consisting of similarly aged people. All five of them bore equally cold and murderous gazes as they stood within the sea of people.

“Why are all of you still standing there? Go after him!” yelled one of the young men who seemed to be the group’s leader.

However, before they even could make their next move, the group of five realized that they had already been surrounded! A fight soon broke out and chaos ensued, preventing them from continuing with their mission.

“F*ck off!” roared the leader angrily as he shoved his unknown assailants aside, desperately trying to escape the havoc.

By the time he was finally able to free himself, Gerald was nowhere to be seen.

Enraged, the group’s leader then began stomping his foot against the tar road to release his frustration.

As that was happening, within a manor well-hidden from the public view, a group of teenagers approached a butler before one of them asked, “Where’s the young mistress?”

“She’s at the dojo,” replied the butler.

After having their question answered, the group of twelve then began making their way there.

Meanwhile, Jasmine was busy sparring others in the dojo. Her hair had been tied up in a ponytail and she sported a crisp, white, martial arts robe.

Her opponents were seven young men who usually ran missions together with the five others who had been sent to chase after Gerald. Though she was clearly outnumbered, Jasmine was still the one doing most of the beating up.

Mindy was there as well, though she was simply munching away on potato chips while occasionally cheering Jasmine on as she continued punching the wind out of her opponents.

“You’re getting increasingly better at this, young mistress! Judging by how quickly your progress is coming along, soon, I don’t think that I’ll even have anything more to teach you!” said her master who had been observing her spar from the very beginning.

As soon as the master’s sentence ended, the group of twelve from earlier arrived at the dojo. Upon seeing Jasmine, all twelve of them bowed in unison.

All of the youngsters in that dozen were world-renown champions in Taekwondo and Karate. They were all Jasmine’s masters as well.

“Hah, you’re being too humble... As for the seven of you, go ahead and have a rest first!”

“You’re pretty powerful, aren’t you? Despite being severely outnumbered, you still managed to come out on top! I wish I was as strong as you!” exclaimed Mindy.

“Well, I did try to get you to learn with me... As usual, however, you were too lazy to even try in the first place!” replied Jasmine with a wry smile.

“Humph! But of course I’m not going to train like you! After all, I think I’m more suited to being a quiet and innocent little girl. Plus, it’s not like I have your level of stamina! Still, it’s rather hilarious how you look just like a defenseless damsel in distress when those men from before could barely lay a finger on you! It reminds me of how you pulverized the lower halves of those students back then!” said Mindy between giggles.

“Hey, they asked for it! That’s enough, I don’t want to talk about that anymore!”

As Mindy continued smiling, she turned to look at the five young men who had just entered the dojo and were now standing at the side of the ring.

“What’s the matter?” she asked.

“Young mistress! We’ve failed our mission!” announced the group’s leader.

“Failed? Well I can’t say that I’m surprised! Just how many missions have the twelve of you even managed to complete up till this point?” replied Jasmine as she looked at the seven others whom she had sparred against earlier.

“We have a solid reason as to why we failed this time! While we were going after him, a group of men attacked us! By the time we finally managed to escape the chaos, the target had already left in a taxi!” explained the young man in a rather desperate voice.

“Hahaha... It’s alright. Honestly, I was hoping that all of you would fail anyway. Also Jasmine? I really think you’re overthinking this. I’m telling you, that guy was simply Marven’s friend. They probably just found you incredibly attractive so I see no reason for you to go full Sherlock on him. Besides, I want to talk to Marven too!”

“Don’t you even dare or I’m telling grandpa that you keep talking with random outsiders! You’ll be grounded for sure once that happens!” yelled Jasmine angrily.

“Fine, fine, I was just joking, alright?” responded Mindy.

“Regardless, for now, you guys should just let the matter rest. There’s no need to make a commotion out of this yet!” replied Jasmine.

“Understood, young mistress!”

Pursing her lips, Mindy then walked over to the trashcan to dispose of her half-finished bag of potato chips.

Noticing this, Jasmine simply shook her head as she approached the sulking girl.

“What’s the matter? Are you honestly angry just because I yelled at you?”

“No I’m not... I’m just slightly frustrated! Why can’t I be like everyone else? This cr*p has been going on since we were children! Just why?!” said Mindy as tears began welling up in her eyes.

When she heard Mindy's words, Jasmine's expression immediately darkened as she was reminded of their childhood.

Chapter 693

"Jasmine? Mindy! Where are you two going?" shouted an old man rather coldly.

"We're going out to play, grandpa!"

"No you aren't! Both of you, get back here right this instant! These kids are never to leave the house, not even a single step! Do I make myself clear?" shouted the old man as he turned to look at a few servants.

"Understood, master!"

"But... but why, grandpa? Why can the rest of our friends go out to play? Why can't we do the same? We want to go to kindergarten and have fun with our friends!" replied Jasmine who was around the age of six then. Despite her young age, she was already starting to question her grandpa's decisions.

The only response she received, however, was a tight slap across her face!

That was the first time Jasmine had ever been hit.

Their grandpa loved them dearly. Apart from the stars and the moon, he would do his best to give them anything they pleased. In all honesty, Mindy and Jasmine were blessed with the greatest gift that any child could ever hope for.

However, all that came at a cost. Since birth, they had been forbidden from ever interacting with the outside world.

Once she finally felt the impact of the slap, young Jasmine would then break into tears.

The slap would remain fresh in her memory, deterring her from ever leaving the house for a good few years. However, the outside world was simply too mystifying and full of wonders. Eventually, her curiosity got the better of her.

She was twelve when she and Mindy finally attempted sneaking out again to have a peek at the world beyond their house's compound.

Their plan, however, was discovered by grandpa.

It was that day when grandpa issued the strictest rule their family had ever seen.

Despite being only twelve, Jasmine was whipped mercilessly by him! She was whipped so badly that by the time her grandpa was done, the skin on her back had split and she was bleeding badly.

However, that moment was equally punishing for her grandpa as well, the old man almost allowing himself to shed tears of grief as he continued whipping his beloved granddaughter.

"...Grandpa wants to let you go out to play as well... But... But you have to remember who we are! We have enemies everywhere! Please understand that what I'm doing is for your own good! Why can't you kids understand that?!"

To this very day, the scars from that punishment remained on Mindy and Jasmine's backs, and they would forever haunt them, a constant reminder of the shadows of their childhood.

It was only when Jasmine and Mindy were old enough and had more common sense regarding how the world worked when their grandpa finally allowed them to pursue their education beyond the house's walls. They were finally getting a chance to see the outside world!

Of course, there was one golden rule to that. They weren't allowed to befriend any outsiders.

Thus, just like many of the other Fendersons, the two girls had an incomplete childhood and the beginning of their lives were left completely stunted.

This was all the 'enemy's' fault whom their grandpa kept mentioning about.

Though he kept emphasizing on the dangers their enemy posed, their grandpa never actually told either of the girls what was actually going on.

Being the traditional-minded male he was, he simply assumed that they didn't need to bother themselves with the issue since they were both girls.

It was because of that that Jasmine felt so bitter about the whole thing.

Why weren't they allowed to know? When their childhood had been completely taken away from them just as much as the previous males in the family? Shouldn't they have just been allowed to have an actual childhood then?

Her dissatisfaction made her strive to become great in every aspect she could think of. She wanted to prove that she was no less worthy than a man!

Back in the present, Jasmine took in a deep breath before looking at Mindy.

"That's quite enough, Mindy... There's no need for us to look back at the past. After all, we're in much better positions today!"

"Yeah, yeah, I know Jasmine... I know how you hate the enemy much more than I ever could... Either way, we'll someday make them pay dearly for all the suffering they've put us through!" yelled Mindy decisively.

"We definitely will! Though grandpa still isn't willing to tell us the truth about the enemy, we've been preparing for that day for a long time now. That day will definitely come soon!" replied Jasmine as she patted Mindy on the shoulder.

The next day, Gerald arrived at his classroom only to find that Isabelle was the first person he would see.

To be quite honest, she looked pretty decent. It was her temper that put him off the most. However, she seemed to be in a rather good mood today, even joking around with a few of her friends.

The moment she saw Gerald, however, she rolled her eyes before standing up.

“Ah, Marven and Gerald, what a coincidence! Both of you should have seen the cart filled with bottled water on your way up, right? They’re for our class so both of you should bring them up for us!”

Hearing that, the rest of their classmates pursed their lips, trying hard not to smirk.

Naturally, Gerald was slightly pissed at this. He was well aware that she was trying to pull a prank on them.

Marven himself hardly made any effort to conceal his irritation. “Why only us? There’s no way in hell that only the two of us will be able to lift all that up the stairs!”

“I beg your pardon?”

“He said, we won’t be able to lift all that up the stairs!” said Gerald as he repeated Marven’s reply.

Chapter 694

After saying that, he went to his table to take a seat.

Isabelle almost exploded in anger after hearing their responses. Their retaliation was completely unexpected! Especially from Gerald. He had been a thorn in her side from the very beginning. His reluctance to obey her bidding was akin to stepping on a landmine.

How dare he challenge her pride in front of everyone else!

She was so pissed that she immediately tossed her tumbler in his direction! Thankfully, its liquid contents were only able to splash on the floor in front of his desk.

“Repeat that one more time to my face! Go on! I dare you!”

Gerald simply stared at the fuming girl. In the end, she was just another spoiled upper-class brat who thought the entire world revolved around her.

“With pleasure! I could say it ten more times if you need me to! Listen closely now, wouldn’t want you to miss it this time! I said that we won’t be able to lift all that up the stairs! What else do you want from us?” replied Gerald, the irritation in his voice extremely apparent.

After all, he had already grown accustomed to dealing with such people.

As soon as she heard his reply, Isabelle immediately stormed out of the room, smoke coming out of her ears.

Stella, who had been observing their entire interaction, instantly shot a death glare at Gerald.

“I-it’s all over for us now! Isabelle’s definitely getting some people to beat us up this very moment!” said Marven, his voice hinting that he was moments away from wetting his pants.

“Like I care. I’m not afraid of her!” replied Gerald as he tried to calm his friend down.

“I-I heard that her cousin’s from the sports team! He’s pretty bad*ss!” added Marven, his voice quivering tremendously.

Gerald himself was thinking that this was way too early into the game for him to lose his cool. He needed a way to redirect all this anger so that he could keep a clear head.

If she really was sending some people over to beat him up, that would probably be his best opportunity to vent out his frustration by beating the cr*p out of them instead!

It wasn’t long before the thundering of several footsteps could be heard running up the corridor.

When the class's door was opened, a group of men burst in! Isabelle had indeed managed to gather quite a number of underlings.

"Hah! She really did gather people to beat them up! I knew Isabelle wasn't going to let Gerald slip away unbruised! Looks like we're going to have a free show!" said one of the students in the class.

"Your sister is my sister as well, brother! Who's the lucky b*stard that gets to be beaten up today?!" roared a man as he stood before the class while scanning through the faces of all the students. He seemed to be talking to Isabelle's brother who stepped in front of the group at that moment. Her brother seemed to be the group's leader.

"Oh gosh, he's so tall and handsome!" squealed a few of the present girls as they eyed the group's leader.

"I recognize him! While he's a newly transferred student, i've heard that Wyatt treats him respectfully!"

As the girls continued whispering among themselves, Isabelle lifted one of her crossed arms and pointed at Gerald.

"Warren! Wyatt! That's the b*stard I was talking about!" screamed the angered girl.

Hearing that, Gerald got up from his seat, only to momentarily freeze when he finally paid attention to the group leader's face.

The leader was equally as stunned as Gerald was.

"Warren?"

"Gerald?"

Warren was completely taken aback. After all, he, Maia, and a few other girls had been sent here under the guise of transfer students to undergo a mission.

But why was Gerald here? It just simply didn't make any sense!

Seeing how stunned Warren was, Wyatt then curiously asked, "Hmm? Do you know that guy, Warren?"

Isabelle herself was starting to get nervous. If both of them were acquainted with each other, did that mean that Gerald would get away scot-free this time?

"In a way, I suppose!" replied Warren.

It was obvious that Warren wasn't going to be beating Gerald up any time soon. After all, Gerald knew about his true identity.

If Gerald leaked that information out, he'd surely be done for. What more, Maia and the other girls were still in the school as well!

'D*mn it, why did this have to happen...' Warren thought to himself.

"What a coincidence! Come on over, Gerald! Let's you and me have a little chat in private!" said Warren.

Chapter 695

With that, both of them then left the classroom.

"I thought you were here on vacation. Pray tell, why are you doing in this university?"

"To get an education of course. Actually, I should be asking you that question. What are you doing here?" replied Gerald.

While they didn't particularly hold any grudges against each other, Warren didn't particularly like being around Gerald, and the same went vice versa.

“Since we’re already talking about it, I’ll just make things clear to you now. For starters, I’m not the only one here. Maia and a few others came together with me. I can’t tell you what exactly we’re doing here, but if you know what’s best for you, you’d better keep your mouth zipped tight when it comes to us. Our identity is not to be revealed under any circumstances! This is my first and final warning, so you better remember that!”

Once he was done with his explanation, Warren then turned around before walking away from Gerald.

‘Maybe they’re here because of a mission? Not that I really care,’ Gerald thought to himself as he laughed bitterly while shaking his head.

Just as he was about to return to class, he felt a tug on his sleeve. When he turned back to look, Gerald noticed a rather shy-looking girl, meekly holding on to his sleeve. Despite her shyness, she was holding on to him pretty tightly.

“H-hey there, handsome! We’re currently collecting donations for charity! Regardless of how much you donate, we won’t complain! We’re just trying to help children in the countryside who can’t afford to pay for their education!”

Seeing that she was volunteering for a selfless cause, Gerald felt bad even thinking about turning her down. What more, she was obviously fighting against her shyness just to gather more funds for the charity.

The money wasn’t going to be spent wastefully either. Similar to Scothow Elementary, the school he had built himself, the money would be used for a good cause.

Reassured that donating would be the right thing to do, he then nodded to the girl’s delight.

“H-how much would you like to donate?” asked the shy girl.

At that moment, a few other girls who were also working as volunteers began flocking around him. They had noticed that one of them had managed to get someone to donate, so all of them had bright smiles on their faces.

“Hmm... Let’s go with fifty thousand dollars!” replied Gerald with a chuckle.

“...W-what? Fifty thousand?”

All of the girls were equally taken aback by his response.

Donation campaigns like this were common across most universities. They were usually aimed to help poorer students living in the countryside.

Such campaigns tended to garner quite a bit of support, and most of the students from this university were similarly willing to partake in donating for a good cause.

While this was true, the majority of the students would only be willing to donate a couple of bucks at best, the common trend being less than a hundred dollars per donation. Not that they were complaining. After all, it was the thought that counts.

However, to think that they were now being presented with a fifty thousand dollar donation...

These girls had been working hard to collect donations for at least half a month now. This was their first time meeting such a generous student!

“M-mister! Are you really serious about donating fifty thousand dollars?”

The girls could hardly believe their ears.

Gerald simply laughed in response as he pulled his credit card out, ready to make his donation.

Once they presented him with the transaction machine, Gerald began pressing its buttons without the slightest hesitation.

“A receipt for a transaction of five hundred thousand dollars!” announced the machine in a robotic voice.

“...Huh?”

The jaws of all the girls were now hanging wide open.

“Cr*p!” said Gerald, equally as shocked.

Since he was feeling more philanthropic lately, he truly wanted to donate the fifty thousand dollars he had promised. He would never have dreamed that he would accidentally push an extra zero on the transaction machine! This was a mistake on his behalf!

He blamed it on his constant obsession over Jasmine of late.

While he didn't exactly mind the mistake, he still needed to maintain a low profile in the university.

“S-sir, it seems that you've made a mistake! I'll go make the necessary arrangements immediately! We'll return the extra amount to your account as soon as possible! Might you be free this afternoon? We'll have to go to the main office to deal with this since they'll need your signature to approve the refund!” apologized one of the volunteers profusely.

“...Ah, that's going to be a hassle! You know what, just take it! Five hundred thousand it is!” said Gerald as she shook his head. After all, there wasn't much of a difference between five hundred thousand and fifty thousand dollars to him. It was just a single digit!

The volunteers were stunned speechless by his act of extreme generosity.

Gerald then proceeded to note down his major and class. Just as he was about to write down Marvin's name, he saw a group of people walking over to him with cameras and voice recorders in hand. They seemed to be reporters of some sort.

They must've come here after hearing how much he had donated to the charity! Their sudden appearance surprised him so much that he accidentally dropped the pen he was holding.

"Hold it! I'm fine with donating as long as you abide to a single rule! I wish to strictly remain anonymous!" said Gerald before immediately running off.

"I-I see! But even if we don't announce it, could we still have your name?" asked a confused volunteer as she watched him run off.

Gerald simply waved a hand without even turning to look back before disappearing into another corridor.

Chapter 696

Sometime after Gerald left, a few other volunteers began feeling sorry for themselves. After all, they wanted to meet the millionaire too!

It was just their luck that they weren't present at the time Gerald left that massive donation.

They could've used that chance to get to know him! Alas, by the time they finally found out about the massive donation that had been made, Gerald was already long gone. Soon after, the volunteers then left the area.

It was around then when loud cheers could be heard coming from inside a classroom.

"Unbelievable! Stella's donated four and a half thousand dollars to charity today!" exclaimed a few of her classmates in excitement.

Stella had earlier noticed that there was a donation campaign going on when she arrived at the university. Seeing no harm in donating for a cause, she did just that.

While the donated sum was nothing much to her and she hadn't really hadn't intended to bring the topic up as they were chatting, a slip of her tongue caused her besties to hear about the massive amount she had donated.

The information then spread like wildfire among her classmates and it wasn't long before the entire class erupted in surprise.

Their reactions were well warranted. After all, she was a university student just like them, yet she had the capability of donating four thousand and five hundred dollars! What more, the majority of students either donated very little or didn't provide any support for the charity at all.

Regardless of their reactions, it truly wasn't that big of a deal to Stella.

"Speaking of which, didn't Fabian say that he would be coming to school today? Why isn't he here yet? He's just returned from a Taekwondo championship and he got second place you know!" said Isabelle as she glanced over at the classroom's entrance.

"Oh, be a little more patient!" teased Stella.

"Humph! How could I be? If he doesn't come soon, someone else will start thinking that he's hot stuff or something!" replied Isabelle as she looked at Gerald's direction.

As soon as she said that, the class door slid open.

"Brother Fabian!"

"Fabian's here!"

The moment they saw him, almost all of the students in class began announcing his presence in exhilaration.

"Brother Fabian! What took you so long? Class is about to start!" said Isabelle while standing up as she, too, yelped in delight.

"Yeah, I'm only a bit late because I got caught up by a few ladies trying to get donations for charity downstairs," replied Fabian as he shook his head with a smile.

Seeing that Gerald was now sitting where he usually sat, he then moved to sit beside Isabelle.

“Oh? You donated as well, Fabian?” asked Stella as she grinned.

Fabian simply nodded in response.

Not only was he tall, lean, and quite good-looking, Fabian was also the richest guy in the class. What more, he was also good at sports! It was no mystery why he got so much attention from his classmates.

“How much did you donate, Fabian? Rumor has it that the one who donated the most will be invited to show their face during the donor appreciation event due this afternoon!” said Stella in admiration.

“I didn’t donate much. Plus, I’m not really interested in such events!” replied Fabian as he shook his head.

Why did people even care about such events?

“Oh come on! Don’t just leave us hanging, Brother Fabian! How much did donate exactly?” pestered his classmates.

“It was just fifteen thousand dollars!” answered Fabian who saw no other choice than to tell the truth.

Upon hearing his reply, silence immediately ensued.

The silence didn’t last long, however, as yells and cheers soon filled the entire room.

Fifteen thousand dollars! By god!

“You donated fifteen thousand dollars, Brother Fabian?!” screamed several of the girls in unison.

Of course they were going to be shocked at that massive donation!

Stella herself was so thrilled that she couldn't even bring herself to say anything for a brief moment.

"B-Brother Fabian... That's incredible! We love you so much!" exclaimed Stella when she finally managed to find her voice again.

Chapter 697

The entire classroom was still in a daze after all that exhilaration.

The news had obviously gotten to the ears of their class lecturer as well. Since Stella and Fabian were getting honors and both of them were in his class, that meant that even he was going to become well-known!

An announcement soon came, stating that everyone from the degree program needed to attend the donor appreciation event. Such an event was a big deal in the campus since only a few other events—like sports day—gave students a chance to increase their popularity.

Upon hearing that, the duo's classmates were all in for it! After all, how couldn't they be after finding out that two of their classmates were soon going to be famous?

It was after a short lunch break when everyone from the degree program started heading toward the school hall.

Gerald, however, started heading for their classroom instead.

"Aren't you attending the event, Gerald?" asked Marven.

"I'm not!" replied Gerald.

He had attended numerous events like this in the past. This was nothing special to him. To him, the act of donating was simply a way to express love and care for others. Since he had already done that through his donation, he didn't feel the need to attend such an event with the others.

"But Gerald, look! The two goddesses are attending as well!" said Marven as he pointed toward the school hall's entrance.

Squinting his eyes, Gerald realized that he was right.

"Come on, let's just go! Since everyone else is going, we won't look good if we choose not to attend, right?" added Marven.

"I guess... Alright then!" replied Gerald as he shook his head helplessly.

Marven had a point. It wouldn't do him any good to be seen as a weirdo. After all, he still had to mingle with the students there for quite a while.

Thus, Gerald ended up following Marven into the hall.

Once they were inside, they saw the two girls sitting alone in the last row, being low-key as usual.

Nobody even dared to sit remotely close to them, preferring to stand rather than to do so.

"Darn it, there aren't any seats left!" said Marven as he scratched the back of his head.

"What do you mean? There's plenty of empty seats there!" replied Gerald as he looked toward Jasmine's direction.

Before Marven could stop him, Gerald was already walking toward them.

"Well hello there beautiful, I assume these seats aren't taken?" said Gerald with a smile.

His statement, however, garnered no response from both girls. They simply continued staring ahead coldly.

Marven himself was now nervously tugging on to Gerald's elbow, desperately trying to hint at him to sit anywhere else but there. After all, if they triggered the two goddesses, both of them would be as good as dead.

Gerald, however, simply shrugged nonchalantly before pulling Marven to sit right next to him.

Jasmine could feel her eyebrows raising though she continued remaining silent.

Once everyone arrived, the event then officially began. To start off the event, the principal gave a speech which was then followed by another from the student representative.

During the speech, it was mentioned that only 'excellent donors' would have their names announced. 'Excellent donors' were those who donated over fifteen dollars.

It was also stated that the names would be announced randomly instead of in ascending order of how much one donated. While that was so, the exact amount donated by the 'excellent donors' was still going to be mentioned.

It didn't take long for someone who donated a hundred and fifty dollars to be announced. When the students heard that, whispering could be heard among the crowd.

The whispering intensified into exclamations of awe and surprise when another person was announced to have donated over four hundred and fifty dollars.

Among the 'excellent donors', Gerald heard Maia and Warren's names being mentioned as well.

It would appear that both of them had donated nine hundred dollars respectively.

Naturally, this stirred a sensation among the students when they heard such high numbers being donated.

“Now, according to this list, a total of twelve students donated nine hundred dollars and above! Because of that, we hope to invite them up to the stage to each accept a certificate of honor!”

The host then cleared his throat before reading out, “Mr. Warren and Ms. Maia! Please come up to the stage!”

What followed was an eruption of applause as both Warren and Maia walked up the stage.

“Woah! Brother Warren looks so hot!”

Chapter 698

The statement had come from Isabelle who was currently clapping loudly as she watched Warren ascend the stage.

Seeing her reaction, Gerald simply rolled his eyes.

“How did you get acquainted with Brother Warren, Isabelle? I thought he just got transferred here very recently!” asked one of her friends curiously.

“Haha... Well, you know that my brother is friends with our school’s popular Jamier, right? Since Jamier and Warren are good friends, it’s only natural for me to know him!”

“I see!”

“Speaking of which, see that girl beside Warren? I think her name is Maia. She’s pretty, isn’t she? I have a hunch that she probably likes Warren a lot since they even transferred here together!” added Isabelle.

Though Warren was garnering all the attention for now, in her mind, Isabelle was sure that Brother Fabian would still be the eventual star of the day.

With that, she stopped talking and began focusing on listening to the announcements again.

After a few more people got on stage, the host then said, “From the Department of Economics and Management’s third class, we have Ms. Stella who donated four thousand and five hundred dollars! Ms. Stella, please join us on stage!”

Hearing that, the crowd in the hall instantly went wild with cheer! Even the lecturers sitting up front seemed to be talking about her.

Sensing that the cheering wasn’t going to end any time soon till she stood among the other top donors, Stella simply got up and began walking rather nonchalantly toward the stage.

At the same time, Isabelle was getting giddier by the second. After all, it would be Brother Fabian’s turn to go up the stage next!

Upon reaching the stage, Stella stood right in the middle, cuing the crowd to slowly dwindle their cheering.

Finding his chance to speak, the host—who seemed to be getting increasingly excited—then announced, “Next, also from the Department of Economics and Management’s third class, please welcome Mr. Fabian who donated fifteen thousand dollars! Mr. Fabian, please come up the stage!”

Immediately after hearing that, the entire hall fell silent.

Fifteen... thousand dollars?!

The cheer that came after was the loudest one yet. Accompanied by the thunderous roars of applause, it was a wonder why all the glass windows in the hall didn’t shatter!

Everyone’s eardrums were ringing from all the noise.

After all, someone had donated fifteen thousand dollars! Of course that would get the crowd excited!

“God d*mn! That’s a lot!”

“Of course it is! It’s Fabian we’re talking about!”

“I knew that Fabian was rich, but by god! Fifteen thousand dollars is something else!”

At that moment, several people from the crowd were exclaiming in awe.

Isabelle herself was shaking Fabian by the elbow, looking way more thrilled than Fabian was.

“Brother Fabian! Brother Fabian! Your name’s been announced!”

Seeing everyone’s reaction, Fabian simply shook his head while smiling helplessly.

‘It’s just fifteen thousand dollars... Was there honestly a need for everyone to find that so surprising?’

Sliding both his hands into his pockets, Fabian then began walking toward the stage as girls continued to scream with glee at him.

Once he was on stage, the host then announced two more massive donations.

Two girls from the fourth class had donated twenty-three thousand dollars each! However, the host didn’t mention either of their names, nor did he invite them up the stage.

Even so, everyone already knew who the donors were, and everyone in the hall took turns peeking at the two girls sitting in the last row. They were all fully aware that Jasmine and Mandy were the donors.

Though their donations were clearly superior to Fabian's, the uproar that ensued wasn't as great as his. After all, everyone in Salford University knew how rich they were. What more, they had already made several contributions in the past as well.

While the inclusion of their donations had lost their surprise factor, applauses were still made since they were still contributing for a good cause.

When it came to the twelfth student, however, the host seemed to be at a loss.

"Well this is a new one! While this student donated the most this time around, he only wrote down his class and which department he was from! Since he was unwilling to provide his name, we'll just have to respect his decision to remain anonymous! Regardless, I hope that everyone gives a loud round of applause once I announce his class!"

"Huh? Which class does he come from? How much did he even donate?" chatted the students among themselves curiously.

Everyone was looking forward to the final announcement, especially Fabian, Stella, Maia, and Warren as they exchanged gazes with each other on stage in anticipation.

Chapter 699

"Also from the Department of Economics and Management's third class, the top donor donated a grand total of... Five hundred thousand dollars!" shouted the host excitedly.

The students' response to that announcement was an immense roar of both shock and awe.

Five hundred thousand dollars?!

To think that they had already considered Fabian's fifteen thousand dollar donation to be over the top! Even after adding what the two goddesses had donated, their total amount still couldn't beat the amount of cash the top donor had given to charity!

Five hundred thousand dollars... In cold hard cash, that amount could easily reach even the hall's ceiling!

The students weren't the only ones in awe either. Even the school's leaders and lecturers got up from their seats, clapping in utter shock at that colossal amount.

While all this was happening, Warren and Maia were busy peeking at Fabian and Stella.

Fabian and Stella themselves looked completely astounded. Someone from their class had donated five hundred thousand dollars?

"Did you hear that Isabelle? The top donor is from our class!" yelled a few of Isabelle's classmates.

"I did! But... But who could it have been?" replied Isabelle in her excitement.

Five hundred thousand dollars... That was no small amount, even for the richer families!

As the excitement in the hall continued to grow, Jasmine and Mandy found themselves looking at each other.

While both of them rarely spoke a word to the other students in school, be it during their regular or union classes, they knew the backgrounds of most of their classmates extremely well.

Take Marven Wadley for example. Though both parties had never spoken to each other before, the two girls saw him as a classmate and they had even helped him on several occasions in the past.

While Marven hadn't struck it as odd that his father had been encountering less and less problems—despite working as an illegal tour guide—recently, it was honestly all thanks to Jasmine's secret interventions.

That was proof of how well both of them knew their classmates' backgrounds.

It was also the reason why they were so sure that none of their classmates—who weren't already on stage—had the capability to freely donate five hundred thousand dollars.

“Mr. Fabian and Ms. Stella, both of you are from the third class as well, right? The top donor seems to be someone from your class!” said the host as he looked at the two students.

“...But... Nobody from our class would have that kind of money to donate, right?” asked Stella.

“I wonder... Hold on, there’s a chance that my dad could’ve made that donation. After all, he was the one who had notified me about the fundraising event in the first place!” exclaimed Fabian as he realized the possibility.

Since the cheering had earlier died down into whispers discussing the top donor’s true identity, the hall had been silent enough for everyone to hear Fabian’s surprisingly loud claim.

Everyone was now looking at him, including Maia.

Before she had transferred over, she had heard that there were a few popular jocks from the department of Economics and Management.

There was Jamier from the last batch, Fabian from this one and also Wyatt’s. All of them had been born with a silver spoon.

“Well, why don’t you call your father to confirm it?” suggested Maia.

“Yeah, it’d be better to confirm it! Make that call, Fabian!” said a few of the school’s higher-ups as well.

Hearing that, Fabian then reached for his phone and began calling his father.

Meanwhile, the third class’s lecturer walked over to his students, a huge grin on his face.

“While we’re waiting, where’s the mineral water we carried over earlier? Be a dear and bring them over, will you?” said the teacher as he looked at Isabelle.

“...Ah. I was so excited that I forgot all about it!” replied Isabelle as she gently smacked her forehead.

“Well we’ll just get... I’d say six classmates to carry the bottles over then! Where are Marven and Gerald?” asked Isabelle as she scanned the crowd, trying to find them.

“Hmm? Ah, they’ve hidden themselves in a far corner!” said a girl who then pointed in their direction.

“Humph! I told you two to carry the water bottles earlier but you didn’t! Now I have to find four other students to help you with the task... Can’t you two do anything right other than laze around?” said Isabelle while giving them a disgusted look.

Before they could even reply, she immediately left, yelling at another four classmates for them to join the duo.

Gerald was no stranger to classmates like Isabelle. To girls like her, all other guys aside from the person she was into would never be good enough for her.

Then again, it’s not like her approval meant anything to Gerald.

Chapter 700

Since he was definitely going to look bad if he didn’t fetch the water this time around, Gerald and Marven left the hall. In his mind, Gerald was honestly sighing in relief that his name hadn’t been called out earlier as the top donor.

Mandy, on the other hand, felt that something was off as she watched Gerald and Marven leaving the hall.

“Hey, Jasmine? Earlier when Gerald walked past me, I could feel my heart thumping rapidly! Hell, for a second there, I even considered the thought of wanting him to stay by my side! What on earth was that feeling...? While we haven’t really acquainted ourselves with him, why does he already feel so familiar...?” whispered Mandy.

“I get what you mean. While he dresses like a regular person, he sure doesn’t feel like one! We don’t know anything about his background yet either...” replied Jasmine with a nod.

As both of them continued discussing Gerald, all six of the boys were already carrying the water bottles back to the hall.

They were also tasked with distributing the water bottles to the school authorities and a few workers involved with the event.

While they had water bottles in hand once they arrived at the hall again, none of the school authorities or workers seemed to be thirsty anymore.

It was probably because Fabian was still on the call on stage.

Isabelle herself was now on the stage standing right next to him, even though the call had absolutely nothing to do with her.

Once the call finally ended, disappointment was felt across the entire hall. The money hadn't been donated by Fabian's father after all.

Then who could've done it? The revelation that Fabian's father hadn't been the donor only further increased the audiences' curiosity.

Seeing that his father hadn't played a part in the donation, Fabian then turned to look at Stella before saying, "Perhaps it was your father who donated, Stella? After all, he's always been passionate about events like this, right?"

Stella nodded before replying, "Yeah, I'll call my dad now to confirm it!"

While everyone's eyes were peeled on Stella this time, a sudden yelp momentarily drew their attention away from her.

The person who had yelped was none other than Marvin!

He had initially been holding on to all the water bottles as Gerald distributed them. Unfortunately for him, a girl carrying a gown—who was re-entering the hall—couldn't avoid him in time and accidentally bumped into Marvin.

Marvin was unable to hold on to all the water bottles, causing a few of them to tumble all over the floor.

"A-ah! I'm so sorry! I didn't mean to!" squeaked the young girl in fright.

"It's fine. You go on ahead and complete your errand first!" said Gerald as both he and Marvin began picking the scattered water bottles up.

As Gerald went over to pick a bottle that had rolled close to a row of students, a girl—who was close to that bottle—handed it over to him.

When their eyes met, the girl immediately realized who Gerald was.

"....Huh? It's you!" exclaimed the girl as she covered her mouth in surprise.

Gerald was equally as surprised.

It was the same girl who had collected the donation money from him earlier!

Since Gerald had been so focused on gathering the fallen bottles again, he hadn't noticed her in time. Who would've thought that she was right here!

It was now getting increasingly awkward for Gerald.

"I finally found you! Can I please have your name now?" shouted the girl happily, not realizing how loud her voice was.

“What’s happening over there? Louise?” said one of the event’s higher-ups in a rather annoyed tone.

“N-no, you see sir! H-He’s the one...!” stuttered the girl.

Before she could even calm herself, a few more gasps of joy could be heard. The other volunteers who had also earlier been present when Gerald made that massive donation had just entered the hall, and they were all pleasantly pleased to see him again!

Seeing the girls’ reactions, the entire hall could only watch in silence.

Even those on stage were looking at Gerald.

Chapter 701

“...It’s... him?”

Though Maia had been notified by Warren that Gerald was apparently studying here, she hadn’t personally seen him till now. Seeing him carrying the water bottles instantly caused a look of disdain to form on her face.

While he was now in a different school, he was still the same loser that he was back in high school. To think that he was still being ordered around to carry and distribute water to others!

She didn’t even want to know why Gerald was now studying at Salford University.

Meanwhile, the girls from earlier were now surrounding Gerald.

“What is the meaning of this?” asked one of the higher-ups.

“Manager Luke! We’ve found him! He’s the one who donated the five hundred thousand dollars!” said one of the volunteer girls in admiration.

“...What?”

Hearing her words, everyone went silent.

A look of utter shock and disbelief was on everyone's faces, and this was especially so for those currently standing on stage.

Stella herself was awkwardly staring at Gerald, as she ended the call just as her father picked up.

Even Jasmine and Mandy found themselves stunned as they continued staring at Gerald's direction.

"This... This must be some kind of mistake! It couldn't have been him!" shouted Isabelle indignantly, clearly irked by how Gerald had donated much more than Fabian.

She simply refused to believe that Gerald had that much money to donate in the first place! Yet, the truth was now in plain sight.

It had already been announced that the donor was from their class. If neither Fabian nor Stella's family had made the donation, then the only possible person left was Gerald.

"It's definitely him! It'd be impossible for so many of us to have mistaken him for someone else!" explained the girls.

"Are you really sure? Hah! We were both in the same high school and for as long as I've known him, he's always been a poor b*stard! As if he could ever have that large a sum of money on him! You wouldn't get that much money even if you tried to sell him!" said Maia hastily.

It was clear that the fact that Gerald had donated five hundred thousand dollars had shattered Maia's and many others' egos.

After all, while those on stage had been renowned for being born in rich families, to those who knew him personally, Gerald was always just the poor kid.

While Maia wore brands like Adidas and Nike that cost well over a hundred dollars, Gerald himself would usually only wear clothes from the dollar store. Her superiority complex was so terrible that even if Gerald wore a ten dollar shirt, that would be enough to make her feel unsettled.

Since Maia had donated nine hundred dollars in an event like this, to her, Gerald would only have the capability to donate fifty cents or even less!

Yet here the volunteers were, claiming that he had donated the five hundred thousand dollars! The claim itself made Maia feel nauseous.

It didn't help that the volunteer girls immediately showed the receipt to everyone after that to prove that they were telling the truth!

'How is this even possible? How did he get this rich?!' Maia thought to himself.

While Gerald had been trying hard to keep his identity a secret, he knew he couldn't really do anything about it at this point.

Even a few of the event's workers were now gesturing for him to come up the stage with utmost respect.

Fabian himself—who had initially taken center-stage—was now being pushed aside by the volunteer girls to make space for Gerald.

While that made Fabian's face turn red in embarrassment, Isabelle's own face was red from rage after seeing their actions.

"You... You! Why would you even donate that much?!" scolded Isabelle in anger as she pointed at Gerald.

"She's right! I don't know where all that money came from, but I hope you realize just how much you've spent instead of just trying to look rich!" added Maia in disdain. She felt that if she didn't at least try to mock him now, she would definitely faint from the stunning blow to her ego she had just received.

Hearing what they had to say, Gerald glared daggers at them, anger bubbling inside him.

Chapter 702

Though he used to see Maia as a goddess way back in his poor days, this was the final straw. Gerald would no longer tolerate her straightforwardness and sharp-tongue!

“Well since I’m already ‘acting’ like a rich guy, I may as well ‘act’ till the very end! You know what, I’m adding another hundred and fifty thousand dollars to that initial five hundred thousand!” announced Gerald with a wry smile.

“W-what?”

Hearing that, everyone fell into utter shock!

As if five hundred thousand dollars wasn’t enough! This person was now donating a grand total of six hundred and fifty thousand dollars to charity!

At this point, the rest of Gerald’s classmates were all staring wide-eyed at him. It was hard for them to even process that such a simple looking person could actually be such a rich man!

While this was the reaction of Gerald’s classmates, the silence ended when one of the students from another third-year class began cheering!

Hearing that, a chain reaction of cheers and applauses soon followed!

Breaking from their stunned states, the workers themselves immediately got on stage to process the second payment.

The entire hall was now staring at Gerald in utter admiration.

While showing off wasn't his usual style, doing it every once in a while was fine. Besides, he had an actual reason to show off this time.

Glancing at Maia and Isabelle's indignant expressions, Gerald could feel an impish glee in himself.

Once the transaction was done, each of the workers took turns shaking hands with Gerald.

Fabian on the other hand, simply stomped down the stage after receiving his certificate. What a total waste of fifteen thousand dollars!

"Who would've guessed that he was actually that rich, Jasmine! When they announced that he was the one who had donated the five hundred thousand dollars, I couldn't believe my ears at all! Now that he's added another hundred and fifty thousand dollars to that sum, even I have to believe that he's the one who made that ginormous donation!" whispered Mindy as she continued looking at Gerald with great interest.

"I find it hard to believe as well... Looks like his background isn't as simple as we had initially assumed. We should definitely be more careful from now on!" replied Jasmine, her tone cautious.

"Humph! Let's just get someone from our family to investigate more about him!" replied Mandy.

"The thing is, we've already ordered someone to do that for us even before today's events... All we know is that he's some poor student from Serene County! No matter how the investigation team tried, they simply couldn't find out anything more about him!"

A look of dissatisfaction formed on Jasmine's face as she said that. In a sense, this was an eye-opening experience for her.

As Jasmine continued looking at Gerald, Fabian darted out of the hall without saying a word. His expression suggested that he had just sat through some useless event.

Knowing how hurt he was, Isabelle ran after him while shouting, "Brother Fabian! Wait for me!"

Despite her pleas, Fabian continued sprinting toward the garden. Once he arrived at the bottom of a shady tree, Fabian immediately punched the tree's trunk! His face was filled with rage.

Isabelle was well aware that Fabian's only Achilles' heel, amidst his many good traits, was his ego.

She had noticed how hurt Fabian had been when he was earlier pushed aside by the volunteers without even a second thought. Gerald standing where he once stood was definitely the last straw for him!

"Brother Fabian, please don't be mad! Regardless of how much Gerald's donated, you still achieved second place in the Taekwondo Youth Championship! That alone already makes you way better than him!" said Isabelle, her eyes slightly reddened.

"Don't forget about your dreams, Brother Fabian! Please don't be miserable over something as trivial as this! Remember, our school's very own Taekwondo Championship personally invited you to be their judge! You'll be able to show everyone who's boss then! Just think of all the cheers and applause you'll be receiving when that happens!" coaxed Isabelle.

After hearing that, Fabian started feeling a little better about himself. She was right. Once his time to shine arrived, he'd definitely be even highly regarded as the pride of their class! Endless cheering and admiration would then be reserved for him, and only him!

'Why on earth are you stressing so much over something so trivial in the first place, Fabian?' He thought to himself.

"...I understand now! Thank you so much, Isabelle!"

While it was true that he was feeling much better now, Fabian still left the area with a rather miserable expression on his face. After all, no matter how much Isabelle was going to coax him, his pride had still been hurt deeply today.

Once the event finally ended, Gerald headed out with Marvin.

While they were walking, Marven suddenly looked like he just remembered something. Without saying a word, he then looked around and entered a nearby shop. By the time he got out again, he had bought a whole bunch of food.

“Hmm? What’s this then? Are you already hungry again?” said Gerald as he looked at the stash of food that Marven had bought while smiling.

“No, no, these aren’t for me! I’m giving all of these to someone... Since I’ll be meeting her along the way anyway, would you mind accompanying me?” replied Marven, a sheepish grin plastered on his face.

Chapter 703

“Oh? Who could you be planning to give all that to?” asked Gerald as he continued smiling.

Gerald was rightfully curious since this was the first time he had ever seen this side of Marven.

“Haha... Between you and me, it’s a girl I have a crush on! She’s from the Taekwondo society which is going to hold a tournament very soon! Since she’s been training so hard, I thought of buying some food to keep her well-nourished!” replied Marven, a huge grin on his face.

Hearing that, Gerald felt happy for Marven. While Marven was one of the smarter people, his feelings were still simple and honest.

Since they were now rather close friends anyway, Gerald decided to tag along.

Eventually, they arrived at the Taekwondo society. Inside, quite a number of people were busy training.

Scanning around while hugging all the food he had bought in his arms, Marven finally found the person he was looking for. The girl he had a crush on was stunning, to say the least.

“Hahaha! Look who’s here, Raquel! That fatty is here to bring you food again!” said a few of the members who had earlier been training.

They had stopped for a brief moment when they saw Marven and Gerald entering. The members who had said that were now all pointing toward Marven in a mocking manner.

Gerald had realized that not many people in the school actually saw Marven as a friend. He had also noticed that there was barely anyone who looked up to him either.

“How dedicated he is! Who else would do the things he does for you on a daily basis, Raquel? Go be this good man’s girlfriend already!” said a few other girls who then started mocking Raquel as well.

Raquel was an attractive looking girl, so she felt insulted when she heard the girls’ remarks. Instead of taking her dissatisfaction out on them, however, she instead began stomping toward the short and chubby Marven, glaring at him the entire time.

“Marven, haven’t I already told you not to come here anymore? Your presence here only serves to bother and disgust me!” yelled Raquel as she fumed.

“But Raquel, I’m just worried that you’re overtraining yourself! A little food will definitely help you get back some well-needed energy!” replied Marven as he extended the food in his arms out for her to take.

The only response he received was a swift swipe which sent all the food in his hands falling to the floor!

“I don’t need any of your d*mn food! I’ve told you time and again to stop coming here! So just leave already!”

Seeing that Marven was rooted to the spot in shock, Raquel only found herself growing even more furious by the second.

By then, a crowd had surrounded them. All of them were simultaneously booing at Marven.

“Since when have you become like this, Raquel...? You’ve never treated me this way before!” said Marven, his eyes slightly watery as he looked at all the scattered food on the floor.

“Have you lost your marbles? I told you to get out already!” yelled Raquel as she shoved him hard.

Caught by surprise, Marven found himself spinning in his attempt to maintain his balance. Ultimately, he failed to do so and fell face-first into the floor!

“Hahaha! Look at him! He’s just like a turtle that’s tumbled over! Check out those short limbs of his!”

“Hah! Yeah, to think that a guy like you even dares to go after Raquel... In your dreams pal, in your dreams... Still, it’s no wonder Raquel likes-”

The girl immediately ended her sentence midway, barely avoiding stepping on a landmine.

“I’m sick of having to see you every day!” roared Raquel as she kicked all the food Marven had bought away before turning around to leave.

“Hey now, don’t you think you’re overdoing it?” shouted Gerald.

“Are you even aware of how much Marven thinks about you and your training? He only wants what’s best for you! Even if you don’t like him, what gives you the right to treat him like this?” added Gerald, this time his voice getting increasingly furious.

“Like this concerns you in any way! I can treat him however the hell I like! After all, he’s the one who’s embarrassing me here! And what about you? Why are you even still here? Scram already!”

With her anger reignited, Raquel was just about to launch a few more punches on Marven when Gerald swiftly stepped in front of him and pushed her away!

Infuriated, Raquel retaliated by kicking Gerald right in the chest!

Gerald had honestly not expected this girl to be so impulsive, and he ended up falling on his butt.

It was at that moment when Raquel realized that she really was being a bit too much.

Chapter 704

She was well aware that Marven had a crush on her. However, even though she had made it extremely clear that she wasn't into him, why on earth was he still pestering her?

Every girl had an ego to maintain when it came to relationships. If Raquel had received the same treatment from a better-looking guy, she wouldn't have minded.

However, Marven was a completely different story. After all, to most people, he generally had a bad image if she was going to be completely honest about it.

After being humiliated in front of so many people, she would've kicked him out the door if she was any less morally aware!

"B-Brother Gerald!" shouted Marven as he rushed over to Gerald to help him up.

While Gerald clearly looked like he wanted to continue arguing with Raquel, Marven noticed that a few of the Taekwondo society's members were already circling them. Fearing that Gerald would get hurt because of him again, Marven immediately dragged him out of there.

The two continued walking on until they arrived at the garden located right outside their campus.

Upon finding a place to sit, Marven soon found himself sobbing as he said, "It's all my fault, Brother Gerald! While Raquel may have attacked you, please place the blame on me! After all, it's true that I was the one who had humiliated her in front of all those people!"

Though he had indeed received a kick to the chest from Raquel, Gerald simply remained silent. It was because he saw his past self in Marven.

Back then, he had been willing to get beaten up just to keep Xavia safe!

Understanding Marven's pain, Gerald then patted him on the back while saying, "Alright, alright I won't... For now, let's focus more on getting you to stop crying... Still, you told me that both of you had quite a good relationship! No offense, but that scene from earlier clearly suggested otherwise!"

"Well... We truthfully were on good terms in the past... After all, both of us grew up together! However, once Raquel got into college, she began changing rather drastically..."

Marven then began detailing his past with Raquel to Gerald.

Both of them had apparently been extremely friendly with each other in the past, up to the point where Marven would always stand up for Raquel whenever she got bullied in school.

The worst bullying Raquel had ever received happened when they were in their fourth year. Back then, Raquel's path had been blocked by a few older students.

Being the immature youngsters that they were, the older students had assumed that they simply needed to write a love letter to Raquel for her to fall head over heels for them. When that obviously failed, all of them ganged up on her. Marven however, came to her aid and fought against all of them.

By the time they were done, his knees were bleeding so much that the scars from then remained till this very day.

The incident Marven faced was honestly quite similar to what had happened with Gerald and Xavia back in the day.

That was basically why for a period of time, Marven and Raquel were near inseparable. In fact, after graduating high school, both of them had even become a couple for a while.

It was at that time, however, when Marven started noticing small changes in Raquel's behavior.

Eventually, it got so bad that Raquel actively tried to hide from him. It even got to the point where she told him not to tell others that they were actually a couple!

One day, Raquel told him that she needed some time away from him...

And that was how their relationship remained for quite a period of time.

Marven simply couldn't accept how quickly Raquel had moved on from him so he kept on pestering her.

Eventually, it led to the events of today.

Gerald simply shook his head in pity. He didn't even know what to say. After all, Marven's story had become strikingly similar to his own past relationship with Xavia. All he could do was pat him on the back.

Not long after, Marven wiped the last of his tears away, affirming that he was fine now. Sharing his sad tale and crying it out had definitely helped.

Hearing that, Gerald felt a sense of relief wash over him.

Just as they were about to leave, Gerald's phone rang. It was a call from Queta.

"Gerald, you have to return immediately!"

"What's wrong?"

Queta's tone sounded desperate...

Chapter 705

"What exactly happened? There's no need to rush, just focus on telling me everything in detail!" added Gerald.

"It's... It's grandpa Finnley! He's been packing up and trying to leave! Even now, I'm still struggling to stop him from doing so!"

“What? But why? Everything’s been going smoothly for a while now! Why the sudden urge to leave?” replied Gerald, confused.

Gerald saw Finnley as a mysterious old man who—even in his old age—still operated alone most of the time.

It was fate that had brought Gerald and Finnley together, and the old man had already helped Gerald on multiple occasions.

While Finnley still seemed to enjoy pestering him, Gerald said nothing about it. After all, he had already received so much help from the old man.

To return the old man’s favour, Gerald welcomed Finnely’s presence, serving Finnley with fine food and also a place to stay in his mansion.

Since Finnley had also saved Queta’s life, even she treated him well, and she would always make sure that he was constantly well-fed. Most of the time, Queta treated him as though he was her actual grandfather.

Yet here he was, trying to leave them now. If anything was to blame for Finnley’s sudden urge to depart, it would probably be because of Gerald’s ongoing investigation on the Fenderson family.

Gerald was well aware that something was already off with Finnley the moment he asked that old man if he knew anything about the Fendersons. After all, Finnley seemed to speak less and less with Gerald in the few days to come after Gerald had posed that question. It was as though the old man had something on his mind.

When Finnley was asked why he seemed to be pondering something, the old man would only reply in gibberish.

Seeing that he couldn’t really do anything at the moment, Gerald simply added, “...Alright, don’t worry about it too much. For now, I’ll head back so that I can ask him about it in person!”

Gerald then parted ways with Marven.

After some time, he arrived home just in time to see Finnley carrying his luggage out the door!

“I really have to leave now, my granddaughter! I’ll definitely come back to visit when I have the time in future! You’re a good girl and grandpa will never forget you!”

As soon as the old man turned around, however, he noticed that Gerald was standing right before him!

“Ah! My grandson! Perfect timing! I have to leave now, so this is goodbye for the moment!”

“But Mr. Quick, you’ve been living here for quite a while now. Why the rush to leave? Regardless, if you truly need to go, you could’ve just told me and I would’ve sent you to wherever you needed to go by car!”

“There really isn’t a need for that, my grandson. I know you mean well, and you’ve been an excellent grandson! However, if I don’t leave now, I won’t be able to find another chance to do so...”

Finnley’s last words came out in mumbles and Gerald wasn’t able to catch what he had said.

“I’m sorry, what did you say?”

Clearing his throat, Finnley then replied, “I said there’s no need to trouble you! It’s about time I leave now, take care, my grandson!”

After saying that, Finnley patted Gerald’s chest.

As a result, Gerald flinched in pain before gently rubbing over the bruise there that had been left by Raquel.

“Are you serious? That soft pat on the chest hurt you? Have your insides turned into paper my grandson?” asked Finnley, clearly astonished.

Queta herself ran over after hearing Gerald’s yelp before asking, “What’s wrong Gerald? Are you hurt?”

“Don’t worry about it! Some girl just kicked me in the chest!”

“...Huh? Who was she? Why did she have to attack you?” asked Queta, getting increasingly worried.

Gerald simply shook his head in response, a sign that he didn’t want to talk about it for the moment.

While it was true that Raquel had only hurt him this much because she was well versed in Taekwondo, Finnley simply shook his head before sighing.

“If I were to leave you now in this state, how could I not worry about you, my grandson? You’re simply too kind! I truly worry that once I leave, you won’t even realize what killed you!”

As he said that, Finnley recalled what had happened back at the hotel when Yunus had sent that long-haired man to attack Gerald.

If it wasn’t for his intervention, Gerald’s arm would’ve been as good as gone!

“I only got this hurt because I didn’t fight back! If I was serious, I’d definitely have been able to spar for a bit!” replied Gerald. After all, while he was kind, he still had a reputation to maintain! Being beaten up by a girl definitely hurt his ego slightly.

“Hah! You? While I know you have a bit of strength in you, just about anyone who has a bit more skill can easily beat you into a pulp! You know, my grandson, you can’t just expect there to be people to protect you every time something like this happens!” said Finnley as he scratched the back of his head.

Gerald could only nod in response.

To be honest, he had considered picking up a martial art or two from the Drake & Tyson duo before. Perhaps something like kickboxing.

The problem was, he simply didn't have the time to undergo any training!

Chapter 706

"Alright, how about this? I'll stay here for three more days and though you probably won't be able to learn any difficult moves within that short amount of time, under my guidance, you can surely learn at least a few for self-defense. That way, your enemies won't be able to come too close to you that easily! While the moves themselves are practical and generally easier to learn, keep in mind that the moves aren't designed to hurt people! They're primarily for self-defense, after all!" said Finnley.

"...Wait, you aren't kidding, right? I'll be able to learn basic self-defense in just three days?" replied Gerald with a smile.

"Listen, if I say you can master it by then, you definitely can! Consider yourself lucky that I'm even staying back to teach you, you brat of a grandson! And don't look at me with those doubtful eyes! If you don't believe me, try hitting me with all you've got!" said Finnley as he waved at Gerald to come at him.

"I'd rather not! Again, Mr. Quick, I was only hurt this much because I didn't fight back! I don't hit women anyway! I'm honestly quite strong you know! I'm afraid that if I actually punched you, I'd end up breaking your bones!" replied Gerald rather dismissively as he waved back.

'Mr. Quick may be knowledgeable, but he's still old and skinny...' Gerald thought to himself. He was honestly worried that he would end up hurting the old man from just a simple punch.

"What are you worrying about? Come at me already!" Was Finnley's response.

Seeing how confident Finnley sounded, Gerald eventually gave in. After positioning himself, Gerald made a dash toward Finnley, aiming a punch at his shoulder!

It was a moment later when a loud thud could be heard. Gerald was now on the ground!

Before Gerald's punch could even connect, Finnley easily dodged his attack before grabbing him by the wrist! In the next moment, Gerald felt like a broken kite as his entire body was momentarily lifted into the air before he was greeted by the villa's cold, stone porch!

Gerald's entire body was hurting as though all the bones in him had simultaneously been fractured. He found it difficult to even get up.

"G-Gerald!" shouted Queta as she rushed toward him with a worried expression plastered on her face as she helped him get up.

"So? How was it, grandson? I still got the moves!" said Finnley as he squatted down beside Gerald while chuckling.

It hadn't crossed Gerald's mind that such a frail-looking man would be so good at self-defense.

He hadn't even realized that he had been lifted into the air till the moment his body hit the ground. Gerald's head was honestly still spinning from the impact of that fall.

"Come on, grandpa Quick! Why did you have to overdo it?" exclaimed Queta, evidently concerned about Gerald's safety.

"Hah! He's a fully grown man! He isn't as weak as you think, my granddaughter. After all, Gerald's had to do a lot of rough work from a very young age! His arms are pretty strong you know? The move I just used on him will be perfect for Gerald to learn!" replied Finnley as he gave Gerald a slight kick.

"Get up now, my grandson! As promised, I'll use these few extra days to help you master a few moves! So long as your opponents aren't too experienced, those moves will definitely be handy assets to help you escape most normal fights!"

Hearing that, Gerald immediately stood up, still holding on to his hurt arm.

'He's right about that. That truly is a pretty good move...' Gerald thought to himself as he nodded.

Fast forward to three days later, while Gerald had finally managed to master quite a few self-defense techniques, it also meant that Finnley no longer had anything stopping him from leaving.

Since Finnley had been together with them for quite some time now, Gerald realized that he already had a slight emotional connection with him.

While the old man was occasionally muddle-headed and tended to spout nonsense from time to time, he was generally a good man to both Gerald and Queta. In all honesty, Gerald wanted him to stay if he could.

Queta bawled her eyes out as she sent him off. She was well aware that she would miss having him around.

As Mr. Quick left the villa, Gerald wondered why Mr. Quick was so reluctant to talk about certain topics. However, seeing how adamantly the old man had held on to his secrets, Gerald simply kept the question to himself for the time being.

With Finnley gone, it now was time for him to focus all his energy on investigating the Fendersons.

The next day, as Gerald was entering the campus together with Marven, both of them bumped into Warren, Maia, and three other girls.

However, Gerald simply walked on, treating Maia as though she was a complete stranger.

“You... Gerald Crawford! You come back here, right this instant!” yelled Maia in anger.

Chapter 707

Realizing that Gerald was ignoring her on purpose was the trigger to her anger.

‘Who do you think you are to just ignore me?’ Maia thought to herself.

“What do you want?”

Knowing that he had mixed feelings toward Maia, Gerald found that reason enough for him to ignore her earlier. What more, he understood why she would be frustrated to see him, now that he was clearly wealthier than her.

He just couldn't be bothered by her.

"So what if you're a little rich now? Like that's a good reason for you to ignore me! Anyway, I just want to know where you got all that money from," enquired Maia as she stared straight into Gerald's eyes.

"Sorry, private information," replied Gerald coldly.

"Private? Hah! You just earned a bit more cash, big deal! That still doesn't change the fact that you were a pauper in the past! I'll be frank with you, Gerald! You're at most an upstart, you got that? And upstarts are infamously known for being arrogant pricks like you! Unlike Jamier and the others, you definitely lack maturity and stability!" huffed Maia, clearly not wanting to be outdone.

"Whatever you say. Speaking of which, Marven and I are planning on scouting for a nice place to start our new company. If there isn't anything else, we'll be off now!" said Gerald, shaking his head with a somber smile.

It wasn't his first rodeo being insulted like this anyway.

'Like her insults mean anything to me. It's useless trying to explain anything to someone like her,' Gerald thought to himself.

"...Company? You're starting a new company?" asked Maia.

It was extremely upsetting for her to see Gerald getting ahead in life. Even she wasn't sure why she felt this way, she simply did.

"Yeah! Gerald's funding so that we can start a travel agency together!" added Marven rather excitedly as he followed Gerald into the campus.

This wasn't a lie either. Gerald had called Marven yesterday around noon just to discuss it.

Since Marven's grandmother's health had been deteriorating of late and his relationship with Raquel was also in shambles, Marven had honestly been incredibly stressed. However, when Gerald stepped in to help him, Marven knew that he would soon be able to get through his tough times.

He had been extremely grateful to Gerald after receiving the offer to start a company together. While he had seen Gerald as a close friend before, he now treated Gerald as though he was his real brother.

As the two walked further away, Warren looked extremely pissed. "What kind of luck does he even have?"

"Who knows? Still, even if he's opening a company, he'll be the only one funding it!" said Maia.

"You got that right. Humph! Just you wait and see. He'll definitely use up all that money eventually. What else will he have then?" replied Warren, his tone sour.

"...Anyway, let's stop talking about Gerald and get moving for now. The school's organizing a Taekwondo competition, remember? Out of all the events in the school, this one caught my eye the most!" added Warren.

"Oh yeah, before you went to the police academy, you used to represent the seniors, right? Since you were Sunnydale's Taekwondo champion, you can definitely give your juniors some pointers after watching the competition!"

The group of five then entered the campus as well, casually chatting among themselves.

Meanwhile, Gerald and Marven had just signed their attendance in class. Seeing that they only had ideology class that morning, they decided to leave.

As they descended the stairs, Gerald thought about why he was so willing to help Marven out. It probably had something to do with how much he saw himself in Marven. What more, both of them had grown closer in the past few days, and Gerald now saw him as a brother as well.

Marven was an extremely filial person too, and Gerald was pleased by how much Marven loved both his parents and grandparents. Knowing how good a person Marven was, Gerald was more than happy to support him which led to his idea of forming a partnership for Marven's new travel agency.

Besides, since it was mostly monetary issues, it wasn't even that big of a deal for Gerald. He had the means to help, so it was only right to do so for his brother.

Regardless, the first big step they had to do was to settle where the company would be located.

Chapter 708

Both of them had decided to start their company in a building quite near to the university. The building itself was grand and looked like the perfect place to start a firm. What more, it was also surrounded by lush greenery, almost as though Mother Nature had personally blessed the location.

Many other companies were already using the building as well. The popularity of the place really exceeded their expectations.

By starting their travel agency there, the other companies would definitely begin organizing their annual trips with their agency! They had avoided locations that were in the middle of nowhere for a reason. The revenue difference said it all.

It didn't take long for the two to arrive at the investment center within the building.

"Didn't we settle this over the phone? Where's the guy we're supposed to meet up with?" asked Gerald as both of them walked through the main entrance.

"I'm not sure either, brother. I called him earlier but the line was busy!"

"I see. Well, the center is crowded anyway. Let's just wait for a bit!" said Gerald as he checked the time while shaking his head with a helpless smile.

As he turned to look at Marven, Gerald noticed that he was staring at the entrance, looking visibly shocked. Raising an eyebrow, he followed Marven's gaze and was surprised to see a group of young people—who had just gotten out of a car—entering the investment center as well.

One of the girls was clinging on to a guy's arm as he shut the driver's seat behind him. The two looked awfully close, and they continued smiling brightly as they continued talking while entering the building. Two other girls followed closely behind them.

"There are a few group matches against other classes this morning, Raquel! Are you sure you don't want to participate in them?" asked one of the two girls.

"Haha... Group matches are simply too easy for her! Our Raquel's a professional! Of course she doesn't need to participate in group matches! With her capabilities, she can straight up enter the finals that are going to be held this evening! Am I not right?" replied the guy while chuckling.

"That's true... Raquel truly is the luckiest girl ever! With Jefferson by her side, she's now even able to hold her own training classes!" replied the other girl in envy.

"It's nothing much! It's just a training center... After all, I'm just doing what I love, right Jeff?" said Raquel with a sweet smile on her face.

"Indeed! However, I'll have to warn you to prepare yourself, Raquel. Training centers are pretty saturated in the market since there are a lot of other martial arts. While I'm not too familiar with Taekwondo, my sister used to train with you. She mentioned that competition among Taekwondo training centers is pretty strong as well. I had to pull quite a few strings to make this work, so once class is in session, you have to make sure to work hard with my sister!" replied Jefferson.

"Oh, don't worry about that! I know how competitive the market can be... That's the reason why I wanted the training center to be near Edificio! The crowd's always massive here!"

"Well, this place is... Well, let's not talk about that first. I'll just have to find my friend's brother first. He's the sales manager here!"

“Alright!”

“Raquel...?” said Marven as he walked right in front of her. His shock seeing her together with her group here was clear as day.

Seeing him here, Raquel immediately let go of Jefferson’s arm awkwardly.

Before this, she had told Marven that she needed some space away from him for some time. Her excuse had been that Marven could use that period of time to better himself while she herself focused on her training.

It was the only reason why Marven had agreed to give her more time alone.

However, her sudden immense change in attitude toward him was simply too obvious. Seeing how intimate she had been with Jefferson, Marven now knew the truth behind why Raquel kept giving him the cold shoulder.

Raquel was aware that she had been caught red-handed as well. It made her feel embarrassed to even look Marven in the face now.

“So... You were lying to me all this time!” said Marven, his hands trembling. His hands were shaking so much that all the documents for the investments he was holding fell to the floor.

Chapter 709

“L-lying? I have no idea what you’re going on about!” replied Raquel as she crossed her arms.

With quite a number of people in the center looking at them now, Raquel really wished she could simply hide from all this embarrassment.

“...Why... Why are you behaving this way...?” asked Marven as he took in a deep breath.

In response, Raquel only looked to the side in silence.

“Huh, so you’re Marvin, right? Raquel’s childhood friend or something? I’ve heard quite a bit about you! Just look at yourself! Get out of my sight already!” yelled Jefferson as he dangled his Audi A6 car keys right in front of Marvin’s face.

“Hello, hello! Your name was Jeff, right? I’ve been waiting for you to arrive!” said a suited employee out of the blue as he rushed over to shake hands with Jefferson, a friendly smile on his face.

“Hey there, Aaron! It’s been a while since we’ve last met! Sorry for the wait!” replied Jefferson as he returned the handshake.

“No problem! Alright, so let’s get straight to business. I’ve picked out a few pretty decent places for you already! Come have a look at them! And don’t worry about the prices just yet, I’ll definitely be giving you discounts!” said Aaron.

“Sounds great, let’s go choose one right now!”

After saying that, Jefferson began dragging Raquel by the arm along with him. Since Raquel didn’t really want to talk to Marvin anymore, she simply followed him, standing close to his side.

As she left, Marvin slowly collected his thoughts again. Recalling Gerald’s advice definitely helped him keep his cool. Too many things had happened too quickly earlier, which was why he couldn’t hold his anger for a brief moment.

Seeing that Marvin had successfully calmed himself down, Gerald simply patted him on the shoulder and led him back to their initial seats.

“Holy cr*p, Aaron! How could office areas be so expensive now? This isn’t like what I saw online at all!”

It hadn’t even been that long before Jefferson’s exclamations could be heard from a distance.

“Really, Jefferson? Do you honestly think this is too expensive? I’ll have you know that these are the cheapest ones here! Their placements are pretty decent as well!”

“Cheapest? The rent is around a million dollars per year! You may as well just rob us clean!” replied Jefferson, the shock on his face fully visible for all to see.

All this was really too much for Jefferson. Though it was true that his family was quite rich, if he really was going to spend a million dollars just to pay for the rent alone, his bank account would be empty in no time!

Raquel was equally as shocked. From the research she had done online, office area rent usually cost around three hundred and fifty thousand dollars per year.

With that cost range in mind, she had calculated that together with Edificio’s popularity and the fact that it was close to her school, she was going to get one hell of a sweet deal.

Little had she expected for things to not have gone her way in the slightest.

Three hundred and fifty thousand dollars had simply been the base rent price. As it turned out, the areas around the building had rents that could easily go over a million dollars!

It was at that moment when Raquel finally realized that luck alone wouldn’t get her through life. Life simply wasn’t that easy.

A million dollars just for the rent? In her dreams!

“There’s really no way I can afford that, Aaron!” added Jefferson, still visibly appalled.

He then turned to face Raquel before saying, “Let’s just find some other place, Raquel. This really is too much!”

Hearing that, Raquel felt disappointed.

Edificio was a popular place, famous for having a high consumption rate. In other words, only those who had a high status could afford to work in it.

Knowing that she couldn't match up to that status hurt Raquel's pride slightly.

She really liked the area too since it was very close to her campus. Imagine being able to set up her training center here! That would definitely help boost both her center's publicity alongside her great ego!

Oh well...

"Well, alright then..." replied Raquel with a nod, looking quite disappointed.

Hearing that, Aaron's enthusiastic attitude changed drastically as well. After a bit more small talk, he immediately rushed off with his documents.

"Let's go Raquel. It's still pretty early after all! We can still go look at other places. I'm sure there are plenty others with more manageable yearly rents!" said Jefferson.

Chapter 710

"I know... Still, I'd like to look around the area first!" replied Raquel. While she couldn't afford to pay the rent for a unit in this place, she still wanted to have a look around the building. After all, a girl could dream.

As the group continued hanging out around the area, a loud commotion could suddenly be heard coming from the end of the hallway.

A suited middle-aged man could be seen walking into the building, and many of the customers present greeted him respectfully when he passed by them. This wasn't just any regular person. He was the manager of Edificio!

"That's Edificio's famous manager, Alexander Brookes!" explained Jefferson to the three girls.

'So what if you know about him? He doesn't even know that you exist!' Raquel thought to herself, clearly still upset.

While a lot of people seemed to want to talk to Mr. Brooks, all he did was wave them off. He seemed to be in quite a hurry. The fact that he was also looking around hinted that he was trying to find something or someone.

All of a sudden, he noticed the four teenagers staring at him and he immediately ran over to Raquel's group.

Seeing him hurriedly approaching them, both Raquel and Jefferson found themselves growing excited.

"Mr. Wadley, I presume? Did Mr. Crawford not come along?" asked Alexander with a respectful smile as he looked at Jefferson.

Everyone in the building immediately fell silent, all of them looking at the group's direction.

"Mr. Wadley? Mr. Brookes, you must be mistaken! My name is Jefferson Brown..." replied Jefferson, his face flushed with excitement.

Even Raquel was biting her lower lip, trying her best to contain her excitement.

"Huh? Oh, I do apologize! I mistook you for someone else!" apologized Alexander rather awkwardly.

Earlier when Alexander had received a call, he had been notified that Marven Wadley was a student from Salford University who was also a friend of Mr. Crawford's! Since Gerald was involved, Alexander had been given direct orders from their company's director to approach Marven with the utmost respect!

"You kids looked like students from Salford University! Since my client's from that university as well, you'll have to forgive me for mistaking you for someone else!" added Alexander with an apologetic smile on his face.

“Oh? What a coincidence! Why don’t you tell me who your client is, Mr. Brookes? Maybe I could be of help!” said Jefferson.

He still couldn’t believe that he was currently speaking to the manager of Edificio. Jefferson was definitely going to prolong their conversation as much as he could!

Raquel nodded in agreement. After all, she knew quite a lot of people in their university as well.

“I’d appreciate that! The person I’m looking for is Mr. Marven Wadley. Have you seen him around anywhere?” asked Alexander.

Upon hearing his words, Raquel’s mind went completely blank.

“I... I’m sorry, could you repeat that?”

Mr. Brookes’ question was so shocking to her that she even wondered if she had hallucinated the name.

‘Marven Wadley? He’s looking for Marven? No way in hell! There’s got to be a mistake! With Mr. Brookes’ status, why would he ever want to meet up with Marven?’

“Of course. I’m looking for Mr. Marven Wadley. Are you familiar with him?” repeated Alexander, feeling as though none of them actually knew who his client was.

‘I guess I was too excited back there. I should’ve just given Mr. Wadley a call! Why did I assume that these kids even knew who he was?’ Alexander thought to himself.

Just as he took his phone out, Marven’s distinct voice could be heard calling out for him.

“There’s no need to call me, Mr. Brookes! I’m right here!”

Chapter 711

By then, Marven had already gotten up from his seat and was now approaching them.

He then shook hands with Alexander before saying, “Good day, Mr. Brookes! We’ve talked over the phone the day before. I tried calling you again earlier but you didn’t pick up!”

“I’m terribly sorry Mr. Wadley! I had to resolve some of my daughter’s school matters just now! Please forgive my tardiness!”

“Speaking of which, Mr. Wadley, you’ve told us to prepare a few documents the day before. Here’s the office area you were interested in and the 4D showroom model of the outlet,” said Mr. Brookes as he took a few documents out.

“Before proceeding any further, here’s a general breakdown regarding the payment. The outlet and the office area combined will cost around thirty-five million dollars since you’re paying the full lease upfront. I’ve made sure to give you a few discounts as well!”

“No problem. For now, let’s just have a seat first before discussing this any further!” replied Marven as he led Mr. Brookes to the side.

Meanwhile, Raquel was still standing at the same spot, though she was now hyperventilating. She felt as though her soul had just left her body.

‘How... How could this be? Why Marven? Since when did he become this powerful?!’

“Don’t be fooled by this fatty, Mr. Brookes. As if he could ever cough up thirty-five million dollars in cash!” said Jefferson looking extremely doubtful.

“Yeah, we know him well, Mr. Brookes! He definitely can’t pay that amount of money! You’re just wasting your time and energy talking to him!” added Raquel, visibly upset.

“Heh, you’re the ones who are mistaken. If you aren’t aware, Mr. Wadley’s Salford Star Travel Agency already has over two hundred projects signed! And the numbers keep on rising! We’ve checked their funding as well, and they have somewhere around eighty million dollars worth in capital!” explained Alexander as he smiled.

'Do they honestly take me as a fool? As if I could ever make a mistake about something like this! What funny kids.'

The group then watched in pure horror as Marven signed the contract with Alexander. With that done, Alexander immediately bowed respectfully at Gerald who had been watching silently at the side this entire time.

Seeing this only amplified Raquel's embarrassment.

She had only wanted to rent a place but she didn't have the money to do so.

Marven, on the other hand, had just bought two whole units in one go! And to think that his travel agency had already signed over two hundred projects!

'What is even happening anymore?'

With the contract signed, Gerald and Marven decided that it was high time to leave.

Jefferson didn't even dare to look at him anymore, choosing instead to keep his head low. Raquel herself was reluctant to simply accept this colossal defeat.

She then ran after Marven before asking, "Marven... You... You started your own company? What is this? Why didn't you tell me about any of this before?"

Raquel could feel her cheeks burning up as she asked the question.

"Oh, I just started it quite recently. We'll officially be operating in a few days though we still have quite a few projects to prepare for!" replied Marven, not feeling any need to hide this.

"I... see... Then, regarding how rich you suddenly became...?"

“Quite frankly, that’s none of your business.”

After saying that, he immediately turned around and left her there. Marven hadn’t felt this satisfied and proud of himself in ages.

“...Y-you!”

Raquel was so upset that she was speechless. She could only stomp on the ground in anger as she watched the two leave her behind.

‘How could this be? How could any of this actually be happening?!’ Raquel thought to herself repeatedly as she felt her frustration well up in her chest. It almost felt like she was ready to burst into a million pieces.

Meanwhile, Gerald came to realize that after settling all those necessary procedures, it was already nearing noon.

With that, the two had a quick lunch before returning to campus together.

While they made their way back to school, the news about Gerald and Marven starting a new company had already spread like wildfire. There were even rumors that they already had multiple projects on hand!

Even though the two had yet to return to class, all their classmates were already talking about it, and all the noise made for a rather huge commotion.

Chapter 712

The moment both of them opened the class door, they were immediately greeted by simultaneous screams and exclamations!

“Gerald! Marven! Where did both of you go?” asked a few pretty girls as they surrounded the duo while trying their hardest to spark a conversation. All of them had their eyes on Gerald as though they were trying to seduce him.

After all, everyone figured that it was Gerald who had given Marven a hand in this. While it was true that Marven was the director of the company, his main funds could only have come from Gerald. It was the reason why the girls were all trying to get into Gerald's good books.

Marven's status had heightened greatly as well, and quite a few of his classmates had already approached him to try their luck at striking a conversation with him.

While everyone was excitedly surrounding the two, Isabelle and Stella had completely opposite reactions. Both of them had darkened expressions on their faces. After all, they had bullied Gerald back when they didn't know that he was rich.

Now that Gerald had a sudden popularity spike, Isabelle was starting to panic as she turned to look at Fabian.

Back then, lots of people tended to surround Fabian when recess came. Today, however, nobody was even standing near him. Seeing that, Isabelle took the chance to walk over to him before patting him gently on the shoulder.

Fabian was obviously still slightly traumatized by the embarrassment from the donor appreciation event, so Isabelle was standing close to him to ensure that he remained calm.

"Umm... Is Fabian here?" asked a girl who stood at the door out of the blue.

"He is. What's the matter?" asked Isabelle.

"Oh, Mrs. South told me to invite him to participate in the competition this evening! She wants Fabian to perform as well!" replied the girl.

"Oh? That's great! Did you catch that, Fabian? The school's asking for you!" cheered Isabelle cheerily.

The only response she got out of him was a slight nod.

Seeing his lack of response, Isabelle then slammed on her desk before exclaiming, “Hey, everyone! Fabian’s participating in the Taekwondo match this evening! Let’s be sure to go there later to cheer him on!”

“Oh wow, congratulations Fabian!” shouted most of their classmates.

After all, while Gerald clearly had the money, Fabian was still a very influential figure in their university.

Since everyone wanted to see him perform as well, all of them began heading to the school’s stadium.

“Let’s go too, Gerald! Classes usually head to and sit together in the stadium!”

“Sure thing!” replied Gerald. After all, he honestly wanted to watch as well. He had always dreamed of becoming a martial arts master when he was younger.

Though Gerald slowly matured as he grew older, in turn giving up on his childhood dream, he still enjoyed watching martial arts performances.

Besides, even if Fabian had something against Gerald, Gerald didn’t really hold any grudges against him. All these reasons were why Gerald was still willing to follow the rest of the class to support him.

By the time they arrived there, the stadium was already fairly crowded. However, since Fabian had been invited to join, Gerald and his classmates were given front row seats so that they could cheer even harder for him.

After all, it was honestly a pretty grand occasion, and such occasions required large audiences and loud cheers for champions like Fabian.

As Gerald walked toward the row of seats that had been reserved for his class, he noticed the sheer amount of competitors who were participating. Even Maia and Warren were present.

A surprising thing for most of the students in the stadium was the fact that both Warren and Wyatt were standing side by side, each wearing Taekwondo uniforms.

Even more surprising was the fact that while everyone from Warren's class was holding on to signs while loudly cheering him on, not many were actually cheering for Wyatt.

That made it quite obvious that their class was well aware of how skilled Warren truly was.

While Fabian was warming up, he caught a glimpse of Warren, resulting in him getting instantly startled.

"He... He's here?" said Fabian in shock.

Chapter 713

It was also at that moment when Warren noticed Fabian's presence as well. He was equally as startled as Fabian was as the two eventually walked up to each other.

"You're... The champion of Sunnydale's Youth Taekwondo team, right? I watched your national match last year!" said Fabian, respect reflected in his eyes.

"That's me, and you got second place in this year's Salford Youth Taekwondo match, didn't you? I heard it was a close spar and that you could easily have ended up being the champion as well!" replied Warren, still a little surprised to see him there.

To think that both of them had been invited by the school to perform.

It didn't take long for the other contestants and the audience to begin looking in their direction after realizing that the two martial arts experts were having a conversation.

"Yeah... I recall that you got to a pretty high rank in the nationals too. Truth be told, I've always wanted to spar with you. Looks like this will be a great opportunity to do just that!" said Fabian as he stared at Warren, a hint of competitiveness in his voice.

Hearing that, Maia smiled at Warren, clearly proud of him. After all, not only was he an absolute prince charming, he also had a great reputation worldwide for his great Taekwondo skills.

Being recognized by even people from overseas only served to make Maia admire Warren even more.

“It truly is!” replied Warren, a soft smile on his face.

Upon hearing their request to spar, the organization team immediately approved of the suggestion. After all, two superior martial artists sparring against each other would definitely be the highlight of the event.

The champion of Sunnydale versus the first runner up in Salford. This was surely going to be quite the show!

Even quite a few of the contestants were getting pumped for the spar, feeling much more fired up now to give it their all in their final matches.

While Gerald continued focusing on the competition, he felt Marven nudging him by the elbow.

“Brother Gerald, look at who’s sitting over there!”

Turning to look at the direction Marven was pointing at, Gerald was surprised to see that both Jasmine and Mindy were also watching the match.

“Color me surprised! I didn’t think they’d be here too...”

As per usual, the two girls had hidden themselves in a corner of the stadium, refusing to socialize with anyone.

It wasn’t long after when Jasmine realized that Gerald was staring at her. For a brief moment, both she and Gerald made eye contact.

However, she quickly furrowed her brows before looking away again. Seeing this, Gerald didn't continue staring at her either.

"Say Gerald, I wonder if you've noticed this..."

"What exactly are you referring to?"

"Well, the two goddesses have secretly been glancing in your direction quite a lot recently. Especially Mindy. While both of them seem to only be interested in talking with each other, I've seen Mindy stealing glances at you on a few occasions during class!"

"And those aren't the only instances when they would stare at you. You know how Isabelle has been trying hard to deliberately go against you lately right? Well, whenever that happened, both of them would end up observing you as well! Hey brother, do you think they've fallen for you or something?" explained Marven, analyzing the situation.

"Hah! That utter bullsh*t! There's just no way!" replied Gerald as he shook his head before laughing it out.

Though he seemed like he wanted to say something else, Marven just couldn't find the words as he stared at the stage.

His eyes were now glued on Raquel who had just gotten on stage. Her match was about to begin.

While Marven had been cold to her earlier that afternoon, he honestly still had feelings for her.

After all, his relationship with her was quite similar to Gerald and Xavia's. That is, before Xavia underwent her drastic change after getting to know Yunus. Before that, however, if Gerald had heard news that she was in trouble, he would definitely still try to help her. Marven's current position was no different from Gerald's old one.

It was around eight minutes later when Raquel was finally kicked out of the circle, landing quite close to where Gerald and Marven were sitting! She had lost the match.

Realizing that Marven was there, she turned to look at him while holding on to her chest and biting her lower lip. To her utter disappointment, he only ignored her.

It almost felt as though she had lost something very important to her.

Time flew by quickly as the matches went on.

Chapter 714

Even though the event was about to end, the crowd only seemed to have grown larger. Everyone wanted to watch the match between Warren and Fabian.

The entire stadium was now so filled to the brim that in a way, it resembled a busy beehive.

Warren and Fabian themselves were currently warming up.

“Both of them are equally amazing! You know, Fabian’s the first runner up in our county while Warren’s the champion of Sunnydale! Their reputations are sky high!”

“Oh? Well this is definitely going to be interesting then! I’m still supporting Fabian though! Let’s hope he brings honor to the Salford Province!”

“I personally support Warren! He just looks so experienced!”

Almost all of the audience members were discussing the lively event among themselves, and that included Gerald’s classmates.

“Say Gerald, who do you think will win?” asked a few girls curiously as they surrounded him.

“I think they’re both equally great! I really can’t say!”

“Aww, come on! Don’t you know Warren too?” added one of the girls as she nudged his arm.

Gerald was definitely familiar with who he was. He was also all too clear that Warren’s fighting capability wasn’t limited to Taekwondo.

If he was going to be honest, Warren was most definitely going to come out on top. However, he didn’t feel the need to reveal his personal opinion.

“Why are you even asking him? As if he’d know anything about Taekwondo! You just have an extra dollar or two in hand, stop trying to push your opinions on others!” growled Isabelle as she turned around to glare at Gerald out of the blue.

It was as though she had a screw loose or something. Regardless of what Gerald did, she seemed to be completely against it. Gerald himself didn’t want to escalate the situation.

While he was well aware that it was slightly cruel of him to take the spotlight away from Fabian during the earlier donor appreciation event, constantly verbally abusing him definitely felt a bit too much.

Once the match began, Isabelle kept moving around, clearly blocking his view on purpose. She was definitely trying her hardest to make it hard for him to enjoy the competition, and understanding her motive only served to make Gerald’s blood boil even hotter.

It wasn’t long after before the match reached its peak moment.

Fabian had been on the attack from the very beginning of the match, striking both swiftly and relentlessly.

Warren himself focused much more on defense, barely even attacking at all.

Over time, Fabian’s attacks slowly began weakening. Though to the untrained eye his movements remained swift, his efficiency in attacking Warren was slowly depleting.

“He’s already lost,” said Jasmine emotionlessly.

“...Huh? Who’s lost? Warren? I mean Fabian attacks have been pretty swift and amazing! Warren’s, on the other hand, have so far been pretty simple. Is he really a champion or was it all just a bluff?” said Mindy.

While she hadn’t talked to Fabian before, she was still his classmate. Even if they weren’t remotely close, Mindy was still going to be more inclined to support him.

“Heh, I’ll make it simple. While Fabian’s attacks and movements may look cool, he’s already exposed all his fighting patterns to Warren throughout their spar together. Warren’s a pretty smart guy to hold on to his moves. He’ll be the champion, just wait and see!” explained Jasmine.

A few seconds after saying that, Warren made an incredibly rapid kick while Fabian was about to attack again. All it took was a single skilled and cool looking kick for Fabian to be knocked right out of the fighting area!

Seeing this, the crowd went wild with cheers, the noise amplified by the echoes caused by the stadium’s walls.

While everyone was in high spirits, Isabelle was the only one who looked incredibly worried.

After all, she had been cheering for him all this time! To think that he would lose to a simple kick! It made her feel slightly disappointed.

“What an amazing spar!” cheered Gerald, unable to hold back his own excitement.

Upon hearing that, Isabelle immediately turned around and glared daggers at Gerald.

“How is that amazing? Like you’d even know what amazing means!” shouted Isabelle in a very high pitch.

It was so loud that it immediately caught the attention of several people standing around them. They were all now looking at Gerald.

Chapter 715

“What exactly is your problem?” huffed Gerald.

“Humph! So Fabian lost, big deal! If you think you’re that good then why don’t you get on that stage and fight instead?!” yelled Isabelle.

It was crystal clear that she was simply directing all her anger and frustration on Gerald. She even picked her bottle up and tried splashing water all over Gerald!

Thankfully, he was able to avoid getting drenched in time. However, he was now extremely tempted to give her a tight slap across the face for doing that.

Luckily, their classmates stepped in and pulled Isabelle aside to prevent the situation from further escalating.

Maia herself simply glanced at Gerald for a brief moment before returning her gaze to Warren who seemed to be exuding a radiant aura. She knew he wouldn’t let anyone down.

At that moment, a judge walked up the stage and approached Warren before saying, “I’ve honestly never met someone your age to hold that much skill and grace! You truly are the champion of Sunnydale!”

The judge himself looked to be in his early forties, and he was most likely a famous figure in the field.

Hearing that, Warren simply smiled subtly as he shook his head.

“Hah, you call him skilled and graceful? You folk don’t even know the meaning of those words if you’re using them to describe him!” yelled a female voice from the audience, sounding extremely annoyed.

The statement made everyone go silent, and all the members of the audience simultaneously began seeking out the source of that voice.

It wasn't just anybody who had made that bold claim. The owner of that voice was none other than Mindy!

While the two girls had initially wanted to leave immediately once the match ended, hearing the judge kissing Warren's ass* alongside the scores of loud cheers made Mindy incredibly annoyed.

Her intention wasn't really to insult Warren just for Fabian's sake either.

She just couldn't stand all the compliments Warren was getting just for that minor feat. To her, the audiences' and the judge's responses were simply pushing it a bit too much for her taste.

Since everyone was well aware of who the two were, they simply remained silent and observed.

"Alright, that's quite enough!" said Jasmine as she began dragging Mindy by the elbow toward the exit.

"So I'm assuming you've seen true skill then? If you haven't, I really don't know why you're being so bitter!" shouted Maia in response.

While she really wasn't happy hearing someone insult Warren like that, Maia watched her tongue since she had no idea what the two were truly capable of yet.

"But of course! Screw your county champion! You're all novices compared to her!" boasted Mindy as she pointed at Jasmine.

She then whispered to her, "Jasmine, just go fight him already and put him in his place!"

Mindy was clearly only acting this way because she was caught in the heat of the moment.

Jasmine herself didn't like the idea. She didn't really enjoy competing with others. If she had wanted to participate in this event, she would've signed up for it a long time ago. However, she simply hadn't found any worthy opponents to spar as of yet.

Not wanting to escalate the situation any further, Jasmine simply shook her head and began to leave.

"Don't just leave after your friend said that! Come on, fight him if you dare!" said Maia with a smug grin on her face.

"It's alright, Maia. I won't fight her. You should know pretty well that I don't hit women!" replied Warren as he chuckled softly.

Upon hearing that statement, Jasmine stopped dead in her tracks.

"Fine then, let's fight!" she shouted as she looked Warren right in the eye.

She had only agreed because Warren had said that statement.

'Are all men really like this? Do they just expect women to be weaker than them in every aspect?'

She was especially irked by this since it was also the reason why she and Mindy weren't able to partake in any important matters within her family.

This was the last straw for her.

"Hell yeah!" exclaimed Mindy excitedly.

"Oh? Our Queen is going to fight?"

"Holy! What a treat!"

After hearing their conversation, the audience immediately began cheering again.

Warren simply shrugged at their response as though he didn't really care. After all, he knew he wasn't going to need much effort to win against her!

Chapter 716

A short while later, Jasmine returned though this time, she was donning her uniform. Her hair had been tied into a ponytail and the whole look complemented her beauty perfectly.

While most of the guys were gushing over her, many of the girls were green with envy.

Even Gerald had his eyes fixated on Jasmine. He hadn't really expected her to know how to fight.

Seeing her, Warren began blindfolding himself with a black strip of fabric. His action immediately swooned the audience.

How cool and manly!

After making sure that the knot was tight enough, Warren then taunted, "Come at me, now!"

While his actions were condescending, Jasmine didn't say a word. Instead, she lunged at him with lightning-quick speed!

With a loud thud, Warren was kicked right in the face!

He wasn't able to block or even dodge her attack. He only realized what was happening after being sent flying out of the ring and crashing hard onto the ground. Everything simply happened too quickly for him to even process!

The audience members were shocked, many even gasping at the sight before them.

Defeated, Warren immediately crawled up again before taking his blindfold off. He then stared at Jasmine, shocked by the fact that she had won against him in just a single move.

Maia was appalled as well. This girl was strong. A little too strong.

Jasmine herself was cool as a cucumber. Her next move was to taunt Warren, signaling him to attack her next.

Feeling his blood boil, Warren was momentarily blinded by rage as he lunged toward her.

Before he was even able to lay a finger on her, Jasmine launched a roundhouse kick, sending Warren flying out of the circle again! His whole body simply flopped to the ground as though he was a broken kite.

Everyone's jaws were now wide open. They simply couldn't believe what they were witnessing. Gerald himself was equally as shocked.

'She's good.'

Even though Warren was known to be great at Taekwondo, he couldn't even block a single one of Jasmine's attacks!

He had made a complete fool of himself in front of the entire stadium!

"Warren!" shouted Wyatt as he and a few others ran over to help him up. Warren couldn't even stand on his own at the moment and his hand was pressed gently against his wounded chest.

He was under immense pain and cold sweat trickled down his forehead as he looked at Jasmine, respect reflected in his gaze.

Even Fabian couldn't help but admire the woman standing atop the stage.

“Well done! That was amazing!” cheered Isabelle, pleased to see Warren now being humiliated by a girl from another class right after defeating Fabian.

Though Warren was friends with her own brother, she couldn’t help but express her pettiness.

Regardless of what she had to say, the rest of the audience cheered loudly as well.

“Humph! To think that the champion can’t even lay a finger on her! Typical of men! Boring!” said Mindy smugly as she turned to look at the other contestants.

“Any more of you even dare to challenge her?” added Mindy.

All the contestants only lowered their heads in response. Even Wyatt didn’t take up the challenge. After all, Warren was the best among them, yet he still ended up losing!

“Didn’t you say you knew a thing or two about Taekwondo, Gerald? Why aren’t you accepting her challenge now?” said Isabelle as she turned around and began mocking him.

“Dumb*ss! Weren’t you just cheering for Warren earlier? What’s wrong? Cat got your tongue?!” she added as she immediately took a step forward, stepping on his foot in the process.

The thing was, she was wearing platform shoes at that moment! Gerald could only clench his teeth in pain.

“Move it!” shouted Gerald as he kicked Isabelle from behind, causing her to fall face first.

“...You... You dare hit me?!” yelled Isabelle hysterically. She really hadn’t expected Gerald to actually fight back and humiliate her in front of such a large crowd!

“Wyatt! He... He hit me!” yelled Isabelle, looking in Wyatt’s direction.

Chapter 717

Wyatt was still busy helping Warren up when he heard his sister calling out to him.

Realizing that someone was trying to pick a fight with her, he immediately felt a burning rage in his chest as he rushed toward them.

He had already been embarrassed enough by the fact that he didn't even have the courage to challenge a girl who was able to beat Warren up. After all, he was one of the best fighters in the school.

Now that his sister was being bullied, he simply couldn't allow his ego to be crushed any further. If he didn't stand up for her now, he would definitely be the biggest disappointment to his family!

"How dare you! Do you have a death wish or something?!" roared Wyatt as he launched himself forward, directing a kick at Gerald's chest.

"Oh god, Wyatt's mad!"

"Of course he is! Not only did that guy hit his sister, he's probably equally as angry at himself for not accepting her challenge!"

"I know right? Wyatt's definitely going to take it all out on that guy!"

Everyone could feel themselves holding their breaths as Wyatt's foot came dangerously close to colliding with Gerald's chest...

However, before it could even reach Gerald, Wyatt suddenly found himself accelerating! It was as though Wyatt was simply a rag doll as Gerald flung him to the side, causing Wyatt to fall hard on the floor.

Wyatt felt like all his bones had simultaneously been shattered at that moment. He didn't even have the energy to crawl.

While Marven had initially been worried for Gerald after seeing Wyatt charging at him, he was now frozen in place, his jaw wide open.

Even Isabelle who had earlier been excited to see Gerald finally getting beaten up was paralyzed in shock.

Gerald could sense the entire stadium staring at him with widened eyes, reflecting their sheer disbelief.

Maia herself was at a loss. She had heard of how skilled Wyatt was, and she knew for a fact that Gerald wouldn't stand a chance against such an experienced fighter. What even was that? It was far too much of a stretch to say that Gerald had redirected his attack by accident.

"Jasmine! He..." exclaimed Mindy as she immediately ran toward her.

"I saw it too!" replied Jasmine as she furrowed her brows while staring intently at Gerald.

This was the first time Gerald had used the technique that Finnley had taught him.

Gerald hadn't even thought about using it. His body had simply instinctually moved on its own. He didn't even have time to adjust his force, which explained why Wyatt was feeling so hurt.

What a truly practical technique.

As he thought about that, everyone else in the hall had immediately grown to have a better opinion of Gerald.

"Holy cr*p! To think that such an experienced fighter like Wyatt was one-upped!"

"Yeah! After defeating Warren, it now looks like our queen has a new opponent!"

"I know right? Gerald! Get on stage and restore our pride as men!"

Shouts like these were being thrown from all around the stadium.

Though it was awe-inspiring to see how Jasmine had both beauty and brawn, it wasn't a stretch to say that most of the guys there felt humiliated that nobody, not even Fabian who was the best martial artist in their school, dared to challenge her

'What kind of men are we if we can't even defeat a girl!'

"Get on stage, Gerald! Defeat her! Defeat her!" chanted many of the male students there.

As for the female students, they immediately started chanting for Jasmine to take Gerald down as well, hoping to encourage her.

"You should go for it, brother! Still, I didn't know you were this good at fighting!" said Marvin as he massaged Gerald's shoulders.

Jasmine herself seemed to be intrigued by this turn of events, and she simply stared at Gerald as she prepared to fight her next opponent.

Gerald had yet again found himself in a dilemma.

After all, he knew how skilled Jasmine was, and he was also aware of how brutal her attacks tended to be. There was no way he would ever go up against her voluntarily.

Chapter 718

"Come fight her like a man, you coward!" yelled Mindy as she looked at Gerald. She honestly wanted to see both of them spar.

"Yeah! Fight like a man!" chanted several of the other girls in the stadium as well.

Gerald could only shake his head with a wry smile on his face. There was no way he was going to be able to worm out of this one.

Knowing that, he could only agree to the challenge and slowly got onto the main stage.

Throughout his brief training with Finnley, he had been taught a total of five self-defense moves. Each move was different, prioritizing on protecting the user from either punches, kicks, or weapons both long and short. The fifth technique, on the other hand, could be utilized under situations where one was being restricted from the back.

While all these would definitely help Gerald defend himself should he come face to face with danger, they were still essentially only self-defense moves. They were completely useless in a fight like this.

Upon entering the ring, Gerald was just about to try figuring out which move to use against Jasmine when she immediately lunged toward him!

Despite being a girl, her speed was no joke. She must've thought that Gerald was some sort of martial arts master.

“Oh! She’s going all out!”

“She seems to be exerting much more strength now!”

“Now this is going to be interesting! How will Gerald react?!”

The crowd was going wild, speculating the end results with extreme excitement.

“He definitely won’t be able to take a hit! He simply doesn’t look like he has enough strength!”

“Then how did he throw Wyatt to the side so easily? Was that possibly just a coincidence?”

While the audience continued discussing among themselves, Jasmine herself stopped right in front of Gerald before gracefully leaping and performing a spinning kick in mid-air! Her movements were so swift and packed with force that it almost seemed as though she had been practicing this move for years.

Gerald however, kept a cool head and recalled what Finnley had taught him.

‘Regardless of the attack, if your opponent attacks with a kick, block with the second move.’

Hoping for the best, Gerald then waited for the perfect opportunity and once he saw it, he grabbed Jasmine by the shin and pressed down on a pressure point. With just the slightest amount of force, he shifted his body to the side, successfully countering the kick!

In no time at all, Jasmine found herself completely off balance, just like what Wyatt had experienced moments earlier.

The very next second, she found herself colliding against the floor right outside the ring!

“...What?”

Everyone was momentarily stunned silent, especially Warren and Maia who had been more appalled than anyone else.

Isabelle and the crowd of girls who had initially been rooting for Jasmine were left speechless as well.

‘... Jasmine... Who had easily defeated Warren was one-upped by Gerald?!’

“Jasmine!” shouted Mindy in a panic, breaking the awkward silence as she ran toward her and helped her up.

While Jasmine was badly wounded on her shoulder, her priority was to first look at Gerald from where she stood. She had mixed feelings welling within her as she held onto her right shoulder with Mindy’s support.

Even from a young age, Jasmine had always aimed to be the very best. To do so, however, she had to pay the price for it. For the longest time, she was well aware that her peers were nowhere near the level she was.

Though her martial arts skills had always been something she was extremely proud of, she finally lost for the first time today.

Maia herself still had her jaw wide open, utterly shocked by this development as the audience members began cheering again, their cheers echoing throughout the stadium.

“Ow! Be a little gentler!” said Jasmine.

It was now already night and Mindy was busy tending to Jasmine’s wounds in their room back in the Fendersons mansion.

“It’s all swollen up! God, I’m just so angry! We’re classmates so how could Gerald treat you so roughly! Just look at the condition of your shoulder! If he angers me one more time I don’t care even if we’re classmates! I’m ordering someone to take him out!” huffed Mindy.

“Don’t be rash! I lost and that’s that!” replied Jasmine.

“What do you mean, lost? He clearly cheated!”

“Calm yourself, Mindy. I would’ve been able to tell if he really was cheating. I’ll apply the medicine myself later. Also, could you gather all twelve of my teachers? I have something to tell them,” said Jasmine as she slid her clothes back on before looking at Mindy.

Chapter 719

Hearing that, Mindy immediately left her room to notify her teachers. However, she returned not too long after.

“None of the teachers are around, Jasmine. The rest of the adults in the mansion aren’t present either. They’re having their meeting in the meeting room! Have you forgotten? Today’s the day they host their annual big meeting!” explained Mindy.

“Ah, I just remembered. No matter then, I’ll just talk to them tomorrow,” replied Jasmine with a nod as she sat on her bed.

It didn’t take long before Jasmine realized that Mindy looked as though she still had more to say.

“What’s wrong?” enquired Jasmine.

Hearing that, Mindy then skipped over to Jasmine’s side before cheekily asking, “Say Jasmine, what do you think they talk about in that mysterious annual family meeting that only our family’s males can attend?”

“How should I know?” replied Jasmine as she shook her head before realizing something.

“...What are you scheming of, Mindy?” asked Jasmine as she looked Mindy in the eye.

“Ehehe... You know very well what I’m thinking about. Come on, they never allow us to look into it! Not only do we not know why we have to remain home most of the time, we barely know anything about our own family! At the rate you’ve been training all these years, I’d say you’re definitely already stronger and much more talented than most of the men in this family! Yet we’re still being left clueless about the bigger picture!” said Mindy as she sighed.

Jasmine’s expression only continued darkening the more she heard Mindy’s words. The things Mindy said felt like thorny vines entangling her heart.

‘...Well, it is true that I’ve worked hard all these years just to prove that I’m better than those men. To prove that I could handle any of our family’s business as well as they could...’

Yet even after all her efforts, her grandfather never once took any notice of her talents nor did he acknowledge any of her hard work.

“Why don’t we eavesdrop? I know you want to know what’s really going on in the family as much as I do,” whispered Mindy.

While Jasmine would definitely have instantly refused to do so in the past out of fear of angering her grandfather, after hearing Mindy’s persuasion this time, Jasmine was feeling a little hesitant for the first time in a long while.

‘If this goes on, does that mean that they’ll continue hiding all this from me and Mindy forever? Do I really want to continue living so obliviously?’

After a brief moment, Jasmine shook her head.

‘...No, she’s right. I absolutely refuse to continue living like this!’

Jasmine was going to rebel this time.

She then looked at Mindy and the two nodded to each other before sneakily making their way to the meeting room.

It seemed that they were just in time to catch the start of the meeting.

“Second, Third, how are the preparations? To successfully deal with something this big, the weapon itself is an extremely important factor!” said an old man with a walking stick who sat on the seat of honor as he looked at two young men. He was the family’s patriarch.

“The preparations are almost complete, father. However, even with both of us combined, we still couldn’t complete the hardest mission assigned to us. If only big brother was still alive, we might’ve...”

Jasmine, who had already been eavesdropping, began listening even more intently at this point.

After hearing what he had to say, the old patriarch immediately began tearing up before saying, "...Yes. If he was still alive, the Fendersons wouldn't be as passive as they are today! It's such a shame that he was murdered... God truly guided an angel back into his arms that day!"

Upon saying that, a tear trickled down his wrinkled cheeks.

Chapter 720

"Indeed... After the young master passed on, no other Fenderson was able to challenge our rivaling family. After all, you were already at an old age when that happened, big brother. It truly is a shame... Thank god our little Jasmine is extremely talented. Her skills could easily match the young master's! With enough training from us, she could become even more amazing!" said another old man.

"While I've considered allowing her to participate in this, she's still Ethan's only daughter. She's the last of her bloodline! I've been protecting her from the outside world for the longest time... I just don't have the heart to let her in on all this!" exclaimed the Fenderson patriarch.

"She's still young and she'll eventually be married off as well. I should also mention that not even young master Ethan had been able to handle the family. What can she do? Her parents had both been killed in that incident, do you think they'd hesitate to take down a little girl?" said another middle-aged man with an oily face.

Hearing that, the second young master—who went by the name of Joseph Fenderson—slammed his hands on the table as he glared at the middle-aged man. "What exactly do you mean by that, Noah Schuyler? Have we been treating the Schuyler family a little too well for you to disrespect us like this?"

"I would never! My old fart of a dad keeps reminding me that the Schuylers are forever indebted to the Fendersons! He's been doing it ever since I was a mere child! I was told to listen to everything you say and I've been doing exactly that for the past few years! I've even helped you secure power over the southwest region. I can at least take credit for that, right?" replied Noah as he stared at Joseph.

Apart from the Fendersons, a few members from their vassal families were present as well. After all, large families like theirs were bound to have at least a few vassals under their power.

It was similar to how many people would begin working under the Crawfords whenever Gerald formed any new organizations.

“That’s true, Noah has helped the Fendersons quite a bit in the past two years. Even our family has been able to feed off of his credit!” muttered a few other present members.

It was at that moment when the patriarch slammed his walking stick onto the floor, causing everyone to fall silent.

“If you have something to say, just spit it out...” said the old man as he sighed.

“Oh, it’s nothing much, master... It’s just that the young master has already passed for so many years. We’ve even mentioned splitting the inheritance before, but back then you said that we had to wait till Jasmine grew up. Well, she’s clearly grown up quite nicely! Isn’t it high time to do what you’ve promised? Ethan doesn’t even have an heir anyway!”

“Humph! I knew it! Our young master may have passed away a long time ago, but exacting revenge comes first! Yet here you are, trying to split his inheritance!”

“Hah, seek revenge? Putting it frankly, it very much seems that you guys don’t even dare to do it! Besides, him leaving his inheritance to you two proves that your skills are limited! It isn’t a stretch to claim that the Fendersons are becoming weaker by the second! Just let us handle his inheritance so that the Fendersons get a better chance at growing again!”

“Noah’s right!” chimed in a few other members.

While Joseph and his brother struggled to come up with an appropriate response, the door was flung open with a loud bang.

Jasmine then entered the meeting room, her eyes reddened and cold as she scanned through every member in the room. Her gaze eventually locked on to Noah.

“Uncle Schuyler, tell me who killed my parents. Who exactly is the enemy? I’ll exact revenge for all of us!”

Seeing her barge in, the patriarch simply sighed deeply, sure that she had overheard their entire meeting.

Nobody dared to speak a word, not even Noah who was now looking to the side, pretending as though he hadn't heard her question.

After releasing another deep sigh, the patriarch glared at Jasmine before saying, "...Let's take a short break. Jasmine! You come with me!"

Chapter 721

"Did you hear that?"

The patriarch asked the moment she entered the study.

Jasmine nodded firmly.

If the fact that the younger generation of their family was permanently grounded was enough to make Jasmine gloomy and depressed every day, then she would forever be grieving over the incident which involved her parents.

At least when she was grounded, she could throw a tantrum or complain about it. But ever since she was young, no one had ever told her anything about her own parents. She'd only receive beatings when she asked about them.

"Do you hate me for hiding it from you for so many years?"

The patriarch asked.

"No, I don't hate you. I understand that you hid it from me for my sake!"

Jasmine said.

“Jasmine, I saw your performance over the past few years. Frankly speaking, I’m very proud to have a granddaughter like you. Your parents in heaven should be very proud of you too.”

The patriarch patted Jasmine’s shoulders lightly.

“Then grandpa, who is the enemy of our Fenderseon family all this while? And were they responsible for what happened to my parents?”

Jasmine asked.

The patriarch took a deep breath. He then looked toward a corner in the study and nodded slightly.

“I know that it’s impossible to hide these things from you. You’ve become very outstanding, and you have great capabilities. I guess I can tell you some of the things now.”

The patriarch paused for a short while before he said, “That’s right. Our Fenderson family has always had a strong enemy, and that’s the Crawford family!”

“The Crawford family? Why haven’t I heard of this before?”

Jasmine sounded stunned.

“Of course, that family doesn’t have to lie low like us. There are only a handful of families who are able to achieve their level of superiority and influence after all! Besides, I’ve kept you within our gates for over 20 years now. How much of the outside world have you actually seen?”

The patriarch asked.

“But why? Why does the Crawford family treat us like this?”

Jasmine was filled with resentment.

“It’s a long story. To put it briefly, our feud started from my generation, and it carried over to your parents’ generation. You absolutely must remember this. Always, always be wary of people from the Crawford family! Are we clear?”

The patriarch said pitifully.

“Alright, grandpa!”

“Besides, Jasmine, since you’ve known some of the things regarding our family, I’m afraid that I’m no longer able to hide it from you even though I intended to originally. Currently, you’ve seen the inner workings of our family. I’ve even made the necessary preparations. From now on, you’re the heir of all your father’s properties and assets. Besides, you’re the only female in our family who can inherit the family assets other than her.”

The patriarch said.

Jasmine appeared excited. Besides, she knew who that other lady was.

Having said that, the patriarch looked dull and gloomy.

“I acted too rashly that year. Your aunt is still hiding from me, unwilling to even see my face. Xara is just a silly child. She’s so stubborn. Although I sounded quite cruel, the person I worry and care about the most is still your aunt!”

The patriarch burst into tears.

“Jasmine, promise me one thing.”

“Grandpa, I understand it. I’ll certainly find where my aunt is.”

Jasmine said.

That incident happened when she was still very young.

The old butler of their family once told Jasmine about that.

There was once a very exceptional lady in the Fenderson family, and she was Jasmine's aunt—Xara Fenderson.

But at one point, she violated the rules of the family, so she was excommunicated from the family by Jasmine's grandfather.

Actually, her grandfather had always been looking for her aunt during all these years. But he could not discover her whereabouts no matter how many times he tried.

It was the cause of her grandfather's excruciating pain.

Now, Jasmine was going to inherit her father's property. Hence, she would also take up the responsibility of tracking down her aunt.

At the same time, she wanted very much to meet her aunt, who was still admired deeply by the members of the Fenderson family. Moreover, the others always said that she resembled her aunt. She was the young lady of the family at that moment. She resembled her aunt in terms of both capability as well as physical appearance.

'What kind of a woman was she?

'Who did she fall in love with? How could my grandpa be so cruel and kick her out of the family?'

At last, her grandfather took a photograph out and handed it to Jasmine. The woman in the photograph was indeed very beautiful. Her look was breathtaking to say the least.

That woman was her aunt—Xara Fenderson.

Chapter 722

Certainly, her grandfather would step forward and intervene since she was going to inherit the property forcefully.

Jasmine did not have to worry about the Schuyler family. Although the Schuyler family was quite powerful and influential, they did not dare to cross the line indiscriminately.

Jasmine walked out of her grandfather's study. She tucked away the photograph properly, and she was about to return to her bedroom.

"Jasmine, I've been waiting for you for a while now!"

Under the cover of night, there was a young man standing outside in the courtyard.

"Yael Schuyler, why are you waiting for me?"

Jasmine said coldly.

"I heard from someone else this afternoon that you were hurt. Got beat up by someone else, I heard. I was worried about you, so I came to ask you about it. Don't worry, Jasmine. I'll make him pay a heavy price for it!" Yael said.

"It's none of your business. Let me tell you. If you dare to even lay a single finger on my classmates, I'll certainly never forgive you!"

Jasmine got angry all of a sudden.

"Fine. I'll forgive that guy. Jasmine, don't be angry!"

Yael was quick to respond.

“Do you have anything else to say to me? If there’s nothing, I’m going back now.”

After that, she took one last glance at Yael with an expression of disgust before she stormed off.

“Jasmine! Jasmine!”

Yael called out after her.

But Jasmine had gone beyond earshot.

Yael clenched his fists tightly.

“Sir, I’ve told you before. She won’t be able to see it even though you’re so nice to her!”

At that moment, an old man who held his hands behind his back walked out from behind a tree next to the road.

On that dark night, the old man looked quite frightening.

It was because half of his face was white while the other half was black. He seemed like a strange entity that had risen from hell.

Both of his eyes seemed gloomy, and they were sunken into his eye sockets. Coming out of nowhere, he was definitely alarming.

Besides that, his whole frame seemed pretty skinny. It seemed almost like he could be blown away by just a soft breeze.

“What do you mean?”

Yael asked.

The old man smiled. "One always creates opportunities for oneself. They never wait for the chance to befall them. She doesn't care for your love because the help you offer to her is too trivial and meaningless!

"The true trick lies in making her feel as if she can't do anything without you, and she needs to rely on you for literally everything!"

The old man's voice sounded like a crow.

Yael nodded slightly.

"I see!"

A cunning smile broke across his face.

On the next day, Gerald arrived early at school to attend the morning classes.

It was because the first two periods were a union class.

Hence, he called out to Marvin, who had arrived earlier than usual the moment he reached the classroom.

At that moment, there were not many students in the classroom which was currently being used for the joint class.

But both Jasmine and Mindy were already present.

They looked up at him the moment Gerald entered the class.

Especially Mindy, whose gaze showed hints of hatred for him.

Gerald approached Jasmine with an apologetic look on his face. "I'm truly sorry for what happened yesterday. I didn't do it on purpose!"

After all, Jasmine was only a girl. He was quite anxious at that moment. She was initially daydreaming, and his sudden apology threw her off momentarily.

Gerald felt quite bad about yesterday's incident. It was because he was forced to cash in on some opportunity that presented itself before him. If he indeed fought seriously with her, the chances of him winning that fight were pretty much nil.

On the other hand, Jasmine felt as if her pride was being challenged upon hearing what Gerald said.

In response, Jasmine replied in a particularly cold manner, something which one rarely witnessed. "I'm relieved to be able to see you alive and kicking this fine morning!"

"Huh?" responded Gerald.

Chapter 723

Actually, Gerald intended to talk longer with Jasmine.

But after Jasmine said that, there seemed to be a look of resentment on her face when she turned her face away from him.

Clearly, she was in no mood to talk to him.

Gerald then did not force his way into a conversation with her. Instead, he ran and sat behind the two sisters.

Mindy then turned around and rolled her eyes at Gerald.

There was no doubt that in her mind, Gerald was just an honest man. But to her surprise, not only was he filthy rich, but he was also pretty skilled at martial arts.

But Jasmine herself was quite an exceptional fighter. How could she be defeated by him so easily?

If Jasmine did not specifically request for her to not mess with Gerald, she would've asked Jasmine to have a re-match with that man again.

At first, they were just waiting for the lesson to commence. But after waiting for a while, they did not see many students entering the class.

They only saw a few girls from the next class enter their room.

Usually, the class would've been packed by this time.

"Where are the students? Why isn't anybody coming?"

At that moment, the teacher had arrived. Seeing that there were only a few students sitting in the class, the teacher could not help but ask the female student who had just entered the class curiously.

Both Jasmine and Gerald were quite curious about this too. They peered in the girl's direction, expecting to hear an answer from her.

"Okay, so it seems like something has happened to the class rep of the third class. There's a crowd standing outside the door of their class. I've no idea what's happening in there but a lot of the guys in our class have gone there to take a look at the situation," replied the female student.

Both Gerald and Marven glanced at each other.

That day, they went to the class directly early in the morning. They did not return to their class.

No doubt, something bad has gone down.

It might even be related to Isabelle too.

“Hey, what happened?”

Upon hearing that it was indeed related to Isabelle, Marven asked with a look of schadenfreude painted across his face.

“I’m not sure about the details. It seems like Isabelle had a fight with someone else. But she wasn’t in the fight herself. It should be a fight that happened because of what she did. At least this is what I heard. Isn’t she your class rep? Why don’t you know about it?”

The female student asked.

“Oh, we came to the union class directly. You can’t expect to know what went down in that class!”

Marven chuckled and sat down directly.

He proceeded to call his buddy to ask about the situation.

After he hung up the phone, he slapped the table excitedly. “Haha! Finally, justice is served. A hero has finally come and taught Isabelle a lesson. That’s what you get for acting so smug and arrogant in class all the time!”

Isabelle was pretty much the only person who gave Marven and Gerald a hard time in class.

Naturally, Marven was delighted to hear that something bad had happened to Isabelle.

“What happened?”

Gerald asked out of curiosity.

“Gerald, didn’t Fabian lose the battle yesterday? It was supposed to be the time when Fabian got his moment and earned his glory. But who knew that you’d deprive him of that chance at the last minute? Obviously, Isabelle couldn’t be reconciled with that fact. She came to class today with Wyatt, Warren, and that girl who’s been tagging beside him. But a couple of rich kids decided to point their fingers at them, blaming them and ridiculing them in front of everyone. They mocked these clowns for embarrassing themselves yesterday!”

“Now, both you and I know how bad Isabelle’s temper is. She went up to one of the kids and gave him a painful slap without any prior warning.”

“Haha! Of course, that kid retaliated. I mean, who wouldn’t? Especially when it’s Isabelle we’re talking about here. Both Warren and Wyatt then took it upon themselves to beat those rich kids up. Can you guess who they beat up at last? It’s the young master from the Moore family—Colton Moore! Colton’s an extravagant little bastard. He’s always arrogant, reckless, and ruthless. You think his parents ever spanked him when he was young? I think not! Hence, he called some thugs over to teach that b*tch a lesson! I heard that there were more than ten cars that rolled into the school,” said Marvin

Gerald nodded.

Gerald had a lot of experience with these sorts of incidents.

But it was not like he needed to reach out with a helping hand each time.

Even though it happened in his class, Isabelle was the one who brought the trouble upon herself. Frankly-speaking, Gerald wished badly for Colton to teach her a hard lesson, so he could vent out his frustration on her.

He was afraid that it might influence him. If not, he would’ve rushed straight to the scene to witness the most epic beatdown of the century!

'Heh heh!'

Chapter 724

"They're done for. Gerald, I heard that the Moore family is dependent on an especially large and influential family in Salford Province—the Schuyler family. They could quite literally do anything and get away with it scot-free!"

Marven proceeded to explain the complex familial and political relations within Salford Province.

Both Jasmine and Mindy, who were sitting in front of them overheard their conversation rather clearly.

It was pretty clear that they were eavesdropping when Marven mentioned the Schuyler family. Jasmine tilted her head the moment they reached this topic.

After a short while, they heard footsteps outside of the classroom.

Finally, the students who should have been here ages ago filed into the classroom.

Isabelle was the last person to enter the class.

Stella was the one who propped her up. Both of Isabelle's cheeks were flushed red from all the slaps she had received. Besides that, she was crying vehemently.

As she was crying, she said, "I didn't realize that it was him at that moment. I didn't mean it when I attacked him."

"There, there. Thank goodness, the faculty director and counselor came rushing in to stop them. They asked you to come to class first. If not, you'll certainly suffer horrible consequences for picking a fight with them today!"

Stella looked gloomy when she tried to console her sobbing friend.

No doubt, the Moore family was too strong and powerful. As rich as Stella's family was, they couldn't compare with what the Moore family had under their possession.

Even Fabian's family paled in comparison to the Moore family.

That was why everybody was standing by and watching the scene, not daring to intervene, even when Isabelle was slapped by Colton twice just now.

If the faculty director did not find some excuse to go and negotiate with Colton and asked Isabelle to attend the class first, God knows what would have happened to Isabelle under their hands.

Actually, the faculty director wanted Isabelle to seize that opportunity and make use of her connections.

Besides, the teacher knew that she would not be able to begin her lesson that day. After all, regular teachers did not dare to stand against the will of Mr. Moore.

After the teacher answered a call, the teacher did not return to the class again.

"How? What should we do now? I called my family just now. My mom cried as she told me that my dad has been taken away from his company by the people from the Moore family. They even slapped my dad several times. What should I do now?"

Isabelle finally realized what fear was.

Her father was taken away and got beat up because of her own foolishness.

She was now left with no options, and she did not know who she should ask help from.

On the other hand, both Stella and Fabian went silent.

They both received calls from their families, warning them not to be a busybody.

After all, the incident happened primarily because of Isabelle, who took the lead to beat the rich kids up.

To make things worse, she slapped the kid in front of everybody at school. This meant that there was an aspect of humiliation involved in addition to mere physical abuse.

Colton and a few other rich heirs were beaten up by both Warren and Wyatt.

Colton was the one who challenged them first, but when seen as a whole, more blame clearly landed on Isabelle's shoulders.

Fabian did not dare to meddle in the incident anymore. He took his seat with his head hung low.

"Scumbag! You're disgusting!"

One of the girls, who couldn't get over the fact that he lost to Gerald yelled in his face.

But at this point, Isabelle did not even bother with Fabian since there were plenty more things to be afraid of.

At that moment, there were a few students who had arrived outside the class.

Gerald looked up and saw Warren, Maia and Wyatt.

At that moment, their facial expressions were sour, as if something terrible had befallen them. They entered the class in a single-file wordlessly.

"Wyatt, Warren, what should I do? My family is being threatened!"

Isabelle asked them in a desperate tone.

Wyatt put his hands at his waist and lowered his head.

As for Maia and Warren, they had run out of options too. At that moment, Warren chose not to act rashly. But there was still the risk that he had to pay a tremendous price too.

After all, he and Maia...

Chapter 725

At that moment, when everyone had run out of options.

“Jasmine, why did you ask me to come out here?”

Mindy asked.

It didn't take long for her to understand what was going on. “Oh... I see. Don't tell me that you want to...”

Mindy shook her head in resignation and said, “I'm gonna be honest with you, I don't like Isabelle either. Just look at how she treats her classmates. Besides, Warren is a fool through-and-through. It's fine if they get themselves in trouble. Why do you have to step forward though?”

“I understand what you mean, but we don't have any kind of resentment towards them. After all, we're classmates. They've never stepped on my tail before anyways. Besides, those girls even cheered me on enthusiastically during the competition yesterday, including Isabelle!

“I can't bear doing nothing about this. Besides, I've heard about Colton before. He's Yael's subordinate. Maybe this incident is somehow related to Yael!”

Jasmine said.

“D*mn! Jasmine, you could start being a novelist judging by how convincing your deduction is. Isn’t this just a simple conflict between students?”

Mindy asked helplessly.

Jasmine shook her head. “I don’t think things are as shallow as it seems. Maybe it’s because of my intuition. Certainly, I hope that I’m only overthinking things. But as her classmate and a decent human being, I should really help her out!”

With great reluctance, Jasmine whipped out her cell phone.

She called Yael’s number.

“What’s the matter Jasmine? Why did you call me all of a sudden?”

Yael asked.

“Nothing much. I just need your help regarding an incident. Colton is your subordinate, isn’t he? He’s just gotten into a fight with my classmate. I hope that you can persuade him to stop what he’s doing.”

Jasmine said.

“Ah? Is that so? You’re in the university now, aren’t you? What a coincidence, I’m at a company near your university. Let’s meet up and talk about it.”

Yael responded immediately.

Although Jasmine did not want to see him, she could not turn him down since she was asking for his help.

After all, the Fenderson family normally would not ask for help even if they were driven into a corner.

Jasmine inheriting her family's assets did not mean that the Fenderson family would return to the limelight immediately.

At least, they were not planning to do that for the moment.

Jasmine mumbled a half-hearted response before hanging up.

Soon, Yael reached the university.

He was holding a bouquet of fresh flowers in his hand when he arrived. "Jasmine, if I recall correctly, this is the first time you took the initiative to call me and ask me out on a date!"

"Spare me the nonsense. Have you settled the issue yet?"

Jasmine asked with her arms crossed.

Yael was initially stunned by her demeanor. After that, he smiled and said, "I did call him up. But that b*stard Colton had received a pretty bad beating this time it seems. He was deeply furious, and he didn't even listen to me. I don't really have any idea how to solve this issue and it's not like I can beat that kid up, since we've practically grown up together!"

"Also, it seems like your classmate was the one who assaulted him first. It doesn't seem reasonable for me to be meddling in this affair!" said Yale.

"You!"

Jasmine was slightly stunned.

"Fine, I won't ask for help from you. I'll arrange for the people from the other families to do it."

It did not occur to Jasmine that Yael would not even do such a trivial act for her.

At that moment, she acted out of spite and called up a few other families who were dependent on her family.

She wanted them to intervene in settling this dispute.

In the end, they found all kinds of excuses to turn her request down.

Standing next to her, Yael smirked silently to himself.

Jasmine suddenly realized what was happening.

It was as she had thought. This incident wasn't as simple as it looked on the surface.

Besides, those families were clearly following the lead of the Schuyler family.

"Stop being so stubborn, Jasmine. If you talk to me nicely, I can do everything for you. You wouldn't even need to worry yourself with Colton, or what the other families are doing. Anything you want, do you understand what I'm saying?"

Chapter 726

Yael said.

Just when Jasmine stopped paying attention, he took the chance and grabbed her hand.

"Get lost!"

Jasmine reacted almost instantaneously. She shoved away Yael's hand. The force with which she shook off his grip was so strong that it smashed the fresh flowers Yael was holding into the ground.

Yael stared at the roses which were scattered all over the floor. He was stupefied.

In the university, there were a lot of girls who passed by them. They all stopped in their tracks and stared at the scene before them.

“Wow! Did he literally just get shot down!?”

“Ha ha! This guy seems so well dressed. Did he still get turned down by the Goddess herself?”

“That’s right. Ain’t no way our Goddess will give away her love and affection to some random chap.”

The girls couldn’t help but cover their mouths as they mocked Yael.

After all, looks weren’t the only thing women looked at when judging a man. They would still have to consider his style, how his clothes fit him, how expensive his clothes are and all that jazz. It didn’t matter much if a man was below average in terms of looks. He at least had to be well-dressed and possess a good disposition.

If a man dressed himself up poorly, he would be a lowly person no matter how handsome he was.

But now that the guy has failed in confessing his love, no matter how well-dressed he was, he’d no longer be worthy in their eyes.

Hence, they started whispering and giggling to each other.

And those laughs were heard by Yael.

It filled him with deep humiliation and anger. ‘If it weren’t for you, Jasmine, I’d never suffer such humiliation!’

“Jasmine, what do you mean? Don’t you see how much I love you? Why won’t you reciprocate my feelings?”

Yael had always been directing his frustrations inwards. This was his final straw. It was the day he finally let out his inner turmoil.

In the heat of the moment, he lashed out angrily at Jasmine.

“You’re crazy!”

Jasmine peeked at Yael once in disgust. She then turned around swiftly and was about to leave. She wasn’t in the mood to listen to what he had to say next.

It was because Jasmine knew clearly what kind of a person Yael was. The only feelings she had for him and his father was disgust and despise, nothing more, nothing less.

“I have loved you for such a long time. You don’t even give me a chance to hear me out. Stop right there!”

Yael’s eyes had become bloodshot. He felt like his pride had just been trampled over.

The humiliation he suffered before was different. Now, Jasmine did not even care that they were in front of everybody when she shot him down.

He then ran and caught up with her. He grabbed Jasmine’s hand directly. “I ask you to hear me out!”

“Let go of me! Are you crazy?”

Smack!

Jasmine was getting more and more anxious, so out of instinct, she gave Yael a painful slap across the cheek.

The girls who were standing around them bore witness to the scene. Their jaws gaped in astonishment as they watched the scene.

It made Yael freeze up on the spot.

“Mindy, let’s go!”

Jasmine held Mindy’s hand and left right after that.

“Jasmine, how cruel can you be? There are a lot of girls who like me, but I’ve never treated them the same way as I treat you. See how I’ve put myself down for your sake!? I’m even willing to abandon my dignity... But you don’t even seem like you care about me at all!”

Yael clenched his fists tightly, watching as Jasmine left him behind. His eyes were red and bloodshot.

“Jasmine, you slapped him just because of such a trivial affair? Isn’t that pretty bad?”

Mindy knew that the Schuyler family was not to be trifled with. She was quick to remind her sister of that fact.

“Hmph! A trivial affair? Do you really think that this is a trivial affair? Yael has always been pestering me but do you know why I hate him so much? It’s because he always likes to treat others like fools. Obviously, Yael is the one behind this incident. Not only does he want me to be indebted to him, he’s planning to show me how powerful and influential the Schuyler family is. The other smaller families have now become lackeys of the Schuyler family!

“To use both kindness and cruelty, that’s what makes him so disgusting! That’s why I hate him this much! I can’t keep lying to myself about this!”

Jasmine said.

“D*mn! I understood it now. No wonder he was smiling so confidently when you were making the phone calls. He’s indeed a cunning b*stard! Jasmine, how should we resolve that issue now?”

Mindy asked.

After that, she widened her eyes. “Jasmine, hurry up and take a look. Isn’t that Colton? He’s bringing a ton of people with him. Wait, they’re entering the academic building right now!”

Chapter 727

Jasmine really could not help in resolving the issue even if she wanted to.

Although she wanted to lend Isabelle a helping hand, she could not use her identity as a member of the Fenderson family to help them.

On the other side, Gerald saw a large group of people rushing into the union class. Isabelle was almost scared to death when this happened.

Even Warren appeared to be slightly frightened now.

Clearly, the incident was spiraling rapidly out of control.

“What should we do now? It seems like the faculty director can’t hold them back for long!”

Isabelle cried in fear as she said so.

At last, Warren looked at Maia. “Maia, didn’t you exchange your contact information with Yuna the other day? If we’re really out of options now, go and look for help from Yuna. She did say that we could hit her up if we’re facing any problems.”

Maia said, "But I'm worried that Yuna was just being nice to us. After all, what kind of status and identity does she have? How sure are you that she can help us?"

It seemed clear that getting help from Yuna did cross Maia's mind.

"Ahem, let's not bother about that first. Now, we only have one shot, and that's with Yuna."

Warren said.

Both Wyatt and Isabelle had also put their hope entirely on Maia.

"Fine, I'll give it a try!"

Maia nodded slightly.

She then called the number which Yuna left with her immediately.

To her surprise, Yuna picked up her call almost immediately.

Maia did not even exchange pleasantries with Yuna. She splurged everything about that incident in a hurry to Yuna.

"Yuna, thank you very much. It'll be better if you can look into it!!"

Clearly, Yuna had promised to help judging by how excited Maia sounded.

And it wasn't long before Yuna's call returned.

"Maia, this incident is different from the previous one. I did help to ask about it. Mr. Holden will try to assist you, but you need to go and meet Mr. Zartyr of Salford Province in order to see how you're going

to resolve it. Mr. Zartyr wants to know every little detail about this incident before he decides whether or not he wants to lend a hand to you guys. That's the most I can do for you!"

Yuna sighed and said.

When Yuna called Mr. Holden just now, he did agree to help them. He'd even contacted Mr. Zartyr to talk about it.

Mr. Holden was Mr. Crawford's godbrother, so of course, Zartyr couldn't afford to not entertain his requests.

The conclusion was that they had to meet Mr. Zartyr in person. At the very least, he had to know the ins and outs of the incident.

After hanging up the phone, Maia and the others left the place hastily.

"They're so lucky! Surprises me that someone is willing to help them!"

Marven said indignantly.

Gerald smiled bitterly as he shook his head.

He was the one who was going to help them in the end.

There are times when Gerald wished to reveal his identity and status to the world at large. That way, much of the trouble he faced would be eliminated from his life.

But just like how his father had warned him, the new problems which would spring up following such an act would be no less than what he was facing now.

Hence, he was stuck between a rock and a hard place when it came to things like this.

When he couldn't find his targets, Colton did not bother with giving the rest of the students a hard time.

The others were allowed to attend their lesson in peace.

After having four lessons in the morning, they were free in the afternoon.

Gerald was about to return to the villa.

It was at that moment when Gerald received a call. It was a call from Barry.

"Mr. Crawford, we've finally found some clues about Xara after working through the night for the past few days," said Barry excitedly over the phone.

"Oh? That's good. I'll go over to your place now!"

Gerald sounded excited too.

Barry sounded quite busy at the other end of the phone.

Gerald did not say much. He hung up the phone immediately to let him do his job.

Chapter 728

At that moment, Gerald drove his car straight to Barry's villa.

When he reached that place, he discovered that there were lots of cars parked outside the gates.

Barry had very complicated interpersonal relationships. There were tons of people who wanted to see him. Knowing this, Gerald wasn't even remotely surprised at the discovery.

It only meant that he had to park his car further away from the house.

Walking into the place, he found that Barry was indeed loaded with jobs to do. There was quite a long line leading up to the door of his office.

It was more or less like what Zack experienced.

There were lots of people standing outside the door. It seemed like Barry had to see every single one of them.

Gerald chuckled painfully to himself.

After that, he approached the villa.

“Maia, how long are we going to wait? There are tons of people here. My dad hasn’t returned home yet. I’m worried sick!”

Standing at the side, Isabelle and the others waited.

At that moment, they were waiting anxiously.

“Don’t worry. Yuna said that Mr. Zartyr will meet us to learn about this incident. He’ll be seeing us shortly, I believe!”

Maia said.

A sigh was heard. “D*mn it! I wonder why Mr. Zartyr is so busy. We’ve been waiting for two hours now!”

Someone said impatiently.

And at that moment, Maia was stunned all of a sudden. She glanced at a youngster who had just entered that place from outside.

Actually, a lot of people looked over there the moment the young man waltzed right through the gates.

After all, most of the people who were there wanted to meet Mr. Zartyr to negotiate their business plan or ongoing projects.

They were afraid that they might meet their rivals at that moment.

Contempt was at an all-time high when they saw that they were facing against a young lad in the market.

‘How could a person like that go and meet Mr. Zartyr for business? Humph!’

The person they were talking about, of course, was none other than Gerald.

Gerald saw Maia and Isabelle standing in line.

But it did not occur to him that they would still be here considering how much time had passed.

Gerald did not avoid them either.

He then walked over and asked. “Are you still waiting here?”

“Humph! Why are you here?”

The moment Maia saw Gerald, she was reminded of the countless times he had humiliated her. She was deeply irritated by his unannounced arrival.

As for Isabelle, this was, even more, the case. She was visibly filled with wrath when she looked at Gerald.

If Gerald had given the spotlight to Fabian, he would not have been that dejected, then Isabelle would not have been in a bad mood for a couple of consecutive days. And had he not kicked her yesterday, she would not have lost her cool the next morning, when she beat up the vengeful rich kids.

To put it plainly, the source of their disaster was Gerald.

At least, this was what Isabelle thought.

“Why did he come? He must have come here to rub salt into our wounds! Gerald, I never expected you to be such a horrid person. It’s really disgusting! I’m so f*cking pissed off!”

Isabelle’s reaction was harsh.

Maia’s reaction was more or less the same as Isabelle’s. Clearly, she agreed with what Isabelle said. “Gerald, I know how rich you are but that doesn’t warrant you to act so smugly about this. How could you come here and laugh at our pain? Let me tell you, I won’t let a person like you take pleasure in my suffering!”

Maia said anxiously.

‘Humph!’ Gerald shook his head and smirked bitterly.

Actually, Gerald felt that the sadistic side of him had already been satisfied by the sight of them standing in line here. After all, they had made use of their connections and found Yael and Mr. Zartyr.

Gerald did not mind doing Maia a favor while incurring little to no cost himself. After all, she was his ex-classmate.

But now, Maia did not even care about the friendship they had in the past. It seemed like no matter what he did, Maia would only mock him and look down on him.

Hence, Gerald could only smile helplessly.

“You’re wrong. I’ve no mood and energy to pay close attention to you every day. I’m that nosy of a person to rush here just to savor the taste of your pain and suffering!”

Gerald said as he glanced at Maia.

After that, he tucked his hands into his pocket and headed straight into the entrance of the villa...

Chapter 729

“Who is this person? How impolite can he be?! Can’t he even act like a decent human being?”

“That’s right. It’s the door to Mr. Zartyr’s villa. How dare he walk in as if this was his house? Didn’t he see that we’re standing in a line”

For a moment, a lot of people started whispering among themselves.

As for Maia and Isabelle, they were waiting to see how Gerald would be humiliated in front of everybody.

It was because Barry was a big shot in Salford Province, and he had tremendous influence. Besides, he was particularly keen about maintaining tradition and acting with prudence. If anyone acted imprudently, that person would be reprimanded heavily.

At that moment, Gerald knocked on a door.

The door to the living room was opened by a butler.

“This guy is looking for it, courting death he is!”

“Does he think that he can get ahead of us by acting like this? Ha ha!”

“I know lots of kids like him. He’ll only make a laughing stock out of himself. He’s destined to be unable to achieve anything great in his life!”

The others joined in and started mocking Gerald.

“Mr... Mr. Crawford, it’s you!”

The butler exclaimed out of astonishment.

He immediately bowed towards him.

“Yes. I see that he’s quite busy, so I waited around outside for quite a while!”

Gerald laughed bitterly.

“Yes! Mr. Crawford, this way please.”

The butler soon invited Gerald into the house swiftly.

If Gerald was not considered as an important and distinguished guest, then there would be no such thing as an important and distinguished guest in this world.

“What?”

That scene stunned every one of them who were standing in line.

“What kind of young master is that? Mr. Crawford? I’ve never heard of him. But I’ve never seen Mr. Mollands act like that before!”

“That’s true! Who exactly is he?”

Everyone was stupefied.

Even Maia’s mouth gaped in disbelief.

Her heart started pumping.

She felt as if this was all an illusion, an illusion in which she was helpless when fighting against the tide. Something she dreaded had happened.

Maia had always looked down on Gerald since they were in high school, and that feeling continued even up until now.

Even though Gerald studied hard during high school, Maia assumed that he did not have bright prospects in the future.

Everyone that knew Maia, saw her as a straightforward person. She sometimes said things directly, and others might inadvertently get hurt in the process.

To put it plainly, Maia had always had a sense of superiority over her peers.

But for some reason, when she was with Warren and Jamier, Maia would act in an unusually reserved manner.

But it was clear that she looked down on Gerald.

But now, she found that the person who she had always looked down upon was actually filthy rich. He was different from the past, and he was much richer than her.

Maia found that fact to be a hard pill to swallow.

She made up all kinds of excuses to convince herself. Gerald might have won a lottery, so he became rich. That his prize money would be used up after a few years.

Besides, the money he had was irrelevant since he lacked the connections to make things work. Maia smirked silently. In a modern society, one was pretty much useless if he had no connections with powerful people.

This was what Maia told herself repeatedly over the past couple of days to soothe herself.

But now, she had to meet Mr. Zartyr to ask for his help. Her nightmares had resurfaced when she realized that Gerald had free access the Mr. Zartyr's property.

Looks like they were more than superficial acquaintances.

"I didn't know that Gerald knows Mr. Zartyr!"

Isabelle became rather anxious.

But even though she was anxious, she had no other options.

Nobody could help her. The only shot she had was with Mr. Zartyr, but there was still the chance that he might turn her down.

"Maia, why don't you give Gerald a call? Our worries will certainly be resolved if he's willing to say something nice on our behalf?"

It was Warren who spoke up this time.

"Me?" Maia felt quite anxious as if she had just been slapped in the face.

“That’s right, Maia. After all, that guy liked you in the past, and you were high school classmates. It’ll be better if you speak for us! If not, we’ll have to stand in line the entire afternoon, and we may not even be able to meet Mr. Zartyr in time! This issue may well turn into something much more serious by then!”

Warren said anxiously.

“That’s true, Maia. Go and beg Gerald for help. He’ll definitely help us!”

Isabelle finally caved in.

Maia was in a dilemma for a while.

Chapter 730

At that moment, Maia said, “Actually, I’m not sure if we’re even friends at the moment. Even if I asked him to help me, it’s quite likely that he’ll turn me down. But I’ll give it a try!”

She reluctantly whipped out her cell phone and called Gerald’s number.

She felt conflicted about this. To be forced to beg for help from someone who she was looking down on. Not to mention the fact that she had once hurt him with painful words in the past.

But she indeed needed Gerald’s help to resolve that issue.

It did not occur to Gerald that Maia, who was as proud as a peacock, would call him up at this moment.

In that instant, he burst out laughing to himself.

“What’s wrong?”

Gerald asked.

“Gerald, you... do you know Mr. Zartyr?” Maia’s voice was extremely soft.

“Yes, I do know him! Just tell me what you want to say!” Gerald said lightly.

“You should be aware that we’re in great trouble now. If you do know him, I hope that you can help introduce us to him or at the very least, mention our names in front of him!”

Maia’s face was flushed red when she told him that.

“There’s not a problem if you want me to mention it to him. But the problem is, what will I gain out of this? Give me one good reason why I should help you.”

Gerald smiled and said.

“I!”

“How about this? You can come into the villa with Isabelle to discuss it. But only the two of you are allowed to come in.”

Gerald said.

“Fine!”

After that, Gerald hung up the phone.

Clearly, Isabelle and the others heard their conversation.

“Ah? Maia, what do you think? Why did Gerald ask only the two of us to enter that villa? You do know that I fought with him before. Not to mention the countless times we’ve gotten into a verbal fight. I’m worried about what he’ll do to me when I...”

It seemed like Isabelle had it all thought out beforehand. She then turned away, blushing shyly.

“No, he wouldn’t dare to do that... I don’t believe that he’ll do anything to us. I know what sort of a person he is. After we enter the villa, let me talk to him. You can just stay behind me!”

Maia thought to herself, ‘Gerald, you’re quite capable now, aren’t you? But I don’t buy it, not one bit. What can you really do?’

Both Maia and Isabelle were then led into the villa by one of the servants working there.

Mr. Zartyr’s villa was indeed very spacious.

There were more than ten servants downstairs.

That person led the two of them up to the first floor.

In a large conference room.

“Mr. Crawford is in there.”

The servant said respectfully.

“Alright, thanks!”

Maia’s voice sounded nervous.

She opened the door and entered the conference room, to discover that it was packed to the brim.

Most of them were middle-aged people, and their secretaries were there with them too.

There were at least forty people sitting inside.

Nearly all of those middle-aged men were famous businessmen in Salford Province.

Maia knew a handful of them from reading the newspapers.

Isabelle on the other hand, knew instantly that these were all big shots.

Hence, the atmosphere became tense all of a sudden.

What made both Maia and Isabelle so nervous was the fact that Gerald was sitting at the seat of honor at the conference desk.

On the other hand, Mr. Zartyr was seated next to Gerald.

“You guys should head out now. I’d like to talk to them alone. Mr. Zartyr, remember to come back here after you’re done with business,” announced Gerald.

“Yes, Mr. Crawford!”

That group of people got up from their seats and said in unison.

That scene frightened both Maia and Isabelle even more.

It was only after they all left the room that both Maia and Isabelle snapped out of their mental haze.

Gerald smiled and looked at them. "Do sit down. Why are you standing there?"

"Gerald, they... Why did they address you as Mr. Crawford?"

Maia gulped nervously after she asked the question with a hint of disbelief in her voice.

Chapter 731

"It's a long story. I won't be able to explain it to you clearly in just a few sentences!"

Gerald smiled and said.

At that moment, a few servants entered the room in a respectful manner before serving Isabelle and Maia some tea.

"Gerald, I don't know what kind of relationship you have with Mr. Zartyr. But you know very well that we're facing a dire threat at the moment. If you're able to help, I sincerely hope that you do so as soon as you can!"

Maia said.

Isabelle nodded vigorously. "Gerald, I'll apologize to you. After this, I don't care how you will treat me. I just want you to give us a hand!"

"Alright, I'll mention it to Mr. Zartyr. But after this thing blows over, I hope that I have something to gain out of this!"

Gerald looked at them and said with a smile.

If they had come earlier, Gerald would have helped them, no questions asked, despite how cold and aloof Maia treated him. But the situation was different now. His heart had gone numb at this point.

Now, Gerald was bitterly disappointed in them.

Especially Isabelle.

They were asking for Barry's help, and it was equivalent to asking Gerald for help.

Gerald would definitely not turn them down.

But if they wanted to ask Gerald for help, some conditions must be met beforehand.

"Tell us. What do you want to gain?"

Gerald snapped his fingers.

After a short while, both Isabelle and Maia walked out of the place.

They said nothing to Warren and Wyatt after leaving the place. They only glanced at the boys before walking off wordlessly.

It baffled both Warren and Wyatt. But they still caught up with them and left.

After that was done, Barry went to meet Gerald.

The incident in which Isabelle found herself caught up was insignificant, according to Gerald at least. To them on the other hand, it was something that threatened their lives.

The Moore family was supported by the Schuyler family. But they still needed to give Barry some face.

Gerald was originally there at the villa for something much more important than what Isabelle was facing.

“Mr. Crawford, it’s a major discovery. We’ve managed to track down the whereabouts of Xara’s maid, who was quite close to her in the past. We did a lot of investigation and paid a heavy price for it. We learned that Xara left the Fenderson family more than twenty years ago. Apparently, there was a great conflict between her and her family!

“At the height of the conflict, she left the family with her housekeeper. They even brought along a baby who had just turned a month old!”

Barry said.

Gerald sat upright upon hearing that.

That was indeed a very important clue.

‘A baby who had just turned a month old? Could it be Queta?’

Gerald motioned for Barry to elaborate on the matter.

Turns out the truth was not that far from what he had imagined.

When Gerald was in Mayberry, he asked Zack to investigate that incident. Zack in turn informed Barry about this matter, in order for him to further his investigations on it.

Barry placed a lot of attention on this matter.

He dumped fifteen million dollars worth of assets into the mission of tracking down the woman named “Xara”.

Finally, they dug up some incident that was related to the Fenderson family.

As for the current whereabouts of Xara's housekeeper, it was an old man who took it upon himself and contacted them during the previous day.

That old man had run a hotel once in the past.

He remembered the scene quite clearly.

It was on a night twenty-two years ago. It was raining cats and dogs outside.

Two women and a baby stumbled into the lobby of his hotel.

They looked rather anxious. The woman who was holding the baby was soaked through but the baby's clothes were dry. But the woman was fairly beautiful.

Despite the fact that so many years have passed, he clicked his tongue when he thought about that. He claimed that he had never met such a beautiful girl in his life.

And standing beside her was a woman in her thirties.

Chapter 732

That woman kept addressing her as "young lady".

They appeared to be in a hurry, and they wanted to stay there. But there was one thing which puzzled the old man. That woman claimed that they did not have money at that moment and that they would need to wait until the next afternoon before someone could send them the money. Hence, they asked the old man not to worry about that.

But the old man had been running the hotel for some long now. He was a seasoned veteran in the game of life.

How would he be willing to compromise?

Realizing that they had failed to persuade him, the beautiful woman, who was holding the baby, took out a jade pendant and handed it to the old man.

Fortunately, the old man was an antique enthusiast. The moment he saw that jade pendant, he knew instantly that it was an expensive item.

He saw a name—Xara which was being engraved on that jade pendant clearly.

He slowly realized that they might have special origins.

Hence, he did not dare to offend them.

He agreed to let them stay there.

Barry said that the old man had described that incident in a very clear manner yesterday. That very night, he even contacted a few of his friends after he got hold of the jade pendant. He did not intend to return it to the duo.

But his friends reminded him that it would be better if he did not do such a thing against the owner of such an invaluable and beautiful jade pendant.

It was only after hearing that did the old man decide to forget about that.

After that, he waited until two o'clock in the afternoon the next day.

As expected, a young man arrived.

He brought a lot of money for Xara.

It was also at the same time that Xara retrieved her pendant. Then, the two women left his hotel together.

It did not occur to that old man that after seven days, that woman would return to his hotel.

Only this time, the beauty who held the baby did not come.

The one who came was the woman standing next to the beauty.

That old man was surprised to see her.

Seven days ago, that woman still had some rosiness on her face. But now, she was extremely thin, and her face was pale. She looked just like a ghost.

She claimed that she was just there to stay for the night.

She also inquired about a place called Howard County from that old man.

That old man certainly knew where that was. After all, his daughter-in-law's house was there in Howard County.

He nodded slightly.

That woman gave the old man a lot of money. Come next morning, the old man sent her to Howard County himself.

On the way there, he asked her about what she was doing. She claimed that she was going there to seek refuge with a relative.

That old man then sent her to her relative's house.

And that was why that woman paid him around fifteen thousand dollars in order to thank him.

Fifteen thousand dollars was no small amount.

That old man probably remembered the incident so well because of this.

He was able to recall every single detail of that incident.

As for the jade pendant which Barry showed him, he confirmed that it was the jade pendant that that beauty gave him 2 decades ago.

How could he possibly forget about that?

“Mr. Crawford, he told us the address of that housekeeper’s relative where she went to seek refuge. I sent some people over to investigate it last night. But that family had moved away, and their house had been demolished for a long time. But don’t worry, I can guarantee that we’ll be able to find where that family is in a day!”

Barry said.

Gerald nodded slightly. “Mr. Zartyr, I’ll leave this to you then.”

Frankly-speaking, Gerald had faith in Barry that he’d be able to handle this investigation well.

Gerald felt that he was now one step closer to finding where Xara was. Finally, he’d be able to find where Queta’s biological mother was.

But he also needed to know more about that incident. What kind of relationship did Xara have with her father?

“Mr. Crawford, there’s another incident. I don’t know why you’re looking for Xara, and I don’t know about what she has but there’s something I must tell you.”

Suddenly, Barry's expression turned solemn.

"What is it?"

Chapter 733

"That old man said that there was another group of people who met him before we came. They too, inquired about the incident and asked for the maid's whereabouts," said Barry.

Gerald was baffled.

'Who could it be?'

He thought that this was a simple task given to him by his father to look for a person. Looks like things are more complicated than he initially thought.

But Gerald did not dwell on it much since it was useless.

What he needed to do now was to locate where that maid was, ASAP.

In that instant, Gerald made some preparations and prepared to go to Howard County. At the same time, he called up The Drake & Tyson Duo, ordering them to bring some people along and be there as soon as possible.

And it was also the same moment that he received a message in the group chat of his class. It was a message sent by the counselor.

Gerald took a look at it...

It was around this time.

In a luxury car.

“Miss, we still haven’t found where the ex-young lady is. But we did find a very important clue. It’s related to her personal maid—Xenia. We’ve found where she is! Back then, the young lady and Xenia stayed in a hotel...”

Jasmine listened to her subordinate’s report seriously.

She nodded and said, “Have you sent people over there?”

“We did send more people over. There’s one more thing which I need to report to you. It seems like we’re not the only ones who are asking about the young lady’s whereabouts. Our people went and confirmed it with the owner of the hotel just now. He told us that there’s another group of people who’re looking for the young lady too. They’re pretty generous with their money too.”

“Who is it?”

At that moment, there was a faint crease between Jasmine’s eyebrows.

“I’m sorry, miss. We still haven’t discovered who they are at the moment. But I think that it’s better if we start acting with more caution.”

Jasmine nodded. “Fine. Then you must act fast. By the way, bring along the twelve teachers from the family. My aunt was exceptionally ruthless in how she handled affairs in the past. I don’t doubt that she’s offended quite a lot of people. If someone’s looking for her, it should be the Fenderson family who does so in the end.”

“I understand!”

The moment Jasmine finished making the preparation, a message popped up in her class group chat. It was sent by the counselor.

Although Jasmine normally did not talk a lot with her classmates, she was still a member of that group chat.

She glanced at the message.

Turns out the counselor was talking about an outing for tomorrow morning which was organized by the faculty. Coincidentally, they were going to Howard County.

There were a lot of people who were going there.

And the person-in-charge was Marven from the next class.

“That chubby fella is becoming more capable now!”

Reading the message, Jasmine smiled bitterly.

She then got out of the car and returned to the university.

On the other hand, Gerald did not return to the university. In fact, he’d just informed the university about this.

He left for Howard County in Salford Province immediately.

His destination wasn’t too far away.

There was a development project going on in that county.

As for the subordinates, Barry had dispatched a group of personnel to help with the search there.

Gerald was anxious, so he rushed there first with only a few people.

Both Queta and Barry would only head for Howard County after The Drake & Tyson Duo reached Salford Province with their subordinates.

Gerald had neither the mood nor the energy to participate in the outing which was organized by the university.

After he reached Howard County, he found a hotel and got himself settled down. He then asked his subordinates to go and get in touch with that group of people.

“Gerald?”

Gerald was at the underground parking lot. He pulled out his wallet and was about to enter the elevator to return to his room.

At that moment, he heard a female voice calling out to him all of a sudden.

Gerald turned around and took a look. He was visibly surprised.

It was Vincy.

Standing beside Vincy, were Lennard and two other girls.

“D*mn! It’s really Gerald. What a coincidence!”

Another girl said when she saw Gerald turning around.

Clearly, she was surprised to meet Gerald here too.

At first, Gerald did not recognize who the girl was until she spoke up.

“Hmph! Gerald, I doubt that you still remember me!”

That girl said. The way she spoke sounded as if she had a sense of superiority over her counterpart.

“Of course I know you. You’re Xyla Hoffman!”

Chapter 734

Gerald said with a smile on his face.

In the past, Xyla was also a member of the high school competition team.

He remembered that she was in the same class as Vincy, so her academic results must’ve been really good.

But how about her personality? She was the sunny type of girl, the type of girl who just oozed youthful vibes wherever she went.

She vaguely resembled Maia in terms of appearance.

But they were different.

Xyla had a lot of guy friends. Those guys were either ruffians who were terrible at their studies but with good social relations, or they were rich kids from influential families.

In short, she was a girl who enjoyed a lot of connections, and she enjoyed herself vehemently. Despite this, her academic results were particularly outstanding.

She was also a rather emotional girl.

Moreover, Gerald had all sorts of brief episodes with her in the past which were unspeakable, to say the least.

Hmph!

Now, it seemed like Xyla had gotten into Salford University with Vincy.

Vincy mentioned it to Gerald when they met a few days ago.

“Heh heh!”

Xyla’s eyes scanned Gerald from head-to-toe.

She could not help but say in contempt, “Vincy told me that you came to County Salford. Haven’t you left yet? Also, what are you doing at such a glamorous hotel?”

“Yeah, yeah. I’ll leave after a few days!”

Xyla sounded rather harsh when she spoke to Gerald. ‘Could it be that she still remembers that misunderstanding which happened all those years ago?’

‘Maybe not.’

However, Gerald wasn’t too keen to have a conversation with Xyla. He turned towards Vincy and asked her, “Vincy, what are you doing here?”

“We plan to organize a large gathering here. Xyla’s boyfriend has the admission tickets. So we’ve come here to have some fun together!”

Vincy treated Gerald in a surprisingly nice manner.

She smiled and said.

“Oh! Xyla has a boyfriend now!”

Gerald echoed what she said.

Xyla rolled her eyes at Gerald smugly.

“Do you know who Xyla’s boyfriend is? He’s the son of the president of a listed company!”

Lennard said in resignation.

“Oh!”

In order to match Lennard’s tone, Gerald nodded slightly, looking a little surprised.

“Is he the guy from high school—Gerald, the one whom you mentioned before?”

At that moment, a girl, who was standing beside them, asked.

She was either Vincy or Xyla’s classmate.

She looked rather pretty too.

It became clear that Xyla had talked to her about Gerald back during their high school days together.

It was because Gerald noticed that the girl was looking at him in a rather nonchalant and lazy manner.

Maybe there was something on his face?

After that girl looked at him as she pouted. She seemed to be looking down on him.

Vincy would never talk about these things, but the same could not be said with Xyla.

“Yes, I am. We were in the competition team back when we were in high school!”

Gerald still smiled and said.

“By the way, Gerald, I didn’t manage to ask you. Do you have a girlfriend? If not, I can introduce you to one!”

Vincy replied.

It seemed like Gerald had a girlfriend. But frankly speaking, it did not appear to Vincy that he was in a romantic relationship. Vincy did not have any ulterior motives when she said that. She assumed that Gerald might be lying to others about having a girlfriend to protect his dignity as a man. This was partly why she wanted to get him a girlfriend.

“Come on! Of course, he doesn’t have one. Gerald, why don’t you consider Yasmina? Yasmina, although Gerald is poor, he’s an honest man. Didn’t your mom say that she’ll introduce you to an honest man? He’ll heed your orders like a dog after you get married. Don’t find someone who’s like your ex-husband!”

Xyla teased and said.

“Alas! Xyla, if you’re being like this, I’m going to get angry. You’re so bad!”

Yasmina Wale started teasing Xyla playfully.

Yasmina the divorcee was looking down on Gerald.

Gerald could only smile bitterly and shake his head when he realized what was happening.

At that moment.

“Xyla, what are you doing? Why aren’t you coming up?”

They heard a hearty and clear voice. It wasn’t long before they saw a handsome man in a tailored suit walking towards them...

Chapter 735

“Leon! Oh, I just bumped into a classmate of mine.”

Xyla waved her hands at Leon affectionately. Clearly, he was her boyfriend.

At that moment, Vincy said, “Xyla, didn’t you say that you have an additional admission ticket just now? Hey maybe we can give it to Gerald. We haven’t met each other for so many years, I guess we can totally sit together and talk about our golden days!”

“This...” Xyla averted her eyes. “Fine, then we’ll let Gerald tag along. We can bring him along so that he can get a taste of the good life!”

“Gerald, we’ll give you a ticket. Come with us!”

Xyla said.

“Yes, let’s go. You don’t have anything going on, do you?”

Vincy tugged at Gerald’s arm and said.

“Fine!”

Gerald nodded slightly and agreed to go.

If Xyla was the only one who invited him, he would've turned them down instantly.

But he had a rather good relationship with Vincy. Besides, Gerald was waiting for updates from his subordinates. He might as well have fun in the process of waiting.

They took the elevator together and went straight to the second floor of the hotel.

There was a large hall.

It was dedicated to holding gatherings or parties.

The place was considered a very high-end hotel in Howard County.

Everyone showed their admission ticket before they entered the hall.

There were a lot of people.

It seemed to be the type of party that was held before the commencement of some kind of large project.

At least this was what Gerald understood from Xyla's brief explanation.

In other words, without money or the right ties, an ordinary Joe would never be able to attend such parties.

Xyla's boyfriend—Leon, fit right into such an environment like a hand in a glove.

He knew a lot of the attendees. After he greeted his friends, he sat down at a table.

“What are you doing?” Xyla asked.

Gerald sat down beside Vincy and Lennard.

“What do you mean what I’m doing?”

Gerald shook his head and smiled bitterly.

“You! Go and sit over there! You think you have the right to sit here?”

Xyla started acting oddly since she entered the hall, There had been a very obvious change in her attitude towards Gerald.

This was in spite of the fact that she was the one who had given the admission ticket to him.

Gerald then turned towards the direction in which Xyla was pointing at. That table was in a corner, and the people who sat there were probably the drivers or secretaries of the attendees.

Clearly, Xyla felt that Gerald had no right to sit with her at the same table.

However, Xyla’s voice had attracted the attention of the surrounding attendees. He was being humiliated in front of everyone, and it was clearly embarrassing for him.

Vincy became quite anxious, and she wanted to persuade Xyla to stop what she was doing.

But Gerald did not want to put Vincy in a difficult position. He laughed bitterly once before he went over to that table.

“Xyla, what’s wrong with you? You treated Gerald normally before we came in here. Why are you making a fool out of him in front of everybody?” asked Vincy in an anxious tone.

“That’s right. I want to make a fool of him in front of everyone. I want him to experience that kind of thing!”

Suddenly, Xyla started glaring at Gerald coldly.

“Why? Gerald didn’t offend you did he? Don’t tell me that it’s because of that trivial affair from back then!”

Chapter 736

Vincy was stuck between a rock and a hard place. After all, she was the one who invited Gerald. But now her two best friends were in a squabble with each other, so it was only natural that she started feeling anxious about it.

“A trivial affair? Vincy, do you really think that what happened during our high school days was just a trivial affair?”

Seems like Xyla still harbored resentment towards Gerald for what had happened ages ago.

“You remember the competition we participated in that year, and we won. After we came back, the school treated the twenty of us to a meal in the city. After the meal, there were only a few of us left. Hence, we played truth or dare. I was defeated, so I had to choose a person there to confess my love to. Did you forget about that?”

Xyla said.

“Of course I remember it. I know that you didn’t like Gerald back then. But in order to play safe, you confessed your love to him. Still remember how he just came back from helping out the teacher when you did that. You told him that you liked him!”

Vincy recalled the incident which happened in the past.

“But in the end, Gerald said that we were unsuited for each other in front of everyone. I was left speechless and helpless. I can’t believe that the loser really thought that I liked him! I get furious every time I remember his face when he said that to me. All of the students in our class pointed their fingers and laughed at me. They joked that even a person like Gerald didn’t like me. The boy who I truly had a crush on was just there at the side. Do you know how great a humiliation I was forced to accept?”

Xyla said.

“But do you know why Gerald claimed that you were unsuited for each other? It’s because Gerald felt that he was poor and that he was not a match for you. You’re overthinking things. Besides, he also knew that your feelings weren’t genuine, so perhaps he blurted out things that he didn’t mean to say. Didn’t you always dislike him because he’s poor? You didn’t even want to sit beside him in the car. That’s why Gerald was afraid of you!”

Vincy quickly made up an explanation to calm Xyla down.

“What? That loser! I must make him regret it! Besides, I was not the only one who disliked him because he was poor. Vincy, weren’t you the same? Don’t think that I didn’t notice. You liked Gerald during that time. But you didn’t want to go into a relationship because of how broke he was back then, didn’t you!?”

Xyla was just a blabbermouth. The moment she started talking, she would talk about literally everything.

What she said made Vincy blush. She had just blurted out the thing which haunted Vincy’s mind to this day.

On the other hand, Lennard’s facial expression turned sour all of a sudden. ‘No wonder Vincy turned me down when I confessed to her back then. I had no idea that she liked Gerald at that time.’

Then, he recalled how nice Vincy had been treating Gerald. So that was why she acted in such a friendly manner towards him?

Lennard’s eyes were filled with a tinge of jealousy.

It was totally a different thing now. Previously, Lennard did not intervene when Vincy was being nice to Gerald. It was because he didn't even see Gerald as a rival in love. No way in a million years Vincy would fall for Gerald, right?

But now, the realization made Lennard's heart skip a beat.

It turns out, things had been that way all this while.

Lennard looked at Vincy. Her face was flushed red, which only served to confirm his fears.

What Xyla said had hit Vincy's sore spot.

Xyla was right. Vincy did like Gerald back in high school.

But Gerald was poor. Vincy did give it a try. But doubts started to spring up when she thought further about it.

'How would my classmates view me? What would they say about me?'

In the end, she did not reach that stage, and she gave up the chance to deepen her relationship with Gerald.

But it did not stop Vincy from wishing that Gerald would become much better.

Doubt, even if only present in one party's mind in a romantic relationship, was enough to sink the ship sooner or later.

At that moment, the atmosphere became weird.

Gerald did not hear the conversation between Xyla and Vincy.

But the driver beside him said, "Isn't that Chairman Lighton's son—Leon? My chairman said that Leon came today, representing his father. He asked us to go and be nice to him, wants us to express our gratitude to him. After all, Chairman Lighton was the reason why we had so many projects waiting for us. People like them will forever rule over us regular folks, doncha think?"

"That's right. Chairman Wacket even made it clear that we should at least go and give him a toast to show our sincerity and gratitude!"

A few of the drivers and secretaries discussed.

Leon's family had their own company. It was rather normal for them to have certain kinds of cooperation and partnership with other companies, it wasn't uncommon for these companies to become dependent on them for financial or capital support.

In other words, it wasn't a bad idea to suck up to him.

"Fine. Since they've said it explicitly let's go there together before the event starts!"

A female secretary said.

Then, that group of people stood up directly.

"Why aren't ya comin' with us brother?"

At that moment, the driver, who was sitting beside Gerald, patted Gerald's shoulder lightly.

Clearly, Gerald was being treated as a driver by these folks...

Chapter 737

"Like hell, I'm going!"

Gerald shook his head.

“Hmph, it’s fine if you don’t go. Why are you putting up a show?”

A female secretary said in dissatisfaction.

After that, they went to the desk where Leon was sitting to give him a toast.

Seeing that everyone came to give a toast to her boyfriend, Xyla peeked at Gerald coldly, who was sitting there all alone.

She badly wanted to enjoy the look of humiliation and uneasiness on Gerald’s face.

‘How dare you reject me that year! Look at the difference between you and me!’

‘No, look at the disparity between you and my boyfriend!’

‘Do you really think that I invited you out of goodwill?’

‘You’re wrong!’

Xyla wanted to humiliate Gerald deliberately. She thought that the humiliation he suffered would be greater if the environment they were in was grander.

She usually did not have the chance to experience that kind of pleasure from revenge.

On the other hand, Vincy saw Gerald sitting there alone. It became clear to her that Xyla invited him here just to embarrass him.

She wanted to go and keep Gerald company.

“Where are you going?”

At last, Lennard grabbed Vincy’s arm savagely.

Vincy never expected to see Lennard act like this.

She realized that what Xyla said just now might have influenced Lennard.

So Vincy refrained from saying anything else.

At that moment, there were a lot of people from the neighboring tables who came to toast Leon and Xyla.

While attending to these people, Xyla stole a glance at Gerald.

The more she looked at him, the happier she became.

But in that instant.

“Mr. Crawford!”

Suddenly, someone shouted.

The person who shouted was a middle-aged man. He was surrounded by a lot of people, and he seemed like a very influential person.

The entire hall went silent after that.

All of them turned towards him.

“It really is Mr. Crawford!”

At that moment, another middle-aged man yelled out.

Soon, there were more than ten sharply-dressed men heading towards the end of the hall hastily.

And they were rushing towards none other than Gerald.

“Hey! Isn’t that Chairman Gordon?”

“That’s right! It’s Chairman Gordon and the others. Why are they heading towards that table?”

“Wait, look at that! It’s not only Chairman Gordon. Chairman Lighton, Chairman Wacket, and Chairman Quarterman have gone there too. It seems like they’re elated too!”

Lots of people present in the hall knew who Chairman Gordon was.

These chairmen could be considered the most distinguished guests of the entire party.

What did it mean?

It was just like what happened just now. The moment they spoke, all of the others stopped talking and listened to them.

At that moment, they looked at each other.

On the other hand, the people who were sitting at Xyla's table were stupefied too.

It was more so with Xyla. She had been staring at Gerald the entire time. Hence, she noticed it right away when the men were rushing towards him.

She nearly choked on her red wine.

"Mr. Crawford? What's happening? What kind of status and identity does Chairman Gordon have? Why does he know who Gerald is? He's nothing but a loser, right?"

Xyla wondered in surprise.

The pleasure which she gained from her revenge just now had faded away instantly.

She started shifting around anxiously.

Vincy looked over too. She was filled with a sense of excitement inwardly for some unknown reason.

Lennard on the other hand, felt his jealousy grow stronger.

That group of people who approached Leon peered in Gerald's direction. What exactly was happening?

"And you are?"

That group of people stopped in front of Gerald. Gerald was astonished since he did not know any of them.

"D*mn! What's going on? Chairman Gordon went there to greet him, but that guy doesn't even know who Chairman Gordon is!"

“It’s so frustrating! How impolite can that boy be! Who taught him his manners?”

Chapter 738

“I think that Chairman Gordon might have mistaken him for someone else. Or is that guy a driver of some kind of big shot? How is it possible? The most distinguished person who has come here today is Chairman Gordon, isn’t it?”

The others started to discuss ceaselessly.

“Mr. Crawford, you must’ve been so busy that you’ve forgotten about it. You might have forgotten about me. You don’t know me, but I know you. Haha! Here is my name card.”

Chairman Gordon smiled happily and said.

Before this, it would’ve been impossible for him to have any kind of contact with Mr. Crawford. But he was the host of this event today, so the tables have turned in his favor. Surprisingly, Mr. Crawford chose to attend this event of his without prior notification.

Gerald took the name card and glanced at it. Chairman Gordon was involved in the development of real estate.

He found the name of Chairman Gordon’s company rather familiar.

“Mr. Crawford, we met each other during Miss Larson’s birthday party the other day. We attended that party too. We gained three projects in the development of Serene County as a result! Haha!”

Chairman Gordon said.

“Oh! I remember you now. Chairman Gordon, nice to meet you.”

Gerald still did not remember who he was. But it would have been rather awkward if they continued to dwell on that issue.

Hence, he started putting up an act.

“Mr. Crawford, let me give you a toast!”

“Mr. Crawford, let me give you a toast too!”

At that moment, the chairmen raised their wine glasses to give Gerald a toast.

After Gerald took a sip of his drink, Chairman Gordon invited Gerald to take the front seat, but no matter how they persuaded him, he didn't seem like he was interested.

Gerald claimed that it was fine sitting at his current spot.

Seeing how reluctant Gerald was about switching tables, Chairman Gordon found it a pity, but he did not continue to persuade Gerald.

Gerald then asked Chairman Gordon to go ahead with his business. They could interact with each other later if there was anything else.

Chairman Gordon agreed to his suggestion in less than a second.

After clinking glasses with Gerald one last time, they left.

Xyla was stupefied when she saw that.

“How is this even possible? Why does Chairman Gordon know Gerald? And why is he so respectful of him?”

Xyla wanted to make use of such a grand occasion to humiliate Gerald that day.

She wanted to take revenge on Gerald for humiliating her in the past.

But now, Xyla became the one who was humiliated.

The more she yearned to take revenge on Gerald, the more humiliated she felt.

Leon only had the right to give a toast to Chairman Gordon and Chairman Wacket as a representative of his father. But those men were too busy talking to Gerald to even notice him.

Only a person who experienced this first hand could understand how painful this stung.

On the contrary, Vincy's eyes brightened. She was pleasantly surprised by Gerald's interaction with the chairmen.

Complex emotions were swelling up within Vincy's heart.

At that moment, Xyla was in no mood to have a drink. She plopped down on her seat with a gloomy expression.

"What's wrong? Vincy, did you hear what Chairman Gordon and the others said to Gerald just now?"

Xyla asked anxiously.

Vincy shook her head.

"I heard parts of it. Sounded like they were talking about projects in Serene County. That's Gerald's and our hometown. Looks like we're to expect great development in that region. Could it be that Gerald got to know Chairman Gordon from back then?"

Lennard said with irritation present in his voice.

“But Chairman Gordon doesn’t necessarily have to give a toast to Gerald, does he?”

Xyla said anxiously.

She acted quite anxious as if Gerald had stolen something precious from her.

“I’m not sure about it either. Let’s ask about it from our high school classmates. Maybe they know a thing or two about it. Let me ask them and see how it goes!”

In that instant, Lennard inquired about that in their class’s group chat.

Xyla waited for her answer nervously.

“D*mn! There’s indeed someone who knows about it!”

Suddenly, Lennard became quite lively and excited.

“Turns out Gerald has a childhood friend who’s very powerful and influential within Serene County. His friend has even established a large auto trade company, and that guy apparently has a lot of connections with great people!”

“Ah? Do you mean that Gerald knows Chairman Gordon just because of this childhood friend of his?”

Xyla asked.

“It must be so. It’s because a classmate of ours heard rumors of how powerful his childhood friend is!”
Lennard said.

“F*ck! Now that is scary. D*mn it! Why is Gerald so lucky?”

Xyla was still quite furious.

The host of the party finally appeared onstage.

Projected onto the screen was the image of a large villa with exceptionally magnificent architecture.

Everyone did not know why the large villa was shown, but it was clear that they were stunned by its grandiose appearance.

Xyla covered her mouth. “Damn, look at how grand that structure is! It’s even built on top of the mountain!”

Chapter 739

Vincy, Lennard and the others were clearly charmed by the Mountain Top Villa which was shown on the screen.

“How come there’s a villa like that in Mayberry? Vincy, why haven’t I heard anything about it?”

Xyla said in surprise.

Vincy nodded in response. “This is the first time seeing it too. But it seems like I’ve heard about a villa called Mountain Top Villa in Mayberry. Apparently, it costs around one hundred fifty million dollars!”

“One hundred fifty million dollars?”

Xyla bit her lips slightly. “How tremendously rich that person must be!”

“This is Mountain Top Villa in Mayberry. Ladies and gentlemen, you’ve seen it now. I think it’s time I reveal the reason behind holding this party today. We have outstanding people and beautiful scenery

here in Howard County. My group plans to establish a villa like the one I'm showing here in Howard County!"

Chairman Gordon said.

The moment he said that there was an uproar below the stage.

"If there's such a magnificent Mountain Top Villa in Howard County, then it'll be really awesome!"

"I wonder how much it'll cost, but for sure it's gonna be more than ninety million dollars!"

The others said.

Chairman Gordon smiled and said, "It's rather embarrassing if I mention it now. Actually, we plan to take close-up shots of the magnificence of Mountain Top Villa in Mayberry. Unfortunately, we don't have free access to it. We did, however, manage to get a couple of shots of it from multiple angles. You can take a look at them first!"

Chairman Gordon was indeed an expert in marketing.

A villa like that could only be afforded by the filthy rich and the most effective way to promote it was through the young masters of the elite families. If they spread the news of this project around their social circles, it would undoubtedly create support for their upcoming project of building a second Mountain Top Villa in Howard County.

This was the main reason why Chairman Gordon decided to host this event today.

Seeing how astonished everyone was, Chairman Gordon was very satisfied.

He switched to the next picture, which showed the front-view of the mansion.

There was a long staircase that wound its way to the top of the mountain.

Besides, there was also something else that surprised the crowd.

There were people in the photograph.

They could see that there were a lot of luxury cars which were parked at the foot of the mountain.

There were large groups of bodyguards in black suits, standing at both sides of the staircase with their hands behind their backs.

This sort of scenery could only be found in movies where they depicted the ultra-rich.

Xyla's eyes were glued onto the dazzling appearance of the mansion.

She paid close attention to the people in the photograph.

At that moment, the bodyguards in black suits had their eyes fixed on a youngster who was walking slowly at the top of the mountain.

Unfortunately, the others could only see the person's back because of the angle of the shot.

Obviously, Chairman Gordon took those photographs himself when he attended Miss Larson's birthday party.

"Who is that kid?"

"Isn't it obvious? Look at the splendor! He's certainly the owner of Mountain Top Villa!"

"Tsk! That's what we call life! That's the way one should live one's life! How enviable!"

The others started singing praises ceaselessly.

After Xyla watched at it for a short while, she was stunned.

'Hmm?'

However, Xyla seemed to be afraid of something, but she did not say anything.

Vincy tugged at Xyla's arm slightly. "Xyla! Xyla, hurry up and take a look! Doesn't he look like Gerald the more you look at it? Have you noticed it as well?"

"Ah? How could it be him? At best, he just looks vaguely similar to Gerald. How is it even possible that Gerald can afford to buy such an expensive villa?"

Xyla said.

No doubt, Xyla was not mentally prepared for the truth. 'What if that person is indeed Gerald? I might go and commit suicide. Haha! Thank God that isn't possible!'

"No! I'm pretty sure that's Gerald. Let me ask him about it!"

Xyla sounded excited.

Soon she turned around and looked toward Gerald.

And Xyla also turned towards where Gerald was.

But both women were surprised at the same time. "Hmm? Where's Gerald?"

“He was still here a while ago. Where did he go?” Xyla wondered.

Chapter 740

“Humph! I know, Gerald must’ve been weirded out from sitting there all alone. I bet he ran away all on his own! That scaredy-cat!”

Xyla seemed to have found something which she could rant on and on about.

Vincy only shook her head slightly in resignation.

Currently, she wanted to give Gerald a call and ask him where he had gone. But after seeing how infuriated Lennard appeared, she refrained from making that call.

Gerald finally knew about the theme of Chairman Gordon’s party that day when Chairman Gordon mentioned Mountain Top Villa in Mayberry.

He was afraid that things would get awkward if he lingered around there any longer.

It would be bad if the others recognized him.

Especially in front of Xyla.

Gerald walked out of the hall before crap hit the fan.

After all, he went there to have some fun at Vincy’s request.

But he still had a lot of things which he needed to deal with, which was partly why he couldn’t stay there for very long.

He was about to return to his room when he received a call from one of his subordinates.

“Mr. Crawford, it’s our fault. At first, we found where that maid was, so we rushed there quickly. But at last... At last, that old maid was picked up by someone else before us!”

Since they had obtained the clues, it became easy for them to pinpoint where that maid was.

But it was beyond Gerald’s expectation that someone else would beat them to it despite how careful he had been acting. He even sent his subordinates out swiftly after they received the news.

Resentment filled Gerald’s heart.

“Who picked her up?” Gerald asked.

“We’re still investigating at the moment. But we’re sure that there’s another group of people who were competing with us to locate where this maid is!”

“Alright, I see. I’ll send more men over quickly. Hurry up and investigate it!”

Gerald hung up the phone. He was now put in a rather difficult position.

‘Why is it so hard to track down a single person!?’

“Gerald?”

Just when Gerald was about to go upstairs.

There was a female voice behind him, calling after him.

She sounded slightly surprised.

Gerald turned around, and he was slightly shocked too.

There were a lot of new faces in the hotel lobby.

They were a group of bodyguards in black suits, and they all wore sunglasses despite being indoors. They seemed quite powerful.

There might be more than thirty of them.

If Gerald did not see the two girls who were standing in the middle of the men, he would have thought that they were his subordinates.

Those two girls were none other than Jasmine and Mindy.

“It’s you!”

Gerald smiled and said.

If he recalled correctly, this should be the second instance where he saw Jasmine appearing with such a large splendor.

Gerald became quite sensitive all of a sudden.

‘It seems illogical. Both Jasmine and Mindy are total nerds. They hardly skip a lesson, even if they were forced to. So why are they here today?’ he wondered to himself.

But Gerald quickly realized what was going on.

Both Jasmine and Mindy belonged to the Fenderson family.

Xara belonged to the Fenderson family too.

The group of people who were looking for Xara's maid should be Jasmine and her subordinates.

"What a surprise, to bump into you here. Why did you come to Howard County?"

Mindy asked curiously.

A frown appeared on her face moments later. Both Mindy and Jasmine glanced at each other. Their eyes then scanned Gerald from head-to-toe.

Being stared at by those two women made Gerald slightly nervous.

'What's happening? Am I exposed? How is it possible?'

Chapter 741

"I know it, Gerald. Is it because of the two-day outing in Howard County that Marven organized for tomorrow morning? Have the two of you come here in advance?"

Mindy asked.

"Ah? Oh, that's right. It's just that Marven isn't here yet. I came beforehand just to book the hotel room. What a coincidence to see you here as well! Could it be that you came here early just because you want to sightsee around here?"

Gerald took a glance at the bodyguards who were brought by Jasmine.

"Marven told me that you liked traveling."

Gerald thought that both Mindy and Jasmine had discovered that he was there to look for the maid too. It was why he acted anxiously for a moment. However, hearing their answer made him heave a long sigh in relief.

He then took the chance to get off the hook.

“Tsk! What are you talking about? We’re not good-for-nothings after all. We’re just...”

Mindy rolled her eyes at Gerald. She wanted to explain herself.

But Jasmine shot a glance at Mindy quickly to warn her against doing so. It seemed like she was saying with her eyes, “Mindy, what’s wrong with you? Why do you speak so much?”

“Ah!”

Mindy realized instantly that she had acted imprudently.

Actually, it was not all Mindy’s fault.

Despite the fact that both Mindy and Jasmine had always maintained a cool and aloof demeanor, they understood each and every classmate well.

They did not show it explicitly, but they always gossiped about things like that just like the other girls either when they were walking home, or when they were actually at home.

They would discuss the funny things which happened in class, the handsome boys they saw and the men who, although not as handsome, were extremely nice to them.

They gossiped about nearly every classmate.

No matter how extraordinary their experiences were, they were still young ladies through and through.

Currently, their topic of discussion was about Ferald. After all, they were rather well-exposed to his real identity.

They had become quite familiar with Gerald.

Secondly, the feelings Gerald gave them were clearly incomparable with the other guys.

It was part of the reason why Mindy was so shocked when she naturally struck up a conversation with Gerald so effortlessly.

She shut her mouth hastily.

On the other hand, Jasmine only stole a glance at Gerald before heading upstairs with their henchmen.

Gerald was baffled.

'Something's weird. If Jasmine beat me to it and found the maid first, she should have already left this place, no?'

'Why is she still here in Howard County?'

'If Jasmine isn't the one who brought that maid away, then who could it be?'

'Looks like I'm gonna have to wait for the return of my subordinates before I get to know more about the nitty-gritty details of the situation.'

"Jasmine, I'm truly sorry. I was too excited to hold myself back just now. I can't believe I spoke to Gerald about so many things!"

After they entered the room, Mindy held Jasmine's hand and said.

“It’s fine. Be careful next time. Although we have more freedom now compared to the past, we still have to keep a low profile!”

Jasmine smiled bitterly and said.

“I know. I’ll definitely not repeat my mistake the next time around!”

Mindy stuck out her tongue.

“This mission is clearly dangerous but we managed to get through it without mishap. However, I still can’t comprehend why she’s so stubborn! Is that box so important to her? Where can we find it for her? Jasmine, what do you plan to do next?”

Mindy asked.

But Jasmine gave Mindy a glare again. “Mindy, I truly regret bringing you with me. Why do you have to say everything out loud every time!? Be careful that walls have ears.”

Mindy stuck out her tongue again before she covered her mouth immediately.

“From now on, I want to resume my old self and be cold and aloof. I won’t say much from now on!”

Mindy said.

Chapter 742

“You don’t have to be like that. Ah, to be frank, tracking a thing down is easy peasy. What I’m worried about now is that there’s indeed another group of influential people who shares the same aim as us. As if that isn’t bad enough, it seems that their level of expertise is on par with the professionals we have on our team. That’s what I need to worry about!”

Jasmine massaged her brow ridge as she said, “Looks like we’re a step ahead of them. But it’s not as useful as you think. We’re out in the open but our enemies are still well-hidden from us. There’s a possibility that they’ll launch a surprise attack at any moment. Worse still, our Fenderson family might

be exposed just like that. We don't even know who they are. That's why I have been acting gloomy and anxious all this while!"

"Haha! Is that so? Now that's easy peasy. I have a way!"

Mindy said happily.

"You?" Jasmine smiled slightly.

"Hmph! Jasmine, you might think that I'm a carefree girl. But I'm quite smart too. This is more or less like the Werewolf Game I love playing!"

Mindy said.

Jasmine shook her head. "I don't understand it!"

"It's very easy. Currently, aren't you afraid of exposing yourself the most? Let's find something to conceal you. After that, we can stir up confusion among their ranks. That way, you'll be hidden in the dark. Our Fenderson family will be hidden in the dark too. You just need to act the way you usually do!"

Mindy said.

"What you said is rather logical. You mean that we don't have to rack our brains to fight against that group of people? However, we need to find another person to act as a ruse. We might even get the chance to lure out the people who are hiding in the dark at first."

Jasmine was quickly catching on.

Mindy snapped her fingers. "Bingo! That's it!"

“Ah! But where should we find a person like that? Who is the most suited to draw the others’ attention away?”

Jasmine thought about it.

Mindy pouted as her brain churned away.

But soon, Mindy slapped her forehead.

“Haha! I know who we should look for!”

Mindy said.

Jasmine said helplessly, “Are you going to say Gerald?”

“That’s right. Let’s look for Gerald. He’s the most suitable person for this role. Jasmine, why don’t you look at it this way. We did talk about Gerald before. Despite how handsome and charming he looks, he’s a bit of a dork too. Despite the low profile he keeps, he’s super-rich, which I’m guessing is the reason why he knows so many distinguished people in Salford Province. Those are truly Gerald’s inherent advantages!

“If that’s the case, Gerald might catch our enemies off guard if he steps forward!”

Jasmine nodded.

“What you said is true. After thinking about it, Gerald is truly the most suitable person. But this is pretty risky as well. Is it alright to get him involved in this? Besides, will Gerald agree to do so?”

Mindy chuckled. “Don’t worry. I have a way!”

Mindy averted her gaze but it was clear that she had a plan brewing silently.

When the sky outside was getting darker, Mindy snuck up to the door to Gerald's room.

Mindy faced no problems when inquiring about where Gerald was staying.

She knocked on the door.

Gerald opened the door and took a look. "Why are you here?"

He was quite surprised.

It was beyond his expectation that an ice-queen would appear standing before him at this time of day.

Mindy chuckled. "Are you surprised? I came to meet you because I need your help with something!"

Mindy said.

"You need my help with something?"

Gerald knowing their true identity did nothing to help. Rather, it further added to his confusion when he heard that statement.

Logically, if they indeed belonged to the Fenderson family, Mindy should have been able to do whatever she wanted to do without much hindrance.

"Yes, it's true. It's inconvenient to talk about it here. Let's go upstairs to my room!" Mindy said.

"Do you want me to go to your room? It's such a late hour. I don't think it's a wise move for me to make."

Gerald said in surprise.

Chapter 743

“Let’s go. You’re overthinking this!”

Mindy dragged Gerald out of the room directly.

Gerald was quite curious too. ‘Why? Does Mindy want to meet me? What is this about?’

After they entered the room, Mindy signaled for Gerald to shut his mouth.

“Mindy, are you back?”

At that moment, they heard Jasmine’s voice from the bathroom.

After that, Jasmine opened the door and walked out of the bathroom.

The next moment, Gerald was stunned by what he saw.

He saw Jasmine’s black hair hanging loosely around her neck. At that moment, she only wore top pajamas, and her fair and curvaceous legs were exposed.

Clearly, she had just come out of the shower. She was using the towel to dry her hair as she spoke to Mindy.

“Ah!”

What surprised her was the sight of Gerald standing in the middle of the room, staring at her with his eyes wide open.

Jasmine's cute face became flushed red instantly. She immediately dashed back into the bathroom to hide.

Certainly, she had never appeared like that in front of any man, even when she was just a child.

Jasmine had always felt that the things related to love, and the ambiguous relationship between man and woman to be rather intangible concepts.

It was because she never had much contact with any men.

At that moment, she became extremely nervous. She hid inside the bathroom, and her heart was pumping against her ribcage.

"Mindy, why did you bring him to my room?"

They heard Jasmine's voice from the bathroom. She burst into a fit of rage out of embarrassment.

"Haha! What's the problem with that? How else could we get Gerald to help us out?"

Although the turnout of events wasn't as Mindy had expected, it was still good nonetheless.

In her mind, Gerald should have walked straight into the scene where Jasmine was having a bath while being stark naked.

Although Jasmine knew that Mindy sometimes did things without thinking things through, it was beyond her expectation that Mindy would fool around like that.

Mindy chuckled. "Okay, I won't fool around anymore. Gerald, we asked you to come here because we really need your help with something. Currently, you're the only one out of all our classmates who has the capabilities to do so."

Mindy said.

At that moment, Jasmine had changed into a long dress. She walked out of the bathroom.

After she glared at Mindy sternly, she glanced at Gerald rather gloomily.

Gerald was quite awkward.

He touched his nose and asked, "What is it?"

"Actually, it's rather simple. We need you to act on our behalf!"

Mindy continued, "It's not difficult for you. Besides, I'm aware of what you saw just now. If you don't want to help us even though I know that you're capable of doing it, how could you possibly make up to Jasmine for what you've done?"

"Mindy, what kind of nonsense are you talking about?"

Jasmine said in resignation.

Gerald smiled bitterly.

Actually, he did intend to help them.

That was the best chance to approach them. Besides, it was highly likely that Xara's maid was with them at the moment.

Gerald wanted the chance so badly.

At that moment, he asked, "Tell me. What do you want me to look for?"

“Alright. I remember that our classmates want to come here for a trip tomorrow. How about this? Bring along some reliable and capable people. After that, we’ll go to a spot together. It’s just that simple. Of course, you’re gonna be the one to take up that role and look for the specific item for us!”

Mindy said.

Gerald paused for a moment. It seemed like it was impossible for him to know what they were referring to.

He probably would have to wait until he sees it himself to know what they were talking about.

Chapter 744

Gerald then nodded. “Sure thing!”

After he left, Jasmine pinched Mindy’s ear. “You! Why you! You wicked girl! Luckily, thank goodness I had my top on just now. If not for that, you’ll definitely!”

When Jasmine thought about the awkward situation she found herself in moments ago, it only then did fear start taking hold of her. She had nothing but resentment for Mindy following what she did.

“There, there. Didn’t I accomplish my mission? My hunch was right after all. Gerald does like you. I’m sure you’re unaware of it. I mean, his eyes were practically all over you!”

“How dare you bring it up again? I’ll smother you to death!”

...

In a manor.

There were around five luxury cars that rolled through the front gates.

After that, a group of people filed out of their respective vehicles and headed straight for the entrance of the building.

“Master Yael, all the helpers are here.”

A person who looked like a butler led the group of people into the grand building.

“Master Yael, nice to meet you. Can you perhaps tell us why Mr. Long asked us to come here?”

The person who spoke was a foreigner. But his eyes were fierce and cold. It seemed almost as if his emotions had been strangled to death a long time ago.

“Hmph! Of course! I’m sure Yunus has told you about it before this. Now that you’re all here, you have to heed my every command. Let me be frank with you. I require your assistance in kidnapping a certain individual.”

Master Yael was Yael Schuyler.

At that moment, he appeared to be deeply aggrieved.

The butler handed a photograph to the person who appeared to be the leader of the group.

“It’s only a woman. Master Yael, do you have to get so many people involved in this?”

The youth who appeared to be the leader put the photograph aside with a disdainful expression.

“Underestimating your enemy will bring you nowhere. This woman is unapproachable even if we sent more than a dozen strong but ordinary men!”

Yael said, “Besides, you need to use some tactics to outwit her to be on the safe side of things. Of course, you just need to bring her over to the appointed place. I’ll be the one to handle the rest!”

The few assassins looked at each other in dismay. They then nodded slightly.

“Floyd, go and prepare for their living arrangements!”

“Yes Master Yael!”

After they left, an old man came out from a dark corner of the room. Only one half of his face was visible, the rest shrouded in darkness. He crossed his arms over his chest.

“Julian, is it really necessary for me to rely on these men? As strong as that woman may be, it’ll be easier than ABC for me to bring her to her knees!”

Yael said in a resentful tone.

“You are correct, but not entirely. Should this incident be revealed to the Fenderson family, the Schuyler family would inevitably be in for a bad time. It’s only wise for us to use these men to our advantage!”

That old man said.

“That’s true. But I wonder what’s up with the Fenderson family. Isn’t Jasmine supposed to be grounded at all times? Surprisingly, they’ve allowed her to come to Howard County for something. My subordinates inquired about it and apparently, they’re here to look for something. I don’t know what they’re looking for!”

Yael said, “But my dad asked me to investigate it thoroughly. Hmph! Jasmine, you’ve never cared about me, so don’t blame me for being cruel. This time around, I swear that I’ll make you my woman!”

He then thought of the day when Jasmine slapped him in front of everyone.

That stinging sensation of humiliation soon engulfed him.

Now, he could create some trouble for the Fenderson family if he kidnapped Jasmine. Besides, a weak point had already revealed itself to Yael for him to exploit and infiltrate the Fenderson family—Mindy.

It was, as they say, “killing two birds with one stone”.

Julian was right. He could be hidden in the dark naturally if he asked for help from Yunus from Yanken. He could also act according to the circumstances.

Both Yunus and Yael had known each other for a long time now.

After all, both of them could be considered as famous rich heirs. It was natural that they corresponded with each other frequently in the past.

At that moment, another luxury car rolled to a stop outside the door.

Yael looked outside. He then smiled faintly and said, “Yunus has come!”

“Yael, it’s been a long while since we last met each other. How are you?” Yunus greeted while strutting into the building confidently with both hands in his pockets.

Chapter 745

“Yunus! Indeed, it’s been a long time since we last met! I was delighted when you said you were coming to see me!” exclaimed Yael with a beaming smile the moment he saw Yunus.

“By the way, how are your parents at home? There was a time when my old man kept bugging me to go to Yanken to pay your dad a visit!”

“Thanks for asking, Yael. They’re alright!”

Yunus said.

Yael gestured for Yunus to take a seat. "What happened? I heard that your dad punished you? Did he ground you for half a month?"

"Hmph! I don't wanna talk about it. I get pissed every time I talk about that incident. By the way, Yael, let's talk about your affair. I've brought my men with me. I believe you've met them too. They're all from North Africa, and all experts in their own fields!"

"I did meet them just now. Yunus, I've got to say, I'm impressed!"

"Good! Then let's celebrate and pray for the success of your mission tomorrow!"

...

The next day.

Marven and the others came too.

Gerald had made the necessary arrangements last night, and he asked Marven to bring along around five reliable men.

Marven treated his words seriously of course.

He delegated the task of leading the tour group to another trustworthy classmate while he and the other five men went with Gerald.

Clearly, Jasmine and Mindy had discussed it beforehand.

It was because they acted like their usual selves did not speak to Gerald. They continued keeping up that cold and aloof air around them.

Isabelle came too. There was a drastic change in her personality when compared with her from before.

Firstly, she did not cling to Fabian and pester him as she did in the past. Instead, her face would get flushed red when she peeked shyly at Gerald from time to time.

It was unknown what Gerald said to Maia and Isabelle on that day but Isabelle had been acting like this since that day.

But clearly, Gerald paid no heed to her.

He greeted Marven. Then, the five of them prepared to bid their classmates farewell before setting off for a place called Winterbourne Village.

“Stop! Marven! Gerald! Where are you going? What are you going to do? Why aren’t you coming with us?”

Right before Gerald stepped on the gas pedal, a girl rushed over to their vehicle.

She was visibly confused.

“Aren’t you being a little too nosy? Do we have to report everything we do to you?”

Marven questioned.

“Hmph! I knew you guys were acting sketchy when I saw you in the car just now. Turns out that you’re indeed going somewhere else. Is there something fun that you don’t want us tagging along for?”

Stella said angrily.

She stole a glance at Gerald as she spoke.

She wanted to see whether Gerald was looking at her.

But Gerald had both his hands in his pocket as he leaned back into the plush leather seat of his expensive-looking Mercedes-Benz. He wasn't even remotely interested in her.

Stella could not help but feel slightly disappointed.

Sometimes, a person's feelings were weird, vague, and unpredictable.

At first, Stella acted the same as Isabelle. She did not care for Gerald at all, thinking nothing of him.

If Gerald did not offend Isabelle, Stella would have left him alone, but her wish to do justice for Isabelle was too hard to ignore.

But after what happened later, it was revealed that Gerald was actually very rich all along. It seemed like he had great connections too.

That completely changed their perception of him.

Gerald was still Gerald. But Stella remained largely indifferent no matter what happened to him. But now, for some inexplicable reason, she'd get slightly upset whenever he ignored her.

It seemed like there was something wrong with her life, like something deep within her was off-balance.

That morning, the same feeling surfaced within her when her classmates came.

Gerald greeted the other classmates.

However, he did not even spare her a glance, let alone greet her.

It was why Stella so desperately caught up with them. She wanted to ask Marven about their plans for the day.

She hoped that she could attract Gerald's attention.

But clearly, it was an act in futility.

"What do you mean we're not going to bring you along for some fun? We have things to do. Go and enjoy yourself!"

Marven had changed significantly too. Once, he felt inferior and intimidated whenever he bumped into Stella.

Chapter 746

The tone in which he spoke sounded firm.

There was a cigarette dangling between his lips as they moved.

"That's right. Go have fun with your friends now! Stop asking so many questions!"

The other guys echoed what he said.

"You... How could you talk to me like that? Gerald! Don't you want to discipline them? Listen to how they're talking to me right now!"

Stella peeked at Gerald, who was standing nearby, with an angry expression.

Only then did Gerald tilt his head to look in her direction. "That's enough, Marven. Let's not get bogged down in this matter, alright? Time to go!"

"Alright, Gerald!"

Marven nodded immediately.

After that, they got into the car.

Marven had not gotten his driving license yet.

Hence, Gerald had no other choice but to bring out his Mercedes-Benz MPV to ferry his friends around.

But Stella wasn't going to let them slip away that easily.

Seeing that Gerald still chose to ignore her, she ran to the co-passenger seat and hopped into the vehicle uninvited.

"F*ck! What are you doing?"

Gerald thought to himself, 'What's wrong with Stella?

'Why is she acting so weird today?'

'Doesn't she like having fun with Fabian and the others? Why's she talking to me all of a sudden?'

However, it didn't bother him that much.

After the Taekwondo championship, the people in their class were divided into two different groups.

The first group was made up of Fabian and his old buddies and the other had Gerald and Marven as the leaders.

It went without saying that Stella belonged to Fabian's clique.

Which made it all the more surprising when she clambered into Gerald's car.

"How shameless can you get, Stella!? Why did you get into the car?"

"That's right. You're shamelessly clinging to our group! I've never seen a person like you before!"

Marven and the others soon started to condemn her.

Stella had already undergone lots of humiliation in her quest to get in good graces with Ferald, but this was the final straw. The frustration from lowering herself constantly finally engulfed her.

Tears welled up in her eyes quickly and it wasn't long before she started bawling her eyes out.

"Why are you talking to me like this? Isn't having fun the same no matter where I go, who I follow? What's wrong with bringing me along? Is there a problem with that?"

After that, she turned towards Gerald. "And Gerald, why are you ignoring me? You didn't even look at me when I greeted you. When we bumped into each other at the cafeteria, you ignored me too. I know that I didn't treat you well when you first arrived, but I apologized to you, did I not? You even claimed that it's fine!"

"Ah? I did?"

Gerald was stunned.

"Yes, you did. You've been giving me the cold shoulder for the past couple of days. You didn't greet me, nor did you even look at me!"

Stella said.

Gerald scratched his head awkwardly. "Maybe I've forgotten about it!" Recently, Gerald had a lot of things weighing down his mind. How could she expect him to be bothered with such trivial matters?"

In addition, Stella was the kind of girl who liked a good challenge.

When tackling that kind of girl, the best method was to loosen the reins in order to reel her in at the end. The more you ignored her, the more she wanted your attention.

Of course, Gerald did not think so much about this.

Seeing that Stella had burst into tears, Gerald began to feel slightly sorry for her. After all, there really were no hard feelings between them.

He nodded slightly. "Alright. I think it's fine if we have you on board. If you're willing to, then come along with us!"

Stella stopped crying all of a sudden. "Fine. I can go and buy drinks for you guys!" she said.

Marven, who was sitting in the back seat, had goosebumps form all over his body when he noticed how quickly Stella's attitude had changed.

'D*mn! Her mood changes faster than lightning!'

Gerald proceeded to set out for their destination.

On the other side, both Jasmine and Mindy glanced at each other. They too stepped on the gas pedal and trailed behind Gerald's vehicle.

However, moments after their cars started moving, there suddenly appeared around eight luxury cars on both flanks and they were heading straight for Jasmine's car...

Chapter 747

Winterbourne Village was a stone's throw away from Howard County.

They located the family which Mindy had specified for them to look for upon reaching their destination.

A middle-aged woman opened the door for them. What set her apart from any other woman of her age were the burn scars that peppered her entire face.

She seemed rather frightened by their presence.

"Who are you looking for?"

The woman was visibly stunned by Gerald and his friends' unannounced arrival.

She lowered her head to hide her scars, perhaps due to embarrassment or perhaps out of fear of scaring the strangers.

"Ma'am, it's nice to meet you. May I know if you're Xenia's cousin? She said that she asked you to keep something special for her. We're here to retrieve it. She told us that you'll understand it after reading this letter."

Jasmine walked over and said while handing her a letter.

The woman looked at the letter. She then stole a couple of glances at Jasmine before nodding in response.

"Very well, I understand now. You can take it with you."

The woman invited Gerald and co into her home.

It turns out the item that Xenia asked them to retrieve was a large wooden chest.

They needed at least a few people in order to carry that thing around.

Upon hearing that, Gerald started suspecting if Xenia was the maid he was looking for all this while.

As for Stella, it did not occur to her that Gerald and the others were here to do manual labor.

They weren't here to have fun at all.

Hence, she was rather disappointed.

Besides, that woman's face was fairly frightening. She peeked at the woman's face a couple more times and goosebumps soon appeared all over her skin.

Stella remained outside the house when Gerald and the others were moving the heavy chest.

Out of boredom, she went on a stroll in the vicinity of the house.

Suddenly, Stella noticed a convoy of expensive cars rolling through the entrance of the village at high speed.

Stella was the kind of girl who was brave but cautious.

She realized how odd the presence of these vehicles was.

It was because she had noticed those cars on their way there.

But she couldn't form any conclusions at the moment.

From afar, she saw that the cars were filled with people. This piqued her curiosity.

She dashed straight into the house.

“Gerald, there are a lot of cars outside! And they’re all filled with people inside!”

Stella said.

“Ah?”

Mindy was stunned.

After that, she ran outside to take a look immediately.

“Jasmine, Gerald, something’s wrong. She’s right! They’re coming straight for us!”

Mindy hopped up-and-down anxiously.

Jasmine frowned slightly.

She was being very careful. In order to play safe, she even refrained from bringing her subordinates. She acted as if she was just heading out with her friends on a fun little road trip.

To her surprise, someone had been stalking their every move.

“What should we do now?”

Jasmine was petrified.

Gerald was perplexed too. 'D*mn! I didn't bring my subordinates either! Why are there so many groups of people?'

"Jasmine, you and the others come to my room quickly!"

At that moment, the woman whose face had burn scars grabbed Jasmine's arm.

She led Gerald and the others to a room inside of the house.

She lifted a bed frame, revealing a hidden passageway underneath.

Jasmine looked at the woman with a puzzled expression.

The woman said, "My cousin stayed over frequently in the past. There'd always be people coming to look for her, so we have this kind of passageway in both of our homes. Since my cousin had asked you to come and meet me, I know that you have her trust. Come along with me!"

Jasmine nodded.

Gerald could not help but stare at the woman. He felt like he had met that woman somewhere in the past, and she looked familiar. But no matter how hard he tried, he simply could not remember where he had met her before.

He had no idea whose tail he stepped on this time, for them to come straight for him.

He could only jump into the passageway with the others.

Soon, the group of men barged into the house of the woman uninvited.

Clearly, they had come for Jasmine and Mindy.

“What a timely report you gave!”

Chapter 748

Gerald was hunched over inside the cramped passageway. He glanced at Stella’s face.

He then listened to the noise outside. Clearly, those people weren’t going to give up their search soon. They were turning over every stone in their search for their targets.

Jasmine was so anxious that her forehead was filled with beads of cold sweat.

There was no way of escaping this if they let things continue without taking action.

Gerald was at the back of the group, and Stella was just beside Gerald.

At that moment, Gerald produced an exquisite but compact instrument from his pocket.

Stella was surprised when she saw that instrument. She could tell that it was something extraordinary, something which you couldn’t get on the regular consumer market.

Gerald then gestured to her to remain silent.

After that, he pressed a button on the device, which most likely produced a distress signal.

“This...what’s this? Is this thing gonna save our lives?”

Stella asked with her eyes widened.

Gerald pressed onto her head and whispered in her ear, “Forget whatever you just saw. Don’t spew nonsense!”

Stella nodded enthusiastically.

As curious as she was when it came to that abnormal-looking device, she was more curious about the meaning behind Gerald making physical contact with her head.

And they stayed in the passageway for nearly ten minutes.

At that moment, they heard a buzzing noise from the sky outside.

“What noise is that?”

“Boss, something’s wrong. We’re surrounded. There are around ten helicopters above us that came out of nowhere! If we don’t leave now, it’ll be too late!”

They soon heard people shouting outside.

“What? F*ck! Retreat immediately!”

After that, they heard the noise of multiple men rushing out of the house.

Stella widened her eyes. Clearly, she was surprised by what the men said so loudly.

Pooh!

‘Gerald ordered these helicopters to come as reinforcements?’

‘Is that even true?’

‘Who exactly is Gerald?’

'Is this how powerful rich kids are nowadays?'

But Gerald ordered her not to speak nonsense, so Stella didn't dare to make any outrageous claims.

Soon, the droning sound of the helicopters disappeared gradually.

"We're safe now. Let's go!"

The woman who was hiding behind Gerald said.

Jasmine then walked out of the passageway with a confused expression.

Gerald emerged from the passageway too.

And the scar-faced woman was the last one to leave.

However, as she was walking up the steps, she tripped over slightly because of something underneath her feet.

She picked it up and glanced at it. It was a jade pendant.

She remembered now, it dropped out of the youngster's pocket when he was taking out the little gadget of his just now.

But after she brushed her fingers over the jade pendant, the woman's body started trembling uncontrollably.

The passageway they hid in was pitch dark. That woman could only use her sense of touch to feel the shape of the pendant.

“This...”

Suddenly, she continued trembling out of fear.

“Hmm? Why hasn’t that lady come out yet?”

“That’s right. Ma’am, they’ve left already, you can come out now!”

Marven shouted.

The woman then emerged from the passageway.

“Thanks for saving our asses, ma’am. Here’s a little gift of appreciation. Don’t worry, we’ll send Xenia home when we find the person we’re looking for!”

Jasmine put a debit card on the desk. “The password is Xenia’s birthday!”

“Jasmine, there’s no time to lose. I think we better leave quickly. We almost died just now. But don’t you find it odd? Where did those helicopters come from, and why are they saving us?”

Mindy said in confusion.

Jasmine shook her head. “I’m not sure either. Let’s talk about it later after we leave. Let’s go, Gerald!”

Seems like Jasmine did know where the maid was!

Gerald nodded slightly. He led Marven and the rest out of the home.

“Young man, wait for a moment!”

The woman called out to Gerald in a rather emotional tone all of a sudden...

Chapter 749

“Me?”

Gerald pointed at himself.

“I saw how witty you are, young man! Can you help me with something?”

The woman put away her emotions in time.

“Sure, ma’am. I’m sure Gerald can stay behind and help you out!”

Mindy said.

She treated Gerald as if he was actually her servant!

There was no way out of this either. Gerald couldn’t possibly turn down the woman’s request, so he promised to help her out reluctantly.

After they left, the woman grabbed both of Gerald’s hands all of a sudden.

Her sudden action surprised Gerald.

“Ma’am, what’s wrong?”

Gerald asked immediately.

“Young man, I don’t know who you are, but I can see that you have a kind soul. Can you tell me where you got this jade pendant?”

She then held up the jade pendant which she picked up from the floor.

No doubt, that was the jade pendant that Queta gave her with the name of Madeline engraved on it.

Gerald was slightly frightened by how emotional the woman had become.

But he still replied, “This belongs to my younger sister. What’s wrong, ma’am?”

The woman responded immediately, “Then she must be your younger sister! Is she still alive? Please tell me the truth.”

The woman shook Gerald’s shoulders, perhaps trying to force an answer out of his mouth.

Gerald nodded. “Why yes of course!”

The woman burst into tears immediately.

No matter how foolish one was, one should have noticed how odd the situation was.

It was because that woman’s emotions were too riled up.

And it was at this moment that Gerald understood it finally. Why did he feel that the woman looked familiar when he met her just now? It seemed like he had met her somewhere before.

The answer was becoming clear in his mind.

The woman's facial expressions reminded him of Queta despite the fact that the former had burn scars all over her face.

Could it be...

"Ma'am, you're not Xenia's cousin, are you?"

Gerald asked her imploringly.

"I... I am!"

The woman wiped away her tears in a hurry.

She hid her emotions.

But it was impossible to hide them all.

"Is your name Madeline as engraved on this jade pendant? Are you Madeline Fenderson?"

Gerald cut straight to the chase.

"Fenderson...who's Madeline Fenderson? I don't know her! I've never heard that name before. You're mistaking me for someone else!"

The woman shook her head. "I'm just a village woman. I've been living here since I was a child. You mistook me for someone else!"

"No, I don't think so! I made no mistake when I thought how much you resemble Queta! You look exactly the same!"

Gerald's heart was filled with excitement.

He had invested so much effort into looking for Madeline all over Salford Province.

But Gerald knew that it was extremely difficult to find Madeline given the current situation he found himself in.

So many different groups had appeared so suddenly.

Now the only clue that led to Madeline was with the Fenderson family.

Gerald faced a great dilemma as to what he should do next.

Chapter 750

And now, the woman who looked exactly like Queta appeared before him.

What confirmed his suspicion was the sight of how agitated she was when she saw the jade pendant. What else could explain her bizarre reaction?

"Are you saying that her name is Queta? Does she really look exactly like me?"

The woman said excitedly.

"That's right. She gave me this jade pendant. She yearns to find her own mother, from whom she has separated years ago. She'd always been alone since then. Her life is filled with suffering, with neither good meals nor proper clothes. She grew up in an orphanage for crying out loud!"

Gerald said.

The woman burst into tears again.

As she was crying, she plopped down on a chair feebly.

“Are you finally ready to admit it? You’re Xara, aren’t you?”

Gerald asked.

And that woman covered her face with her palms as she nodded. “I am!”

After that, she stood up immediately. She grabbed Gerald’s arms. “I’m begging you. Please let me meet Queta. I don’t care whose side you’re on. I promise I’ll come with you as long as I get to see my baby girl!”

Xara sobbed as she spoke.

Finally, the thing which had been troubling his mind was finally defeated.

He found Xara just like that.

“Auntie Fenderson, don’t worry. I’ll definitely let you meet Queta. I’ve brought her along with me to Salford Province!”

Frankly-speaking, Gerald felt ecstatic at that moment.

He had fulfilled his mission. The most important thing was that he had finally found Queta’s mother.

“Does Queta come too? Where is she?”

Xara said.

“She’s staying at the villa where I’m living currently.” The moment Gerald met Xara, he felt that she was oddly friendly to him for some inexplicable reason. He asked, “Auntie Fenderson, I know that you were a famous beauty in the past. Did something happen to you after that?”

Xara touched her cheeks slightly. “Are you talking about my face?”

Gerald nodded.

“I ruined it myself. You should be aware of how many people are looking for me. I had no other options to conceal my identity.”

“Twenty years ago, I ruined my face with my own hands. Since then, I’ve been staying in Winterbourne Village in Salford Province. I’ve always cooperated with Xenia like this. If anyone finds her, she’ll use this tactic to escape. Hmph! I’m sure that it never occurred to them that this ugly woman is actually the Xara they were looking for!”

“If I didn’t see the jade pendant you dropped, I’m sure you wouldn’t have had the suspicion, am I correct?”

Xara said.

“Yes! I never would have thought much about it!”

“At first, I couldn’t control my emotions well when I saw that girl who came with you. She’s Jasmine, isn’t she? She’s my elder brother’s daughter, isn’t she? She must be. When she was young, I always held her in my arms. I nearly failed to hold myself back in front of her just now. It’s because I don’t want to meet anybody from the Fenderson family anymore...that was at least until I picked up the jade pendant which I left for my daughter. I lost control of myself then. My daughter. I miss her every day. Every day of my life has been in misery from how much I miss her!

“I hated and blamed God countless times for being so unfair towards me. But now, God has finally changed his mind. My daughter is still alive, and I’m finally going to see her!”

Xara cried as she said those words.

Gerald could certainly understand her emotions.

“By the way, young man, what’s your name? I heard how Mindy addressed you just now. Is your name Gerald Crawford? Do you belong to the Crawford family from Northbay?”

Xara asked.

“I...”

Gerald was surprised by how quickly this woman picked up information.

He was hesitant to reply to her question.

“You must be. I know that you were the one who called those helicopters over. Wasn’t that the satellite communication device that belongs to your family? Which generation of the Crawford family do you belong to? Do you know Peter Crawford?”

Xara asked a few questions in rapid succession.

Gerald gave up his attempt to keep up the act. It seems like no secret could escape from this woman.

He then said, “I don’t know which generation I belong to in the Crawford family. I’ve never heard about Peter Crawford too. But I know that there’s someone from the Crawford family who wants to meet you. Auntie Fenderson, There is one condition you must fulfill after I reunite you with Queta. You must come with me no matter what!”

“Hmph! You do belong to the Crawford family after all. I understand, Gerald. I’ll go with you after I meet my daughter. I’m aware that the grudge arose because of the two of us back then. Perhaps it’s finally time for us to resolve the misunderstanding, no?”

Xara touched Gerald’s head just like she was patting her child.

After that, she said, “But Gerald, I have my own condition too. I don’t know what kind of relationship you have with my niece—Jasmine. But I want you to promise me that you will never expose my identity to the public especially to the Fenderson family. Is that okay?”

Chapter 751

Gerald gave her his word instantly.

He knew that the Fenderson family was still out looking for Xara. He of course, was no fool and did not wish to create unnecessary trouble for himself.

But, at the same time, Gerald was pretty curious about what happened between Xara and her own family all those years ago.

He wanted to know in what way he was related to Queta.

Realizing that Gerald was asking her about it, Xara became quite frank, and she started spilling out the truth without holding back.

Turns out it’s something along the lines of this.

Peter Crawford, who Xara mentioned, was the second young master from the Crawford family back then. He was young and handsome. He was also Queta’s father.

‘Through logical deduction, the man named Peter should be my uncle who my dad talked about when I was young.’

‘Back then, he’d always tell me that my uncle was working out of town, so he rarely visited home.’

‘No wonder there was a sense of familiarity when I met Queta for the first time.’

‘It turns out that Queta is my cousin.’

But clearly, the grudge between the Crawford family and the Fenderson family was not that simple.

From what Xara said, it sounded like the Crawford family wanted to obtain something from the Fenderson family, which is supposedly why the grudge between them still exists after so many years.

Twenty years ago, the Crawford family sent Peter over as a spy in order to approach the Fenderson family and gain the object that they wanted.

Xara wore a sweet smile when she started describing that part.

She was as lovely as a flower and devastatingly beautiful two decades ago. She was also the president of a large listed corporation under the Fenderson family. She was certainly a strong and independent woman.

And Peter had to invest much effort, just to approach Xara.

Firstly, he entered the marketing department of the company.

After that, he was appointed the general manager of the company because of how extremely capable he was.

In two years' time, he grew very close to Xara.

Peter was dashing handsome. His working capabilities were extremely strong too. These were the two probable factors that made Xara fall for him.

But the Fenderson family had strict family rules. From time to time, Xara would feel a spark of love between them, but due to said rules, she quickly erased these feelings and denied their existence.

That was until a later incident.

After the company's annual party, Xara was driving home alone.

On her way home, she was ambushed by her business rivals. There were around twenty people who surrounded Xara's car, and they wanted to kidnap her.

Luckily, Peter rushed to her rescue in the nick of time. Not only was he smart when it came to work, but he also had a great EQ as well. To add to that, he was extremely proficient in martial arts.

Despite sustaining injuries, he still managed to defeat all twenty of Xara's assailants.

He then picked her up and ran off with her.

That was the classic tale of a hero rescuing a damsel in distress.

At that moment, Xara thought she had finally found the man whom she could rely on for the rest of her life.

After that, they recognized the feelings they had for each other, and they started seeing each other.

That was part of the reason why the resentment between the Crawford family and the Fenderson family worsened. It also led to unthinkable incidents where Queta was abandoned, Xara being booted out of the Fenderson family, and the sudden disappearance of Peter Crawford.

At first, Xara wanted to keep it a secret when she found out that she was pregnant. But how long could one hide away from that fact?

On that day, the truth was revealed and an uproar happened.

Peter's identity was exposed. Angered by this incident, the patriarch of the Fenderson family ordered his subordinates to kill Peter Crawford for the wrong he had committed against his family.

In order to save Peter, Xara did not hesitate to set things clear with the old patriarch and renounce her membership in her family. After that, she stormed out of the Fenderson family, bringing along only her personal maid with her.

Gerald listened to what Xara said intently.

He wasn't feeling great. He realized that what he was doing currently was more or less the same as what his uncle did in the past.

Unfortunately, his uncle was a passionate lover and a self-willed man. Too bad he had to fall in love with the young lady from their mortal rivals.

Their love was destined to fail, no matter how much one struggled.

"What happened after that? If only it involved you and me...and Peter Crawford, I'm sure the hatred between the Crawford family and the Fenderson family would never be so complex. No?"

Gerald asked curiously.

Chapter 752

Something inside Gerald told him that this was still not the time to reveal his identity as the young master of the Crawford family.

"That's right. If only that was the case, then Dylan would not have attacked the Fenderson family in such a crazy manner!"

Xara said.

Dylan was the name of Gerald's father.

Gerald's heart skipped a beat when he heard her mention his father's name. He said nothing and listened to Xara quietly.

"It was because something else happened after that incident..."

"After that, the master of the Crawford family—Dylan put Peter under house arrest. But Peter was worried sick about me and my daughter. So, one night, he said that he wanted to elope with me. Queta was already born at that time and we were supposed to lay low at someplace where no one could find us and where we would lead a proper life!"

Xara said...

It was the night when Xara brought her maid—Xenia to go and find a hotel room in a hurry.

Although she had nothing to do with the Fenderson family following her self-imposed exile, the Fenderson family still hired somebody to keep an eye on her because of some complicated issue.

It was raining heavily that night. Xara was still holding her daughter, and she went to meet Peter according to the route which they had planned out.

After all, they needed to hide from the Fenderson family.

They left in a hurry. That was when Xara left her jade pendant as collateral for the stay at the hotel since she had no cash on her.

And the person who sent the money over the next day was the personal driver who Peter sent over.

At first, everything went according to plan. The next step in their plan was to meet each other in Merry City.

But unexpectedly, an accident happened on their way there.

Something happened to Peter.

He disappeared from the radar following that unknown incident.

The driver confirmed that Peter did arrive at Merry City. But she failed to contact him nonetheless.

Peter went missing just like that.

Dylan thought that the Fenderson family was behind his younger brother's sudden disappearance. Hence, he started a campaign to seek revenge on the Fenderson family. The already bitter relationship between the two families became even worse. Since then, they started plotting against each other secretly.

Xara on the other hand thought that Dylan had captured Peter deliberately just to ruin the Fenderson family.

But she denied having such thoughts later on.

Although the master of the Crawford family—Dylan was rather cunning, he loved his younger brother—Peter tremendously. He would never launch such vicious attacks on the Fenderson family without first facing opposition from Peter.

Something must've happened to Peter then.

“A great ruckus was caused during those years. The Fenderson family did not pale in comparison to the Crawford family when it came to influence and power. Despite suffering such great losses, they were still far better off than your typical upper-class family. There would even be times when the two seemed to be on equal footing when they clashed.”

“It was amid their clashes that my brother and his wife passed away due to an accident.”

“Gerald, you’re the descendant of the Crawford family. I’m sure that you’re aware that the descendants of the Fenderson family aren’t allowed to leave their house, and every person from every generation is grounded within the confines of their property. On the other hand, the descendants of the Crawford family lack the fame most families enjoy, and every person from every generation is raised poor. You’re aware of these things, aren’t you?”

“It’s related to the feud between the Crawford family and the Fenderson family that has been going on for ages, but the disputes worsened because of the affair between Peter and me.”

Gerald nodded.

It was only till this point that he started to understand what was going on around him.

No wonder his father kept telling him to be humble and keep a low profile. If not, he would be brought home to the Crawford family immediately.

Turns out the Crawford family had their enemies too.

However, Gerald did not know how the feud between the Crawford family and the Fenderson family came about in the first place.

It became clear that Xara wasn’t going to dwell on it as well.

She started describing the events that followed her expulsion from the family. She asked Xenia to find a place to stay. After that, she brought Queta to an orphanage in Mayberry and put her there in order to spare her a life full of misery and homelessness that she herself was going to experience.

She then returned to Salford Province alone.

“Gerald, could you please let me meet Queta? I’m begging you!”

It appears that Xara still cared deeply for Queta.

Of course, Gerald wanted to grant her wish. He nodded. "Sure, Auntie Fenderson. Come with me!"

Chapter 753

"Wait a moment!"

Suddenly, Xara said.

"Gerald, I'm so repulsive now. Do you think that I'll frighten Queta if I go there unannounced to meet her? Besides, I've never been by her side after so many years. I've even abandoned her. Will she hate me? Will she hate seeing such an extremely ugly mother?"

Xara's fear was evident in her voice.

"She'll definitely refuse to recognize me as her mother since I'm such a cruel and ugly woman!"

"Besides, it's way too sudden. Will Queta be able to accept it?"

Xara touched her face as she spoke.

Gerald scratched his head. "If I tell Queta that you're her mother, she'll definitely be very excited. I guess you just don't know her that well but, she's a very kind young lady!"

"That won't do. Gerald, how about this? Just make some arrangements for me to go and be a nanny for Queta. I know that there's a chance that she'll despise me as her nanny, but I just want to do something for Queta! I'm willing to do anything for her! Anything!"

Xara said.

"Alright, I'll make the necessary arrangements then. We'll only tell Queta the truth if the chance presents itself in the future."

This was the most he could do, for now at least.

Jasmine had already left with Mindy. Marvin and the others were waiting with the car outside for Gerald to return.

Gerald did not ask them to stay behind in the house, so they did not dare to do so.

It would indeed be inconvenient if Xara tagged along with them. Hence, he asked Stella to leave with Marvin and the rest of the group first.

After that, Gerald got another car and brought Xara to the villa where he was currently staying.

“Let’s go, Auntie Fenderson. It’s right here!”

When they reached the door of the villa, Gerald smiled bitterly when he saw Xara standing there, completely frozen.

“Oh, right!”

The door was opened.

“Queta! Queta?”

Gerald shouted twice.

There was no one at home.

He assumed that Queta must have gone out to buy things.

“She’s not around. Auntie Fenderson, please wait for a moment.”

Xara nodded slightly. “Gerald, I want to go to Queta’s room and take a look. Would that be an inconvenience?” she asked.

“No! Not at all! Let me bring you there!”

Gerald then opened the door of Queta’s room.

However, he did not enter the room.

It was Xara who entered the room with red, tear-filled eyes.

The room was tidied with not a single thing out of place. There was not even a speck of dust in her room, not even in the corners, and it was as clean as a new pin.

In the closet, Queta’s clothes which she usually wore were arranged in a tidy manner.

She then walked toward Queta’s desk.

There was a photo frame on the desk, and it contained a photo of Queta.

Xara could no longer hold her tears back upon seeing the photo of her baby girl.

In the photograph, Queta almost looked exactly like her when she was young.

‘Daughter! She’s really my daughter!’

‘She looks exactly like me!’

Nothing made her happier than being reunited with her own daughter.

She realized that God still loved her.

She pressed the photo frame against her chest and continued sobbing for a while.

Suddenly, she glanced at the desk and saw that there was a notebook on it.

She opened it and took a look.

It was filled with Queta's neat and beautiful handwriting.

Chapter 754

That was Queta's diary.

All these years, she had always had the habit of keeping a diary.

Xara flipped over the first page, and it was from the time before Queta met Gerald.

"I became a kindergarten teacher today. I'm quite satisfied since I get to see the children being happy and cheerful every day. I've never had a mother since I was young after all. Maybe I won't feel so lonely by being with this group of overjoyed, bubbly kids."

"Today, I overheard a colleague talking about me behind my back. That teacher said that I grew up in an orphanage and that I was abandoned by my parents when I was young. I pretended as if I didn't hear it, but I was so sad and upset. I hope I can meet my parents one day, so I can ask them why they abandoned me. Why couldn't they give me a beautiful and happy childhood? Why?"

"..."

"I work in a restaurant now. I made some mistakes, so I was scolded by my superior. A rich young man helped me. For some reason, I knew that he had a kind soul the moment I saw him."

“I met him again, and he helped me, again. But I get nervous every time I see him. It’s because he’s rich, and I’m just a poor girl. However, he told me that he had the same experience as me. I don’t know why but I still have the feeling that he’s a kind and friendly guy. I feel a sense of security every time I’m by his side!”

“I miss seeing him so much. I want to meet him again. Today, I met him again. I want to stay with him and take care of him. I want to take care of him in every way possible. But I know that he has a girl he loves. That girl is very beautiful and generous. Gerald probably won’t fall in love with me. But I’m still willing to do anything for him.”

“If I have my own family, I would tell Gerald that I like him. But I have nothing now. I’m an orphan. I don’t even have a family, so I doubt that I even deserve love.”

...

Xara flipped through the diary her poor little daughter had been keeping. Unknown to her, every page of the diary became soaked with Xara’s tears.

“It’s been more than twenty years. I don’t even know what kind of grievances and bitterness my daughter has been through. She’s too young to be facing such misery.”

Xara held the diary and cried.

“Gerald, you’re back! I went out to buy some vegetables. I’ll go whip up something tasty now!”

Suddenly, Xara heard the clear voice of a girl.

Xara was stunned when she heard that female voice.

She ran out of the room hastily.

It was Queta who stood before her.

“You... are?”

Queta asked the question the moment she saw a stranger walk out of her bedroom.

“I’m...”

Both of Xara’s hands were shaking.

“Queta, she’s Auntie Fenderson. She’ll cook for us in our home from now on. You can go to buy vegetables and cook with her in the kitchen from now on!”

Gerald replied immediately.

Xara nodded slightly.

Suddenly, Queta wore a compassionate expression when she saw Xara’s face which was filled with scars.

She also started having a peculiar feeling the moment she saw Xara. It was a sense of familiarity which she had not felt for a long time.

Queta smiled and nodded. “Nice to meet you, Auntie Fenderson. I’m Queta Smith! We’ll be in charge of Gerald’s meals and daily life from now on!”

Actually, Gerald would never let Queta serve him.

But Queta was a person who refused to have a life without toil. After a long period of trying to persuade her, Gerald decided it was futile to stop her from working for him.

Xara was his actual aunt, meaning it would be impudent to make her serve him.

But at that moment, Gerald did not say much.

After that, Xara and Queta went into the kitchen to start prepping the next meal.

Gerald was delighted.

But at the climax of emotions, Marven decided to call him.

“Gerald, something’s wrong!” he said.

“Yeah, something’s wrong with you that’s for sure! What happened?” Gerald asked.

“F*ck! You really shouldn't have let a girl drive! My goodness! We just had a near-death experience!”

Marven was so scared that he began sobbing.

‘Hmm...’

Gerald was quite helpless. It was true that Stella was the only one from the group who had a driving license. Besides, it would have been inconvenient for him to explain to them why Xara was coming along. That was why he asked Stella to take the wheel and go back by themselves.

“Are you alright?”

“Yes, we’re alright. But we had a rear-end collision with a car. Now, that crazy woman’s freaking out. She won’t let us leave no matter what we tell her. Apparently, she wants the owner of the car to come over!”

Chapter 755

“Let me tell you. My car is a Mercedes-Benz too. It’s much, much more expensive than your stupid MPV! I won’t let this incident slide unless you cough up forty-five grand for me to fix my goddamn car!”

“Also, forty-five thousand dollars are just the fees for repairing my car. You still need to provide compensation for the mental anguish you have caused me! I was rushing to attend a function today. Now that I’ve missed it, have you any idea how much I’ve truly lost? It’s far greater than thirty thousand dollars that’s for sure. Hmph!”

That woman looked young, as young as Marven and the rest of his group.

She was overreacting probably because of how rich she was.

Marven and the others said nothing to refute her claims.

“It was just a simple accident. Do you really have to ask for such a great amount for compensation? How are we even going to cough up that sum?”

Stella asked anxiously.

Seventy-five thousand dollars was no small change.

Stella was rather paranoid when it came to driving. She accidentally bumped into the woman’s car when she was trying to dodge a larger vehicle.

“Hmph! I didn’t ask you for the money. Didn’t you say that you’re driving someone else’s car? You don’t have money but the owner of the car should have it! I’ll wait for him to come. Until then, you’re prohibited to leave!”

That woman warned.

At that moment, that woman's friend, who was also a young lady, emerged from the car. "Let's forget about it. We came out to have fun today. Maybe you can just let it slide after they pay a bit of compensation?"

"Forget about it? No way! I've been down on my luck for the past two days. Like hell, I'm gonna let this slide! Finally, I bumped into a stupid Mister Moneybags and you think I'm gonna let him go? I need to ask for great compensation before that happens!"

The woman whispered to her friend.

After that, she stood at the side of the road and called someone on her phone.

"Marven, did you call Gerald?"

Stella asked Marven.

"Yes, I did. We're pretty close to his house. He said that he'll come right away. Damn woman! You're pretty pesky, aren't you? We're almost at his house so quit the anxious yappin' alright?"

Marven scolded Stella.

"I told you that I didn't do it on purpose. How could you yell at me for that?"

Stella said with teary eyes.

"A good-for-nothing trash bag you are!"

Marven stopped talking after he was satisfied with venting out his anger on Stella.

He squatted by the road and waited patiently for Gerald's arrival.

Suddenly, a sizable crowd had formed around the collision site.

“Hey! Looks like a pretty serious collision! What a beauty of a car too! Tsk tsk tsk! What a pity, young lady!”

The male observers noticed how beautiful the driver of the car who got rear-ended was. She had a naturally seductive face, which men tended to gravitate towards.

They knew from just a glance that she was the kind of rich lady who enjoyed her life vehemently.

Lightbulbs started appearing above their heads. They then approached the woman, perhaps in an attempt to butter her up.

And that woman hung up her call. “That’s right. I just bought this car a while ago. I’m gonna need forty-five grand to fix up the car, and a further thirty thousand for the mental stress they’ve put me through! It’s a small sum anyway. Can’t you see how new my car is!? By the way, is the car owner even here yet? Didn’t you say that he lives nearby? Shouldn’t he be here by now!?”

“He’ll be here soon!”

Marven replied.

“Miss, could it be that they’re lying to you?”

At that moment, the passer-by said.

“Ah? What do you mean?”

The woman was baffled.

“We’re in the most affluent neighborhood in Salford Province, where most of the billionaires live! How do I put this properly? Well, the people who live here are worth at least a hundred and fifty million dollars. If not for how beautiful the scenery is at the local park here, we wouldn’t be hanging around here at all! The math just doesn’t add up! Ain’t no way someone from this neighborhood owns such a crappy car like theirs! That car looks like it costs only sixty or seventy grand, tops!”

The passer-by said.

“That’s true. Maybe they really are fooling me? Hmph! Let me ask you! Is your boss really from around here?”

The woman asked.

“Yeah, he’s staying at Glorious Moment Villa in County Salford.”

Marven replied.

Chapter 756

“Hahaha! D*mn! Get a load of this guy! Glorious Moment Villa is the most expensive property throughout Salford County. A place like that costs around twelve million dollars. Like hell the owner of that place would even consider owning a stupid little Merc!”

“Ah, I see it now. Miss, I’m guessing these guys are just trying to frighten you! After all, someone who lives in Glorious Moment Villa is not to be trifled with!”

The few passersby broke into laughter.

The woman, of course, heard them mention Glorious Moment Villa as well. She lashed out at them angrily, “Are you out of your mind? Let me tell you. The more you waste my time, the more compensation you’re going to have to pay me for my emotional distress. How dare you even think about frightening me! My boyfriend knows some of the people who stay in Glorious Moment Villa. Who is your boss? I guess we’ll find out after I make some phone calls to ask about it!”

Marven was deeply angered by her statement.

However, in the next moment, he stood up excitedly. He then pointed in a seemingly random direction as he said, "He's here."

The woman and the nosy passersby peered in the direction he was pointing towards.

"Are you lying? Which one is your boss?"

The woman asked provocatively.

"The one with the cap, on the electric tricycle!"

Marven said with his face all twisted up.

He cursed out loud in his own mind. 'Why did Gerald have to ride on an electrical tricycle here?'

"D*mn! Is that your boss? You've got to be kidding me right?"

The woman flew into a fit of rage.

The surrounding people burst into laughter.

Gerald, on his silly little electric tricycle, approached the commotion. He saw the people standing there, laughing with their hands on their bellies. It seemed rather lively to him.

It wasn't like he could help it either.

He did not drive his own car there. He always had cars waiting for him whenever he wanted to venture out of his property.

However, what happened was way too sudden. What's more, the scene of the supposed "accident" was just a stone's throw away from his house.

He thought that it would be impudent of him to call his driver to come and take him on such a short trip, one which he could easily complete himself.

Thankfully, there was an old couple staying in the villa next to his.

They were quite close with Gerald too.

The old man moved out of his hometown to help look after his son's villa. However, being from the rural countryside, he had long grown used to riding electric tricycles. Thus, his son bought him a new one, even though they were living in the middle of an upscale neighborhood.

Gerald had to deal with something nearby, so he went and borrowed the vehicle from that old man.

Besides, the electrical tricycle was pretty powerful anyway.

Gerald rolled to a stop at the scene of the car accident.

He then took off the cap which he was wearing.

The woman, whose car was rear-ended by Gerald's friends, thought that she had finally stumbled upon easy meat. She suddenly felt the urge to bully the man on the tricycle.

But she recognized Gerald's face seconds later.

She was stunned all of a sudden. "D*mn! Gerald? It's you!"

"Gerald?"

Her other friend, who advised her to back down just now yelled out in surprise as well.

“Vincy, Xyla. It’s you again.”

Gerald was stunned too.

It did not occur to him that Stella had crashed into Xyla’s car. What a small world!

Xyla was excited to see Gerald.

She thought that the chance had finally arrived for her to approach Gerald. The fact that he was riding an electric tricycle confirmed the suspicion she had the other day.

“Hmph! Gerald! Although we’re acquaintances, this luxury car belongs to my boyfriend! It’s pretty expensive, as you can see. I might not make a big deal out of this if this was my car, but that is not the case! I’m sorry, but according to my calculations, I’m gonna need seventy-five grand to make up for this accident! No more, and certainly no less!”

“Hey, Xyla, what are you doing? Did you forget that Gerald was our classmate!?” Vincy was quick to dissuade her friend from making such outrageous claims.

“I don’t care. He’s gotta cough it up since it’s his car that bumped into mine! Hmph! Besides, who Gerald is? Even Chairman Gordon had to give him a toast back during that party. Did you forget that his childhood friend’s working in the automobile industry? How awesome is that? I doubt that he’ll even hesitate to pay us the money! Now, aren’t I right, Gerald?”

Xyla mocked and said, “Besides, his friend did say that Gerald lives in Glorious Moment Villa. Do you even understand what that implies?”

Xyla talked like a broken chatterbox. Gerald was rather helpless when he saw her acting in that manner. Suddenly, his phone rang...

Chapter 757

“Hello, Mr. Crawford. I’m Xavion!”

Xavion was Chairman Gordon. Gerald met him at the extravagant marketing party for the Mountain Top Villa in Howard County the other day. They had exchanged numbers during their brief interaction there.

“Nice to hear from you again, Chairman Gordon. Is there anything I can help you with?”

Gerald smiled and said.

“Yes, there’s something I’d like to discuss. We’re organizing a banquet, and we’ve invited rich businessmen from various places to attend the event. At first, we didn't dare to invite you since we’re just mere businessmen, and it might be more of an inconvenience for you to attend our banquet. But the response we’ve received is astounding. Rich businessmen and distinguished members of Mayberry’s society have agreed to come. Those presidents said that they’re your subordinates. So, I was calling to ask if you’re free to attend our humble little feast.”

Xavion said.

Doing actual business and earning money were only side-quests when one reached the level of Xavion in the business world. For people like him, connections were equal to business.

It was much wiser to maintain and develop connections than compared to developing a project.

That was why affluent businessmen loved to hold functions where they could mingle together.

It was because they might get acquainted with the presidents of other companies. There, they would then make new connections, and new connections meant new opportunities.

Gerald was no exception to having this habit of attending functions regularly.

Gerald found it hard to refuse Xavion’s hospitality.

But now, he really had no time given the current circumstances he found himself in.

He reluctantly turned down the invitation that Mr. Xavion had extended to him.

He hung up the phone afterward.

It seemed that Xyla was actively eavesdropping on the conversation Gerald had over the phone.

“Hmph! Who’s going to treat you to a meal this time? Which Chairman Gordon is it? Could it be Chairman Gordon from back then?”

Xyla asked curiously.

After all, Xyla hated the idea of Gerald becoming close to Chairman Gordon.

“It’s nobody!”

Gerald smiled bitterly. “I saw the damage to the rear of your car just now. Xyla, isn’t it too much to ask for seventy-five thousand dollars?”

Gerald was rich, but he was no fool.

“Isn’t it too much? F*ck! The men from the garage will come and assess the damage soon! You’ll see it then. Maybe it’ll cost even more than my estimated amount! You’re just making up excuses since you can’t even pay for what I’m asking!”

Xyla said.

After that, she crossed her arms across her chest and waited for the vehicle damage assessors to arrive.

Just yesterday, she was worried that Gerald would strike gold after becoming acquainted with Chairman Gordon during the party.

That explained why she was in such a foul mood today.

But Xyla's worries faded away the moment she saw Gerald arriving on his silly little electric tricycle. To think that he's so broke that he even needs to bargain over seventy-five grand!

After a short while, the vehicle damage assessors from the garage arrived to check the damage on Xyla's car.

After checking around the car, they whispered to each other. Then, they grabbed their tools and stood up.

"How is it? How much do we need for the repairs? I'm sure it's at least seventy-five grand."

Xyla said with her arms crossed.

"Yes. If we're going to repair all the damage, our estimate is that everything will probably cost around seventy thousand dollars."

One of the assessors replied.

"D*mn! Seventy thousand dollars?"

"That's too cruel!"

The crowd shouted in surprise.

Xyla was plenty surprised herself, as she stuck her tongue out at Gerald. She asked for forty-five thousand dollars entirely based on her own experience. To think that the cost would be nearly twice that amount!

She was still that young girl. The influence and power she possessed came entirely from her boyfriend's hard work. She herself did not have much experience with luxury cars.

Initially, she even thought that it would only cost around thirty thousand dollars.

She then smiled smugly and said, "Haha! Gerald, did you hear that? The car repair fee is around seventy thousand dollars. Besides that, there's still compensation for my emotional distress since you've wasted my time. Just do the calculation yourself and see. Let me tell you. It definitely won't be resolved even with seventy-five thousand dollars!"

'I asked for seventy-five thousand dollars just now. Now, it definitely won't do with only seventy-five thousand dollars.'

'I don't want to make you look too bad, but you're the one who refused my kindness. Hmph! Go and cry in the corner then!'

Gerald could only shrug his shoulders wordlessly in resignation.

"That's fine. Thank you for your hard work. Write me a quotation for the car repair fee. You can leave after that. Here, a tip as well!"

As Xyla was saying that, she took a few ten-dollar bills from her purse and shoved them towards the vehicle damage assessors.

But they shook their heads, refusing to take the money.

"Madam, please listen to me first. Just put aside the money for the car repair fee. What we want to say is that this car isn't ours."

Chapter 758

The assessors said.

“Nonsense! This is an imported car. My boyfriend’s father asked his friends to buy it for them. Of course it’s not yours!”

“I think you’ve misunderstood what we’re trying to say here. What I meant is that this vehicle isn’t the model that can be found in our inventory. It’s not even supposed to be sold here in Weston. Only one batch of it was ever produced, which was discontinued a long time ago. But, recently, there have been counterfeits of this model circulating around the domestic market. I’m sure you know through what method this vehicle was procured without me having to say much,” the assessor explained.

“D*mn! So you’re trying to say that we smuggled this vehicle? What a load of horse crap!”

Xyla sounded audibly panicked.

The assessors were helpless. He could only show her the official statement they received from headquarters about these cars. In addition to that, all known counterfeited vehicles had their own reports and related files.

“Get lost! What kind of nonsense is this? I just wanted you to assess the damage. Why did you create so much unnecessary trouble? You know what, I don’t think I want you to assess the damage now, will that be okay?”

Xyla was slightly concerned after taking a good look at the official statement.

After all, that was her boyfriend’s car, not her’s.

She felt a sense of guilt for creating such a mess.

“Miss, I told you just now. This car is included in our records. Our team will come and tow it away in a moment. I hope that you’ll give us your full cooperation in the following investigation. If you’re not the owner of this vehicle, could you ask the owner to come over instead?”

One of the assessors had already hung up his call.

“D*mn! What are you doing?”

Xyla became anxious.

She was no longer in the mood to demand payment from Gerald.

She was so scared that she called her boyfriend—Leon immediately.

As for Gerald, it did not occur to him that things would turn out like that.

Observing the whole process unfold before him, he could only shake his head and laugh bitterly.

Karma’s a b*tch.

It was at this moment that Xyla saw Gerald laughing at her predicament.

Since she was on the phone, she took off one of her high heels and threw it at Gerald.

But Gerald managed to dodge the incoming projectile.

“B*stard! How dare you take pleasure in my misfortune? You’re gonna compensate me no matter what. No more, no less than the amount I specified! It’s your fault. I want a hundred thousand dollars! You won’t be able to escape!”

Xyla said crazily.

“You’re crazy!”

Gerald shook his head in resignation.

The young lady was already in plenty of trouble. How could Gerald kick someone who was already down, like her?

“Sir, I’ve checked and your car is from our store. I’ve arranged for two tow trucks to come here. These two vehicles will be towed away together!”

The vehicle damage assessor said.

“Alright!”

Gerald nodded and agreed.

After that, the man went ahead and continued pestering Xyla with an unending amount of questions.

Seeing that there was nothing else for them to do here, Gerald was about to ask Stella and the others to leave first.

He could deal with the issue here himself.

Xyla probably had been given an earful from her boyfriend over the phone. With tears flowing down her cheeks, she hid from Gerald’s view while sobbing into the phone.

Vincy glanced at Gerald, and he did the same thing at the same time.

Both of them laughed awkwardly at each other.

“Vincy, where were you two headed originally? I’m really sorry for delaying your journey. Or, perhaps I could take you to your destination!”

Gerald offered.

“Fine. We were supposed to attend a gathering. Xyla asked me to keep her company, so that was the reason I came!”

Vincy said.

“Hmph! If you have anything else to ask about, go and meet my boyfriend tomorrow. He’ll contact you tomorrow!”

“Alright, miss.”

At that moment, it appeared that Xyla had concluded her negotiations with the assessors.

After that, she walked over and said, “Vincy, we’re running out of time! Let’s go there first. D*mn it! I really wanted to attend that gathering in this car!”

Xyla said angrily before issuing yet another warning to Gerald.

“Xyla, it’s better if we go there first. You won’t be able to handle this issue by yourself either. Besides, Gerald just offered to drop us off at the venue.”

Vincy said.

“What? Do you want him to give us a ride on that pathetic little electric tricycle? Vincy, are you out of your mind?”

Chapter 759

“Don’t say that Xyla! Not in front of him at least!”

Vincy said.

Although she too, felt that it would be rather embarrassing to arrive on nothing but an electric tricycle, her fear was whittled away by the sight of Gerald riding the vehicle unapologetically. If he himself didn’t feel embarrassed, why should she?

Xyla on the other hand felt the complete opposite. “Maybe you’ve gone drunk! If you want to ride on that thing, go ahead and knock yourself out! Like hell, I’m gonna go in with you though. I’ll be waiting for you outside the venue. And you! Don’t you forget what happened today, Gerald!”

After that, Xyla hailed a taxi and left for the venue in a hurry. After all, she needed to be where her boyfriend was as soon as possible.

“I think it’s better if you don’t go. Listen, my little sister’s whipping up a real good meal. Why don’t you come over to my place and have a meal together? It’s on my tab!” Gerald offered.

After all, Gerald and Vincy still had the kind of friendship ex-classmates shared.

“No, I don’t think I’ll do that. I have to keep her company, Gerald. I fear that if I let her go there herself, she’d suffer from a tremendous loss!”

Despite how vile her friend is, Vincy remains a kind-hearted girl.

But Vincy felt secretly embarrassed when she imagined the scene where she arrived at the venue on Gerald’s little tricycle.

Even though Vincy had a very good disposition and manners, it was an undeniable fact that every girl loved flashy things.

If she refused Gerald now, she might hurt Gerald's pride and dignity.

She was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

However, there was no way out. Hence, she said, "Alright, Gerald. You can just drop me off at the entrance!"

"Sure! This electrical tricycle is plenty powerful! We'll arrive there soon!"

As he said that, he got on the electrical tricycle.

Beep! Beep!

He even honked twice to prompt Vincy to get on the tricycle.

Vincy tidied up her hair with her fingers. There were a lot of people looking at them, which made her blush deeply.

But at last, she still got onto Gerald's electrical tricycle.

"Go faster! Xyla might have reached that place now!"

Vincy said softly. She lowered her head, perhaps in an effort to shield her face from people who might know her, as they zoomed past the tricycle on the freeway.

On the other hand, Gerald said nothing when he saw Vincy, whose face had now turned beet red from all the blushing.

After all, Gerald never felt that a person who drove a four-wheel vehicle was much more respectable than those people who rode on two, or three wheels.

He stepped on the gas pedal and zoomed towards their destination.

The chosen venue was a large hotel in County Salford.

The interior of the grand hotel was hung with red and long draperies, and it was lined with a seemingly unending row of expensive-looking confetti tubes.

There was also a red carpet from the lobby of the hotel which led up to the entrance at the outer courtyard of the hotel.

There were a lot of distinguished people and rich businessmen to be found in the hall.

On the other hand, the organizers of the event were waiting outside to greet and welcome the guests. Some of them were also snapping away with their cameras.

It seems like they were going to hold a small ceremony outside of the hotel first.

There was a crowd that had formed outside.

“Vincy, is it here?”

Gerald said.

In front of them was a couple of rich young men smoking their cigarettes.

They did not even feel obliged to give way to Gerald’s vehicle.

Beep! Beep!

Gerald honked twice to get their attention.

It made that group of rich young men turn and look at them. When they looked over, they saw Gerald, who was riding on an electric tricycle. Behind him was a young lady. The men started whispering to each other before they burst out laughing.

“That’s enough, Gerald. Just put me down here!”

Vincy was deeply embarrassed.

She regretted her decision of agreeing to let Gerald send her here.

It embarrassed her so much as these young men were in the same age group as herself, and they were now giving her weird looks. Truly the nightmare of a young maiden!

“Sure!”

Gerald stepped on the brakes and the tricycle rolled to a stop right before the entrance of the hotel.

And coincidentally, Xyla came out to fetch Vincy.

Her eyes bulged when she saw that Vincy really did arrive at the hotel on Gerald’s stupid little tricycle.

“D*mn! Vincy, are you out of your mind? How could you ask him to send you here on his electric tricycle?”

Xyla’s face turned as red as a tomato as soon as she saw Gerald’s vehicle.

“Xyla, stop talking about that now. Gerald, why don’t you go home first? I’ll treat you to a meal next time!”

Vincy quickly shoo-ed Gerald away when she noticed how much attention they were garnering.

“Sure thing!”

Gerald nodded.

“Chairman Larson and his convoy have arrived!”

Chapter 760

The security guards, who were standing at the entrance shouted out to the businessmen who were standing out in the courtyard.

The rich folks then hastily, but excitedly rushed forwards to welcome the newly-arrived guest.

“D*mn! Why is there an electric tricycle parked at the entrance? What are you doing? Get lost kid!”

The security guard came over and shoved Gerald aside forcefully.

“Oh God, how embarrassing!”

Feeling humiliated, Xyla covered her eyes.

“If there’s anything you’d like to say, say it nicely. Why did you push me around? I’ll leave now, alright!?”

Gerald stepped on the gas pedal and left.

After the convoy rolled to a stop, a couple of middle-aged businessmen got out of the vehicles. There were their rich daughters and sons too. It quickly became clear that these were their most distinguished guests today.

The other presidents lined up to welcome them. Pleasantries and greetings were exchanged.

“Ladies and gentlemen, thank you for giving me the honor to attend the party this time around. But it’s a slight misfortune that we failed to invite a very distinguished guest today. We cannot express how regretful we are in relation to this situation!”

All of them stood along the side of the red carpet and listened to the president who appeared to be the organizer as he spoke.

There was a lot of discussion going on among the crowd. “Who is that?”

“Who’s that big shot? Chairman Gordon!”

The others asked.

Vincy had already been led into the hall of the hotel by Xyla.

At that moment, they looked at Chairman Gordon, who was standing on the stage.

Subconsciously, fear had started taking hold of her heart.

She was slightly anxious as she tugged at her boyfriend—Leon’s arm, who was standing next to her. “Leon, who is the guy that he said he wanted to invite?”

“How would I know? Didn’t you see how clueless we all were?”

Leon was not being nice. After all, his father had already been informed of the mess which Xyla had stirred up.

Xyla felt bad for it, so she shut her mouth up immediately.

Prior to that accident, she was excited to be able to attend such a grand occasion. She thought that she'd get to know lots of rich people.

But deep down, she was feeling slightly insecure about herself.

It was because Gerald seemed to have answered a call just now, and the one who called him was also a person named "Chairman Gordon".

She wondered if it was the same person.

But the more she thought about it, the less plausible it became.

Who was Gerald? At most, the only explanation she could come up with was that his childhood friend had introduced him to Chairman Gordon. Without that friend, he was just another nobody!

Xyla felt secure and relieved when she thought of that.

"Heh heh! There are a whole lotta things we can talk about when it comes to this 'big shot'. Our distinguished guest—Chairman Larson, who came here all the way from Mayberry, and his daughter happen to be close friends of his!"

Chairman Gordon said with a smile.

Chairman Larson responded with a proud smile of his own.

The facial expression of his daughter changed too. She started smiling but with hints of excitement and anxiousness.

"Ah! Chairman Gordon, don't keep us guessing. Hurry up and tell us who that big shot is!"

Some of the more curious ones have noticed how mysterious Chairman Gordon was acting.

“How about this? Let me give you a hint, maybe then, you’ll figure out who he is! He’s the owner of the most luxurious villa in Mayberry—Mountain Top Villa. Besides that, he’s also a millionaire in Sunnydale Province and the president of the most powerful group in Mayberry!”

Chairman Gordon said enthusiastically.

“Ah!”

Everyone below the stage was shocked when they heard what Chairman Gordon said.

“Oh gosh! I know who he’s talking about now! Is it Mr. Crawford from Mayberry?”

“How is that even possible? Has Mr. Crawford of Mayberry finally come to Salford Province?”

“As powerful and capable as Chairman Gordon is, it’s preposterous to think that he’s able to invite Mr. Crawford all the way from Mayberry to attend this event.”

Their discussion was ceaseless.

The majority of the businessmen gathered here today thought that Chairman Gordon was just tooting his horn.

They thought that Chairman Gordon didn’t even have Mr. Crawford’s contact number, never mind being able to invite him.

“Aren’t you just trying to use the name of Mr. Crawford to your advantage, and did you rely on the Larson family from Mayberry to get to know the man himself?”

At that moment, Fabian, who was under the stage, put forth his brainy deduction.

“But I heard that Chairman Gordon has undertaken a few projects of Mr. Crawford’s in Mayberry. Could it be that he’s actually well-acquainted with Mr. Crawford?”

A few rich heirs had come to Leon’s side and started discussing.

“Xyla, Vincy, aren’t the two of you from Mayberry? You should know about Mr. Crawford of Mayberry well, right?”

Out in public, Fabian treated Xyla decently.

Both Xyla and Vincy shook their heads and said, “We only heard of him from our classmates. He’s very powerful and influential. Everyone in Mayberry knows about him. But we don’t know any more than that!”

“Vincy, why don’t you ask our ex-classmates? I was so anxious just now that I almost smashed my phone!”

Since the rich heirs had started talking about Mr. Crawford, it would be inappropriate of her and mighty awkward if she didn’t participate in the discussion, since she was from Mayberry as well.

Vincy nodded.

She reached down to fumble for her phone in her bag but she froze up seconds later. “Oh no, I think I might have left my bag on Gerald’s tricycle...”

Chapter 761

Since there were so many people present earlier and she was already feeling so uncomfortable back then, Vincy had gotten off the electric tricycle in a hurry. She must’ve forgotten to take her bag along with her at that moment!

“Oh no, how careless of you! Did you have a lot of cash in it?” asked Xyla.

“Having my money stolen is the last thing I’m worried about! I just hope that Gerald eventually notices it! If it gets left behind, my cell phone, identity card, and bank cards will all be gone!” replied Vincy.

“Hey! Why are you doing back here? Does this look like a car park to you?”

At that moment, a commotion could be heard from the entrance. Upon closer inspection, a few security guards seemed to be trying to prevent a young man from entering the area.

“My friend’s forgotten her bag! I just want to pass it to her!”

The young man in question was none other than Gerald!

“Have a good look at what kind of place this is! Do you think that anyone can just enter this place all willy-nilly? Scram!” shouted the security personnel as they began pushing Gerald away.

Since Xyla and Vincy had both been so close to the entrance when that scene happened, they were able to witness the entire thing.

“Good god! Just look at how embarrassing that guy is! Hurry up and take your bag so that we can make him leave already!” replied Xyla anxiously.

Her anxiety stemmed from the fact that a few rich-looking young men were also looking at Gerald. All of them seemed to be ridiculing him as though he was nothing but a joke.

It was natural for people to want to be prideful before their peers. If her peers ever found out that she was acquainted with such a worthless person as Gerald, then she’d definitely be made fun of as well!

Hearing Xyla’s words, Vincy immediately ran toward Gerald before saying, “I’m here, Gerald! You can hand my bag over to me now!”

While she also wanted to thank Gerald, somehow, the words just never came.

The situation was similar to her high school days. After all, Vincy had slight feelings for Gerald back then. However, she never ended up telling him about it since she wanted to keep her face.

It was at that moment when Vincy realized that not much had changed since then.

Instead of stating her appreciation, she simply said that she needed to go back inside before turning around again.

“Gerald!” shouted a high-pitched female voice out of the blue. It seemed to have come from the stage area.

Finding the voice familiar, Gerald scanned through the crowd and saw that it had come from the young lady of the Larson family, Elena! She and her father had come from Mayberry city, and both of them were standing among what seemed to be a few chairmen who worked under her father’s group.

“Is that really you, Gerald? On our way here, I saw someone riding an electric tricycle who's back looked similar to yours! I told my father about it but he said it was simply preposterous to think that you’d ride an electric tricycle! To think that my initial guess was right!” said Elena rather excitedly.

Everyone was utterly shocked when they heard that. The young lady of the Larson family actually had a friend who rode on electric tricycles?

“Who is that guy? Isn’t Miss Larson treating him quite well?”

“Indeed! Maybe he’s one of her classmates?”

As the guests discussed among themselves in surprise, Xyla herself was breathing quite heavily at that moment.

‘Elena actually knew Gerald? How on earth did Gerald know so many people?’

“Oh? Elena and Mr. Larson! You’re both here too?” replied Gerald as his gaze momentarily wandered to the front of the stage.

Who he saw, however, surprised him. Standing before the stage, was Xavion!

It was at that moment when Gerald remembered that Xavion had earlier given him a call, inviting him to a party. However, since he was confronting Xyla when Xavion had called, Gerald had turned down the invitation.

Little did he know that the party Xyla and Vincy were attending was the one he was invited to!

“‘You’re both here too’? This kid is really something else! Doesn’t he know how to speak respectfully at all?”

“I know right? Referring to Mr. Larson and his daughter as ‘all of you’... How preposterous!”

“Agreed!”

“Say, Xyla? Vincy? Isn’t he your classmate?” asked Leon out of the blue as he shook his head with a wry smile on his face.

“We don’t know him at all!” replied Xyla instantly.

Chapter 762

Vincy herself simply lowered her head without saying a word.

Meanwhile, Xavion finally realized that Gerald was present and when he did, he became so excited that his lips began trembling.

“M-Mr. Crawford! You’re here!”

Assuming that Gerald hadn't wanted to attend the party since he looked down on all the ordinary rich people who were attending, Xavion didn't continue pestering him after that call. Yet here he was, standing before him right now!

"Greetings, Mr. Crawford!" said Mr. Larson and his group, replying to Gerald's earlier greeting as they took a step forward before bowing slightly before him.

At that moment, silence enveloped the entire area. Many of the guests were so surprised that their jaws were now hanging wide.

Why were all these wealthy and powerful figures bowing down to this young man who had arrived on an electric tricycle?

What more, Chairman Gordon appeared to be trembling earlier as he spoke!

Xyla's breathing was growing heavier by the minute. Her mind was completely blank and her mouth was so wide open that one could stuff an entire hard boiled egg into it.

"M-Mr. Crawford?! Did... Did they actually just refer to Gerald as Mr. Crawford?! How could that be possible?!"

Vincy was too shocked to even think of a reply. She had no idea what was going on anymore.

"Is... Is he really Mr. Crawford of Mayberry?!"

It was a brief moment later when the crowd of people began getting noisy again as they exchanged gazes with each other in shock.

"Chairman Gordon and Chairman Larson! You're being way too polite. I honestly hadn't expected you to be organizing this event!" replied Gerald, feeling slightly embarrassed.

His embarrassment was warranted since he could now feel people staring at him both left and right. Everyone seemed to be experiencing complicated emotions as they continued looking at Gerald.

Though he felt awkward, Gerald simply walked into the hotel in a naturally poised manner.

Xyla could only stare in astonishment as Gerald walked past her and headed straight for the stage.

Realizing that Gerald was coming closer, Chairman Gordon immediately stood up from the middle seat and gestured for Gerald to take it as he said, "Please, have this seat, Mr. Crawford!"

After saying then, he then looked at the rest of the guests before saying, "Everyone, we have a very distinguished guest today! This is Mr. Crawford from Mayberry, an extremely wealthy and powerful figure who also owns Mountain Top Villa!"

As the audience went wild from the confirmation that Gerald truly was the one and only, Mr. Crawford, sudden laughter akin to a madwoman's pierced through all the noise.

Everyone then turned to stare at the girl who had made such a crazed laugh.

"What are you laughing at, Xyla?" asked Leon who had also been taken aback by her maniacal laughter.

"Haha! What do you mean what am I laughing at? I'm laughing at Gerald, of course! How incredible of him to have deceived so many people! But what's even more unbelievable is the fact that everyone here actually believes that he's Mr. Crawford! Don't any of you find that to be a rather ridiculous claim?" replied Xyla as she walked forward, continuing to laugh.

Upon hearing what she had to say, several of the wealthy businessmen on stage began frowning. This was especially so for Chairman Gordon as he glared at Xyla.

"What do you even think you're saying? Men! Toss her out of this place immediately!" shouted Xavion angrily.

“Don’t get me wrong, Chairman Gordon. I have no intention of offending you at all! I just hope that you won’t continue being fooled by that guy. After all, I was his high school classmate! I know all about his past and his living conditions very well! Vincy is aware of it too! He’s nothing more than a pauper who can’t even afford to pay for his own meals!”

Once the audience heard that, everyone simultaneously heaved secret sighs of relief. Could this be a fake Mr. Crawford after all?

Seeing how everyone seemed to believe her now, Xyla grew even cockier than before. If everything continued going well, then she would be able to successfully show off in front of all these influential business people!

Claiming that Gerald was actually Mr. Crawford? What a joke! It was simply impossible!

Xyla then turned to look at Gerald, a look of contempt on her face as she laughed before saying, “I bet you didn’t expect this, right, Gerald? I’m here today so that you won’t be able to continue fooling Chairman Gordon and the others!”

Under no circumstances would she ever willingly believe that he was actually Mr. Crawford!

In response, Gerald simply shook his head with a wry smile on his face.

Xavion expressed a similarly wry smile as he said, “Hahaha! Really now... It seems that this young lady has had a huge misunderstanding about Mr. Crawford...”

“He really is Mr. Crawford! The one and only owner of the Dream Investment Group!”

Chapter 763

Hearing Chairman Gordon’s stern voice, Xyla could no longer bring herself to laugh out loud anymore.

...Was... Was it really true?

Even from back then, Xyla had always hated it whenever she saw Gerald's desperate face. She just couldn't ever take him seriously.

It had just been a few years since they had last met... Had Gerald really changed that much?

Why were so many wealthy and influential figures being so respectful and courteous to him?

How could any of this truly be?

As all these questions echoed in Xavia's mind, Gerald simply ignored her, opting instead to continue talking with Chairman Gordon and the others.

The event then resumed for about half an hour before Gerald bid farewell to Chairman Gordon and the rest. He had honestly wanted to leave for quite a while now.

As he left the hotel, a large group of people followed to see him off.

Before he was able to leave, Elena whispered something into her father's ear before sticking her tongue out. She wanted to leave together with Gerald and her father naturally agreed.

Xyla herself was feeling extremely anxious as she exited the hotel together with Vincy to see Gerald off.

When they finally caught sight of him again, Gerald had just gotten on his electric tricycle. This time, however, Elena was sitting behind him.

While Vincy had earlier felt embarrassed about Gerald riding an electric tricycle, she found it strange that she no longer felt the same.

After all, even though Elena was such a beautiful young lady, she actually seemed happy sitting behind an electric tricycle. Vincy wouldn't mind sitting there herself now!

She deduced that these complex emotions had stemmed from the moment she realized who Gerald really was. Vincy was honestly also feeling quite shocked and frightened by the wild turn of events.

It was almost as though she was in a dream.

Xyla, on the other hand, was so anxious that she eventually burst into tears as she continued looking at Gerald.

He was still dressed the same way, still bore the same appearance, and still had the same demeanor.

That combination had made him look extremely pathetic earlier.

Yet why did she feel that he was now much more awe-inspiring and intimidating at the same time? It just didn't make any sense!

Gerald himself began pedaling his electric tricycle—with Elena seated behind him—as he headed straight back to his place for dinner.

He was currently in a pretty good mood since his trip this time hadn't been in vain. After all, not only had he successfully completed his task, but he had also helped Queta find and get acknowledged by her biological mother and cousin sister.

A lot had really been achieved this time around.

However, whenever there were happy people, there would always be depressed people as well.

At that moment, the sound of a teacup shattering echoed across a villa.

“Garbage! Every single one of you! How could you actually lose a person whom you had already gotten a hold of?!” yelled Yael at several of his foreign subordinates. They were all inside his villa now.

Yunus himself was present, an ugly expression plastered on his face. After all, he had sung high praises about this group of men before. Yet here they were, unable to even capture a few students!

As Yael continued yelling at the group, Yunus knew for a fact that he was indirectly cursing at him as well. Knowing this made Yunus extremely angry.

“Mr. Schuyler, Mr. Long, we were completely surrounded that time! We may have accidentally alarmed the local armed forces back then! Please give us another chance! Give us Jasmine’s location and we’ll definitely bring her back this time!” said the leader of the group.

“Too late! It’s far too late for that! Do you honestly think that it’s that easy to make a move on the Fendersons? There was only a chance to kidnap Jasmine this time since the family is currently undergoing a sensitive period! Because of that, my father and I didn’t actively need to know what all the Fendersons were planning! Yet to think that your group would actually act so rashly and alert the enemy! I can only pray that the Fendersons won’t suspect that I’m involved! I’ll already be thankful as long as they don’t end up doubting me!” growled Yael, his anxiety apparent in his voice.

He was honestly extremely afraid that the failed kidnapping would instantly lead to bad consequences. If this ended up affecting his family’s major event, then the losses would definitely outweigh the gains.

Yunus then turned to look at his dispirited subordinates before asking, “I’m curious about something, however. There was no reason for the helicopters to have arrived so quickly and quite frankly, there was no way the local armed forces would’ve been alerted that easily. Explain what happened in detail.”

Hearing that, the subordinates then began detailing everything that had happened to them.

“...Hmm? Could it really be him...?” replied Yunus as he frowned after listening to their explanation.

“Him?” asked Yael.

Chapter 764

Ignoring Yael’s question for the moment, Yunus then asked, “Didn’t you secretly take several photos? Let me see who else was there!”

After being handed the photos, Yunus individually scanned through them before slamming his hands on the table in anger. He had found the perpetrator!

“D*mn it all! It really is Gerald! It’s that god d*mned Mr. Crawford again!”

Not only had Yunus been repeatedly humiliated by Gerald on his birthday, he had also been grounded the moment he returned that day! All the prestige he had accumulated over the years was gone. Just like that.

Yunus hated that person to the core.

“He’s Mr. Crawford from Mayberry?” asked Yael who had obviously heard about Gerald before.

Hearing Yael’s question, Yunus took the opportunity to detail all his grudges and grievances against Gerald to him.

“Hahaha! No wonder everything seemed to be running so smoothly for Jasmine despite not even utilizing any of the men from the Fenderson family! She had such a powerful person helping her all this time! It’s no wonder why Jasmine doesn’t take you seriously at all even after you’ve treated her so well, Mr. Schuyler!” deduced Yunus.

Upon hearing all that, Yael took in a deep breath.

“...Regardless of who it is, as long as he goes against me, I won’t let him off that easily! Especially since he’s in Salford County! Come along, men!” yelled Yael angrily as he began instructing his men to start taking the next course of action.

“Please, refrain from continuing to act impulsively, Mr. Schuyler!” replied Yunus as he held on to Yael’s shoulder.

“I’ve dealt with him before and he’s much more powerful than what you and I could ever imagine. Acting impulsively will only get us into more trouble! Just so you know, his sister was the one who had chased the Long family out of Mayberry city!” persuaded Yunus.

What more, if they directly targeted Gerald, that action could tantamount to turning a simple matter into an extremely complicated one.

It wasn't as though Yael couldn't understand where Yunus was coming from. However, he simply couldn't help but feel slightly jealous now that he knew she had Gerald on her side. After all, that could very well have been the reason why Jasmine was ignoring him and why she had slapped him as well!

Eventually, he managed to calm himself down and once that happened, he felt much better.

"Then do you have a better idea, Yunus? Should I simply allow him to continue showing off and using his power to intimidate others in Salford County then?"

In response, Yunus sneered coldly before saying, "Of course not! In fact, I'd love for him to remain here forever so that I can personally continue having my revenge on him after all I've suffered through! Speaking of which, could you lend me some of your men, Mr. Schuyler? I need to do an investigation on which of Gerald's men he brought along with him here."

"Not a problem!"

Both of them then continue talking late into the night.

Fast-forward to three days later...

"I'm going out with Aunt Fenderson now, brother! Do you have anything you'd like to eat? We'll be sure to get those ingredients for you!"

"Anything's fine! After all, I'll love anything prepared by you and Aunt Fenderson!" replied Gerald as he looked at both of them with a smile.

It had only been three days yet Queta was already quite close to Aunt Fenderson. Just like Gerald had said, Queta didn't despise Xara for her scarred face at all.

Xara herself seemed to be both happy and satisfied looking at her sensible and obedient daughter who spent lots of time together with her every day.

As for Quetta, she felt naturally secure and intimate whenever she was around Aunt Fenderson. Aunt Fenderson simply felt like a close relative to her.

After hearing Gerald's reply, both of them then headed to the shopping center, hand in hand.

Earlier while they were walking past the side of the shopping center, Xara had noticed that Queta kept peeking at a small store selling candied haws.

Seeing Queta like that made her feel slightly anguished. After all, according to Queta, if she hadn't met Gerald, she would probably still be living in poverty now. She had also mentioned that during her childhood, being able to eat candied haws was considered to be a luxury.

With that in mind, just as they were about to leave the mall, Xara stopped walking before saying, "Oh, I forgot to get something! Give me a moment, Queta! I'll be right back!"

After saying that, she hurriedly headed to the store, leaving Queta slightly confused as to why she was being so secretive. Since Queta had been told to wait, she simply remained at the spot.

It was at that moment when Queta suddenly heard the sound of a revving motor engine.

By the time she turned to look at the source of the increasingly loud sound, she saw a van heading directly for her!

A second later, the few present people at the scene began screaming.

Chapter 765

Upon screeching to a halt right beside Queta, a few people slid the van door open and immediately tried dragging her in!

“Queta!” shouted Aunt Fenderson who was already returning from the shop by the time she saw the suspicious van driving toward her daughter.

She then began running toward the poor girl who was desperately struggling to escape from her captors. The captors themselves were still trying to drag her into the van.

In her anxiety, she bit down hard on one of the masked men’s arms!

Shouting in pain, the already strong man then roughly pushed Queta aside, sending her falling straight for the ground! As a result, the back of Queta’s head hit a bump on the side of the road and she immediately fainted from the hard impact.

By the time Xara got to the group of men, they were already carrying the now unconscious Queta into the van.

In her attempt to prevent them from taking her away, Xara immediately began wildly hitting the men. However, no matter how desperately she fought, she was no match for them. After all, how could she possibly win against a group of large men all on her own?

Just as Xara felt like all hope had been lost, the corner of her eye caught a glimpse of somebody making a dash for the scene! Seconds later, a man was now standing right in front of her.

When the leader of the group realized who the daring person was, he immediately froze in place.

Without saying another word, the man then began attacking the masked kidnappers with an extremely cold expression on his face!

Though a few of the men tried fighting back, they were no match against their new opponent.

“Withdraw! Withdraw immediately!” yelled one of the men.

Hearing that, Xara anxiously ran for the front passenger seat and began trying to unmask the person sitting there. While she was able to yank his mask off, the man, in his state of panic, immediately covered his face with his hands.

Not long after, an angry yell could be heard as the van sped away.

While the man who had helped them seemed to have wanted to chase after the van, when he saw how injured Queta was, he immediately understood what the priority was.

“Thank you! Thank you so much!” said Xara as she hugged Queta tightly in her arms.

“There’s no need to thank me, I’m only doing my job. After all, Mr. Crawford had specifically instructed me to protect Miss Smith in secret. It was beyond my expectations, however, that people would actually have the audacity to take action against her in broad daylight!” said the young man as he couldn’t help but blame himself.

As it turned out, the person who had helped them was actually Tyson!

Queta was still unconscious at the moment, and her face was pale. Not long after, an ambulance could be heard in the distance.

While both Drake and Tyson were usually responsible for ensuring Gerald’s safety, when he left for Salford County, Gerald had said that Drake alone was sufficient to protect him.

Therefore, he entrusted Tyson with the task of secretly protecting Queta instead, and Tyson had been doing as he had been ordered to for quite a while now.

Gerald had issued the order since he was well aware that many people around him had been victims of kidnapping attempts in the past, which was why he was so wary about Queta’s safety.

To Tyson, however, he wondered what could possibly happen to her. It was the reason why he was usually quite idle as he underwent this particular task.

Never had he expected to see people actually trying to lay their fingers on her today through his observatory equipment.

Even though he had rushed to the scene as fast as he could, he was a little too late to prevent Queta from getting injured.

As soon as Gerald was notified about the incident, he immediately headed to the hospital where Queta was.

She was still unconscious when he arrived, and Gerald could feel his entire body shaking uncontrollably in anger.

Xara herself had been crying this entire time.

"I've contacted Mr. Zartyr and told him to investigate the matter. Since the group of men weren't locals, we currently have no clues on who they are yet. Well, all but one. I believe you'll be very interested to find out who that person is, Mr. Crawford," said Drake as he walked over to Gerald.

He then tapped on his phone before showing Gerald a picture of the person Xara had unmasked earlier.

Upon recognizing the person behind the mask, Gerald was shocked.

"Yunus? Why is he here?" asked Gerald, his surprise apparent in his voice.

Chapter 766

Though the picture itself was quite blurry, Gerald was certain that the person in it was Yunus Long.

After all, how couldn't he recognize the person he had nearly fallen victim to?

"That's him alright. After a little investigating, we found that he first arrived at the Salford Province a few days ago. While I understand that he has his reasons to take his revenge on you, I don't quite get why he'd follow you all the way here just to do that!" replied Drake as he frowned.

Gerald's immediate response, however, was to punch the wall beside him. Hard.

"I don't care about him or even his motives. All I know is that Queta was innocent in this incident yet she nearly lost her life because of me! Drake, Tyson, I believe that Yunus hasn't left the Salford Province yet. I need both of you to track him down and capture him for me! Regardless of the methods you use, make sure he doesn't leave the Salford Province scot-free!" said Gerald angrily as he looked at the unconscious Queta through the ward door's window.

"Right away, Mr. Crawford!" said both of them simultaneously as they immediately got to work.

Meanwhile, in a rather well-hidden villa, Yunus was frantically packing his things up.

"Hurry up with the packing! We'll be leaving using two separate routes!"

"Huh? Do we really need to leave in such a hurry? Shouldn't we notify Mr. Schuyler first?" asked one of Yunus's personal drivers.

"What else is there to say? If we wait here any longer we probably won't be able to leave even if we wanted to! Now hurry up and arrange for that group of men to leave first!" replied Yunus anxiously.

He had already planned the kidnapping incident together with Yael from three days ago.

Since Queta was the only person around whom Gerald was close to, Yunus had planned to use her as bait to lead Gerald into a trap. If everything had gone according to plan, Yunus would've finally been able to kill him!

He was even prepared to sacrifice his subordinates just to ensure that Gerald died!

Since he always acted behind the scenes, he was fairly certain that there was nothing he had to be afraid of.

However, things were different now. Yunus believed that Gerald would be able to uncover the truth extremely quickly as long as he wanted to.

Gerald would definitely send his men to track him down and go after him once he found out that Yunus was involved in the operation!

His initial plan to take advantage of Yael by placing the blame on him once Gerald was killed had only been wishful thinking. Yunus realized now that he had once again underestimated Gerald's true capabilities.

It wasn't long before everyone involved with the escape plan was packed and ready to go.

"Everything's been prepared and arranged according to your instructions, Mr. Long. I've managed to get my hands on a cross-country vehicle and by rough calculations, it should already be dark by the time we make it out of the Salford Province!"

"Alright, then let's head out already! Also, arrange for someone to pick us up in Merry City!" said Yunus as he put his sunglasses on and carried his suitcase to the vehicle.

As this was happening, something seemed to be amiss in the Salford Province city.

Several brands of luxury cars were driving up and down the streets, and there seemed to be at least five hundred of the expensive cars in the entire fleet.

The sea of luxury cars making their way all over the city made for a truly spectacular scene.

"Oh my god! What on earth is happening?"

"What an amazing scene, right?!"

"I wonder what the commotion is about..."

“Beats me. There’s no news regarding what’s currently happening at all! I do wonder what kind of person would have this much power and money to own so many luxurious cars!”

While this was shocking to all those within the Salford Province, those walking around the province’s outskirts were in for an even bigger surprise.

Loud droning could be heard in the sky at that moment, prompting the people in the outskirts to look up.

“Holy cr*p! Look at all those helicopters!”

“My god! What on earth is happening here?”

While most of the people were shocked to the point where their jaws hung wide open, many others immediately began taking pictures of the scene.

With well over a hundred helicopters encircling the province’s skies, the event looked simply magnificent.

The plan was to thoroughly search both land and sky throughout the day till they were able to lock on to their target.

As the search continued, night soon came.

The target in question had already arrived at the main road connecting the Salford Province to Merry City by then.

As the car drove on, the late-night wind howled eerily as it blew across Yunus’s side window.

Chapter 767

“Where are we now?” asked Yunus, his face pale as a sheet.

“I’m not too sure either... While we’ve been able to escape from Gerald’s men when we bumped into them on the main road, we strayed too far off and it’s only barren land around us now!” replied the driver, his legs quivering in fear.

While they had earlier assumed that they were going to escape just fine, they hadn’t expected Gerald’s men to intercept them out of the blue on the main road leading to Merry City!

Thankfully, night was already approaching by then and since the driver was an expert, he managed to eventually shake them off.

Though they had successfully evaded Gerald’s men for the moment, they were now also lost.

“Why do I even pay you then?! B*stard!” shouted Yunus.

They were already far from the city and the gloominess of the surrounding area only served to make Yunus even more depressed.

It was around then when the sound of motor engines could be heard in the distance, the cold night breeze further sending chills down their spine.

Moments later, flickering lights could also be seen from the rear-view mirror.

They had no idea how many cars were currently behind them, but once Yunus saw a car rapidly catching up, he immediately shouted, “Step on it!”

Yunus then took his cell phone out and began calling his mother.

“Are you on your way back now? It’s my birthday tomorrow so remember to be back on time!”

“Mom! Please come save me! Someone’s trying to prevent me from entering Merry City!”

“What was that, son? Do you have a bad signal there? I can’t hear you at all!” replied Yunus’s mother.

“Mom! Can you hear me now? Save me! Hello? Hello?!” yelled Yunus frantically before finally realizing that there wasn’t any phone signal anymore!

“Mr. Long, why don’t we stop the car for now? It’s pitch black out there and we aren’t familiar with the road’s condition either!” said the driver who had been terrified this entire time.

He knew that no matter how much they tried to escape, they would still eventually be caught. Escape was simply no longer an option.

“You definitely aren’t allowed to stop! If Gerald gets his hands on me this time, I’ll surely be done for! Keep moving forward! We need to get off this blasted road and reunite with our own men as soon as possible!”

Hearing that, the driver stepped on the accelerator but all of a sudden, the body of the car began shaking violently!

By the time Yunus managed to regain his composure from the shock, he realized that the entire car seemed to be descending rapidly.

Now finally understanding what was happening, both Yunus and the driver screamed in horror! Slowly but surely, their screams became muffled as they descended further and further until...

A sickening crash was heard, followed by the sound of an explosion as flames burst out from the depths! Shortly after, however, silence resumed with only the occasional muffled roar from the fires below.

It wasn’t long before the convoy chasing after them arrived at the scene. Now lit by the bright headlights of all the cars, it was apparent that Yunus and his driver had accelerated straight down a cliff!

Sometime after, it was late at night in the Long family’s mansion in Yanken, when a beautiful woman said, “I can’t help but feel a little anxious, master. Yunus sounded extremely nervous and afraid when he called me earlier. Do you think he’s doing alright in the Salford Province?”

“Humph! Why wouldn’t he be fine? After all, the Schuylers are living there too! You can rest assured that he’s definitely doing fine!” replied a middle-aged man with a cold expression on his face.

“But I can’t even contact him anymore! I’m sure you’re aware of how many people Yunus has offended in the past two years!” said the woman, her worry reflected in her tone.

“Alright, alright, I’ll give the Schuylers a call later and ask them about the matter! Even if Yunus really has offended a lot of people, it’s always been members of the Long family who have ever dared to take action against everyone else! Who would even dare to lay a finger on us! Humph! While the Crawford siblings are both very arrogant now, they can be sure that I’ll make them pay for all that they’ve done to us!”

The man then snorted before picking his phone up to call the Schuylers.

Chapter 768

After talking on the phone for a while, the middle-aged man’s face suddenly turned deathly pale.

“I-is that so...? I’ve deeply troubled you, Mr. Schuyler! I’ll send someone over immediately!”

All the color seemed to have drained from his face as he hurriedly said, “According to the Schuyler family, Yunus has gone missing in the Salford Province!”

“...Huh? W-what should we do then?!”

“For now, I’m sending someone over there. Tell Second to immediately send someone there as well!” replied the man in an anxious voice.

“Second? But he...”

“First and I can’t leave. Our only option is to have a family member personally deal with the matter. For that reason, it should be fine for Second to represent the family there. I’ll tell Mr. Hobson to follow him as well!”

Hearing that, the woman simply nodded.

Meanwhile, Gerald finally arrived at the cliff on his helicopter.

The cliff was deep and according to the report from his subordinates, they could hardly find complete pieces of the car, let alone its two passengers.

Hearing that, Gerald could only smile wryly.

This was a textbook example of the phrase, 'even when the heavens send calamities upon us, there is still hope to weather through them; yet when a man brings calamity upon himself, there is no escaping it'.

Yunus had truly brought his own demise upon himself!

At that moment, Gerald's phone began ringing. It was Tyson.

Knowing that taking extra precautions wouldn't hurt, Gerald had ordered him to personally guard over Queta ever since he came to the Salford Province.

Picking the call up, Gerald then asked, "What is it?"

"Miss Smith has already awoken, Mr. Crawford. While she's only suffering from a mild concussion, she's mostly fine. However..."

As Tyson continued speaking, his voice grew softer and softer.

"...What happened?"

“...I’m truly sorry, Mr. Crawford! While I was standing guard over Miss Smith, four doctors who behaved rather suspiciously arrived at the hospital and tried to get close to her. Suspicious about their true intentions, I didn’t allow them to proceed anywhere near her. As a result, all four of them immediately attacked me! I wasn’t able to defeat them and now Miss Smith has been taken away!” explained Tyson.

“What? Even you got hurt?!” replied Gerald, beads of sweat rolling down his forehead now.

“We’ll discuss further into the matter once I arrive at the hospital. For now, send some men to immediately start looking for her!”

If something really did happen to Queta, then Gerald knew that he would definitely be filled with guilt and unease.

At the same time, Gerald was also thinking that his father’s initial task of tracking down Aunt Fenderson was no longer as simple a task as he had first anticipated.

With that, Gerald immediately rushed to the hospital.

“It was lucky that Ms. Xara had stepped out to get some congee earlier. Due to that, she was able to avoid the four people entirely. Speaking of the four... Each of them looked equally strange and they all wielded short blades. Based on their techniques, I can confidently say that all four of them are top masters who have received stringent training before!” explained Tyson, his voice filled with remorse.

Since Tyson’s body was wrapped up in bandages, even Drake had a tense expression on his face.

“I see. And what about the hospital’s surveillance cameras?” asked Gerald as he paced back and forth.

“I’ve retrieved the records and after looking through them alongside the footage from several other streets, their group seemed to have disappeared on a mountain!” replied Tyson.

Hearing that, Gerald then patted Tyson on the shoulder before saying, “My sister’s told me before that it was rare for both of you to have worthy or even equal opponents. I can only assume that the four men who have managed to even hurt you are working for a very large and powerful family. Did you recognize

any of the four assailants? Even if you have the slightest idea, it could be our next lead to find out which family they're working for!"

"You don't have to look any further into the matter, Gerald. I think I know who the four men are... And I think I also know who kidnapped Queta!" said Xara with tears in her eyes as she stood up.

Sensing how sure she sounded, Gerald himself came to a sudden realization. Of course.

This was the Salford Province... Only the Fendersons could have done it.

It hadn't crossed his mind earlier since Gerald hadn't exposed himself, nor had he gone against the family yet. The fact that the Fendersons always kept such a low profile made it even harder to think about, and subsequently, consider them to be the culprit during such situations!

However, the more he looked at it, the more he was sure that the Fendersons were definitely the ones behind all this!

"If my guess is correct, then the four of them should be my father's personal bodyguards! My father must have already found me!" said Xara.

Chapter 769

Xara was Lord Fenderson's most promising daughter and also the second most prominent figure within the Fenderson family. In fact, her position was even more important compared to Jasmine's father.

Knowing that alone painted a clear picture of how witty and intelligent Xara was as a person.

Adding that to her superior intuition, Xara was certain that her father had been the one who had kidnapped Queta, even though she had no idea how he had found her in the first place.

"I know the Fendersons very well, Gerald. While several complicated internal matters happen within the family, if my father was the one who had kidnapped Queta, then I can rest assured that he won't make things difficult for her. The problem is, I can't say the same about the rest of the Fenderson family members..."

“Hahaha! Still... To think that all this stemmed from a fit I threw at him so many years ago! Though I’m sure he regrets it, his temper clearly hasn’t changed at all! Is he honestly still expecting me to step forward and apologize to him?” explained Xara, a bitter smile on her face.

“What should we do now, Aunt Fenderson? I simply can’t help but feel worried now that I know that Queta is with them!” replied Gerald as he shook his head.

After all, Queta was his biological cousin. She was a Crawford as much as he was.

What more, he was the one who had brought Queta along with him here. Now that she was experiencing so many misfortunes because of him, how could he just leave her alone?

“We think we should break into their mansion to rescue the second young lady, Mr. Crawford!” said Drake and Tyson in unison.

“Negative. I know both of you are powerful, but with all due respect, both of you won’t be able to take down my father’s four subordinates. To make matters clear, the Fenderson family’s background was once comparable to that of the Crawfords. There’s simply no way that the few of us can break in as we please!” replied Xara.

Hearing that, both men lowered their heads in shame.

“...Then, should we just leave the second young lady alone? Do we not rescue her?” asked Tyson.

“Of course not! While now isn’t the right time, there definitely exists chances for us to save her. For one, it’ll be my father’s birthday in three days. In accordance with the Fenderson family’s tradition, a big birthday banquet will be held then. On that day, wealthy and influential businessmen, as well as close family friends, will be invited to participate! That will be the best moment to save Queta!” proposed Xara.

“So what you’re proposing is that we sneak in during the Fenderson family’s birthday banquet and create some chaos to allow us to rescue Queta unnoticed?”

“Exactly. The family will be needing a lot of manpower to perform the many tasks required to keep the birthday banquet running smoothly. Of course, in order to remain secretive, they’ll usually opt to hire chefs and personnel from either the Northern Region or even from abroad. The opportunity couldn’t be any more perfect for us to save her!”

Registering all that perfectly, Gerald then nodded in agreement.

When the time came, he would bring Drake, Tyson, and a few other masters into the mansion with him. He definitely needed to arrange for some people to wait outside as well as a contingency plan. Though he certainly couldn’t ever hope to overpower the Fendersons within their own mansion, creating chaos was going to be much easier. Once that happened, they’d be able to rescue Queta and leave the mansion, hopefully unnoticed.

“How are we to enter alongside the hired personnel?” asked Drake.

“Well, since the process of screening through foreigners is extremely strict, they’ll most likely focus on gathering personnel from Merry City first. We need to head there as soon as possible and once we’re there, I have my own ways of helping you get in. Speaking of which, I also have a few confidants whom I trust among the Fendersons. I’ll just need to ask them about Queta’s specific whereabouts!” replied Xara.

Xara was honestly feeling extremely anxious. She couldn’t help but feel worried about Queta. After all, once anyone fell into the Fenderson family’s bottomless pit, it would be no easy feat to get them out again.

Understanding that only made her feel increasingly worried.

However, Xara was still able to have a clear head since she had many years of experience dealing with them.

Meanwhile, several doctors exited from a secret hallway in the Fenderson family’s mansion.

“Lord Fenderson, Miss Smith simply refuses to take any medical treatment! Not only that, she’s not eating anything as well! We’ve tried persuading her all we could but she simply refuses to listen!” said one of the doctors respectfully.

Upon hearing that, Bryson’s wrinkled face reflected his anxiety. He was already turning eighty this year...

Chapter 770

“This girl... She’s as stubborn as her mother! Hmm... Hasn’t Jasmine already located Xenia? That personal maid of Xara’s? Try getting her to persuade Queta. Also, nobody should be allowed to know about Queta being here, not even Jasmine! If word gets out, I’ll be sure to make each of you suffer a slow death! Now leave!”

Hearing that, the doctors trembled in fear before leaving quickly.

Once they were gone, Bryson slowly stood up with his walking cane in hand before staring blankly at the wall.

While lots of things were on his mind, the memory that stood out the most was the time when he had publicly severed relationships with his beloved daughter, Xara.

He had chased her out of the Fendersons family, and though he had been extremely stringent when it came to enforcing family rules, he regretted his actions immediately the moment she left.

He had tried every possible way to locate Xara. It wasn’t a requirement of his for her to return to his side, but he simply wanted to know whether his precious daughter was still alive, and if she was, he wanted to also know how well she was living on her own.

That alone would be enough to satisfy him.

However, even after so many years had passed, he had heard no news regarding Xara at all.

As a man who constantly took good care of his body, Bryson—who was going to be eighty in three days—should have theoretically retained a more youthful look. Instead of that, however, he looked even older than an ordinary person of the same age who still had to work hard daily!

Bryson had simply acknowledged that this was his punishment.

While he had initially thought that he would never be able to see her again, not even on his deathbed, it seemed that divine justice existed after all. It all began when Noah gave him a call out of the blue, reporting that he had found a person who looked exactly like Xara.

Since the Fenderson family was quite capable, upon receiving the news, Xara and even her granddaughter's whereabouts were soon pinpointed.

"...I know you hate me, Xara... But it'll be my birthday in three days... I really hope that you'll return to see me..." muttered Bryson to himself as he felt tears welling up in his eyes.

While this was happening, a maid entered a room holding a box in her hands.

Inside, a girl was sitting on a bed, crying.

The moment the maid saw her, her body began trembling and eventually, the box she was holding on to fell to the ground.

"H-how could both of you look so similar?!" shouted the maid excitedly.

"You look exactly like the eldest lady back then!" added the maid as she reminisced the times when she was still by the eldest lady's side many years ago.

Of course, the crying girl in question was none other than Queta.

Upon seeing that the maid herself was now crying, Queta asked in a soft and gentle voice, "...Um... You are...?"

"Miss Queta, my name is Xenia! I used to be the eldest lady's, Miss Xara's, personal maid!" replied Xenia as she cried.

“...H-huh? Xara Fenderson... She’s my mother?” replied Queta as she got increasingly excited after hearing Xenia’s words.

Xenia then nodded as she said between tears, “Miss Queta, you look exactly like her! And yes, she is!”

“W-where is she now, Aunt Xenia?” asked Queta, now crying harder than before.

“Not to worry, Miss Queta! While there is a lot to cover and it’ll take a good while for me to explain all the complicated things that have been happening, you can rest assured that your mother has constantly been thinking of you. The short of it is that your grandfather still doesn’t know where she is... Once an opportunity arises, I’ll help you leave this place so that you can be reunited with your mother!” replied Xenia as she stroked Queta’s hair affectionately, a distressed expression on her face.

“Why aren’t you letting me in? Get out of the way right this instant!” shouted a voice from behind the door at that moment.

Chapter 771

“Third young lady, you really aren’t allowed to enter! The order had specifically been issued by the old master!” said a bodyguard, desperately trying to prevent a girl—who looked to be around twenty—from entering.

“Well that’s just great then! Are you telling me that there’s now a place within the Fenderson mansion where I, Quincy Fenderson, can’t enter? Both my elder sister and second sister already dislike me. Are you saying that grandpa doesn’t like me either now? The more you prevent me from entering, the more I want to enter and have a look for myself! Now get out of the way!” shouted Quincy as she pushed the bodyguard aside and rushed inside.

The inside of the room looked extremely luxurious, and antique furniture—seemingly in the style of 1960’s European aristocrats—was placed in every corner. Apart from her grandfather’s room, this was the only other room that was this luxurious in the entire mansion.

Whenever she had nothing better to do, Quincy would often come to this room to have a look around. Like most of the other Fendersons, Quincy had often dreamed of moving into this particular room.

After all, she heard that this room was where her aunt used to stay in.

Since Quincy had already been feeling quite lonely within the family, her bad mood was immediately triggered once she found out that someone else was now living there.

She wanted to see for herself who had gotten access to living in the room, yet her permission to enter had been denied. All that led to the current scene.

Seeing her burst in without warning, both Queta and Xenia looked rather alarmed. Xenia hadn't anticipated for someone to barge in on them like that.

"You... Who are you? You look quite familiar..." said Quincy, feeling slightly startled herself when she saw Queta.

"My... My name is Queta Smith!"

"Queta? I've never seen you before among the other Fendersons, have I?" asked Quincy as she scanned the girl from head to toe.

Finally recovering from her shock, Xenia then asked, "You're the third young lady, correct? The old master was the one who had ordered Miss Queta to stay here for the moment to rest and recuperate from her injuries..."

"Humph! I'm well aware of that! Though I'm not sure why he wanted you to stay in this particular room, I'm sure he has his reasons. Regardless, I'll need you to leave for a moment. I'd like to tell Miss Queta something in private!" ordered Quincy.

Hearing that, Xenia then looked at Queta. In return, Queta simply nodded slightly, prompting Xenia to leave the room.

Once Xenia was outside, Quincy immediately closed the door behind her.

She then turned to look at Queta again before happily saying, "I need your help with something. Could you lend this room to me for a night? You can stay in my room in the meantime! How about it? Deal?"

The reason she wanted to sleep in this room was obvious.

However, Queta was caught completely off guard by the question. She didn't even know how to reply. In all honesty, she was simply looking forward to Gerald coming over to rescue both her and Xenia so that she could finally be reunited with her family.

Since she really didn't have the time or energy to waste on the people here alongside any of their matters, she simply remained silent.

"...What's that silence supposed to mean? Can't we even switch rooms for a night?" asked Quincy again, her hands now on her waist.

Before she could ask a third time, the bodyguard from earlier suddenly entered the room before saying in a cold voice, "Third young lady, Lord Fenderson would like to have a word with you."

"You!" replied Quincy as she turned to look at the bodyguard angrily.

Moments later, Quincy stood before the bodyguard and slapped him hard across the face!

"How dare you rat me out! Just you wait and see how I'm going to deal with you!" said Quincy as she glared at Queta one final time before hastily leaving, enraged.

"What's wrong with you this time, Quincy?" asked both Jasmine and Mindy who happened to cross paths with her.

Quincy, however, simply ignored them, huffing as she walked past them.

Once Jasmine realized that Quincy had come from the direction where her aunt's room was, Jasmine headed over to the bodyguard from earlier and casually asked, "Is there someone in aunt's room?"

“Indeed there is, eldest young lady!”

“Who is it?”

“I apologize, but lord Fenderson has forbidden me from telling anyone about the matter. I hope that you won’t ask me any more questions about the person staying inside!” replied the bodyguard.

Taking in a deep breath, Jasmine then frowned as she peeked at the room where her aunt used to stay in.

She had noticed that her grandfather had been trying to hide something from her in the past few days. What more, her investigation efforts on her aunt had only reached its halfway point when her grandfather ordered her to cease investigating.

Chapter 772

Even from when she was still a child, Jasmine had always hated having superficial knowledge, regardless of the topic.

Because of that, she had initially planned to enter her aunt’s room to try looking for new leads together with Mindy. Her bumping into Quincy there was no mere coincidence.

Now knowing that someone had moved into that room, her curiosity was piqued. Who could have been entitled enough to be permitted to stay there?

“Why don’t we sneak in and have a look inside the room, Jasmine?” suggested Mindy, now getting increasingly curious as well.

“Don’t be rash. For now, we should leave first. It’s grandpa’s birthday banquet soon and I don’t want to anger him at a time like this!” replied Jasmine as she started walking away. Though she said that, she was honestly even more curious than Mindy was.

Around two days later...

“Did you get all the materials I told you to? Please double check again later. We can’t afford to have any of the materials absent since we’ll be using them to decorate and set up the venue later tonight. If the event tomorrow is delayed because of us, we’ll have to pay dearly!” said a lady in her thirties to a rather young man.

“Will do, Miss Little!” replied the young man immediately.

“Speaking of which, the group of chefs from Northbay will be cooking supper later. It’s really hard serving that group of celebrities. They’re still playing cards to pass the time even at this hour! Deliver supper to them one by one later!”

“Not an issue!”

The young man in question, was none other than Gerald.

Aunt Fenderson really lived up to her old title. She truly had connections everywhere,

It was around two days ago when he, Drake, Tyson, and a few others got into this team with barely any trouble.

As per usual in the annual Fenderson birthday banquet, the Fendersons would invite famous local chefs as well as female celebrities from all over the country to partake in the banquet. Naturally, there also needed to be a courtesy team.

Being such a rich family, the event allowed the Fendersons to display their nearly unparalleled wealth and splendor. The immense number of people in Gerald’s team alone was another way of showing that.

It wasn’t long before Miss Little was informed that supper was done. In turn, Gerald was ordered to serve the meals to a group of celebrities.

There were eight female celebrities within the group who sat separately on two tables as they played cards. Gerald had seen many of them on television before.

“Supper is served!” announced Gerald.

“Well, hello there pretty boy! Come over here and let me touch you!”

“Hahaha! You must be too overjoyed to think straight after winning that much! Try not to scare the young man away!” joked another celebrity.

“Now why would that ever happen? It’s not like I’m going to take advantage of him or anything! Hahaha!”

When it came to playing cards, those who were winning would naturally feel happier whereas those on the losing end would of course, tend to be more impatient and frustrated.

Ignoring their harassment, Gerald simply served supper to one of the singers there. However, it was evident that she wasn’t really paying attention to him since she ended up accidentally pushing her own supper to the floor. As a result, a small portion of the greasy food splattered on her calf!

“What the- How the hell do you even do your job?!” yelled the singer as she glared at Gerald.

Hearing that, Gerald tried really hard to hold himself back from slapping her. It was a reasonable reaction given how terrible the singer’s behavior was.

Still, he refrained from doing so. After all, this was all part of a bigger plan.

Gerald could only hold on to his anger in silence as he served the remaining supper before heading to the next room.

“Alright, just put it over there for us! Thank you!” said one of the two young girls in the room.

Both of them—who looked to be around the same age as Gerald—were courtesies staff for the group of celebrities in another room and they seemed to be busy trying to remove their makeup.

While Gerald was being told to leave their supper there, he ended up staring at one of the girls for quite some time before finally realizing who she was.

'D*mn it! What are the odds of meeting you here?' Gerald thought to himself, surprised.

Chapter 773

The person in question was Alice!

He hadn't met her in such a long time.

After all that had happened, Gerald had heard that Alice had gone to Northbay. Since she was from the Department of Broadcasting and Hosting, it was only natural for her to get her internship there.

However, he truly hadn't expected to bump into her here!

"Speaking of which, could you clean up the things on the floor while you're at it? Thank you!" said the other girl without even bothering to turn back to look at him.

"Will do!"

Xara had made all the arrangements yet for some reason, both Drake and Tyson were left idle whereas Gerald was designated the role of a handyman who had to do all sorts of odd chores! Was it simply his fate to run errands?

Regardless, it didn't really matter too much to Gerald since he was already used to it.

"Consider this to be a little vacation from all your troubles and frustrations, Alice. After all, you've finally managed to leave Mayberry, the place where you had experienced so many upsetting memories, and started anew in Northbay! Still, who could've ever expected for something like that to happen? Everything should've honestly belonged to you! If things had simply gone that way, then we would've been able to enjoy the benefits as well!" said the other girl as she continued removing their makeup.

Peeking at them, Gerald felt that the common trait among most girls was the fact that they would apply their makeup during the day and remove them at night.

“Don’t even talk about it anymore, Hillary. While I may look fine on the surface, I’m still filled with regrets deep down in my heart. It’s hard not to feel remorse since at the very beginning, I had a pretty good impression of him. Not only did he treat others well, he also looked pretty decent, to say the least. However, he was really too poor! I’m not too sure when it was or even why, but eventually, I just started hating him!”

By then, Alice had stopped removing her makeup. Her head lay on the makeup table as she scribbled on her hand using her eyebrow pencil.

“Do you sometimes feel that girls’ feelings are really weird, Hillary? It’s not like I only began changing and liking him once he got rich. How do I even explain this... Well, for starters, it all began when he started doing a little better. By no means was he someone wealthy yet during that period of time. However, he certainly wasn’t that poor anymore and I was aware of it since he didn’t have to starve like he used to. It was around then when I slowly began trying to accept him again! I even wanted to become friends with him!”

“You know, he was standing in front of the corridor door with a bouquet of flowers in hand on that day. My roommates and I were just returning after class at that moment and you couldn’t imagine how moved I was back then! It was the reason why I had agreed to be together with him. I thought I could finally be in a proper relationship!”

“Little did I know that it was all just a trick... Hahaha! I really can’t help but wonder why it’s so difficult for me to start a proper relationship... I was really furious that time you know? I even thought about killing him for playing with my feelings like that!” said Alice as her tears began to fall.

Seeing that, the other girl stopped removing her makeup, choosing instead to pat Alice gently on the shoulder.

“Well, we girls are always destined to be deceived by guys like him. We simply can’t help it, especially if the ones we fall for are as wealthy as him! Though I guess he simply did that to take revenge on you...”

“Take revenge? Why would he need to do that? Was it because I looked down on him before? Was it because I refused to go out with someone like him? Let me ask you something, Hillary. Which girl on the planet wouldn’t want her partner to have at least some money? And I’m not saying that the partner needs to be wealthy either. I’m saying he just needs to have enough money to provide her with food and basic comfort. After all, it’s only natural that a girl would feel more secure knowing that their partner has a stable income! I’m not all that materialistic, but money is a necessity in life and I just can’t ignore the reality of that!”

“I’ve never regretted despising and looking down on him at the start. He truly looked extremely unpromising back then!” said Alice between sobs.

“Sorry to burst your bubble, Alice, but your hope of getting back together with him is simply too slim. After all, he seems to be very devoted to that Mila Smith girl! You really missed out on this opportunity to get into the Crawford family, and I can get why you’re so upset because of that...” replied the girl as she tried to calm her down.

“I still want to work hard and try my best... If I don’t try at all, then there really will be zero chance of it happening... Ah... The more I talk about it the more anxious and frustrated I get... I feel like drinking, Hillary... Care to join me for a drink?”

“What a coincidence, I feel like drinking too! Let’s use this as our opportunity to celebrate our early departure from our d*mned youth! Could you bring us a few bottles of red wine, brother? Thank you!” said Hillary as she looked at Gerald.

“Mm!” mumbled Gerald as he nodded in agreement before heading out of the room. He didn’t even dare to speak.

In the beginning, Gerald had found Alice’s story to be quite interesting, thinking that she had already started a new relationship.

To his surprise, the further her story went, the more he realized that she was talking about him. Hearing things from her point of view, Gerald couldn’t help but feel slightly guilty now.

After all, she was only experiencing all of this now because he hadn't immediately clarified the situation to her back then. It was, in a way, his fault for causing Alice to misunderstand that she was the one he was trying to pursue back then.

As a result, she had been deeply hurt once he told her the truth only after both of them had become a couple.

Chapter 774

To a girl with such a massive ego as Alice, that had undoubtedly been a huge blow to her.

Gerald simply couldn't ignore the fact that he was truly the one at fault that time.

Shaking his head, he then headed out to get the two bottles of red wine they had requested.

To his surprise, once both of them got their drinks and started downing the wine, Hillary told Gerald to help them pack their suitcases as well.

It was as though he personally worked for them or something. Fortunately, Alice had other things on her mind so her eyes never really focused on him.

By the time he was done packing everything for them, both bottles of red wine were now empty.

Though Alice was clearly tipsy at this point, she still insisted on having more wine. Gerald had no choice but to heed her orders.

Just as Gerald was finally prepared to leave, however, Alice started retching before flopping to the floor!

She had obviously drunk far too much, far too quickly. Hillary herself had already retired for the night by the end of the second bottle, and was now lying on her bed, unconscious.

"Drink! I still want to drink!" said Alice between sobs.

Though he really wanted to just leave already, Gerald simply couldn't bear seeing Alice in such a state. As he walked over to her, he assured himself that he was only lending her a helping hand out of guilt, and not out of affection.

"After all, Alice would've been living a happy life now if it wasn't for me..."

As he lifted her in his arms, Gerald then said, "Alright, that's enough drinking for tonight... There's still work to be done tomorrow, so rest early!"

Once she was on her bed, he was about to blanket her when Alice suddenly grabbed onto his wrist.

"G-Gerald...? Is that really you...?" asked Alice, her eyes hazy and filled with tears as she looked at him.

"...I'm afraid you've got the wrong person!" replied Gerald as he immediately tried to pry her fingers off.

"Y-you're finally willing to see me again...! I have so many things to tell you... Don't leave yet! Please, listen to me!" added Alice, her grip surprisingly tight for a drunk person.

Gerald didn't even know if she was simply speaking nonsense at this point.

"I... I know that it's impossible for both of us to ever get together again... Trust me that I've tried everything I could think of to forget about you... I've even tried starting a new relationship just to finally be able to let go... But no matter what I do, all I ever think about is still you! It's improbable, but I... I just hope that you'll one day change your mind..."

"I'm really not the casual kind of girl you see me as... You know, I've kept myself a virgin just so that both of us could still have a chance one day! Just... Please... Please give me another chance, Gerald!" said Alice, refusing to let go of him.

Upon hearing her reasoning behind why she remained a virgin, Gerald couldn't help but feel slightly moved by her conviction. However, he remained adamant that he didn't like her anymore.

Chapter 775

It was early the next morning when Alice finally woke up.

Though she had drunk a lot of red wine the night before, her heart was throbbing instead of her head.

Shaking it off, she took in a deep breath as she attempted to sit up. Before she could do so, however, she immediately sensed that something was wrong. Pulling her blanket to the side, she instantly shouted, startled by what she was seeing!

“Hillary! Hillary!”

“What’s wrong, Alice...?” replied Hillary rather groggily, awoken by Alice’s shouting.

“I was wearing my other set of clothes when we were drinking last night, right? Look! Why am I in my pajamas now? Were you the one who slipped them on me?” asked Alice.

“...No, I don’t think so... I was out cold after drinking so much last night... Are you still half-awake...? Who else could’ve slipped you into your pajam- ...Hold on, if someone else really did help you change, then they’d have to remove all your previous clothes first, right?” said Hillary, now starting to feel nervous as she hurriedly told Alice to check if she felt if anything was weird or wrong with her body.

“Alright, think carefully now. Are you absolutely sure that you didn’t change into your pajamas on your own last night?”

Alice simply knitted her brows in response. None of this made any sense at all!

“I can’t remember... Though I did have a weird dream last night... In it, Gerald was the one who had carried me over to bed and tucked me in... I can’t remember anything else! Ahh! I’m feeling so anxious now! How could something like this have happened...?”

Though she was still feeling shocked, after carefully inspecting herself, Alice was relieved to find that she didn’t feel anything weird with her body.

A barrage of questions were still bombarding her mind as she got out of bed to start packing. Regardless of what happened, rushing to the birthday banquet was more important now.

Meanwhile, Gerald, Drake, and Tyson were all ready to head to the event, alongside their team.

Gerald still remembered the events of last night clearly. Before Alice could even finish speaking, she had vomited not only on herself, but also all over Gerald!

To make matters worse, she began taking her own clothes off after that!

Frustrated and at a loss for what to even do, Gerald eventually settled on tipping a hotel attendant three thousand dollars to help Alice get changed and have her room cleaned.

However, he shook the thoughts off as they continued waiting there. He needed to focus on the secret mission.

A short while later, a special looking car arrived and everyone there was blindfolded. Everyone who entered had to switch their cell phones off as well.

After all, the Fenderson family didn't want anyone to know where the mansion was located.

As all this was happening, many wealthy and powerful figures had already arrived in their luxury cars at the Fenderson Family mansion.

"I hope that you'll later bring up the matter that we talked about earlier, father!" said Yael as he looked at Noah. Both of them were still seated in their car.

"Hahaha! Worry not, I'll definitely try to settle things peacefully before resorting to violence! It'd be great if the Fendersons agreed to it, though if they refuse, they can't really blame the Schuyler family for being impolite this time!" replied Noah as he smiled coldly.

After saying that, the driver was ordered to drive into the mansion. Upon entering, the first thing Noah did was meet up with the Fenderson family's old master.

"You wanted to meet me, Noah?" said Bryson as he looked at him. They were now in the old master's study room where Bryson had been sitting in before Noah asked for him.

"Ah, it's nothing much, Lord Fenderson. I just wanted to talk to you about the matter regarding Yael and Jasmine. I'm sure you're well aware that both of them have had a good relationship, even from their childhood days. I do wonder if Yael could end up becoming the son-in-law of the Fenderson family! Now that would definitely be a blessing to the Schuylers!" said Noah in a respectful tone.

Noah knew that though Yael had been interested in Jasmine for the longest time, the same couldn't be said for the haughty and arrogant Jasmine. She seemed to have no interest in his son at all!

While Noah had already done a great deal for the Fendersons over the years, which members of that family actually appreciated what he had done for them?

Chapter 776

Naturally, Noah never had the audacity or courage to ask the Fendersons about things regarding his son's marriage. After all, the Fendersons were still the Schuyler's main affiliate family.

However, since such a massive event was taking place today, Noah took the initiative to finally ask about it, just to see how the old master would reply.

In response, Bryson frowned. With a wry smile on his face, he then said, "Are you proposing a marriage between Jasmine and Yael?"

"Well, I'm afraid that it all boils down to what Jasmine has to say about the matter. After all, marriage is the personal affair of young people! You should allow the younger generation to deal with this matter on their own!"

Hearing this made Noah slightly upset, as he knew that his proposal had just been indirectly denied. After all, Bryson's granddaughter clearly didn't have any interest in Yael at all.

“As parents, we’re naturally our children’s matchmakers. Lord Fenderson, I truly believe that as long as you suggest it, Jasmine will have no other choice but to obey! After all, to children, our commands are as good as the law. Unless you feel that Yael isn’t worthy enough to be together with Jasmine...? Do you fear that he’ll end up embarrassing the Fenderson family?” asked Noah, adamant on pressing on.

“Hahaha! That’s not the case at all!” replied Bryson as he laughed.

At that moment, the study room door creaked open and Jasmine walked in.

“Here’s the list of guests and the schedule of events for today. Do have a look at it, grandpa.”

Jasmine’s main responsibility of the day was to be in charge of the event.

“You can just leave it on my table. I can rest assured with you in charge.”

“Speaking of which, Jasmine, you came at the right time! Lord Fenderson and I were just talking about you!” said Noah as he looked at her.

“Oh? You were talking about me, Uncle Schuyler? What a great honor!” replied Jasmine, a cold smile on her face.

“Indeed! See, I was just discussing with Lord Fenderson about your marriage with Yael... You aren’t young anymore, Jasmine, and it’s about time you thought about your future and marriage! Since both you and Yael have known each other since childhood, both of you will definitely be the perfect couple!” said Noah with a smile.

“Apologies, Uncle Schuyler, but I’m not interested in marriage at the moment! In the meantime, your son should look for someone else!” replied Jasmine in a cold voice.

Since Jasmine wasn’t giving him any face at all, Noah’s face immediately turned red in anger.

Bryson simply laughed as he said, "Calm yourself, Noah. Since we're already talking about this, I'll just make things clear now. Even if Jasmine and Yael do end up in a relationship, they will never get married in the end. After all, Jasmine's already been destined to be with someone else from the day she was born."

The moment they heard Bryson's words, both Jasmine and Noah were startled speechless.

"What do you mean by that, Lord Fenderson?"

Even Jasmine was looking at her grandfather in surprise as Noah asked that question.

"It's a long story. Before that, I'm sure that both of you know about the bad blood between our family and the Crawfords, right?" asked Bryson.

With a cold expression on his face, Noah then frowned before nodding.

"Well, both families were already hostile with each other even from the previous generation. While we were constantly fighting in secret back then, there was also a period of peace between the families. At the time, Daryl Crawford was the head of the Crawford family. His son, Dylan, is the current Crawford family head. When we were much younger, Daryl and I were both close friends, up to the point where I could even call him my brother. Once both of us inherited the positions of family heads, we were able to momentarily end the dispute between the Crawfords and the Fendersons! To ensure that the peace continued, we formed an alliance. However, there was one condition to said alliance..."

"...It... Couldn't be... Was it a contractual marriage?" asked Jasmine in surprise.

"It was indeed. By coincidence, both you and Daryl's grandson were born on the same day, month, and even year! Because of that, both of us came up with the idea of a marriage contract and I agreed to let you get married to Daryl's grandson!"

"However, things went south when Daryl had a fierce argument with his son. Because of that, he decided to let go of the matter, forgetting everything else. Once that happened, he no longer spoke about anything regarding the Crawfords. Dylan himself was an extremely arrogant and domineering person. He preferred relying on his own efforts and abilities over forming alliances. His goal was to get

the Fenderson family to surrender to the Crawfords! That was the reason why the disputes between the two families began again. It was around then when the matter regarding your aunt happened... After that, the Crawfords and the Fendersons completely ended all their relations.”

Chapter 777

“While Daryl hasn’t shown up for quite a while, that doesn’t mean that the marriage contract ceases to be valid. In fact, even though Dylan had been extremely hostile toward the Fendersons, he hasn’t sent anyone over to formally end the contract. As long as the marriage contract isn’t called off, then it’s rules still apply till the day the Crawford family chooses to acknowledge it!” explained Bryson before looking at Noah.

“Do you understand what I mean now, Noah?”

“...To think that the Crawfords and the Fendersons had such a history... However, since both families are still disputing against each other, then the marriage contract should, by right, be automatically called off, should it not, Lord Fenderson?” replied Noah rather reluctantly.

“While it’s true that both Dylan and Daryl had a huge conflict back then, I don’t think his son would actually have the courage or audacity to privately amend or go against the rules set by his father!”

“...Very well, Lord Fenderson. I’ll just pretend that I never brought the matter up. However, do remember that we’ve been at war with the Crawfords for all these years. We’ll never stop holding our grudges against the Crawford family, especially after that incident involving Xara that brought such colossal losses to our families!” said Noah before finally leaving the study room.

“He’s getting more and more presumptuous by the day!” said Jasmine coldly.

She then ran over to her grandfather’s side and began massaging his shoulders before saying, “Still, regardless of how much Noah enjoys scheming, he’s no match against you, grandpa! To think that you could come up with something so incredible in such a short amount of time just to deceive him! Hahaha!”

Laughing back in response, Bryson then gently patted the back of Jasmine’s hand before saying, “But I didn’t deceive him, Jasmine... You truly are betrothed to the young master of the Crawford family!”

“...H-huh?!”

Jasmine was momentarily stunned speechless because of that.

“...How... How could that be possible, grandpa? You can't be serious, right...?”

She could never have imagined that something as absurd as this would actually happen to her.

“Of course I'm being serious!”

“...But... There's still something I don't quite understand... Since such a marriage contract existed, why was aunt and Peter's—the second master of the Crawford family—relationship opposed and criticized so much back then?” asked Jasmine rather doubtfully.

“You aren't the same as your aunt. When you were born, Daryl was still the head of the family. Dylan only became the head when you reached the age of one. At the time, Dylan had sent Peter over to the Fenderson family to steal something from us, and not just anything. He was sent to steal our most treasured family heirloom! If he had succeeded, the Fenderson family would have already fallen apart right there and then! Dylan had lied to us, and I didn't want to lose both my daughter and the rest of my family!”

“...What exactly is that item?” asked Jasmine in surprise.

“I can't share the details about it yet. You'll find out about it once you're at the stage where your aunt was back then!” replied Bryson with a laugh.

“...Still, can that marriage contract truly still be counted now, grandpa?” asked Jasmine again. This was honestly what worried her the most.

“To be completely honest, even I can't say for sure... I feel helpless about the situation at times as well!”

“Then why hasn’t there been any news about the young master of the Crawford family, even after all these years, grandpa?”

“Well, Dylan made sure that the young master of the Crawford family was raised in poverty. That allowed the young master to blend in rather well among other ordinary men. While Dylan’s also been actively trying to hide his whereabouts and identity, I’ve managed to uncover a few clues over my many years investigating. My guess is that the famous Mr. Crawford from Mayberry is closely related to the Crawford family’s young master!”

“Mr. Crawford?”

“Indeed! However, whenever I try sending someone over to investigate the matter, Dylan always responds immediately! Because of his constant interfering, I haven’t been able to look into the matter any further!”

Jasmine had come to learn about many things from this conversation alone.

The biggest shock to her yet, however, was the fact that she was contractually bound to have a marriage with Mr. Crawford!

It was simply too surreal.

After all, she hated the Crawfords. Each and every one of them.

They were the reason why her parents were dead.

Yet here she was, learning about all this now. It was almost as though the heavens were playing a prank on her.

“Then... What happened to Daryl Crawford?”

“He’s gone into hiding. I haven’t seen him in a good twenty years! The Crawford family’s matters are equally as complicated as what the Fendersons have to deal with!” explained Bryson.

After that, the grandfather and his granddaughter continued talking for quite a bit in his study room.

Chapter 778

In the blink of an eye, many people had already gathered at the event.

The two Fenderson brothers were in charge of greeting and entertaining the guests outside.

“You’re here early, Mr. Schuyler!” said most of the guests who immediately went over to greet Noah as soon as they saw him.

It was evident that to the guests, the two Fenderson brothers were nothing compared to Noah. Seeing that, the second son of the Fenderson family could only wave his hand in indignation.

It was at that moment when someone suddenly yelled, “The Long family from Yanken has sent a white jade statue here!”

“...Huh? The Longs from Yanken?”

Everyone was astonished to hear that. Why would the Long family come all the way here just to attend such an event?

While the two families had been on good terms, with the Longs even helping the Fenderson family before, both families hadn’t interacted much with each other for quite a long time.

The Fenderson’s old master himself had mostly only invited direct members and descendants of the Fenderson family to his banquet. The Longs were considered to be a foreign connection.

Everyone knew this, which was why everyone was currently discussing the matter among themselves.

Even both the Fenderson brothers were surprised by the Longs' arrival.

"Haha! Ah, Second master and third master, the Longs have come together with the Schuylers today! The moment I heard that Lord Fenderson was hosting a banquet, I immediately notified the Long family! They've sent a special representative here today to pay their respects to Lord Fenderson!" explained Noah in a cold tone.

"How very bold of you, Noah Schuyler! Who was it exactly who gave you the right to invite guests over to the Fenderson family mansion? Just who do you think you are?"

Their reactions were understandable. After all, the Longs giving face to Noah and them giving face to Lord Fenderson were two completely different matters.

"Second uncle and third uncle, please don't be angry. Since the Longs are already here anyway, we should naturally treat them as our guests. After all, the Schuylers are still affiliated under us. It shouldn't matter whether the Schuylers or the Fendersons invited the Longs. After all, we're all one big family. Aren't I right, Uncle Schuyler?" said Jasmine as she walked out with a smile on her face.

"Hahaha! My niece, Jasmine, is truly the most sensible person here! I think the longer people live, the more backward their thinking becomes!"

"You!"

Second and Third were both feeling extremely dissatisfied now.

Before they could say another word, the Long family representative finally showed herself.

"...Huh? A woman?"

Everyone was equally surprised to see the woman—who looked to be around twenty-two— leading about a dozen people from the Long family into the banquet.

“She’s... The Long family’s second young master’s fiancée, right?”

“I think she is! I saw her when I attended the Long family’s second young master’s engagement banquet!”

After discussing among themselves, the guests suddenly came to a simultaneous realization. Of course the Long family’s second young master wouldn’t personally attend such an event!

“Welcome, Miss Xavia!” greeted Yael respectfully as he walked forward together with a few others.

“Hello, Yael and Uncle Schuyler. I’ve come to pay my respects to you.”

As it turned out, the representative the Longs had sent was Xavia!

At that moment, the sound of a wine glass shattering could be heard.

Throughout the day, Gerald had been running up and down, doing odd jobs. The moment he caught a glimpse of Xavia, he was so shocked that he couldn’t even hold on to his tray properly.

Why on earth was Xavia here too?

Chapter 779

Gerald was now frustrated beyond words. The initial plan to make use of the Fenderson birthday banquet to rescue Queta was now at stake.

To think that he would meet both Alice and Xavia back to back! There were simply too many unexpected issues popping up at the same time.

If either of the girls recognized him, then the situation would definitely take a turn for the worst.

What more, Gerald had just broken a wine glass and many people were already looking in his direction! D*mn it all! Gerald was so frightened that he immediately lowered his head and began picking the broken glass shards off the ground.

“...Eh?”

While Gerald managed to quickly clean up the mess and make his hasty escape, he seemed to have also attracted another girl’s attention.

The girl in question was standing right next to Jasmine. It was Mindy!

‘...Why did that young man look so similar to Gerald? This doesn’t make any sense at all! Why would that silly boy even be here at the Fenderson birthday banquet?’ Mindy thought to herself.

Curiosity piqued, Mindy then began following him sneakily.

“That was a really risky situation!” said Gerald as he heaved a huge sigh of relief the moment he arrived at the backyard.

“Gerald!” called out a female voice at that moment.

Turning to look at who had mentioned his name, Gerald’s eyes opened wide in bewilderment when he saw who it was.

‘F*ck! It’s Mindy!’

“Oh my god! And here I was, thinking I was seeing things earlier! I really didn’t expect to see you here! You... Why did you come all the way here to the Fenderson family mansion? Actually hold on, how did you even get in?” asked Mindy in surprise.

While her grandfather had held similar banquets here in the past and Mindy wasn’t exactly known to be the most attentive girl, she did know that the Fenderson family had always been extremely secretive.

Gerald was nothing more than an ordinary rich heir. How could he possibly have the right to attend her grandfather's birthday banquet?

"O-oh! I'm here to attend Lord Fenderson's birthday banquet on behalf of my family. I was just looking for the washroom! In fact, I was just about to send a message to both of you!" lied Gerald casually.

"Oh? Is your family subservient to the Fenderson family as well? But I don't remember our family having any sort of influence in Mayberry City nor Serene County!"

Hearing that, Gerald became increasingly nervous. After suddenly recalling that Xavia was also here, he quickly explained, "I'm not exactly subservient to the Fendersons. It was the Schuylers who had invited me to the banquet today!"

"...I see! Well that makes much more sense!" replied Mindy.

However, her expression soon changed as she came to a sudden realization. Before Gerald could ask what was wrong, she hit him angrily on the back of his head!

"What was that for!"

"Humph! You should know that the Schuyler family hasn't been on good terms with ours! I really hadn't expected your family to be subservient to theirs. You know, the Schuyler family is getting more and more atrocious by the year!" said Mindy rather indignantly.

"Even if you say that, it's not like I have any say in my family's matters! I'm not really involved in any of their decisions!" replied Gerald.

"...Hey, look over there! Isn't that the kid who scalded you last night, Loraine?"

Looking at the direction where the voice had come from, several gorgeous women—who seemed to be the celebrities from the previous night—could be seen walking toward the venue.

As the women in the group looked at the direction their celebrity friend was pointing at, one of them immediately started rushing toward Gerald in an imposing manner!

She seemed to be the leader of their group, and Gerald instantly recognized her as the celebrity from last night who had knocked over her own supper!

“So here you are! Do you have any idea how hard it was to find you? Listen here, I can’t wear a dress today because of you! Do you have any idea how many points will get taken away during my performance later because of that?!” growled the celebrity as she began smacking the back of his head resentfully.

“Hold it! Who do you think you are? What right do you have to treat him that way?”

Since she had a much higher status than Gerald, it was fine for Mindy to hit him. However, this was just a regular celebrity. How dare she treat him that way!

Mindy had only reprimanded her since she felt that she would lose face if she continued allowing the celebrity to do as she pleased in front of her.

Chapter 780

Seeing how well-dressed Mindy was, the celebrity instantly knew that she was a member of the Fenderson family.

Thus, instead of continuing to act presumptuously, she smiled brightly before saying, “Beautiful young lady, please don’t get me wrong, but this young man here is just a handyman who does odd jobs for us!”

“A handyman? Are you even that worthy? What exactly is going on here, Gerald?” asked Mindy in a puzzled tone.

She knew for a fact that he was a dignified, rich heir so why would he even need to serve and do odd jobs for these minor celebrities?

“I’ll... Explain everything to you in the future! For now, I really need to use the bathroom so I’ll be taking my leave first!”

Gerald could feel like his head was going to explode! If he kept dallying here then Xara’s plan was definitely going to fail because of him!

“Stop right there!” shouted both Mindy and the celebrity in unison.

Mindy could tell that Gerald was hiding something from her and she wasn’t the kind of person who liked being kept in the dark. The more he wanted to leave, the more she refused to let him go.

The celebrity herself wanted to personally deal with Gerald. However, now that she knew that Mindy was a Fenderson, she was simultaneously trying to please her so that there could possibly be a chance for her to get into Mindy’s good books.

Realizing that Mindy also seemed to have some sort of misunderstanding with Gerald, the celebrity knew she didn’t need to worry about shouting for him not to leave.

The celebrity’s friends seemed to have caught on as well, and all of them hurriedly ran over to block Gerald’s path.

“This is the Fenderson family mansion, Gerald. Where do you even think you’ll be able to escape? Now hurry up and tell me the truth! What exactly is going on here? How are you both a rich heir and a handyman at the same time? If you refuse to tell me what’s going on then I’ll call Jasmine over!” said Mindy strictly as she grabbed him by the collar. It was clear that she had no intention of hearing any more of his excuses.

While Gerald could easily get rid of these girls if he truly wanted to, he knew that fighting back now would only make matters worse. The only thing he could do now was try to delay things so that he could buy more time.

“Indeed! I feel that he’s being very dishonest! Something’s definitely up with him and we can’t just let him leave!” said Loraine, the leader of the celebrities.

Though Mindy didn't exactly like any of the celebrities, what they said made sense. Gerald had clearly been sneaking around so something suspicious must be going on.

Feeling a sudden strong sense to bring honor and justice toward her family, Mindy knew she needed to investigate the matter no matter what.

Mindy then twisted Gerald's ears before saying, "Humph! I know how well you fight, but remember, this is the Fenderson family mansion! If you even dare to try anything funny, I'll call our guards over to beat you to death! Don't say I didn't warn you! Since you're being so dishonest, you can just stay by my side! Once Jasmine's done with her work, I'll tell her to question you then! Now come along!"

After ending her sentence, Mindy then began dragging Gerald along as she walked toward the front hall.

At that moment, Gerald noticed two men with cold expressions on their faces swiftly making their way toward the group. In their hands, were fine, silver needles and both of them looked ready to strike the moment they could.

The two men in question were Drake and Tyson who had been searching all over for Gerald for most of the day. To their surprise, Gerald was already in trouble! Since Gerald's safety was their priority, they were ready to risk everything just to rescue him.

However, Gerald immediately shook his head the moment he saw them, a clear signal that they should stick to the original plan. He wanted them to leave the matter to him!

Both of them could only look at each other after receiving his silent order, feeling both confused and baffled.

"Still moving around? Just behave already and come with me!" said Mindy as she continued walking forward while grabbing on to Gerald's ear.

The celebrities themselves followed behind them. Some of them were even holding on to Gerald's arms!

They had definitely made a huge contribution to the Fenderson family this time around, right?

As for Mindy, true to her word, she really intended to look for Jasmine so that she could question Gerald.

However, when their group finally arrived at the front hall, they saw that most of the guests there were standing up.

The atmosphere in the hall was rather tense, and Jasmine could be seen standing in front, seemingly confronting some of the guests.

“What on earth is happening?” asked Mindy in shock.

Chapter 781

Gerald himself was wondering the same thing. It looked as though some sort of conflict was going on. Everything seemed to be going fine before this. How did things end up this way?

As Gerald stared at the scene in bewilderment, he could see a middle-aged woman kneeling within the crowd.

The members of the families affiliated with the Fendersons seemed to be filled with rage and even Lord Fenderson himself had an ugly expression on his face.

“It’s her! It’s that sinner’s maid from back then! Hurry up and tell us where Xara is now! If you speak the truth, we’ll consider sparing you!”

“Remember! The Crawfords and the Fendersons only got into a huge fight back then because of her! We, the affiliated families, were the ones who had suffered the most losses because of that battle! How pitiful my son was for having to grow up in such turmoil because of her! Lord Fenderson, if you’re hiding Xara anywhere, we demand that you hand her over to us!”

“That’s right! Hand her over so that you can give an account to our families!”

Many of the affiliated family members were now gathered around Lord Fenderson, demanding for Xara.

Noah himself was sneering at the side.

The conflict had started when Bryson reprimanded Noah in public for inviting the Longs without asking for his permission first. In retaliation, Noah then revealed the fact that the Fendersons had already located Xara's old personal maid.

He was done having to play nice with Bryson.

Noah's actions had stemmed from the fact that he had regarded himself as the head of several big families for years by now. One could even say he was almost as influential as the Fendersons.

Aside from that, Bryson had also placed him in an awkward situation when Noah went looking for him to ask for some assets while also discussing his son's marriage with Jasmine.

His grievances that he had piled-up up till this point were by no means a small amount.

Since he couldn't achieve his goal peacefully, he was going to use the event to his advantage and go all out today.

He was glad that he had previously sent several of his men over to monitor every move the Fendersons made. In addition to having quite a number of informers from within the family, he was able to gain information about everything they did.

It was why he managed to find out about the existence of Xara's maid being there in the first place.

Noah even had a trump card in hand, and he had personally given it to Bryson a few days prior. Now that all the pieces were in place, he would simply allow the internal conflicts to erupt in all its splendor!

Bryson himself could only glare in rage at the crowd before him.

This conflict was nothing new to him. After all, they had secretly been fighting for many years by now.

While the Fenderson family was still colossal in size, it was now akin to a high-rise building that had lost its main supporting pillar. Though the outside looked majestic, its insides were already crumbling in a state of jeopardy.

It wasn't as though Bryson hadn't taken precautions against Noel and Yael either.

However, he had simply assumed that he would still be able to control both the father and son, even in his old age.

To think that both of them would make a move on him during his birthday banquet!

The accumulated grievances between both parties had already made things very stressful for him. Yet here Noah and Yoel were, deliberately trying to heighten the conflicts between them!

It was just like last time... Had he not wanted to calm and appease the affiliated families back then, he would never have been willing to sever his relationship with his very own daughter!

"It's my grandfather's eightieth birthday today! Are all of you here to celebrate it or did you come here just to criticize and question him?" said Jasmine rather coldly.

"Jasmine, while we're naturally happy that it's Lord Fenderson's birthday today, our families have already lost too many of our relatives back then. It's been more than twenty years since Lord Fenderson told us that he would compensate for our losses and also provide a reasonable explanation to all our families. Yet even after all this time, he won't even let us catch a glimpse of Xara! The woman who was the cause of all that chaos back then!"

"The only 'compensations' we received were a few trivial assets and properties. What about the reasonable explanation we were promised? And to think after we've waited patiently all this time, Lord Fenderson was actually housing the maid who once used for Xara! If Mr. Schuyler hadn't brought the matter to light, we would've never found out about this!"

“Our families have already been affiliated with the Fendersons for generations! How could Lord Fenderson do this to us? How can you even expect us to be appeased now?” said a middle-aged man indignantly.

“That’s right! Rather than continue debating the matter, I say we should just capture her maid and torture her till she tells us where Xara is!”

“Men! Drag her out immediately!”

As soon as those words were said, a few bodyguards working for the affiliated families rushed forward and grabbed Xenia by her arms.

“Presumptuous! All of you! I’m well aware that all of you are just pretending to look for her! Your main goal has always been to get your hands on the assets she owned back then!” said Jasmine, her tone frigid.

Hearing that, several of the more capable individuals within the crowd went silent.

“You can’t just put it that way, Jasmine. However, since you’ve already said it, it wouldn’t be right if the Schuylers didn’t use this chance to set a proper example! That’s right! While we had been delegated a small portion of the assets Xara owned in the beginning, the consequences that we had to pay for clearly outweighs what we should have received! It’s only right for us to demand for an equal distribution of assets!” replied Noah.

What he said wasn’t wrong either, since Xara and the eldest master of the Fenderson family were the ones who had held and controlled most of the assets and properties belonging to their family back then.

Chapter 782

It was obvious that Xara clearly had more power compared to Jasmine’s father back then.

Even if Xara’s assets were to be equally distributed among the affiliated families now, it wouldn’t be as simple as the families being able to gain equal footing with the Fendersons anymore.

This was probably what Noah and Yael had intended for to happen this entire time.

“You can all continue to dream on...” replied Jasmine angrily.

“Step aside for the moment, Jasmine. You don’t need to get involved in this!” said Bryson, a gloomy expression on his face.

Not daring to go against her grandfather’s words, she immediately stood aside.

Bryson then personally began negotiating with Noah.

While this was happening, Mindy suddenly began shouting, “Jasmine! Over here!”

Frowning, Jasmine then walked over to Mindy before realizing who else was with her. To her surprise, Gerald was present!

“Why are you here?”

“Let’s not bother about him for the moment. More importantly, what on earth is going on here? Are the affiliate families trying to rebel against us?” asked Mindy as she hurriedly held on to Jasmine’s hand.

Jasmine simply nodded before saying, “Grandpa’s already told me to keep an eye on the Schuyler family once the birthday banquet is over. After all, the Schuylers have been conspiring against us for many years now...”

After pausing for a moment to look at Gerald, she then continued, “They’re getting bolder by the year... To think that he would actually cause a scene during grandpa’s birthday banquet! No wonder he dared to make demands when he came looking for grandpa this morning!”

“Huh? What kind of demands? Oh wait, it must’ve been a proposal for you and Yael to get married, right?” asked Mindy.

In response, Jasmine gave a simple nod.

“Pfft! Is he really aspiring for something that he’s clearly not even worthy of? Grandpa must’ve immediately rejected his proposal, right? How did grandpa turn him down anyway for him to get so much courage? He seems really desperate!”

“I... Well... He accepted the rejection once he found out that I was bound to a marriage contract which had been made from when I was still a child!” replied Jasmine in a soft voice as her face began blushing slightly.

“...Huh? What? With whom? Why haven’t I heard of this before?”

“Just! Forget it for now! I don’t want to talk about this anymore!” replied Jasmine as she shook her head.

To take her mind off things, she focused on the scene unfolding between Noah and her grandfather.

“I’ll be honest with you, Lord Fenderson. I’ve already been very lenient and merciful toward you. As long as you’re willing to give us the compensation we rightfully deserve, we’ll definitely continue following the Fendersons with all our hearts in future. After all, it isn’t really necessary for me to expose everything here, am I not right?” said Noah as he sneered.

Bryson immediately knit his brows tightly together when he heard that.

Bryson finally understood why Noah had a sudden change in character back when Noah had told him that he had managed to locate Xara’s daughter. To think that Bryson had initially thought that Noah had finally turned over a new leaf!

It was all just part of his grand scheme!

Bryson was now in this mess because he had fallen for Bryson’s trickery. He had been careless due to his love for his daughter.

However, at the end of the day, the older a person was, the wiser he tended to be. Bryson had no doubt taken extra precautionary and security measures in case he ever had to deal with such a situation.

“Hahaha! I have no idea what you’re hinting at, Noah! While it is true that I’ve found Xenia, I only brought her back to interrogate her about Xara’s whereabouts. Sadly, Xenia doesn’t know anything at all! I simply took her in since I couldn’t bear the thought of leaving her to wander outside alone. Now that I’ve made myself clear, what else do you wish to talk about?” replied Bryson calmly.

“Is that so? Hahaha! I really admire you, Lord Fenderson! However, that doesn’t explain the beautiful girl in the car who was trying to leave the villa this morning! It was such a coincidence too that my subordinates had managed to catch a glimpse of her, subsequently preventing her from leaving! Mr. Lambert and Mr. Wellington, do you wish to know how beautiful that girl truly is? Why, she’s so beautiful that she looks exactly like Xara! If you don’t believe me, I can order my subordinates to bring her over right now!” said Noah as he laughed.

“...You... you took Queta away?” asked Bryson, finally losing his cool as his body began trembling uncontrollably.

“So her name is Queta! She refused to say a word to me when I asked her for it! Regardless, everyone else will now have their chance to question her! Being her in, men!” yelled Noah.

Chapter 783

Upon hearing Noah’s command, a few men stepped forward, dragging a girl along.

Her head was lowered and her mouth was shut tight. However, her appearance alone was enough to shock everyone present.

“She... She looks exactly like her!”

“That’s right! I almost thought that she was a much younger version of Xara!”

“We’ve all been deceived! Lord Fenderson must have already known about Xara’s whereabouts a long time ago! Yet he left all us affiliated families in the dark on purpose!”

While the audience began discussing aloud, Queta herself bore an extremely ugly expression on her face. After all, she had been physically hurt and her body was currently feeling very weak.

“It... It really is my aunt’s daughter! So it turns out that grandpa’s already found aunt’s daughter!” said Jasmine.

“Queta!” shouted Bryson, a stern expression on his face.

He had initially arranged for someone to secretly send Queta away that morning. Little did he know that there would be a snitch working for the Schuyler family! The current scene was a result of that.

“So, lord Fenderson. We now have all the necessary witnesses and evidence! What else do you have to say for yourself? We demand that Xara be handed over to us as soon as possible!”

All the guests were now gathering around Bryson, glaring at him angrily.

Bryson was at a complete loss of words, a tense expression on his face.

While he truly wanted to save Queta, after facing all the provocations from the Schuyler family, he had no real choice but to give an explanation to all the other affiliated families

As he was wondering how to deal with the dilemma, a voice suddenly called out from behind everyone.

“Hey now, why are all of you bothering the Fendersons? I’m here, you know!”

Turning around to see who had shouted, everyone saw a woman walking toward them from the outside.

“...Huh? Who on earth is that? How did she even get in?”

“Oh god, just look at her face! How absolutely ugly!”

“I can’t continue looking at her anymore... I can already feel goosebumps on my skin!”

As the commotion grew louder and louder, Xavia finally lay eyes on the woman in question.

Her eyes had earlier been fixed on Queta. After all, the girl looked extremely familiar to her. Xavia simply couldn’t put her finger on where she had met her before.

Regardless, Xavia couldn’t help but purse her lips in disgust when she saw the woman walking up to Bryson.

Bryson himself was trembling uncontrollably at this point. He knew who this person was just by listening to her voice. It was a voice he had been waiting to hear for almost two decades now.

He could only stare in disbelief when she finally stood before him. Was this really her? His daughter who used to be the most alluring woman in the country?

“Is... Is that really you, Xara?” asked Bryson, his hands trembling.

Hearing his statement, both Second and Third stared at Xara in surprise. However, they quickly shook off their shock for the moment as they hurried over to support Bryson.

“It’s been a good twenty years, father. I’m finally back!” said Xara as tears started streaming down her cheeks.

“...Sister?” asked Second and Third simultaneously as they exchanged looks with one another, feeling utterly dumbfounded.

At the same time, Noah and the others were all breathing heavily.

“...So she really is Xara! The eldest lady of the Fenderson family! No wonder they couldn’t find her even after so many years had passed! To think that the once extremely gorgeous and beautiful Xara who had earned the admiration of so many back then would be reduced to such an ugly state!”

“Exactly! Even if we bumped into her on the street, we wouldn’t have been able to recognize her at all!”

As everyone continued to comment on the situation, Xenia ran toward Xara before saying, “Why did you show yourself, miss?”

“I needed to in order to save Queta! Aunt Xenia, I’ve caused you so much harm and grief for so many years now! I hope you’ll forgive me!” said Xara as she held on to Queta’s hands.

After hearing all that, Queta finally understood everything.

Chapter 784

So that’s why Aunt Fenderson had treated her so dearly before this! Was she truly the mother she had been looking for this entire time?

A cocktail of complicated emotions was now brewing in Queta’s heart. She didn’t even know whether she should refer to her as her aunt or mother anymore!

“It all makes sense now! No wonder we couldn’t find any clues about my aunt, even after investigating for so long!” said Jasmine.

“Hey now, this isn’t exactly a family reunion, you know? Since you’ve finally decided to show yourself, shouldn’t you give us a proper explanation for everything that happened back then, Xara? After all, we’ve been searching for you for a good twenty years now and we’ve already wasted enough time and resources just to find you!” replied Noah coldly.

“I’m well aware of what you’re up to, Noah Schuyler. There’s no need for you to continue blackmailing the Fenderson family. I’ll say it loud and clear now. The assets and properties I’ve been holding on to will never go to you or any of the other affiliated families! And since you’ve been trying so hard to find me, here I am now! I can leave with the rest of you and you can do whatever you want to me then! I’m completely at your disposal!” said Xara aloud.

Hearing this, Noah was so enraged that he looked like he was ready to explode at any moment.

To think that even after pursuing her for so long and setting everything up to be in his favor, her sudden reappearance after twenty years had completely ruined all of his plans! Things would've gone perfectly if only she hadn't made her appearance today!

Now, even if they killed her, they would never be able to get their hands on any of the assets. What even was the point of him doing all that hard work and planning before this?

There was even a time when he had planned to put her under house arrest once he found her! However, he simply couldn't locate her no matter how much he searched!

Thinking about it, she behaved just like a ticking time bomb. To think that the bomb would explode during such a critical moment!

Noah and the others were at a complete loss of what to even do next.

"...If you think you're getting away scot-free after all you've done, you can dream on! Men! Take her away with us, right this instant!" yelled one of the many heads of the other affiliated families in both rage and humiliation.

Just as Bryson was about to stop them, a butler with a very anxious expression on his face came running toward him. In between pants, the butler then said, "L-Lord Fenderson, someone's sent you a birthday gift outside! The gift itself looks to be near priceless!"

"What? Who sent it?" said Bryson as he looked at the terrified butler.

Everyone whom Bryson had invited should have already arrived by now.

Bryson knew how powerful each of the families under him were. As far as he knew, none of them could afford to give him such an invaluable gift, or at least that was what he assumed from the way his butler had described it.

However, he had reason to be curious since his butler wouldn't have been this shocked if it was just an ordinary gift.

Gulping, the butler then said, "The person in question said that he was a friend of yours from the Crawford family from Northbay!"

"...What? The Crawfords from Northbay you said?"

Bryson was now quivering so much that his walking cane soon fell to the floor.

Everyone else present was equally as shocked.

Both the Fendersons and all their affiliated families knew the Crawfords from Northbay well. After all, not only were the Crawfords living there extremely influential and powerful, they were also the ones who had struck fear among the Fendersons for decades.

To put simply, they were a terrifying family.

Everyone there was naturally aware of the grievances between the Crawfords and the Fendersons.

Jasmine herself quickly walked over to her grandfather's side.

The Crawfords had been the ones who had caused her parents' death. Was she finally going to be able to see who the mysterious enemy was?

Noah, on the other hand, had gone deathly pale. He was now sure that he had definitely tried to stir trouble at the wrong time. Now that even the Crawfords were here, nothing he had said would matter anymore.

After all, while all of them would usually declare that the Crawfords were their enemy, most of them only said it for the sake of it. Who among them would actually have the audacity or even courage to go up against the Crawfords?

Even if it was true that the Crawfords were the ones who had caused them to lose so many of their relatives and family members back then, Noah and the other affiliate heads would never dare to even say a single word before such a powerful family.

Meanwhile, Gerald himself was feeling dumbfounded as he continued watching the scene unfold from the side-lines.

Someone from his family was coming?

While it was true that he had informed his subordinates about the location of the Fenderson family's mansion, he hadn't really expected for any of them to make their appearance here, especially not under the guise of the Crawfords from Northbay.

If it wasn't them, who could it be?

As Gerald's curiosity continued to grow, the butler then said, "Indeed! The person in question is the young master of the Crawfords from Northbay, Mr. Crawford himself!"

Chapter 785

"...What? The young master, Mr. Crawford?"

Everyone was now exchanging glances with each other in astonishment.

"I've never even known that the Crawford family had a young master!"

"Have you forgotten that the Crawford family's young master was raised among ordinary people? That made it near impossible for anyone to get any information about him! Not even the Fendersons know much about him, even after investigating so much into the matter back then!"

"To think that the Crawford's young master has already returned to his family! Why, he's even come all the way here just to look for the Fendersons! How powerful and impressive! It wouldn't be farfetched to say that he's probably comparable to Dylan back in the day!"

As the people in the crowd continued discussing among themselves, Jasmine herself was breathing rather frantically. She was currently facing all sorts of inexplicable emotions.

After Mr. Crawford's arrival was announced, none of the affiliate families dared to continue causing a scene, and the same went for the Long family's representative.

"Yael... What's the background of Northbay's Mr. Crawford like?" asked Xavia, sounding rather frightened.

She had attended the birthday banquet as the second young mistress of the Long family and after seeing Lord Fenderson's terrified face after being notified of Mr. Crawford's arrival, she was now feeling equally scared.

After all, the mere mention of the name, 'Mr. Crawford', reminded Xavia of a certain someone.

"Well, the Crawford family from Northbay is very powerful and secretive. I've heard that even their weakest affiliate family is almost as strong as the Fendersons! We minor affiliate families could never even dream to compare to them!" replied Yael, a fearful expression on his face.

"Does... Does such a powerful family even exist on this planet?"

While Xavia had been married into a wealthy and influential family, and she had already gained a lot of knowledge and seen much of the world by now, hearing Yael's explanation still shocked her.

"Of course! I'm sure you know that the Fendersons have been at war with the Crawfords for many years now. However, they simply had no way of defeating the Crawfords at all! That's the reason why the Fendersons have been living in secrecy! They've been trying to remain hidden from the Crawford family's eyes so that they could eventually launch a counterattack against them!"

"Hilariously enough, it's also precisely because of that, that there have been so many internal divisions between the Fenderson family till this very day. Now that the Crawfords are at the Fenderson's doorstep, it's natural for Lord Fenderson to be terrified!" said Yael before taking in a deep breath.

“Then... How many assets does the Crawford family even own?” asked Xavia, now even more shocked than before.

“I’m not too sure about that either. However, I’ve heard rumors that the Crawford family already owns half of the world’s wealth and resources!”

Upon hearing that, Xavia’s eyes widened so much that her eyes looked like they would pop out at any moment.

Half of the world’s wealth and resources? What kind of concept even was that?

With that much power and influence, what kind of person was Mr. Crawford from Northbay even going to be like?

While the guest continued hypothesizing in their confusion, a few girls began tugging Alice to the scene while saying, “Alice! Come listen to this! It seems that a powerful young master is about to make his appearance!”

“Huh? How powerful are we talking about here?” asked Alice in surprise.

“Alice, haven’t you seen how pale the powerful figures here have gone upon hearing about Mr. Crawford’s arrival? I heard that he owns half of the world’s wealth and resources! What an incredible family the Crawfords from Northbay is!” said the girls excitedly.

Their reaction was to be expected since girls usually felt excited talking about rich and handsome guys. What more, being able to meet such an incredible young master was a pleasant surprise for them!

While they were giddy with excitement, Alice herself immediately covered her mouth, feeling suddenly anxious and nervous.

“T-the young master... You said the young master’s name was Mr. Crawford...?”

Alice was now feeling an overwhelming discomfort in her heart. After all, she had seen Gerald's true capabilities before this.

She was also aware that his sister had immense financial resources and capabilities as well. Not only that, his sister's home was in Northbay too!

The Crawfords from Northbay... Could it really be...?

Alice could feel her breathing grow heavier by the second.

If what her friends had said was true, then Alice honestly just wanted to die on the spot, right there and then! After all, since she was the one who had rejected him, if Gerald had only been an ordinary rich heir, Alice would've just forced herself to move on and continue living her life without him.

However, how was she going to just accept that if Gerald truly was such an extraordinarily rich heir...?

"They're here!" yelled someone, causing the chaotic atmosphere from before to immediately fall silent. Everyone was now waiting anxiously, their eyes peeled on the entrance.

Not too long after, about a hundred men dressed in black began approaching the entrance in a neat and orderly manner.

The person leading the group seemed to be an old man who looked to be around sixty.

Beside him, was a young, formally-dressed man who looked to be around the age of twenty-two. His eyes were rather beady and he was also a little on the chubbier side.

"Is that Mr. Crawford?"

Chapter 786

"Yes, that must be him!"

As the crowd of people gulped, not even daring to speak loudly, the new group of people continued walking forward till they were right in front of Bryson. Each person in that group exuded an equally strong aura.

“Is that you, Fynn?” asked Bryson as he smiled at the old man.

“Indeed it is, Lord Fenderson. It’s been a long time since we’ve last met! I trust you’ve been well since then!” replied Fynn with a slight smile.

“I have. Still, all those years... Gone just like that! To think that the young boy who used to always stick around Daryl is now an old man... If it wasn’t because of your unchanging, sharp as ever eyes, I wouldn’t have been able to recognize you at all! It really has been too long!” said Bryson, his tone tinged with regrets as he reminisced.

After all, back in the day, Bryson and Daryl were so close that they even considered each other to be brothers. The old man that now stood before him went by the name of Fynn, and he used to be Daryl’s subordinate then. Time, however, waits for no one and things were completely different now.

“A long time indeed...”

A calm smile was on Fynn’s face as he said that. While at their roots, grievances still existed between the Crawfords and the Fendersons, regardless of whether they were still competing against each other in secret or not, they still had to treat each other politely.

As for the ‘Mr. Crawford’ standing beside Fynn, he looked rather carefree as he scanned through the area. However, his demeanor changed the moment his gaze fell upon somebody standing within the crowd.

“...Huh? It’s you?”

“So you’re the one who came?”

The woman who had spoken in unison with 'Mr. Crawford' was none other than Xavia.

While he was clearly surprised to see Xavia there, Xavia was even more astonished. After all, she had met and dealt with this person before.

He wasn't Mr. Crawford! The young man with beady eyes was Gerald's godbrother, Yoel! The son of the richest man in County State!

Why was he here? Though it wasn't Gerald, Xavia still began feeling inexplicably nervous at that moment.

"Aren't you the Holden family's young master? Why were you given the title of Mr. Crawford from Northbay?" asked Xavia, her face slightly pale.

Hearing that, Jasmine was surprised. After all, when she had first heard that he was Mr. Crawford, she had been wondering if this was the one whom she was contractually bound to marry.

As it turned out, he wasn't, or at least from what Xavia had said.

Feeling slightly embarrassed after she said that, Yoel then replied, "Now who said that I was Mr. Crawford? I'm just here to join in the fun and excitement!"

"Wait, so if he's not Mr. Crawford... Then where's the real one?"

Everyone was surprised by the turn of events.

"Hahaha! It seems that we've made a real fool of ourselves this time! Let me explain. There are two reasons why we're here today. Our first is to represent Mr. Crawford and the Crawford family to present your birthday gift to you. After all, after all these years, even our family has regretted some of the things that have happened in the past. We've been meaning to have a talk with the Fendersons for a long time now, but we simply haven't heard any news about your family throughout all these years!" said Fynn as he smiled faintly.

“Not to worry, however, Lord Fenderson. As long as the Crawford family is around, I believe that nobody will even dare to cause any trouble for you on your birthday!”

As soon as Noah and the others heard that, they felt themselves gulping before each taking a step back.

“As for the second matter, the Crawfords would like to take Miss Queta and Madam Xara back with us. After all, the madam is the sister-in-law of the Crawford family’s head. Miss Queta herself is a member of the Crawford family. I believe that this is both an understandable and reasonable request, Lord Fenderson!”

Bryson took in a deep breath upon hearing that. So things had already advanced to this stage.

Since the Crawford family had actually come all the way here, they must have already been fully prepared for the visit.

Even though Bryson tried thinking and considering the overall situation, in the end, he didn’t even know what to say. After all, the Crawfords now knew where the Fendersons lived, which meant that they were now officially susceptible to danger at all times.

However, the Fendersons themselves were holding on to a trump card which was very important to Dylan. It was because of that, that Bryson believed that Dylan wouldn’t try to go overboard any time soon.

The current best choice of action would be for both parties to negotiate and talk things through.

“Well of course it is!” replied Bryson with a nod.

“However, do remember that the Fenderson family used to be on par with the Crawfords, Fynn. While you said that the young master of the Crawford family wanted to wish me a happy birthday and celebrate my eightieth birthday together, it seems that he isn’t present. While he did send someone here in his stead, I don’t think that it justifies me handing over both my daughter and granddaughter over to the Crawfords,” said Bryson as he fixed his gaze on Fynn.

“Hahaha! Now who said that our young master wasn’t here? In fact, he’s already arrived at the Fenderson family mansion a day in advance to make all your birthday preparations, Lord Fenderson!” replied Fynn as he laughed.

“...What? What do you mean Mr. Crawford’s already arrived?” replied Bryson in surprise.

“Mr. Crawford’s already here? Where is he?”

Everyone was equally astonished.

Chapter 787

Fynn himself began scanning through the crowd at that moment.

According to what Mr. Zartyr had said, Mr. Crawford had indeed already arrived.

By then, everyone was exchanging glances with one another.

“Oh gosh! I really hadn’t expected Mr. Crawford to come here! Why wasn’t I aware of any of this at all?” said Mindy in a surprised tone.

It was no surprise why she wanted to see Mr. Crawford for herself. After all, he was the reason why she and Jasmine couldn’t even leave their house when they were children.

Even the celebrities who were still holding on to Gerald were looking around excitedly. While they were quite sure that actually being able to get acquainted with someone with such a high status as Mr. Crawford was completely out of the question, a chance to see what a truly dignified rich heir like him looked like would be the second best thing.

Being able to do that would make the entire trip feel worthwhile.

Watching the scene unfold before him, Gerald could only shake his head with a wry smile on his face. Since things had turned out this way, it was impossible for him to continue maintaining a low profile anymore.

In his initial plan, Gerald had simply told Barry to create a distraction outside.

Little did he know that his father had found out about the mission. As a result, his father had sent some of the people from the Crawford family from Northbay over. To be honest, Gerald himself didn't really fully comprehend everything that was currently happening.

However, it was indeed a good move for his family to send some men over. Since things had already turned out this way, in a way, his task was already complete. Understanding that, Gerald then stood up.

"What are you doing, Gerald?" asked Mindy.

Even the female celebrities seemed surprised.

"They're calling for Mr. Crawford. Why are you the one standing up?"

"Hahaha! For those who didn't know any better, they must be thinking that he's the actual Mr. Crawford!" mocked the celebrities as they laughed among themselves.

Everyone else who turned to look at him was startled by his actions.

"G-Gerald!" shouted Alice who had been standing quietly at the sidelines this entire time.

It only took a single glance for her to recognize him, and she was now breathing heavily. To think that Gerald really was here! Moreover, based on the current situation, it seems that he had arrived together with her team!

So the person who had carried her to her bed and helped her change into her pajamas... Was it really all him?!

Regret and embarrassment flooded her as she recalled the hazy memory of seeing him last night. All sorts of emotions were swirling in Alice's heart at that moment. Was he really the one responsible for putting her in bed last night? To think that she had rejected such a person before...

Xavia herself was staring at Gerald wide-eyed and in disbelief, looking utterly terrified.

It was almost as though Gerald was always lingering around her. She had come all the way to the Salford Province to participate in this event, just to finally be able to shine and show off a little. She really hadn't expected to bump into Gerald here once again!

In the end, Xavia was the person who was most afraid of seeing him here. After all, based on what Fynn had earlier said, did that mean that he truly was the Mr. Crawford from Northbay?

If that was the case, then the Long family would definitely be unable to even come close to comparing themselves to him anymore.

Aside from fear, Xavia was also feeling very uncomfortable by Gerald's sudden spike in both maturity and stability in such a short period of time.

"Gerald... You!" said Jasmine as she watched Gerald walk toward her grandfather. She was so surprised by the sudden revelation that her entire face was now a bright red.

Was he the Mr. Crawford she was supposed to get married to?

Even Xara was shocked speechless. She had initially assumed that Gerald was simply one of the descendants of the Crawford family. Never would she have guessed that Gerald's father was actually Dylan Crawford!

"Greetings, Mr. Crawford!" said Fynn with a smile as he looked at the young master while reminiscing the time when he had first carried a much younger Gerald in his arms.

Not only had Fynn been working as Dylan's personal driver, he had also been the one in charge of Gerald's poverty education and upbringing.

So even though Fynn very rarely directly contacted Gerald, he knew Gerald's attitude and behavior well. Gerald was both a steady and mature young man who was also rather introverted, just like the mistress.

"Mr. Crawford!"

Chapter 788

The simultaneous shout had come from the people standing behind Fynn.

Gerald then nodded before saying, "I really hadn't expected you to come here, Uncle Fynn..."

"Master was simply worried about your situation. Since he was afraid that you wouldn't be able to handle the matter alone, he sent me here to help you!" replied Fynn.

"Heh! I'm just here because I really missed you, brother!" said Yoel with a smile.

By this point, everyone's mouths were hanging wide open, especially the celebrities from before.

"I-Impossible... This is absolutely impossible!" muttered Xavia as she continued shaking her head in her shock.

To think that for a period of time, she had finally managed to recover from her shock of finding out that Gerald's true identity was Mr. Crawford of Mayberry... Her joining the Long family had allowed her initial sadness and hurt feelings to slowly fade since she knew that she was at least on par with Gerald at that point in time.

Knowing that allowed her to keep a more stable mental state.

However, now that she realized that he was actually Mr. Crawford from Northbay in the flesh, she knew that being in the Long family was completely useless. After all, he was a world-class heir! There was no way she was ever going to be able to compare to him!

Xavia had truly suffered a massive blow to her ego this time.

“Grandpa Fenderson, on behalf of the Crawfords from Northbay, I’d like to present our gift to you now. Will that be acceptable?” asked Gerald as he smiled.

Taking in a deep breath, Bryson then nodded slightly.

Mindy herself ran toward Jasmine’s side before saying, “J-Jasmine! I really hadn’t expected Gerald to be...”

Jasmine could only nod in response as she blushed.

Neither of them could have ever anticipated that Gerald was the actual young master of the Crawford family.

Following that, things went rather smoothly.

All Bryson could do was try to negotiate with the Crawfords since their home had finally been exposed. Naturally, Gerald gained the right to take Xara and Queta away from him.

Once the birthday banquet ended, Gerald began leaving with his team.

Alice herself was still experiencing complicated emotions so she stayed behind, not knowing how to even process everything that had just happened.

Xavia on the other hand, seemed extremely unwilling to just leave it at that. Chasing angrily after him, she then called out, “Gerald!”

Before she was even able to reach him, a bodyguard stepped in front of her.

“What is it?” asked Gerald, a wry smile on his face.

“What... What the hell is going on here? You... You were the young master of the Crawfords from Northbay this entire time...? How is that even possible...?”

While she was the only one who had chased after Gerald, she still managed to maintain a calm façade. After all, she had done things behind the Long family’s back before.

She was also well aware that if she allowed Gerald to leave just like that today, she would never come to terms with it for the rest of her life.

Xavia recalled the days when she used to date Gerald, the university’s well-known pauper. Yet after just a short while, he had suddenly become rich. It almost seemed like he was the boss of the Mayberry Organization.

Though she was already extremely surprised back then, Gerald had refused to answer any of her questions.

To think that she even had the audacity to assume that she was finally on par with Gerald after getting into the Long family...

The Longs were nothing. After all, Gerald was one of the richest heirs on the entire planet! A top rich heir! She couldn’t even comprehend what kind of power and influence he had!

Gerald himself knew for a fact that Xavia wouldn’t leave him be till he gave her a definite answer this time.

He then smiled bitterly as he began explaining.

“To tell you the truth, even I was shocked in the beginning. I remember feeling very sad that night yet the moment I arrived home, my sister suddenly transferred a million and five hundred thousand dollars in USD to me as pocket money! How utterly shocked I was back then... It was on that night when my sister revealed to me that I had been raised in poverty on purpose...”

The more Gerald explained to her, the more her eyes widened in shock.

Everything made sense now.

“Well, that’s about it. Now that you finally know the entire story, it’s high time I left!” said Gerald with a slight nod before turning around.

“No! Gerald, wait!” shouted Xavia extremely anxiously.

Chapter 789

“Why don’t we make up now, Gerald? I’m even willing to be your concubine!”

“I beg your pardon?” replied Gerald as he stared at Xavia in disbelief.

“...U-um... What... was I even saying...”

Due to how anxious she was, in her panic, she had accidentally blurted out what she truly felt. It was now beyond awkward and embarrassing for her.

“I-It was just gibberish... S-say Gerald, we’re still friends, right?”

“... If there’s nothing else, I’ll be taking my leave,” said Gerald as he turned around to leave for good, a bitter smile on his face.

His relationship with Xavia was nothing but a thing in the past now. Since he no longer had any feelings for her, he knew it was best for him not to get involved with Xavia anymore.

A little while after he had gotten into his car, he received a phone call. It was from Mila.

Though Mila hadn’t contacted him for almost half a month now, Gerald had sent her a message every now and then.

“What is it, Mila?” asked Gerald as he smiled.

“Are... you done with whatever you’ve been doing?” asked Mila in return.

Throughout Mila’s period of silence, Gerald had constantly updated her on news regarding himself. Because of that, Mila always knew what Gerald was up to.

“That I am. I’ll be returning to Northbay today, but before that, I’ll head to Hong Kong to look for you first,” replied Gerald, still smiling.

“Alright! Ah, if you’re coming over, could we meet before tomorrow morning? I’m leading an overseas expedition team for an interview tomorrow, but I still want to meet you! I... I really, really want to meet you!”

Since she had remained silent for so long, not once had she told him about any of the grievances that she had gone through.

After all, what Jessica had meant was crystal clear. Back then, she had said that Mila wasn’t cut to be part of the Crawford family. That her relationship with Gerald wasn’t going to last long.

Even if Jessica had said so, as long as an opportunity existed, Mila was willing to work hard to make it happen.

She had been putting in extra effort in her work throughout her period of silence. Mila wanted to prove that she wasn’t just some trophy wife, but also someone who would be able to support and actually help Gerald in the future.

It was honestly because of her hard work that Mila was being given the opportunity to lead her own team to conduct an interview tomorrow.

Still, the more effort she placed in bettering herself, the more Mila ended up missing Gerald.

“I can do that. I’ll be meeting you tomorrow then!”

After exchanging a few more words, both of them hung up.

“How’s the situation, Mila? Will Gerald be coming over?” asked Molly and her other roommates as they continued packing the things they needed for the interview.

Most of her roommates had only caught a glimpse of Gerald back when they had gone looking for him with Mila half a month earlier. Back then, they only knew that he was a rich person from Mayberry City.

For Mila, however, it wasn’t until quite recently when she came to know that his wealth was actually world-class! The difference in power and wealth that he had at his disposal was so great compared to what she had initially thought of him, that he may as well be a completely different person!

Molly and the others hadn’t gotten the chance to get to know Gerald back then, and all of them were quite eager to meet him again.

As the main reporter for the overseas interview this time around, Mila was given the right to bring two assistants along with her. The two she had chosen were Molly and Wanda.

Though Wanda had been both angry and jealous of Mila on multiple occasions, ever since the incident at the television station festival, she and Mila had grown to have a pretty good relationship.

“He said that he’s coming!” replied Mila as she smiled sweetly.

“Wow! That’s great to hear! Since he’s personally coming over, I can only imagine the scene that will play out! Our boyfriends will also be coming to see us off then! Think you could use that opportunity to introduce him to them, Mila?” asked Molly with a smile.

“Of course!”

As the three girls continued chatting happily among themselves, a sudden knock was heard on the door.

The moment the dormitory room door was opened, the girls saw that it was Narissa.

“I saw a few express delivery packages for you downstairs, so I’ve brought them up!” said Narissa as she handed the three small packages over to them.

“Humph. Thanks, I guess!” replied Wanda with a cold sneer.

After all, everyone was pretty much still angry with her for siding with Hallie to set Mila up back then.

Naturally, after hearing her part of the story, Mila herself didn’t hold anything against her.

Chapter 790

“Thank you, Narissa! You can hand them over to me!” replied Mila as she took the parcels from her.

“And thank you for giving me the opportunity to appear on television for a show! Thank you so much!”

“You’re welcome. We’re all good friends after all! Either way, I think we should open the packages now and see what we got!” replied Mila with a smile.

Since Narissa wanted to get closer to Mila again, she stayed to watch them open their packages. Including her, there were now four people in their dormitory.

“...Huh? There’s a parcel for each of us! Could it be that all three of our boyfriends sent us gifts at the same time? Hahaha! Though that’s most likely improbable!” joked Molly.

“My guess is that they’re from the overseas expedition team. The three of us are, after all, entourages for the expedition team!”

“Yeah, it’s probably from them!”

With that, the three of them then began opening their respective parcels...

“...Huh? A... Pendant? It looks a little strange, don’t you think?” said Molly as she held the pendant in her hand.

A symbol resembling the sun was etched on it, and from an angle, it looked somewhat like a burning fireball.

“How queer of the expedition team. Why would they even send us such pendants?” asked Wanda, a puzzled expression on her face.

“Also... Don’t the pendants make you feel slightly uncomfortable?” added Wanda.

“I don’t know about uncomfortable but it truly does look strange!” replied Mila who also seemed surprised.

“Well, let’s just ignore the pendants for now. Instead, I propose that we go out and enjoy a good meal tonight! We’ll be showing off our talents tomorrow, after all! My treat!” said Molly with a laugh.

“Sounds good to me! Oh, why don’t you join us, Narissa? Let’s go together!” invited Mila.

As Narissa nodded in response, a plane from the Salford Province began landing in Hong Kong.

It was already late at night and once the group got off the plane, a special car was already waiting for them. Not long after the group was dropped off at a seaside hotel...

“Get lost, b*tch!” shouted a young man as he slapped a girl on her cheek.

He had used so much force in his slap that the girl immediately fell to the ground.

“D*mn it! So you suddenly start thinking about me after all this time? And think you can just follow me all the way here to look for me? Go to hell!” growled the man, kicking the girl’s abdomen hard as she lay at the hotel’s entrance.

In utter pain, the only thing the girl could do was curl up on the ground.

As he continued hurting her, his actions had garnered attention from the many people preparing to board the ship closeby.

“If my new girlfriend misunderstands me, then I’ll toss you into the ocean and let the fish feast on you!”

Just as he was about to hit the girl again, the young man suddenly froze when he felt someone holding tightly onto his wrist.

“You... Who are you?” asked the man angrily.

Instead of answering, the other person simply tightened his grip on the young man’s wrist. It wasn’t long before the young man could take the pain no longer and began begging for mercy!

“Scram!” shouted the other person as he then kicked the young man a good distance away.

Seeing the group of men standing behind the person who had hurt his wrist, he didn’t dare to stay any longer and immediately ran into the hotel.

Once he was gone, the person who had saved the girl squatted down and helped her up. When he saw her face, however, he was instantly startled!

“It really is you!” said the man in surprise.

He had felt that the girl looked a bit too familiar when he first saw her at the port’s entrance earlier.

While he hadn't planned to interfere with the situation, when he saw how cruelly the man was treating her, he just couldn't bear watching her continue getting beaten up anymore.

Though the girl had been severely hurt to the point where she had trouble even standing on her own, the moment she saw her savior, she instantly felt both surprised and grateful.

"It... It's you, Gerald?!" cried out the girl.

Chapter 791

"It is! I really hadn't expected to bump into you again!" replied Gerald with a nod.

The woman in question, was none other than Alice.

He had initially thought that he wouldn't ever see her again after the incident in the Fenderson family mansion. To think that he would bump into her again so soon!

Gerald still remembered what Alice had said to him that night, and he was honestly still feeling bad about it. Had she not met him, she could've been living a much better life now.

As if her suffering wasn't already enough, she would've definitely been beaten up much more terribly by that man had he stepped any later! Seeing the state she was in made Gerald truly saddened.

After all, he no longer held on to any resentment toward her.

"Are you alright?" asked Gerald.

"I... I'm fine! I'm just a loser now, Gerald... Do you want to beat me up too? After all, I'm just some vain girl who loves money and is willing to do anything for it! I'm beyond shameless! Just leave me be!" replied Alice between sobs as she began crawling away.

"Why do you have to be this way, Alice..." said Gerald as he shook his head in resignation. He simply couldn't bear looking at her like this.

“Just ignore me, Gerald... I don’t deserve your concern after treating you like that back then!” replied Alice as she sat on the ground and wept.

Gerald was well aware that there was simply no way that he would be able to sleep well tonight if he abandoned her in her current state.

“...I’ll get you a room for the night. It’s pretty late already and you definitely look like you need the rest. Come on now,” said Gerald as he supported Alice up and began leading her into the closest hotel.

Before entering the hotel, he turned to look around and gestured at his subordinates. Understanding his non-verbal order clearly, they immediately arranged for the ship from earlier to wait for his return.

After booking a room and making sure that she got there safely, Gerald was about to leave when Alice suddenly wrapped her arms around him tightly!

“Just get some well-deserved rest, I really need to go now!” said Gerald.

“Please don’t go, Gerald! I’m begging you... I... I have a lot of things I want to tell you... I was wrong before! Even after all this time, the one who’s always been nicest to me is still you! I... I know I don’t deserve you... but could you please... Take pity and accompany me...? Just for a short while!” replied Alice, refusing to release her hug.

Gerald could only sigh in his mind as he nodded in agreement. However, he made sure to maintain at least some distance away from Alice.

While it was true that Alice had the allure of a goddess that could make any man yearn for her, her sad condition outweighed any of his earthly desires.

Since there was red wine in the room, Alice grabbed a bottle and poured two glasses of wine for Gerald and herself.

“Have a drink with me, Gerald. Once we’re done, I won’t pester you anymore in the future! I’m now well aware of how foolish I was in the past, but that’s because I didn’t know about your true identity! Regardless, please indulge me for a little while and just drink with me! You don’t have to be afraid, I’ll keep my word that I won’t pester you after this!” said Alice.

“You’re already this hurt. I suggest you just hit the hay early,” replied Gerald as he shook his head.

“My heart hurts even more. And you know what they say, wine is the remedy for a broken heart.”

“...Fine. But I won’t be drinking much. I’ll leave after one drink since my subordinates are still waiting for me!” said Gerald as he took a wine glass from her hand.

Alice then started talking about her life. The main reason she was currently in such a pitiful state was because she was living alone and away from home.

Being Alice’s ex-classmate, Gerald knew he would definitely feel bad about it later if he didn’t spend at least some time advising her. What more, she was also Naomi’s best friend.

By the time both of them were done, Gerald had already drunk three consecutive glasses of wine. Seeing how tipsy Alice was already getting, Gerald immediately stopped her from getting more wine.

“That’s quite enough. We’ll stop drinking now. It’s about time you get some rest, Alice. Everything will be fine the next day... Now if you excuse me, I have something to do and it’s about time I left!” said Gerald as he stood up.

However, Gerald’s legs were already giving in, even after just a few steps forward. He was getting increasingly dizzy as well.

‘Isn’t this wine... a little too strong...?’ Gerald thought to himself as he felt Alice’s arms wrap around him again.

Though he wanted to push her away, his arms barely had any strength left in them.

It wasn't long before Gerald finally blacked out on the bed.

Chapter 792

Holding on to her stomach as she wiped her tears away, Alice took her cell phone out and began sending a text message.

It wasn't long after when a knock was heard at her room's door. Upon opening it, the person who stood outside turned out to be the same man who had beaten Alice up earlier!

"Is it done, miss? And here I thought that the young master would've already picked you up and left with you by now!" said the man with a chuckle.

"Here's the money, now get out of my sight! Also, while I did tell you to put on a great show, don't you think you were being a little too harsh?" replied Alice angrily.

"Hey, it's all because of my intense acting skills that the young master ended up buying it! Haha! I can see that he's fainted... Since you'll be free for the rest of the night, why don't we..."

"Get lost!" shouted Alice as she glared contemptuously at the man before slamming the door shut.

It was true that Alice had earlier set Gerald up. After all, the only way she would be able to gain his trust and compassion was by 'getting hurt' in front of him.

Though it was a gamble, Alice was willing to try anything at this point.

Her fantasies of being together with him had been shattered the moment she learned of Gerald's true identity. What more, he seemed to be leaving Salford County soon.

Once he left, she knew it would be near impossible for her to meet him again.

Alice simply couldn't reconcile with the fact that she had once only been steps away from being able to be part of an unimaginably distinguished and rich family.

This was her final attempt to grab hold of her dreams.

After the birthday banquet ended, Alice had not scrupled to leave the service team before rushing back to Hong Kong. She was in such a hurry since she had heard some things during the Fenderson Mansion event.

According to the rumors, Gerald was bringing some of his people there. While she didn't specifically know where his family stayed in Northbay, Alice knew where Gerald's sister was.

Though she had initially been rather skeptical about the rumors, her gamble paid off in the end, since Gerald truly did come.

By then, she had already planned for the show between her and that man from earlier to happen. Her plan had worked flawlessly too since she knew Gerald like the back of her hand.

His greatest downfall was the fact that he was a soft-hearted person, especially with women. It was why Alice had managed to successfully trick him, and all that led to the current situation.

"You really can't blame me for doing this, Gerald... I really just want you to be mine!" said Alice as she slowly began undressing.

The next morning at Northbay's main port in Hong Kong, a large ocean liner could be seen waiting to depart. The ship had been exclusively reserved for those in the investigation team.

One after another, the many members of the investigation team began boarding the ship.

"I'll see you in three days, Molly! I'll miss you!"

"That's not a lie, is it?"

"Of course it isn't!"

As Molly continued openly flirting with her boyfriend, Wanda did the same with hers. Both their boyfriends had come to see them off.

Mila herself, however, seemed to be waiting anxiously alone there. Her cell phone was ready in her hand and she had already tried calling him up to twenty times that morning.

The reply she got, however, was always the same.

“Sorry, the phone you have dialed, is currently off. Please try again later.”

“Why hasn’t Mr. Crawford arrived, Mila?” asked Molly as she walked over, her arm locked with her boyfriend’s.

“Humph! Do you honestly think that being a rich man’s partner is going to be that easy? He probably doesn’t even care for her! Why, it wouldn’t be a stretch to assume that he’s currently sleeping in another beauty’s arms!” said a girl who smiled coldly as she approached the group.

“Like you’d know anything about that, Hallie! Remember, you’re only here because you made use of your connections! In the end, you’re just a b*tch deep down, and you’ll never be anything more than that! So shut up already!” retorted Wanda with a huff.

Hearing that, Hallie’s face immediately went red with rage.

“Hey, look over there! A luxury car is coming this way!” said a man who pointed at it as a few other men—who were standing close by—turned to look.

Chapter 793

“A luxury car?” said Mila as she quickly turned to look as well.

Mila could feel her heartbeats quicken as she watched the sports car swiftly make its way into the port.

'Has Gerald finally come?'

As the car came to a screeching halt, Mila found herself slowly walking forward.

Out stepped a young man with a bouquet of fresh flowers in hand. Seeing how romantic he was being, almost everyone present—especially the girls—began feeling jealous.

"Sorry I'm late, Hallie!" said the young man as he removed his glasses while smiling.

"You're not late at all, darling! I'm delighted to know that you rushed all the way here just to see me off!" replied Hallie as she skipped rather excitedly toward the young man.

When she moved past Mila, however, she made sure that Mila saw her smirking at her before saying, "Why did you walk so far ahead? Did you honestly think that it was going to be your rich boyfriend? Too bad! This one's mine!"

Hallie felt extremely satisfied after saying that. After all, she had initially feared that Mila would end up becoming the highlight of the day since her boyfriend was so powerful.

Thankfully, he hadn't turned up. This meant that her other assumption was right. After all, why would a rich heir like Mr. Crawford ever want to be with a girl like Mila?

'In the end, he doesn't even bother about you. Did you honestly think that he'd come all the way over just to meet you? Dream on!'

While Hallie was aware that she had already lost to her when it came to work, she was happy to know that she could still win against Mila when it came to her love life.

"Rich boyfriend?" asked the young man as he held on to Hallie's hands.

“Indeed! Someone here has an extremely wealthy boyfriend! Though she had claimed that he would clear his busy schedule just to come over and meet her, in the end, it was all just a bunch of baloney! Where is he now?” shouted Hallie out loud.

Hearing her words, Mila became so anxious that she felt like crying right there and then!

In all honesty, her anxiety firing up had less to do with what Hallie had said. Rather, it had stemmed from the fact that Gerald hadn't answered any of her calls that morning. He had even forgotten about his promise with her last night!

‘Does he truly not love me anymore?’ Mila thought to herself, her mind swimming with many other depressing thoughts.

“Alright, hand over your phones! All personnel are required to verify your identity before you're allowed to board the ship!” said one of the investigation team's staff aloud at that moment.

With that, Mila and the others slowly began boarding the ship. Even after everyone had gotten aboard, Mila was honestly still hoping that a miracle could happen.

‘Gerald will definitely appear at the last moment... After all, he promised me that he would come, and he never lies to me.’

However, as she watched the port slowly fade in the distance, Mila couldn't help but burst into tears.

As the ship continued sailing on, the screeching of car tires could be heard at the now almost deserted port.

The few people who remained at the port found themselves looking at a young, rich heir and an old man as they stepped out of an immensely expensive-looking car.

The ocean liner was nowhere in sight.

Gerald could only slam his fist against the car's bonnet, realizing that he had been too late.

While he had tried calling Mila on his way there, he found that she had switched her phone off. If only he had been a little earlier, he would've definitely still been able to meet with her.

The main issue wasn't about failing to meet her, however. It was failing to keep his promise.

He remembered seeing Alice lying atop of him the moment he opened his eyes. That was all he needed to see to realize that he had been tricked into his current situation the night before.

After giving Alice a harsh scolding, he immediately rushed out of the hotel.

Fynn and his men had been waiting for him the entire night at the port, and knowing this only served to add to Gerald's guilt.

If only he hadn't taken pity on Alice, none of this would've happened...

In his mind, Gerald was able to picture how eager and disappointed Mila must have felt throughout her wait for him. The more he thought about it, the more his grief piled up.

Chapter 794

Gerald found himself sitting crossed-legged on the port in his resentment.

Nothing else could be done. All he could do was wait for Mila's return and explain to her what had happened the night before when she finally came back.

The rest of the day passed by quickly and before Mila knew it, it was already night. With the sea being so peaceful as the ocean liner sailed on, even the faintest of sea breezes could be heard.

"That's enough dwelling on it, don't you think, Mila? Since we're all probably tired by now, let's go get a bite!" said Molly as she prepared to go get some food for her.

“Alright...!” replied Mila with a slight nod.

“Now that’s more like it! Still, why did the investigation team have to take our phones away? How boring!” said Molly who just wasn’t used to not having her phone around her.

“But of course! Private information about the investigation could easily be leaked if we had our phones with us! While being strict isn’t necessarily a bad thing, I never thought that they’d even take my watch away! Humph!” replied Wanda.

“Regardless, while we had been told that we were coming all the way out here to investigate the quality of the sea, I really doubt that that’s the case, or at least I feel that that’s not our sole mission. After all, I saw a few fierce-looking people boarding the ship with us earlier who looked like they could very well be soldiers. Why would such people be needed in an investigation mission?” said Molly, evidently trying to distract Mila from her negative thoughts.

“...Huh? What are you getting at?” asked Wanda, slightly astonished.

“Call it a sixth sense which comes with having an elder brother who’s also a soldier. They really didn’t need to put on such a grand show if their motive was simply to investigate the ocean’s quality. What more, while I was helping to move some things into the conference room earlier, guess what I saw?” replied Molly as she suddenly lowered her voice.

“Go on...” said Mila and Wanda simultaneously as they looked at her. After all, even they had sensed that the investigation team was somewhat mysterious. The team seemed to have been studying something throughout most of the day.

“I saw a drawing which they must have used during their meeting! It looked like some kind of building... Haha! Wouldn’t it be wild if the investigation team was actually on a mission to locate some underwater palace?” said Molly as she laughed out loud.

Instead of laughing along, however, Mila and Wanda could only look at each other in dismay. The way Molly had said it had made their entire expedition sound and feel much more mysterious than it should have been.

“...You’re not pulling our leg, right?”

“Of course I’m not! There’s no reason for me to lie to both of you! Besides, they noticed that I saw the picture and they sternly warned me not to say a word about it! I was so terrified that I immediately ran off!” replied Molly as she stuck her tongue out.

“...Well, the larger picture doesn’t concern us... Let’s just stick to doing the things we were assigned to!” said Mila with a bitter laugh.

In response, both Wanda and Molly nodded in agreement.

It was at that moment when all three of them heard footsteps coming closer to their room, followed by a few knocks on the door. Upon opening it, they saw Hallie standing outside with her arms crossed.

“What do you want?” asked Molly.

“Professor Shevall wants to hold a meeting, so I’m here to inform you about it!” said Hallie in a rather reluctant tone.

“Fine, tell him that we’ll be on our way immediately!” replied Molly, a smug smile on her face.

Rolling her eyes, Hallie then left their room.

Professor Winston Shevall was the leader of the operation. He looked to be around seventy and while he seemed rather strict, he was also extremely knowledgeable. That made Mila respect him a lot. From what the girls had heard, he had been in charge of finding a sponsor and forming the investigation team as well.

After a while, the trio arrived at the conference room for the meeting. Including the three of them, there were about thirty members in the investigation team. The meeting itself wasn’t anything special. Professor Shevall simply wanted to emphasize the things that they needed to look out for during the expedition.

Halfway through their meeting, however, Professor Shevall suddenly began coughing terribly. From that point on, he started scratching his neck from time to time.

Since Mila was sitting right beside the professor, her gaze inadvertently fell upon the back of his neck. What Mila saw made her instantly stunned...

Chapter 795

"...P-professor Shevall? Professor Shevall...?" called out Mila in a soft tone.

"Hmm? What's wrong, Mila?" asked the professor as he looked at her with a gentle gaze and smile.

"A... symbol of some sort seems to have appeared on your neck..."

Under different circumstances, Mila would've just assumed that the symbol was just rash from all the professor's scratching. However, the symbol looked far too familiar for it to simply be rash.

"...A symbol? What could you possibly be talking about, Mila?" asked Professor Shevall as a bitter smile formed on his face.

It was at that moment when Mila became certain that it wasn't just mere rashes on the professor's neck. Rather, the symbol on his neck was one that she recognized.

It looked exactly like the sun symbol on her pendant!

"It... It looks exactly like the symbol on the pendants we received!" said Mila, now getting increasingly frightened.

Hearing that, the others present began looking at each other before each fishing out their own pendants from their pockets. All of the pendants looked exactly alike.

"So it turns out that everyone received it!" said Molly.

Upon realizing that everyone was familiar with the symbol, Professor Shevall's expression immediately changed. Snatching the pendant from Mila's hand, he gave it a good look before scanning through the other pendants held by the rest of the investigation team members.

Not long after, his face went white as a sheet.

"...Mila, is the symbol on my neck truly similar to the one on the pendants?" asked the professor who looked like he had just experienced the worst day of his life.

Not knowing what was happening, Mila could only nod slightly.

"D*mn it! And here I thought that the symbol was only reserved for the most important of members! I didn't expect everyone here to have it!"

"What exactly does the symbol represent, professor? I received it yesterday through mail!"

Seeing how unpleasant Professor Shevall's expression had become, the others were now equally as scared as Mila. After all, though there were many of them in the room, they were still out at sea in the dead of night. The spooky atmosphere was simply inevitable.

"It's finally appeared again... It seems that we're its targets this time!" exclaimed the professor as his hands trembled.

"...What do you mean by that, Professor Shevall? What's appeared?" asked Mila.

"It... It's all my fault... I've put all of you in danger! I'm so sorry!" replied the professor as he removed his glasses, unable to control his emotions any longer.

"That's... the symbol of the Sun League... The symbol itself is called the Death Pact... It's appeared only twice before, the first time being forty years ago while the second, twenty years ago. Well, I should say thrice now since it's finally reappeared today! Alas, everyone ever recorded to have received the symbol has mysteriously gone missing within three days! It's been decades since I've researched the incident

yet I've never gotten even close to uncovering the mystery!" explained Professor Shevall, his expression extremely terrible.

Hearing what he had to say, everyone soon found themselves quivering in fear. After all, the professor was extremely knowledgeable and he didn't seem like the kind of person who would make jokes like that in the first place.

It didn't help that his expression remained dead serious throughout his strange explanation.

"Cease the investigation! We're turning back immediately!" ordered the professor as he immediately stood up.

Not long after someone ran off to relay his order, the same person burst into the room again before shouting, "P-professor Shevall! Something... Something's gone terribly wrong...!"

"Elaborate!"

"Just... Please come outside and have a look for yourself! It's right in front of the liner..." replied the person, now completely out of breath.

Professor Shevall then quickly led the investigation team members out of the conference room, bringing all of them to the ship's deck.

Naturally, Mila and Molly followed the group, huddled closely together to keep each other calm.

Upon arriving at the deck, everyone was immediately stunned. Molly even found herself screaming once she realized what was brewing outside.

A massive maelstrom had formed in the sea, and the ship was heading straight for it! Close up, it looked exactly like a large mouth, devouring everything that crossed its path.

Though the captain was clearly trying to steer the ship away from the menacing whirlpool, the liner simply couldn't win against the strong forces of the maelstrom.

"Return to the cabins immediately!" shouted the professor just as a loud crash could be heard.

Chapter 796

Violent waves had just crashed onto the side of the ship, and by the looks of it, many more were soon to come. The thunderous waves were so high that they easily scaled the entire ship. Every passing wave was now drenching the deck.

Everyone aboard began screaming as the ocean liner slowly began sinking into the maelstrom. However, no matter how much they screamed, the chaotic waves seemed to drown all their voices.

The night was dark, but the ocean was even darker...

By the time the sea finally calmed itself again, a giant object could be seen descending into the depths. While it was faint, the symbol on the pendant made a brief appearance before disappearing, just like the ocean liner had.

"Is Mr. Crawford awake?" asked Fynn as he hurriedly headed for Gerald's room with a few documents in hand.

It was already the next day and Gerald was currently in a house on an island that Jessica had rented.

"Mr. Crawford's up and he seems to be in a rather good mood today. He's even asked for a ship to be arranged so that he'll be able to go out to sea and have some fun!" said a maid respectfully.

Just as the maid's reply ended, the door to Gerald's room opened.

"Ah, good morning, Fynn! I plan to go out to sea today and enjoy myself! Of course, I'm also planning to meet up with Mila if we're able to locate her! We'll return to Northbay tomorrow. If you're free, why not join me?"

Since Gerald had failed to meet Mila the day before, he had made up his mind that he would catch up with her and give her the proper explanation that she needed. He figured that though they were part of an exclusive expedition, they shouldn't be too hard to find.

"You absolutely cannot go looking for her, Mr. Crawford!" replied Fynn, a worried expression on his face.

"And why is that?"

"Something happened to Ocean Liner No. 2 last night! The area's currently been blockaded as the search for any traces of the ship continues!"

"Ocean Liner No. 2?" repeated Gerald, stunned.

"It was the ship Miss Smith was on... It seems that the ship was hit by what we can only assume to be a tsunami last night! Since it has yet to be located, the current assumption is that it sank into the ocean!" explained Fynn in a rather helpless tone.

"How... How could this be...? What became of its crew...?" asked Gerald, filled with grief and anxiety.

"As I've said, we've been looking for the ship for ages, but so far, we haven't even found any signs of a sunken ship!"

"This simply won't do! I'm heading over to look for her in person!" declared Gerald as he immediately headed for the exit.

Seeing that, Fynn could only shake his head as he took his cell phone out.

"Deploy the family's exclusive marine support! I've already told all of you to be ready from dawn, haven't I? Action is to be taken immediately!" ordered Fynn before ending the call and catching up with Gerald.

Fynn had been watching Gerald grow even from when Gerald was still a child. He knew his personality well.

Gerald was an extremely loyal person who treated every person he had been in a relationship with, with utmost importance. Fynn had seen this play out with both Xavia, his ex-girlfriend, and Mila, his current one.

Since Mila was now technically missing, the fact that Gerald hadn't had a mental breakdown was already a good sign for Fynn.

He had feared that something would happen to Gerald should he behave recklessly upon hearing the news. To prevent that, the moment Fynn was notified about the incident, he immediately issued a search for the liner using the family's manpower.

Moving back to the present, Gerald stayed aboard the ship throughout the entire day, making sure that no spot in the Northbay Sea remained unchecked. However, even when evening came, not a trace of the ship could be scavenged no matter how hard they searched.

Gerald could only sit on the port in a daze, filled with deep grief as he watched the faint outlines of the many ships still out at sea trying to locate Ocean Liner no. 2.

"...It's all my fault... If only I hadn't allowed you to return to Hong Kong back then... If you hadn't come here, nothing would've happened! If I hadn't broken my promise yesterday, I wouldn't have missed the chance to meet you for the final time!" said Gerald aloud, every word filled with self-reproach.

By then, both Queta and Xara had arrived, and both of them silently stood by Gerald's side. In Queta's hands was Gerald's meal which had remained untouched till now.

Queta herself was understandably saddened since Gerald hadn't eaten anything the entire day. Just as Queta was about to persuade Gerald to at least have a little food, a shout came from behind them.

"What do you think you're doing here? Get lost!"

It wasn't long after before a black-suited bodyguard ran toward Gerald and said, "Mr. Crawford, there's a girl who wishes to meet you no matter what. She claims that she's Miss Smith's classmate..."

Chapter 797

"Bring her over!" said Gerald as he stood up.

Getting the approval he needed, the bodyguard then left to get her. A brief moment later, the girl was escorted over by a few other bodyguards.

The girl herself appeared to be shy, though it was a reasonable reaction. After all, who wouldn't be terrified standing in a port filled with hundreds of luxury cars? As if that wasn't enough, at least a thousand black-suited bodyguards were standing all over the place!

No ordinary person would ever approach the scene without proper reason.

"A-are you... Mr. Crawford? Mila's boyfriend...?" asked the girl meekly.

"I am," replied Gerald with a nod.

"I-I go by the name of Narissa Martin... I'm a good friend of Mila's... I heard that you were investigating the liner's disappearance... While I do have some information about it, I'm not really sure if it'll help with the search..."

"Go on then. It may lead to the next clue!" replied Gerald immediately.

"Well... The night before, Mila, Molly, and Wanda received a package each... All three packages contained identical pendants... Though the pendants themselves felt somewhat unnerving to look at, the three girls and I simply assumed that it was a souvenir distributed to all the members of the investigation team... Regardless, it was rather surprising at the time that they'd get pendants—of all things—as souvenirs."

"While the last I saw Mila was after sharing a meal with her and her other two friends, I somehow managed to gain more insight into the pendants after I was done hosting a show yesterday. By coincidence, one of the guests who had partaken in the show was a student of Professor Shevall, the

head of the investigation team. After the show ended, we had a slight chat. However, when I asked about the odd pendants, the student claimed that the investigation team never distributed such a thing! I was quite baffled by that. After all, the packages the three girls received had no delivery addresses on them. Who could have sent them then? Feeling weirded out, I then described the pendant to the student.”

“Upon hearing my description, he showed me a group chat which a few of the participants of the investigation were in. After reading through it, it seemed that many of them were discussing receiving the same pendant! I truly feel that something’s off about the pendants... What reason did the anonymous sender have to send them?” explained Narissa.

“If I may, what does the pendant look like, miss? Do you have a picture of it?” asked Fynn as he began walking toward the group.

“As a matter of fact, I do!” replied Narissa as she nodded before fishing her cell phone out.

Once she found the picture, she handed her phone over to Fynn. Gerald took a look at it as well, and though Gerald didn’t recognize it, Fynn himself was already trembling all over.

“It’s... It’s this d*mned thing again!” said Fynn, his fear apparent in his voice.

“What exactly is it, Fynn?” asked Gerald in astonishment.

“It... Well, let’s just say that it’s... Nothing short of terrifying. Since it appeared once twenty years ago, Mrs. Xara should still remember it...” replied Fynn with a nod before looking at Xara.

Hearing that, she walked over to have a look before saying, “...Indeed I do. Peter’s shown it to me before... Receiving it at the time felt especially weird... I honestly thought that my plan to elope with Peter had been exposed, and that the pendant was a warning of sorts. In the end, however, we didn’t think too much about it... To my shock, it was the very next day when Peter went missing!”

“Yes... The second young master’s disappearance truly caused an immense uproar within the Crawford family... Since we assumed that the Fendersons had been the ones who had kidnapped the second master, the master was extremely furious. It was then when the Crawford family began resenting the

Fendersons again... While that was the master's reaction at the time, in truth, he's been investigating that incident for well over a decade now. After all, given the circumstances at the time, the master knew for a fact that the Fendersons wouldn't have had the means to secretly kill the second master. But who else would've targeted the second young master if not the Fendersons?"

"In the end, after investigating for so long, there was a point where the master was even close to declaring that the Fendersons weren't the actual culprits in that case. However, he knew that he couldn't just say that without any solid proof. It was then when he remembered about the pendant with the strange symbol on it that Peter had received before his disappearance. While he wanted to look for Mrs. Xara in person to question her about it, he couldn't just do something like that, given that he already had such a massive misunderstanding with the Fenderson family. That was why he told you to look for her instead!" explained Fynn as he frowned.

"To think that the pendant that had created such a huge mess would reappear again after twenty years!"

"Who exactly is responsible for all this...? They've already taken Peter and now they've taken Mila as well! What on earth do they even want?" said Xara, her eyes beginning to water.

"...I suggest that we just wait for the master's final decision. In the meantime, don't you think it's about time we returned to Northbay, Mr. Crawford?" added Fynn.

"You can leave first. Inform me if there's any news regarding the case. I'm staying here!" said Gerald. After all, if he left with them now, he knew that he'd never be able to forgive himself.

Hearing that, both Fynn and Xara then left.

Gerald himself remained there, joining the search party every day in hopes to find traces of the sunken ship.

Chapter 798

While Gerald worked tirelessly day in and day out, his efforts proved to be fruitless, even as the tenth day passed by. He had exhausted every tactic he could think of, yet not even a hint of the ocean liner's whereabouts could be found.

“Where exactly are you, Mila... I... I refuse to believe that you’ve left me just like that!” said Gerald as he pulled his hair in desperation.

By this point, he was constantly having flashbacks of the moments he had spent with Mila. He now knew more than ever that Mila had made great efforts just to be with him.

On the eleventh morning, Gerald sat on the beach in a daze, unsure of what else he could even do to look for the ship.

As he continued racking his brains, his phone began to ring. It was a call from Jessica.

“Good morning, brother!”

Hearing her voice, Gerald couldn’t help but smile faintly as he replied, “Good morning, sister. Have you returned to Northbay safely? How are things going?”

Two days ago, Jessica had returned to Hong Kong to accompany Gerald after learning of Mila’s disappearance. During that time, Jessica had taken the opportunity to tell Gerald about the things which had happened to Mila when she was in Hong Kong.

However, since something was happening within the family, Jessica had to return to Northbay in a hurry.

“I’m fine, though let’s not talk about me for the moment. I’m sure that you’re aware that our family is hosting a family assembly tomorrow... Since you haven’t returned in twenty-two years, dad’s asking for you to attend the assembly this time around. Aside from that, he also wants to talk to you about something!” replied Jessica.

Hearing that, Gerald tossed a stone toward the ocean before nodding.

“...Very well. I’ll be returning tomorrow then!”

The very next day, Gerald arrived on a large island in Northbay belonging to the Crawfords. On it, was a building so magnificent and massive that it looked almost like a castle.

It was the day of the Crawford family's family assembly, and the day where Crawfords from all walks of life would return to the island to attend the meeting.

Being a large family with several branches, at least a few thousand people were expected to attend the meeting. Not that that was a problem since the island could easily house tens of thousands of guests.

As Fynn led Gerald around, Gerald couldn't help but feel slightly anxious. After all, this was Gerald's first time returning 'home'. What more, this new place was much grander and larger, even when compared to his sister's island!

Since this was the first time the Crawford family's young master had returned, Fynn wanted to report Gerald's arrival to his parents immediately. However, they seemed to be busy exchanging pleasantries with the other family members.

It wasn't surprising for Gerald to see his father that busy since he was, after all, the master. What more, there were already a lot of people there at that time.

Because of that, Gerald replied, "There's no real rush to report about my arrival. I'll just wait till my parents are done greeting the guests. You go on ahead and deal with what you have to, Fynn. I'll just go look for my sister in the meantime!"

Hearing that, Fynn nodded before running off to deal with other things.

After giving his sister a call, she told him to wait for her there, stating that she would rush over as soon as she could.

Now momentarily bored, Gerald simply sat at the side and looked out at the sea as he slowly entered a daze again.

“Say Bethany, didn’t you say you were looking for a person to help pick up tennis balls? There’s a silly looking man over there who’s been sitting idly for a while! Why don’t we ask him to do it?” said a girl who looked to be around eighteen of age.

The girl was part of a group with other similarly aged girls and also some older ones. All of them sported tennis-wear, and a few of them were still playing in pairs as the girl asked her question.

Since it was usually only the family elders who would step up during such occasions, juniors like them would take the opportunity to have fun and eat to their hearts’ content.

“Sure, why not? Call him over!” replied Bethany as she swung her racket over her shoulder before pointing at Gerald who hadn’t broken from his daze.

Chapter 799

“Hey, you!” called out Bethany in a commanding voice.

Breaking from his daze, Gerald then looked at the girl who had shouted at him before asking, “What do you want?”

The girl who was pointing at him looked to be in her late teens, and while she looked rather bizarre, she was also somewhat beautiful.

“Are you all alone?” asked another girl as she placed a hand on her waist. It was the girl who had told Bethany about Gerald earlier.

“I suppose you could say that!” replied Gerald as he nodded.

“That’s rather pitiful to hear! How about this, Bethany wants to invite you over to pick tennis balls for us! At least you won’t be alone if you do that for us!” added the girl.

Gerald remembered his sister telling him that since the Crawford family was so immensely huge with so many complicated branches, it was normal for those within the family to not know who was who among the younger generation.

“If something’s weighing your mind, it’ll only get worse if you continue dwelling on it alone! By picking our tennis balls, you’ll be able to forget all your worries!” shouted another girl.

While Gerald’s first response was to smile bitterly, he couldn’t deny that what they had said made some sense. After all, as long as he could distract himself enough, he wouldn’t need to dwell on the incident.

“Fine, I’ll do it!” replied Gerald.

“Haha! He’s actually going to do it! Here he comes!” said the girls smugly.

“Great to hear. Now let’s continue our game, sisters! We can go all out now that someone is willing to pick our tennis balls for us!” said Bethany rather excitedly.

However, before they could even resume playing, a woman walked up to them. Seeing the woman, all the girls immediately turned to look at her.

The beautiful and graceful woman looked to be around twenty-six years old, and she seemed to have a rather good disposition.

While the girls playing tennis earlier were all beautiful, none of them were even close in terms of beauty when compared with the new woman. In fact, the woman’s beauty rivaled even that of many celebrities.

Anyone who saw her felt somewhat obligated to lower their heads in respect.

“You’re here, Lyra!” greeted Bethany and a few others upon seeing her.

“I am indeed. Still, what time is it now I wonder... Why are all of you still playing here? The assembly is going to commence soon! Why don’t you bring Niki and the others along with you?” said Lyra in a gentle tone.

“Alright!” replied Bethany. She then hit one final tennis ball to the side before leaving with the rest.

Almost by reflex, Gerald began walking over to pick the tennis ball up. In his daze, he failed to realize that the ball had landed in an area surrounded by prickly grass. By the time he finally noticed, he was staggering so much to leave the area then he ended up falling.

His clothes, arms, and even his face was filled with tiny scratch marks from the grass.

“Look there! That guy from earlier fell down!” said Nikki as she pointed at Gerald.

“Just leave him be. After all, he was slow to react when we called him over to pick the tennis balls for us! He deserves it! Now let’s go!” said Bethany as she smiled at Lyra before heading on.

Gerald himself sat on the grass, holding the tennis ball in his hand as he smiled bitterly. When he touched his face, it stung slightly.

He simply couldn’t catch a break. Gerald truly was down on his luck ever since Mila’s disappearance.

As people walked by, many of them mocked Gerald for being in such a pathetic state. Gerald, however, didn’t mind it. As long as he could feel slightly better after being mocked, so be it.

“Your cheeks are all scratched up... It’s best if you wipe the grass off quickly,” said a feminine voice as a tissue was handed over to him.

Looking to his side, Gerald saw Lyra squatting right next to him as she prompted him to take the tissue.

“...Thank you!” replied Gerald as he immediately lowered his gaze in embarrassment after their eyes met. After all, she looked truly beautiful.

“My word, even your arm is bleeding!” said Lyra as she took another tissue out and began gently wiping the blood off his arm.

“Aren’t you the careless one... Which family do you belong to? You seem to be all alone here. Don’t you have any siblings...?”

Chapter 800

Lyra asked that question as she gently helped Gerald wipe the prickly grass off his face.

“I... I’m, um... Not sure which family I belong to!” replied Gerald.

Hearing that, Lyra simply laughed before saying, “I’ll call some doctors over later and tell them to treat your wounds... Wouldn’t want you to get an infection now, would we?”

“No, it’s fine...”

For some unknown reason, Lyra simply felt the urge to pamper and take good care of Gerald from the moment she had met him. It was truly an odd feeling.

“The assembly will begin soon, young lady... It’s best that you head there immediately,” said a person who seemed to be Lyra’s maid as she walked over.

“Very well,” said Lyra as she nodded to Gerald before leaving with her maid.

“Young lady? So she’s someone who’s been married into the Crawford family!” muttered Gerald to himself as he finished wiping his face clean.

In his mind, he was thinking what a blessing it must be for the person who had married such a gentle and attractive wife.

At that moment, Gerald’s phone began ringing.

“Brother? Where are you? I can’t find you anywhere!”

“Sorry, sorry! I was picking up tennis balls for others just now!” replied Gerald with a bitter laugh.

“D*mn it, why are you still helping others do things like this? Anyway, the assembly is going to begin soon and dad’s even asked me whether you’ve arrived. We’re in the main hall now! You should’ve just told the servants to lead you here immediately when you arrived!” said his sister as she shook her head.

“Got it! I’m heading there now!” said Gerald as he got up.

His parents and sister were the main cast of the day and he was aware of how busy they were. Because of that, he didn’t want to create unnecessary trouble for them if he could help it.

As he walked toward the venue, he saw that Niki and the other girls weren’t too far off. Soon enough, he caught up with them and simply followed behind.

“Hey, Bethany. That silly guy is following us!” said Niki as she turned to look around.

“Has he lost his way? Maybe it’s the first time he’s attending a family assembly!” replied Bethany as she stopped walking and turned around.

“Could you perhaps be lost?” asked Bethany.

In response, Gerald simply nodded.

“See? I was right! You can come along with us if you want, but you’ll only get to ride in the last car with my servants! How about it?” suggested Bethany.

Bethany was a distinguished young lady who was used to meeting handsome and extremely capable, rich heirs, both in the country and also abroad.

Since she could tell that Gerald was the sort of honest and well-behaved man who didn’t have much experience in life, she didn’t really care for his wellbeing.

“No problem!” replied Gerald as he nodded, not really minding it himself.

He then got into a car which was rather stuffy since there were quite a few servants inside.

Once they arrived, Gerald made his way into the Crawford family's main hall, which was a spacious outdoor hall.

In such an assembly, the participants sat in groups though where they had to sit wasn't predetermined. Only the main members of the family had designated seats atop a high platform in the middle of the hall.

As Bethany and the others found seats in a corner, Gerald himself casually took a seat close to them before fishing his phone out of his pocket.

Meanwhile, a middle-aged couple began walking toward the main dining table reserved for the master. A loud round of applause could be heard as the couple made their way to the table.

Naturally, the couple was none other than Gerald's parents! Behind them, two women followed, with one of them being Jessica.

When the other woman saw Lyra, she immediately held on to her hands before saying, "Lyra! Come sit beside me!"

"Alright, mom!" replied Lyra with a nod

"You've truly been receiving the short end of the stick throughout your time being in the Crawford family... Not only did you have to learn everything on your own, you even had to handle all his financial issues! If we could, we would've definitely let you meet each other much earlier... But I'm sure you're aware that we couldn't reveal his identity before this! Still, to think that he isn't even here yet!" said the woman in an apologetic tone.

"Please don't say that, mom... It's already been a blessing for me to have been able to grow up in the Crawford family from a young age."

Hearing that, the woman smiled before nodding. She then turned to look at Jessica before saying, “Go find where your brother is, Jessica!”

Chapter 801

“My word! Since when has the Crawford family assembly become this lax? Can literally anybody participate and sit wherever they like? Just look at how pathetic this awkward-looking person is!”

Gerald had just finished sending a message to his sister when he heard a woman’s voice mocking him. When he turned to look at the woman beside him who had heavy makeup on, she simply rolled her eyes at him.

“Humph! And here I thought that I’d only be able to meet distinguished people after getting married into the famous Crawford family! Never would I have imagined to have to sit at a table here with such a person!” complained the woman loudly, just so Gerald could hear her.

The woman looked down on Gerald so much that she seemed to be embarrassed just having to sit next to him.

“That’s quite enough! Watch your mouth. While everyone in the family is wealthy, some people are still less knowledgeable and insightful than others! Besides, some of us here may have attitudes of an upstart, so just ignore them!” explained her husband.

It was clear that the rude woman’s husband was also feeling slightly embarrassed having to share a table with Gerald. Due to the couple’s words, a few others who were sitting at the table began insinuating Gerald as well.

Bethany herself—who was also sitting beside Gerald—frowned before saying, “You’re just a lowly actress! What right do you have to criticize those from the Crawford family? Do you lack self-awareness or something?”

“Come again? Who could you possibly be referring to when you said, ‘lowly’?” replied the woman coldly when she heard what Bethany had said.

“Oh, stop with the acting. We all know who she was referring to,” said Niki as she too smiled coldly while looking at the woman.

To Gerald, it seemed like both parties held grudges against each other.

“That’s enough, there’s no need to argue with them!” dissuaded her husband.

“Humph! Just look at you! You hardly have any status among the other Crawford family members! These two are just mere girls! Remember the last time we went abroad? While both of them were received in the most distinguished manner possible, we were only seen as important guests! We were just one level below them! As if that wasn’t enough, here they are condemning me now! Yet you don’t even dare to speak up against them!” replied his wife in dissatisfaction.

Hearing that, her husband simply sighed.

“It’s not like I can help it. It’s simply true that their family is ranked higher than mine! Besides, the Crawford family has lots of rules and regulations! The family branches are separated according to our levels, which also represent our seniority! To put simply, imagine a situation where a young master meets his grandfather. Naturally, the young master has to bow when he greets him!” explained the man in resignation.

“Speaking of young masters, do you know the young master of the Crawford family? You need to contact him more since he’s the Crawford family’s heir!” asked the woman.

At that, the man could only sigh again before replying, “The young master’s only returning to the family today... In fact, this family assembly was most probably held specifically for him. How could I possibly know who he is?”

“Humph! Useless! How truly useless!” said the arrogant woman embarrassedly.

Since she had seen Gerald follow Bethany in, the woman was sure that Bethany had allowed such a person to sit at her table just to humiliate her. The more she thought about it, the angrier she became!

“Humph! Change seats with me! I don’t want to continue sitting beside a person who wears clothes that don’t even cost a thousand dollars! Such a humiliating person can only be from one of the family’s outer branches! How disgusting!” said the woman as she glared at Gerald.

Upon standing up and taking a step forward, however, the woman suddenly began screaming!

The truth was, while she was making all sorts of gestures while arguing with Bethany earlier, the hem of her long dress got closer and closer to Gerald's foot. As a result, Gerald ended up stepping on a small part of her dress without even noticing it.

While it definitely wasn't something to shout about, the woman seemed extremely furious.

"You b*stard! You did that on purpose!" roared the woman as she looked at Gerald.

"It wasn't on purpose!" replied Gerald in bitter resignation.

"F*ck you! It was Bethany who told you to sit here, right? After mocking you like that, why else would you continue staying here? Just get lost already!" shouted the woman angrily as she pushed him.

As a result, the cup of tea in front of Gerald splashed all over him!

"How audacious can you be, Xandra?! How dare you be this rude to someone from the Crawford family!"

Chapter 802

The one who had immediately stood up and shouted at the madwoman was Bethany.

"So what if I'm rude? What are you going to do about it?" retorted Xandra, not wanting to be outdone.

The two seemed to have forgotten where they were as they continued arguing with each other. This was made apparent since everyone else had already gone silent for some time.

"Brother!" shouted a crisp and clear voice which silenced the two arguing women.

After all, they knew who the voice belonged to. Both of them then turned to look at Jessica who was hurriedly walking toward them.

“Sister!” replied Gerald as he tried wiping the tea stains off his body.

“...Sister?”

Everyone there was immediately stunned. He called Jessica his sister? Was he really...

“Who did this? Who dared to humiliate the young master of the Crawford family? That person must have a death wish!” scolded Jessica in a frigid tone which sent chills down the spines of the other Crawford family members.

Xandra and Bethany themselves had their jaws wide open. Both of them simply couldn’t believe their ears.

‘...What? He’s... the young master of the Crawford family?’

“I... Young lady! I-I’m so sorry! I didn’t know!” said Xandra as she began vigorously shaking her head.

“So it was you! Get out of my sight!” growled Jessica coldly.

“I-I’ll leave right away!”

Knowing how much trouble she had gotten herself into, Xandra knew better than to linger around any longer.

As she turned around to leave, Jessica added, “Hold it. You’re to roll all the way to the doorstep from where you stand. Don’t make me repeat myself!”

Xandra completely understood Jessica's order and metaphor. She was to leave the Crawford family for good, and she would never be allowed in again.

Though she was in deep regret, she was so panicked that she immediately obeyed, rolling on the floor in front of everyone before finally leaving.

"Now come on, Gerald. Let's head up there!" said Jessica with a smile once she saw that Xandra was no longer there.

Bethany and many others still had their mouths covered. None of them even dared to say a word.

Since Gerald seemed to be quite an honest man at first glance, Bethany hadn't thought twice about bullying him. To think that she had ordered such a terrifyingly powerful person to pick up tennis balls for her!

"He's... He's Gerald Crawford! The young master of the Crawford family!"

As Gerald headed toward the elevated platform, several people were already discussing it while simultaneously clapping loudly as he walked on.

Mr. Crawford had finally returned to the family.

Upon seeing him, both Dylan and his wife stood up with smiles on their faces. Nothing made them happier than meeting their son.

"Dad! Mom!" shouted Gerald whose eyes were already watery as he ran toward them. After all, he hadn't met them for almost an entire year.

"You're finally back, son! Our family is finally reunited again!" said Dylan as he patted Gerald's shoulders firmly.

“Speaking of which, Gerald, while we were educating and raising you in poverty back then, we failed to introduce you to an equally as important person!” said Yulia Yaleman—Gerald’s mother—as she turned to look at the woman beside her whose face was already red.

The blushing woman in question then stood up before softly saying, “We’ve already met each other earlier, mom...”

The woman in question was Lyra!

“Mom?” replied Gerald, stunned when he heard what Lyra called his mother.

Chapter 803

“This is Lyra, Gerald! Though we’ve never mentioned her to you before, she’s the one who’s been helping you handle your financial issues all these years. We’ve raised her since she was young!” said Yulia who didn’t seem to have heard what Lyra had said earlier.

Though her mother wasn’t saying it directly, the underlying message she was implying was clear as day to Gerald. After all, not only had Gerald already heard others referring to Lyra as the young lady, it was also obvious based on the current expressions on his parents’ faces.

“Mom, we’ve already met earlier!” said Lyra a little louder this time as she looked at Gerald with a faint smile.

“Oh, you have? Well all the better then! Haha! Alright, no more beating around the bush! Lyra is your fiancée, Gerald!” said Dylan who was looking very happy.

In response, however, Yulia coughed before tugging gently on Dylan’s sleeve. After all, they were aware that their son had a girlfriend. Not only that, she was now missing! It simply felt too early to be talking about engagements.

Gerald himself was astonished beyond words. He hadn’t expected the gentle and elegant Lyra to be his fiancée. No wonder the others were addressing her as the young lady!

This turn of events was somewhat similar to a television series he had watched in the past. Just like the girl in the show, Lyra had been adopted by the family just to end up becoming his parents' future daughter-in-law.

The entire situation was simply bizarre to him. It seemed that his family had put in a lot of effort just to raise and educate Lyra too.

"Do take a seat, Gerald!" said Lyra at that moment, still blushing as she took out more tissues to help Gerald wipe the tea stains off his body.

"You don't have to trouble yourself, Lyra, I'll do it myself..." said Gerald as he took the tissues from her hand. He was honestly still weirded out by the entire turn of events.

After all, he didn't have any feelings for her. What more, she was at least four years older than him! While it was true that her beauty was near unparalleled, Gerald simply couldn't accept something like this that easily, and the feeling persisted throughout the family assembly.

As the assembly went on, Gerald's head was filled with thoughts. About how Lyra had been staying here for a long time now, and also about the fact that it was his mother who had arranged for her to stay here in the first place.

Just a few days ago, his sister had told him what had happened to Mila in Hong Kong. She had even told him that it was going to be difficult for them to be together in the end.

Not understanding what she meant, he had tried contacting his parents back then to no avail. Now, however, he understood everything. As it turned out, his parents had already found him a wife years ago!

As Gerald headed to his room, he was surprised to see Lyra following behind him. His shock didn't stop there, however. Upon entering, she followed him as well and she began making the bed!

"I'll... be sleeping in another room tonight, Lyra... Since you're probably already used to sleeping in this room, you can continue sleeping here! I'm sure you're tired after today's family assembly, so make sure to get a good rest!"

Gerald was sure that if he continued facing Lyra, things were only going to become more awkward.

“It’s alright, Gerald... I understand how difficult it must be for you to just accept our marriage out of the blue. I’m well aware of what you’re currently facing as well. I’ll help you look for her!” said Lyra.

Gerald hadn’t expected her to say something like that at all. However, he simply nodded before replying, “Thank you, Lyra!”

With that said, he remained in the room for a little while longer before finally leaving.

Mila’s recent disappearance had caused Gerald to be filled with deep remorse. There was no way in hell that he was going to be in the mood to face another woman. He simply couldn’t rest easy until Mila was found.

And what about Lyra herself? While it was true that the Crawfords had raised her, she should have the right to choose who she truly wants to marry! Why should she have to marry a man much younger than her? They didn’t even have any feelings for each other!

That night, Gerald found a random guest room to sleep in.

When he woke up early the next morning, he saw three differently colored suits hanging on the head of the bed, and a pair of leather shoes on the side.

It was the first day after their family reunion and Gerald knew he didn’t need to keep a low profile anymore.

Chapter 804

While he had been excited to finally be able to dress in attire suited for rich heirs, he was exhausted and in a bad mood yesterday. Because of that, he had forgotten to tell the servants to get something ready for him before he went to bed.

Unexpectedly, somebody had already done that without even receiving his orders!

Heading to the bathroom in his pajamas, Gerald saw that all the usual items for personal hygiene had already been prepared for him as well.

Thinking back, this was his home and family after all. The servants needed to be at least this attentive.

However, the thought of servants entering and leaving his room as he slept—to prepare such things for him—still made Gerald feel slightly uneasy.

After all, what would happen if any of the maids entered while he was sleeping naked? The thought of it alone sent chills running down his spine.

At that moment, Gerald heard three distinct knocks on his door.

“Who is it?” asked Gerald.

“I’m a maid, young master. I go by Helena. May I know what you wish to wear today? I’ll prepare it for you as you get ready!”

Hearing that, Gerald headed to the door and opened it. Just as Helena had said, she was a maid standing attentively right outside his door.

“Prepare? The ones hanging on the head of my bed already look fine to me. Weren’t you the one who placed those there?” asked Gerald rather doubtfully.

In response, Helena shook her head before saying, “We’re prohibited from entering your room without your permission, young master. I’m guessing that it was the young lady who prepared them for you! She’s the only one who’s allowed to enter any room you’re in. What more, when I passed through the corridor at around five today, I noticed that the light in your room was on!”

“...I see. So it was Lyra...”

Understanding what had happened now, he allowed Helena to resume her work.

Once she was gone, Gerald let out a mental sigh as he wondered whether he should find some time to explain everything clearly to Lyra. After all, both of them were simply not meant to be.

Being older than he was, Gerald was adamant that Lyra should be free to pursue her own happiness. She didn't need to get married to him just to repay the kindness that the Crawford family had bestowed upon her.

With his decision absolute, Gerald then changed into one of the suits. However, he found it quite awkward that he still didn't know how to wear a tie properly. Even after a few tries, it still appeared lopsided.

"Let me help you with that, Gerald!" said Lyra as she smiled at him. Apparently, he had been so engrossed with getting his tie right that he hadn't even noticed that she had been standing at the door for some time!

Looking at the mirror and seeing how lopsided the tie still was, Gerald simply gave it and allowed her to lend him a hand.

Receiving his approval, Lyra continued smiling as she walked over to him. With her help, it didn't take long before his collars were smooth and his tie looked much more proper compared to earlier.

"Dad's throwing a feast for you and Queta later. Since it'll be our first reunion meal together, let's head there early!"

The main residence of the Crawford family was a large villa within a scenic neighborhood. Everyone living there owned a similarly large villa.

"I'm fine with that. While we're at it, do take me to my father. I've been told he has something to inform me!" replied Gerald.

With that, Lyra led Gerald to his father. Once they got there, his mother immediately ushered Lyra to come to the side to have a chat with her. It was clear how much she adored Lyra.

Gerald himself entered the study room with his father. Once they were inside, Dylan looked at his son before getting straight to the point.

“Regarding Mila... Please don’t be sad, Gerald. This entire incident... It isn’t as simple as you think it is...”

“What do you mean by that?”

Taking in a deep breath, Dylan then explained, “I saw the symbol that Mila received before her disappearance, Gerald. It’s the very same symbol that your uncle received that year before he disappeared as well. While both incidents are similar, more clues—aside from the fact that the victims disappear after receiving the pendant with the symbol—have been hard to come by.”

“However, after investigating it for so many years, I think I’ve finally found a few relevant clues! Gerald, both Mila and your uncle may still be alive!” said Dylan in a hushed voice.

“Is... Is that really true, dad?” replied Gerald as his eyes lit up.

Chapter 805

“I’ve called you over today mainly to discuss the incident. You’re already a grown man so you should be aware of the secrets that our family has gained!” said Dylan as he gently patted his son’s shoulder.

“See, this symbol behaves somewhat like a curse... People call it the symbol of the Sun League. Whenever anyone personally receives the symbol, they go missing within three days! To think that Mila’s currently facing what your uncle had gone through twenty years ago!” explained his father.

“According to what Fynn had said, the curse resurfaces every twenty years, and whenever it does, people go missing. He also said that nobody who’s received the curse has managed to escape it!” replied Gerald.

Shaking his head, Dylan then said, “Fynn is only half correct there. While it’s true that the majority who receive the symbol go missing, I’ve been able to locate someone who’s managed to return safely!”

Hearing that, Gerald's eyes lit up.

"After interviewing him, the person stated that he had been saved by someone. Aside from that, I also gained some vital clues to help crack the code. Based on everything I currently know about the curse, it's highly likely that your uncle and Mila have been captured!"

"Captured? By who? Who on earth could be that powerful?" asked Gerald, a tinge of hope in his voice.

"I'm afraid I don't know who the mastermind is either. With so little clues to go with in the first place, it saddens me to say that we probably won't be able to investigate any further into this with the power of the Crawford family alone."

Nodding, Gerald then said, "I understand, dad. How about looking for the person who made it back alive again to see if we get any new leads?"

"While he was alive for fifteen years after safely returning, he died some six years ago. If we truly want capable helpers now, then we'll need to look for the family who saved him back then," replied Dylan as he shook his head while smiling bitterly.

"As long as they're willing to lend a hand, our strength in the case will easily have doubled! Son, let me ask you. Which of the families do you think is the most powerful now?" asked Dylan as he looked at Gerald.

"Well, while the Federsons were once very prosperous and powerful, Fynn told me that our family currently holds the most power."

"While that's true in terms of economic power, when it comes to brute strength, a few families are stronger than ours... Take, for example, the Moldell family from Yanken!"

"The Moldells from Yanken?"

Though Gerald had heard about the Longs and Quarringtons from Yanken, never had he heard about the Moldells.

While he was astonished to know that there was another powerful family living there, he quickly realized how little he actually knew. This conversation was definitely helping him expand his horizons.

“Indeed. In fact, the person I mentioned was saved by the Moldells. See, their bloodline is blessed with strength, quite literally. Those from the Moldell family are naturally physically stronger than the average human. It’s no wonder that most of them are active in the military. There’s also a highly mysterious group of people in Weston who call themselves the Dragon Squad. Regardless of how rich a family is, none of their guards will ever come close to comparing to those within that group!”

“That isn’t an exaggeration either. Those within the Dragon Squad can kill effortlessly and in full secrecy if they wanted to. Not even our extremely tight security system could ever dream of stopping them if they were to target us! Throughout the years, our family has recruited several experts and masters to protect ourselves from that family, just in case they ever decide to assassinate any of us. However, the gap between us is simply growing larger by the year!”

Hearing all that, Gerald was left stupefied. If his father hadn’t told all that to him in person, Gerald wouldn’t have believed that such people even existed!

Soon enough, however, Gerald realized that it wasn’t that much of a surprise. After all, he had met people like the Drake & Tyson duo and Finnley as well! The way these people operated was simply incomprehensible to the average person.

“...Well then how about Drake and Tyson? Are they comparable to those in the Moldell family?” asked Gerald.

Chapter 806

“Those two? Humph! It wouldn’t be a stretch to say that twelve-year-olds from that family could single-handedly beat them to a pulp!”

Hearing that, Gerald felt himself gulp.

He then wondered how Finnley would fare against that family. However, he quickly shook the thought away. After all, his focus shouldn't be on making comparisons now.

Rather, he knew that he had to find a way to get the Moldell family's help. After all, their family would be an incredibly strong ally to have.

"The Moldells live in seclusion most of the time. Even I wouldn't contact them if it wasn't our last resort. However, your uncle held on to a very important secret relating to the Crawford family's bloodline. If the secret had gotten out from the time he went missing, our family would've already been ruined by the time your generation came to be! Now that I know that there's a chance that he's still alive, I'm left with no other option but to seek the Moldell family's help for fear that the secret may one day leak out!"

It was clear that Dylan wasn't only looking for his uncle because he was family. The other reason was to protect the secrets of the Crawford family's bloodline.

"The secret of our bloodline?" asked Gerald.

"Yes I heard about it from your grandpa sometime around then, but let's not talk about that for the time being. The priority now is to get help from the Moldells!"

"Do you want me to go there, dad?" asked Gerald.

"If going there and talking to them was all that needed to be done, I would've already asked for their help a long time ago. I told you, the Moldells live in seclusion. They never interfere with things that happen outside their family. However, there is a person who could potentially help us get in."

"Who is it?"

"Your grandmother from your mother's side."

"Grandma?" replied Gerald, stunned.

Even from a young age, Gerald knew that his parents were sensitive when discussing topics regarding his grandparents, be it from his father's or mother's side.

He remembered the time when he had asked his parents about his grandparents at the age of seven. Gerald simply wanted to know why he didn't have any while others did. As a result, his mother—who had always been gentle with him—slapped him hard before telling him not to ask any more questions about them.

That was a particularly traumatic event for him and also his sister. After that, both of them never asked about their grandparents again.

“That's right. She's the leader of the Yalman family from Yanken. In the past, your grandma would occasionally contact the Moldells. If she's willing to lend a hand this time, then she'll most likely be able to persuade the Moldell family to help us!”

“While it's inconvenient for me and your mother to meet her, you're different. I believe that our grudges won't be reflected upon you, so it's all up to you whether you'll be able to persuade her or not!” explained Dylan as he frowned slightly.

After saying that, he called Yulia in. Upon realizing that Gerald and her husband were talking about her mother, Yulia's expression instantly turned slightly gloomy.

Gerald himself took in a deep breath before asking his mother more about his grandparents. After all, Fynn had told Gerald that even his grandfather was still alive. What had happened to him?

What exactly took place that year?

Unlike the first time he had asked many years ago, his mother didn't slap him. Instead, she became teary-eyed as she began talking about the incidents that had happened that year.

“It's... It's all because of those god d*mned rules and regulations of the Yalman family!” wailed her mother.

She then explained that back then, Dylan was still at the final stage of his poverty training. Similar to Gerald some time ago, his father was already rich by then, though he couldn't just casually expose his identity. It was around then when he got to know the young lady of the Yalaman family. In other words, his mother...

Chapter 807

At the time, Yulia had felt that Dylan was quite mysterious. After all, while the shabbily dressed boy—who looked quite weak back then—never fought back whenever he was bullied or scolded, he was always capable of doing things well beyond everyone's expectations.

While in the beginning, Yulia cared for him mostly out of pity, eventually, both of them fell in love with each other, not unlike how Gerald and Mila's relationship began.

However, the Yalaman family was the leader of four large families in Yanken at the time.

Even though her husband had passed on, Gerald's grandmother, Lady Yalaman, was able to make the Yalaman family even stronger than before. It was because she was the kind of person who was particularly strict when it came to managing the family.

Despite that, even she had a shortcoming, which was what Yulia hated about her mother the most.

Lady Yalaman was a person who strongly valued the opinions of men, yet considered females, in general, to be of lesser importance.

Within the Yalaman family, females would never be given important positions, no matter how hard they worked. Only the males in that family would be given the most advantageous properties to handle.

In a way, she was very traditional-minded, and it wasn't uncommon for a person with such views to value men over women.

Back then, the Yalamans had agreed with their business partner—without Yulia's consent—that Yulia would marry their son in exchange for starting a business partnership. The decision was made simply because their business partner's son was the richest heir around at the time.

Since Dylan was still keeping a low profile back then, nobody knew that the wealthiest person was actually from the Crawford family.

In retaliation, Yulia ran away from the wedding and eloped with Gerald's father.

However, that incident alone wasn't the reason why both the Yalemans and the Crawfords ended up resenting each other so much.

Rather, it was because Yulia's escape had been facilitated by her Fifth brother who had treated her well from her childhood days. As his final brotherly act, he took the blame for the entire incident.

Not only was he severely punished by Lady Yalaman, he was also disowned!

Eventually, the Yalemans started bearing grudges against their business partner as well.

A few days after the incident happened, Dylan's poverty training finally ended. Immediately after that, he had wanted to meet up with the Yalemans to seek justice for the Fifth brother.

However, Dylan was far too late. During the few days, the Fifth brother had been brutally assaulted. By the time Gerald's parents found out, he had already been left bedridden in a vegetative state.

The one who caused so much pain to him was the Yalaman's business partner. To them, he was the one who had humiliated their family.

The moment she found out, Lady Yalaman immediately blamed Yulia for all that had happened. She even publicly announced to the media that she would disown her!

Yulia herself felt that her mother was being way too cruel. After all, she was the one who had kicked Fifth brother out of the family without a second thought!

All that led to the grudges Yulia and her mother held against each other for all these years. It was the reason why Gerald's parents never paid the Yalemans a visit.

However, his parents were responsible for the disappearance of the Yalaman's business partner. It was their revenge after what they had done to Fifth brother.

It was why there were only three large families in Yanken now instead of four.

"What happened after that?" asked Gerald, realizing now that his parents had gone through so much more than he had at his age.

"Well, after that, my and your father secretly took care of your uncle. However, it was around ten years ago when your grandma took your uncle back to the Yalaman family!" replied Yulia between sobs.

"So you see, son, you're the only one who can talk to her now after all that has happened. Only your grandma will be able to persuade the Moldells, and if you succeed, your action will be seen as a great contribution to the Crawford family..." said Dylan.

"I understand!"

"Speaking of which, since you're already heading to Yanken, you might as well meet up with your cousin, Bea, your fifth uncle's daughter. Between us, I've secretly been supporting her all these years but regardless, with her help, things should go smoother for you. While your grandma is quite the stubborn woman, I believe that she won't treat you too cruelly. I need to warn you, however. No matter how terribly your grandma's treated me in the past, you're prohibited from being disrespectful to her!"

Hearing that, Gerald realized how much his mother must miss her. No matter how much they hated each other, in the end, they were still family.

"Loud and clear!"

Chapter 808

At that moment, Lyra entered the room before saying, "Queta and aunt are here..."

Having said that, Lyra then looked at Gerald before heading downstairs.

“I’ve been watching over Lyra’s growth, Gerald. She’s a very nice woman so you’ll have to treat her better... We’ll talk more about this when there’s a more suitable time in the future,” said his mother.

“I know, mom. But I’d rather focus on the mission at hand first!” replied Gerald. He knew what she was getting at, so he simply interrupted her before she could continue.

“Indeed. Such things can wait for later. The mission is definitely more important for now... Also, Gerald, be sure to behave like you own the place once you get to Yanken, Weston. After all, all of our family’s properties in Weston will be under your management and care from now on, including your sister’s! I’ve already informed Fynn about it so you don’t have to worry about the details.”

Three days later near the exit gates of Yanken Airport, two women—one middle-aged and the other much younger—could be seen leaning against the front of a black Passat. Naturally, both of them attracted quite a bit of attention.

The older woman wore a suit and her skin still seemed to be in excellent condition.

As for the younger one, she was a budding beauty who seemed like she had just graduated from university.

“What time is it now? Why hasn’t he arrived yet? The heat is annoying me! I’m already busy enough, why do we still have to wait for some pathetic relative here?” grumbled the middle-aged woman impatiently as she looked at her wristwatch.

“Have a bit of patience, mom... It’s the first time my cousin’s coming over! Besides, isn’t it normal for flights to be delayed?” replied her daughter.

The younger girl had been delighted ever since she had received a call from her aunt earlier, stating that her cousin was coming over.

After all, while she knew both her aunt and uncle did some kind of labor work abroad, she was also well aware that they had secretly been supporting her throughout her life. This included hiring the best tutor for her, giving her a chance to study in the best school, and many more.

While she had always wanted to visit them, she wasn't allowed to due to some unknown reasons.

"Humph! You know, he could've just driven here! Why a plane? How bad could a drive be! Are all the Yalemans like this? Both your dad and his disappointing sister sure behave the same way!" sneered the middle-aged woman coldly.

"Mom, my aunt's constantly supported and compensated our family even after all these years. I'm sure you're well aware of that, so why would you even say such a thing?"

"Humph! If she hadn't eloped with that loser back then, your dad wouldn't have ended up in his current state in the first place! Our status within the Yalaman family wouldn't be in tatters either if only your aunt hadn't done that! You need to realize that you're a young lady of the Yalaman family. You should have the same privileges as the other seductive and cheap-looking female cousins of yours! All of them have teams of cars following them wherever they go! Meanwhile, we're stuck with only a Passat!"

"You should also know that you're the only one who does things like this! Your grandma's already given a clear warning that if anyone contacts that woman, the punishment that awaits them won't be as easy as only being kicked out of the Yalaman family. Know that because of your crazy actions, I could very well lose my job! How frustrating!"

Seeing how impatient her mother already looked, the girl remained silent. Instead, she chose to eagerly look toward the exit gate.

She honestly didn't know what he looked like. However, since her aunt was so pretty, she was certain that her cousin would be handsome.

"Could you perhaps be Bea Yalaman?" asked a young man dragging his luggage behind him as he walked toward her.

He had seen the name 'Gerald' written on the sign, which prompted him to walk over with a smile on his face.

Bea found herself subconsciously biting her lower lip as she nodded slightly. After all, the handsome man standing before her was dazzling.

“And... Could you be Gerald?” replied Bea with a sweet smile.

“Indeed, I am!”

Chapter 809

“Speaking of which, Gerald, how long are you planning to stay here? Do you have anywhere to stay for the time being? There’s no need to be cordial toward us! For now, I’m simply assuming that Bea will keep you company for today and I’ll be sending you back to the airport tomorrow. Is that the plan?” asked Catherine Goff rather enthusiastically as she took a peek at Gerald who was sitting quietly in the back seat as she drove the Passat.

Seeing him drag his luggage case with him earlier had prompted her to ask the question. It was clear as day that she wanted him to leave as soon as possible.

“Oh? I’m not leaving that soon, aunt. In fact, I’ll probably be staying in Yanken for a while... I’ll be in your care till then,” replied Gerald with a slightly bitter smile.

Hearing that, Catherine’s expression immediately turned ugly though she remained silent. This was simply the reality of it. If one was rich and they lived in some obscure spot in the mountains, they would still have distant relatives. However, if one was poor, even if they lived in a bustling city, they would have no relatives to speak of.

It was no wonder why Catherine was so afraid of Gerald coming over to them. Bea, on the other hand, was extremely friendly toward Gerald.

“Haha! Rest assured, cousin! Just stay as long as you’d like! Speaking of which, it’s going to be grandma’s birthday in a few days! If you celebrate with her, I’m sure she’ll be very happy!”

Hearing that, Gerald could simply return a slightly wry smile. After all, before his trip to Yanken began, his mother had told him that though Bea always received help from her, Yulia hadn’t exposed her true identity to Bea yet for personal reasons.

Bea's lack of information on who his mother truly was, was the reason why she could still make such a proposal to Gerald. However, in his mind, Gerald felt that it was somewhat better this way.

"Humph! It'd be nice enough if he didn't end up infuriating her upon them meeting each other!" added Catherine coldly.

"Now why would you say such a thing, mom? While it's true that grandma doesn't have a good relationship with my aunt and uncle, doesn't she enquire about them every once in a while?" replied Bea as she looked at her mother.

Catherine simply sighed at that before saying, "Gerald, I know why you're here. From the moment I heard that you were coming over to meet Lady Yalaman, I knew that you wanted to return to our family so that you can eventually get a share of our properties! Humph! Consider this to be sound advice from me. Give up while you can. If even my family isn't getting that much, one can only imagine how tiny the property that you'll receive will be. If you manage to get in in the first place, that is!"

Catherine certainly saw things through different viewpoints compared to normal people. However, Gerald simply smiled bitterly as he shook his head. He didn't really need to give her an explanation of why he was truly here.

After that, he began casually chatting with Bea. After all, they were both cousins. Both of them were eventually going to get close with each other anyway.

As one of the three largest families in Yanken, the Yallemans had several family branches within it.

Since Lady Yalaman was traditional-minded to a fault, she was strict in handling any issues regarding her children. As long as any of them could gain her favor or contribute to the family, it would greatly heighten the support they received from her in terms of resources.

This system naturally worked against Bea and her mother, who both shared an equally low status within the Yalaman family. The fact that Fifth brother was still in a vegetative state didn't help with their situation. Their statuses were so low that others in the family barely took any notice of them.

After all, Catherine had only been given a very ordinary post within the family. As a result, both she and her daughter only lived in an ordinary neighborhood.

Gerald himself was beginning to see how complicated things were within the Yaleman family. He had initially not thought much about it when his mother had first told him that things were never really that simple within that family. He now understood what she meant.

A little while after arriving at their home, Bea was just about to head out to get some groceries when Catherine called out, "Hold on a minute, Bea! There's something I need to tell you!"

With that, both of them left Gerald alone for a while to speak in secret. With nothing better to do, Gerald entered the room where his uncle was in.

Yulia had always regretted the incident that had happened to Fifth brother. Even with the Crawford's current power when it came to medical expertise, none of the doctors ever came close to helping him recover.

Gerald himself knew he couldn't do anything about it, even if he wanted to. At that moment, he began wondering whether Finnley would know how to deal with the situation.

'Where even is that old man now...'

Soon after, Bea left to get the ingredients and Gerald immediately headed downstairs with the intent to leave as well. After all, with Bea gone, Gerald knew he would have to endure Catherine's ceaseless commentary alone for a while, and nothing she said was ever nice.

Just as he was thinking about what excuse he could give her, his phone began ringing as he made it to the last step.

It was an unknown number.

"Good day, young master, I go by the name of Philip Hodges. I work for the Crawford family and I'm in charge of handling things in Yanken. Is there any way I can assist you?"

The Crawfords owned several properties in areas such as Sunnydale, the Salford Province, Yanken, and many others.

In Weston itself, the family's properties were separated into many areas, and Gerald now had full control over all of them.

Chapter 810

It was no mystery why people like Philip treated Gerald like their master.

"Not at the moment. I'll contact you if I need anything," replied Gerald.

"Very well, young master!"

"Actually, there is one thing you could help me out with. I need you to get me a new car."

It was at that moment when Gerald remembered that Catherine only drove a Passat. Bea herself seemed to know how to drive, yet she had earlier ridden on her scooter when she headed out to get ingredients.

Since he was already here, he might as well get a proper car for Bea.

"Very well, master! What car model would you like? A Phantom simply won't do! I suggest ordering the newest model from abroad!"

"There's no need for that. Just get me a BMW 7 series!"

"I... See," replied Philip, sounding slightly stunned.

After sharing Bea's address and details with him, Gerald hung up without saying anything else. Gerald himself had relatively fewer demands when it came to cars.

Just as he was about to continue making his way outside, he saw Catherine running down the stairs behind him in a hurry, her cell phone in hand.

“Where are you headed to, aunt?” asked Gerald.

“Humph! I’m not sure who we owe it to, but we’re really down on our luck today! Bea accidentally scratched her scooter against another person’s car at the grocery store’s car park! Where else could I be going? Are you a bringer of bad luck or something?” grumbled Catherine as she glared at Gerald.

Hearing that, Gerald himself ran toward the neighborhood’s entrance as well.

“Everyone, please bear witness for us! This woman here scratched our car yet she’s too shameless to even want to admit to her mistake!” shouted a man who looked to be around thirty. Beside him, stood what seemed to be his wife.

Upon hearing his comment, Bea simply smiled coldly before anxiously replying, “I did no such thing! I had already stopped the scooter before you arrived! It was your wife who had driven too close to me after that!”

The truth was that Bea had simply wanted to rush home as soon as she was done buying the ingredients. After all, she wanted to cook a delicious meal for her cousin.

The couple themselves were the real culprits. The car was new and the man’s wife wanted to try driving it. Unfortunately, when another car passed by theirs, her sudden anxiety caused her to drive too closely to Bea’s scooter, resulting in the scratch.

To save face, they were now falsely accusing Bea for their own mistake!

“What’s wrong? What happened here?” asked Catherine as both she and Gerald arrived at the scene.

Seeing that they were now here, Bea then began explaining what had happened.

“Humph! All you’re riding is a scooter! Why did you have to go around so recklessly? How annoying!” scolded the man’s wife coldly as she crossed her arms.

It was clear that she thought she was superior since she was driving a BMW 5 series.

“There’s no need to argue, let’s just ask the owner of the place for the surveillance footage! I’ll call them over right now!” declared Catherine.

“Go right ahead! You go get the footage along with her, darling. In the meantime, I’ll be calling Brandon!” sneered the woman.

“...Brandon? Which Brandon?” asked Catherine, stunned when she heard that name.

Chapter 811

“Naturally, I’m talking about the Brandon who owns the place!”

Hearing that, Catherine became incredibly flustered when she saw the other woman taking her cell phone out. After all, Brandon was a famous person here who owned several nightclubs in the area.

If this woman was truly acquainted with Brandon, then Catherine knew that she was in for a lot of trouble.

While it was true that Catherine shouldn’t be this easily terrified as a member of the Yalerman family, if she simply relied on the Yalermans to deal with the situation, Lady Yalerman would definitely reprimand her for causing trouble for their family, even though the situation could easily be taken care of.

Understanding that, Catherine knew that she had no choice but to give in. She really didn’t have the courage or audacity to use the Yalerman family’s name for such a small issue anyway.

Though she knew that her daughter was most probably innocent, Catherine really didn’t know what else she could do.

“Go ahead and call him over then!” said Gerald aloud.

The woman was startled when she heard this.

“...Are you doubting that I know him? Fine! I’ll make the call now!” grumbled the woman as she tapped on her phone before putting it to her ear.

Catherine was so nervous that she immediately glared at Gerald before yelling, “Just shut up and stand aside! What the hell do you even know?”

Following that, she turned to look at the woman before saying, “W-we can discuss this amicably... How about compensation? We’ll pay for the damage!”

“Now that’s what I like to hear! Since you suggested it, a mere thousand and five hundred dollars should do!” replied the woman.

Gritting her teeth, Catherine then replied, “...Fine! A thousand and five hundred dollars it is!”

“It definitely isn’t fine! We shouldn’t be paying them, mom!” cried out Bea in an anxious tone.

“You aren’t? I guess I’ll just make the phone call then!” said the woman cockily.

Her arrogance had risen to a new high now that she knew that Catherine had been completely subdued. After all, how could a scooter rider ever compare to someone who drove a BMW?

“I already said I’m paying!” replied Catherine helplessly.

Just as she was about to transfer the money over to them using her cell phone, a few bystanders pointed toward the community gate before shouting, “Hey! Look over there! That brand new car looks absolutely stunning!”

Soon, many others began exclaiming when they saw the new BMW 7 Series driving toward the community gates.

“That model looks like it came from overseas! I’m guessing it costs at least fourteen thousand dollars! How luxurious!”

“I know right? What a truly beautiful car!”

As everyone continued talking excitedly about the car, Gerald couldn’t help but feel that Philip was an extremely efficient person. After all, he had only given the order not too long ago yet here the car was!

The car came to a halt once it arrived at the community gate’s entrance, and out stepped a suited man wearing leather boots who looked to be around forty.

Seeing the crowd of people standing there, he then asked, “Apologies, but how do I get to Unit two of Building twelve?”

“Unit two- That’s our unit!” said Catherine immediately.

“Ah, that makes things much easier. I’m here to deliver the car. Please show me the way to your unit if it isn’t too much trouble!” replied the man extremely politely.

“Could you perhaps be Mr. Fairwell?” asked the couple from before in a surprised tone.

“Indeed, I am! Have we met before?” said Mr. Fairwell with a smile.

“You may not know who we are, but we certainly know who you are! You’re Mr. Fairwell! The chairman of the BMW headquarters in Weston! Using our connections with Brandon, we bought our BMW 5 Series from one of your assistant store managers!” replied the woman as she smiled at the incredible person standing before her.

Mr. Fairwell could easily be considered to be one of the most powerful figures in all of Yanken. While it would be slightly farfetched to assume that he would know who Brandon was, the woman mentioned him anyway, just in case.

“Well then! Thank you for your support!” replied Mr. Fairwell as he nodded at her.

Chapter 812

It was quite obvious from his reaction that he had no idea who Brandon even was. He probably didn't even know who the store manager was, let alone the assistant store manager the woman was talking about!

“Was it Philip who told you to drop the car off?” asked Gerald as he walked toward Mr. Fairwell, his right hand in his pocket.

Hearing Gerald's question, Mr. Fairwell was immediately taken aback.

After scanning him from head to toe, Mr. Fairwell then replied in a respectful tone, “Indeed, it was. He told me to deliver the car to a young lady by the name of Bea Yalaman. I've already completed all the other necessary formalities.”

Mr. Fairwell then smiled at Gerald. This must be the person whom Mr. Hodges had said he wasn't even qualified to know by name. After all, there was no way that other young men his age would ever be able to get acquainted with such a mysterious figure!

“Bea- That's... That's my daughter! We live at that address as well!” said Catherine in surprise.

“Ah, then could Denzel Yalaman be part of your family as well?” asked Mr. Fairwell.

“He's my father!” replied Bea.

“I see. Then this car officially belongs to you now, Miss Yalaman. Someone told me to hand the car over to you. Here are all the completed, necessary documents and certificates. Could you please go through them to check if the information is correct?” said Mr. Fairwell as he handed Bea a car key along with a set of documents.

Reading through them, she realized that there was no mistake. The car really was hers now!

“W-what is even going on? Who could’ve bought us with such a luxurious car?” stammered Catherine in her excitement.

Mr. Fairwell himself didn’t reply to her question. Instead, he walked over to Gerald before handing out his business card and saying, “Here’s my business card, sir. Please don’t hesitate to call me if you need any help!”

He could very much tell that Gerald was no ordinary person. Because of that, it was natural for him to want to get into Gerald’s good books.

After handing his card over, he excused himself before leaving.

“Oh god, is that car truly ours now? This is great!” said Catherine, unable to hide her excitement.

The couple themselves had already gone pale as they exchanged glances with each other. While they had been meaning to extort both Bea and her mother, to think that they actually knew such a powerful figure!

Realizing that they couldn’t go on with their plan, they immediately got into their car, preparing to leave.

“Now hold on a minute! Don’t tell me both of you are planning to leave just like that!” sneered Gerald as he looked at the couple.

“What else do you want? You don’t need to compensate us anymore!” snapped the woman.

“Oh, we don’t need to compensate? Is that what you’re still playing at? Even if you’re fine with the scratches on your car, Bea’s scooter still suffered a little damage! It’s time to talk about the compensation you owe her!” said Gerald as he took a step forward.

“You don’t need to pay much really. Only a mere... Fifteen thousand dollars!”

“F-Fifteen thousand?!” shouted the people around them in shock.

The husband and wife themselves were now staring at him with eyes wide open.

“Of course, if you choose not to pay us, I can call Mr. Fairwell to come back here any time I want! He shouldn’t be too far off yet. You can call that Brandon of yours too if you want!”

“N-no! L-let’s just discuss the matter over again nicely!” replied the man, terrified.

He had reason to be so scared. After all, Mr. Fairwell was an extremely powerful figure. What more, he had treated Gerald and the two other women with him so respectfully earlier! The man and his wife would definitely not be let off the hook that easily if Mr. Fairwell was called over again.

Even if they truly did call Brandon over, they would only be taught a one-time lesson.

“...C-could you lower the figure a bit? We’re-”

“Oh, would you look at that! My finger is moving on its own!” said Gerald as he began dialing the number on the card.

“W-we’ll pay! We’ll pay, I said!”

From being the extorters to becoming the extorted, what choice did the man have other than to pay for the absurd compensation?

After awkwardly transferring the money over to Catherine’s bank account, they apologized to Bea before rushing off once Gerald allowed them to leave.

“Bea, go ahead and park the scooter downstairs! I’ll be driving the car down as well!” said Catherine as she held onto the car keys happily.

Before entering the car, she snatched Mr. Fairwell's business card from Gerald's hand.

"Hah! Mr. Fairwell is a connection from our family! Try not to take advantage of the situation to show off!"

Chapter 813

"Do you personally know Mr. Fairwell, cousin?" asked Bea as she looked at Gerald who had remained silent throughout their journey home.

She had found it strange that Mr. Fairwell had personally come all the way here just to give her a car without any good reason. The fact that not many people actually knew about her true identity also made the situation much more suspicious.

To top it off, Gerald had just asked for her identity card number this morning! Sensing how respectful Mr. Fairwell had treated her cousin earlier, Bea felt that something was definitely up with Gerald.

"Not at all!" replied Gerald as he shook his head. It wasn't a lie either since this was truly the first time both of them had met.

"Then why would he come all the way out here just to hand me a car? Are you sure it isn't because of any of the connections you know?"

Naturally, Bea wasn't looking down on Gerald. However, she knew that his family's situation wasn't any better compared to her own. Or that's what she thought at least.

"I wonder..." replied Gerald with a faint smile on his face.

Smacking her lips, Bea ended up smiling as well. Somehow, the more she observed him, the more mysterious he felt.

It was around noon when Bea walked out of her room before asking, "Say cousin, the gathering is going to be held tonight. Will you be coming along?"

At the time, Gerald was still thinking of how he was going to visit his grandmother. Hearing Bea's question, he turned to look at his cousin—who now had a different set of clothes on—before replying, "Is it the one we were talking about earlier?"

Just a while ago, Bea had told Gerald about a tradition the younger generation of the Yalemans usually did when their grandmother's birthday was close. A yearly gathering would be held so that they could discuss what birthday gifts to buy for Lady Yalaman.

While that was what they usually agreed on, in the end, all of them just wanted an excuse to go out and have fun.

Though Gerald didn't really have any interest in attending gatherings or parties, he knew that he still needed to get to know his other cousins a little better in order to smoothen the process of resolving the grievances between his mother and grandmother.

Finalizing his thoughts, he then nodded before saying, "Alright, I'm in!"

A little while later, a group of attractive men and women could be seen sitting inside the most luxurious bar in Yanken. All of them looked to be around the age of twenty.

"Hey, hey, have you heard that our country bumpkin of a cousin has returned to Yanken? He's currently staying at Bea's place!"

"What? Are you serious? My parents didn't mention anything about this! Still, grandma's birthday is approaching soon. Do you think he's actually come back this time to celebrate her eightieth birthday? Hasn't she already cut all ties with their family?"

"Hah! I think he's only using the birthday as an excuse! He's probably trying his best to worm himself back into our family! After all, once her birthday celebration is over, she'll begin allocating all the family assets and resources! His return is simply too timely to be a coincidence!" replied one of the boys contemptuously.

“Regardless of his timing, if that’s what he’s really after, his chances are exceedingly slim. You should have heard grandma scolding Fifth aunt earlier once she found out that our cousin was staying at her place! It was terrible! Grandma’s anger doesn’t seem to have subsided at all!” said another girl.

“Speaking of which, his name is Gerald, if I recall correctly. From what I heard, at his poorest, he could barely even afford to eat! I remember clearly what grandma had said when she found out about that back then. She had said to let them be before stating that nobody from the family was allowed to get involved with them at all!”

“Well yes, but that was a long time ago! Think about more recent times! Don’t you remember that grandma actually asked about how Jessica and Gerald were doing during her birthday celebration last year?”

“She did! She asked how they were both doing! Though we didn’t know what his sister was doing, someone said that the country bumpkin himself was studying in university!”

As everyone continued discussing the matter among themselves, the private room’s door opened and in stepped a young man accompanied by two girls.

“Ah, you’re here, Yura!”

Chapter 814

“Yura!” greeted everyone within that group as they stood up.

Yura was the eldest grandson of the Yaleman family, and he was also Lady Yaleman’s favorite grandson. As a result, everyone in the group naturally looked up to him.

“Well you’re all early! Before anything else, though, I’d like to introduce my friends here! This young lady is my classmate in university! You can call her Marilyn! As for this beauty, her name’s Giya and she’s Marilyn’s ex-high school classmate when she was still in Mayberry City!” said Yura as he looked at Giya.

Standing next to the already beautiful Marilyn, Giya’s beauty was somehow amplified, and her excellent temperament made her all the more alluring.

When he had first met Giya, he hadn't expected to feel so moved by her beauty since he was already so used to seeing beautiful women.

After exchanging greetings, Yura then looked at Giya before asking with a smile, "Speaking of which, you don't mind me calling you Giya, right?"

In response, Giya simply shook her head.

To be quite honest, Giya had just arrived in Yanken today. She had initially not wanted to go anywhere but that thought didn't last since Marilyn called her shortly after to invite her over to the gathering.

Though she still didn't really want to go, in the end, she couldn't outtalk Marilyn. After all, Marilyn was one of the few people she was actually acquainted with in Yanken.

"Oh, come on, Giya! Don't be so glum! All of you are from wealthy families so you should be able to get along pretty well! Let's party! Hahaha!" said Marilyn when she saw how uneasy Giya looked.

"Indeed! Let's get the party started!" added Yura with a smile.

"We can't start yet, Yura! Some people still haven't arrived!"

"Oh? Who else isn't here yet?" asked Yura.

"Well, there's still Bea and her country bumpkin of a cousin!"

"Ah yes, Bea! How could I forget! But what's this about a country bumpkin? Could you perhaps be talking about Gerald? The son of that woman that grandma chased out of the family back then?"

While most of them there looked down on those who had been chased out of the family, they would usually still refer to Yulia as their aunt. When they heard Yura referring to her as 'that woman,' it made some of the junior members feel slightly uncomfortable. Though that was so, none of them said a word about it.

“No wonder grandma was so angry with Fifth aunt this afternoon! So Bea’s still keeping contact with Gerald!” sneered Yura.

Since Yulia and Yura’s mother weren’t on good terms when Yura was still a child, it was only natural for him to pick up his mother’s innate hatred toward Gerald and his family.

“Gerald?” asked both Giya and Marilyn in surprise when they heard his name.

Sensing their surprise, Yura was stunned as he asked, “You two know who he is? Oh right, Gerald was studying in Mayberry City!”

While Giya didn’t say anything else, she was honestly feeling a little excited now. However, she was also feeling curious. Why on earth did Marilyn know who Gerald was?

Could it actually be that this was just another person with the same name? Or could such a coincidence actually take place?

“You know Gerald as well, Giya?” asked Marilyn in a surprised tone.

Though it was just for a brief moment, a complex emotion flashed across Giya’s face as she said, “It could probably just be someone with the same name! But anyway, what’s your Gerald like, Marilyn?”

“Hah! Well, I don’t know if it’s the same person, but you know how my dad is constantly moving around because of work, right? As a result, I’ve studied in multiple schools before as I grew up. I was in high school when my father began working on a project in Serene County. It was at my new school there where I got to know Gerald the pauper!”

Chapter 815

“Serene County? Hahaha! That’s him alright!” said someone from the crowd as the rest of them laughed.

“Oh god, for real? Gerald the pauper’s actually your relative?” replied Marilyn, her shock apparent on her face.

“Sadly, legally, it’s true. However, the Yalemans have and will never acknowledge Gerald as part of our family!” said Yura with a wry smile on his face.

Giya herself didn’t really care what the others had to say about him. Instead, she was simply excited that he was possibly coming!

“Will Gerald be coming later, Yura?” asked Giya.

In response, Yura nodded before saying, “I assume Bea’s bringing him over! Speak of the devil!”

As soon as his sentence ended, the door opened and Bea entered. Seeing that Gerald wasn’t present, Giya couldn’t help but feel slightly anxious.

“Didn’t that bumpkin come along, Bea?” asked one of the girls there.

Since Bea was usually regarded as the lowest in rank within their family, nobody usually took her seriously. It was the reason why they still called Gerald a ‘bumpkin’ even though he was Bea’s guest.

“Oh, he’s gone to the gents. He’ll be here soon!” replied Bea.

In all honesty, she didn’t really enjoy participating in such gatherings. After all, the gap between her and her other cousins was simply too wide. She was barely in the same world as they were. She was only here because she didn’t have a choice.

“Hah! Hilarious! He’s probably feeling nervous since it’s the first time he’s attending a gathering at such a high-end venue!” said a few girls as they cupped their mouths while laughing.

Hearing that, everyone else started laughing as well. It was at that moment when the room’s door creaked open again.

However, instead of the country bumpkin they were expecting, they were greeted by a tall, young man who looked rather slim and was honestly quite handsome. He was dressed casually and his hands were in his pockets as he walked into the room.

Everyone was now silent and even a few of the girls were exchanging glances with each other, dumbfounded by the attractive man's extraordinary temperament.

"Over here, cousin! Have a seat!" said Bea with a smile as she held onto his arm.

"He's... He's our country bumpkin of a cousin?"

Several of the girls were now paralyzed in shock. They had expected Gerald—who, as a child, was very poor and had terrible self-esteem—to have a low and dampened image! To be a person who would look worried and behave cautiously wherever he went!

Yet the dashing young man standing before them now was anything but!

Just as Gerald was about to greet his shocked cousins, someone suddenly hit him on the back of his head!

"Well, d*mn! It really is you, Gerald! Why are you being so pretentious? Bet you didn't expect to see me here, right?" said Marilyn as she cackled. Naturally, she was the one who had hit him.

"God d*mn it!It's you?" replied Gerald, shocked when he saw the familiar face.

Truth be told, however, he couldn't really remember who she was for the life of him.

"What, have you forgotten about me already?" asked Marilyn as she crossed her arms. She seemed to find the entire situation hilarious.

"...Yes I do," lied Gerald as naturally as he breathed.

The memories were, however, slowly coming back to him. He knew that they used to be in the same class, but he couldn't remember her name at all.

"Regardless, I really hadn't expected to see you here of all places after not meeting for such a long time! While are you still walking with your hands in your pockets? While your pretentiousness may fool others, I know your background extremely well, so drop the act already!" said Marilyn.

Hearing that, Gerald could only smile bitterly as he took his hands out of his pockets while shaking his head.

The bitterness allowed him to recall her name. She was Marilyn and they had once been classmates for about half a year.

Chapter 816

Yura and the others shook their own heads and laughed as well as the scene progressed.

Gerald was simply too much. To think that he was acting so powerful just seconds ago when everyone here clearly knew about his background!

"After transferring schools back then, we haven't been in contact for so many years, Marilyn. I really hadn't expected you to know my cousins!" said Gerald in response.

"Either way, there's no need for us to talk pointlessly anymore. You almost make it sound like I even want to contact you! Just find someplace to sit down already!" replied Marilyn, a hint of disgust in her voice.

Hearing that, Gerald could only smile helplessly as he went toward a seat. Just as he was about to sit down, however, another voice suddenly called out to him.

"Gerald!"

Looking up, Gerald got the shock of his life.

“...Giya? What are you doing here too?”

D*mn it! Gerald really hadn't expected to bump into so many familiar faces wherever he went!

Ever since that incident, Gerald hadn't contacted Giya at all. However, what was even more embarrassing was the fact that Giya still frequently sent him messages though he never replied to any of them.

After all, he had assumed that he would never have to meet her again. Unfortunately, when it rained, it poured.

“It really is you! Why haven't you responded to any of my messages?!” said Giya, her eyes reddened.

While she was well aware that she had promised to leave him alone after that fake wedding incident, she simply couldn't forget about him. No matter how much she reminded herself that it was impossible for both of them to be together, whenever she closed her eyes, scene after scene would play out in her mind.

Scenes like the time when Gerald had braved the rain to carry her to the infirmary that time when she had sprained her ankle. When Gerald had constantly saved her whenever she found herself in trouble.

At this point, Giya had already come to terms that Gerald had engraved himself too deeply into her heart for her to ever be able to forget about him. It was the reason why while she was happy to see him, she was simultaneously filled with grief.

“...Sorry, Giya!” replied Gerald as he lowered his head slightly in embarrassment. After all, regardless of what happened in the past, Gerald had still let her down.

However, there was no better way to deal with the situation.

Meanwhile, everyone else was staring at the scene unfolding before them in a daze. This was especially so for both Marilyn and Yura.

After all, even a fool would be able to tell that Gerald and Giya's relationship wasn't all that simple. It was obvious enough from the look in Giya's eyes.

Knowing this made Yura jealous. After all, he had been the one who had wanted to win this goddess over!

"What's going on, Giya? Do both of you really know each other?" asked Marilyn.

Giya remained silent and simply wiped the tears away from the corner of her eyes. She then briefly glared at Gerald before angrily sitting down again. Seeing this, Gerald took a seat as well.

"Hey now, since everyone knows one another, there's no need to be shy! Come on, Gerald! Why not have a smoke?" said Yura with a cold smile on his face as he looked at Gerald.

After proposing that, he handed a cigarette over to Gerald.

"I appreciate it, but why don't we smoke one of my cigarettes instead?" said Gerald as he took a box of cigarettes out and placed it on the table.

While Gerald wasn't personally a smoker, he did like to carry a box of cigarettes around whenever he attended any gatherings.

"...F*cking...! X-One?!"

Everyone was stunned when they saw the cigarette box.

"Holy f*ck! You're smoking this brand of cigarettes?" asked one of the cousins aloud, his eyes wide in shock.

"Hey, what kind of cigarettes are those? I've never seen such packaging before!" asked another cousin curiously.

“It’s no wonder why you haven’t seen it before... Those are business cigarettes that only the richest of the rich living abroad can afford to smoke! These cigarettes actually nourish the lungs instead of damaging them! What more, it’s a new product that’s only been developed this year and it’s not even for sale yet! It’s only available for exclusive use as of now!” explained the boy in his shock as he held on to the cigarette box with quivering hands.

Chapter 817

“You... You smoke these kinds of cigarettes, Gerald...?”

Everyone felt like they had just received mental slaps to their faces. This was especially so for Yura.

To think that he had specifically brought along cigarettes that he had asked his friend to buy for him all the way from M country. The ones he had were really precious and expensive.

He had honestly been waiting to pass them around so that the crowd would praise and admire him.

After all, when a young man went out, the first thing people would tend to notice would be his attire. Next, they would see what kind of watch he was wearing. Last but not least, if he was a smoker, they would definitely want to identify what brand of cigarettes he smoked. All these worked together to establish a man’s ‘grades’.

To Yura’s dismay, he was the one who ended up receiving the mental slap once Gerald took his own box of cigarettes out!

“I don’t usually smoke. I just grabbed these as I was heading out today!” explained Gerald.

He hadn’t really expected a simple box of cigarettes to cause such a sensation. It made him feel quite helpless.

“Hah! Then it’s probably a fake! If the cigarettes truly are as great as you described, how could Gerald possibly have gotten his hands on them?” replied Marilyn who was still in disbelief.

“Probably? It’s a hundred percent fake! Gerald probably doesn’t even realize that he’s been deceived! If you really wanted to leave home with a box of cigarettes in hand, you could’ve just bought a box of

Marlboro cigarettes! Those cost a few measly dollars at most! Carrying fake X-One cigarettes around... What a joke!" sneered the boy from before as he tossed the box of cigarettes to the side.

Sensing the chance to show off in front of Giya, Yura then immediately said, "Gerald, Gerald, Gerald... It's not like I want to badmouth you or anything, but you should realize by now that we all know the ins-and-outs of your background like the back of our hands... There really is no need for you to try showing off in front of us... Regardless, you've already graduated, right? Have you found a job yet?"

His tone gave the illusion of him being a knowledgeable person, and once his question ended, he looked at Giya who was sitting right beside him.

"Nope!" replied Gerald as he shook his head.

"What else are you waiting for? With university over, you should be grabbing hold of any opportunity you can get to work! It's time to stop thinking about pointless things and start being more realistic! Though you may still be poor now, as long as you're diligent enough, there'll exist a possibility where you'll eventually become rich in the future! Focus more on that instead of showing-off!" said Yura aloud as he smiled wryly.

"Amazing! Did you hear what Yura said, Gerald? His words were reasonable so you should make sure that you take his advice to heart!" added Marilyn as she poked the back of Gerald's head with a finger.

If it wasn't because of his mission, Gerald would've already given Marilyn a few tight slaps across her face by now.

"While I'm at it, you should understand that the Yalaman family is more complicated than you think. Be a little more pragmatic and realize already that some things just aren't going to happen!" said Yura who simply assumed that Gerald was back because he wanted a share of the family assets.

Yura wanted Giya to see how little worth Gerald had in front of a strong person like him, which was why he was publicly preaching him now. He'd trample all over Gerald's ego if it was the last thing he did.

At that moment, a foreign girl with golden, curly hair entered the room. In her hands, was a bottle of very expensive-looking red wine.

“You’ve always supported me, Mr. Yalaman! So this bottle of red wine is on the house!” announced the girl in broken Weston dialect.

“How kind of you, Miss Delilah! Thank you!” replied Yura with a smile as he stood up.

“Hot d*mn! How incredible! People are giving you respect wherever you go, Yura!” said Marilyn excitedly before shaking Giya’s arm.

“Did you know that this bar we’re in is the most luxurious of its kind in Yanken, Giya? Miss Delilah over there is the owner of this very bar! You should know that several foreigners and powerful figures frequent this place! Yet here she is, giving Yura a bottle of red wine on the house!”

Hearing Marilyn’s words, the other girls present felt equally honored and pleased.

A few of them even said, “Hah! But of course! It’s because of the Yalaman family’s reputation and also the fact that Yura himself is so powerful!”

The girls could tell how interested Yura was in Giya, so they were now praising him in hopes that she would eventually fall for him.

Chapter 818

“...Hold on. X-One cigarettes? I’ve never seen anyone smoking this brand of cigarettes in Weston before!” said Delilah as her gaze fell upon the box of cigarettes that had been thrown to the side. She seemed to be deeply enticed by the cigarettes.

“Oh god, this is so embarrassing! I should’ve told that country bumpkin of a cousin to put them away! Miss Delilah’s husband is a very powerful person in M country! What impression would we leave on her once she finds out that we smoke fake cigarettes?” whispered several of the boys among themselves.

It wasn’t only the males who bore awkward expressions on their faces, but also the girls.

“Excuse me, but could I have one of your cigarettes? I’ve not tasted this brand of cigarettes in a little over half a year now after coming to Weston!” enquired Delilah as she smiled.

“Huh? Half a year? Does that mean she was among the first to try it out when it began initial production?!”

“It’s over. It’s all over! I’m going to be so embarrassed once she finds out...!”

“W-wait a moment, Miss Delilah!” shouted one of the girls as she stood among her other whispering cousins. Rather than waiting for Delilah to find out on her own, the girl felt it would be better if she simply told her the truth first.

“Yes?” asked Delilah as she turned to look at her with her usual sweet smile.

“T-those cigarettes... You can’t smoke them! We just found out not too long ago that they’re fake!”

Upon hearing her declaration, everyone turned to look at Gerald in disgust. What a good-for-nothing!

“Fake? Hahaha! Miss, I simply want to smoke a cigarette, you needn’t be this reluctant up to the point of telling me lies! Besides, since you can afford to even buy this brand, is there a need to feel so bad over a single cigarette?” replied Delilah as she took a cigarette out of the box and carefully observed it.

Next, she took a sniff at it, and soon after, a wry smile formed on her face.

“W-why would I lie to you, Miss Delilah? It really is a fake!” explained the same girl from before.

“To be frank, my ex-husband used to be the leader of the research and development department in the factory that produces this specific brand. Though I’m well aware that imitations exist in the market, I believe that I still have the ability to distinguish between a fake and the real deal! And I can say for certain that this is a genuine product!” declared Delilah with a smile.

“G-Genuine... They’re genuine?!”

Everyone was dumbfounded when they heard that. After all, from what she had said, Delilah would definitely be able to tell between a real one and a fake. What more, she didn't have a reason to lie to them either.

But... Just how could Gerald possibly have afforded to buy genuine X-One cigarettes?

"Where did you buy these cigarettes, Gerald?" asked the boy from earlier.

"I'll be frank and say that I didn't buy them! They were lying around in my house so I simply grabbed them!" replied Gerald with a wry smile.

"Hah! Based on your family's background, it's almost as though you're claiming that they'd actually be able to buy them!" snapped Marilyn immediately in a tone that suggested that Gerald had just personally insulted her.

"Could I smoke one of your cigarettes, sir?" asked Delilah as she turned to look at Gerald, her smile still on her face.

"Sir? Why are you referring to him as sir, Miss Delilah? We don't even know where he got the cigarettes from! You should know that his family is so poor that they can't even afford to eat a decent meal at times!" insulted Yura the moment he saw Delilah treating Gerald so respectfully.

"Him? Poor? You must be joking, Mr. Yalaman! Ignoring the cigarettes, you should know that no ordinary person could compare to this gentleman! After all, he's wearing classic, French, tailor-made clothes!" said Delilah as she sat right next to Gerald.

"Did I get that right, sir?"

Chapter 819

"Classic French? What is even going on anymore?!"

Everyone was utterly stunned.

Seeing that a top socialite in Yanken was behaving so respectfully toward Gerald, Bea was extremely happy.

“Regardless, it’s truly been an honor to meet you here today, Mr. Gerald! I’ll be personally bearing all the expenses of anything you order here tonight!” said Delilah as she politely stretched her hand out toward Gerald. In her eyes, the value of befriending such a powerful figure as Gerald certainly outweighed the cost of one night’s bill.

In response, Gerald reached out as well and shook Delilah’s hand before saying, “It’s a pleasure, Miss Delilah!”

After Delilah finally left, the room was greeted by an almost pressuring silence. Yura in particular, felt like he had just received the most massive slap in his life. He had been completely embarrassed in front of all the others.

“...C-could I... Try one of your cigarettes, Gerald?” asked one of the cousins there as he looked at Gerald. After seeing Gerald’s slight nod, he took a cigarette for himself before lighting the tip.

When he saw this, Yura squinted his eyes slightly as he glared at Gerald with a frigid gaze. After that, he stepped out of the room in the pretense that he needed to answer a phone call.

Nobody had ever dared to go against Yura, even when he was only a child. To think that this countryside pauper actually dared to go against him! Gerald had even made him lose face before such a beautiful goddess!

Yanken was Yura’s territory, and he would rather be dead than lose to Gerald. Once he was outside, he lit a cigarette before making a call.

“Ah, hey Brandon, you busy?” asked Yura as he released a puff of smoke.

“Not at all, just hanging out. Still, a call out of the blue, Yura? Could it be that you have a job for me?” replied Brandon in a voice that hinted at his eagerness as he laughed.

“Nothing too big. I’m just in a bad mood since someone actually dared to trample all over me!”

“Hahaha! Who would dare do such a thing in Yanken? The audacity! Who is it, Yura? I’ll get rid of them immediately!”

“There’s no need to go that far! However, I do want you to thoroughly embarrass him!” replied Yura before sharing his location with Brandon.

“Hah! What a coincidence! I happen to be drinking with a few of my subordinates around the area! I’ll be heading over immediately!”

Yura sneered as he ended the call. He then continued standing outside as he smoked on his cigarette. This definitely wasn’t the first time he was doing something like this, and it wouldn’t be his last.

“Say Xoeey, do you or anyone else need to use the bathroom? Let’s go together!” said one of the girls back inside the room.

In response to that, Bea and a few others headed out together.

Giya, on the other hand, glared secretly at Gerald. She had been waiting for him to take the initiative to speak to her the entire time.

However, he was simply sitting there calmly while munching on fruits! It didn’t seem like he was going to make a move at all!

In the end, her anxiety got the better of her and she couldn’t help but ask, “So... are... you and Mila doing fine?”

Though everyone else didn’t know his true identity, Giya was well aware of who Gerald truly was.

“...Mila’s gone missing,” replied Gerald as he felt a surge of pain in his heart the moment he heard her name again.

He wasn't even sure if he would be able to persuade his grandmother on the day of her birthday. No matter what, Gerald knew he had to mend the relationship between both families. If he failed, nobody else would be able to talk to the Moldell family on his behalf.

"...What? What happened?" asked Giya in surprise.

"...I'll tell you about it when I have a chance to in the future!" replied Gerald in a casual tone.

"Hey, Giya, who's this Mila girl? Oh god, could she be Gerald's girlfriend? Someone like him actually has the ability to get a girlfriend?!" said Marilyn, her shock apparent in her voice.

Realizing that she had just brought up something that greatly upset Gerald, Giya didn't reply to Marilyn's question.

"Hello? Why aren't any of you saying anything? Who is this Mila?"

Before Marilyn could continue pestering the duo, Xoey came rushing back into the room.

Chapter 820

"S-something terrible has happened! A few drunkards have just dragged Bea into their room after insisting that she have a drink with them!" shouted Xoey.

Upon hearing that, Gerald immediately dashed out of the room.

Right outside, he bumped into the other female cousins who had earlier gone to the ladies together. All of them looked equally terrified.

"Where's Bea?" demanded Gerald.

"S-she's been dragged into Room 103!" replied one of the girls as she quivered.

Getting the answer he needed, Gerald ran there as fast as he could.

As for the rest of the boys in the room, all of them simply stood in place. While they knew that they didn't need to be afraid since they were all members of the Yalerman family, directly confronting the drunkards would definitely lead to some of them getting beaten up! With that in mind, many of them began making phone calls instead.

Giya herself followed Gerald out with a worried expression on her face.

"W-what should we do now...?" whispered the girls among themselves, meekly.

They had earlier bumped into the drunk men on their way to the ladies. Once the men realized that the girls weren't going to follow their orders, one of them immediately tried to drag Xoey away with him! However, Bea stepped in front of her just in time and pushed him away!

However, the conflict only began on their trip back from the washroom. The drunk men cornered them as soon as they exited the ladies. It was then when one of them yanked Bea by her hair and dragged her into their room!

"Gerald's the only one who's gone there to save her! I saw about eight men in there! Where even is Yura?!" shouted Xoey.

Xoey was worried to bits since she was touched by what Bea had done. After all, Bea had only gotten into this mess because she was trying to save her!

"We're already calling reinforcements now! To think that people would actually dare to provoke the Yalermans! Unthinkable!" replied one of the boys.

"Hold it. Tell the people you've called that it's a false alarm. Don't worry, Bea's going to be fine!" said Yura as he suddenly re-entered the room while gesturing for those who had phones next to their ears to do as he had said.

"W-what? But Bea's in big trouble, Yura!"

“As I said, none of you have to worry about this! Bea will be fine! However, someone else definitely isn’t going to be!” sneered Yura.

Yura had a gloomy expression on his face. After all, he was feeling extremely jealous since he had seen Giya disregarding her own safety by chasing after Gerald earlier.

Everyone else in the room seemed to also have caught on to what was really happening. As a result, none of them said another word as they closed the room’s door behind them.

“Release her!” roared Gerald in anger as he kicked Room 103’s door open.

Hearing all the noise, the few drunkards who were all forcefully embracing her then turned to look at Gerald.

Not only did Gerald’s fifth uncle have a deep relationship with his family, Bea had also treated him extremely well since he arrived. There was no way in hell that Gerald was going to allow Bea to suffer any injuries as long as he was there.

“Hah! Who do you even think you are to order us around like that! And you even brought along such a beautiful girl! Hahaha! Looks like I’ll be able to have fun with two women today!” said a young man—who seemed to be the leader of the group—as he laughed.

The beautiful girl in question, was of course, Giya. She had followed him in out of worry.

“How fortunate of you, Brandon! As brothers, we’ll get a go with them too once you’re done, right?” said a few other drunkards as they laughed.

“But of course! Drag that woman over here too, men! It’d be irrational of me to refuse someone who sent herself directly to my doorstep!” ordered Brandon as he gestured for his men to walk forward.

“You’re Brandon, right? I advise you not to continue messing around anymore. Since I’ve given this warning, don’t blame me if something were to happen to you!” replied Gerald with a cold expression on his face.

“Hahaha! Oh? Trying to intimidate me, are you? Fine then! I’ll release this young woman since you’ve been so daring to rush in here! But before we let her go... You’ll have to crawl under our crotches first! How about it! Deal?” announced Brandon as he laughed.

Chapter 821

“Why don’t you come over here?!”

It was at this moment that one of Brandon’s rough and stalwart men tried to take advantage of Gerald’s conversation and grab Giya over to their side.

However, someone caught hold of his wrist as soon as he reached towards her.

The crisp sound of his arm bones cracking followed.

The man’s wrist was forcibly bent to an extremely jarring angle.

Argh!

The person started squealing miserably like a pig that was about to get slaughtered.

After that, Gerald grabbed the man’s hair with all of his strength before his head was sent slamming towards the marble wine table in front of them.

Boom!

With a loud crashing sound, the marble wine table was smashed into pieces with the poor man’s head.

Blood poured profusely from his skull as the man convulsed on the floor.

“What?!”

Suddenly, Brandon awakened from his drunken stupor.

Much to his surprise, this young brat was actually stronger than he anticipated. After all, that goon of his was one of his strongest men.

However, it seemed as though he posed little to no threat to Gerald at all.

This young brat was way too ruthless!

“Ahhh! Gerald!”

He wasn't the only one that was shocked. Giya screamed when she saw all the blood spurting out of the man's face. His nose was crooked in a weird angle, no doubt broken by the impact just now. She was scared to death!

When and how did Gerald become so merciless?!

Giya's heart was beating frantically.

“Your name is Brandon Zouch, right? You are Jeremy Lauder's subordinate?” Gerald asked coldly.

“You...who are you?”

Brandon's heart trembled when he heard this.

After all, Jeremy was someone with a powerful background. He used to be the driver for Philip, the boss of Trustdeck Group in Yanken.

Because of this, after Jeremy's debut, his endeavors had been very successful and prosperous in every aspect.

Jeremy had also been looking out for Brandon all this while and this was a large part of the reason why Brandon could make a living for himself.

It was no surprise why no one dared to call Jeremy by his full name in front of him.

However, it seemed as though this young man knew all the details there were to know about Jeremy!

Speaking of which, no one knew how Philip found out that Bea nearly got extorted last night. Such a situation should not have arisen!

So, he made a phone call and found out that the other party's backer was none other than a subordinate of the subordinate of his previous driver. In other words, it was Brandon who was behind this!

After that, Philip asked Gerald if he should deal with Brandon and that couple on his behalf so that he could avenge Gerald's cousin.

However, Gerald simply told him to let it go.

"You do not deserve to know who I am! You should ask Jeremy about it when you have the opportunity to do so!"

After he was done speaking, Gerald walked forward before pushing Brandon aside.

After that, he grabbed hold of Bea's hand and he glared at Brandon, a final warning before he left the place wordlessly.

Even though Brandon was usually a very ruthless man, being in the contempt of Gerald made him so timid that he dared not even breathe too loudly around him.

For one, he was shocked by how brutal Gerald was when he beat up his men.

Also, Gerald seemed to have completely disregarded Jeremy as they spoke.

This made Brandon feel as though Gerald was not a mere simpleton.

After all, how did these gangsters make their living? Was their income based on their territory? Obviously not! To put it bluntly, gangsters must've been relying on their connections to make a living!

The strong ones would dominate the weaker ones, and the cycle repeats itself.

They usually dealt with people who had no backers at all just to show off their might during ordinary times. However, if they really encountered anyone with a strong background or backer, they'd all freeze up out of fear.

"Brandon, he beat our brother up like this. Are you really going to let him leave just like that?"

One of Brandon's men asked.

Brandon stared at his subordinate before he said, "Hmph! I was frightened for a moment there because that brat mentioned Jeremy's name. It's okay. Yura already told me that this brat is nothing more than a pauper from Mayberry City. However, to be on the safe side, it would be better for me to clarify the situation with Jeremy first. If that brat lied to me, then I'll make sure that he won't live to see the light of day!"

That's right. This was all just a setup and Yura's phone call just now was part of it.

They were prepared to humiliate Gerald, the country bumpkin.

Chapter 822

Paranoid, Brandon thought that it was better safe than sorry as he called up Jeremy.

Upon hearing him answer his call, Brandon explained his little incident with Gerald to Jeremy in a brief manner.

After that, Brandon's men saw their boss' face turning paler and paler!

"You are not worthy enough to know who he is! However, if you are concerned about survival, I'd advise you to chop off the hands of anyone who touched Miss Bea just now! Perhaps you will be given an opportunity to live then!"

After Jeremy said his last sentence in a sympathetic tone, he hung up the phone immediately.

"Brandon, what's going on? What did Jeremy say?"

Brandon's subordinates couldn't resist the urge to ask when they saw the horrified expression on his face.

"Damn it! That scumbag Yura really got me into big trouble this time!"

After that, Brandon smashed his cell phone on the ground out of anger.

On the other end of this whole incident, Gerald held Bea's hand as he led her out swiftly. Bea went back to their original room to inform her cousins that everything was fine.

Frightened by what had just happened, she had completely lost the mood to enjoy herself. That was also the moment that she decided that she was going to leave together with Gerald.

The same went for Giya, who was never interested in partying in the first place.

Furthermore, Gerald was already leaving. There was no reason for her to continue lingering around here anymore.

So, she chose to leave together with Gerald too.

Yura was burning with jealousy at this point but even more than this was the feeling of shock.

“What is going on?”

As they had agreed upon, Gerald should have been humiliated and embarrassed at this point. Wasn't Yura supposed to bring everyone else with him to watch and ridicule Gerald as he was being humiliated?

What was Brandon up to? What the hell is he doing?

Yura approached Brandon's room, filled with anger and rage.

“What are you doing?”

Yura asked Brandon coldly.

Yura was stunned when he saw one of Brandon's men lying down on the ground with his face covered in dark-red, gooey blood.

“What happened?” Yura asked.

Boom!

The answer to Yura's question was Brandon's red wine bottle smashing into the side of his head.

“Yura! I will settle this score with you in the future! Let’s go! A few of you will have to go to the entrance of the hall tonight! I won’t let you go without some punishment!”

After Brandon was done speaking, he left with beads of cold sweat all over his face.

All this was simply because of a sentence Jeremy had said over the phone, which made Brandon feel nervous and on edge. He felt as though his spiritual and carnal side as a human being was in a great conflict with one another at this point!

“The both of us are not worthy enough to find out about his true identity. All that you need to know is that even Mr. Hodges has to bend over backward and bow down in front of him to speak to him every time they meet!”

After leaving with Bea, Gerald walked Giya downstairs as Giya was still following him.

There was an awkward silence between the two of them. They simply walked forward wordlessly.

“Gerald, you have changed!” Giya suddenly said.

“Me? Changed? No, I did not!” Gerald replied with a smile.

Gerald felt that although he had already returned to his family, nothing about him changed that much. He was not as extravagant as his elder sister and he was still the same old Gerald from before. He still very much enjoyed living a plain and simple life.

Nothing about him had changed!

“You really have changed! Perhaps you cannot feel it, but I can see it in your eyes! Seriously! You’re like a completely different person now!”

“When Tammy and the others were mocking you back then, you would simply lower your head. However, things are different now! You even hit someone else in retaliation just now. I mean I was

scared but, no doubt, you made me feel as though you were a complete stranger and not the Gerald I used to know!”

Giya struggled to articulate her feelings concisely.

If she really had to point out which part of Gerald had changed, then it would be how he created a sense of security whenever he’s around her, something that at one point in the past was lacking.

“I really did not change at all. I bet it’s because of how little time we spent together in the past!”

Giya did not refute his statement. Instead, she carefully raised her gaze and glanced at Gerald meekly before she stopped and asked softly, “Gerald, what exactly happened to Mila?”

Although Giya knew that Gerald would feel upset if she reminded him of that girl, the reason why she tagged along with him was that she wanted to find out what happened to Mila...

Chapter 823

“The Northbay territorial waters is a very large area to cover. It has already been so long. Mila, perhaps she...”

After listening to Gerald’s account of everything that had happened, Giya was both visibly shocked and also worried.

When Giya saw the dark expression on Gerald’s face, she refrained from saying anything unnecessary.

There was no explanation for the emotions Giya was feeling right now.

Although she had been Mila’s rival before this, Giya had to admit that she really was a good girl and she really loved Gerald very much.

Surprisingly, Giya felt upset to hear that something horrible had happened to Mila.

But aside from these sad emotions, Giya also felt a hint of excitement.

She knew that it was not right of her to have any other ideas at a time like this. However, it was impossible for her to resist such an urge.

Gerald did not stay with Giya for a long time.

Gerald appeared to be rather dejected after they started speaking about Mila.

He returned to his room after a brief exchange.

Gerald would be going back to the Yalaman family mansion to visit his grandmother at noon tomorrow.

The next day, in the meeting room of the Yalaman family mansion in Yanken.

Every member of the Yalaman family was gathered here.

The Yalaman Group was a family business and subsequently, the executive members of said group were all members of the Yalaman family.

Such business meetings were the norm.

“The Yalaman family is becoming more and more desolated in recent years. We used to be the top family amongst the big four families. What about now? Why don’t all of you take a good look at the Yalaman family’s annual revenue? Even though we are considered by many as a member of the top three families, do you really think we can be labeled as such?”

An old woman in her eighties spoke with a sonorous and powerful voice.

She glanced coldly at her descendants and grandchildren.

She slammed her walking cane loudly against the floor.

“I am already getting older and older and I do not know when I will leave this world. How can I possibly feel okay with leaving our assets in your hands? Answer me! How?!” The old lady said.

She was Lady Yalaman, the head of the Yalaman family and also the chairwoman of the Yalaman Group.

Lady Yalaman used to be a well-known career woman in Yanken. However, as the years finally caught up to her, she began to retreat from the limelight and was only working in the background for the past couple of years. Aside from making the major decisions for the company, she was no longer involved in running the business.

It was precisely because of this that there was a serious internal struggle and a never-ending conflict between the younger generation of descendants who were also senior executives of the company. The kids have divided themselves into various factions and the Yalaman family rules and discipline had been on a steady decline ever since.

Lady Yalaman’s descendants and grandchildren all bowed their heads upon hearing her words.

“Answer me!”

Lady Yalaman slammed her hand on the table angrily and her face had already turned purple in anger.

“Mom, don’t get angry!” The eldest son, Yuma spoke up at this time, “As for our family matters, we are also trying to catch up with the Long and Quarrington families. However, when it comes to comprehensive personal connections, the Yalaman family still pales in comparison to those folks!”

“We were not even able to make a bid in the real estate business for the three big families. This is the biggest reason why both the Long family and the Quarrington family are rapidly overtaking the Yalaman family!” Yuma replied.

“Bidding! Bidding! Since you already know what our weakness is, why didn’t you devote your time and energy to strengthening our family and expanding your network and connections instead? In the past ten years, the Long family and the Quarrington family have been able to gain so many projects precisely because of their ties to the Trustdeck Group. Why can’t we do the same? Did you send anyone to do that?”

Lady Yaleman asked as she poked Yuma’s head.

The rest of her sons and daughters covered their mouths as they giggled secretly to themselves.

“What are you laughing at?! Why don’t all of you take a good look at yourselves? The older and younger generation are all equally unpromising!”

At this time, Lady Yaleman turned around and glared at Yura who had a bandage over his head.

Lady Yaleman said angrily, “Just take a look at all of you! I doubt that I’ll even be able to make it to my own birthday banquet tomorrow!”

At this time.

The door of the meeting room was pushed open.

A middle-aged servant walked in respectfully.

“Ma’am, the luncheon is ready!”

Lady Yaleman took a deep breath before she lowered her tone and said, “If there are no other ways, then try to come up with a solution! It is useless for us to only complain about it. Alright then, let’s go and eat our reunion lunch now!”

According to their tradition, they would always eat a reunion meal together after every family meeting.

Everyone exchanged some words with one another before they entered the living room.

When they arrived, they saw a young man and a young woman sitting on the sofa.

“Hmph! Isn’t that Bea? It’s already noon and she did not even bother with attending the family meeting! To think that she’d been sitting here the entire time! Oh? It looks like she brought a young man here with her too! Has she gotten herself a boyfriend?”

Chapter 824

Bea’s aunts started ridiculing her and sneering at her.

Bea’s mother, on the other hand, stood at the side of the room, not daring to speak up for her own daughter.

She simply wore an ugly expression on her face.

She had already told Bea many times not to come here with Gerald. However, it was clear that Bea was defying her order as Gerald was standing right there!

“Third aunt, sixth aunt, he is not my boyfriend. He’s actually my cousin, Gerald!” Bea replied.

“What? Ger...Gerald?!”

“It’s him!”

Silence descended upon the room as soon as those words came out from her mouth.

Everyone’s eyes were fixed on Gerald.

Although they knew that Yulia had given birth to a pair of children, Jessica and Gerald, after she left, this was the first time that they had seen either one of them in two whole decades!

“How blessed and fortunate that woman is to have such a handsome son!”

One of the women sneered slightly.

“Cousin, let me introduce them to you. This is...”

Bea started introducing her relatives to Gerald.

Gerald greeted them politely one by one.

However, aside from his fourth uncle who responded with a smile and a nod, pretty much every one of them were ignoring him.

“Why are all of you standing up? Sit down!”

An old lady yelled as she entered the living room with the assistance of a helper.

“Mom, come and take a look! Your beloved granddaughter, Bea, has brought you a gift right before your birthday! That woman’s son has come to see you!”

Rose marched over to give the old lady a hand while wearing a nasty sneer on her face.

“Hmm?”

The old lady immediately turned to look at Gerald.

This was the first time that Gerald had seen his grandmother ever since he was a child.

Naturally, he felt a bit excited to see his beloved granny.

“Grandma!” Gerald called out.

The old lady’s hands trembled slightly when she heard him calling her grandma. She did not say anything but she did respond with a nod.

“Your name is Gerald, right? Where is your elder sister?”

The old lady took a deep breath before she sat down.

“My sister’s abroad now. She is not back yet.” Gerald replied.

“Hmph. Why are you here then? It’s been so many years. Do you even remember that you have a grandmother?”

The old lady asked with a frown.

Although she sounded very cold and indifferent, the reality was the same as what Gerald’s mother had told him beforehand. The old lady would not be too harsh on Gerald.

When she saw how Gerald bowed his head wordlessly, she started fearing that being overly-blunt would scare the child away.

So, she eased up a little and said, “However, I guess you’re still a filial child since you’ve at least made the decision to come and see me!”

Both Yuna and Rose were surprised to discover that the old lady was far from being angry at Gerald.

Yura was especially shocked. The humiliation and embarrassment he suffered yesterday was a result of Gerald’s actions after all.

Since he held a grudge against Gerald, he tugged at his mother's arm under the table.

Rose immediately started sneering. "Hahaha! Mom, you think too well of him, don't you? Haven't you realized? They haven't seen you at all in the last twenty years but why are they suddenly here now? To think that they even have the guts to appear before you one day before your birthday! How outrageous! I'm gonna be blunt here, they're just here to get their hands on a share of the Yalerman family's inheritance! Why else would they even think of you at all?"

After Rose's attempt to sow discord, it was clear that the old lady started acting with caution around Gerald.

"Gerald, are you really here to get your hands on a share of the Yalerman family inheritance?"

The old lady asked with an unhappy expression.

Chapter 825

"You have misunderstood me, grandma. I have no intentions of taking any of the Yalerman family's assets at all!"

Gerald replied with a subtle frown.

"Hmph! Ever since your mother, that ungrateful daughter of mine left the Yalerman family, all of you no longer have anything to do with the Yalerman family! I have already made it official that I have severed all ties with that girl! Before you proceed, understand what has already happened."

The old lady sneered.

Gerald did not say anything at all.

Seeing how tense the situation had become, the fourth uncle cleared his throat before speaking up.

“Ahem, mom, look. No matter what happened between you and her, Gerald is still your grandson. I for one, think it’s a good thing for the kid to still have some sense of filial piety. This is the first time that he has come back home so I’d advise you to stop scaring him away! Gerald, come here! Since all of the elders of the family are all gathered here, why don’t you come and serve them some tea.”

It was this moment that Gerald recalled what his mother told him, that both his fourth and fifth uncle were the ones who treated her the best.

So, Gerald simply nodded in agreement.

He took the teapot from the servant’s hand.

After that, he started pouring a cup of tea for the old lady.

“Grandma!”

Perhaps the old lady was reminded of how sad her past had been. Or perhaps it was the anger within her upon hearing what Rose said, that Gerald was just here for his share of the pie. Or maybe it was both.

She simply closed her eyes.

Gerald poured another cup of tea for Yuma.

Yuma refused to drink the tea Gerald poured for him.

He proceeded to serve his second and third uncle.

After that, he poured a cup of tea for Rose.

To his surprise, Rose smiled coldly at him and said, “Hmph! When someone is giving a free lunch without any reason or cause, he must have something evil or obscene in mind!”

She emptied the content of her cup onto the floor after saying that.

The boys and girls of the Yaleman family were all looking at Gerald when Rose did that.

It was fine for her to refuse his tea, but to think that she had the audacity to pour the tea onto the floor.

Rose was obviously trying to embarrass Gerald by trampling all over him.

Yura on the other hand was celebrating inside. He couldn't help but think how perfect it would be if Giya was here to see this as well.

Of all the people Gerald served, his fourth uncle was the only one who drank the cup of tea.

“I wish I could make this clear to a certain someone. Stop having weird fantasies or foolish intentions. You sure know how to find the right timing to visit Lady Yaleman don't you? Why didn't you come sooner or later? Why today?” The second aunt sneered.

“Exactly! He obviously knows that something's good around here. What's the matter? You've grown sick of living in poverty and you're looking for a taste of the high life?”

Rose sneered.

“Hmph! That woman abandoned the whole family, exposing us to such great risks back then! I can remember clearly how furious mom was when she did that! Why don't you go back and tell that woman that it's too late for regrets?”

Third aunt also chimed in.

As soon as this topic came bubbling up, it became endless.

Everyone started accusing and pointing their finger at Gerald's mother, one after the other.

"Enough! Enough! Stop talking about it!"

The old lady's blood pressure spiked immediately. She shouted as she slammed her hands down on the table in order to stop the noise.

Everyone shut up instantly.

"Sheldon, help me back to my room! I'd like to have a rest now!"

"Yes, ma'am!"

Moments later, the old lady left the living room.

"This is all your fault! You hapless guy! Why did you come back? Was it necessary for you to make your grandmother so angry?"

Rose scolded Gerald again.

"Can all of you stop reprimanding my cousin? He is simply back here because he wants to visit grandma! Why are all of you acting like this?"

Bea felt so anxious that she was about to burst into tears.

"Hmph! Bea, why are you butting in when the adults are speaking? Is not being scolded not good enough for you? If it weren't for your damn good-for-nothing father's help, his mother would not have been able to escape her marriage back then!"

Rose said as she sneered.

“Sister-in-law, just what do you mean by that? Is that the way that you should be talking to a junior?”

Bea’s mother was also very unhappy.

“What’s wrong? Can’t I lecture my junior if she does not understand the rules around here? Hahaha! Why don’t you take a look at your status in the Yuleman family now? Bea, you just started working for the Yuleman Group, right? That’s right! You happen to be in the project department too, right? During the meeting just now, Lady Yuleman already said that the most urgent and pressing matter at hand is for us to get some projects. You’ll be in charge of that this year!”

Chapter 826

“Aren’t you really good at talking? Why don’t you show me how capable you are then? If you can’t even contribute to the family, then both you and your mother will only be able to get a small share of the family fortune!”

Rose’s mouth was destructive, just like a cannon.

Her fourth and fifth brother’s families used to have a pretty close relationship with Yulia back then.

Yulia’s relationship with Rose, on the other hand, had always been strained.

Back when Rose was working for the company, Yulia discovered that she had been misappropriating the company’s funds.

This led to Yulia personally reporting her findings of Rose to Lady Yuleman, who then proceeded to slap the culprit right in front of everybody during one of their family meetings.

Rose and Yulia had been at odds with one another since that very day.

She hated Yulia and she eventually began to hate her fourth and fifth brother's families too.

Yuma and Rose were the ones who were in control of most of the company's resources at the moment.

She was equivalent to the vice-chairman of the company, so she naturally had the right to speak up.

It was also precisely because of this that Bea and her family could not refute her words at all.

"Okay, that's enough. Everyone, it's time to stop saying anything unnecessary. Mom already emphasized earlier that family unity is the most important thing!" Yuma said.

"Elder brother is right. Gerald, you don't need to stand there anymore. Come, sit down and eat with us!" urged the fourth uncle.

"What? Why are you asking him to sit down with us? What rights do you have?"

Several aunts responded unhappily.

It was at this moment that Gerald realized that if he continued staying around here, he'd only further exacerbate his fourth uncle's already deteriorating relationship with the rest of the family.

He smiled bitterly, "No need, fourth uncle. I think that it's better for me to leave first! Enjoy your meal!"

After he was done speaking, Gerald patted Bea's shoulder lightly, a gesture for her to not bother with him anymore before he left the house.

"Hmph! This is my final ultimatum. He is not related to the Yalman family in any way. If I find out that any of you are still keeping in touch with him, I will sack you from the company immediately!"

Rose warned the juniors of the family.

She was trying to convey the message to Bea specifically.

Everyone nodded in agreement.

Gerald really did not expect that the grievances between the Crawford family and the Yaleman family would turn out to be so serious.

However, Gerald had no fear as all he wanted to do was to help ease the relationship between his grandmother and mother.

Gerald believed that as long as he willed it to be, things would not be too big of a problem.

What he was afraid of, was that an outcome directly the opposite of what he intended, would arise. In other words, he feared that he would be forced to have a final showdown with these folks.

So, everything would depend on his grandmother's birthday banquet tomorrow.

Realizing this fact, Gerald called up Philip immediately.

He asked Philip to prepare some gifts for him.

It was already noon.

When Bea came home, she had a very sullen expression on her face. She had obviously been given an earful from Rose.

Gerald did not know how much Bea had suffered because of him. Although Catherine remained silent, she was already looking at Gerald with a cold and unkind expression.

“Bea, come. I will buy you some clothes!”

Gerald looked over at Bea.

Bea was a good girl but she had not been living well for the past two years because of being on the receiving end of Rose’s constant bullying.

Therefore, compared to the rest of her cousins, the clothes that Bea wore were much more tattered and had much less “bling” to them.

Aside from the car, Gerald had not done anything else to show his gratitude to the girl yet.

“Ahhh? There is no need for that, Gerald!” Bea hastily rejected his offer.

“Let’s go. You can keep me company while I shop anyway!”

With that, Bea hopped into her brand-new BMW 7 Series and headed straight for the shopping district where they sold fancy branded clothing.

Beep! Beep!

Bea locked the car door.

“Giya, why the long face! Hey, hey, looks like they’ve just dropped a whole new line of clothes. C’mon, let’s enjoy shopping together, haha!”

Two girls stepped out of the car.

They were none other than Marilyn and Giya, who was forced to tag along with her...

Chapter 827

Marilyn led Giya up to the third floor.

“The clothes on the third floor are all very expensive. Are you sure you want to shop here?”

Giya asked with a half-hearted smile.

All the clothes in this shop were branded, but the clothes on the third floor were considered the *crème de la crème* of branded items.

This also happened to be the place where many young girls loved to shop around.

Even if they could not afford to buy it, they would at least have to be familiar with the items up on sale, just for the sake of keeping up with the crowd.

“We can just shop around on the third floor first. If there is something that really suits me, then I will buy it no matter what the price is!”

Marilyn replied with a beaming smile.

After that, both of them started working their way through the third floor.

At one point, they walked into a very popular branded boutique.

“Wow! Giya, look! Look how pretty this dress is! I’m gonna try it on! Hehehe!”

Marilyn had taken a liking to a long one-piece dress.

She took the dress with her to the fitting room hastily.

Giya's attention was on a men's clothing store next door.

The design of the clothes were all very cool and tasteful.

She was suddenly reminded of Gerald's dressing style, which would always be very plain and casual.

So, she thought of choosing some nice clothes for Gerald, something that would make the rest of the girls squeal.

While Marilyn was busy trying on her dress, Giya went out to take a look at the men's clothes on sale.

Upon putting on the dress, Marilyn hopped out giddily from the fitting room and struck multiple poses in front of the mirror. It was simply too beautiful, she thought to herself.

"Miss, this suits you real nice. You should buy it. This is the latest design of the year and it just hit the racks the day before yesterday. We have a new product promotion going on right now in fact!"

The salesgirl said as she approached Marilyn.

"Hehehe. Okay then. I have already seen this dress on the official website a long time ago. By the way, isn't there a purple color option for this dress? Can I try that on as well? I really like the purple design!"

"Sorry, baby girl. Someone else is trying on that purple design dress now. It is already sold out and that is our last piece!"

"Ahhh?" Marilyn gasped.

Considering how pretty this girl is, if she were to put on that purple dress, the number of heads turning would exceed two hundred percent!

Suddenly, the door of the other fitting room popped open, and out walked a girl with said purple dress in her hand. She walked straight towards the designated customer waiting area.

When Marilyn saw that it was the dress that she was looking for, she hurriedly followed after that girl.

“That dress suits you very well! Let’s buy it!”

There was a boy sitting in there, waiting for her.

“No, how could I? It’s too...too expensive. Why would I need to wear something so expensive? Just take a look at the price! This dress costs more than thirteen thousand dollars! We should just go somewhere else to buy something else instead!” The girl replied.

The boy with a wry smile shook his head.

“Gerald? So, it’s you?”

Suddenly, a voice sounded in Gerald’s ear.

Gerald lifted his head and took a look. He did not know when Marilyn had appeared behind Bea.

Her sudden appearance surprised Gerald.

“Hahaha! What a coincidence! I happen to be very interested in this purple dress so you should hand it over since you can’t afford it anyway! Salesgirl, I am not going to try it on. Wrap it up for me, will you? They cannot afford to buy it anyway!”

Marilyn was relieved when she saw that her counterpart was just Gerald.

Despite how Gerald shocked everyone yesterday, Marilyn merely thought of it as him trying to show off by acting pretentious. She thought that it was just him trying to save himself some face. Maybe even the outfit he wore yesterday was just a rental piece.

Anyway, no matter what it was, Marilyn refused to believe that Gerald could afford to pay for this dress.

“Okay, no problem!”

When the salesgirl looked at both of them, she felt the same way as well. Marilyn was dressed head-to-toe in branded apparel after all.

Bea on the other hand wore clothes that were from mediocre brands.

As for the boy, to be frank, she didn't even know what sort of clothes he was wearing.

On a subconscious level, she had already concluded that Marilyn would be the one that could afford the dress.

“Hold on. Who said that we cannot afford to buy it?” Gerald replied with a sneer.

“You?” Marilyn replied contemptuously.

After that, she flipped over the price tag of the dress and it was that moment that her jaw almost hit the ground.

“Fuck! It actually costs \$ 13,999.00?”

Marilyn was shocked.

It was far more expensive than she had anticipated.

Chapter 828

She only had about seven to nine thousand dollars with her.

“What’s the matter? Is \$13,999 too expensive for you?”

Gerald asked Marilyn while chuckling to himself.

After all, Marilyn was the one who poked his head and mocked him yesterday.

Gerald felt the urge to settle his grudge with her today.

So, Gerald responded jokingly.

“Hey, watch it. How can I possibly not be able to afford this dress?”

Marilyn thought how outrageous it would be for a pauper like Gerald to be actually looking down on her.

“Alright then, we’ll buy another dress! So, please pack this dress up for us!” Gerald replied with a mischievous smile.

The salesgirl was surprised and delighted at the same time when she heard this.

“You must be bragging! It would already be great if you could afford even one of these pieces here! Hmph! If he is going to buy two pieces, I’ll buy three! In any case, I’ll buy a piece more than him!”

Marilyn was hellbent on winning the little competition with Gerald.

“Mom, come here and take a look!”

Five other customers filed into the boutique.

It was five women.

Two of them were young and three of them were middle-aged.

Based on how they dressed, it was quite clear that they could afford the clothing on sale here. Of course, the salesgirl dropped what she was doing here and went over to serve them.

“Madam Gosling, Miss Yalaman, you’ve come! Welcome! Welcome! There are many new designs in our shop now. I can help you to pick out a few of our new items!”

“No need for that. We’ll take a look around by ourselves!”

Madam Gosling replied immediately.

All of a sudden, her daughter started tugging on her clothes.

“Mom, all of you, look! Isn’t that, that person?!”

The girl pointed in Gerald and Bea’s direction.

“Hmm? It’s Gerald! Bea is actually here with him too? Hahaha!”

Madam Gosling snickered.

That’s right. Madam Gosling was none other than Gerald’s first aunt, Rose.

The other two middle-aged women were none other than Gerald’s second and third aunt.

As for the two younger girls, they were both Gerald's cousins.

The boutique they were in offered the most expensive merchandise throughout the entire shopping center. Naturally, the patrons of the shop were all powerful and reputable.

Rose felt embarrassed to see that both Gerald and Bea were shopping for clothes here.

"Gerald, stop playing around with me! If you cannot afford it, you should just admit defeat! There's no shame in that, right?"

Fumes started appearing from Marilyn's ears.

This was in response to Gerald saying that he'd buy Bea ten pieces of clothing.

Even the salesgirl felt like reprimanding Gerald for fooling around and wasting her time.

"Miss, have you just started working here? Why would you even waste your time with such a customer?"

A voice that was filled with insult and ridicule suddenly sounded at this time.

Gerald and Bea turned their heads around to take a look.

It was none other than Rose and the others.

"Hmph! I doubt that they'd even be able to buy a sleeve here! I really have to talk to your manager and ask him not to allow such dubious and shady people into the establishment. This lowers the standard of your boutique, don't you think?!"

Rose said unceremoniously whilst looking at Gerald and Bea.

“Aunt, why are you saying things like that?” Bea asked angrily.

“Why am I saying things like this? You still dare to question me? Bea, let me ask you something. How much do you earn in a single month? How dare you shop at such a shop? Even if you have the money, you should use that money to serve your father well instead. You hate doing that, don’t you? Have you forgotten what I said at the luncheon today?” Rose replied in an insulting manner.

“That’s right, Bea. We understand what it means to be a girl, but you can’t just forget what sort of situation your family is in right now. To think that you even dare to try out the clothes here! What are you going to do if you damage their clothes!? Will you even be able to pay for these items!?”

“That’s right! That’s right!”

Their cousins chimed in as well.

Bea burst into tears as soon as she heard their words.

The salesgirl glared at Gerald and Bea contemptuously and said, “Hmph! You’re just pretending to be rich, aren’t you? See? I got scolded by a customer because of you two!”

“So are the both of you going to buy the clothes or not? If the answer is no, please leave the shop. The rest of the customers would like to try these clothes on!”

The tone of the salesgirl was neither polite nor courteous when speaking to Gerald and Bea.

Bea was about to hand the clothes over while sobbing.

“I already told you that I am going to buy ten pieces of clothing. Are you deaf?”

Gerald spoke up as he glared coldly at the snobbish salesgirl...

Chapter 829

The salesgirl was taken aback by Gerald's tone.

Even Rose and the others were surprised by his sudden change in attitude.

His voice was by no means deafening, but the hostile expression Gerald wore made everyone shudder in fear.

"Hmph! You're still adamant about buying ten of 'em huh? The cheapest of these clothes cost at least six grand! It'll cost you tens of thousands of dollars judging by the number you specified. Are you serious about your purchase?"

Rose and the others despised the feeling of being intimidated by Gerald.

Was he really planning to buy ten of these dresses?

Hahaha!

They started sneering as they ridiculed him.

Bea also tugged on Gerald's arm as she said, "Forget it. Eldest aunt is right. We will never be able to afford the clothes here. I think it's best if we leave now!"

"It's okay. I've already said that I'll buy you these clothes! Look, the ones you tried on just now looked A-okay, so why not? Miss, if you will, please help me check how much they cost. I'll be paying with my card by the way!"

Gerald whipped out his debit card.

The salesgirl nodded repeatedly upon seeing how serious he was about the purchase.

“Hold on. I was not talking to you. I am talking to you, miss. Please help me to pack these clothes up!”

Gerald said as he pointed at another salesgirl who stood at the side throughout their entire exchange.

“Okay, sir!”

The salesgirl started packing up the clothes as ordered. There were ten pieces of clothing in total.

The total price was \$120,000.00.

“Hahaha! This fool. \$120,000.00. Isn't he walking into his own tomb?”

“That's right. Even if he wants to show off, this is not the way to do it. \$120,000.00 just to buy some clothes? This is going to be an amazing show!”

Marilyn was overjoyed when she saw the total bill.

Gerald's cousins started whispering among themselves.

“Hmph! I want to see how Gerald is going to get out of this mess!”

Rose exchanged glances with one another and they sneered at Gerald with their arms crossed over their chests.

The salesgirl quickly brought out the POS machine.

Gerald typed in the password as if he had done this countless times before.

As Gerald was about to key in the last final digit of his password, the salesgirl suddenly exclaimed.

“Wait! Hold on, sir! I made a mistake!”

The salesgirl was overly nervous. After all, with a sale of \$120,000.00, she would be able to gain a commission of at least five to six thousand dollars. How could she not be nervous?

She got such a great deal without saying a single word nor moving a single muscle after all!

Her anxiety and excitement were further fuelled by all the attention she got from her colleague as well as the customers.

As a result, she accidentally keyed in an extra zero on the POS machine.

However, before she could stop him, Gerald had already keyed in his password on the POS machine. It was too late, as she could see on the display that the machine was already transferring the transaction data....

“Sir, I am so sorry but I accidentally keyed in the total amount as \$1,200,000.00 instead of \$120,000.00. I am really sorry!”

The salesgirl apologized profusely while bowing at Gerald.

“It’s okay. You don’t need to apologize. Even if you keyed in one less zero, he’d never be able to cough up that amount!”

Third aunt said.

Beep!

The POS machine's beep was loud and clear.

It stated that the transaction was successful.

It then proceeded to churn out the receipt with no hiccups whatsoever!

"What?!"

Rose, Gerald's cousins, and Marilyn were all shocked.

The transaction was actually successful?

Gerald's debit card? He actually...he actually has \$1200,000.00 in his bank card?

F*ck! Am I dreaming?

Marilyn's mouth was wide open out of disbelief.

Astonished, Rose stared at one another with the same look of disbelief. The expression on their mugs could never get any uglier than this.

Gerald, the boy born as a pauper has a million bucks in his bank account!?

The salesgirl was even more frightened when she saw the look on their faces. With trembling hands, she said, "Sorry, sir. I will refund the rest of the money to you immediately! I am really, really sorry!"

"Forget it. You don't need to refund the money to me. Don't you guys have a membership scheme? I'll just sign up for a membership card for my sister, and you just need to transfer the balance into that card."

Gerald tucked his card back into his wallet with a wry smile on his face.

Chapter 830

If Rose was simply taunting him and ridiculing him alone just now, he would not have said anything at all. Gerald was still the same old tolerant Gerald.

However, he could not allow her to insult Bea like this.

The kindness his fifth uncle had shown his own mother back then was not something that could be made up for with cold hard cash.

What Gerald wanted was justice for Bea.

To his surprise, in the process of doing so, \$1,200,000.00 had been swiped directly from his bank card.

But it did not really matter to him. After all, \$1,200,000.00 or \$120,000.00 made no difference to Gerald now. Aside from a difference in the number of digits, nothing about that sum was significant enough to frustrate him.

“But cousin, this...this is too expensive! Hurry up and get a refund!”

Bea said as she jumped around anxiously.

“What? Why would you ask him to do that? If he wants to insert that amount into a membership card for you, you should just let him do it! Hahaha! This fool! Putting so much money into a stupid card. I wanna see what he’ll do with the balance!”

As stunned and as surprised as Rose was, she still wanted to lash out against Gerald.

This was because if Gerald were to put all of that money into the membership card, then he’d never be able to do anything else aside from buying clothes.

That's what you get from tooting your own horn!

However, she was still very irritated and frustrated. That, and surprise. When did Gerald become so rich?

She suddenly lost her mood to continue shopping.

The same went for Marilyn. She had to debate with herself over and over again in her mind before buying a single dress that cost \$12,000.00 only for Gerald whom she had always looked down on, to put \$1,200,000.00 into a membership card without a hint of hesitation!!

Marilyn went out of the shop with a dejected expression.

At the same moment, Giya walked out from the shop next door.

When she saw Marilyn's gloomy appearance, she couldn't help but smile and ask, "Hey, what's wrong with our little Marilyn? Has your mood turned sour from all the shopping?"

Marilyn took a deep breath before she said, "Giya, do you believe in fate?"

"Ahhh? What kind of fate are you talking about?"

"Where a very poor person strikes gold overnight, and he becomes exceptionally rich!" Marilyn replied anxiously.

"What exactly happened?"

"I...I just ran into Gerald!"

“You saw Gerald?”

Giya suddenly felt very nervous.

“Yes! Gerald! Giya, you might not know this but Gerald...he seems a little different compared to how he was before. Back then, he used to be the poorest student in our class. Back then, he was everybody’s punching bag. I used to bully him too but do you know how wealthy he is right now? Did you know about this? He’s no longer the pauper that he was when he was still in high school!”

Giya looked around and checked out her surroundings but saw no signs of Gerald.

So, she subconsciously nodded as she replied, “The amount of money that Gerald has is not something that you can even comprehend!”

“Ahhh? Giya, what did you say?”

Marilyn did not hear Giya’s words clearly.

“Ahhh? I...I did not say anything!”

Giya came to her senses and she hurriedly denied what she had accidentally blurted out.

“Don’t think too much about it. You should just treat Gerald better from now onwards then. After all, the both of you used to be classmates!” Giya advised.

“Yeah, I guess so! I think I caught a glimpse of another side of Gerald just now, y’know, when he was swiping his card down the machine. He looked so cool and manly! Looks like I’ll have to change my attitude for the better from now on!”

When Giya saw the smile on Marilyn’s face, she could not help but feel a little uncomfortable...

“I am so angry! I am so, so angry!”

Rose slammed her hands on the steering wheel angrily on the way back home.

“Why did that woman’s son suddenly become so rich? Where did he get his million dollars from? Did he win the lottery?”

Rose kept on muttering the same thing on their entire journey home.

Just like most people, Rose also did not want her own opponent to become stronger and better than herself.

“That’s right! A million dollars ain’t small change, even to us! Sister-in-law, did you see how Gerald didn’t even blink or hesitate at all when he swiped his card?” Second aunt also said.

“You know, we thought that Gerald was simply renting his clothes to look extravagant and that he was just acting pretentious just to show off when we first met him. But it looks like everything that happened at the bar last night might actually be real!”

Gerald’s younger cousin spoke up.

“What do you mean by that? What happened at the bar last night?”

Chapter 831

“Are you saying that the clothes that Gerald wore cost just as much?” Rose asked in disbelief.

“Impossible! It is absolutely impossible! We already know about his father, Dylan Crawford’s status from back then. Like hell, their family’s that affluent! The most probable explanation is that Gerald won the lottery! He must’ve blown all that cash impulsively just now!” Rose said.

It seemed as though the million dollars Gerald spent really left a huge impact on them.

“Now that eldest aunt and the others are all gone, let’s go back to the shop and ask for a refund for this membership card. It’s way too expensive! So much money’s in there! Don’t you think it’s a waste to leave it all in there?”

“There is no need for that, Bea...”

“It’s a million bucks! How could you just brush it off like it’s nothing? Also, why...why do you have so much money?”

Bea seemed a little terrified.

Gerald laughed as he shot a glance at Bea who was behind the wheel. After that, he said, “I will tell you something, something that you can’t tell anyone else yet. This includes fifth aunt too!”

“What is it?” Bea asked.

“I am actually a rich heir and I am the kind of rich heir who has an unlimited amount of money to spend!” Gerald replied with an eager smile on his face.

“Hahaha!”

Unexpectedly, Bea suddenly laughed out loud, “Okay then, rich heir, if you’ve that much money, then please allow your humble cousin to help you to spend some of that cash!”

Bea obviously thought that Gerald was just pulling her leg.

“Cough. Cough. You can choose to believe me or not!” Gerald replied after clearing his throat.

“By the way, what gift are you planning to give to grandma for her birthday tomorrow?” Bea asked.

“I do not know what to give her either! I’ll think about it tomorrow!”

The atmosphere at the Yaleman family mansion was extremely lively.

It was Lady Yaleman's eightieth birthday today.

Compared to the previous years, her eightieth birthday banquet was much grander and multitudes livelier.

Not only were all the members of the Yaleman family present, there were multiple distinguished guests who were also invited here to celebrate Lady Yaleman's birthday.

"Each and every gift from the distinguished guests should be recorded down on paper clearly and re-checked. You absolutely mustn't be careless about this! There should be a lot of distinguished guests present this year and the ranking arrangements should be treated with utmost seriousness!"

Lady Yaleman was wearing a red festive robe early in the morning as she instructed the butler.

Lady Yaleman took her seat after that.

Upon receiving a signal from their parents, the younger generation of the family started coming forward to offer their gifts to Lady Yaleman.

"Grandma, this is the jade bracelet that I bought for you. Take a look at it and see if you like it?"

A girl came up with a sweet smile on her face.

"I like it. I like it a lot! Ooh, a piece of nephrite jade! What a good child you are!"

Lady Yaleman smiled happily.

She held the girl's hands throughout their brief exchange.

"Oh! Bea! The both of you just arrived, I presume?"

Bea had arrived with Gerald.

They happened to run into Yura and a few others.

"Bea, what kind of a gift did you buy for grandma this year? Don't tell me that you're giving her another embroidery that you made yourself again, just like you did last year! Hahaha!"

Yura and the others started cackling away.

Yura's laughter was the clearest and the loudest. After he was satisfied with mocking Bea, he shot a cold, hostile glare at Gerald.

"I didn't expect that you'd attend grandma's birthday banquet too! Hahaha! To think that you came empty-handed!" Yura said as he laughed.

After that, he whispered into Gerald's ear, "I am warning you. You should stop thinking about laying your hands on the Yalman family's assets! Don't let me catch you trying to put any weird thoughts into that old woman's head!"

Gerald quietly listened to Yura's provocative words.

He did not even bother to look at him but instead, he flashed a kind smile at Bea. "Come, let's go in now!" he said to her.

They proceeded to make their way towards grandma.

Yura was so angry that his fists were tightly-clenched out of anger.

“Country bumpkin! I will never let you off so easily!”

Yura thought indignantly to himself.

Due to the previous grievances, Yura had never liked Gerald. Despite how honest and decent that hillbilly seemed, that bastard kept stealing the limelight from Yura when they were in the bar last night.

Yura did not know what Gerald said to Brandon in the end that ended up with his head getting smashed in by Brandon in front of all his cousins.

Chapter 832

Yura placed the blame entirely on Gerald.

The thing that pissed him off most was when he finally found a goddess that he was interested in, Gerald had to butt in and screw-up his chance to shine.

“Look, grandma! This is my birthday gift to you!”

The younger generation of the family was still presenting their gifts at the main table of the birthday banquet.

Lady Yalaman was grinning from ear-to-ear; she could not conceal the happiness that she was feeling right now.

“Oh! Isn’t that Bea? What took you so long? Have you already forgotten that it is your grandmother’s birthday today?”

In walked Bea and Gerald.

Rose wore a cunning smirk as she spoke.

“How can I possibly forget about grandma’s birthday? Eldest aunt, you are too much!” Bea retorted immediately.

“Hahaha! Let’s see what kind of birthday gift Bea prepared for grandma this year-round!”

Several girls simultaneously.

Bea’s mother was visibly irritated when she heard what those girls said about her daughter. She then directed a reassuring smile at Bea whilst glancing down at the gift she was holding.

She knew that her mother would be overjoyed if she received this gift.

“Bea, hurry up and show your grandmother the gift that you’ve gotten for her!” Catherine said.

“Okay! Grandma, this is the birthday gift that I have prepared for you this year! It’s a dragon jade bracelet!”

Bea said as she opened the box carefully.

“Dragon jade bracelet?”

Lady Yaleman was stunned for a moment.

She looked down at the gift and realized, it was just as she had said, a dragon jade bracelet!

In fact, Gerald had already bought a dragon jade bracelet for Giya before this and it cost about fifteen thousand dollars.

Of course, it wasn’t like Lady Yaleman couldn’t afford such a small gift.

But she knew very well that Bea's family was not doing as well for the past few years. It was part of the reason why they could not afford to give her any decent gifts back then.

However, the fact that Bea was willing to give her a dragon jade bracelet that was worth more than fifteen thousand dollars naturally proved Bea's filial piety towards her.

"Okay! It's pretty good!" Lady Yalaman said with a smile.

The dragon jade bracelet had already completely won over Lady Yalaman's heart, and her reaction was completely different from when she was presented with the nephrite jade bracelet from earlier on.

The expression on Gerald's second aunt and cousin turned sour immediately.

"Bea, I heard that you're working as an intern in the group's project department for a couple of months now. Sigh, you're all grown up in a blink of an eye. If you perform well, granny will teach you the way of the trade, and maybe then, you'll be able to lead a bigger department on your own!" said Lady Yalaman.

"Thank you, grandma!"

Bea was very happy when she heard her grandmother's words. Catherine was elated to hear those words as well.

"Grandma, how can you be so sure that this is an authentic dragon jade bracelet? After all, there are countless knock-offs in the market!" sneered Yura as he approached them.

The expression on Bea's face changed slightly.

The same went for Catherine, who finally decided to stand up for her daughter, "Yura, what are you talking about? Let me tell you. This bracelet is something my mother gave me, and now it's passed on to Bea. It's impossible that it's a knock-off!"

Catherine was telling the truth. She had really gone all in at this time.

“Grandma, I learned some basic identification techniques when I was studying abroad. Why don’t you let me take a look at it?” Yura said.

Yura’s words cast doubt in Lady Yalaman’s heart, which quickly became apparent on her face.

After all, she knew her daughter-in-law, Catherine very well. If this really was such a precious item, why would Catherine be willing to give it to her as a birthday gift?

Lady Yalaman handed the dragon jade bracelet over to Yura.

“Oh, man. There’s no doubt about it. It’s a fake!”

Yura shook his head with a mere glance at the bracelet.

“You don’t know what you’re talking about Yura! What do you know?” Catherine replied anxiously.

“Hahaha! Fifth aunt, why do you sound so anxious? Okay then. I’ll keep my mouth shut. If you say it is authentic, we’ll just treat it as such!”

He proceeded to hand the jade bracelet over to Catherine.

However, before poor Catherine could grab it, he released his grip deliberately.

Clink!

With a crisp sound, the jade bracelet shattered into a million pieces on the cold hard ground...

Chapter 833

“My jade bracelet!”

The jade bracelet had shattered into a million pieces.

Catherine's eyes widened from the shock.

Bea was also taken aback by what Yura had just done.

This jade bracelet was the most precious treasure in their family.

Her grandmother had given this jade bracelet to her mother before it was passed down to Bea.

The reason why Catherine was willing to let go of the bracelet as a gift for Lady Yalaman was quite simple.

Her husband was currently lying in bed in a vegetative state and there was no more hope for her.

She hoped that her daughter would be able to prove herself and gain recognition from the Yalaman family, someday in the future.

As long as Lady Yalaman was pleased and satisfied, then Bea would be able to move forward.

Otherwise, if Rose was allowed to gain full control of the company in the future, then all hope would truly be lost for Bea and her family.

But now, this final bastion of hope had been smashed into the cold hard ground!

Yura had obviously done this on purpose!

"Give me back my jade bracelet! I want you to compensate me for my jade bracelet!"

Catherine's eyes were red and blinded by rage as she rushed forward and grabbed Yura forcefully by the collar.

Everyone at the birthday banquet stopped what they were doing and stared at the source of the commotion.

"Stop it! Do you still know how to behave yourself?!"

Lady Yaleman yelled angrily at them both. She was a woman who cared about her public appearance after all.

"Mom! Yura did it on purpose! He deliberately broke my dragon jade bracelet!" Catherine complained in a distressed tone.

"Oh! It's just a lousy bracelet anyway! Chances are, it might even be a fake! So what if it was an authentic dragon jade bracelet?"

"Aren't you a bit too old to be quarreling with your own junior? Have you no shame?"

Second aunt chimed in.

"It's mom's birthday today here you are, trying to start a fight. How unruly can you be!? Can't you behave yourself!?"

"Okay, that's enough! 'Tis nothing but a jade bracelet! There's nothing we can do now, since it has already been broken. I'm too old to be wearing such a thing anyway! What Rose said is not exactly wrong. Do you really need to take your anger out on Yura like this?" Lady Yaleman said casually.

Catherine's vision blurred up from the tears that were welling up in her eyes.

Gerald noticed how biased his grandmother was, even when Yura was clearly in the wrong here. He had purchased a similar dragon jade bracelet before as well, so he knew that Catherine's bracelet was indeed not a mere knock-off.

The reason why Yura did what he did was out of fear that Bea would gain his grandmother's love and affection.

It wasn't long before everyone shifted their attention towards Gerald.

"Gerald, I see that you've got nothing with you. Did you really come empty-handed to the banquet?"

Rose asked with a cold expression on her face.

That's right. In the entire Yalaman family, Rose hated her fifth brother-in-law's family the most, followed by her fourth brother-in-law's.

However, a new person has popped up at the top of her "most-hated" list, and that person was none other than Gerald.

This was in light of everything that happened yesterday.

"Hmph! Sister-in-law, maybe you were right! I guess he's too broke to even afford a gift for Lady Yalaman at this point! Haha!" Second aunt also said.

It was then that Lady Yalaman noticed Gerald's hands were indeed empty.

So, she felt a little upset in her heart.

"Forget it! I don't need his gift anyway!" Lady Yalaman replied indifferently.

Gerald remained silent and he did not say anything at all.

“Mom, I think that you have to reprimand Bea and correct her ways. She keeps drifting off during work. My guess is that she’s simply here to squander away all the inheritance money! We should not allow this to go on any longer!” Rose continued saying.

Catherine shot back at Rose hastily, “Just what do you mean by that? When has Bea not worked hard for our group?”

“All of you should just stop arguing right now! I do not know which one of you is telling the truth but only those who are worthy shall receive any sort of reward! Bea, I will keep my eye on you from now on. If you fail to meet my expectations, don’t blame grandma for being heartless when the day comes!” warned Lady Yalman.

“Hahaha. Grandma, you do not need to worry about me. If my eldest aunt said she is telling the truth, then so be it! I don’t feel so well, so I’ll be heading back first. Do enjoy the banquet though!”

Bea replied with red, misty eyes.

Bea stood up and left immediately after saying that.

“Bea! Bea!”

Catherine chased after her daughter.

Gerald frowned. It seemed as though this was not the first time that Rose and her son, Yura had targeted Bea and her mother.

Worried about Bea’s condition, Gerald too tagged along behind Catherine.

“See, mom? If Bea can act like this in front of you, it’s not that hard to imagine how she usually acts in front of me at our workplace!”

Chapter 834

Rose said.

“Hmph! She can leave if she wants to! Out of sight, out of mind!” Lady Yaleman responded coldly.

She then turned around to take a look at the scene of the banquet.

“What’s going on? There were so many distinguished guests at my birthday banquet last year around this time. Where have they all gone this year?”

Lady Yaleman suddenly realized that something was wrong.

Yuma replied, “Yeah, it does feel rather odd. Why are there so few guests here today? I mean, didn’t I personally invite them here to the banquet?”

On Lady Yaleman’s face was a sour expression.

She signaled for her butler, Sheldon to step forward.

She asked him about the low turnout rate for the guests they had specially invited to the event.

Sheldon replied, “Lady Yaleman, I’m sorry but I too have no idea why this is happening. Many of the distinguished guests and partners that we invited suddenly called to say that something has happened and they cannot make it here anymore. They simply asked me to congratulate you on their behalf! As of now, there have been more than thirty chairmen of various companies that rang us up to inform us about their non-attendance!”

“What?”

Lady Yaleman exploded angrily, “Hmph! I understand now. They must have planned this together! Looks like our family’s really on the decline now! If it were a few decades ago, this place would’ve been packed

to the brim whenever the Yaleman family hosted an event. But now, people aren't even bothering to attend the event, even after we have personally sent them an invitation!"

Yuma and the rest remained silent.

"Yuma, have you already gotten the project that I asked you to bid for? Or did we come back empty-handed?" Lady Yaleman asked.

"Our capital turnover is a major problem right now. Mom, I am already working on it as fast as I possibly can. I'll come up with a solution for the supply chain issue before tomorrow ends. After that, I'll try to get our hands on a lucrative project!" replied Yuma.

"Dear God, our home no longer has the feel of a proper home, and the same's happening to our bloody business! Are we really going to fall behind the Long and Quarrington families just like this?" Lady Yaleman said dejectedly.

Suddenly.

The butler suddenly rushed into the mansion from the main entrance.

"Ma'am! Ma'am!"

"What is going on, Sheldon?" Lady Yaleman asked.

"You...you should hurry up and come out to take a look. There's a convoy outside with gifts for you!"

Sheldon said and he looked very nervous.

"Huh?"

Lady Yaleman was surprised.

Sheldon would never react in such an exaggerated way if they were ordinary gifts from ordinary guests.

So, who could it possibly be?

Lady Yaleman was momentarily taken aback.

So, she got up from her seat and followed Sheldon out of the house.

Yuma, Rose, and the rest also followed behind them out of curiosity.

When they finally got out of the mansion, they saw more than a dozen Rolls-Royce Phantoms outside the door. These vehicles cost at least three million dollars a pop.

A team of bodyguards dressed in black were standing in line.

Each of them held a gift box in their hands.

“Mr. Crawford from the Crawford family sends these gifts to you, Lady Yaleman! The Crawford family wishes you a very happy birthday!”

The leader of the bodyguards finally spoke up.

Lady Yaleman and the others were all dumbfounded and at a loss for words.

A presentation of gifts could not get any fancier than this!

Seconds later, the first bodyguard opened the gift box in his hands.

“A thousand-year-old ginseng!”

“What? Thousand-year-old ginseng?”

Everyone was surprised.

“An ancient white marble pot!”

“What?”

Lady Yalaman was visibly moved by the gifts she saw.

Yuma and Rose on the other hand could only swallow nervously.

“An authentic Henri Matisse’s painting!”

The third gift box was the next to be opened.

“An authentic Henri Matisse’s painting?!”

Everyone clustered around the butlers.

“Mr. Crawford from the Crawford family? Who is he? How could he possibly be so generous and extravagant?”

Chapter 835

There were still a lot more unopened gift boxes.

This made everyone in the Yalaman family, including Lady Yalaman herself, feel very bedazzled.

It would not have been an exaggeration to describe each and every one of these gifts as a rare treasure.

Every single gift had its own story to tell and all had incredibly rich histories. They were all simply invaluable!

Lady Yaleman was filled with excitement.

At the ripe old age of 80, she had obviously been around for quite a while, but never in her life had she ever witnessed such a grand scene before!

“Lady Yaleman, this is the list of gifts presented today. Please take a look at it!”

The young man leading the troupe of butlers handed a list over to Lady Yaleman in a respectful manner.

“No, no need for that! I don’t need to look at it anymore! Please thank Mr. Crawford for all these gifts. However, you must tell him that these gifts are really too expensive! By the way, I don’t think that I’ve ever met this Mr. Crawford that you’re talking about before. Can you tell me who your master is?” Lady Yaleman asked with a smile.

The cold atmosphere that enveloped the scene melted away in an instant.

“Lady Yaleman, if there is nothing else, then we’ll be leaving now! Now if you’ll excuse us.”

It was obvious that these people were told to keep their mouths sealed.

“Why don’t you stay back for a drink?” Lady Yaleman asked.

“I appreciate your generous offer, but I really can’t! I’m sorry.”

As soon as the young man bid them farewell, the rest of his colleagues climbed aboard the cars and left immediately.

“God, can it be anymore lavish than that!?”

The bodyguards and entourage were all so calm and disciplined! Just who are the Crawfords and what sort of family were they?”

The members of the Yaleman family were all taken aback.

“Mom? Mr. Crawford from the Crawford family? I don’t think we’ve ever met him before. Why are they giving us such expensive gifts? A rough estimate places these gifts at close to a hundred and fifty million dollars!”

Yuma was so excited that his hands were trembling uncontrollably.

“Yeah, they sure as hell look like they cost that much! Mr. Crawford from the Crawford family, a real generous fella ain’t he!? But isn’t it odd that we’ve never met them before? I’ve been around for so long and yet I have never heard of such a family before. Maybe they’re one of the juniors’ classmates?”

Lady Yaleman said in disbelief.

Astonished, all of the juniors exchanged glances with one another.

Even the best of classmates would never be willing to present birthday gifts worth more than one hundred and fifty million dollars! What Lady Yaleman said sounded simply a little too far-fetched.

“Mom, you don’t need to worry that much about this. If they’re willing to provide such extravagant gifts, they’re yours no matter what! If you sell any one of these items, you’ll undoubtedly be able to resolve the financial crisis our family’s facing right now!”

Rose said with a sparkle in her eyes.

“Shut up! Stop blabbering such nonsense! These are gifts the Crawford family has generously decided to present to me. Who gave you the courage to even make such an outrageous suggestion? No one is allowed to touch them before I ascertain the true identity of this Mr. Crawford. If anyone dares to lay their hands on any one of these gifts, I will kick him or her out of the family, no questions asked!” Lady Yaleman replied.

At the same time, Lady Yaleman was staring intensely at the convoy that was driving into the horizon.

“Mom, what are you looking at?”

Yuma came forward and asked when he realized that he would not be able to get his hands on any of his mother’s birthday gifts, for now at least.

“I am looking at those people who got out of the cars just now. Yuma, did you see how well-trained and disciplined those men were? They’re not the subordinates of your run-of-the-mill rich family, that’s for sure! Maybe they’re working for one of the top families around here!”

“In other words, we have to figure out the identity of this Mr. Crawford as soon as possible so that we can get in touch with him and ask him to help us to get through this ordeal!”

Lady Yaleman said in foresight.

“Understood, mom!”

“Hmm. There is actually another possibility!”

The second aunt suddenly chimed in.

“Hmm? What could it be?”

“Perhaps Mr. Crawford fancies and is interested in one of the young ladies in the Yaleman family? Maybe he’s giving us all these gifts now as a lead-up to his marriage proposal in the future?”

The second aunt said with a cunning smile.

Among all of them, Ysabel, the second aunt's daughter was the most beautiful girl with the most outstanding temperament.

She was simply trying to tell everyone else that the wealthy Mr. Crawford might very likely be interested in her own daughter.

"Hahaha! You are really thinking too much!"

Rose became unhappy as soon as she heard this.

After all, her son, Yura was supposed to be the future heir of the family.

Why, if she isn't spewing all this bullcrap just to try and get in good graces with Lady Yalaman!

They might work together as a team when the situation called for it, in the end, it was personal interests that reigned above all. Thus, it was inevitable for their goals to diverge.

Chapter 836

"Hmm? But what she said made sense too. A young master from a top-tier family would never be cumbersome in doing things and they would never make their intentions direct and clear either. There was a real possibility that Mr. Crawford had indeed fallen for one of the young ladies from the Yalaman family!"

"Ysabel, you've just started working with the company recently after studying abroad for years. I believe you have met a lot of people and participated in many different events and occasions, yes? Do you remember encountering any such powerful and formidable young masters?"

Lady Yalaman asked. After all, she was perfectly aware of how eye-catching Ysabel was. Yeah, Bea was on par with her beauty but she was rarely exposed to grander events and the outside world compared to Ysabel.

Ysabel took a moment to think about her experience before she replied, "I think so, grandma!"

"Well, if that's the case, then we'll count it as a blessing for the Yaleman family! Ysabel, if there is anything that you want or need in the future, do not hesitate to ask grandma for it!" Lady Yaleman said.

"Thank you, grandma!" Ysabel replied excitedly.

These words foreshadowed the possibility that Ysabel would be able to secure a high position for herself in the company.

Grandma held Ysabel's hand as they returned to the mansion.

It was around this time that Yuma suddenly received a phone call.

"What did you just say? Can you repeat yourself one more time?"

The expression on Yuma's face changed immediately.

After hanging up, it seemed as though all color had been drained from Yuma's face instantly.

"Mom!"

Yuma was a little perplexed and he was in a state of utter stupefaction as he approached Lady Yaleman.

"What's wrong?"

"Something happened to the company!"

“What happened?”

The expression on Lady Yaleman’s face changed immediately.

Yuma gulped nervously and said, “For the past couple of days, the company’s supply chain had been under strain, so I followed my usual procedure of applying for a loan with the bank. My subordinate just called to say that something’s gone wrong with the loan! The bank has just rejected our loan application!”

“What?”

Lady Yaleman really did not expect things to turn south so fast.

“What did you use as collateral?” Lady Yaleman asked.

“I put up the existing land that the Yaleman family was going to use for our project. I have always done the same thing and it would always end up with success. But the bank just informed us that they won’t be releasing the land back to us anymore! We’ve tried to negotiate but nothing’s moving forward!”

“It must be the Long family! It has to be the Long family!”

Yuma said with a pale look on his face.

Turns out, the guarantor Yuma had relied on was the Long family. To be exact, it was one of the more senior members of the family who had personally approached him to talk about the loan.

He was completely oblivious to the fact that he had walked right into a trap they’d set up just for him.

They were also interested in that piece of land after all.

Yuma’s realization came about a tad bit too late.

Lady Yalaman was so infuriated that she slapped Yuma viciously across his face.

The Long family had always been a long-standing rival of the Yalaman family. However, Yuma had been blinded by his lust for money, that he was willing to court the risk of collaborating with his enemies.

Considering how powerful and influential the Long family was, they were able to manipulate the bank's choice with just a snap of their finger.

"You, you...are you trying to piss me off as much as you can?!"

Lady Yalaman said as she waved the walking stick in her hand.

"Mom, what are we going to do now? We are already halfway through our project now. Is the Long family trying to take advantage of all our preparations?"

Yuma asked with a dejected expression.

Slap!

"You useless little thing! Don't ask me that!"

Lady Yalaman was so angry that she didn't hesitate to slap Yuma the second time. She was so angry that she had lost all steam to proceed with her birthday celebration. Fuming from the ears, she stormed off into the building!

...

"Bea, are you okay?"

Bea cried as she ran all the way home.

Gerald followed her back.

Bea ran straight into the fifth uncle's room. She held his hand as she sobbed away...

Chapter 837

"Dad, I am useless. I couldn't even speak up and defend mom when everybody's attacking her! I am a disappointment! I'm so sorry that I failed to live up to your expectations!" Bea said as she cried.

"Mom gave me her favorite and most precious bracelet with the intention of giving it to grandma as a birthday gift, to please her and make her happy. She did this hoping that I'll strive forward in the company! But Yura broke the bracelet! He did it on purpose, I know he did! Everyone saw with their own two eyes what he did!"

"But dad, grandma turned the other cheek and accused mom of overreacting. She said that it was nothing more than just a jade bracelet. Dad, could it be that in grandma's eyes, nothing can ever be comparable to Yura at all?"

Bea felt seriously aggrieved today.

Usually, she would just endure it when everyone else ridiculed her or her mother.

However, this time, there was a blatant display of unfairness.

No longer able to put up with it anymore, she ran all the way back home.

"Don't you know how much Rose hates you, or me and mom? Every day, she'll try to find all sorts of reasons to send us into exile from the family! Fine! I'll never go back to the Yalman family from now on!"

Bea said. She buried her head into her father's bed and continued sobbing away.

Gerald could only pat her shoulder gently as he tried his best to comfort her.

Although Bea was a kind and tolerant girl, she had her own self-esteem too. No one on Earth will ever be able to endure a never-ending cycle of discrimination and bullying.

No one else understood what Bea was feeling right now, aside from Gerald himself.

Speaking of which, if Bea's family did not help his mother back then, they would not have ended up in such a terrible state.

Since his mother had already entrusted him with dealing with this issue, Gerald would have to come up with a solution to end his fifth uncle's peril!

"Cousin, I am sorry that I made you worry. I'm so sorry that you didn't even get to enjoy the banquet today!"

Bea started to apologize before she had even truly stopped sobbing. She wiped the tears away from her face while sniffing incessantly.

"It's okay! Listen, Bea, you've got to stop having such bleak thoughts. Everything will be better in the future. It certainly will, and you have my word on that!"

Gerald said as he held Bea's hand.

"Yes, I do hope so!"

Bea nodded.

Bea's cell phone suddenly rang.

Looking at the caller ID revealed that it was a phone call from Sheldon, Lady Yaleman's butler.

"The Yaleman family is holding an emergency family meeting. Everyone has to be here as soon as possible!"

After saying that, Sheldon hung up the phone immediately.

"Go and wash your face and we'll head over, pronto!" Gerald said.

"Like hell, I'm going there! I'm not even going to step foot in that dreaded place! Finally, I understand why my aunt refused to stay there, despite being such an outstanding and capable individual! Seriously, sooner or later, I'm going to die from all the torment they've put me through!" Bea replied angrily.

"How could you say that? You have to think about your mother as well. I'm sure your eldest aunt will keep on making all sorts of ludicrous remarks about her. You should at least go for now!" Gerald replied with a smile.

Bea thought about it for a moment before she nodded slightly.

Finally, she agreed with Gerald's words.

The meeting ended at two o'clock in the afternoon.

Gerald did not go along with Bea to the emergency family meeting. Instead, he stayed at home to help his fifth uncle work his limbs to keep them functioning.

Bea finally came home with Catherine from the meeting.

Gerald could hear Catherine cursing loudly as soon as they came back.

“Rose I swear to God, this will be a fight to the death! There will be no end to this until blood is spilled! How dare you bully someone like this! I’m coming for you!”

Catherine cursed.

“Fifth aunt, what’s wrong?”

Gerald asked.

Catherine did not reply to his question. Her eyes were red and tears were welling up in them as she walked straight into the house.

Bea was also in a visibly bad mood.

However, instead of ignoring him, she replied to Gerald.

“Cousin, something terrible has happened to the Yalerman family. Everything is a complete mess now!”

Chapter 838

“Something happened?”

Bea proceeded to explain to Gerald what had happened to the Yalerman family.

To put it briefly, the Yalerman family, which was already down in the dumps had just been stabbed in the back by the Long family, again.

The Long family had set their crosshairs on the Yalerman family’s main source of income, which was also the largest remaining development project they had on hand.

This was in spite of the fact that the Yalerman family’s finances were well-structured enough for them to retaliate.

However, both of them had control over massive industries which further fuelled their never-ending demand for more capital.

This was especially so for the kind of business their family was directly involved in. It was the Yaleman family's immediate lifeline, without which they would cease to exist.

Such a massive project had been yanked out of their hands.

It was natural for them to feel the pain at first instance.

When Lady Yaleman was lecturing Rose for her mistakes, she shoved the blame to someone else.

To be more exact, she pressured Bea into getting a new project for the company.

Lady Yaleman was so frustrated that she told anyone who was inactive and wasn't willing to chip in to get lost from the family.

She pointed her finger directly at Bea and Gerald's fifth aunt.

This naturally pissed the both of them off.

"Hahaha. Is that all? Then it should be a pretty easy job!"

Gerald said with a wry smile on his face after listening to Bea.

"Cousin, the Yaleman family is in a complete mess right now, so don't joke around with me anymore! God! My mother and I are both really frustrated right now. This is obviously all my eldest uncle's fault. He was the one who got us into this mess so why are they shoving the blame to us instead?!"

Bea started complaining.

“Why would I be joking with you? Y’know, grandma’s not feeling this way because you guys have just lost this project. After all, the Yalman family is not desperately in need of money. However, she is feeling anxious because the Yalman family has no new projects anymore. The Yalman family specializes in engineering development. Having a project on hand is like constantly having an advertising campaign. It all pays to have our name circulating among our potential clients. Without a project, the only outcome will be a downward spiral, and it’s this thing that grandma’s really worried about!” Gerald replied.

“I guess you’re right. But even though I’m in the project department, I can’t just handle the entire project on my own. Rose is supposed to be in charge of all of this. I knew she was just trying to get rid of me and my mother! She won’t stop until we’re out of the family!”

“Then, you should just gain a few large-scale projects for the Yalman Group and show her that you’re a capable person. I’ll help you with that!” Gerald replied with a smile.

“There you go, pulling my leg again!”

“I am not joking with you! I am dead serious!”

Gerald shook his head before he whipped out his cell phone.

After uttering a few words into the phone.

Gerald looked at Bea and, “It’s done. You can go to the headquarters of the Trustdeck Group later in the afternoon and the person-in-charge there will hand over the project to you, okay?”

“Cousin brother, you know people in the Trustdeck Group?”

Bea always felt something mysterious about Gerald.

“Yep! Sure do! One of my classmates works there!”

Gerald replied as he feigned ignorance.

After all, it was not the time for him to reveal his identity yet. Although there was no need for him to keep any secrets from Bea, there were still some things that he thought were very troublesome to explain.

“Don’t worry about it. When have I ever lied to you? After going there, you’ll be meeting someone named Mr. Kayden Zelly. He’s the guy in charge of the project!” Gerald replied seriously.

Bea nodded when she realized Gerald wasn’t fooling her.

Nothing posed much of a difficulty for Gerald who had already gained full control over all the family businesses in Weston.

Of course, Bea wasn’t going to waste her time talking to Gerald.

After freshening up, Bea headed straight for the headquarters of the Trustdeck Group. She did so having complete faith in her cousin, that he wasn’t bamboozling her.

Trustdeck Group was a massive corporation in Yanken. It was no family business, but it was commonly regarded as the God of Wealth for many family businesses.

Therefore, their strength and influence were absolutely unimaginable.

“Miss, there are a lot of clients here today so please wait in the VIP waiting area!”

When Bea arrived at their building, a customer service representative led Bea to the VIP waiting area in a very respectful manner.

After entering the waiting area.

Bea saw several of her acquaintances waiting inside.

Simultaneously, all of those acquaintances saw Bea too.

“Oh my! Why if it isn’t Bea? You came here too?”

Chapter 839

“It’s you guys?”

Bea frowned as soon as she saw them.

Sitting there was none other than her eldest uncle’s family of three and also her second uncle’s family of three.

What happened today fostered the hatred Bea had for Rose and the rest of the Yalaman family.

“How disrespectful of you, Bea. Aren’t you supposed to greet your elders when you see them? Have you no manners, or even a basic sense of courtesy!?”

Rose’s response was cold as ever.

Yuma glared at her with an angry expression.

“What are you doing here?” he questioned.

“I am here to discuss a project of ours!”

Bea had a bag she was holding. Everyone in the VIP waiting area was all either bosses or some local tycoon. Either that or they were second-rate owners of their respective enterprises, just like her eldest uncle.

She was the only person here who was dressed like an ordinary employee.

“Hmph! What did you say? You’re here to talk about a project?” Rose asked while laughing in Bea’s face.

She stared at Bea as if she was looking at a fool.

“Do you know that this is the Trustdeck Group we’re talking about? Why don’t you take a look around you again and see what sort of people are waiting here right now? You really think that you will have the honor of working with these folks based on your abilities?”

The second aunt said as she smiled wryly.

“Hey, maybe Bea’s starting to panic because of what you said earlier today. Maybe she finally realized that she’s nothing but a liability to the family! Maybe she’s so terrified of being kicked out of the family that she’s got no choice but to try her luck here!”

Yura shook his head as he directed a bitter smile at Bea.

“That sounds about right! Never have I ever heard of ordinary employees coming to the headquarters of the Trustdeck Group just to talk to the person-in-charge about a pathetic little project. Bea, I’m warning you, don’t you even think about telling them that you’re a part of our family! You bring nothing but shame and embarrassment to our name!”

Ysabel said contemptuously.

Bea was furious but she paid them no heed. She sat down at the corner of the VIP waiting area.

“You know what, forget it. Let’s just ignore that silly girl. Yura, didn’t you say that your classmate from M Country is working here as well? Your classmate’s father knows Mr. Huddell, who is the manager here, right? Why isn’t he here yet?” Yuma asked.

They were here to ask for his help.

If Yura could get his hands on a project this time, his position as the future heir of the Yaleman family would be set in stone.

This was the reason why they’ve decided to come here.

The second eldest, however, was a shameless bunch, so they too decided to follow Yura and his family all the way here.

However, Yuma was not afraid that they would steal the spotlight from Yura.

“I have already made a phone call just now. Mr. Huddell’s still in a meeting. My classmate’s father has already told him about this just now. Since he knows that we’re from the Yaleman family and have personally come here to see him, I have faith that he won’t ignore our pleas.”

Yura replied confidently.

“Alright then!”

It was around this moment that a beautiful receptionist approached them.

“Are you Mr. Yuma Yaleman?”

“Yes!”

“Hello, Mr. Yaleman. Mr. Huddell has just finished his meeting. Please enjoy a cup of tea while you wait here. I will bring you over to Mr. Huddell’s office to proceed with your discussion later!”

“Okay! Thank you very much!”

Yuma and Rose were overjoyed when they realized their plans were going smoothly.

At the same time, however, they sighed under their breaths upon realizing that they would have to lower themselves in front of another person in order to get what they want.

To tell you the truth, Mr. Huddell was merely an assistant manager. He was just one of the many managers in the secretarial department.

It wasn’t like they had better options though.

What Yuma desperately needed now were projects which would secure his position in the Yaleman family.

After all, there were also the Long and Quarrington families in the equation, meaning the Trustdeck Group had many options to choose from.

“Are you Miss Yaleman? I just checked and I didn’t see any appointments made under your name?”

The receptionist shifted her attention over to Bea.

“Ah? Do I need to make an appointment? My cousin told me to come and there’d be someone waiting for me here!”

Chapter 840

Bea said a little nervously.

“Your cousin? May I know who he is? Who did he ask you to look for here?”

The receptionist working the front desk had a very good temperament and it was clear that she had received special training for serving their clients. She treated everyone in the room with respect, even the plainly-dressed Bea.

“His name is Gerald Crawford. He told me to come here and look for a man named Mr. Kayden Zelly!”

The receptionist at the front desk shook her head and with a painful smile, she told Bea, “I am sorry but there is no one named Kayden Zelly here. We have never heard of anyone called Gerald Crawford either. Are you sure you didn’t make a mistake?”

“What?”

Bea’s nervousness spiked upon hearing the receptionist’s response. This was especially so because everyone had their eyes on her. She started blushing out of embarrassment.

“Oh my god! What did I say just now? God, how embarrassing! What a fool she was to come all the way here!”

Speechless, Ysabel covered her face to shield herself from the awkward atmosphere.

“Whose connection did she say she was relying on? Gerald Crawford? Has this girl gone mad? Gerald is the one who made her come here? Hahaha! Even the receptionist has never heard of that name she said!” Rose sneered.

Bea was so nervous that she clenched her fists tightly, clueless as to what to do next.

“Yura! Uncle Yaleman! Everything’s already settled. Mr. Huddell will come over here in a short while. You guys should drink up first!”

A young man showed up with a bright smile on his face.

He was obviously none other than Yura's classmate.

"Miss Lacroix, what's wrong?"

Yura's classmate glanced at the front desk, this time with a much more half-hearted smile.

The receptionist at the front desk replied, "Miss Yalerman said that she's here on her cousin's recommendation. She said she's looking for someone called Mr. Kayden Zelly. Tobias, you have not heard of anyone called Kayden Zelly working here, have you?"

"No, I don't think I've ever heard of that name before as well!" Tobias replied while shaking his head.

Taking up a more dominant posture, he told Bea, "Listen, would you like to re-check with that cousin of yours to ask if you're in the right company?"

Everyone in the room started laughing as soon as they heard him say that.

"Embarrassing! God this is humiliating!" Yuma said angrily.

"You fool! You buffoon! Gerald is just lying to you. You sure are thick-skinned, aren't you? Should Mr. Huddell hear about this matter, he'll undoubtedly treat our family as a bunch of clowns! I'm telling Lady Yalerman about your acts when we get home later!"

Rose said while poking her finger against Bea's skull.

"Why don't you look at that fool's character and personality? Do you seriously believe everything that he says?"

"No, my cousin would never lie to me! He's not that kind of a person!" Bea refuted their words immediately.

“Hmph! You’re literally the only person who treats him as your actual cousin! He is nothing but a fool, and so are you!” Ysabel replied.

“Oh! Mr. Huddell is here!”

Someone called out.

A middle-aged man dressed in a tailored suit and polished leather shoes walked out of the elevator into the VIP waiting area with a group of female assistants.

The assistants parted into two neat rows.

There were about forty people.

It was Mr. Huddell’s personal way of welcoming his guests.

Some of the leaders of their respective departments were present as well.

Mr. Huddell was focused on arranging their positions, from the front, all the way to the back.

“Wow! Miss Lacroix, is a VIP coming today? Maybe it’s some big executive from the senior management of some MNC?”

Tobias was stunned. “They’re actually preparing a welcoming ceremony!”

“I’ve no idea. We’re not qualified enough to get in touch with any of the senior management executives. Only people like Mr. Huddell is authorized to do that!”

The receptionist at the front desk replied.

Trustdeck Group was a massive corporation and it was divided into three different classes, low-level, mid-level, and high-level management.

The front desk only had contact with people from the low and mid-levels, never anyone from the high-level management.

Such a scene more likely than not was a sign that someone from the high-level management was coming...

Chapter 841

“Who could it be?”

As the others looked at each other in dismay, Manager Huddell—who was making use of his free time—entered the VIP reception room.

As soon as Yuma saw him, he gave a subtle smile before saying, “Manager Huddell!”

“Sincerest apologies for being so inattentive toward you today, Chairman Yalaman. There’s just been so much to do! I do hope that you’ll bear with me for the moment,” replied Manager Huddell.

Hearing that, Yuma then said, “You’re being way too cordial. I’m well aware that the Trustdeck Group is extremely busy every day! While that is so, you still took the time to attend, and I appreciate that!”

In response, Manager Huddell sighed before saying, “Speaking of which, Chairman Yalaman, I’ve asked around regarding the incident you mentioned back then. However, if it’s related to bidding and proposal affairs, Chairman Zelly—my superior—currently has no time to look into it! You may have to wait for a while before he can attend to that incident!”

“It’s all good, Manager Huddell! I trust in your ability to make arrangements!” replied Yuma in a somewhat servile manner.

Upon hearing that, Manager Huddell then looked at his watch before saying, in a doubtful tone, “How odd, though. Chairman Zelly said that the person should have arrived long ago. I wonder why they haven’t arrived yet...”

'Could she already be here...?' Manager Huddell thought to himself.

As his gaze fell upon the door, Leah—a female receptionist—asked, “Could I know who you’re waiting for, Manager Huddell?”

“Ah, speak of the devil. I was just about to go look for you! Could you check with reception on whether Miss Bea Yalaman has arrived?”

“Miss Bea Yalaman?” repeated Leah, clearly stunned as she turned to look at Bea who was still standing at the side.

Yuma and Rose themselves were stupefied.

'What the hell? Why is Manager Huddell looking for Bea?'

“M-manager Huddell... This girl here is Bea Yalaman!” replied Leah as she pointed at Bea.

The moment he heard that, Manager Huddell’s expression immediately changed and he rushed toward her before asking, “You’re Miss Yalaman? Could you be here today to meet Chairman...?”

“That’s right. I came to meet Chairman Kayden Zelly,” replied Bea with a nod, finally able to breathe a sigh of relief.

'That’s right, why would Gerald ever prank me on such a thing? He told me that he had a way, and I believe that he’ll keep to his word.'

Getting the confirmation he needed, Manager Huddell then slapped his thighs before saying, “Alas! I hadn’t anticipated that you’d be here so early! Chairman Zelly had even ordered me to personally welcome you!”

Hearing him say that, everyone became even more stunned than before! This was especially so for Rose whose mouth was now gaping so wide that it looked almost comical.

“M-Manager Huddell, are you certain you aren’t mistaken...? There really is a person called Kayden Zelly in the group?” asked Rose in disbelief as Ysabel and Yura glared at Bea with burning jealousy.

“He’s one of the superiors here who’s always kept a low profile. Speaking of which, Madam Gosling, it’s rather imprudent of you to address my superior by name, don’t you think?” replied Manager Huddell in an astonished tone.

Being one of the superiors in the group who preferred working behind the scenes, there was no need for casual small fries to even know Kayden’s name.

“I-I apologize! I just wanted to confirm whether there’s been a mistake! After all, Bea’s a mere employee in my company. Why would she even have the privilege of personally being welcomed by you?” said Rose.

“The only person who knows why is Chairman Zelly. Regardless, you’re here to negotiate the project, right, Miss Yalerman?” replied Manager Huddell respectfully as he turned to look at Bea with a smile.

After seeing Bea’s firm nod, Manager Huddell then continued, “Very well. Chairman Zelly’s already prepared a signing ceremony for you upstairs. If there isn’t anything else, let’s proceed with that now, shall we?”

“Huh? We’re signing it already?” replied Bea, astonished.

Bea had initially thought that she would still need to negotiate carefully upon arriving. After all, though Gerald had proper connections—just like Yura did—that would only grant her access into the battlefield.

To her surprise, things were running incredibly smoothly. Even more surprising was the fact that her cousin was actually acquainted with one of the superiors from the Trustdeck Group.

Moments later, a female usher came by and held on to Bea's bag for her as she followed Manager Huddell upstairs.

"Could they have made some kind of mistake, mom?"

Chapter 842

Yura had asked that question in his sheer disbelief.

"That's right! To think that she had even claimed that it was because of Gerald's connections... How does he even know such high ranked people? How is any of this possible?" grumbled Ysabel enviously.

After being humiliated like that, they were sure that everyone was now looking at the two families with mocking gazes.

Rose herself was now thinking of how Gerald had withdrawn a million dollars just the day before. She also recalled what Yura had told her about Gerald's clothes.

Adding that to the fact that she had now seen, with her very own eyes, that Gerald had the capability to pull strings from within the Trustdeck group, she was extremely certain that he was no ordinary person.

"Hold on a minute!" interrupted Rose while Ysabel and her mother were still exchanging envious words in their annoyance.

"Could it be that we've not investigated Gerald's background thoroughly enough? Is he actually not a pauper at all? How else could he have such extravagance? That would explain why he has so many powerful connections as well!" said Rose in a serious tone.

Upon hearing that, everyone fell silent. After all, nobody wanted to believe it. However, reluctant as they were, the truth was evident.

"...I... I refuse to believe that! It simply isn't possible!" declared Second aunt as she shook her head wildly.

“Indeed! We don’t believe that either!” added Yura and Ysabel simultaneously.

After that, Rose went silent for a while. Since she was so used to being slick, her ability to conceal her emotions was so great that nobody could guess what she was thinking during her momentary pause.

Eventually, however, Rose cupped her hands over her mouth in shock as she realized something horrifying.

Seeing her reaction, even Yuma and Yura felt terrified.

“M-mom? What’s wrong?” asked Yura immediately.

“There’s no need to be so flustered, sister-in-law! Perhaps Gerald simply helped Chairman Zelly in the past! If that truly happened, then the chairman could very well just be repaying the favor to Gerald! That possibility isn’t out of the question, right?” suggested Second aunt.

Hearing that, Rose’s eyelids twitched as she shook her head before saying, “Have you forgotten about the present Lady Yaleman received today? The one that cost a hundred and fifty million dollars?”

“You mean the present given by the mysterious Mr. Crawford...?”

The moment that name was mentioned, silence temporarily engulfed the room again.

“...That’s right... Mr. Crawford is definitely from the Crawford family and Gerald has that surname too... Could... Could it be that Gerald’s actually Mr. Crawford? If he is, then everything makes a lot more sense now!”

The conjecture alone was sending chills down Rose’s spine.

While there wasn’t an immediate reply from anyone, everyone had unpleasant expressions on their faces.

“That’s... That’s simply impossible!” shouted Second aunt.

“For now, let’s refrain from making any more wild guesses, aunt. Instead, let’s just wait for Bea. She, for one, definitely knows more about him than any of us here. Besides, if she fails to get the projects, everything will become clear. Until then, we have no way of proving that Gerald is actually powerful,” added Ysabel.

“That’s true. Fine, we’ll just wait for Bea to return!”

It was about forty minutes later when Bea finally returned. This time, however, she had five document files in hand.

Her aunt and the others had been waiting for her at the door this entire time and once they saw the contracts, they were so shocked that they immediately called out, “Bea!”

“You... You’ve signed all those?” asked Rose incredulously.

“I have! I now have five major projects from the Trustdeck group that spans from this year to the next!” replied Bea excitedly.

‘Let’s see you try bullying me and my mother again from now on!’ Bea thought to herself.

After saying that, she immediately began walking away without even bothering to look at the astonished crowd.

“Stop right there!” shouted Rose.

“What do you want?”

“Humph! Don’t think you can act all smug just because you’ve gained a few projects! Regardless, I’d like to ask about Gerald. How does he have so many strong connections? And how on earth did he even manage to get acquainted with Chairman Zelly in the first place?”

Chapter 843

"I don't know. Why don't you ask him yourself?" said Bea before promptly leaving.

"It's... It's all over now. Bea's definitely made the biggest contribution this time around!" shouted Yura.

"Why are you being so anxious? Bea probably can't make anything big out of it! Still, she isn't the biggest issue now. The main thing we have to worry about, is that b*tch's son, Gerald! We need to find out how much power he truly holds!" declared Rose.

The second she said that, everyone relevant received a message in the family's group chat. The family's butler had just issued a family meeting, and they were to gather at the Yaleman family's conference room within an hour.

"See that? Bea's asked for credit so quickly! The meeting's definitely related to the projects this time around!" said Second aunt aloud.

Rose then crossed her arms and smiled coldly before saying, "Let's return home for now... I want to see what sort of mess that girl ends up making!"

By the time the hour was up, everyone in the family was already in the Yaleman family's conference room. After all, meetings organized by Lady Yaleman were mandatory to attend.

Lady Yaleman herself was already at the main seat, and she seemed to be beaming with joy.

"I'm sure most of you already know why I'm hosting this family meeting. That's right, you're all here to watch me praise Bea! To think that she was able to get everything done by noon when I just talked about it this morning! She's definitely put in a lot of effort! Not only did she fulfill the task, she even brought our family five new projects! With the Trustdeck Group agreeing to have a deep cooperative relationship with Bea from today onward, I can safely say that she's truly made a great contribution to the Yaleman family!" announced Lady Yaleman with a smile so broad that even her wrinkles seemed to be beaming.

Hearing that, everyone could only look at Bea incredulously.

“Moving on, I also have an arrangement to announce. Not only will Bea be in charge of the five projects, but she’ll also be given the roles of general manager of the project department as well as the vice president of the Yaleman Construction Group!” declared Lady Yaleman.

“What?!”

Upon hearing that, a deafening uproar surrounded the room. Yura himself felt like he had just received a massive kick to the gut.

After all, before her birthday, Lady Yaleman definitely had something else planned. She had stated that he would become the Yaleman Construction Group’s vice president, and that she would officially announce it after her birthday party.

Yet here she was! Granting the post to Bea instead!

Rose, on the other hand, could feel her lips twitching slightly at the thought of Bea being able to enjoy similar privileges with them from now on.

“Just continue maintaining a good rapport with the Trustdeck Group, Bea! I believe in you!” said Lady Yaleman.

With the major announcement done, the meeting continued as per usual. Quite a few other things were discussed before the meeting finally ended.

As she watched Bea leave, Rose—who had stayed behind—turned to look at Lady Yaleman before saying in a hushed tone, “Mom...! While it’s true that Bea has proved her capabilities and she should, indeed, be given praise and encouragement, I’d like to confirm whether you’re serious about placing her in charge...”

“Of course I am. Bea’s the one who was able to get those projects. It’s only natural for her to get that role,” replied Lady Yaleman.

“That’s true, but consider the fact that no matter what, Bea’s still a woman. Putting aside her ability to properly hold the role of vice president for the moment, she’s not exactly young anymore, mom. She’ll definitely get married within the next two years or so, and when that happens, she’ll belong to another family...”

Upon hearing that, Lady Yalaman found herself slowly calming down from her earlier excitement.

“What more, Bea’s never had any experience being a superior! She’s only ever worked as a subordinate for as long as she lived! I’m simply worried that she won’t be able to handle this kind of responsibility, at least not yet! Another reason I’m worried is because of her kindness! It makes her susceptible to being tricked! Just look at our smart Yuma! Even he ended up being tricked by the Longs! Bea wouldn’t stand a chance against such people!” added Rose with a sigh.

After thinking for a brief moment, Lady Yalaman then ordered, “Sheldon, tell Bea to return to the conference room!”

“Right away, chairman!”

Hearing that, Rose and Yura exchanged gazes with each other, smug grins on their faces.

As soon as Bea arrived home sometime later, she angrily shouted, “Ahh, this is so annoying!”

At the time, Gerald was pruning the flowers on the balcony. Hearing how annoyed she was, he then asked, “What’s wrong, Bea?”

“It’s Rose! What a truly vicious woman she is... You know, grandma had already announced that I was going to be placed in charge of the projects! I was ready to finally have a chance to train myself! I don’t know what Rose said to her, but grandma ended up changing her mind at the very last second! Now both Yura and I have been placed in charge! After treating me and my mother like that, what right does he have to be part of any of this!”

Chapter 844

Her tone was rightfully angry as she said all that.

“Regardless of whether he’s part of it or not, don’t forget that you’re the one in power here. The Trustdeck Group cooperates with you. Not Yura,” reminded Gerald.

“...That’s true. I don’t have to be afraid anymore! Speaking of which, cousin, I see you’ve prepared a gift box there. Who’s it for?” asked Bea as she sat on a sofa while looking at him.

Hearing her question, Gerald wiped his hands clean and picked the gift box up before saying, “I was planning to pay grandma a visit once your meeting was over.”

Gerald had initially wanted to meet up with her earlier but once he found out that the Yalemans were having a family meeting, he postponed his plan. After all, he really didn’t want to have to deal with First aunt and the others.

“Still, aren’t you the curious one. Did you think that it was a birthday gift for you?” added Gerald with a cheeky smile on his face. He remembered, at that moment, that Bea’s birthday was in two days.

In response, Bea stuck her tongue out before saying, “No, I didn’t!”

“Regardless, since the meeting is over, I’ll go visit grandma now. I heard that she’s been turning in quite early nowadays!”

While his tone was casual, Gerald was honestly feeling extremely anxious since he was, after all, about to discuss reconciliation with his fearsome grandmother.

Upon arriving at her home, however, he first bumped into both Yura and Rose who were taking a stroll. The mother and child were quite wary of Gerald at this point after all that had happened.

“What are you doing here at this late hour, Gerald?” asked Yura.

“I’ve come to meet grandma!” replied Gerald.

“Humph! Lady Yalerman’s already turned in! If there’s anything, you can just discuss it with me!” said Rose as she crossed her arms.

“Thank you, but I kindly refuse!” said Gerald rather coldly before turning around to walk away from the duo.

“Hold it right there! What kind of tone was that?” growled Rose furiously when she saw how disrespectful Gerald was being to her in front of her other subordinates.

“Is there a problem?” replied Gerald as he turned around to look at her again.

The moment she saw his icy glare, Rose momentarily became tongue-tied, and simply ended up saying, “...It’s... nothing...”

With that, she watched as Gerald made his way into the house.

“Mom, that bumpkin is getting more and more imprudent by the day! Were you honestly afraid of him just now?” asked Yura in dissatisfaction.

“...What? Afraid? Me?” replied Rose in disbelief.

At that, Yura simply nodded.

After processing her feelings for a second, Rose realized that her son was right. The emotion had been fleeting, but Rose faintly recalled her heart momentarily skipping a beat when Gerald had glared at her.

Emotions could be weird at times. After all, when she had first met Gerald a few days ago, he wasn’t any less cold and aloof toward her.

However, she had merely disliked him back then. She hadn’t thought much about him at all, and she had simply mocked as she pleased.

To think that that was only a few days ago.

Now, he was still very much the same person with the same personality, yet Rose hardly had any confidence to insult him anymore.

Even if she didn't want to believe it, she simply had to. She had come to terms that she had indeed, been terrified of him when he had glared at her moments ago.

Still, why was she so afraid of him now?

"Chairman, Mr. Gerald is here!" said Sheldon just as Lady Yalaman was about to turn in for the night.

Stunned, she then thought for a brief moment before replying, "Let him in."

Chapter 845

"Since your body's condition hasn't been too well recently, I've bought some health supplements for you, grandma!" said Gerald as he placed his gift aside once he entered.

"Humph! How rare it is to see you being this thoughtful!" replied Lady Yalaman in a solemn tone. After all, Gerald had come empty-handed on her actual birthday that day.

Regardless, though it was true that she had disowned Yulia, she had to admit that it was near impossible to perfectly slice the bond between mother and daughter. What more, Gerald and Jessica were both her biological grandchildren.

As a grandmother, she had honestly always wanted to at least have some form of contact with him.

However, when she first saw how pathetic Gerald looked, she was instantly reminded of Dylan. Both father and son were so alike... Their characteristics were similar as well.

They were simply the kinds of people who never retorted or fought back against others, even if they were scolded or beaten up.

After a slightly agonizing silence, Lady Yalaman asked, "...Has your mother been leading a good life all these years, Gerald?"

"She has. To tell you the truth, my mom frequently misses you!" said Gerald as he sat up straight.

"Humph! She's having a good life even when she's together with a person like your dad? I know why you're here, Gerald, and I'm obligated to tell you that it isn't customary for the Yalaman family to hand out properties to those from outside the family. You can give up on that. After all, it's been over twenty years now and I've not heard a single word from that woman. I'm afraid she must've assumed I died long ago!" replied Lady Yalaman angrily.

At that, Gerald smiled before saying, "Please don't say that, grandma. I'm honestly not here for any of the Yalaman family's properties. My reason for being here is to moderate the resentment between you and mom."

"Moderate? I won't even be alive for much longer, so what's the point in that? Besides, all of this began when she ran away from that wedding that year! Not only did it cause the Leans family to stand against the Yalamans like rabid dogs, it's also the reason why our family's position has consistently been deteriorating throughout the years. While we were the head of the four large families here back then, we're now that last! We've truly suffered a lot because of her!" retorted Lady Yalaman as she got increasingly furious.

"While that's true, the Leans family was ruined by someone else shortly after, no?" replied Gerald as he slowly raised his head.

Hearing that, Lady Yalaman was stunned. From his gaze and the way he had said it, she was able to catch on to what he was trying to imply.

"I'd just like to say something since I'm already here today. It wasn't entirely my mom's fault regarding what had happened back then. With all due respect, you were partly responsible for all that as well. Besides, things change. You may have thought that my father was but a pauper back then, but who's to say that he's remained the same after twenty years? Regardless, I hope you rest well, grandma. I'll come meet you again in a few days," said Gerald as he got up to leave.

Lady Yalaman could only stare at his back in surprise as he left the room.

It was her first time having a formal chat with her grandson, and it was also the moment when she realized that Gerald wasn't a weak yes-man like how he presented himself to be.

Gerald had also seemed to indicate something rather preposterous to her during their brief conversation.

After seeing Gerald off, the butler began unwrapping the gift that Gerald had left in the other room. Usually, the butler would record everything—from the identity of the person who had given the gift, to the contents of the gift itself—upon Lady Yalaman receiving a gift.

However, he was so stupefied the moment he saw the contents of the gift box that he momentarily forgot to do so.

Instead, he began knocking on Lady Yalaman's door before anxiously saying, "C-chairman! Have a look at the gift Mr. Gerald Crawford gave you!"

Upon allowing him to enter, Lady Yalaman's eyes immediately widened in shock as she looked at the gift in her butler's hands.

"That's..."

"If I'm not mistaken, this seems to be the *Saussurea involucre* which had been bid by Chairman Thomson from Yanken. It's said that this thousand-year-old ginseng has the ability to counter all illnesses and also promise longevity!"

Chapter 846

"Sau... *Saussurea involucre*?" replied Lady Yalaman, her voice quivering as she continued staring at the gift in bewilderment.

"How could Gerald possibly have gotten his hands on such an expensive and valuable thing...?"

The butler himself simply lowered his head. After thinking for a brief moment, he then said, "... There's something on my mind, though I'm not sure whether I should say it, Chairman."

"Go on!"

"From what I've been able to observe, Mr. Crawford doesn't seem to be an ordinary person. Rather, he seems to exude the disposition of someone with nobility! There's just something about the way he talks... This may seem far-fetched, but have you considered that maybe, just maybe... Mr. Crawford could be the mysterious..."

"...Are you suggesting that Gerald is the Crawford family's Mr. Crawford?" replied Lady Yaleman, greatly surprised to even hear Sheldon suggest that.

In response, Sheldon simply pointed at the Saussurea involucrate again. That alone, made Lady Yaleman's heart skip a beat.

"...How... How could that be possible? You saw how Dylan looked that year as well, right? There's simply no way!" said Lady Yaleman incredulously.

"Chairman, with all due respect, the Yaleman family hasn't been having it easy in the past few years... The problem isn't limited to our slowly declining business either. The internal fights within the family have worsened over time as well, since quite a few parties in the family are after greater power distributions once you're no longer in the picture. May I remind you that Mr. Yuma Yaleman has also caused a lot of trouble for the family throughout the years."

"Even with all that happening, isn't it strange that the Yaleman family's business hasn't collapsed? It was a few years ago when I first realized that someone must be helping the family in secret. After all, any dangers we faced were quickly dealt with and if we had to deal with any, they were usually minor incidents."

"What more, remember what happened to the Leans? They were our greatest enemy and they were also immensely powerful back then. However, in just a single night, their entire family fell into bankruptcy. Not only that, the Leans family was wiped off the map entirely! What exactly happened that night? It still remains a mystery to this very day!"

Sheldon had so much to say since he had previously kept all this to himself. After all, he was afraid that Lady Yaleman would be angry if he said all this.

Thankfully, Lady Yaleman was only frowning slightly now.

As she thought about the gift that Mr. Crawford had brought, she eventually sighed heavily as her expression turned gloomy. Regardless of what the truth was, the present itself still cost at least a hundred and fifty million dollars.

It was the next day when Gerald looked at Bea before asking, "It's your birthday tomorrow, right? How are you planning to celebrate it?"

"I've never really celebrated my birthday all these years," replied Bea.

"Well that's going to change this year. After all, I'm here to celebrate it with you!" said Gerald with a smile.

Touched by his words, Bea simply nodded. From the way she was fidgeting, however, it was clear that she had something else to add. Despite that, before the question could leave her mouth, she stopped herself. The question could surely wait.

Gerald, however, had already caught on.

"What? Do you want to know how I know the people from the Trustdeck Group?" said Gerald with a smile.

Hearing that, Bea shook her head before saying, "It's not that... Rather, I've been meaning to ask something else. Since you've already graduated for some time, I was wondering if I have... You know, a future sister-in-law...? You're already so excellent, yet never have I seen you calling anyone that could be your girlfriend... While we're at it, I think that Giya's a beautiful girl who's also very well-mannered!"

Bea definitely seemed much more attentive than she looked.

Gerald's lips slowly turned into a bitter smile as he replied, "I'm not even sure where to start, but Bea, let me ask you something. Would you hate someone who failed to keep their promises? Hypothetically, if your boyfriend were to fail to turn up at a place where both of you had promised to meet, how would you feel?"

"Well, I'd surely be both disappointed and also saddened! No matter how cold and aloof a woman may be, they definitely value dates a lot! After all, a long time is needed just for them to get ready for dates! Breaking such a promise would no doubt be a major disappointment! Though, why are you asking that? Have you broken a promise, cousin?"

Chapter 847

After thinking about it for some time, Gerald ended up gently patting Bea's head before saying, "I'll tell you about it sometime in the future. Regardless, it's your birthday tomorrow! I'll be preparing a little something for you, so expect to be pleasantly surprised when you receive your gift!"

"Huh? What's the gift?" asked Bea as she stuck her tongue out playfully.

"It wouldn't be a surprise if I told you the answer now, would it? Just wait for tomorrow," replied Gerald with a faint smile before returning to his room.

Though he was smiling as he left, Bea could sense how truly forlorn Gerald was. This wasn't the first time she had noticed it either.

While her cousin had always behaved like an attentive elder brother would, she was able to tell that he constantly had something weighing on his mind. He just never seemed to be truly happy.

Bea suspected it had something to do with what had happened between him and her possible sister-in-law. However, since he refused to talk about her, Bea didn't continue prying out of respect.

Being his cousin, Bea naturally felt the urge to help him, and she knew that the easiest—and quite possibly the only—way for her to assist in such a situation was to distract him out of his gloominess.

The problem was that Gerald didn't really have many people he could have fun with in Yanken, or at least that was what she assumed.

As the gears in Bea's head began grinding, time passed on and the day of her birthday eventually came.

While she had initially planned to make a reservation at a restaurant early that morning, she received a notification from her family before she could even make the call.

Apparently her family was organizing a party to celebrate the implementation of the projects. All the family's superiors had been invited to attend. After all, it had been so long since such a celebratory party—regarding the signing of contracts—had been held.

From what Bea could remember, the last time a similar party was held was around twelve years ago. This could only signify that the party this time was going to be extraordinarily grand. So grand, in fact, that Lady Yaleman's eightieth birthday party could probably not even come close to rivaling it.

Since the Yalemans had invited everyone they could possibly think of, Bea didn't even dare to think about excusing herself. Thus, both she and Catherine quickly left for the venue once they were ready.

As one of the two main people in charge of the projects, Bea had to stand at the door with Yura to greet the guests.

"Congratulations for getting all those projects, Mr. Yaleman!"

"He's so young but he's already so capable! How remarkable! The future of the Yaleman family truly lies in you now, Mr. Yaleman!"

"Hey, hey, Mr. Yaleman? We should be addressing him as Chairman Yaleman now! Either way, congratulations!"

At the time, several distinguished guests were busy praising Yura. After all, they had heard that the Yaleman family had signed contracts for five major projects. That was an instant sign that their family had undergone an extreme upgrade. Things were definitely going to be different now.

As Yura continued getting praise after praise, Bea simply remained silent as she stood at the side. Even though she was the biggest contributor to this success, she had been completely ignored by most of the guests.

“Humph! While you did manage to gain all those projects, don’t think you’ll get an upper hand just because of that! I’ll say it now, with me here, you’ll eternally be inferior to me!” said Yura as he smiled coldly at Bea.

Though she was furious at his comment, she said nothing.

“Speaking of which, Bea, it’s your birthday today, isn’t it? Hah! Looks like you won’t be able to celebrate it!” added Yura with a smirk on his face as Bea glared at him.

It was a short moment later when Lady Yalaman made her appearance, leading a few people from their family.

When she saw Bea’s expression, however, she immediately said, “Bea, I do hope you realize what sort of occasion we’re celebrating today... Take a look at yourself! So cold and aloof... We have so many distinguished guests here today yet the way you present yourself would make anyone feel unwelcome!”

Lady Yalaman couldn’t refrain from scolding her. After all, she was a person who cared a lot about both her reputation and dignity.

“You may have forgotten, grandma, but it’s Bea’s birthday today! Of course she’d be unhappy since she’s here welcoming guests instead of celebrating it!” explained Yura.

“Oh? It’s your birthday today? What a truly sorry case! You’re feeling burdened to have to deal with family affairs even though it’s your special day, aren’t you?” said Rose out of the blue as she joined in on the conversation.

“I’m not!” denied Bea immediately.

Hearing what Rose had said, Lady Yalaman frowned.

“Regardless, you and Yura are standing out here since you’re both in charge of the projects. However, look at how he presents himself, then compare yourself to him! Mind your manners before the guests! It seems what your aunt had said was right after all. She had claimed that you lacked experience being a superior, and though I thought that you’d be able to adapt quickly, I was wrong. It seems that you’re truly incapable of handling such occasions.”

“You don’t have to welcome the guests anymore! Just head inside and see if there’s anything else that requires help with!” said Lady Yaleman solemnly.

Chapter 848

As she led the other family members away, Yura laughed before smiling coldly at Bea.

“Watch your tongue or you’ll pay a heavy price for it, Yura! Wipe that smirk off your face!” growled Bea as she turned to leave.

The moment she turned around, however, she saw Gerald there. In his hands was a small cake about six inches tall. Only after seeing him did she regain her composure.

“You’re late, cousin!” said Bea rather happily.

“Well I did have to order this cake for your birthday!” replied Gerald as he lifted the cake in his hands for her to see.

“Humph! You truly are from a village! Who still eats cake during their birthday? Lame!” said Yura with a scornful smile.

“Well I love eating cakes, do you have a problem with that?” replied Bea.

“Humph! I’m not even going to continue bothering with you anymore!” sneered Yura.

“Hey, it’s Bea!”

At that moment, a voice came from a car that had just stopped at the Yalaman family house's entrance.

Slowly, five women—who all looked to be around the same age as Bea—stepped out of the car. All of them were equally beautiful and tall.

“Mae! Yesenia! You're all here!” said Bea as she waved at them.

The girls were somewhat close friends of Bea's when she was still in university. Since Lady Yalaman had said that the more the merrier when it came to large celebrations like this, even the younger generations in the family had been allowed to invite their friends over.

Yura himself had invited a few ex-classmates of his own, and they were now standing around him, keeping him company.

“How lively, Bea!” said one of the five girls who had arrived with a smile on her face.

“Indeed! Anyway, since I'm free now, do come in! While we're at it, I'll introduce you to my cousin!” said Bea.

She had specifically mentioned Gerald since this was part of her plan. Bea hadn't invited them simply out of the kindness of her heart. They had also been invited so that her cousin would be able to get to know more people here.

That way, he wouldn't be lonely anymore!

Though she still didn't know what happened between her cousin and his girlfriend, she did wonder what would happen if one of her beautiful ex-classmates ended up falling for him.

After all, it was always hard to say when it came to things relating to love and relationships.

“Oh? Is that your cousin? How attentive of him to have remembered your birthday! I mean he even brought that tiny cake along!” said another one of the girls. While her tone had suggested that it was a praise, none of the five girls were able to properly hide the slight contempt in their eyes.

They were, after all, girls who came from quite influential families in Yanken as well.

If they were any closer to Bea, they would’ve definitely given her birthday gifts that cost at least eight hundred dollars. To think that her cousin had only bought her a six-inch cake!

The fact that Bea had sung praises about him before only served to disappoint them greater when they realized that he was probably just a plain, country bumpkin.

While they couldn’t help but sneer as they continued looking at Gerald, their expressions immediately changed when they saw four tall and handsome guys walking up to them from behind him, all of them dressed fashionably.

“Well, hello, hello, beautiful ladies! It’s our first time here at the Yalerman family house, and that seems to be the case for you as well... Why don’t we take a stroll together and get to know each other a little better?” said one of the guys from the group.

Hearing that, they all immediately beamed with joy as they replied, “Sure, why not?”

Yura himself smiled when he saw that they couldn’t be bothered by Gerald anymore.

“A stroll? Fancy you suggest that! Alright, how about this? I’ll arrange a servant to lead the way for you! In exchange, you better keep these beauties company properly!”

“Excellent idea!” exclaimed the beauties excitedly in their glee.

Chapter 849

Bea, on the other hand, was unhappy to hear that. After all, from what she could tell, he had probably guessed that she had specifically invited her ex-classmates over to introduce them to her cousin. Yura was definitely doing this on purpose.

“You’ll have much more fun with me! There’s no need to take a stroll with them!” said Bea angrily.

Seeing how mad she was, her classmates simply looked at each other before pouting as they entered the house with Bea.

As they walked through the backyard, Gerald couldn’t help but sigh.

He knew what Bea was up to. While he understood that she only wanted to get him a girlfriend out of kindness, he wasn’t really in the mood to get to know any more female friends at the moment.

After all, he was no stranger to getting into trouble from getting too attached to his female friends. Alice was a textbook example of that.

Because of that, Gerald only treated the beauties from the perspective of an elder brother. However, the girls themselves weren’t even interested in talking with him. After all, none of them looked up to Gerald.

Due to that, the atmosphere was rather dull.

Sometime later, Yura’s gang walked over to them again before saying, “Well hello there, beauties! We meet again!”

“Indeed! What a pleasant coincidence!” replied the girls with smiles on their faces.

“It seems that us getting to know each other is inevitable. Since even fate itself is pushing us together, why not use the opportunity to exchange our Line contact information? We promise to bring you to other fun places in the future!” said one of Yura’s ex-classmates with a charming smile on his face.

As he said that, Yura’s other friends looked at Gerald with scornful eyes.

“So you’re the cousin we’ve been hearing about? Just look at that tiny cake! The beauties won’t even be able to share it among themselves! Why didn’t you get a bigger one?” mocked yet another guy.

After saying that, they proceeded to exchange contact information with one another.

Noticing that Bea was now glaring at them with hostility, they decided not to stay there any longer. They took turns winking at the beauties before finally leaving.

“Well, I didn’t know you were coming! Otherwise, I would’ve definitely gotten a bigger one! Haha!” said Gerald as he laughed bitterly.

Hearing that, the beauties simply rolled their eyes. They weren’t even going to bother replying to that.

“Say Mae, I’m not sure if you’ve noticed, but wasn’t one of those handsome guys from earlier Klaus Waine from the Waine Group?”

“Yeah, that’s definitely him! And the one wearing glasses was Lionel Zinke, right? The one from Dynamics Information Technology Corporation? I heard that his family’s company is going to be listed soon!”

“D*mn! As expected, no ordinary people could be within that group of friends! After all, they’re all from influential families!”

“Well aren’t you excited? Do you have a crush on one of them or something?”

As Mae and the other girls continued discussing among themselves excitedly, Bea could only sigh before looking at Gerald.

“I really appreciate you buying me this cake, cousin... This is honestly the first time I’ve celebrated my birthday with a person other than my mother... Well, let’s go find someplace to share the cake between us!” said Bea as she held onto Gerald’s hands, deeply moved by his thoughtfulness.

“Sounds like a plan!”

As the two of them went off to enjoy the cake, Sheldon—the butler—himself was extremely busy.

Since word had spread that the Yalemans were making a comeback, hordes of people kept on coming throughout the morning. The grandiose scene could barely be compared to Lady Yalaman's eightieth birthday celebration which was awkwardly silent most of the time.

However, since Lady Yalaman had allowed for visitors to be invited over, many of the guests there weren't even people that the family personally knew.

It was soon half-past ten and most of the distinguished guests had already arrived by then. Knowing that, Yura then entered the living room to serve them there next.

Since someone still had to stand at the door, Sheldon took Yura's place. It was quite a while later—and not many more guests were expected to arrive—when Sheldon turned to re-enter the house. However, before he could do so, the corner of his eye caught a glimpse of a team of cars heading toward the Yalaman family's house.

Squinting his eyes, he was shocked when he saw that all the cars within that group were luxury cars! How dazzling!

While it was true that there were already at least a hundred luxury cars present—since many of the guests were, after all, wealthy and distinguished people—it seemed that the total price tag of the swiftly approaching team of cars could easily outprice the total cost of all the cars parked there!

Chapter 850

The fact that such distinguished guests were coming over sent shivers down Sheldon's spine.

When the cars finally stopped before Sheldon, a family of four stepped out of one of the luxurious vehicles. They consisted of a middle-aged couple, their son, and their daughter.

"Thank you for attending the Yalaman family party. It's a pleasure to have you with us. Could you perhaps be... Chairman Jagger?" said Sheldon, astonished that such a distinguished person had come.

"A pleasure to meet you as well! And yes, I'm Brody Jagger!"

“What an honor! Not only do you have an astounding reputation, but you’re also the richest among the four richest people in Jacksonville!”

Sheldon was extremely anxious now. How couldn’t he be? The richest man from Jacksonville was now standing before him! He couldn’t even stop his hands from quivering.

Since the Yalemans weren’t able to curry favor Chairman Jagger and his people before this, his arrival today was definitely a pleasant surprise.

Before Sheldon could even recover from his shock, another team of cars could be seen making their way toward the Yalaman family’s house.

Upon arriving, yet another middle-aged man stepped out of the car together with his family. Dumbstruck as he stared at the man who looked to be around fifty, he gulped as he said, “...Chairman Yarbury?”

“Good god! Chairman Yarbury from Yanken is here as well! I can’t believe this!”

It wasn’t long before more and more influential people arrived. In addition to a few famous people from other provinces in the Northwest, there were even those who came from the Takoma Province as well!

In the end, a total of twenty extremely distinguished people made their appearance and all of them brought their families along.

If Sheldon hadn’t pinched his thigh hard, he wouldn’t have believed that any of this was truly happening. He was honestly feeling quite light-headed now being in the presence of so many great people.

Snapping out of it, he immediately bowed down low before saying, “This way, please!”

“You don’t have to worry about us. We aren’t here to participate in the Yalaman family’s party,” said Brody as he pacified his youngest daughter.

“...Huh? Then... Why exactly are all of you here?” asked Sheldon in a doubtful tone.

“We’re here to celebrate Miss Bea Yalaman’s birthday, of course! Could you please take us to her?”

“M-Miss Bea’s birthday?” replied Sheldon, astonished.

‘Since when did she get to know so many influential big shots...?’

Sheldon didn’t dare to enquire them about it so he simply bowed again before saying, “Miss Bea should currently be in the backyard. Allow me to lead you to her!”

When the group of big shots graced Bea with their presence, she became equally as stupefied as the rest of her ex-classmates.

“Happy birthday, Miss Bea Yalaman! It’s a pleasure to meet you!” said several of the distinguished guests with smiles on their faces.

“...Huh?”

It was all Bea could say in her stunned state.

While Mae and the other girls were stunned as well, they soon snapped out of it.

“D*mn it, Bea! What the hell is going on? Isn’t that Jagger from Jacksonville? And aren’t those people over there Chairman Yarbury and his family?”

They were so shocked by the sudden turn of events that they completely forgot all about the guys from earlier.

“Haha! We’ve come all the way here to celebrate your birthday with you, Miss Yaleman! Aren’t you going to welcome us? Why not start by getting us some seats?” said Brody as he laughed heartily.

“...O-oh! Yes! I’ll make arrangements for seats immediately, Chairman Jagger! Chairman Yarburry!”

Bea was now extremely flustered and beads of cold sweat were running down her forehead. She had still been eating her cake there when they arrived so she didn’t even know where to start making arrangements.

“I-if I may, you’re our most distinguished guests here today! How could we possibly allow you to enjoy yourselves in the backyard? Please, allow me to lead you to the living room!” said Sheldon, his voice shaky.

“Haha! It’s quite alright. After all, it’s rather nice out here in the backyard. Just get us a table and a few seats! Oh, and some wine and dishes too, of course! And a few drinks for the kids, that’ll do!”

After saying that, Brody handed out an extremely expensive-looking jade bracelet to Bea before saying, “Here’s my birthday gift to you, Miss Yaleman. I hope that you’ll provide me with the support and guidance that I need when it comes to business from now on.”

The moment Sheldon saw the bracelet, he was extremely excited. However, he managed to maintain a calm façade.

Seeing that they were reluctant to head to the living room, he immediately ordered the servants present to move a large table and several seats over. If they wanted a banquet here, he would give it to them.

Bea herself was so nervous that she didn’t know what to do. When he saw that, Sheldon calmed himself, realizing that she desperately needed his assistance. By her side, he then quickly and carefully began helping her serve the guests.

The Yaleman family couldn’t afford to offend anyone from within that group.

Chapter 851

“T-thank you for the gift, Mr. Shelver!” said Bea as she received yet another gift from another big shot.

Mae and the other girls were simultaneously feeling stunned and jealous of Bea as they looked at all the gifts she was receiving.

“Could these be your best friends, Miss Yalerman? All of them are such beauties! It’s a shame that we don’t have enough presents to go around! Do wait for a moment as I order someone to send more gifts over! Consider them to be acquaintance gifts!” said Mrs. Jagger as she smiled.

“...Huh? We get gifts too?” replied the girls, surprised.

“But of course! Haha!”

“Alright! Thank you, Chairman Jagger! Mrs. Jagger!” shouted Mae and her friends, unable to contain their excitement and gratitude. After all, since all these people were extremely influential, any gifts they gave would most definitely be extraordinary!

“Hurry up and serve the presidents their drinks, Bea!” squealed Mae and the others excitedly.

“Will do!”

“There’s no need for that, we can help ourselves!” said Chairman Jagger and a few others.

Meanwhile, Gerald was playing with a little girl who seemed to be only a few years old.

“Come on, call me uncle and I’ll let you have some cake,” said Gerald with a smile on his face.

“Hello, uncle!” said the little girl as she blinked her large eyes.

“What a good girl!” replied Gerald as he fed her a spoonful of cake.

“We want some too, uncle!” shouted a few other children who instantly ran toward him when they saw the other girl getting cake.

“Of course you can!” said Gerald, beaming.

“What a loser!”

“I know right? The rich young ladies and masters have been pampered from birth! How could he just decide to feed them something like that?”

“How humiliating!”

Mae and the others murmured anxiously among themselves as they glared sternly at Gerald before pulling Bea to the side.

“Bea, tell your cousin to leave already! We’re enough to keep these big shots company!” said Mae who was so anxious that she was stomping her foot on the ground.

“Why should I? Why should he leave?” replied Bea, her expression turning sour.

“What do you mean why? Aren’t you embarrassed to have him here?”

“That’s right! If he stays here any longer we’ll eventually be laughed at!”

The other beauties were now chiming in to get Gerald out of the picture as well.

“I refuse! He can’t leave! Speaking of him, there’s something I need to ask him about...”

After saying that, Bea walked toward Gerald before whispering, “...Cousin? Why exactly did these big shots come over to celebrate my birthday today?”

She was well aware that the only person capable of doing all this was Gerald. After all, Gerald knew an astonishing amount of people. That made him extremely mysterious to her.

“I told you that you were in for a surprise, didn’t I? Happy birthday! Do you like your gift?” replied Gerald with a soft smile.

Hearing that, Bea’s eyes widened. So it was his doing!

“How... How did you even get so many big shots to come over to celebrate with me?” asked Bea excitedly. Forget asking if she liked the gift, she couldn’t even put a value to it since the gift was so outrageously good!

“Get them to come? Bea, they came on their own initiatives. Weren’t you listening? They wanted to cooperate more with you in the business field in future!” replied Gerald with a smile.

“In the business field? But I-”

Chapter 852

“You silly girl, here you are! I was looking all over for you! I’ve even called you but you didn’t even pick up! You know, your grandma’s so anxious in there yet you-”

Though Catherine was already angry when she stomped over, the moment she saw that her daughter had arranged a table in the backyard, she became even more infuriated.

“Could you please be a little more sensible, Bea? Haven’t I told you that we’ll celebrate your birthday tonight? How badly do you want to celebrate it for you to host it in the backyard? It’s almost as if you want Rose and her family to hold something against us!” scolded Catherine in a rage.

She was just about to drag her daughter away when she recognized who was sitting at the table.

In her shock, Catherine let out a squeak before covering her mouth with her hands. It was evident that she knew who everyone at the table was.

“You’re Miss Yalerman’s mother, correct? It’s a pleasure to meet you! We’ve come over to celebrate Miss Yalerman’s birthday!” said a few of the distinguished guests with smiles on their faces.

Though she thought that she had heard wrong, the moment she saw Sheldon there serving them drinks, she soon realized that they were telling the truth.

“My... My daughter’s birthday? You... came here to celebrate that...?”

Catherine was so excited that she was honestly at a loss for words. Unable to express herself properly, she was now intensely rubbing her hands together!

However, the second she noticed that Gerald was present as well, her expression turned stern as she tugged him by the ear before shouting, “Stand up already! Don’t you see that I’m here? Get me a seat!”

“Good god!” shouted one of the big shots as everyone important at the scene became stupefied by what they were witnessing.

Clattering and crashes followed next as Chairman Jagger and a few others couldn’t even hold their teacups properly in their shock. Recovering moments later, all the guests at the table stood up in unison, their faces filled with utter fear.

“I-I’m sorry for scaring all of you! P-please sit down!” said Catherine as she blushed nervously.

As Gerald rubbed on his swollen ear, he nodded at Chairman Jagger and the others. It was only after Gerald did that, that the other important people dared to return seated.

Bea, on the other hand, immediately tugged at her mother’s sleeve before whispering something into her ear.

“...W-what did you say?” said Catherine, an expression of utter shock on her face.

When she finally snapped out of it, she immediately turned to look at Gerald before dragging a chair over to him.

“P-please have a seat, Gerald!”

With a sigh, Gerald then sat down.

Back inside the living room, Yura—who had been keeping his grandmother company this entire time—was standing beside Lady Yalaman as a few people waited in line to serve her tea.

Lady Yalaman herself had been delighted for most of the day. After all, it had been so long since the Yalaman family had experienced such liveliness and prosperity.

Once the tea serving ceremony was over, however, Lady Yalaman’s face turned slightly dull.

“Is the party not going to commence soon? Where is Bea? Why hasn’t her mother brought her back yet? Sheldon!” shouted the grandmother.

“The butler isn’t here, grandma,” said Yura.

“Humph! Imprudent! How unruly!” said Lady Yalaman angrily as she sent a teacup flying off the table. The sound of shattering was quick to follow.

“I’ve already told you that Bea was only lucky back then, mom... She simply isn’t that capable. However, you refused to believe me, thinking that I was only jealous of her contributions. Yet look at how things are going now... Wasn’t I right?” said Rose.

“Indeed! You know, I saw that she had invited a few of her ex-classmates earlier. That was also the last I ever saw of them. Since she hasn’t shown up since then, at this point, it wouldn’t be far-fetched to say that she’s gone out with them to have fun somewhere. She barely even cares about the major affairs of the family! We’re lucky that all the distinguished guests here today aren’t too bothered about her absence. Think about it. If a rumor stating that the Yalaman family treats our guests with cold shoulders comes to be, then everything we’ve done today would’ve been for naught!” added Yura.

“Well, since she’s now the head of the Yalaman family after gaining us all those projects, I say it’s fine that she acts recklessly every once in a while. Still, to think that we’ll be relying on her in the future!” said Ysabel, clearly adding fuel to the fire.

“Humph! And who was it that gave her the position of family head? I’m not dead yet! That girl is truly too unruly to be left in charge of our family’s future! Like mother, like daughter! Once this party’s over, she’ll no longer be in charge of any of the projects! She’ll just have to work at the company!” said Lady Yalaman angrily.

Hearing that, both Rose and Yura exchanged glances with each other as they smiled wickedly.

Chapter 853

“Well isn’t this a lively party!” shouted a particularly unwelcoming voice which came from the main entrance.

As everyone turned to look, a group of people—led by a rich, young heir—could be seen entering the house.

“You can’t enter since you weren’t invited!” shouted a servant who had been trying to block them from proceeding the moment they entered the building.

“Out of our way!” growled one of the men being led by the heir as he shoved the servant aside.

Seeing that, everyone fell silent.

“...Shane Long?” said Lady Yalaman as she stood up with a frown on her face.

One by one, the other Yalamans stood up as well, and all of them bore equally cold expressions on their face as they glared at Shane.

Shane was the eldest young master of the Long family, and though he was young, he was known for being quite shrewd. The Yalamans were well aware that behind that kind face lay a vicious personality.

Within the Long family, Shane himself was second only to Master Long. His high position granted him the role of the Long family's vanguard in Yanken. After all, the Longs were the ones who kept the other families there suppressed.

He had only returned to the country around four years ago, yet that was all the time he needed to help the Long family acquire at least a hundred groups and corporations, both large and small, from all over the place.

His aid was the reason why the Longs could get to where they were today. It was also why none of the present families could ever dream of threatening their position at the top any time soon.

"Humph! You can't blame me for being a little rough! After all, how couldn't you invite the Long family over to such a lively party? This is essentially your own doing, Lady Yalaman!" said Shane with a placid smile on his face as he squinted his eyes slightly.

"But of course we didn't invite you! After all, the Yalaman family is insignificantly small to the influential and powerful Longs! Why, we wouldn't even dream about inviting such big shots like you! Regardless, why did you come here today, Mr. Long? If I remember correctly, my son's had some disputes with you regarding the loan. Haven't those issues been resolved?" retorted Lady Yalaman.

"Ah, but of course that issue has been resolved! Though Mr. Yalaman was a few days late, the Longs are fine with that since we have, after all, had a good relationship with the Yalamans for generations! We wouldn't be that bothered by such a small loan! However, we've come here today to discuss a different loan. Now this loan is far from small!" replied Shane with a smile.

"Elaborate," said Lady Yalaman, frowning.

Meanwhile, after hearing what Shane had to say, several of her children and many other members of the Yalaman family began shivering nervously.

"What do you mean by that, Mr. Long? While we have made some loans, we made them through Chairman Jameston, Chairman Mill, and also Chairman Leeke!" replied Yuma angrily.

“Humph! While that was previously the case, the presidents you earlier mentioned reached an agreement with me a few days ago! Essentially, any cooperation and loans you’ve made with them have now been transferred to the Long family!”

“After doing a bit of calculating, I’ve found that those from the Yaleman family—who’ve been placed in charge of companies—have each borrowed no small sum of money from over thirty presidents! At a rough estimation, the grand total amounts to a billion and five hundred million dollars! And that estimation doesn’t even include the bank loans they’ve made yet!” declared Shane, his smile wider than ever.

“...You... You’re spouting nonsense! Our family has so many major properties... How could we possibly have amounted such a high loan?!” replied Lady Yaleman as her face turned paler by the second.

Shane’s intention of being here today was clear as day.

If he were to use that loan to suppress the Yaleman family within a short amount of time, the Yalemans wouldn’t have the means to gather that much money so quickly. At best, the Yalemans could only mortgage the properties they owned on a massive scale.

By the time they did that, the bank would surely suppress the Yalemans since moving even a small part would definitely affect the whole. Once that situation occurred, it would no longer be as simple as going bankrupt for their family.

“Hah! Am I now? Why don’t you confirm it with your children!” sneered Shane coldly.

“You... What? What is the meaning of this?!” roared Lady Yaleman as she began loudly tapping the tip of her walking stick against the floor.

Seeing her reaction, Yuma, Rose, and the others present couldn’t even find the courage to speak as they took turns gulping.

“Haha! So nobody dares to fess up? Fine then, I’ll do the explaining myself!” announced Shane as he shook his head with a bitter smile on his face.

“When it comes to the Yaleman family, they have one particularly interesting trait. The children within your family each hold different amounts of power. From what I’ve heard, the child that brings the most profit to the family gains the right to inherit the role of the Yaleman family head, am I not correct? Hah! Now let’s do a bit of calculating, shall we? From your eldest son onward, none of your children have been willing to use their own money to do anything! I hope you’re aware that all of them have used the Yaleman family’s name to get their loans! Do correct me if I’m wrong!” explained Shane as Lady Yaleman turned red in anger.

Thinking back, it was no wonder why Yuma had said all that during her birthday party. To think that he had claimed that he would immediately contact the ones issuing the loan to resolve the capital chain issue. As it turned out, they had all been using the same tactic all these years.

“Why didn’t you inform us that you transferred your rights to the Long family when it happened, Chairman Mill and Chairman Leeke?” growled Yuma who was so angry that his face was as red as a tomato.

Chapter 854

Since several other presidents who had cooperated with them were also present, Yuma quickly added, “Don’t you realize that what you’ve done has ruined the Yaleman family?!”

“That’s quite enough, Yuma. Are you blind? It’s quite obvious that Chairman Mill and the others have conspired with the Longs long beforehand!” said Lady Yaleman as she glared at Yuma.

Hearing his question, the presidents involved simply looked at each other before shrugging and sneering at Yuma.

“I’ll say it now, even if we suffer a massive loss, we’ll still be better off than most ordinary people! All we have to do is give up a few of our properties and by the time we’re done, we won’t owe the Longs a single penny! You don’t need to worry about that!” declared Lady Yaleman.

Though she had said that, her hands were already trembling as she spoke. After all, she knew very well that the Yalemans would suffer terribly this time around.

The Long family had been meticulous with their planning, and now the Yalemans were cornered without a fighting chance. After all, Lady Yaleman had already distributed her power.

While she had initially thought that the power was in good hands, as it turned out, everyone only cared about the benefit of their individual families.

All of them had used the Yaleman family's name whenever they took loans. By doing that, even if they suffered any losses after investing in projects, it wouldn't influence them that much since it wasn't their own money in the first place.

Everyone had simply felt that there wasn't a need to save any money for the Yaleman family's sake since nobody knew for sure who would inherit the family properties in the future.

"Oh? Is that so, Lady Yaleman? Then I'll rest assured!" replied Shane with a loud laugh.

Hearing that, Lady Yaleman was so infuriated that she became light-headed and had to sit down.

"What a great misfortune to our family!" cried out Lady Yaleman in a remorseful tone.

Just as she said that, the sound of fireworks being lit could suddenly be heard coming from the backyard.

As if the blow Lady Yaleman had just received wasn't enough, it was apparent that someone in the family still had the audacity to be playing with fireworks now!

"Oh my, how strong the Yaleman family must be! After all, even after losing that much money, some people in your family still seem to be celebrating!" commented Shane with a smug smile.

"S-Sheldon?! Sheldon!" roared Lady Yaleman, her eyes bloodshot with anxiety.

"Sheldon isn't here, grandma!" replied Yura.

In response, Lady Yaleman immediately got up and slapped him hard on the face!

“Then... Go... Get him! Head to the backyard immediately! Tell me who on earth lit those fireworks!” roared Lady Yalaman as two servants immediately ran to do her bidding.

When they got there, they saw that the culprits were a few children who were having fun.

“Sheldon! Miss Yalaman! So here you are! The chairman’s been looking all over for you!”

“What’s wrong?” asked Bea as soon as she saw how agitated the servant looked.

“Something terrible has happened! From what I could understand, those from the Long family have come to ask for a debt!” said one of the servants as the other ran back inside.

“What?” said Bea and Sheldon in unison as a wave of nervousness swept through both of them. Not knowing how to react, the duo turned to look at Gerald.

In turn, Gerald nodded before saying, “I see. Then let’s head there and have a look, shall we? Of course the Long family brings trouble again...”

As the group began making their way inside, back in the living room, the other servant had just returned and was now standing before Lady Yalaman.

“How was the situation? Also, did you see Bea and Sheldon?” growled Lady Yalaman, her expression solemn.

“Yes I did, Chairman. Mr. Gerald Crawford was together with them as well, along with a few other people dressed up like presidents. They seemed to be celebrating Miss Bea’s birthday in the back yard!” explained the servant.

The moment his sentence ended, a Lady Yalaman flung her second teacup of the day to the floor, sending it shattering.

“How devastating! It’s a family rebellion!”

Chapter 855

“All she ever thinks about is that birthday of hers! What birthday could ever be more important than a Yaleman family celebration?!” shouted Lady Yaleman, feeling extremely faint now.

“Grandma!” shouted Bea—who had just arrived—as she ran over to her, the other presidents from Bea’s birthday party following closely behind.

“You! Where have you-”

Just as Lady Yaleman was about to unleash all her pent up rage, her gaze fell upon those standing behind Bea. It took what seemed like an eternity for her to finally realize who the people grouped behind Bea were.

When she finally snapped out of it, however, she—along with the two hundred people in the living room—instantly created a massive uproar.

“Isn’t that Chairman Jagger?! The richest person in Jacksonville?!”

“D*mn! That really is him! And that over there! That’s Chairman Yarbury, right? What’s a big shot like him even doing here?”

“Chairman Goldwell is here too! He’s the richest and most powerful man from the North!”

By now, several of the guests had already stood up, and they were shouting out the names of all the big shots present. Those who weren’t were simply too stupefied to even say a word.

Lady Yaleman herself already knew who everyone there was. After all, she had tried and failed to curry favor with each and every one of them before this.

‘Why...? Why have they all come here just to celebrate Bea’s birthday?’

“Chairman! Chairman Jagger and the rest have attended to celebrate Miss Bea’s birthday! I apologize for being gone for so long, but it was because I was worried that the ordinary servants wouldn’t know how to serve them properly! I’ve been serving them this entire time!” said Sheldon excitedly as he finally made his way back to Lady Yalaman’s side.

“What?” said Lady Yalaman as Rose, Yura, and a few other Yalamans widened their eyes in disbelief.

Though their arrival had definitely caught Lady Yalaman by surprise, she was quick to recover and quickly said, “Do take a seat, presidents! All of you!”

Her tone no longer sounded as dispirited as she had been just minutes ago.

“Haha! There’s no need to be that cordial, Lady Yalaman! We had honestly not planned to intrude on your party in the first place! However, since Miss Yalaman led us in, I suppose it wouldn’t hurt to be part of the distinguished guests here! I do hope that the present guests respect us though!” said Elijah—one of the big shots—with a faint smile on his face.

“But of course!” said Chairman Mill and many others as they immediately stood up and nodded.

Seeing that, Shane could only fix his gaze upon the distinguished guests who had just made their appearances. Those who had just entered were as high ranked as his grandfather. In other words, he was only a small fry before them.

“Today’s a happy day for the Yalaman family, Shane! If there’s nothing else, what are you still doing here?” asked Bea coldly.

“Don’t mind me, I was just about to give a toast to Mr. Jagger and Mr. Yarbury...” said Shane with a faint smile on his face.

Just as he was about to walk toward them, however, Brody said, “She’s right you know. If there isn’t anything else, why aren’t you leaving yet?”

Hearing Brody's frigid tone, Shane immediately said in an awkward tone, "...Huh? I... I see! I'll be taking my leave now!"

Sensing that even Brody didn't want him around, he was filled with cold sweat. He had planned everything so meticulously... Yet it had never occurred to him that the biggest problem would be Bea! A complete nobody in the family!

Regardless, he no longer dared to linger there for any longer. With a swift gesture, the embarrassed Shane silently ordered his subordinates to leave together with him.

"Bea you were so awesome just now! To think that that was the mighty Mr. Long!" said Mae as she and her other friends held on to her arms.

"Since my cousin disliked the Longs, I found no reason not to hate them as well!" replied Bea, smiling.

"Huh? That was the reason why you ordered Mr. Long to leave? Speaking of him, what was it that both of you secretly talked about earlier?" asked Mae. She and the other girls were now finding Gerald to be much more mysterious than he ought to be.

Before Bea could even answer, however, Catherine immediately explained, "You see, mom, all these presidents came over today to celebrate Bea's birthday since my nephew, Gerald, invited them! But that's not all! That was apparently only the first present! Gerald said that he had prepared a total of three gifts for her! Isn't that right, Gerald?"

Halfway through her explanation, Catherine was already holding on to Gerald's arm in an intimate manner. After all, she had found herself liking her nephew a lot more that day.

Hearing what Catherine had to say, Lady Yalman looked at Gerald in astonishment.

Though she was initially still rather doubtful of whether he truly was an extraordinary person, seeing him so powerful today made her feel like he was a completely different person.

Yura and Rose themselves were feeling extremely humiliated as they watched the scene play out from the side-lines.

“Indeed! There are two more gifts that I haven’t shown!”

— To be Continued... —